



M L.

Gc  
977.201  
Sa2hi  
1142790

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1233 00805 6035

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>











*O. H. B. Gould*

HISTORY  

---

OF  
ST. JOSEPH COUNTY  

---

INDIANA;

TOGETHER WITH SKETCHES OF ITS CITIES, VILLAGES AND TOWNSHIPS, EDUCATIONAL, RELIGIOUS, CIVIL, MILITARY, AND POLITICAL HISTORY;  
PORTRAITS OF PROMINENT PERSONS, AND BIOGRAPHIES  
OF REPRESENTATIVE CITIZENS.

---

HISTORY OF INDIANA,

EMBRACING ACCOUNTS OF THE PRE-HISTORIC RACES, ABORIGINES, FRENCH,  
ENGLISH AND AMERICAN CONQUESTS, AND A GENERAL REVIEW  
OF ITS CIVIL, POLITICAL AND MILITARY HISTORY.

---

ILLUSTRATED.

---

CHICAGO:  
CHAS. C. CHAPMAN & CO.,  
1880

BLAKELY, BROWN & MARSH,  
PRINTERS,  
155 & 157 DEARBORN ST., CHICAGO.

DONOHUE & HENNEBERRY,  
BOOKBINDERS,  
105 & 109 MADISON STREET., CHICAGO



1142790

## PREFACE.

Over half a century has rolled its years away since this section of Indiana was first chosen for a home by the white man. Trials, sufferings and struggles which were experienced in converting even this fertile land from its virgin wildness into the luxuriant and densely populated country now existing can never be fully portrayed. Although, as in many frontier settlements, the ground was not consecrated by the blood of pioneers and their families, yet human tongue or pen can never accurately picture the vicissitudes and trials of the van-guard of civilization who "pitched their tents" in St. Joseph county. Their labors were as trying to their minds as to their bodies. Physical and mental strength waste together, and the memory of names, dates and events is gradually lost under the confusion of accumulating years. Events that were fresh in memory ten to twenty years after their occurrence are almost if not entirely forgotten when fifty years have passed.

As a consequence there will be many irreconcilable statements concerning the matters of pioneer history, and it becomes a laborious task to compile a full and satisfactory account of many affairs in the career of the community. We have particular trouble with the spelling of names. We once saw in a cemetery the name "Orvillee" on the headstone of a certain grave, and "Orval Lee" on the footstone. Of course, then, some errors will be detected here and there by parties who happen to know the truth concerning such and such little items. We have not flinched from the labor and expense required to make the history as full and accurate as any history ever published,—indeed, we have the satisfaction of knowing that our local histories are more reliable than general histories are, as we are exposed to the crucial test of a local patronage.

We desire our readers first to scan the table of contents, to become acquainted with the arrangement, and to make it easy for themselves

Schoplin Co. No. 30.00

## PREFACE.

to find anything in the volume. The history of the respective townships is given alphabetically, and the biographical matter is also arranged alphabetically under the respective headings of the townships. For example, the sketches of South Bend parties will all be found under the general heading of "Portage Township," and under the specific heading of "Biographical." The first portion of this work gives the most complete history of the State of Indiana yet published, while the remainder of the volume, by far the largest portion, is strictly the history of St. Joseph county.

As one of the most interesting features of this work, we present the portraits of several representative citizens. It has been our aim to have the prominent men of the day, as well as the pioneers, represented in this department. Of course we could not give portraits of all the leading men of the county, nor even half, but we have done our best to give a fair representation.

In conclusion, we render our heartiest thanks to those who have so freely aided us in collecting material. To the county officials, pastors of churches, officers of societies, pioneers, and the editors of the press, we are particularly grateful for the many kindnesses and courtesies shown us while laboring in the county; but most of all, we wish to thank those who have so liberally and materially aided the work by becoming subscribers for it, for without such aid no history of St. Joseph county could have been published.

C. C. CHAPMAN & CO.

CHICAGO, December, 1880.

## HISTORY OF INDIANA.

Education.....	160
“Past the Pictures.”.....	164
Spelling-School.....	165
Singing-School.....	167
Guarding against Indians.....	168
The Bright Side.....	171
What the Pioneers Have Done.....	173
Military Drill.....	175
“Jack, the Philosopher of the 19th Century.”.....	176
“Too Full for Utter nce.”.....	177
Thieving and Lynch-Law.....	179
Cuiling the Drunken Husband.....	181
The “Choke Trap.”.....	181
MICHIGAN BOUNDARY.....	185
MEXICAN WAR.....	186
SLAVERY.....	194
15th Amendment.....	197
THE WAR FOR THE UNION.....	198
Lincoln did not seek the Presidency.....	199
States Seceding.....	199
The Fall of Sumter.....	200
A Vast Army Raised in 11 Days.....	201
Sherman's March to the Sea.....	202
Character of Abraham Lincoln.....	202
The War Ended—The Union Restored.....	204
The Morgan-Raid Regiments.....	227
Six Months' Regiments.....	229
The 100-Days' Volunteers.....	233
The President's Call of July, 1864.....	234
“Dec.”.....	234
Independent Cavalry Company of Indiana Volunteers.....	238
Our Colored Troops.....	239
Batteries of Light Artillery.....	239
After the War.....	246
DIVORCE LAWS.....	250
FINANCIAL.....	251
State Bank.....	253
Wealth and Progress.....	254
Internal Improvements.....	256
GEOLOGY.....	262
COAL.....	264
AGRICULTURE.....	266
State Board of Agriculture.....	266
The Exposition.....	267
Indiana Horticultural Society.....	269
“Pomological”.....	270
EDUCATION.....	272
Public Schools.....	272
Indiana State University.....	279
Purdue University.....	281
Indiana State Normal School.....	285
Normal School, etc., at Valparaiso.....	286
Denominational and Private Institutions.....	287
BENEVOLENT AND PENAL INSTITUTIONS.....	291
Institute for the Education of the Blind.....	291
Institute for the Deaf and Dumb.....	293
Hospital for the Insane.....	295
The State Prison South.....	296
“North”.....	297
Female Prison and Reformatory.....	298
Indiana House of Refuge.....	300
STATE CAPITOL.....	301
STATE OFFICERS.....	302
U. S. SENATORS FROM INDIANA.....	306
REPRESENTATIVES IN CONGRESS.....	307
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:	
Of Governors.....	310
Of U. S. Senators.....	316
THE SUPREMACIES.....	319
STATES OF THE UNION.....	319

# CONTENTS.

## HISTORY OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

### CHAPTER I.

First White Men in the County.....	331
Original Inhabitants.....	333
Area of the County.....	336
Topography.....	337
The Watershed.....	337
Rivers of St. Joseph County.....	338
First Entries of Land.....	338
First Road.....	339

### CHAPTER II.

NATURAL HISTORY.....	340
Quadrupeds.....	340
Birds.....	340
Reptiles.....	344
Fish.....	344
Botany.....	345

### CHAPTER III.

Organization of St. Joseph County.....	358
Acts of the Board of Justices.....	359
Acts of the Board of County Com'rs.....	361

### CHAPTER IV.

PIONEER LIFE.....	370
-------------------	-----

### CHAPTER V.

Circuit Court.....	374
Common Pleas Court.....	377
Probate Court.....	378
The Bar.....	378
The Present Bar.....	380
St. Joseph Bar Association.....	381
The Bar in a New Role.....	386

### CHAPTER VI.

Northern Indiana Medical Society.....	389
St. Joseph County Medical Society.....	390
St. Joseph Valley Medical Society.....	395
Diseases of the St. Joseph Valley.....	397

### CHAPTER VII.

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY IN THE WAR.....	408
9th Infantry.....	414
15th ".....	417
29th ".....	419
48th ".....	422
73d ".....	426
87th ".....	430
128th ".....	433
138th ".....	437
155th ".....	438
12th Cavalry.....	439
21st Battery.....	442
Roll of Honor.....	444
Officers.....	444
Non-Commis'n'd Officers and Privates.....	445
The First Martyr.....	448
Black Hawk War.....	449

### CHAPTER VIII.

Railroads.....	454
Terrible Railroad Accident.....	459
The Telegraph.....	460
Ferries.....	460

### CHAPTER IX.

BIOGRAPHICAL:	
Alexis Coquillard.....	462
Hon. Mark Whinery.....	467
Hon. Wm. Miller.....	468
Dr. Louis Humphreys.....	470
Jacob Harris.....	473

Solomon W. Palmer.....	473
Col. Norman Eddy.....	477
Mrs. Hannah D. Matthews.....	479
Father Laurence.....	481
Rev. Augustus Lemonnier.....	482
Rev. N. H. Gillespie.....	483
Prof. Benj. Wilcox.....	484
Elder C. Wenger.....	486
Judge Powers Greene.....	486
John Studebaker.....	487
John Mack.....	488
Ariel E. Drapier.....	490
Geo. W. Matthews.....	492
Col. Alfred B. Wade.....	493
Horatio Chapin.....	495
Samuel Byerly.....	496
Elisha Egbert.....	498
Dwight Deming.....	500
John A. Henricks.....	502
Mrs. Frances C. Coquillard.....	503
John M. Stover.....	504
John T. Lindsey.....	504
Isaac Eaton.....	505
Judge Johnson.....	505
Charles M. Tutt.....	506
Archibald Defrees.....	506
J. G. Bartlett.....	507
James A. Ireland.....	507
Henry Stull.....	507 -

### CHAPTER X.

#### REMINISCENCES:

By Judge Stanfield.....	509
By Dr. Jacob Hardman.....	512
By Thomas P. Bulla.....	514
By Dr. E. W. H. Ellis.....	517
By John D. Defrees.....	519

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES:

Rev. P. Dillon.....	523
Rev. Wm. Corby.....	524
Very Rev. Alexis Granger.....	524
Rev. Francis Cointet.....	525
Rev. Richard Shortis.....	526
Rev. N. H. Gillespie.....	526
Rev. James Dillon.....	526
Prof. J. A. Lyons.....	527
Rev. Michael B. Brown.....	527
Rev. D. J. Spillard.....	528
Prof. Michael A. J. Baasen.....	529
Prof. Michael T. Corby.....	529
Prof. Wm. Ivers.....	529
Rev. Joseph C. Carrier.....	530
Lucius G. Tong.....	530
Rev. J. A. Zahin.....	531
Mrs. Flora L. Stanfield.....	531
Prof. T. E. Howard.....	532
Daniel Kotz.....	532
Prof. Luigi Gregori.....	532
Alfred Bryant Miller.....	532
E. Burke Fisher.....	532

### CHAPTER XI.

Public Buildings.....	534
Navigation of the St. Joseph River.....	535
Marriages Licenses.....	536
A Counterfeiting Reminiscence.....	536
Still-Born Villages.....	537
Flood.....	539
Gold-Hunters.....	540
Map and Atlas of the County.....	543

### CHAPTER XII.

POLITICAL HISTORY.....	544
Election Returns.....	555

### CHAPTER XIII.

AGRICULTURE OF THE COUNTY.....	561
Agricultural Societies.....	561

## CONTENTS.

Products.....	666
Taxable property etc.....	567
County Expenditures.....	567
Census.....	568
Aged Persons.....	568

### CHAPTER XIV.

THE PRESS.....	571
----------------	-----

### CHAPTER XV.

COUNTY BIBLE SOCIETY.....	580
County Total Abstinence Society.....	580
What a Pint of Whisky Cost.....	582
The Temperance Crusade.....	582
Red-Ribbon Movement.....	585

### CHAPTER XVI.

DARK DEEDS.....	586
ST. JO. RIVER AND ITS VICTIMS:	
Four Young People Drowned.....	592
Mysterious Disappearance of Henry F. Porter.....	592
Henry Sherman.....	593
Found a Watery Grave.....	594
Katy Fleck's Tragic Death.....	594
Mysterious Disappearance of J. C. Marvin.....	595
Death in the River.....	596
Drowning of Jacob Bauer.....	597
Strange Disappearance.....	597
John Schuman.....	598
Whisky Did It.....	598
Another Victim.....	599

### CHAPTER XVII.

County Historical Society.....	601
The First Brick House in South Bend..	603
Pioneer Meetings.....	608

### CHAPTER XVIII.

SOUTH BEND FUGITIVE SLAVE CASE..	618
----------------------------------	-----

### CHAPTER XIX.

University of Notre Dame.....	627
St. Mary's Academy.....	634
Northern Indiana College.....	636

### CHAPTER XX.

#### AUTHORS AND SELECTIONS.

Mrs. Flora L. Stanfield.....	638
Miss Eleanor J. Wilson.....	642
Prof. T. E. Howard.....	644
Alfred Bryant Miller.....	648
E. Burke Fisher.....	651

### CHAPTER XXI.

Public Schools.....	656
County Examiners and Supts.....	658
County Seminary.....	659
Congressional Representation.....	660
State Senators and Representatives.....	661
County Officers.....	662
A Retrospect.....	664
St. Joseph County of To-Day.....	666

#### TOWNSHIP HISTORIES:

Centre.....	668
Clay.....	676
German.....	682
Greene.....	696
Harris.....	713
Liberty.....	718
Lincoln.....	733
Madison.....	751
Olive.....	764
Penn.....	788
Portage.....	843
Union.....	950
Warren.....	965

## ILLUSTRATIONS.

Scene on the Ohio River.....	25
Hieroglyphics of the Mound Builders ..	29
La Salle Landing at the Mouth of the St. Joseph's River.....	43
Gen. George Rogers Clark.....	53
Gen. Arthur St. Clair.....	89
Tecumseh.....	109
Indians Attacking Frontiersmen.....	123
A Pioneer Dwelling.....	139
Hunting Prairie Wolves.....	153

Trapping.....	169
Pontiac.....	183
The Shawnee Prophet.....	195
Lincoln Monument at Springfield.....	204
Opening an Indiana Forest.....	225
View on the Wabash River.....	247
Surrender of Indians to Wilkinson.....	269
Court-House.....	329
Jail.....	541
Notre Dame University.....	721

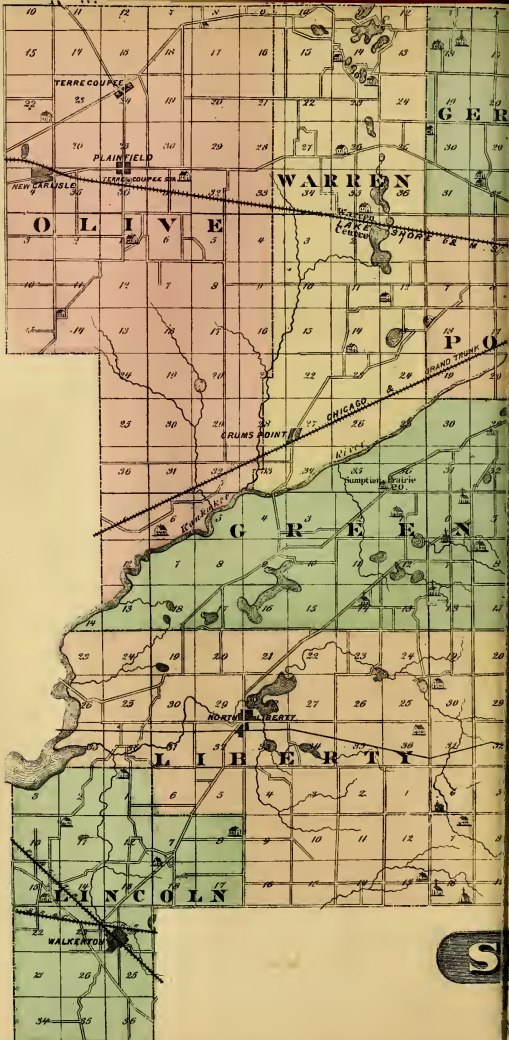
## PORTRAITS.

Colfax, Schuyler.....	475
Coquillard, Alex.....	Frontispiece
Coquillard, A. T.....	703
Coquillard, A.....	739
Corby, Wm.....	793
Ham, L. J.....	757
Holloway, W. J.....	917

Howard, T. E.....	847
Knoblock, J. C.....	865
Longley, W. H.....	811
Lederer, John N.....	883
Miller, Wm.....	829
Partridge, J. M., A. M., M. D.....	935
Sorin, E.....	775











**SEPH**  
**NTY,**  
 D.



# HISTORY OF INDIANA.

---

## FORMER OCCUPANTS.

---

### PREHISTORIC RACES.

Scientists have ascribed to the Mound Builders varied origins, and though their divergence of opinion may for a time seem incompatible with a thorough investigation of the subject, and tend to a confusion of ideas, no doubt whatever can exist as to the comparative accuracy of conclusions arrived at by some of them. Like the vexed question of the Pillar Towers of Ireland, it has caused much speculation, and elicited the opinions of so many learned antiquarians, ethnologists and travelers, that it will not be found beyond the range of possibility to make deductions that may suffice to solve the problem who were the prehistoric settlers of America. To achieve this it will not be necessary to go beyond the period over which Scripture history extends, or to indulge in those airy flights of imagination so sadly identified with occasional writers of even the Christian school, and all the accepted literary exponents of modern paganism.

That this continent is co-existent with the world of the ancients cannot be questioned. Every investigation, instituted under the auspices of modern civilization, confirms the fact and leaves no channel open through which the skeptic can escape the thorough refutation of his opinions. China, with its numerous living testimonials of antiquity, with its ancient, though limited literature and its Babelish superstitions, claims a continuous history from antediluvian times; but although its continuity may be denied with every just reason, there is nothing to prevent the transmission of a hieroglyphic record of its history prior to 1656 *anno mundi*, since many traces of its early settlement survived the Deluge, and became sacred objects of the first historical epoch. This very survival of a record, such as that of which the Chinese boast, is not at variance with the designs of a God who made and ruled the universe; but that an antediluvian people inhabited this continent,

will not be claimed; because it is not probable, though it may be possible, that a settlement in a land which may be considered a portion of the Asiatic continent, was effected by the immediate followers of the first progenitors of the human race. Therefore, on entering the study of the ancient people who raised these tumulus monuments over large tracts of the country, it will be just sufficient to wander back to that time when the flood-gates of heaven were swung open to hurl destruction on a wicked world; and in doing so the inquiry must be based on legendary, or rather upon many circumstantial evidences; for, so far as written narrative extends, there is nothing to show that a movement of people too far east resulted in a Western settlement.

#### THE FIRST IMMIGRATION.

The first and most probable sources in which the origin of the Builders must be sought, are those countries lying along the eastern coast of Asia, which doubtless at that time stretched far beyond its present limits, and presented a continuous shore from Lopatka to Point Cambodia, holding a population comparatively civilized, and all professing some elementary form of the Boodhism of later days. Those peoples, like the Chinese of the present, were bound to live at home, and probably observed that law until after the confusion of languages and the dispersion of the builders of Babel in 1757, A. M.; but subsequently, within the following century, the old Mongolians, like the new, crossed the great ocean in the very paths taken by the present representatives of the race, arrived on the same shores, which now extend a very questionable hospitality to them, and entered at once upon the colonization of the country south and east, while the Caucasian race engaged in a similar movement of exploration and colonization over what may be justly termed the western extension of Asia, and both peoples growing stalwart under the change, attained a moral and physical eminence to which they never could lay claim under the tropical sun which shed its beams upon the cradle of the human race.

That mysterious people who, like the Brahmins of to-day, worshiped some transitory deity, and in after years, evidently embraced the idealization of Boodhism, as preached in Mongolia early in the 35th century of the world, together with acquiring the learning of the Confucian and Pythagorean schools of the same period, spread all over the land, and in their numerous settlements erected these raths, or mounds, and sacrificial altars whereon they received their

periodical visiting gods, surrendered their bodies to natural absorption or annihilation, and watched for the return of some transmigrated soul, the while adoring the universe, which with all beings they believed would be eternally existent. They possessed religious orders corresponding in external show at least with the Essenes or Theraputæ of the pre-Christian and Christian epochs, and to the reformed Theraputæ or monks of the present. Every memento of their coming and their stay which has descended to us is an evidence of their civilized condition. The free copper found within the tumuli; the open veins of the Superior and Iron Mountain copper-mines, with all the *modus operandi* of ancient mining, such as ladders, levers, chisels, and hammer-heads, discovered by the French explorers of the Northwest and the Mississippi, are conclusive proofs that those prehistoric people were highly civilized, and that many flourishing colonies were spread throughout the Mississippi valley, while yet the mammoth, the mastodon, and a hundred other animals, now only known by their gigantic fossil remains, guarded the eastern shore of the continent as it were against supposed invasions of the Tower Builders who went west from Babel; while yet the beautiful isles of the Antilles formed an integral portion of this continent, long years before the European Northman dreamed of setting forth to the discovery of Greenland and the northern isles, and certainly at a time when all that portion of America north of latitude 45° was an ice-incumbered waste.

Within the last few years great advances have been made toward the discovery of antiquities whether pertaining to remains of organic or inorganic nature. Together with many small, but telling relics of the early inhabitants of the country, the fossils of prehistoric animals have been unearthed from end to end of the land, and in districts, too, long pronounced by geologists of some repute to be without even a vestige of vertebrate fossils. Among the collected souvenirs of an age about which so very little is known, are twenty-five vertebræ averaging thirteen inches in diameter, and three vertebræ ossified together measure nine cubical feet; a thigh-bone five feet long by twenty-eight, by twelve inches in diameter, and the shaft fourteen by eight inches thick, the entire lot weighing 600 lbs. These fossils are presumed to belong to the cretaceous period, when the Dinosaur roamed over the country from East to West, desolating the villages of the people. This animal is said to have been sixty feet long, and when feeding in cypress and palm forests, to extend himself eighty-five feet, so that he may

devour the budding tops of those great trees. Other efforts in this direction may lead to great results, and culminate probably in the discovery of a tablet engraved by some learned Mound Builder, describing in the ancient hieroglyphics of China all these men and beasts whose history excites so much speculation. The identity of the Mound Builders with the Mongolians might lead us to hope for such a consummation; nor is it beyond the range of probability, particularly in this practical age, to find the future labors of some industrious antiquarian requited by the upheaval of a tablet, written in the Tartar characters of 1700 years ago, bearing on a subject which can now be treated only on a purely circumstantial basis.

#### THE SECOND IMMIGRATION

may have begun a few centuries prior to the Christian era, and unlike the former expedition or expeditions, to have traversed north-eastern Asia to its Arctic confines, and then east to the narrow channel now known as Behring's Straits, which they crossed, and sailing up the unchanging Yukon, settled under the shadow of Mount St. Elias for many years, and pushing South commingled with their countrymen, soon acquiring the characteristics of the descendants of the first colonists. Chinese chronicles tell of such a people, who went North and were never heard of more. Circumstances conspire to render that particular colony the carriers of a new religious faith and of an alphabetic system of a representative character to the old colonists, and they, doubtless, exercised a most beneficial influence in other respects; because the influx of immigrants of such culture as were the Chinese, even of that remote period, must necessarily bear very favorable results, not only in bringing in reports of their travels, but also accounts from the fatherland bearing on the latest events.

With the idea of a second and important exodus there are many theorists united, one of whom says: "It is now the generally received opinion that the first inhabitants of America passed over from Asia through these straits. The number of small islands lying between both continents renders this opinion still more probable; and it is yet farther confirmed by some remarkable traces of similarity in the physical conformation of the northern natives of both continents. The Esquimaux of North America, the Samoieds of Asia, and the Laplanders of Europe, are supposed to be of the same family; and this supposition is strengthened by the affinity which exists in their languages. The researches of Hum-

boldt have traced the Mexicans to the vicinity of Behring's Straits; whence it is conjectured that they, as well as the Peruvians and other tribes, came originally from Asia, and were the Hiongnos, who are, in the Chinese annals, said to have emigrated under Puno, and to have been lost in the North of Siberia."

Since this theory is accepted by most antiquaries, there is every reason to believe that from the discovery of what may be called an overland route to what was then considered an eastern extension of that country which is now known as the "Celestial Empire," many caravans of emigrants passed to their new homes in the land of illimitable possibilities until the way became a well-marked trail over which the Asiatic might travel forward, and having once entered the Elysian fields never entertained an idea of returning. Thus from generation to generation the tide of immigration poured in until the slopes of the Pacific and the banks of the great inland rivers became hives of busy industry. Magnificent cities and populous settlements centered with happy villages sprung up everywhere in manifestation of the power and wealth and knowledge of the people. The colonizing Caucasian of the historic period walked over this great country on the very ruins of a civilization which a thousand years before eclipsed all that of which he could boast. He walked through the wilderness of the West over buried treasures hidden under the accumulated growth of nature, nor rested until he saw, with great surprise, the remains of ancient pyramids and temples and cities, larger and evidently more beautiful than ancient Egypt could bring forth after its long years of uninterrupted history. The pyramids resemble those of Egypt in exterior form, and in some instances are of larger dimensions. The pyramid of Cholula is square, having each side of its base 1,335 feet in length, and its height about 172 feet. Another pyramid, situated in the north of Vera Cruz, is formed of large blocks of highly-polished porphyry, and bears upon its front hieroglyphic inscriptions and curious sculpture. Each side of its square base is 82 feet in length, and a flight of 57 steps conducts to its summit, which is 65 feet in height. The ruins of Palenque are said to extend 20 miles along the ridge of a mountain, and the remains of an Aztec city, near the banks of the river Gila, are spread over more than a square league. Their literature consisted of hieroglyphics; but their arithmetical knowledge did not extend farther than their calculations by the aid of grains of corn. Yet,

notwithstanding all their varied accomplishments, and they were evidently many, their notions of religious duty led to a most demoniac zeal at once barbarously savage and ferociously cruel. Each visiting, god instead of bringing new life to the people, brought death to thousands; and their grotesque idols, exposed to drown the senses of the beholders in fear, wrought wretchedness rather than spiritual happiness, until, as some learned and humane Montezumian said, the people never approached these idols without fear, and this fear was the great animating principle, the great religious motive power which sustained the terrible religion. Their altars were sprinkled with blood drawn from their own bodies in large quantities, and on them thousands of human victims were sacrificed in honor of the demons whom they worshiped. The head and heart of every captive taken in war were offered up as a bloody sacrifice to the god of battles, while the victorious legions feasted on the remaining portions of the dead bodies. It has been ascertained that during the ceremonies attendant on the consecration of two of their temples, the number of prisoners offered up in sacrifice was 12,210; while their own legions contributed voluntary victims to the terrible belief in large numbers. Nor did this horrible custom cease immediately after 1521, when Cortez entered the imperial city of the Montezumas; for, on being driven from it, all his troops who fell into the hands of the native soldiers were subjected to the most terrible and proionged suffering that could be experienced in this world, and when about to yield up that spirit which is indestructible, were offered in sacrifice, their hearts and heads consecrated, and the victors allowed to feast on the yet warm flesh.

A reference is made here to the period when the Montezumas ruled over Mexico, simply to gain a better idea of the hideous idolatry which took the place of the old Boodhism of the Mound Builders, and doubtless helped in a great measure to give victory to the new comers, even as the tenets of Mahometanism urged the ignorant followers of the prophet to the conquest of great nations. It was not the faith of the people who built the mounds and the pyramids and the temples, and who, 200 years before the Christian era, built the great wall of jealous China. No: rather was it that terrible faith born of the Tartar victory, which carried the great defenses of China at the point of the javelin and hatchet, who afterward marched to the very walls of Rome, under Alaric, and



spread over the islands of Polynesia to the Pacific slopes of South America.

#### THE TARTARS

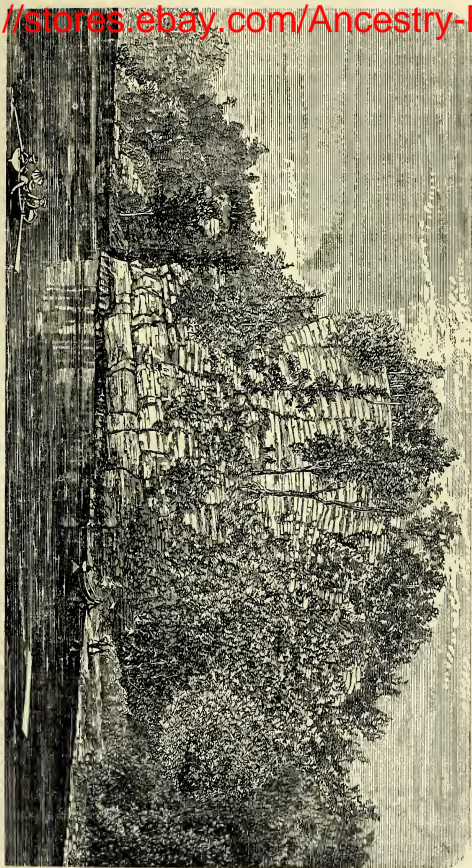
came there, and, like the pure Mongols of Mexico and the Mississippi valley, rose to a state of civilization bordering on that attained by them. Here for centuries the sons of the fierce Tartar race continued to dwell in comparative peace until the all-ruling ambition of empire took in the whole country from the Pacific to the Atlantic, and peopled the vast territory watered by the Amazon with a race that was destined to conquer all the peoples of the Orient, and only to fall before the march of the arch-civilizing Caucasian. In course of time those fierce Tartars pushed their settlements northward, and ultimately entered the territories of the Mound Builders, putting to death all who fell within their reach, and causing the survivors of the death-dealing invasion to seek a refuge from the hordes of this semi-barbarous people in the wilds and fastnesses of the North and Northwest. The beautiful country of the Mound Builders was now in the hands of savage invaders, the quiet, industrious people who raised the temples and pyramids were gone; and the wealth of intelligence and industry, accumulating for ages, passed into the possession of a rapacious horde, who could admire it only so far as it offered objects for plunder. Even in this the invaders were satisfied, and then having arrived at the height of their ambition, rested on their swords and entered upon the luxury and ease in the enjoyment of which they were found when the vanguard of European civilization appeared upon the scene. Meantime the southern countries which those adventurers abandoned after having completed their conquests in the North, were soon peopled by hundreds of people, always moving from island to island and ultimately halting amid the ruins of villages deserted by those who, as legends tell, had passed eastward but never returned; and it would scarcely be a matter for surprise if those emigrants were found to be the progenitors of that race found by the Spaniards in 1532, and identical with the Araucanians, Cuenches and Huiliches of to-day.

#### RELICS OF THE MOUND BUILDERS.

One of the most brilliant and impartial historians of the Republic stated that the valley of the Mississippi contained no monuments. So far as the word is entertained now, he was literally correct, but

in some hasty effort neglected to qualify his sentence by a reference to the numerous relics of antiquity to be found throughout its length and breadth, and so exposed his chapters to criticism. The valley of the Father of Waters, and indeed the country from the trap rocks of the Great Lakes southeast to the Gulf and southwest to Mexico, abound in tell-tale monuments of a race of people much farther advanced in civilization than the Montezumas of the sixteenth century. The remains of walls and fortifications found in Kentucky and Indiana, the earthworks of Vincennes and throughout the valley of the Wabash, the mounds scattered over Alabama, Florida, Georgia and Virginia, and those found in Illinois, Wisconsin and Minnesota, are all evidences of the universality of the Chinese Mongols and of their advance toward a comparative knowledge of man and cosmology. At the mouth of Fourteen-Mile creek, in Clark county, Indiana, there stands one of these old monuments known as the "Stone Fort." It is an unmistakable heirloom of a great and ancient people, and must have formed one of their most important posts. The State Geologist's report, filed among the records of the State and furnished by Prof. Cox, says: "At the mouth of Fourteen-Mile creek, and about three miles from Charleston, the county-seat of Clark county, there is one of the most remarkable stone fortifications which has ever come under my notice. Accompanied by my assistant, Mr. Borden, and a number of citizens of Charleston, I visited the 'Stone Fort' for the purpose of making an examination of it. The locality selected for this fort presents many natural advantages for making it impregnable to the opposing forces of prehistoric times. It occupies the point of an elevated narrow ridge which faces the Ohio river on the east and is bordered by Fourteen-Mile creek on the west side. This creek empties into the Ohio a short distance below the fort. The top of the ridge is pear-shaped, with the part answering to the neck at the north end. This part is not over twenty feet wide, and is protected by precipitous natural walls of stone. It is 280 feet above the level of the Ohio river, and the slope is very gradual to the south. At the upper field it is 240 feet high and one hundred steps wide. At the lower timber it is 120 feet high. The bottom land at the foot of the south end is sixty feet above the river. Along the greater part of the Ohio river front there is an abrupt escarpment rock, entirely too steep to be scaled, and a similar natural barrier exists along a portion of the northwest side of the ridge, facing the creek. This natural wall

SCENE ON THE OHIO RIVER.





is joined to the neck of an artificial wall, made by piling up, mason fashion but without mortar, loose stone, which had evidently been pried up from the carboniferous layers of rock. This made wall, at this point, is about 150 feet long. It is built along the slope of the hill and had an elevation of about 75 feet above its base, the upper ten feet being vertical. The inside of the wall is protected by a ditch. The remainder of the hill is protected by an artificial stone wall, built in the same manner, but not more than ten feet high. The elevation of the side wall above the creek bottom is 80 feet. Within the artificial walls is a string of mounds which rise to the height of the wall, and are protected from the washing of the hill-sides by a ditch 20 feet wide and four feet deep. The position of the artificial walls, natural cliffs of bedded stone, as well as that of the ditch and mounds, are well illustrated. The top of the enclosed ridge embraces ten or twelve acres, and there are as many as five mounds that can be recognized on the flat surface, while no doubt many others existed which have been obliterated by time, and though the agency of man in his efforts to cultivate a portion of the ground. A trench was cut into one of these mounds in search of relics. A few fragments of charcoal and decomposed bones, and a large irregular, diamond-shaped boulder, with a small circular indentation near the middle of the upper part, that was worn quite smooth by the use to which it had been put, and the small pieces of fossil coral, comprised all the articles of note which were revealed by the excavation. The earth of which the mound is made resembles that seen on the hillside, and was probably in most part taken from the ditch. The margin next to the ditch was protected by slabs of stone set on edge, and leaning at an angle corresponding to the slope of the mound. This stone shield was two and one-half feet wide and one foot high. At intervals along the great ditch there are channels formed between the mounds that probably served to carry off the surplus water through openings in the outer wall. On the top of the enclosed ridge, and near its narrowest part, there is one mound much larger than any of the others, and so situated as to command an extensive view up and down the Ohio river, as well as affording an unobstructed view east and west. This is designated as 'Look-out Mound.' There is near it a slight break in the cliff of rock, which furnished a narrow passageway to the Ohio river. Though the locality afforded many natural advantages for a fort or stronghold, one is compelled to admit that much skill was displayed and labor expended in making its defense as perfect as possible at

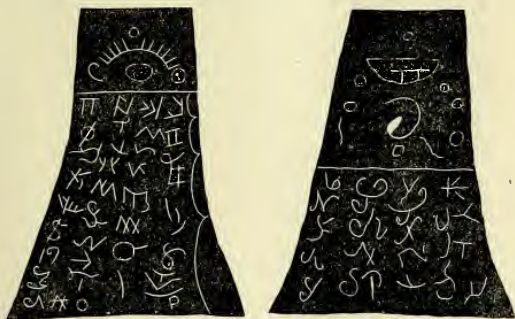
all points. Stone axes, pestles, arrow-heads, spear-points, totums, charms and flint flakes have been found in great abundance in plowing the field at the foot of the old fort."

From the "Stone Fort" the Professor turns his steps to Posey county, at a point on the Wabash, ten miles above the mouth, called "Bone Bank," on account of the number of human bones continually washed out from the river bank. "It is," he states "situated in a bend on the left bank of the river; and the ground is about ten feet above high-water mark, being the only land along this portion of the river that is not submerged in seasons of high water. The bank slopes gradually back from the river to a slough. This slough now seldom contains water, but no doubt at one time it was an arm of the Wabash river, which flowed around the Bone Bank and afforded protection to the island home of the Mound Builders. The Wabash has been changing its bed for many years, leaving a broad extent of newly made land on the right shore, and gradually making inroads on the left shore by cutting away the Bone Bank. The stages of growth of land on the right bank of the river are well defined by the cottonwood trees, which increase in size as you go back from the river. Unless there is a change in the current of the river, all trace of the Bone Bank will be obliterated. Already within the memory of the white inhabitants, the bank has been removed to the width of several hundred yards. As the bank is cut by the current of the river it loses its support, and when the water sinks it tumbles over, carrying with it the bones of the Mound Builders and the cherished articles buried with them. No locality in the country furnishes a greater number and variety of relics than this. It has proved especially rich in pottery of quaint design and skillful workmanship. I have a number of jugs and pots and a cup found at the Bone Bank. This kind of work has been very abundant, and is still found in such quantities that we are led to conclude that its manufacture formed a leading industry of the inhabitants of the Bone Bank. It is not in Europe alone that we find a well-founded claim of high antiquity for the art of making hard and durable stone by a mixture of clay, lime, sand and stone; for I am convinced that this art was possessed by a race of people who inhabited this continent at a period so remote that neither tradition nor history can furnish any account of them. They belonged to the Neolithic, or polished-stone, age. They lived in towns and built mounds for sepulture and worship and protected their homes by surrounding them with walls of earth and

stone. In some of these mounds specimens of various kinds of pottery, in a perfect state of preservation, have from time to time been found, and fragments are so common that every student of archæology can have a bountiful supply. Some of these fragments indicate vessels of very great size. At the Saline springs of Galatin I picked up fragments that indicated, by their curvature, vessels five to six feet in diameter, and it is probable they are fragments of artificial stone pans used to hold brine that was manufactured into salt by solar evaporation.

"Now, all the pottery belonging to the Mound Builders' age, which I have seen, is composed of alluvial clay and sand, or a mixture of the former with pulverized fresh-water shells. A paste made of such a mixture possesses, in high degree, the properties of hydraulic Puzzuoland and Portland cement, so that vessels formed of it hardened without being burned, as is customary with modern pottery."

The Professor deals very aptly with this industry of the aborigines, and concludes a very able disquisition on the Bone Bank in its relation to the prehistoric builders.



HIEROGLYPHICS OF THE MOUND-BUILDERS.

The great circular redoubt or earth-work found two miles west of the village of New Washington, and the "Stone Fort," on a ridge one mile west of the village of Deputy, offer a subject for the antiquarian as deeply interesting as any of the monuments of a decayed empire so far discovered.



From end to end of Indiana there are to be found many other relics of the obscure past. Some of them have been unearthed and now appear among the collected antiquities at Indianapolis. The highly finished sandstone pipe, the copper ax, stone axes, flint arrow-heads and magnetic plummet found a few years ago beneath the soil of Cut-Off Island near New Harmony, together with the pipes of rare workmanship and undoubted age, unearthed near Covington, all live as it were in testimony of their owner's and maker's excellence, and hold a share in the evidence of the partial annihilation of a race, with the complete disruption of its manners, customs and industries; and it is possible that when numbers of these relics are placed together, a key to the phonetic or rather hieroglyphic system of that remote period might be evolved.

It may be asked what these hieroglyphical characters really are. Well, they are varied in form, so much so that the pipes found in the mounds of Indians, each bearing a distinct representation of some animal, may be taken for one species, used to represent the abstract ideas of the Mound Builders. The second form consists of pure hieroglyphics or phonetic characters, in which the sound is represented instead of the object; and the third, or painted form of the first, conveys to the mind that which is desired to be represented. This form exists among the Cree Indians of the far Northwest, at present. They, when departing from their permanent villages for the distant hunting grounds, paint on the barked trees in the neighborhood the figure of a snake or eagle, or perhaps huskey dog; and this animal is supposed to guard the position until the warrior's return, or welcome any friendly tribes that may arrive there in the interim. In the case of the Mound Builders, it is unlikely that this latter extreme was resorted to, for the simple reason that the relics of their occupation are too high in the ways of art to tolerate such a barbarous science of language; but the sculptured pipes and javelins and spear-heads of the Mound Builders may be taken as a collection of graven images, each conveying a set of ideas easily understood, and perhaps sometimes or more generally used to designate the vocation, name or character of the owner. That the builders possessed an alphabet of a phonetic form, and purely hieroglyphic, can scarcely be questioned; but until one or more of the unearthed tablets, which bore all or even a portion of such characters, are raised from their centuried graves, the mystery which surrounds this people must remain, while we must dwell in a world of mere speculation.



Vigo, Jasper, Sullivan, Switzerland and Ohio counties can boast of a most liberal endowment in this relation; and when in other days the people will direct a minute inquiry, and penetrate to the very heart of the thousand cones which are scattered throughout the land, they may possibly extract the blood in the shape of metallic and porcelain works, with hieroglyphic tablets, while leaving the form of heart and body complete to entertain and delight unborn generations, who in their time will wonder much when they learn that an American people, living toward the close of the 59th century, could possibly indulge in such an anachronism as is implied in the term "New World."

#### THE INDIANS.

The origin of the Red Men, or American Indians, is a subject which interests as well as instructs. It is a favorite with the ethnologist, even as it is one of deep concern to the ordinary reader. A review of two works lately published on the origin of the Indians treats the matter in a peculiarly reasonable light. It says:

"Recently a German writer has put forward one theory on the subject, and an English writer has put forward another and directly opposite theory. The difference of opinion concerning our aborigines among authors who have made a profound study of races is at once curious and interesting. Blumenbach treats them in his classifications as a distinct variety of the human family; but, in the threefold division of Dr. Latham, they are ranked among the Mongolidae. Other writers on race regard them as a branch of the great Mongolian family, which at a distant period found its way from Asia to this continent, and remained here for centuries separate from the rest of mankind, passing, meanwhile, through divers phases of barbarism and civilization. Morton, our eminent ethnologist, and his followers, Nott and Gliddon, claim for our native Red Men an origin as distinct as the flora and fauna of this continent. Prichard, whose views are apt to differ from Morton's, finds reason to believe, on comparing the American tribes together, that they must have formed a separate department of nations from the earliest period of the world. The era of their existence as a distinct and insulated people must probably be dated back to the time which separated into nations the inhabitants of the Old World, and gave to each its individuality and primitive language. Dr. Robert Brown, the latest authority, attributes, in his "Races of Mankind," an Asiatic origin to our aboriginals. He says that the Western Indians not only personally resemble their nearest neighbors—the Northeastern Asiatics—but they resemble them in language and traditions. The Esquimaux on the American and the Telukthchis on the Asiatic side understand one another perfectly. Modern an-

thropologists, indeed, are disposed to think that Japan, the Kuriles, and neighboring regions, may be regarded as the original home of the greater part of the native American race. It is also admitted by them that between the tribes scattered from the Arctic sea to Cape Horn there is more uniformity of physical features than is seen in any other quarter of the globe. The weight of evidence and authority is altogether in favor of the opinion that our so-called Indians are a branch of the Mongolian family, and all additional researches strengthen the opinion. The tribes of both North and South America are unquestionably homogeneous, and, in all likelihood, had their origin in Asia, though they have been altered and modified by thousands of years of total separation from the parent stock."

The conclusions arrived at by the reviewer at that time, though safe, are too general to lead the reader to form any definite idea on the subject. No doubt whatever can exist, when the American Indian is regarded as of an Asiatic origin; but there is nothing in the works or even in the review, to which these works were subjected, which might account for the vast difference in manner and form between the Red Man, as he is now known, or even as he appeared to Columbus and his successors in the field of discovery, and the comparatively civilized inhabitants of Mexico, as seen in 1521 by Cortez, and of Peru, as witnessed by Pizarro in 1532. The fact is that the pure bred Indian of the present is descended directly from the earliest inhabitants, or in other words from the survivors of that people who, on being driven from their fair possessions, retired to the wilderness in sorrow and reared up their children under the saddening influences of their unquenchable griefs, bequeathing them only the habits of the wild, cloud-roofed home of their declining years, a sullen silence, and a rude moral code. In after years these wild sons of the forest and prairie grew in numbers and in strength. Some legend told them of their present sufferings, of the station which their fathers once had known, and of the riotous race which now reveled in wealth which should be theirs. The fierce passions of the savage were aroused, and uniting their scattered bands marched in silence upon the villages of the Tartars, driving them onward to the capital of their Incas, and consigning their homes to the flames. Once in view of the great city, the hurrying bands halted in surprise; but Tartar cunning took in the situation and offered pledges of amity, which were sacredly observed. Henceforth Mexico was open to the Indians, bearing precisely the same relation to them that the Hudson's Bay Company's

villages do to the Northwestern Indians of the present; obtaining all, and bestowing very little. The subjection of the Mongolian race represented in North America by that branch of it to which the Tartars belonged, represented in the Southern portion of the continent, seems to have taken place some five centuries before the advent of the European, while it may be concluded that the war of the races which resulted in reducing the villages erected by the Tartar hordes to ruin took place between one and two hundred years later. These statements, though actually referring to events which in point of time are comparatively modern, can only be substantiated by the facts that, about the periods mentioned the dead bodies of an unknown race of men were washed ashore on the European coasts, while previous to that time there is no account whatever in European annals of even a vestige of trans-Atlantic humanity being transferred by ocean currents to the gaze of a wondering people. Towards the latter half of the 15th century two dead bodies entirely free from decomposition, and corresponding with the Red Men as they afterward appeared to Columbus, were cast on the shores of the Azores, and confirmed Columbus in his belief in the existence of a western world and western people.

Storm and flood and disease have created sad havoc in the ranks of the Indian since the occupation of the country by the white man. These natural causes have conspired to decimate the race even more than the advance of civilization, which seems not to affect it to any material extent. In its maintenance of the same number of representatives during three centuries, and its existence in the very face of a most unceremonious, and, whenever necessary, cruel conquest, the grand dispensations of the unseen Ruler of the universe is demonstrated; for, without the aborigines, savage and treacherous as they were, it is possible that the explorers of former times would have so many natural difficulties to contend with, that their work would be surrendered in despair, and the most fertile regions of the continent saved for the plowshares of generations yet unborn. It is questionable whether we owe the discovery of this continent to the unaided scientific knowledge of Columbus, or to the dead bodies of the two Indians referred to above; nor can their services to the explorers of ancient and modern times be over-estimated. Their existence is embraced in the plan of the Divinity for the government of the world, and it will not form subject for surprise to learn that the same intelligence which sent a thrill of liberty into every corner of the republic, will, in the near future,

devise some method under which the remnant of a great and ancient race may taste the sweets of public kindness, and feel that, after centuries of turmoil and tyranny, they have at last found a shelter amid a sympathizing people. Many have looked at the Indian as the pessimist does at all things; they say that he was never formidable until the white man supplied him with the weapons of modern warfare; but there is no mention made of his eviction from his retired home, and the little plot of cultivated garden which formed the nucleus of a village that, if fostered instead of being destroyed, might possibly hold an Indian population of some importance in the economy of the nation. There is no intention whatever to maintain that the occupation of this country by the favored races is wrong even in principle; for where any obstacle to advancing civilization exists, it has to fall to the ground; but it may be said, with some truth, that the white man, instead of a policy of conciliation formed upon the power of kindness, indulged in belligerency as impolitic as it was unjust. A modern writer says, when speaking of the Indian's character: "He did not exhibit that steady valor and efficient discipline of the American soldier; and to-day on the plains Sheridan's troopers would not hesitate to attack the bravest band, though outnumbered three to one." This piece of information applies to the European and African, as well as to the Indian. The American soldier, and particularly the troopers referred to, would not fear or shrink from a very legion of demons, even with odds against them. This mode of warfare seems strangely peculiar when compared with the military systems of civilized countries; yet, since the main object of armed men is to defend a country or a principle, and to destroy anything which may oppose itself to them, the mode of warfare pursued by the savage will be found admirably adapted to their requirements in this connection, and will doubtless compare favorably with the systems of the Afghans and Persians of the present, and the Caucasian people of the first historic period.

#### MANNERS AND CUSTOMS.

The art of hunting not only supplied the Indian with food, but, like that of war, was a means of gratifying his love of distinction. The male children, as soon as they acquired sufficient age and strength, were furnished with a bow and arrow and taught to shoot birds and other small game. Success in killing a large quadruped required years of careful study and practice, and the art was as

sedulously inculcated in the minds of the rising generation as are the elements of reading, writing and arithmetic in the common schools of civilized communities. The mazes of the forest and the dense, tall grass of the prairies were the best fields for the exercise of the hunter's skill. No feet could be impressed in the yielding soil but that the tracks were the objects of the most searching scrutiny, and revealed at a glance the animal that made them, the direction it was pursuing, and the time that had elapsed since it had passed. In a forest country he selected the valleys, because they were most frequently the resort of game. The most easily taken, perhaps, of all the animals of the chase was the deer. It is endowed with a curiosity which prompts it to stop in its flight and look back at the approaching hunter, who always avails himself of this opportunity to let fly the fatal arrow.

Their general councils were composed of the chiefs and old men. When in council, they usually sat in concentric circles around the speaker, and each individual, notwithstanding the fiery passions that rankled within, preserved an exterior as immovable as if cast in bronze. Before commencing business a person appeared with the sacred pipe, and another with fire to kindle it. After being lighted it was first presented to heaven, secondly to the earth, thirdly to the presiding spirit, and lastly the several councilors, each of whom took a whiff. These formalities were observed with as close exactness as state etiquette in civilized courts.

The dwellings of the Indians were of the simplest and rudest character. On some pleasant spot by the bank of a river, or near an ever-running spring, they raised their groups of wigwams, constructed of the bark of trees, and easily taken down and removed to another spot. The dwelling-places of the chiefs were sometimes more spacious, and constructed with greater care, but of the same materials. Skins taken in the chase served them for repose. Though principally dependent upon hunting and fishing, the uncertain supply from those sources led them to cultivate small patches of corn. Every family did everything necessary within itself, commerce, or an interchange of articles, being almost unknown to them. In cases of dispute and dissension, each Indian relied upon himself for retaliation. Blood for blood was the rule, and the relatives of the slain man were bound to obtain bloody revenge for his death. This principle gave rise, as a matter of course, to innumerable and bitter feuds, and wars of extermination where such were possible. War, indeed, rather than peace, was the Indian's

glory and delight,—war, not conducted as civilization, but war where individual skill, endurance, gallantry and cruelty were prime requisites. For such a purpose as revenge the Indian would make great sacrifices, and display a patience and perseverance truly heroic; but when the excitement was over, he sank back into a listless, unoccupied, well-nigh useless savage. During the intervals of his more exciting pursuits, the Indian employed his time in decorating his person with all the refinement of paint and feathers, and in the manufacture of his arms and of canoes. These were constructed of bark, and so light that they could easily be carried on the shoulder from stream to stream. His amusements were the war-dance, athletic games, the narration of his exploits, and listening to the oratory of the chiefs; but during long periods of such existence he remained in a state of torpor, gazing listlessly upon the trees of the forests and the clouds that sailed above them; and this vacancy imprinted an habitual gravity, and even melancholy, upon his general deportment.

The main labor and drudgery of Indian communities fell upon the women. The planting, tending and gathering of the crops, making mats and baskets, carrying burdens,—in fact, all things of the kind were performed by them, thus making their condition but little better than that of slaves. Marriage was merely a matter of bargain and sale, the husband giving presents to the father of the bride. In general they had but few children. They were subjected to many and severe attacks of sickness, and at times famine and pestilence swept away whole tribes.

## EXPLORATIONS BY THE WHITES.

### EARLIEST EXPLORERS.

The State of Indiana is bounded on the east by the meridian line which forms also the western boundary of Ohio, extending due north from the mouth of the Great Miami river; on the south by the Ohio river from the mouth of the Great Miami to the mouth of the Wabash; on the west by a line drawn along the middle of the Wabash river from its mouth to a point where a due north line from the town of Vincennes would last touch the shore of said river, and thence directly north to Lake Michigan; and on the north by said lake and an east and west line ten miles north of the extreme south end of the lake, and extending to its intersection with the aforesaid meridian, the west boundary of Ohio. These boundaries include an area of 33,809 square miles, lying between 37° 47' and 41° 50' north latitude, and between 7° 45' and 11° 1' west longitude from Washington.

After the discovery of America by Columbus in 1492, more than 150 years passed away before any portion of the territory now comprised within the above limits was explored by Europeans. Colonies were established in Florida, Virginia and Nova Scotia by the principal rival governments of Europe, but not until about 1670-'2 did the first white travelers venture as far into the Northwest as Indiana or Lake Michigan. These explorers were Frenchmen by the names of Claude Allouez and Claude Dablon, who then visited what is now the eastern part of Wisconsin, the northeastern portion of Illinois and probably that portion of this State north of the Kankakee river. In the following year M. Joliet, an agent of the French Colonial government, and James Marquette, a good and simple-hearted missionary who had his station at Mackinaw, explored the country about Green Bay, and along Fox and Wisconsin rivers as far westward as the Mississippi, the banks of which they reached June 17, 1673. They descended this river to about 33° 40', but returned by way of the Illinois river and the route they came in the Lake Region. At a village among the Illinois Indians, Marquette and his small band of adventurers were received

in a friendly manner and treated hospitably. They were made the honored guests at a great feast, where hominy, fish, dog meat and roast buffalo meat were spread before them in great abundance. In 1682 LaSalle explored the West, but it is not known that he entered the region now embraced within the State of Indiana. He took formal possession, however, of all the Mississippi region in the name of the King of France, in whose honor he gave all this Mississippi region, including what is now Indiana, the name "Louisiana." Spain at the same time laid claim to all the region about the Gulf of Mexico, and thus these two great nations were brought into collision. But the country was actually held and occupied by the great Miami confederacy of Indians, the Miamis proper (anciently the Twightwees) being the eastern and most powerful tribe. Their territory extended strictly from the Scioto river west to the Illinois river. Their villages were few and scattering, and their occupation was scarcely dense enough to maintain itself against invasion. Their settlements were occasionally visited by Christian missionaries, fur traders and adventurers, but no body of white men made any settlement sufficiently permanent for a title to national possession. Christian zeal animated France and England in missionary enterprise, the former in the interests of Catholicism and the latter in the interests of Protestantism. Hence their haste to preoccupy the land and proselyte the aborigines. No doubt this ugly rivalry was often seen by Indians, and they refused to be proselyted to either branch of Christianity.

The "Five Nations," farther east, comprised the Mohawks, Oneidas, Cayugas, Onondaguas and Senecas. In 1677 the number of warriors in this confederacy was 2,150. About 1711 the Tuscaroras retired from Carolina and joined the Iroquois, or Five Nations, which, after that event, became known as the "Six Nations." In 1689 hostilities broke out between the Five Nations and the colonists of Canada, and the almost constant wars in which France was engaged until the treaty of Ryswick in 1697 combined to check the grasping policy of Louis XIV., and to retard the planting of French colonies in the Mississippi valley. Missionary efforts, however, continued with more failure than success, the Jesuits allying themselves with the Indians in habits and customs, even encouraging inter-marriage between them and their white followers.



## OUABACHE.

The Wabash was first named by the French, and spelled by them Ouabache. This river was known even before the Ohio, and was navigated as the Ouabache all the way to the Mississippi a long time before it was discovered that it was a tributary of the Ohio (Belle Riviere). In navigating the Mississippi they thought they passed the mouth of the Ouabache instead of the Ohio. In traveling from the Great Lakes to the south, the French always went by the way of the Ouabache or Illinois.

## VINCENNES.

Francois Morgan de Vinsenne served in Canada as early as 1720 in the regiment of "De Carrignan" of the French service, and again on the lakes in the vicinity of Sault Ste. Marie in the same service under M. de Vaudriol, in 1725. It is possible that his advent to Vincennes may have taken place in 1732; and in proof of this the only record is an act of sale under the joint names of himself and Madame Vinsenne, the daughter of M. Philip Longprie, and dated Jan. 5, 1735. This document gives his military position as commandant of the post of Ouabache in the service of the French King. The will of Longprie, dated March 10, same year, bequeaths him, among other things, 408 pounds of pork, which he ordered to be kept safe until Vinsenne, who was then at Ouabache, returned to Kaskaskia.

There are many other documents connected with its early settlement by Vinsenne, among which is a receipt for the 100 pistoles granted him as his wife's marriage dowry. In 1736 this officer was ordered to Charlevoix by D'Artagette, viceroy of the King at New Orleans, and commandant of Illinois. Here M. St. Vinsenne received his mortal wounds. The event is chronicled as follows, in the words of D'Artagette: "We have just received very bad news from Louisiana, and our war with the Chickasaws. The French have been defeated. Among the slain is M. de Vinsenne, who ceased not until his last breath to exhort his men to behave worthy of their faith and fatherland."

Thus closed the career of this gallant officer, leaving a name which holds as a remembrancer the present beautiful town of Vincennes, changed from Vinscune to its present orthography in 1749.

Post Vincennes was settled as early as 1710 or 1711. In a letter from Father Marest to Father Germon, dated at Kaskaskia, Nov. 9, 1712, occurs this passage: "*Les Francois estoient itabli un fort sur*

*le fleuve Ouabache ; ils demanderent un missionnaire ; et le Pere Mermet leur fut envoye. Ce Pere crut devoir travailler a la conversion des Mascoutens qui avoient fait un village sur les bords duneme fleuve. C'est une nation Indiens qui entend la langue Illinoise.*" Translated: "The French have established a fort upon the river Wabash, and want a missionary; and Father Mermet has been sent to them. That Father believes he should labor for the conversion of the Mascoutens, who have built a village on the banks of the same river. They are a nation of Indians who understand the language of the Illinois."

Mermet was therefore the first preacher of Christianity in this part of the world, and his mission was to convert the Mascoutens, a branch of the Miamis. "The way I took," says he, "was to confound, in the presence of the whole tribe, one of these charlatans [medicine men], whose Manitou, or great spirit which he worshiped, was the buffalo. After leading him on insensibly to the avowal that it was not the buffalo that he worshiped, but the Manitou, or spirit, of the buffalo, which was under the earth and animated all buffaloes, which heals the sick and has all power, I asked him whether other beasts, the bear for instance, and which one of his nation worshiped, was not equally inhabited by a Manitou, which was under the earth. 'Without doubt,' said the grand medicine man. 'If this is so,' said I, 'men ought to have a Manitou who inhabits them.' 'Nothing more certain,' said he. 'Ought not that to convince you,' continued I, 'that you are not very reasonable? For if man upon the earth is the master of all animals, if he kills them, if he eats them, does it not follow that the Manitou which inhabits him must have a mastery over all other Manitous? Why then do you not invoke him instead of the Manitou of the bear and the buffalo, when you are sick?' This reasoning disconcerted the charlatan. But this was all the effect it produced."

The result of convincing these heathen by logic, as is generally the case the world over, was only a temporary logical victory, and no change whatever was produced in the professions and practices of the Indians.

But the first Christian (Catholic) missionary at this place whose name we find recorded in the Church annals, was Meurin, in 1849.

The church building used by these early missionaries at Vincennes is thus described by the "oldest inhabitants:" Fronting on Water street and running back on Church street, it was a plain

building with a rough exterior, of upright posts, chinked and daubed, with a rough coat of cement on the outside; about 20 feet wide and 60 long; one story high, with a small belfry and an equally small bell. It was dedicated to St. Francis Xavier. This spot is now occupied by a splendid cathedral.

Vincennes has ever been a stronghold of Catholicism. The Church there has educated and sent out many clergymen of her faith, some of whom have become bishops, or attained other high positions in ecclesiastical authority.

Almost contemporaneous with the progress of the Church at Vincennes was a missionary work near the mouth of the Wea river, among the Ouiatenons, but the settlement there was broken up in early day.

## NATIONAL POLICIES.

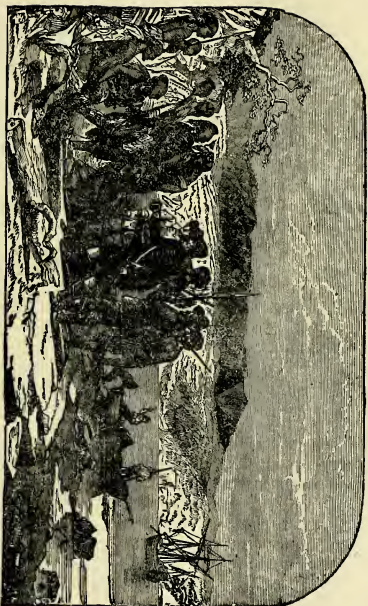
### THE GREAT FRENCH SCHEME.

Soon after the discovery of the mouth of the Mississippi by LaSalle in 1682, the government of France began to encourage the policy of establishing a line of trading posts and missionary stations extending through the West from Canada to Louisiana, and this policy was maintained, with partial success, for about 75 years. The traders persisted in importing whisky, which cancelled nearly every civilizing influence that could be brought to bear upon the Indian, and the vast distances between posts prevented that strength which can be enjoyed only by close and convenient inter-communication. Another characteristic of Indian nature was to listen attentively to all the missionary said, pretending to believe all he preached, and then offer in turn his theory of the world, of religion, etc., and because he was not listened to with the same degree of attention and pretense of belief, would go off disgusted. This was his idea of the golden rule.

The river St. Joseph of Lake Michigan was called "the river Miamis" in 1679, in which year LaSalle built a small fort on its bank, near the lake shore. The principal station of the mission for the instruction of the Miamis was established on the borders of this river. The first French post within the territory of the Miamis was at the mouth of the river Miamis, on an eminence naturally fortified on two sides by the river, and on one side by a

deep ditch made by a fall of water. It was of triangular form. The missionary Hennepin gives a good description of it, as he was one of the company who built it, in 1679. Says he: "We fell the trees that were on the top of the hill; and having cleared the same from bushes for about two musket shot, we began to build a redoubt of 80 feet long and 40 feet broad, with great square pieces of timber laid one upon another, and prepared a great number of stakes of about 25 feet long to drive into the ground, to make our fort more inaccessible on the riverside. We employed the whole month of November about that work, which was very hard, though we had no other food but the bear's flesh our savage killed. These beasts are very common in that place because of the great quantity of grapes they find there; but their flesh being too fat and luscious, our men began to be weary of it and desired leave to go a hunting to kill some wild goats. M. LaSalle denied them that liberty, which caused some murmurs among them; and it was but unwillingly that they continued their work. This, together with the approach of winter and the apprehension that M. LaSalle had that his vessel (the Griffin) was lost, made him very melancholy, though he concealed it as much as he could. We made a cabin wherein we performed divine service every Sunday, and Father Gabriel and I, who preached alternately, took care to take such texts as were suitable to our present circumstances and fit to inspire us with courage, concord and brotherly love. \* \* \* The fort was at last perfected, and called Fort Miamis."

In the year 1711 the missionary Chardon, who was said to be very zealous and apt in the acquisition of languages, had a station on the St. Joseph about 60 miles above the mouth. Charlevoix, another distinguished missionary from France, visited a post on this river in 1721. In a letter dated at the place, Aug. 16, he says: "There is a commandant here, with a small garrison. His house, which is but a very sorry one, is called the fort, from its being surrounded with an indifferent palisado, which is pretty near the case in all the rest. We have here two villages of Indians, one of the Miamis and the other of the Pottawatomies, both of them mostly Christians; but as they have been for a long time without any pastors, the missionary who has been lately sent to them will have no small difficulty in bringing them back to the exercise of their religion." He speaks also of the main commodity for which the Indians would part with their goods, namely, spirituous liquors, which they drink and keep drunk upon as long as a supply lasted.



LA SALLE LANDING AT THE MOUTH OF THE ST. JOSEPH'S RIVER.

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

More than a century and a half has now passed since Charlevoix penned the above, without any change whatever in this trait of Indian character.

In 1765 the Miami nation, or confederacy, was composed of four tribes, whose total number of warriors was estimated at only 1,050 men. Of these about 250 were Twightwees, or Miamis proper, 300 Weas, or Ouiatenons, 300 Piankeshaws and 200 Shockeys; and at this time the principal villages of the Twightwees were situated about the head of the Maumee river at and near the place where Fort Wayne now is. The larger Wea villages were near the banks of the Wabash river, in the vicinity of the Post Ouiatenon; and the Shockeys and Piankeshaws dwelt on the banks of the Vermilion and on the borders of the Wabash between Vincennes and Ouiatenon. Branches of the Pottawatomie, Shawnee, Delaware and Kickapoo tribes were permitted at different times to enter within the boundaries of the Miamis and reside for a while.

The wars in which France and England were engaged, from 1688 to 1697, retarded the growth of the colonies of those nations in North America, and the efforts made by France to connect Canada and the Gulf of Mexico by a chain of trading posts and colonies naturally excited the jealousy of England and gradually laid the foundation for a struggle at arms. After several stations were established elsewhere in the West, trading posts were started at the Miami villages, which stood at the head of the Maumee, at the Wea villages about Ouiatenon on the Wabash, and at the Piankeshaw villages about the present site of Vincennes. It is probable that before the close of the year 1719, temporary trading posts were erected at the sites of Fort Wayne, Ouiatenon and Vincennes. These points were probably often visited by French fur traders prior to 1700. In the meanwhile the English people in this country commenced also to establish military posts west of the Alleghanies, and thus matters went on until they naturally culminated in a general war, which, being waged by the French and Indians combined on one side, was called "the French and Indian war." This war was terminated in 1763 by a treaty at Paris, by which France ceded to Great Britain all of North America east of the Mississippi except New Orleans and the island on which it is situated; and indeed, France had the preceding autumn, by a secret convention, ceded to Spain all the country west of that river.

## PONTIAC'S WAR.

In 1762, after Canada and its dependencies had been surrendered to the English, Pontiac and his partisans secretly organized a powerful confederacy in order to crush at one blow all English power in the West. This great scheme was skillfully projected and cautiously matured.

The principal act in the programme was to gain admittance into the fort at Detroit, on pretense of a friendly visit, with shortened muskets concealed under their blankets, and on a given signal suddenly break forth upon the garrison; but an inadvertent remark of an Indian woman led to a discovery of the plot, which was consequently averted. Pontiac and his warriors afterward made many attacks upon the English, some of which were successful, but the Indians were finally defeated in the general war.

## BRITISH POLICY.

In 1765 the total number of French families within the limits of the Northwestern Territory did not probably exceed 600. These were in settlements about Detroit, along the river Wabash and the neighborhood of Fort Chartres on the Mississippi. Of these families, about 80 or 90 resided at Post Vincennes, 14 at Fort Oniaton, on the Wabash, and nine or ten at the confluence of the St. Mary and St. Joseph rivers.

The colonial policy of the British government opposed any measures which might strengthen settlements in the interior of this country, lest they become self-supporting and independent of the mother country; hence the early and rapid settlement of the Northwestern territory was still further retarded by the short-sighted selfishness of England. That fatal policy consisted mainly in holding the land in the hands of the government and not allowing it to be subdivided and sold to settlers. But in spite of all her efforts in this direction, she constantly made just such efforts as provoked the American people to rebel, and to rebel successfully, which was within 15 years after the perfect close of the French and Indian war.

## AMERICAN POLICY.

Thomas Jefferson, the shrewd statesman and wise Governor of Virginia, saw from the first that actual occupation of Western lands was the only way to keep them out of the hands of foreigners and



Indians. Therefore, directly after the conquest of Vincennes by Clark, he engaged a scientific corps to proceed under an escort to the Mississippi, and ascertain by celestial observations the point on that river intersected by latitude  $36^{\circ} 30'$ , the southern limit of the State, and to measure its distance to the Ohio. To Gen. Clark was entrusted the conduct of the military operations in that quarter. He was instructed to select a strong position near that point and establish there a fort and garrison; thence to extend his conquests northward to the lakes, erecting forts at different points, which might serve as monuments of actual possession, besides affording protection to that portion of the country. Fort "Jefferson" was erected and garrisoned on the Mississippi a few miles above the southern limit.

The result of these operations was the addition, to the chartered limits of Virginia, of that immense region known as the "North-western Territory." The simple fact that such and such forts were established by the Americans in this vast region convinced the British Commissioners that we had entitled ourselves to the land. But where are those "monuments" of our power now?

#### INDIAN SAVAGERY.

As a striking example of the inhuman treatment which the early Indians were capable of giving white people, we quote the following blood-curdling story from Mr. Cox' "Recollections of the Wabash Valley":

On the 11th of February, 1781, a wagoner named Irvin Hinton was sent from the block-house at Louisville, Ky., to Harrodsburg for a load of provisions for the fort. Two young men, Richard Rue and George Holman, aged respectively 19 and 16 years, were sent as guards to protect the wagon from the depredations of any hostile Indians who might be lurking in the cane-brakes or ravines through which they must pass. Soon after their start a severe snow-storm set in which lasted until afternoon. Lest the melting snow might dampen the powder in their rifles, the guards fired them off, intending to reload them as soon as the storm ceased. Hinton drove the horses while Rue walked a few rods ahead and Holman about the same distance behind. As they ascended a hill about eight miles from Louisville Hinton heard some one say Whoa to the horses. Supposing that something was wrong about the wagon, he stopped and asked Holman why he had called him to halt. Holman said that he had not spoken; Rue also denied it,

but said that he had heard the voice distinctly. At this time a voice cried out, "I will solve the mystery for you; it was Simon Girty that cried Whoa, and he meant what he said,"—at the same time emerging from a sink-hole a few rods from the roadside, followed by 13 Indians, who immediately surrounded the three Kentuckians and demanded them to surrender or die instantly. The little party, making a virtue of necessity, surrendered to this renegade white man and his Indian allies.

Being so near two forts, Girty made all possible speed in making fast his prisoners, selecting the lines and other parts of the harness, he prepared for an immediate flight across the Ohio. The pantaloons of the prisoners were cut off about four inches above the knees, and thus they started through the deep snow as fast as the horses could trot, leaving the wagon, containing a few empty barrels, standing in the road. They continued their march for several cold days, without fire at night, until they reached Wa-puc-canat-ta, where they compelled their prisoners to run the gauntlet as they entered the village. Hinton first ran the gauntlet and reached the council-house after receiving several severe blows upon the head and shoulders. Rue next ran between the lines, pursued by an Indian with an uplifted tomahawk. He far outstripped his pursuer and dodged most of the blows aimed at him. Holman complaining that it was too severe a test for a worn-out stripling like himself, was allowed to run between two lines of squaws and boys, and was followed by an Indian with a long switch.

The first council of the Indians did not dispose of these young men; they were waiting for the presence of other chiefs and warriors. Hinton escaped, but on the afternoon of the second day he was re-captured. Now the Indians were glad that they had an occasion to indulge in the infernal joy of burning him at once. Soon after their supper, which they shared with their victim, they drove the stake into the ground, piled up the fagots in a circle around it, stripped and blackened the prisoner, tied him to the stake, and applied the torch. It was a slow fire. The war-whoop then thrilled through the dark surrounding forest like the chorus of a band of infernal spirits escaped from pandemonium, and the scalp dance was struck up by those demons in human shape, who for hours encircled their victim, brandishing their tomahawks and war clubs, and venting their execrations upon the helpless sufferer, who died about midnight from the effects of the slow heat. As soon as he fell upon the ground, the Indian who first discovered

him in the woods that evening sprang in, sunk his tomahawk into his skull above the ear, and with his knife stripped off the scalp, which he bore back with him to the town as a trophy, and which was tauntingly thrust into the faces of Rue and Holman, with the question, "Can you smell the fire on the scalp of your red-headed friend? We cooked him and left him for the wolves to make a breakfast upon; that is the way we serve runaway prisoners."

After a march of three days more, the prisoners, Rue and Holman, had to run the gauntlets again, and barely got through with their lives. It was decided that they should both be burned at the stake that night, though this decision was far from being unanimous. The necessary preparations were made, dry sticks and brush were gathered and piled around two stakes, the faces and hands of the doomed men were blackened in the customary manner, and as the evening approached the poor wretches sat looking upon the setting sun for the last time. An unusual excitement was manifest in a number of chiefs who still lingered about the council-house. At a pause in the contention, a noble-looking Indian approached the prisoners, and after speaking a few words to the guards, took Holman by the hand, lifted him to his feet, cut the cords that bound him to his fellow prisoners, removed the black from his face and hands, put his hand kindly upon his head and said: "I adopt you as my son, to fill the place of the one I have lately buried; you are now a kinsman of Logan, the white man's friend, as he has been called, but who has lately proven himself to be a terrible avenger of the wrongs inflicted upon him by the bloody Cresap and his men." With evident reluctance, Girty interpreted this to Holman, who was thus unexpectedly freed.

But the preparations for the burning of Rue went on. Holman and Rue embraced each other most affectionately, with a sorrow too deep for description. Rue was then tied to one of the stakes; but the general contention among the Indians had not ceased. Just as the lighted fagots were about to be applied to the dry brush piled around the devoted youth, a tall, active young Shawnee, a son of the victim's captor, sprang into the ring, and cutting the cords which bound him to the stake, led him out amidst the deafening plaudits of a part of the crowd and the execrations of the rest. Regardless of threats, he caused water to be brought and the black to be washed from the face and hands of the prisoner, whose clothes were then returned to him, when the young brave said: "I take this young man to be my brother, in the place of one I lately lost;

I loved that brother well; I will love this one, too; my old mother will be glad when I tell her that I have brought her a son, in place of the dear departed one. We want no more victims. The burning of Red-head [Hinton] ought to satisfy us. These innocent young men do not merit such cruel fate; I would rather die myself than see this adopted brother burned at the stake."

A loud shout of approbation showed that the young Shawnee had triumphed, though dissension was manifest among the various tribes afterward. Some of them abandoned their trip to Detroit, others returned to Wa-puc-ca-nat-ta, a few turned toward the Mississinewa and the Wabash towns, while a portion continued to Detroit. Holman was taken back to Wa-puc-ca-nat-ta, where he remained most of the time of his captivity. Rue was taken first to the Mississinewa, then to the Wabash towns. Two years of his eventful captivity were spent in the region of the Wabash and Illinois rivers, but the last few months at Detroit; was in captivity altogether about three years and a half.

Rue effected his escape in the following manner: During one of the drunken revels of the Indians near Detroit one of them lost a purse of \$90; various tribes were suspected of feloniously keeping the treasure, and much ugly speculation was indulged in as to who was the thief. At length a prophet of a tribe that was not suspected was called to divine the mystery. He spread sand over a green deer-skin, watched it awhile and performed various manipulations, and professed to see that the money had been stolen and carried away by a tribe entirely different from any that had been suspicioned; but he was shrewd enough not to announce who the thief was or the tribe he belonged to, lest a war might arise. His decision quieted the belligerent uprisings threatened by the excited Indians.

Rue and two other prisoners saw this display of the prophet's skill and concluded to interrogate him soon concerning their families at home. The opportunity occurred in a few days, and the Indian seer actually astonished Rue with the accuracy with which he described his family, and added, "You all intend to make your escape, and you will effect it soon. You will meet with many trials and hardships in passing over so wild a district of country, inhabited by so many hostile nations of Indians. You will almost starve to death; but about the time you have given up all hope of finding game to sustain you in your famished condition, succor will come when you least expect it. The first game you will succeed in taking

will be a male of some kind; after that you will have plenty of game and return home in safety."

The prophet kept this matter a secret for the prisoners, and the latter in a few days set off upon their terrible journey, and had just such experience as the Indian prophet had foretold; they arrived home with their lives, but were pretty well worn out with the exposures and privations of a three weeks' journey.

On the return of Holman's party of Indians to Wa-puc-ca-nat-ta, much dissatisfaction existed in regard to the manner of his release from the sentence of condemnation pronounced against him by the council. Many were in favor of recalling the council and trying him again, and this was finally agreed to. The young man was again put upon trial for his life, with a strong probability of his being condemned to the stake. Both parties worked hard for victory in the final vote, which eventually proved to give a majority of one for the prisoner's acquittal.

While with the Indians, Holman saw them burn at the stake a Kentuckian named Richard Hogeland, who had been taken prisoner at the defeat of Col. Crawford. They commenced burning him at nine o'clock at night, and continued roasting him until ten o'clock the next day, before he expired. During his excruciating tortures he begged for some of them to end his life and sufferings with a gun or tomahawk. Finally his cruel tormentors promised they would, and cut several deep gashes in his flesh with their tomahawks, and shoveled up hot ashes and embers and threw them into the gaping wounds. When he was dead they stripped off his scalp, cut him to pieces and burnt him to ashes, which they scattered through the town to expel the evil spirits from it.

After a captivity of about three years and a half, Holman saw an opportunity of going on a mission for the destitute Indians, namely, of going to Harrodsburg, Ky., where he had a rich uncle, from whom they could get what supplies they wanted. They let him go with a guard, but on arriving at Louisville, where Gen. Clark was in command, he was ransomed, and he reached home only three days after the arrival of Rne. Both these men lived to a good old age, terminating their lives at their home about two miles south of Richmond, Ind.

## EXPEDITIONS OF COL. GEORGE ROGERS CLARK.

In the summer of 1778, Col. George Rogers Clark, a native of Albemarle county, Va., led a memorable expedition against the ancient French settlements about Kaskaskia and Post Vincennes. With respect to the magnitude of its design, the valor and perseverance with which it was carried on, and the memorable results which were produced by it, this expedition stands without a parallel in the early annals of the valley of the Mississippi. That portion of the West called Kentucky was occupied by Henderson & Co., who pretended to own the land and who held it at a high price. Col. Clark wished to test the validity of their claim and adjust the government of the country so as to encourage immigration. He accordingly called a meeting of the citizens at Harrodstown, to assemble June 6, 1776, and consider the claims of the company and consult with reference to the interest of the country. He did not at first publish the exact aim of this movement, lest parties would be formed in advance and block the enterprise; also, if the object of the meeting were not announced beforehand, the curiosity of the people to know what was to be proposed would bring out a much greater attendance.

The meeting was held on the day appointed, and delegates were elected to treat with the government of Virginia, to see whether it would be best to become a county in that State and be protected by it, etc. Various delays on account of the remoteness of the white settlers from the older communities of Virginia and the hostility of Indians in every direction, prevented a consummation of this object until some time in 1778. The government of Virginia was friendly to Clark's enterprise to a certain extent, but claimed that they had not authority to do much more than to lend a little assistance for which payment should be made at some future time, as it was not certain whether Kentucky would become a part of Virginia or not. Gov. Henry and a few gentlemen were individually so hearty in favor of Clark's benevolent undertaking that they assisted him all they could. Accordingly Mr. Clark organized his expedition, keeping every particular secret lest powerful parties would form in the West against him. He took in stores at Pitts-



GEN. GEORGE ROGERS CLARK.





burg and Wheeling, proceeded down the Ohio to the "Falls," where he took possession of an island of about seven acres, and divided it among a small number of families, for whose protection he constructed some light fortifications. At this time Post Vincennes comprised about 400 militia, and it was a daring undertaking for Col. Clark, with his small force, to go up against it and Kaskaskia, as he had planned. Indeed, some of his men, on hearing of his plan, deserted him. He conducted himself so as to gain the sympathy of the French, and through them also that of the Indians to some extent, as both these people were very bitter against the British, who had possession of the Lake Region.

From the nature of the situation Clark concluded it was best to take Kaskaskia first. The fact that the people regarded him as a savage rebel, he regarded as really a good thing in his favor; for after the first victory he would show them so much unexpected lenity that they would rally to his standard. In this policy he was indeed successful. He arrested a few men and put them in irons. The priest of the village, accompanied by five or six aged citizens, waited on Clark and said that the inhabitants expected to be separated, perhaps never to meet again, and they begged to be permitted to assemble in their church to take leave of each other. Clark mildly replied that he had nothing against their religion, that they might continue to assemble in their church, but not venture out of town, etc. Thus, by what has since been termed the "Rarey" method of taming horses, Clark showed them he had power over them but designed them no harm, and they readily took the oath of allegiance to Virginia.

After Clark's arrival at Kaskaskia it was difficult to induce the French settlers to accept the "Continental paper" introduced by him and his troops. Nor until Col. Vigo arrived there and guaranteed its redemption would they receive it. Peltries and piastres formed the only currency, and Vigo found great difficulty in explaining Clark's financial arrangements. "Their commandants never made money," was the reply to Vigo's explanation of the policy of the old Dominion. But notwithstanding the guarantees, the Continental paper fell very low in the market. Vigo had a trading establishment at Kaskaskia, where he sold coffee at one dollar a pound, and all the other necessities of life at an equally reasonable price. The unsophisticated Frenchmen were generally asked in what kind of money they would pay their little bills.

"Douleur," was the general reply; and as an authority on the subject says, "It took about twenty Continental dollars to purchase a silver dollar's worth of coffee; and as the French word "*douleur*" signifies grief or pain, perhaps no word either in the French or English languages expressed the idea more correctly than the *douleur* for a Continental dollar. At any rate it was truly *douleur* to the Colonel, for he never received a single dollar in exchange for the large amount taken from him in order to sustain Clark's credit.

Now, the post at Vincennes, defended by Fort Sackville, came next. The priest just mentioned, Mr. Gibault, was really friendly to "the American interest;" he had spiritual charge of the church at Vincennes, and he with several others were deputed to assemble the people there and authorize them to garrison their own fort like a free and independent people, etc. This plan had its desired effect, and the people took the oath of allegiance to the State of Virginia and became citizens of the United States. Their style of language and conduct changed to a better hue, and they surprised the numerous Indians in the vicinity by displaying a new flag and informing them that their old father, the King of France, was come to life again, and was mad at them for fighting the English; and they advised them to make peace with the Americans as soon as they could, otherwise they might expect to make the land very bloody, etc. The Indians concluded they would have to fall in line, and they offered no resistance. Capt. Leonard Helm, an American, was left in charge of this post, and Clark began to turn his attention to other points. But before leaving this section of the country he made treaties of peace with the Indians; this he did, however, by a different method from what had always before been followed. By indirect methods he caused them to come to him, instead of going to them. He was convinced that inviting them to treaties was considered by them in a different manner from what the whites expected, and imputed them to fear, and that giving them great presents confirmed it. He accordingly established treaties with the Piankeshaws, Ouiatenons, Kickapoos, Illinois, Kaskaskias, Peorias and branches of some other tribes that inhabited the country between Lake Michigan and the Mississippi. Upon this the General Assembly of the State of Virginia declared all the citizens settled west of the Ohio organized into a county of that State, to be known as "Illinois" county; but before the provisions of the law could be carried into effect, Henry Hamilton, the British Lieutenant-Governor of Detroit, collected an army of about

30 regulars, 50 French volunteers and 400 Indians, went down and re-took the post Vincennes in December, 1778. No attempt was made by the population to defend the town. Capt. Helm and a man named Henry were the only Americans at the fort, the only members of the garrison. Capt. Helm was taken prisoner and a number of the French inhabitants disarmed.

Col. Clark, hearing of the situation, determined to re-capture the place. He accordingly gathered together what force he could in this distant land, 170 men, and on the 5th of February, started from Kaskaskia and crossed the river of that name. The weather was very wet, and the low lands were pretty well covered with water. The march was difficult, and the Colonel had to work hard to keep his men in spirits. He suffered them to shoot game whenever they wished and eat it like Indian war-dancers, each company by turns inviting the others to their feasts, which was the case every night. Clark waded through water as much as any of them, and thus stimulated the men by his example. They reached the Little Wabash on the 13th, after suffering many and great hardships. Here a camp was formed, and without waiting to discuss plans for crossing the river, Clark ordered the men to construct a vessel, and pretended that crossing the stream would be only a piece of amusement, although inwardly he held a different opinion.

The second day afterward a reconnoitering party was sent across the river, who returned and made an encouraging report. A scaffolding was built on the opposite shore, upon which the baggage was placed as it was tediously ferried over, and the new camping ground was a nice half acre of dry land. There were many amusements, indeed, in getting across the river, which put all the men in high spirits. The succeeding two or three days they had to march through a great deal of water, having on the night of the 17th to encamp in the water, near the Big Wabash.

At daybreak on the 18th they heard the signal gun at Vincennes, and at once commenced their march. Reaching the Wabash about two o'clock, they constructed rafts to cross the river on a boat-stealing expedition, but labored all day and night to no purpose. On the 19th they began to make a canoe, in which a second attempt to steal boats was made, but this expedition returned, reporting that there were two "large fires" within a mile of them. Clark sent a canoe down the river to meet the vessel that was supposed to be on her way up with the supplies, with orders to hasten forward day and night. This was their last hope, as their provisions were entirely

gone, and starvation seemed to be hovering about them. The next day they commenced to make more canoes, when about noon the sentinel on the river brought a boat with five Frenchmen from the fort. From this party they learned that they were not as yet discovered. All the army crossed the river in two canoes the next day, and as Clark had determined to reach the town that night, he ordered his men to move forward. They plunged into the water sometimes to the neck, for over three miles.

Without food, benumbed with cold, up to their waists in water, covered with broken ice, the men at one time mutinied and refused to march. All the persuasions of Clark had no effect upon the half-starved and half-frozen soldiers. In one company was a small drummer boy, and also a sergeant who stood six feet two inches in socks, and stont and athletic. He was devoted to Clark. The General mounted the little drummer on the shoulders of the stalwart sergeant and ordered him to plunge into the water, half-frozen as it was. He did so, the little boy beating the charge from his lofty perch, while Clark, sword in hand, followed them, giving the command as he threw aside the floating ice, "Forward." Elated and amused with the scene, the men promptly obeyed, holding their rifles above their heads, and in spite of all the obstacles they reached the high land in perfect safety. But for this and the ensuing days of this campaign we quote from Clark's account:

"This last day's march through the water was far superior to anything the Frenchmen had any idea of. They were backward in speaking; said that the nearest land to us was a small league, a sugar camp on the bank of the river. A canoe was sent off and returned without finding that we could pass. I went in her myself and sounded the water and found it as deep as to my neck. I returned with a design to have the men transported on board the canoes to the sugar camp, which I knew would expend the whole day and ensuing night, as the vessels would pass slowly through the bushes. The loss of so much time to men half starved was a matter of consequence. I would have given now a great deal for a day's provision, or for one of our horses. I returned but slowly to the troops, giving myself time to think. On our arrival all ran to hear what was the report; every eye was fixed on me; I unfortunately spoke in a serious manner to one of the officers. The whole were alarmed without knowing what I said. I viewed their confusion for about one minute; I whispered to those near me to do as I did, immediately put some water in my hand, poured on powder, blackened my

face, gave the war-whoop, and marched into the water without saying a word. The party gazed and fell in, one after another without saying a word, like a flock of sheep. I ordered those near me to begin a favorite song of theirs; it soon passed through the line, and the whole went on cheerfully.

"I now intended to have them transported across the deepest part of the water; but when about waist-deep, one of the men informed me that he thought he felt a path; we examined and found it so, and concluded that it kept on the highest ground, which it did, and by taking pains to follow it, we got to the sugar camp with no difficulty, where there was about half an acre of dry ground,—at least ground not under water, and there we took up our lodging.

\* \* \* \* \*

"The night had been colder than any we had had, and the ice in the morning was one-half or three-quarters of an inch thick in still water; the morning was the finest. A little after sunrise I lectured the whole; what I said to them I forget, but I concluded by informing them that passing the plain then in full view, and reaching the opposite woods would put an end to their fatigue; that in a few hours they would have a sight of their long wished-for object; and immediately stepped into the water without waiting for any reply. A huzza took place. As we generally marched through the water in a line, before the third man entered, I called to Major Bowman, ordering him to fall in the rear of the 25 men, and put to death any man who refused to march. This met with a cry of approbation, and on we went. Getting about the middle of the plain, the water about mid-deep, I found myself sensibly failing; and as there were no trees nor bushes for the men to support themselves by, I feared that many of the weak would be drowned. I ordered the canoes to make the land, discharge their loading, and play backward and forward with all diligence and pick up the men; and to encourage the party, sent some of the strongest men forward, with orders when they got to a certain distance, to pass the word back that the water was getting shallow, and when getting near the woods, to cry out land. This stratagem had its desired effect; the men exerted themselves almost beyond their abilities, the weak holding by the stronger. The water, however, did not become shallower, but continued deepening. Getting to the woods where the men expected land, the water was up to my shoulders; but gaining the woods was of great consequence; all the low men and weakly hung to the trees and floated on the old logs until they were

taken off by the canoes; the strong and tall got ashore and built fires. Many would reach the shore and fall with their bodies half in the water, not being able to support themselves without it.

"This was a dry and delightful spot of ground of about ten acres. Fortunately, as if designed by Providence, a canoe of Indian squaws and children was coming up to town, and took through this part of the plain as a nigh way; it was discovered by our canoe-men as they were out after the other men. They gave chase and took the Indian canoe, on board of which was nearly half a quarter of buffalo, some corn, tallow, kettles, etc. This was an invaluable prize. Broth was immediately made and served out, especially to the weakly; nearly all of us got a little; but a great many gave their part to the weakly, saying something cheering to their comrades. By the afternoon, this refreshment and fine weather had greatly invigorated the whole party.

"Crossing a narrow and deep lake in the canoes, and marching some distance, we came to a copse of timber called 'Warrior's Island.' We were now in full view of the fort and town; it was about two miles distant, with not a shrub intervening. Every man now feasted his eyes and forgot that he had suffered anything, saying that all which had passed was owing to good policy, and nothing but what a man could bear, and that a soldier had no right to think, passing from one extreme to the other,—which is common in such cases. And now stratagem was necessary. The plain between us and the town was not a perfect level; the sunken grounds were covered with water full of ducks. We observed several men within a half a mile of us shooting ducks, and sent out some of our active young Frenchmen to take one of these men prisoners without alarming the rest, which they did. The information we got from this person was similar to that which we got from those taken on the river, except that of the British having that evening completed the wall of the fort, and that there were a great many Indians in town.

"Our situation was now critical. No possibility of retreat in case of defeat, and in full view of a town containing at this time more than 600 men, troops, inhabitants and Indians. The crew of the galley, though not 50 men, would have been now a re-enforcement of immense magnitude to our little army, if I may so call it, but we would not think of them. We were now in the situation that I had labored to get ourselves in. The idea of being made prisoner was foreign to almost every man, as they expected nothing but torture from the savages if they fell into their hands. Our fate was

now to be determined, probably in a few hours; we knew that nothing but the most daring conduct would insure success; I knew also that a number of the inhabitants wished us well. This was a favorable circumstance; and as there was but little probability of our remaining until dark undiscovered, I determined to begin operations immediately, and therefore wrote the following placard to the inhabitants:

*To the Inhabitants of Post Vincennes:*

Gentlemen:—Being now within two miles of your village with my army, determined to take your fort this night, and not being willing to surprise you, I take this method to request such of you as are true citizens and willing to enjoy the liberty I bring you, to remain still in your houses; and those, if any there be, that are friends to the king, will instantly repair to the fort and join the hair-buyer general and fight like men; and if any such as do not go to the fort shall be discovered afterward, they may depend on severe punishment. On the contrary, those who are true friends to liberty may depend on being well treated; and I once more request them to keep out of the streets; for every one I find in arms on my arrival I shall treat as an enemy.

[Signed]

G. R. CLARK.

“I had various ideas on the results of this letter. I knew it could do us no damage, but that it would cause the lukewarm to be decided, and encourage our friends and astonish our enemies. We anxiously viewed this messenger until he entered the town, and in a few minutes we discovered by our glasses some stir in every street we could penetrate, and great numbers running or riding out into the commons, we supposed to view us, which was the case. But what surprised us was that nothing had yet happened that had the appearance of the garrison being alarmed,—neither gun nor drum. We began to suppose that the information we got from our prisoners was false, and that the enemy had already knew of us and were prepared. A little before sunset we displayed ourselves in full view of the town,—crowds gazing at us. We were plunging ourselves into certain destruction or success; there was no midway thought of. We had but little to say to our men, except inculcating an idea of the necessity of obedience, etc. We moved on slowly in full view of the town; but as it was a point of some consequence to us to make ourselves appear formidable, we, in leaving the covert we were in, marched and counter-marched in such a manner that we appeared numerous. Our colors were displayed to the best advantage; and as the low plain we marched through was

not a perfect level, but had frequent risings in it, of 7 or 8 higher than the common level, which was covered with water; and as these risings generally run in an oblique direction to the town, we took the advantage of one of them, marching through the water by it, which completely prevented our being numbered. We gained the heights back of the town. As there were as yet no hostile appearance, we were impatient to have the cause unriddled. Lient. Bayley was ordered with 14 men to march and fire on the fort; the main body moved in a different direction and took possession of the strongest part of the town."

Clark then sent a written order to Hamilton commanding him to surrender immediately or he would be treated as a murderer; Hamilton replied that he and his garrison were not disposed to be awed into any action unworthy of British subjects. After one hour more of fighting, Hamilton proposed a truce of three days for conference, on condition that each side cease all defensive work; Clark rejoined that he would "not agree to any terms other than Mr. Hamilton surrendering himself and garrison prisoners at discretion," and added that if he, Hamilton, wished to talk with him he could meet him immediately at the church with Capt. Helm. In less than an hour Clark dictated the terms of surrender, Feb. 24, 1779. Hamilton agreed to the total surrender because, as he there claimed in writing, he was too far from aid from his own government, and because of the "unanimity" of his officers in the surrender, and his "confidence in a generous enemy."

"Of this expedition, of its results, of its importance, of the merits of those engaged in it, of their bravery, their skill, of their prudence, of their success, a volume would not more than suffice for the details. Suffice it to say that in my opinion, and I have accurately and critically weighed and examined all the results produced by the contests in which we were engaged during the Revolutionary war, that for bravery, for hardships endured, for skill and consummate tact and prudence on the part of the commander, obedience, discipline and love of country on the part of his followers, for the immense benefits acquired, and signal advantages obtained by it for the whole union, it was second to no enterprise undertaken during that struggle. I might add, second to no undertaking in ancient or modern warfare. The whole credit of this conquest belongs to two men; Gen. George Rogers Clark and Col. Francis Vigo. And when we consider that by it the whole territory now



covered by the three great states of Indiana, Illinois and Michigan was added to the union, and so admitted to be by the British commissioners at the preliminaries to the treaty of peace in 1783; (and but for this very conquest, the boundaries of our territories west would have been the Ohio instead of the Mississippi, and so acknowledged by both our commissioners and the British at that conference;) a territory embracing upward of 2,000,000 people, the human mind is lost in the contemplation of its effects; and we can but wonder that a force of 170 men, the whole number of Clark's troops, should by this single action have produced such important results." [John Law.

The next day Clark sent a detachment of 60 men up the river Wabash to intercept some boats which were laden with provisions and goods from Detroit. This force was placed under command of Capt. Helm, Major Bosseron and Major Legras, and they proceeded up the river, in three armed boats, about 120 miles, when the British boats, about seven in number, were surprised and captured without firing a gun. These boats, which had on board about \$50,000 worth of goods and provisions, were manned by about 40 men, among whom was Philip Dejean, a magistrate of Detroit. The provisions were taken for the public, and distributed among the soldiery.

Having organized a military government at Vincennes and appointed Capt. Helm commandant of the town, Col. Clark returned in the vessel to Kaskaskia, where he was joined by reinforcements from Kentucky under Capt. George. Meanwhile, a party of traders who were going to the falls, were killed and plundered by the Delawares of White River; the news of this disaster having reached Clark, he sent a dispatch to Capt. Helm ordering him to make war on the Delawares and use every means in his power to destroy them; to show no mercy to the men, but to save the women and children. This order was executed without delay. Their camps were attacked in every quarter where they could be found. Many fell, and others were carried to Post Vincennes and put to death. The surviving Delawares at once pleaded for mercy and appeared anxious to make some atonement for their bad conduct. To these overtures Capt. Helm replied that Col. Clark, the "Big Knife," had ordered the war, and that he had no power to lay down the hatchet, but that he would suspend hostilities until a messenger could be sent to Kaskaskia. This was done, and the crafty Colonel, well understanding the Indian character, sent a

message to the Delawares, telling them that he would not accept their friendship or treat with them for peace; but that if they could get some of the neighboring tribes to become responsible for their future conduct, he would discontinue the war and spare their lives; otherwise they must all perish.

Accordingly a council was called of all the Indians in the neighborhood, and Clark's answer was read to the assembly. After due deliberation the Piankeshaws took on themselves to answer for the future good conduct of the Delawares, and the "Grand Door" in a long speech denounced their base conduct. This ended the war with the Delawares and secured the respect of the neighboring tribes.

Clark's attention was next turned to the British post at Detroit, but being unable to obtain sufficient troops he abandoned the enterprise.

#### CLARK'S INGENIOUS RUSE AGAINST THE INDIANS.

Tradition says that when Clark captured Hamilton and his garrison at Fort Sackville, he took possession of the fort and kept the British flag flying, dressed his sentinels with the uniform of the British soldiery, and let everything about the premises remain as they were, so that when the Indians sympathizing with the British arrived they would walk right into the citadel, into the jaws of death. His success was perfect. Sullen and silent, with the scalplock of his victims hanging at his girdle, and in full expectation of his reward from Hamilton, the unwary savage, unconscious of danger and wholly ignorant of the change that had just been effected in his absence, passed the supposed British sentry at the gate of the fort unmolested and unchallenged; but as soon as in, a volley from the rifles of a platoon of Clark's men, drawn up and awaiting his coming, pierced their hearts and sent the unconscious savage, reeking with murder, to that tribunal to which he had so frequently, by order of the hair-buyer general, sent his American captives, from the infant in the cradle to the grandfather of the family, tottering with age and infirmity. It was a just retribution, and few men but Clark would have planned such a ruse or carried it out successfully. It is reported that fifty Indians met this fate within the fort; and probably Hamilton, a prisoner there, witnessed it all.

#### SUBSEQUENT CAREER OF HAMILTON.

Henry Hamilton, who had acted as Lieutenant and Governor of the British possessions under Sir George Carleton, was sent for-

ward, with two other prisoners of war, Dejean and LaMothe, to Williamsburg, Va., early in June following, 1779. Proclamations, in his own handwriting, were found, in which he had offered a specific sum for every American scalp brought into the camp, either by his own troops or his allies, the Indians; and from this he was denominated the "hair-buyer General." This and much other testimony of living witnesses at the time, all showed what a savage he was. Thomas Jefferson, then Governor of Virginia, being made aware of the inhumanity of this wretch, concluded to resort to a little retaliation by way of closer confinement. Accordingly he ordered that these three prisoners be put in irons, confined in a dungeon, deprived of the use of pen, ink and paper, and be excluded from all conversation except with their keeper. Major General Phillips, a British officer out on parole in the vicinity of Charlottesville, where the prisoners now were, in closer confinement, remonstrated, and President Washington, while approving of Jefferson's course, requested a mitigation of the severe order, lest the British be goaded to desperate measures.

Soon afterward Hamilton was released on parole, and he subsequently appeared in Canada, still acting as if he had jurisdiction in the United States.

#### GIBAULT.

The faithful, self-sacrificing and patriotic services of Father Pierre Gibault in behalf of the Americans require a special notice of him in this connection. He was the parish priest at Vincennes, as well as at Kaskaskia. He was, at an early period, a Jesuit missionary to the Illinois. Had it not been for the influence of this man, Clark could not have obtained the influence of the citizens at either place. He gave all his property, to the value of 1,500 Spanish milled dollars, to the support of Col. Clark's troops, and never received a single dollar in return. So far as the records inform us, he was given 1,500 Continental paper dollars, which proved in the end entirely valueless. He modestly petitioned from the Government a small allowance of land at Cahokia, but we find no account of his ever receiving it. He was dependent upon the public in his older days, and in 1790 Winthrop Sargent "conceded" to him a lot of about "14 toises, one side to Mr. Millet, another to Mr. Vaudrey, and to two streets,"—a vague description of land.

## VIGO.

Col. Francis Vigo was born in Mondovi, in the kingdom of Sardinia, in 1747. He left his parents and guardians at a very early age, and enlisted in a Spanish regiment as a soldier. The regiment was ordered to Havana, and a detachment of it subsequently to New Orleans, then a Spanish post; Col. Vigo accompanied this detachment. But he left the army and engaged in trading with the Indians on the Arkansas and its tributaries. Next he settled at St. Louis, also a Spanish post, where he became closely connected, both in friendship and business, with the Governor of Upper Louisiana, then residing at the same place. This friendship he enjoyed, though he could only write his name; and we have many circumstantial evidences that he was a man of high intelligence, honor, purity of heart, and ability. Here he was living when Clark captured Kaskaskia, and was extensively engaged in trading up the Missouri.

A Spaniard by birth and allegiance, he was under no obligation to assist the Americans. Spain was at peace with Great Britain, and any interference by her citizens was a breach of neutrality, and subjected an individual, especially one of the high character and standing of Col. Vigo, to all the contumely, loss and vengeance which British power could inflict. But Col. Vigo did not falter. With an innate love of liberty, an attachment to Republican principles, and an ardent sympathy for an oppressed people struggling for their rights, he overlooked all personal consequences, and as soon as he learned of Clark's arrival at Kaskaskia, he crossed the line and went to Clark and tendered him his means and influence, both of which were joyfully accepted.

Knowing Col. Vigo's influence with the ancient inhabitants of the country, and desirous of obtaining some information from Vincennes, from which he had not heard for several months, Col. Clark proposed to him that he might go to that place and learn the actual state of affairs. Vigo went without hesitation, but on the Embarrass river he was seized by a party of Indians, plundered of all he possessed, and brought a prisoner before Hamilton, then in possession of the post, which he had a short time previously captured, holding Capt. Helm a prisoner of war. Being a Spanish subject, and consequently a non-combatant, Gov. Hamilton, although he strongly suspected the motives of the visit, dared not confine him, but admitted him to parole, on the single condition that he should daily report himself at the fort. But Hamilton was embar-

passed by his detention, being besieged by the inhabitants of the town, who loved Vigo and threatened to withdraw their support from the garrison if he would not release him. Father Gibault was the chief pleader for Vigo's release. Hamilton finally yielded, on condition that he, Vigo, would do no injury to the British interests on his way to St. Louis. He went to St. Louis, sure enough, doing no injury to British interests, but immediately returned to Kaskaskia and reported to Clark in detail all he had learned at Vincennes, without which knowledge Clark would have been unable to accomplish his famous expedition to that post with final triumph. The redemption of this country from the British is due as much, probably, to Col. Vigo as Col. Clark.

### GOVERNMENT OF THE NORTHWEST.

Col. John Todd, Lieutenant for the county of Illinois, in the spring of 1779 visited the old settlements at Vincennes and Kaskaskia, and organized temporary civil governments in nearly all the settlements west of the Ohio. Previous to this, however, Clark had established a military government at Kaskaskia and Vincennes, appointed commandants in both places and taken up his headquarters at the falls of the Ohio, where he could watch the operations of the enemy and save the frontier settlements from the depredations of Indian warfare. On reaching the settlements, Col. Todd issued a proclamation regulating the settlement of unoccupied lands and requiring the presentation of all claims to the lands settled, as the number of adventurers who would shortly overrun the country would be serious. He also organized a Court of civil and criminal jurisdiction at Vincennes, in the month of June, 1779. This Court was composed of several magistrates and presided over by Col. J. M. P. Legras, who had been appointed commandant at Vincennes. Acting from the precedents established by the early French commandants in the West, this Court began to grant tracts of land to the French and American inhabitants; and to the year 1783, it had granted to different parties about 26,000 acres of land; 22,000 more was granted in this manner by 1787, when the practice was prohibited by Gen. Harmer. These tracts varied in size from a house lot to 500 acres. Besides this loose business, the Court entered into a stupendous speculation, one not altogether creditable to its honor and dignity. The commandant and the magistrates under him suddenly adopted the opinion that they were invested

with the authority to dispose of the whole of that large region which in 1842 had been granted by the Piankeshaws to the French inhabitants of Vincennes. Accordingly a very convenient arrangement was entered into by which the whole tract of country mentioned was to be divided between the members of the honorable Court. A record was made to that effect, and in order to gloss over the steal, each member took pains to be absent from Court on the day that the order was made in his favor.

In the fall of 1780 La Balme, a Frenchman, made an attempt to capture the British garrison of Detroit by leading an expedition against it from Kaskaskia. At the head of 30 men he marched to Vincennes, where his force was slightly increased. From this place he proceeded to the British trading post at the head of the Maumee, where Fort Wayne now stands, plundered the British traders and Indians and then retired. While encamped on the bank of a small stream on his retreat, he was attacked by a band of Miamis, a number of his men were killed, and his expedition against Detroit was ruined.

In this manner border war continued between Americans and their enemies, with varying victory, until 1783, when the treaty of Paris was concluded, resulting in the establishment of the independence of the United States. Up to this time the territory now included in Indiana belonged by conquest to the State of Virginia; but in January, 1783, the General Assembly of that State resolved to cede to the Congress of the United States all the territory northwest of the Ohio. The conditions offered by Virginia were accepted by Congress Dec. 20, that year, and early in 1784 the transfer was completed. In 1783 Virginia had platted the town of Clarksville, at the falls of the Ohio. The deed of cession provided that the territory should be laid out into States, containing a suitable extent of territory not less than 100 nor more than 150 miles square, or as near thereto as circumstances would permit; and that the States so formed shall be distinct Republicau States and admitted members of the Federal Union, having the same rights of sovereignty, freedom and independence as the other States. The other conditions of the deed were as follows: That the necessary and reasonable expenses incurred by Virginia in subduing any British posts, or in maintaining forts and garrisons within and for the defense, or in acquiring any part of the territory so ceded or relinquished, shall be fully reimbursed by the United States; that the French and Canadian inhabitants and other settlers of the Kas-

kaskia, Post Vincennes and the neighboring villages who have professed themselves citizens of Virginia, shall have their titles and possessions confirmed to them, and be protected in the enjoyment of their rights and privileges; that a quantity not exceeding 150,000 acres of land, promised by Virginia, shall be allowed and granted to the then Colonel, now General, George Rogers Clark, and to the officers and soldiers of his regiment, who marched with him when the posts and of Kaskaskia and Vincennes were reduced, and to the officers and soldiers that have been since incorporated into the said regiment, to be laid off in one tract, the length of which not to exceed double the breadth, in such a place on the northwest side of the Ohio as a majority of the officers shall choose, and to be afterward divided among the officers and soldiers in due proportion according to the laws of Virginia; that in case the quantity of good lands on the southeast side of the Ohio, upon the waters of Cumberland river, and between Green river and Tennessee river, which have been reserved by law for the Virginia troops upon Continental establishment, should, from the North Carolina line, bearing in further upon the Cumberland lands than was expected, prove insufficient for their legal bounties, the deficiency shall be made up to the said troops in good lands to be laid off between the rivers Scioto and Little Miami, on the northwest side of the river Ohio, in such proportions as have been engaged to them by the laws of Virginia; that all the lands within the territory so ceded to the United States, and not reserved for or appropriated to any of the before-mentioned purposes, or disposed of in bounties to the officers and soldiers of the American army, shall be considered as a common fund for the use and benefit of such of the United States as have become, or shall become, members of the confederation or federal alliance of the said States, Virginia included, according to their usual respective proportions in the general charge and expenditure, and shall be faithfully and *bona fide* disposed of for that purpose and for no other use or purpose whatever.

After the above deed of cession had been accepted by Congress, in the spring of 1784, the matter of the future government of the territory was referred to a committee consisting of Messrs. Jefferson of Virginia, Chase of Maryland and Howell of Rhode Island, which committee reported an ordinance for its government, providing, among other things, that slavery should not exist in said territory after 1800, except as punishment of criminals; but this article of the ordinance was rejected. and an ordinance for the temporary

government of the county was adopted. In 1785 laws were passed by Congress for the disposition of lands in the territory and prohibiting the settlement of unappropriated lands by reckless speculators. But human passion is ever strong enough to evade the law to some extent, and large associations, representing considerable means, were formed for the purpose of monopolizing the land business. Millions of acres were sold at one time by Congress to associations on the installment plan, and so far as the Indian titles could be extinguished, the work of settling and improving the lands was pushed rapidly forward.

#### ORDINANCE OF 1787.

This ordinance has a marvelous and interesting history. Considerable controversy has been indulged in as to who is entitled to the credit for framing it. This belongs, undoubtedly, to Nathan Dane; and to Rufus King and Timothy Pickering belong the credit for suggesting the proviso contained in it against slavery, and also for aids to religion and knowledge, and for assuring forever the common use, without charge, of the great national highways of the Mississippi, the St. Lawrence and their tributaries to all the citizens of the United States. To Thomas Jefferson is also due much credit, as some features of this ordinance were embraced in his ordinance of 1784. But the part taken by each in the long, laborious and eventful struggle which had so glorious a consummation in the ordinance, consecrating forever, by one imprescriptible and unchangeable monument, the very heart of our country to Freedom, Knowledge, and Union, will forever honor the names of those illustrious statesmen.

Mr. Jefferson had vainly tried to secure a system of government for the Northwestern territory. He was an emancipationist and favored the exclusion of slavery from the territory, but the South voted him down every time he proposed a measure of this nature. In 1787, as late as July 10, an organizing act without the anti-slavery clause was pending. This concession to the South was expected to carry it. Congress was in session in New York. On July 5, Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Massachusetts, came into New York to lobby on the Northwestern territory. Everything seemed to fall into his hands. Events were ripe. The state of the public credit, the growing of Southern prejudice, the basis of his mission, his personal character, all combined to complete one of those sudden



and marvelous revolutions of public sentiment that once in five or ten centuries are seen to sweep over a country like the breath of the Almighty.

Cutler was a graduate of Yale. He had studied and taken degrees in the three learned professions, medicine, law, and divinity. He had published a scientific examination of the plants of New England. As a scientist in America his name stood second only to that of Franklin. He was a courtly gentleman of the old style, a man of commanding presence and of inviting face. The Southern members said they had never seen such a gentleman in the North. He came representing a Massachusetts company that desired to purchase a tract of land, now included in Ohio, for the purpose of planting a colony. It was a speculation. Government money was worth eighteen cents on the dollar. This company had collected enough to purchase 1,500,000 acres of land. Other speculators in New York made Dr. Cutler their agent, which enabled him to represent a demand for 5,500,000 acres. As this would reduce the national debt, and Jefferson's policy was to provide for the public credit, it presented a good opportunity to do something.

Massachusetts then owned the territory of Maine, which she was crowding on the market. She was opposed to opening the Northwestern region. This fired the zeal of Virginia. The South caught the inspiration, and all exalted Dr. Cutler. The entire South rallied around him. Massachusetts could not vote against him, because many of the constituents of her members were interested personally in the Western speculation. Thus Cutler, making friends in the South, and doubtless using all the arts of the lobby, was enabled to command the situation. True to deeper convictions, he dictated one of the most compact and finished documents of wise statesmanship that has ever adorned any human law book. He borrowed from Jefferson the term "Articles of Compact," which, preceding the federal constitution, rose into the most sacred character. He then followed very closely the constitution of Massachusetts, adopted three years before. Its most prominent points were:

1. The exclusion of slavery from the territory forever.
2. Provision for public schools, giving one township for a semi-nary and every section numbered 16 in each township; that is, one thirty-sixth of all the land for public schools.
3. A provision prohibiting the adoption of any constitution or the enactment of any law that should nullify pre-existing contracts.

Be it forever remembered that this compact declared that "religion, morality, and knowledge being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall always be encouraged." Dr. Cutler planted himself on this platform and would not yield. Giving his unqualified declaration that it was that or nothing,—that unless they could make the land desirable they did not want it,—he took his horse and buggy and started for the constitutional convention at Philadelphia. On July 13, 1787, the bill was put upon its passage, and was unanimously adopted. Thus the great States of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin, a vast empire, were consecrated to freedom, intelligence, and morality. Thus the great heart of the nation was prepared to save the union of States, for it was this act that was the salvation of the republic and the destruction of slavery. Soon the South saw their great blunder and tried to have the compact repealed. In 1803 Congress referred it to a committee, of which John Randolph was chairman. He reported that this ordinance was a compact and opposed repeal. Thus it stood, a rock in the way of the on-rushing sea of slavery.

The "Northwestern Territory" included of course what is now the State of Indiana; and Oct 5, 1787, Maj. Gen. Arthur St. Clair was elected by Congress Governor of this territory. Upon commencing the duties of his office he was instructed to ascertain the real temper of the Indians and do all in his power to remove the causes for controversy between them and the United States, and to effect the extinguishment of Indian titles to all the land possible. The Governor took up quarters in the new settlement of Marietta, Ohio, where he immediately began the organization of the government of the territory. The first session of the General Court of the new territory was held at that place in 1788, the Judges being Samuel H. Parsons, James M. Varnum and John C. Symmes, but under the ordinance Gov. St. Clair was President of the Court. After the first session, and after the necessary laws for government were adopted, Gov. St. Clair, accompanied by the Judges, visited Kaskaskia for the purpose of organizing a civil government there. Full instructions had been sent to Maj. Hamtramck, commandant at Vincennes, to ascertain the exact feeling and temper of the Indian tribes of the Wabash. These instructions were accompanied by speeches to each of the tribes. A Frenchman named Antoine Gamelin was dispatched with these messages April 5, 1790, who visited nearly all the tribes on the Wabash, St. Joseph and St.

Mary's rivers, but was coldly received; most of the chiefs being dissatisfied with the policy of the Americans toward them, and prejudiced through English misrepresentation. Full accounts of his adventures among the tribes reached Gov. St. Clair at Kaskaskia in June, 1790. Being satisfied that there was no prospect of effecting a general peace with the Indians of Indiana, he resolved to visit Gen. Harmar at his headquarters at Fort Washington and consult with him on the means of carrying an expedition against the hostile Indians; but before leaving he intrusted Winthrop Sargent, the Secretary of the Territory, with the execution of the resolutions of Congress regarding the lands and settlers on the Wabash. He directed that officer to proceed to Vincennes, lay out a county there, establish the militia and appoint the necessary civil and military officers. Accordingly Mr. Sargent went to Vincennes and organized Camp Knox, appointed the officers, and notified the inhabitants to present their claims to lands. In establishing these claims the settlers found great difficulty, and concerning this matter the Secretary in his report to the President wrote as follows:

"Although the lands and lots which were awarded to the inhabitants appeared from very good oral testimony to belong to those persons to whom they were awarded, either by original grants, purchase or inheritance, yet there was scarcely one case in twenty where the title was complete, owing to the desultory manner in which public business had been transacted and some other unfortunate causes. The original concessions by the French and British commandants were generally made upon a small scrap of paper, which it has been customary to lodge in the notary's office, who has seldom kept any book of record, but committed the most important land concerns to loose sheets, which in process of time have come into possession of persons that have fraudulently destroyed them; or, unacquainted with their consequence, innocently lost or trifled them away. By French usage they are considered family inheritances, and often descend to women and children. In one instance, and during the government of St. Ange here, a royal notary ran off with all the public papers in his possession, as by a certificate produced to me. And I am very sorry further to observe that in the office of Mr. LeGrand, which continued from 1777 to 1787, and where should have been the vouchers for important land transactions, the records have been so falsified, and there is such gross fraud and forgery, as to invalidate all evidence and information which I might have otherwise acquired from his papers."

Mr. Sargent says there were about 150 French families at Vincennes in 1790. The heads of all these families had been at some time vested with certain titles to a portion of the soil; and while the Secretary was busy in straightening out these claims, he received a petition signed by 80 Americans, asking for the confirmation of grants of land ceded by the Court organized by Col. John Todd under the authority of Virginia. With reference to this cause, Congress, March 3, 1791, empowered the Territorial Governor, in cases where land had been actually improved and cultivated under a supposed grant for the same, to confirm to the persons who made such improvements the lands supposed to have been granted, not, however, exceeding the quantity of 400 acres to any one person.

#### LIQUOR AND GAMING LAWS.

The General Court in the summer of 1790, Acting Governor Sargent presiding, passed the following laws with reference to vending liquor among the Indians and others, and with reference to games of chance:

1. An act to prohibit the giving or selling intoxicating liquors to Indians residing in or coming into the Territory of the United States northwest of the river Ohio, and for preventing foreigners from trading with Indians therein.

2. An act prohibiting the sale of spirituous or other intoxicating liquors to soldiers in the service of the United States, being within ten miles of any military post in the territory; and to prevent the selling or pawning of arms, ammunition, clothing or accoutrements.

3. An act prohibiting every species of gaming for money or property, and for making void contracts and payments made in consequence thereof, and for restraining the disorderly practice of discharging arms at certain hours and places.

Winthrop Sargent's administration was highly eulogized by the citizens at Vincennes, in a testimonial drawn up and signed by a committee of officers. He had conducted the investigation and settlement of land claims to the entire satisfaction of the residents, had upheld the principles of free government in keeping with the animus of the American Revolution, and had established in good order the machinery of a good and wise government. In the same address Major Hamtramck also received a fair share of praise for his judicious management of affairs.

## MILITARY HISTORY 1790-1800.

### EXPEDITIONS OF HARMAR, SCOTT AND WILKINSON.

Gov. St. Clair, on his arrival at Fort Washington from Kaskaskia, had a long conversation with Gen. Harmar, and concluded to send a powerful force to chastise the savages about the headwaters of the Wabash. He had been empowered by the President to call on Virginia for 1,000 troops and on Pennsylvania for 500, and he immediately availed himself of this resource, ordering 300 of the Virginia militia to muster at Fort Stenben and march with the garrison of that fort to Vincennes, and join Maj. Hamtramck, who had orders to call for aid from the militia of Vincennes, march up the Wabash, and attack any of the Indian villages which he might think he could overcome. The remaining 1,200 of the militia were ordered to rendezvous at Fort Washington, and to join the regular troops at that post under command of Gen. Harmar. At this time the United States troops in the West were estimated by Gen. Harmar at 400 effective men. These, with the militia, gave him a force of 1,450 men. With this army Gen. Harmar marched from Fort Washington Sept. 30, and arrived at the Maumee Oct. 17. They commenced the work of punishing the Indians, but were not very successful. The savages, it is true, received a severe scourging, but the militia behaved so badly as to be of little or no service. A detachment of 340 militia and 60 regulars, under the command of Col. Hardin, were sorely defeated on the Maumee Oct. 22. The next day the army took up the line of march for Fort Washington, which place they reached Nov. 4, having lost in the expedition 183 killed and 31 wounded; the Indians lost about as many. During the progress of this expedition Maj. Hamtramck marched up the Wabash from Vincennes, as far as the Vermillion river, and destroyed several deserted villages, but without finding an enemy to oppose him.

Although the savages seem to have been severely punished by these expeditions, yet they refused to sue for peace, and continued their hostilities. Thereupon the inhabitants of the frontier settlements of Virginia took alarm, and the delegates of Ohio, Monon-

gahela, Harrison, Randolph, Greenbrier, Kanawha and Montgomery counties sent a joint memorial to the Governor of Virginia, saying that the defenseless condition of the counties, forming a line of nearly 400 miles along the Ohio river, exposed to the hostile invasion of their Indian enemies, destitute of every kind of support, was truly alarming; for, notwithstanding all the regulations of the General Government in that country, they have reason to lament that they have been up to that time ineffectual for their protection; nor indeed could it be otherwise, for the garrisons kept by the Continental troops on the Ohio river, if of any use at all, must protect only the Kentucky settlements, as they immediately covered that country. They further stated in their memorial: "We beg leave to observe that we have reason to fear that the consequences of the defeat of our army by the Indians in the late expedition will be severely felt on our frontiers, as there is no doubt that the Indians will, in their turn, being flushed with victory, invade our settlements and exercise all their horrid murder upon the inhabitants thereof whenever the weather will permit them to travel. Then is it not better to support us where we are, be the expense what it may, than to oblige such a number of your brave citizens, who have so long supported, and still continue to support, a dangerous frontier (although thousands of their relatives in the flesh have in the prosecution thereof fallen a sacrifice to savage inventions) to quit the country, after all they have done and suffered, when you know that a frontier must be supported somewhere?"

This memorial caused the Legislature of Virginia to authorize the Governor of that State to make any defensive operations necessary for the temporary defense of the frontiers, until the general Government could adopt and carry out measures to suppress the hostile Indians. The Governor at once called upon the military commanding officers in the western counties of Virginia to raise by the first of March, 1791, several small companies of rangers for this purpose. At the same time Charles Scott was appointed Brigadier-General of the Kentucky militia, with authority to raise 226 volunteers, to protect the most exposed portions of that district. A full report of the proceedings of the Virginia Legislature being transmitted to Congress, that body constituted a local Board of War for the district of Kentucky, consisting of five men. March 9, 1791, Gen. Henry Knox, Secretary of War, sent a letter of instructions to Gen. Scott, recommending an expedition of mounted men not exceeding 750, against the Wea towns on the Wabash. With

this force Gen. Scott accordingly crossed the Ohio, May 23, 1791, and reached the Wabash in about ten days. Many of the Indians, having discovered his approach, fled, but he succeeded in destroying all the villages around Ouiatenon, together with several Kickapoo towns, killing 32 warriors and taking 53 prisoners. He released a few of the most infirm prisoners, giving them a "talk," which they carried to the towns farther up the Wabash, and which the wretched condition of his horses prevented him from reaching.

March 3, 1791, Congress provided for raising and equipping a regiment for the protection of the frontiers, and Gov. St. Clair was invested with the chief command of about 3,000 troops, to be raised and employed against the hostile Indians in the territory over which his jurisdiction extended. He was instructed by the Secretary of War to march to the Miami village and establish a strong and permanent military post there; also such posts elsewhere along the Ohio as would be in communication with Fort Washington. The post at Miami village was intended to keep the savages in that vicinity in check, and was ordered to be strong enough in its garrison to afford a detachment of 500 or 600 men in case of emergency, either to chastise any of the Wabash or other hostile Indians or capture convoys of the enemy's provisions. The Secretary of War also urged Gov. St. Clair to establish that post as the first and most important part of the campaign. In case of a previous treaty the Indians were to be conciliated upon this point if possible; and he presumed good arguments might be offered to induce their acquiescence. Said he: "Having commenced your march upon the main expedition, and the Indians continuing hostile, you will use every possible exertion to make them feel the effects of your superiority; and, after having arrived at the Miami village and put your works in a defensible state, you will seek the enemy with the whole of your remaining force, and endeavor by all possible means to strike them with great severity. \* \* \* \*

In order to avoid future wars, it might be proper to make the Wabash and thence over to the Maumee, and down the same to its mouth, at Lake Erie, the boundary between the people of the United States and the Indians (excepting so far as the same should relate to the Wyandots and Delawares), on the supposition of their continuing faithful to the treaties; but if they should join in the war against the United States, and your army be victorious, the said tribes ought to be removed without the boundary mentioned."

Previous to marching a strong force to the Miami town, Gov. St.

Clair, June 25, 1791, authorized Gen Wilkinson to conduct a second expedition, not exceeding 500 mounted men, against the Indian villages on the Wabash. Accordingly Gen. Wilkinson mustered his forces and was ready July 20, to march with 525 mounted volunteers, well armed, and provided with 30 days' provisions, and with this force he reached the Ke-na-pa-com-a-quā village on the north bank of Eel river about six miles above its mouth, Aug. 7, where he killed six warriors and took 34 prisoners. This town, which was scattered along the river for three miles, was totally destroyed. Wilkinson encamped on the ruins of the town that night, and the next day he commenced his march for the Kickapoo town on the prairie, which he was unable to reach owing to the impassable condition of the route which he adopted and the failing condition of his horses. He reported the estimated results of the expedition as follows: "I have destroyed the chief town of the Ouatennon nation, and have made prisoners of the sons and sisters of the king. I have burned a respectable Kickapoo village, and cut down at least 400 acres of corn, chiefly in the milk."

#### EXPEDITIONS OF ST. CLAIR AND WAYNE.

The Indians were greatly damaged by the expeditions of Harmar, Scott and Wilkinson, but were far from being subdued. They regarded the policy of the United States as calculated to exterminate them from the land; and, goaded on by the English of Detroit, enemies of the Americans, they were excited to desperation. At this time the British Government still supported garrisons at Niagara, Detroit and Michilimackinac, although it was declared by the second article of the definitive treaty of peace of 1783, that the king of Great Britain would, "with all convenient speed, and without causing any destruction or carrying away any negroes or property of the American inhabitants, withdraw all his forces, garrisons and fleets from the United States, and from every post, place and harbor within the same." That treaty also provided that the creditors on either side should meet with no lawful impediments to the recovery of the full value, in sterling money, of all *bona fide* debts previously contracted. The British Government claimed that the United States had broken faith in this particular understanding of the treaty, and in consequence refused to withdraw its forces from the territory. The British garrisons in the Lake Region were a source of much annoyance to the Americans, as they afforded succor to hostile Indians, encouraging them to



make raids among the Americans. This state of affairs in the Territory Northwest of the Ohio continued from the commencement of the Revolutionary war to 1796, when under a second treaty all British soldiers were withdrawn from the country.

In September, 1791, St. Clair moved from Fort Washington with about 2,000 men, and November 3, the main army, consisting of about 1,400 effective troops, moved forward to the head-waters of the Wabash, where Fort Recovery was afterward erected, and here the army encamped. About 1,200 Indians were secreted a few miles distant, awaiting a favorable opportunity to begin an attack, which they improved on the morning of Nov. 4, about half an hour before sunrise. The attack was first made upon the militia, which immediately gave way. St. Clair was defeated and he returned to Fort Washington with a broken and dispirited army, having lost 39 officers killed, and 539 men killed and missing; 22 officers and 232 men were wounded. Several pieces of artillery, and all the baggage, ammunition and provisions were left on the field of battle and fell into the hands of the victorious Indians. The stores and other public property lost in the action were valued at \$32,800. There were also 100 or more American women with the army of the whites, very few of whom escaped the cruel carnage of the savage Indians. The latter, characteristic of their brutal nature, proceeded in the flush of victory to perpetrate the most horrible acts of cruelty and brutality upon the bodies of the living and the dead Americans who fell into their hands. Believing that the whites had made war for many years merely to acquire land, the Indians crammed clay and sand into the eyes and down the throats of the dying and the dead!

#### GEN. WAYNE'S GREAT VICTORY.

Although no particular blame was attached to Gov. St. Clair for the loss in this expedition, yet he resigned the office of Major-General, and was succeeded by Anthony Wayne, a distinguished officer of the Revolutionary war. Early in 1792 provisions were made by the general Government for re-organizing the army, so that it should consist of an efficient degree of strength. Wayne arrived at Pittsburg in June, where the army was to rendezvous. Here he continued actively engaged in organizing and training his forces until October, 1793, when with an army of about 3,600 men he moved westward to Fort Washington.

While Wayne was preparing for an offensive campaign, every

possible means was employed to induce the hostile tribes of the Northwest to enter into a general treaty of peace with the American Government; speeches were sent among them, and agents to make treaties were also sent, but little was accomplished. Major Hamtramck, who still remained at Vincennes, succeeded in concluding a general peace with the Wabash and Illinois Indians; but the tribes more immediately under the influence of the British refused to hear the sentiments of friendship that were sent among them, and tomahawked several of the messengers. Their courage had been aroused by St. Clair's defeat, as well as by the unsuccessful expeditions which had preceded it, and they now felt quite prepared to meet a superior force under Gen. Wayne. The Indians insisted on the Ohio river as the boundary line between their lands and the lands of the United States, and felt certain that they could maintain that boundary.

Maj. Gen. Scott, with about 1,600 mounted volunteers from Kentucky, joined the regular troops under Gen. Wayne July 26, 1794, and on the 28th the united forces began their march for the Indian towns on the Maumee river. Arriving at the mouth of the Auglaize, they erected Fort Defiance, and Aug. 15 the army advanced toward the British fort at the foot of the rapids of the Maumee, where, on the 20th, almost within reach of the British, the American army gained a decisive victory over the combined forces of the hostile Indians and a considerable number of the Detroit militia. The number of the enemy was estimated at 2,000, against about 900 American troops actually engaged. This horde of savages, as soon as the action began, abandoned themselves to flight and dispersed with terror and dismay, leaving Wayne's victorious army in full and quiet possession of the field. The Americans lost 33 killed and 100 wounded; loss of the enemy more than double this number.

The army remained three days and nights on the banks of the Maumee, in front of the field of battle, during which time all the houses and cornfields were consumed and destroyed for a considerable distance both above and below Fort Miami, as well as within pistol shot of the British garrison, who were compelled to remain idle spectators to this general devastation and conflagration, among which were the houses, stores and property of Col. McKee, the British Indian agent and "principal stimulator of the war then existing between the United States and savages." On the return march to Fort Defiance the villages and cornfields for about 50

miles on each side of the Maumee were destroyed, as well as those for a considerable distance around that post.

Sept. 14, 1794, the army under Gen. Wayne commenced its march toward the deserted Miami villages at the confluence of St. Joseph's and St. Mary's rivers, arriving Oct. 17, and on the following day the site of Fort Wayne was selected. The fort was completed Nov. 22, and garrisoned by a strong detachment of infantry and artillery, under the command of Col. John F. Hamtramck, who gave to the new fort the name of Fort Wayne. In 1814 a new fort was built on the site of this structure. The Kentucky volunteers returned to Fort Washington and were mustered out of service. Gen. Wayne, with the Federal troops, marched to Greenville and took up his headquarters during the winter. Here, in August, 1795, after several months of active negotiation, this gallant officer succeeded in concluding a general treaty of peace with all the hostile tribes of the Northwestern Territory. This treaty opened the way for the flood of immigration for many years, and ultimately made the States and territories now constituting the mighty Northwest.

Up to the organization of the Indiana Territory there is but little history to record aside from those events connected with military affairs. In July, 1796, as before stated, after a treaty was concluded between the United States and Spain, the British garrisons, with their arms, artillery and stores, were withdrawn from the posts within the boundaries of the United States northwest of the Ohio river, and a detachment of American troops, consisting of 65 men, under the command of Capt. Moses Porter, took possession of the evacuated post of Detroit in the same month.

In the latter part of 1796 Winthrop Sargent went to Detroit and organized the county of Wayne, forming a part of the Indiana Territory until its division in 1805, when the Territory of Michigan was organized.

## TERRITORIAL HISTORY.

### ORGANIZATION OF INDIANA TERRITORY.

On the final success of American arms and diplomacy in 1796, the principal town within the Territory, now the State, of Indiana was Vincennes, which at this time comprised about 50 houses, all presenting a thrifty and tidy appearance. Each house was surrounded by a garden fenced with poles, and peach and apple-trees grew in most of the enclosures. Garden vegetables of all kinds were cultivated with success, and corn, tobacco, wheat, barley and cotton grew in the fields around the village in abundance. During the last few years of the 18th century the condition of society at Vincennes improved wonderfully.

Besides Vincennes there was a small settlement near where the town of Lawrenceburg now stands, in Dearborn county, and in the course of that year a small settlement was formed at "Armstrong's Station," on the Ohio, within the present limits of Clark county. There were of course several other smaller settlements and trading posts in the present limits of Indiana, and the number of civilized inhabitants comprised within the territory was estimated at 4,875.

The Territory of Indiana was organized by Act of Congress May 7, 1800, the material parts of the ordinance of 1787 remaining in force; and the inhabitants were invested with all the rights, privileges and advantages granted and secured to the people by that ordinance. The seat of government was fixed at Vincennes. May 13, 1800, Wm. Henry Harrison, a native of Virginia, was appointed Governor of this new territory, and on the next day John Gibson, a native of Pennsylvania and a distinguished Western pioneer, (to whom the Indian chief Logan delivered his celebrated speech in 1774), was appointed Secretary of the Territory. Soon afterward Wm. Clark, Henry Vanderburgh and John Griffin were appointed territorial Judges.

Secretary Gibson arrived at Vincennes in July, and commenced, in the absence of Gov. Harrison, the administration of government. Gov. Harrison did not arrive until Jan. 10, 1801, when he immediately called together the Judges of the Territory, who proceeded

to pass such laws as they deemed necessary for the present government of the Territory. This session began March 3, 1801.

From this time to 1810 the principal subjects which attracted the attention of the people of Indiana were land speculations, the adjustment of land titles, the question of negro slavery, the purchase of Indian lands by treaties, the organization of Territorial legislatures, the extension of the right of suffrage, the division of Indiana Territory, the movements of Aaron Burr, and the hostile views and proceedings of the Shawanee chief, Tecumseh, and his brother, the Prophet.

Up to this time the sixth article of the celebrated ordinance of 1787, prohibiting slavery in the Northwestern Territory, had been somewhat neglected in the execution of the law, and many French settlers still held slaves in a manner. In some instances, according to rules prescribed by Territorial legislation, slaves agreed by indentures to remain in servitude under their masters for a certain number of years; but many slaves, with whom no such contracts were made, were removed from the Indiana Territory either to the west of the Mississippi or to some of the slaveholding States. Gov. Harrison convoked a session of delegates of the Territory, elected by a popular vote, who petitioned Congress to declare the sixth article of the ordinance of 1787, prohibiting slavery, suspended; but Congress never consented to grant that petition, and many other petitions of a similar import. Soon afterward some of the citizens began to take colored persons out of the Territory for the purpose of selling them, and Gov. Harrison, by a proclamation April 6, 1804, forbade it, and called upon the authorities of the Territory to assist him in preventing such removal of persons of color.

During the year 1804 all the country west of the Mississippi and north of 33° was attached to Indiana Territory by Congress, but in a few months was again detached and organized into a separate territory.

When it appeared from the result of a popular vote in the Territory that a majority of 138 freeholders were in favor of organizing a General Assembly, Gov. Harrison, Sept. 11, 1804, issued a proclamation declaring that the Territory had passed into the second grade of government, as contemplated by the ordinance of 1787, and fixed Thursday, Jan. 3, 1805, as the time for holding an election in the several counties of the Territory, to choose members of a House of Representatives, who should meet at Vincennes Feb. 1 and

adopt measures for the organization of a Territorial Council. These delegates were elected, and met according to the proclamation, and selected ten men from whom the President of the United States, Mr. Jefferson, should appoint five to be and constitute the Legislative Council of the Territory, but he declining, requested Mr. Harrison to make the selection, which was accordingly done. Before the first session of this Council, however, was held, Michigan Territory was set off, its south line being one drawn from the southern end of Lake Michigan directly east to Lake Erie.

#### FIRST TERRITORIAL LEGISLATURE.

The first General Assembly, or Legislature, of Indiana Territory met at Vincennes July 29, 1805, in pursuance of a gubernatorial proclamation. The members of the House of Representatives were Jesse B. Thomas, of Dearborn county; Davis Floyd, of Clark county; Benjamin Parke and John Johnson, of Knox county; Shadrach Bond and William Biggs, of St. Clair county, and George Fisher, of Randolph county. July 30 the Governor delivered his first message to "the Legislative Council and House of Representatives of the Indiana Territory." Benjamin Parke was the first delegate elected to Congress. He had emigrated from New Jersey to Indiana in 1801.

#### THE "WESTERN SUN"

was the first newspaper published in the Indiana Territory, now comprising the four great States of Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin, and the second in all that country once known as the "Northwestern Territory." It was commenced at Vincennes in 1803, by Elihu Stout, of Kentucky, and first called the *Indiana Gazette*, and July, 4, 1804, was changed to the *Western Sun*. Mr. Stout continued the paper until 1845, amid many discouragements, when he was appointed postmaster at the place, and he sold out the office.

#### INDIANA IN 1810.

The events which we have just been describing really constitute the initiatory steps to the great military campaign of Gen. Harrison which ended in the "battle of Tippecanoe;" but before proceeding to an account of that brilliant affair, let us take a glance at the resources and strength of Indiana Territory at this time, 1810:

Total population, 24,520; 33 grist mills; 14 saw mills; 3 horse mills; 18 tanneries; 28 distilleries; 3 powder mills; 1,256 looms;

1,350 spinning wheels; value of manufactures—woolen, cotton hempen and flaxen cloths, \$159,052; of cotton and wool spun in mills, \$150,000; of nails, 30,000 pounds, \$4,000; of leather tanned, \$9,300; of distillery products, 35,950 gallons, \$16,230; of gunpowder, 3,600 pounds, \$1,800; of wine from grapes, 96 barrels, \$6,000, and 50,000 pounds of maple sugar.

During the year 1810 a Board of Commissioners was established to straighten out the confused condition into which the land-title controversy had been carried by the various and conflicting administrations that had previously exercised jurisdiction in this regard. This work was attended with much labor on the part of the Commissioners and great dissatisfaction on the part of a few designing speculators, who thought no extreme of perjury too hazardous in their mad attempts to obtain lands fraudulently. In closing their report the Commissioners used the following expressive language: "We close this melancholy picture of human depravity by rendering our devout acknowledgment that, in the awful alternative in which we have been placed, of either admitting perjured testimony in support of the claims before us, or having it turned against our characters and lives, it has as yet pleased that divine providence which rules over the affairs of men, to preserve us, both from legal murder and private assassination."

The question of dividing the Territory of Indiana was agitated from 1806 to 1809, when Congress erected the Territory of Illinois, to comprise all that part of Indiana Territory lying west of the Wabash river and a direct line drawn from that river and Post Vincennes due north to the territorial line between the United States and Canada. This occasioned some confusion in the government of Indiana, but in due time the new elections were confirmed, and the new territory started off on a journey of prosperity which this section of the United States has ever since enjoyed.

From the first settlement of Vincennes for nearly half a century there occurred nothing of importance to relate, at least so far as the records inform us. The place was too isolated to grow very fast, and we suppose there was a succession of priests and commandants, who governed the little world around them with almost infinite power and authority, from whose decisions there was no appeal, if indeed any was ever desired. The character of society in such a place would of course grow gradually different from the parent society, assimilating more or less with that of neighboring tribes. The whites lived in peace with the Indians, each under-

standing the other's peculiarities, which remained fixed long enough for both parties to study out and understand them. The government was a mixture of the military and the civil. There was little to incite to enterprise. Speculations in money and property, and their counterpart, beggary, were both unknown; the necessities of life were easily procured, and beyond these there were but few wants to be supplied; hospitality was exercised by all, as there were no taverns; there seemed to be no use for law, judges or prisons; each district had its commandant, and the proceedings of a trial were singular. The complaining party obtained a notification from the commandant to his adversary, accompanied by a command to render justice. If this had no effect he was notified to appear before the commandant on a particular day and answer; and if the last notice was neglected, a sergeant and file of men were sent to bring him,—no sheriff and no costs. The convicted party would be fined and kept in prison until he rendered justice according to the decree; when extremely refractory the cat-o'-nine-tails brought him to a sense of justice. In such a state of society there was no demand for learning and science. Few could read, and still fewer write. Their disposition was nearly always to deal honestly, at least simply. Peltries were their standard of value. A brotherly love generally prevailed. But they were devoid of public spirit, enterprise or ingenuity.





## GOV. HARRISON AND THE INDIANS.

Immediately after the organization of Indiana Territory Governor Harrison's attention was directed, by necessity as well as by instructions from Congress, to settling affairs with those Indians who still held claims to lands. He entered into several treaties, by which at the close of 1805 the United States Government had obtained about 46,000 square miles of territory, including all the lands lying on the borders of the Ohio river between the mouth of the Wabash river and the State of Ohio.

The levying of a tax, especially a poll tax, by the General Assembly, created considerable dissatisfaction among many of the inhabitants. At a meeting held Sunday, August 16, 1807, a number of Frenchmen resolved to "withdraw their confidence and support forever from those men who advocated or in any manner promoted the second grade of government."

In 1807 the territorial statutes were revised and under the new code, treason, murder, arson and horse-stealing were each punishable by death. The crime of manslaughter was punishable by the common law. Burglary and robbery were punishable by whipping, fine and in some cases by imprisonment not exceeding forty years. Hog stealing was punishable by fine and whipping. Bigamy was punishable by fine, whipping and disfranchisement, etc.

In 1804 Congress established three land offices for the sale of lands in Indiana territory; one was located at Detroit, one at Vincennes and one at Kaskaskia. In 1807 a fourth one was opened at Jeffersonville, Clark county; this town was first laid out in 1802, agreeably to plans suggested by Mr. Jefferson then President of the United States.

Governor Harrison, according to his message to the Legislature in 1806, seemed to think that the peace then existing between the whites and the Indians was permanent; but in the same document he referred to a matter that might be a source of trouble, which indeed it proved to be, namely, the execution of white laws among the Indians—laws to which the latter had not been a party in their enactment. The trouble was aggravated by the partiality with which the laws seem always to have been executed; the Indian

was nearly always the sufferer. All along from 1805 to 1810 the Indians complained bitterly against the encroachments of the white people upon the lands that belonged to them. The invasion of their hunting grounds and the unjustifiable killing of many of their people were the sources of their discontent. An old chief, in laying the trouble of his people before Governor Harrison, said: "You call us children; why do you not make us as happy as our fathers, the French, did? They never took from us our lands; indeed, they were common between us. They planted where they pleased, and they cut wood where they pleased; and so did we; but now if a poor Indian attempts to take a little bark from a tree to cover him from the rain, up comes a white man and threatens to shoot him, claiming the tree as his own."

The Indian truly had grounds for his complaint, and the state of feeling existing among the tribes at this time was well calculated to develop a patriotic leader who should carry them all forward to victory at arms, if certain concessions were not made to them by the whites. But this golden opportunity was seized by an unworthy warrior. A brother of Tecumseh, a "prophet" named Law-le-was-i-kaw, but who assumed the name of Pems-quah-wah (Open Door), was the crafty Shawanee warrior who was enabled to work upon both the superstitious and the rational judgment of his fellow Indians. He was a good orator, somewhat peculiar in his appearance and well calculated to win the attention and respect of the savages. He began by denouncing witchcraft, the use of intoxicating liquors, the custom of Indian women marrying white men, the dress of the whites and the practice of selling Indian lands to the United States. He also told the Indians that the commands of the Great Spirit required them to punish with death those who practiced the arts of witchcraft and magic; that the Great Spirit had given him power to find out and expose such persons; that he had power to cure all diseases, to confound his enemies and to stay the arm of death in sickness and on the battle-field. His harangues aroused among some bands of Indians a high degree of superstitious excitement. An old Delaware chief named Ta-te-bock-o-she, through whose influence a treaty had been made with the Delawares in 1804, was accused of witchcraft, tried, condemned and tomahawked, and his body consumed by fire. The old chief's wife, nephew ("Billy Patterson") and an aged Indian named Joshua were next accused of witchcraft and condemned to death. The two men were burned at the stake, but the wife of Ta-te-bock-o-she was saved from



• GEN. ARTHUR ST. CLAIR. •



death by her brother, who suddenly approached her, took her by the hand, and, without meeting any opposition from the Indians present, led her out of the council-house. He then immediately returned and checked the growing influence of the Prophet by exclaiming in a strong, earnest voice, "The Evil Spirit has come among us and we are killing each other."—[*Dillon's History of Indiana*.

When Gov. Harrison was made acquainted with these events he sent a special messenger to the Indians, strongly entreating them to renounce the Prophet and his works. This really destroyed to some extent the Prophet's influence; but in the spring of 1808, having aroused nearly all the tribes of the Lake Region, the Prophet with a large number of followers settled near the mouth of the Tippecanoe river, at a place which afterward had the name of "Prophet's-Town." Taking advantage of his brother's influence, Tecumseh actively engaged himself in forming the various tribes into a confederacy. He announced publicly to all the Indians that the treaties by which the United States had acquired lands northwest of the Ohio were not made in fairness, and should be considered void. He also said that no single tribe was invested with power to sell lands without the consent of all the other tribes, and that he and his brother, the Prophet, would oppose and resist all future attempts which the white people might make to extend their settlements in the lands that belonged to the Indians.

Early in 1808, Gov. Harrison sent a speech to the Shawanees, in which was this sentence: "My children, this business must be stopped; I will no longer suffer it. You have called a number of men from the most distant tribes to listen to a fool, who speaks not the words of the Great Spirit but those of the devil and the British agents. My children, your conduct has much alarmed the white settlers near you. They desire that you will send away those people; and if they wish to have the impostor with them they can carry him along with them. Let him go to the lakes; he can hear the British more distinctly." This message wounded the pride of the Prophet, and he prevailed on the messenger to inform Gov. Harrison that he was not in league with the British, but was speaking truly the words of the Great Spirit.

In the latter part of the summer of 1808, the Prophet spent several weeks at Vincennes, for the purpose of holding interviews with Gov. Harrison. At one time he told the Governor that he was a Christian and endeavored to persuade his people also to become Christians, abandon the use of liquor, be united in broth-

erly love, etc., making Mr. Harrison believe at least, that he was honest; but before long it was demonstrated that the "Prophet" was designing, cunning and unreliable; that both he and Tecumseh were enemies of the United States, and friends of the English; and that in case of a war between the Americans and English, they would join the latter. The next year the Prophet again visited Vincennes, with assurances that he was not in sympathy with the English, but the Governor was not disposed to believe him; and in a letter to the Secretary of War, in July, 1809, he said that he regarded the bands of Indians at Prophet's Town as a combination which had been produced by British intrigue and influence, in anticipation of a war between them and the United States.

In direct opposition to Tecumseh and the prophet and in spite of all these difficulties, Gov. Harrison continued the work of extinguishing Indian titles to lands, with very good success. By the close of 1809, the total amount of land ceded to the United States, under treaties which had been effected by Mr. Harrison, exceeded 30,000,000 a res.

From 1805 to 1807, the movements of Aaron Burr in the Ohio valley created considerable excitement in Indiana. It seemed that he intended to collect a force of men, invade Mexico and found a republic there, comprising all the country west of the Alleghany mountains. He gathered, however, but a few men, started south, and was soon arrested by the Federal authorities. But before his arrest he had abandoned his expedition and his followers had dispersed.

#### HARRISON'S CAMPAIGN.

While the Indians were combining to prevent any further transfer of land to the whites, the British were using the advantage as a groundwork for a successful war upon the Americans. In the spring of 1810 the followers of the Prophet refused to receive their annuity of salt, and the officials who offered it were denounced as "American dogs," and otherwise treated in a disrespectful manner. Gov. Harrison, in July, attempted to gain the friendship of the Prophet by sending him a letter, offering to treat with him personally in the matter of his grievances, or to furnish means to send him, with three of his principal chiefs, to the President at Washington; but the messenger was coldly received, and they returned word that they would visit Vincennes in a few days and interview the Governor. Accordingly, Aug. 12, 1810, the Shawanee chief with 70 of his principal warriors, marched up to the door of the

Governor's house, and from that day until the 22d held daily interviews with His Excellency. In all of his speeches Tecumseh was haughty, and sometimes arrogant. On the 20th he delivered that celebrated speech in which he gave the Governor the alternative of returning their lands or meeting them in battle.

While the Governor was replying to this speech Tecumseh interrupted him with an angry exclamation, declaring that the United States, through Gov. Harrison, had "cheated and imposed on the Indians." When Tecumseh first rose, a number of his party also sprung to their feet, armed with clubs, tomahawks and spears, and made some threatening demonstrations. The Governor's guards, who stood a little way off, were marched up in haste, and the Indians, awed by the presence of this small armed force, abandoned what seemed to be an intention to make an open attack on the Governor and his attendants. As soon as Tecumseh's remarks were interpreted, the Governor reproached him for his conduct, and commanded him to depart instantly to his camp.

On the following day Tecumseh repented of his rash act and requested the Governor to grant him another interview, and protested against any intention of offense. The Governor consented, and the council was re-opened on the 21st, when the Shawanee chief addressed him in a respectful and dignified manner, but remained immovable in his policy. The Governor then requested Tecumseh to state plainly whether or not the surveyors who might be sent to survey the lands purchased at the treaty of Fort Wayne in 1809, would be molested by Indians. Tecumseh replied: "Brother, when you speak of annuities to me, I look at the land and pity the women and children. I am authorized to say that they will not receive them. Brother, we want to save that piece of land. We do not wish you to take it. It is small enough for our purpose. If you do take it, you must blame yourself as the cause of the trouble between us and the tribes who sold it to you. I want the present boundary line to continue. Should you cross it, I assure you it will be productive of bad consequences."

The next day the Governor, attended only by his interpreter, visited the camp of the great Shawanee, and in the course of a long interview told him that the President of the United States would not acknowledge his claims. "Well," replied the brave warrior, "as the great chief is to determine the matter, I hope the Great Spirit will put sense enough into his head to induce him to direct you to give up this land. It is true, he is so far off he will not be

injured by the war. He may sit still in his town and drink his wine, while you and I will have to fight it out."

In his message to the new territorial Legislature in 1810 Gov. Harrison called attention to the dangerous views held by Tecumseh and the Prophet, to the pernicious influence of alien enemies among the Indians, to the unsettled condition of the Indian trade and to the policy of extinguishing Indian titles to lands. The eastern settlements were separated from the western by a considerable extent of Indian lands, and the most fertile tracts within the territory were still in the hands of the Indians. Almost entirely divested of the game from which they had drawn their subsistence, it had become of little use to them; and it was the intention of the Government to substitute for the precarious and scanty supplies of the chase the more certain and plentiful support of agriculture and stock-raising. The old habit of the Indians to hunt so long as a deer could be found was so inveterate that they would not break it and resort to intelligent agriculture unless they were compelled to, and to this they would not be compelled unless they were confined to a limited extent of territory. The earnest language of the Governor's appeal was like this: "Are then those extinguishments of native title which are at once so beneficial to the Indian and the territory of the United States, to be suspended on account of the intrigues of a few individuals? Is one of the fairest portions of the globe to remain in a state of nature, the haunt of a few wretched savages, when it seems destined by the Creator to give support to a large population, and to be the seat of civilization, of science and true religion?"

In the same message the Governor also urged the establishment of a system of popular education.

Among the acts passed by this session of the Legislature, one authorized the President and Directors of the Vincennes Public Library to raise \$1,000 by lottery. Also, a petition was sent to Congress for a permanent seat of government for the Territory, and commissioners were appointed to select the site.

With the beginning of the year 1811 the British agent for Indian affairs adopted measures calculated to secure the support of the savages in the war which at this time seemed almost inevitable. Meanwhile Gov. Harrison did all in his power to destroy the influence of Tecumseh and his brother and break up the Indian confederacy which was being organized in the interests of Great Britain. Pioneer settlers and the Indians naturally grew more and more



aggressive and intolerant, committing depredations and murders, until the Governor felt compelled to send the following speech, substantially, to the two leaders of the Indian tribes: "This is the third year that all the white people in this country have been alarmed at your proceedings; you threaten us with war; you invite all the tribes north and west of you to join against us, while your warriors who have lately been here deny this. The tribes on the Mississippi have sent me word that you intended to murder me and then commence a war upon my people, and your seizing the salt I recently sent up the Wabash is also sufficient evidence of such intentions on your part. My warriors are preparing themselves, not to strike you, but to defend themselves and their women and children. You shall not surprise us, as you expect to do. Your intended act is a rash one: consider well of it. What can induce you to undertake such a thing when there is so little prospect of success? Do you really think that the handful of men you have about you are able to contend with the seventeen 'fires?' or even that the whole of the tribes united could contend against the Kentucky 'fire' alone? I am myself of the Long 'Knife fire.' As soon as they hear my voice you will see them pouring forth their swarms of hunting-shirt men as numerous as the mosquitoes on the shores of the Wabash. Take care of their stings. It is not our wish to hurt you; if we did, we certainly have power to do it.

"You have also insulted the Government of the United States, by seizing the salt that was intended for other tribes. Satisfaction must be given for that also. You talk of coming to see me, attended by all of your young men; but this must not be. If your intentions are good, you have no need to bring but a few of your young men with you. I must be plain with you. I will not suffer you to come into our settlements with such a force. My advice is that you visit the President of the United States and lay your grievances before him.

"With respect to the lands that were purchased last fall I can enter into no negotiations with you; the affair is with the President. If you wish to go and see him, I will supply you with the means.

"The person who delivers this is one of my war officers, and is a man in whom I have entire confidence; whatever he says to you, although it may not be contained in this paper, you may believe comes from me. My friend Tecumseh, the bearer is a good man and a brave warrior; I hope you will treat him well. You are

yourself a warrior, and all such should have esteem for each other."

The bearer of this speech was politely received by Tecumseh, who replied to the Governor briefly that he should visit Vincennes in a few days. Accordingly he arrived July 27, 1811, bringing with him a considerable force of Indians, which created much alarm among the inhabitants. In view of an emergency Gov. Harrison reviewed his militia—about 750 armed men—and stationed two companies and a detachment of dragoons on the borders of the town. At this interview Tecumseh held forth that he intended no war against the United States; that he would send messengers among the Indians to prevent murders and depredations on the white settlements; that the Indians, as well as the whites, who had committed murders, ought to be forgiven; that he had set the white people an example of forgiveness, which they ought to follow; that it was his wish to establish a union among all the Indian tribes; that the northern tribes were united; that he was going to visit the southern Indians, and then return to the Prophet's town. He said also that he would visit the President the next spring and settle all difficulties with him, and that he hoped no attempts would be made to make settlements on the lands which had been sold to the United States, at the treaty of Fort Wayne, because the Indians wanted to keep those grounds for hunting.

Tecumseh then, with about 20 of his followers, left for the South, to induce the tribes in that direction to join his confederacy.

By the way, a lawsuit was instituted by Gov. Harrison against a certain Wm. McIntosh, for asserting that the plaintiff had cheated the Indians out of their lands, and that by so doing he had made them enemies to the United States. The defendant was a wealthy Scotch resident of Vincennes, well educated, and a man of influence among the people opposed to Gov. Harrison's land policy. The jury rendered a verdict in favor of Harrison, assessing the damages at \$4,000. In execution of the decree of Court a large quantity of the defendant's land was sold in the absence of Gov. Harrison; but some time afterward Harrison caused about two-thirds of the land to be restored to Mr. McIntosh, and the remainder was given to some orphan children.

Harrison's first movement was to erect a new fort on the Wabash river and to break up the assemblage of hostile Indians at the Prophet's town. For this purpose he ordered Col. Boyd's regiment of infantry to move from the falls of Ohio to Vincennes. When the military expedition organized by Gov. Harrison was nearly

ready to march to the Prophet's town, several Indian chiefs arrived at Vincennes Sept. 25, 1811, and declared that the Indians would comply with the demands of the Governor and disperse; but this did not check the military proceedings. The army under command of Harrison moved from Vincennes Sept. 26, and Oct. 3, encountering no opposition from the enemy, encamped at the place where Fort Harrison was afterward built, and near where the city of Terre Haute now stands. On the night of the 11th a few hostile Indians approached the encampment and wounded one of the sentinels, which caused considerable excitement. The army was immediately drawn up in line of battle, and small detachments were sent in all directions; but the enemy could not be found. Then the Governor sent a message to Prophet's Town, requiring the Shawanees, Winnebagoes, Pottawatomies and Kickapoos at that place to return to their respective tribes; he also required the Prophet to restore all the stolen horses in his possession, or to give satisfactory proof that such persons were not there, nor had lately been, under his control. To this message the Governor received no answer, unless that answer was delivered in the battle of Tippecanoe.

The new fort on the Wabash was finished Oct. 28, and at the request of all the subordinate officers it was called "Fort Harrison," near what is now Terre Haute. This fort was garrisoned with a small number of men under Lieutenant-Colonel Miller. On the 29th the remainder of the army, consisting of 910 men, moved toward the Prophet's town; about 270 of the troops were mounted. The regular troops, 250 in number, were under the command of Col. Boyd. With this army the Governor marched to within a half mile of the Prophet's town, when a conference was opened with a distinguished chief, in high esteem with the Prophet, and he informed Harrison that the Indians were much surprised at the approach of the army, and had already dispatched a message to him by another route. Harrison replied that he would not attack them until he had satisfied himself that they would not comply with his demands; that he would continue his encampment on the Wabash, and on the following morning would have an interview with the prophet. Harrison then resumed his march, and, after some difficulty, selected a place to encamp—a spot not very desirable. It was a piece of dry oak land rising about ten feet above the marshy prairie in front toward the Indian town, and nearly twice that height above a similar prairie in the rear, through which

and near this bank ran a small stream clothed with willow and brush wood. Toward the left flank this highland widened considerably, but became gradually narrower in the opposite direction, and at the distance of 150 yards terminated in an abrupt point. The two columns of infantry occupied the front and rear of this ground, about 150 yards from each other on the left, and a little more than half that distance on the right, flank. One flank was filled by two companies of mounted riflemen, 120 men, under command of Major-General Wells, of the Kentucky militia, and one by Spencer's company of mounted riflemen, numbering 80 men. The front line was composed of one battalion of United States infantry, under command of Major Floyd, flanked on the right by two companies of militia, and on the left by one company. The rear line was composed of a battalion of United States troops, under command of Capt. Bean, acting as Major, and four companies of militia infantry under Lieutenant-Colonel Decker. The regular troops of this line joined the mounted riflemen under Gen. Wells, on the left flank, and Col. Decker's battalion formed an angle with Spencer's company on the left. Two troops of dragoons, about 60 men in all, were encamped in the rear of the left flank, and Capt. Parke's troop, which was larger than the other two, in rear of the right line. For a night attack the order of encampment was the order of battle, and each man slept opposite his post in the line. In the formation of the troops single file was adopted, in order to get as great an extension of the lines as possible.

#### BATTLE OF TIPPECANOE.

No attack was made by the enemy until about 4 o'clock on the morning of Nov. 7, just after the Governor had arisen. The attack was made on the left flank. Only a single gun was fired by the sentinels or by the guard in that direction, which made no resistance, abandoning their posts and fleeing into camp; and the first notice which the troops of that line had of the danger was the yell of the savages within a short distance of them. But the men were courageous and preserved good discipline. Such of them as were awake, or easily awakened, seized arms and took their stations; others, who were more tardy, had to contend with the enemy in the doors of their tents. The storm first fell upon Capt. Barton's company of the Fourth United States Regiment, and Capt. Geiger's company of mounted riflemen, which formed the left angle of the rear line. The fire from the Indians was exceedingly severe, and

men in these companies suffered considerably before relief could be brought to them. Some few Indians passed into the encampment near the angle, and one or two penetrated to some distance before they were killed. All the companies formed for action before they were fired on. The morning was dark and cloudy, and the fires of the Americans afforded only a partial light, which gave greater advantage to the enemy than to the troops, and they were therefore extinguished.

As soon as the Governor could mount his horse he rode to the angle which was attacked, where he found that Barton's company had suffered severely, and the left of Geiger's entirely broken. He immediately ordered Cook's and Wentworth's companies to march up to the center of the rear line, where were stationed a small company of U. S. riflemen and the companies of Bean, Snelling and Prescott. As the General rode up he found Maj. Daviess forming the dragoons in the rear of these companies, and having ascertained that the heaviest fire proceeded from some trees 15 or 20 paces in front of these companies, he directed the Major to dislodge them with a part of the dragoons; but unfortunately the Major's gallantry caused him to undertake the execution of the order with a smaller force than was required, which enabled the enemy to avoid him in front and attack his flanks. He was mortally wounded and his men driven back. Capt. Snelling, however, with his company immediately dislodged those Indians. Capt. Spencer and his 1st and 2nd Lieutenants were killed, and Capt. Warwick mortally wounded. The soldiery remained brave. Spencer had too much ground originally, and Harrison re-enforced him with a company of riflemen which had been driven from their position on the left flank.

Gen. Harrison's aim was to keep the lines entire, to prevent the enemy from breaking into the camp until daylight, which would enable him to make a general and effectual charge. With this view he had re-enforced every part of the line that had suffered much, and with the approach of morning he withdrew several companies from the front and rear lines and re-enforced the right and left flanks, foreseeing that at these points the enemy would make their last effort. Maj. Wells, who had commanded the left flank, charged upon the enemy and drove them at the point of the bayonet into the marsh, where they could not be followed. Meanwhile Capt. Cook and Lieut. Larrabee marched their companies to the right flank and formed under fire of the enemy, and being there joined

by the riflemen of that flank, charged upon the enemy, killing a number and putting the rest to a precipitate flight.

Thus ended the famous battle of Tippecanoe, victoriously to the whites and honorably to Gen. Harrison.

In this battle Mr. Harrison had about 700 efficient men, while the Indians had probably more than that. The loss of the Americans was 37 killed and 25 mortally wounded, and 126 wounded; the Indians lost 38 killed on the field of battle, and the number of the wounded was never known. Among the whites killed were Daviess, Spencer, Owen, Warwick, Randolph, Bean and White. Standing on an eminence near by, the Prophet encouraged his warriors to battle by singing a favorite war-song. He told them that they would gain an easy victory, and that the bullets of their enemies would be made harmless by the Great Spirit. Being informed during the engagement that some of the Indians were killed, he said that his warriors must fight on and they would soon be victorious. Immediately after their defeat the surviving Indians lost faith in their great (?) Prophet, returned to their respective tribes, and thus the confederacy was destroyed. The Prophet, with a very few followers, then took up his residence among a small band of Wyandots encamped on Wild-Cat creek. His famous town, with all its possessions, was destroyed the next day, Nov. 8.

On the 18th the American army returned to Vincennes, where most of the troops were discharged. The Territorial Legislature, being in session, adopted resolutions complimentary to Gov. Harrison and the officers and men under him, and made preparations for a reception and celebration.

Capt. Logan, the eloquent Shawanee chief who assisted our forces so materially, died in the latter part of November, 1812, from the effects of a wound received in a skirmish with a reconnoitering party of hostile Indians accompanied by a white man in the British service, Nov. 22. In that skirmish the white man was killed, and Winamac, a Pottawatomie chief of some distinction, fell by the rifle of Logan. The latter was mortally wounded, when he retreated with two warriors of his tribe, Capt. Johnny and Bright-Horn, to the camp of Gen. Winchester, where he soon afterward died. He was buried with the honors of war.

## WAR OF 1812 WITH GREAT BRITAIN.

The victory recently gained by the Americans at the battle of Tippecanoe insured perfect peace for a time, but only a short time as the more extensive schemes of the British had so far ripened as to compel the United States again to declare war against them. Tecumseh had fled to Malden, Canada, where, counseled by the English, he continued to excite the tribes against the Americans. As soon as this war with Great Britain was declared (June 18, 1812), the Indians, as was expected, commenced again to commit depredations. During the summer of 1812 several points along the Lake Region succumbed to the British, as Detroit, under Gen. Hull, Fort Dearborn (now Chicago), commanded by Capt. Heald under Gen. Hull, the post at Mackinac, etc.

In the early part of September, 1812, parties of hostile Indians began to assemble in considerable numbers in the vicinity of Forts Wayne and Harrison, with a view to reducing them. Capt. Rhea, at this time, had command of Fort Wayne, but his drinking propensities rather disqualified him for emergencies. For two weeks the fort was in great jeopardy. An express had been sent to Gen. Harrison for reinforcements, but many days passed without any tidings of expected assistance. At length, one day, Maj. Wm. Oliver and four friendly Indians arrived at the fort on horseback. One of the Indians was the celebrated Logan. They had come in defiance of "500 Indians," had "broken their ranks" and reached the fort in safety. Oliver reported that Harrison was aware of the situation and was raising men for a re-enforcement. Ohio was also raising volunteers; 800 were then assembled at St. Mary's, Ohio, 60 miles south of Fort Wayne, and would march to the relief of the fort in three or four days, or as soon as they were joined by reinforcements from Kentucky.

Oliver prepared a letter, announcing to Gen. Harrison his safe arrival at the besieged fort, and giving an account of its beleaguered situation, which he dispatched by his friendly Shawanees, while he concluded to take his chances at the fort. Brave Logan and his companions started with the message, but had scarcely left the fort when they were discovered and pursued by the hostile Indians, yet passing the Indian lines in safety, they were soon out of reach. The Indians now began a furious attack upon the fort; but the little garrison, with Oliver to cheer them on, bravely met the assault, repelling the attack day after day, until the army approached to their relief. During this siege the commanding officer, whose habits of

intemperance rendered him unfit for the command, was confined in the "black hole," while the junior officer assumed charge. This course was approved by the General, on his arrival, but Capt. Rhea received very little censure, probably on account of his valuable services in the Revolutionary war.

Sept. 6, 1812, Harrison moved forward with his army to the relief of Fort Wayne; the next day he reached a point within three miles of St. Mary's river; the next day he reached the river and was joined at evening by 200 mounted volunteers, under Col. Richard M. Johnson; the next day at "Shane's Crossing" on the St. Mary's they were joined by 800 men from Ohio, under Cols. Adams and Hawkins. At this place Chief Logan and four other Indians offered their services as spies to Gen. Harrison, and were accepted. Logan was immediately disguised and sent forward. Passing through the lines of the hostile Indians, he ascertained their number to be about 1,500, and entering the fort, he encouraged the soldiers to hold out, as relief was at hand. Gen. Harrison's force at this time was about 3,500.

After an early breakfast Friday morning they were under marching orders; it had rained and the guns were damp; they were discharged and reloaded; but that day only one Indian was encountered; preparations were made at night for an expected attack by the Indians, but no attack came; the next day, Sept. 10, they expected to fight their way to Fort Wayne, but in that they were happily disappointed; and "At the first grey of the morning," as Bryce eloquently observes, "the distant halloos of the disappointed savages revealed to the anxious inmates of the fort the glorious news of the approach of the army. Great clouds of dust could be seen from the fort, rolling up in the distance, as the valiant soldiery under Gen. Harrison moved forward to the rescue of the garrison and the brave boys of Kentucky and Ohio."

This siege of Fort Wayne of course occasioned great loss to the few settlers who had gathered around the fort. At the time of its commencement quite a little village had clustered around the military works, but during the siege most of their improvements and crops were destroyed by the savages. Every building out of the reach of the guns of the fort was leveled to the ground, and thus the infant settlement was destroyed.

During this siege the garrison lost but three men, while the Indians lost 25. Gen. Harrison had all the Indian villages for 25 miles around destroyed. Fort Wayne was nothing but a military post until about 1819.



Simultaneously with the attack on Fort Wayne the Indians also besieged Fort Harrison, which was commanded by Zachary Taylor. The Indians commenced firing upon the fort about 11 o'clock one night, when the garrison was in a rather poor plight for receiving them. The enemy succeeded in firing one of the block-houses, which contained whisky, and the whites had great difficulty in preventing the burning of all the barracks. The word "fire" seemed to have thrown all the men into confusion; soldiers' and citizens' wives, who had taken shelter within the fort, were crying; Indians were yelling; many of the garrison were sick and unable to be on duty; the men despaired and gave themselves up as lost; two of the strongest and apparently most reliable men jumped the pickets in the very midst of the emergency, etc., so that Capt. Taylor was at his wit's end what to do; but he gave directions as to the many details, rallied the men by a new scheme, and after about seven hours succeeded in saving themselves. The Indians drove up the horses belonging to the citizens, and as they could not catch them very readily, shot the whole of them in the sight of their owners, and also killed a number of the hogs belonging to the whites. They drove off all of the cattle, 65 in number, as well as the public oxen.

Among many other depredations committed by the savages during this period, was the massacre of the Pigeon Roost settlement, consisting of one man, five women and 16 children; a few escaped. An unsuccessful effort was made to capture these Indians, but when the news of this massacre and the attack on Fort Harrison reached Vincennes, about 1,200 men, under the command of Col. Wm. Russell, of the 7th U. S. Infantry, marched forth for the relief of the fort and to punish the Indians. On reaching the fort the Indians had retired from the vicinity; but on the 15th of September a small detachment composed of 11 men, under Lieut. Richardson, and acting as escort of provisions sent from Vincennes to Fort Harrison, was attacked by a party of Indians within the present limits of Sullivan county. It was reported that seven of these men were killed and one wounded. The provisions of course fell into the hands of the Indians.

#### EXPEDITIONS AGAINST THE INDIANS.

By the middle of August, through the disgraceful surrender of Gen. Hull, at Detroit, and the evacuation of Fort Dearborn and massacre of its garrison, the British and Indians were in possession of the whole Northwest. The savages, emboldened by their suc-

cesses, penetrated deeper into the settlements, committing great depredations. The activity and success of the enemy aroused the people to a realization of the great danger their homes and families were in. Gov. Edwards collected a force of 350 men at Camp Russell, and Capt. Russell came from Vincennes with about 50 more. Being officered and equipped, they proceeded about the middle of October on horseback, carrying with them 20 day's rations, to Peoria. Capt. Craig was sent with two boats up the Illinois, with provisions and tools to build a fort. The little army proceeded to Peoria Lake, where was located a Pottawatomie village. They arrived late at night, within a few miles of the village, without their presence being known to the Indians. Four men were sent out that night to reconnoiter the position of the village. The four brave men who volunteered for this perilous service were Thomas Carlin (afterward Governor), and Robert, Stephen and Davis Whiteside. They proceeded to the village, and explored it and the approaches to it thoroughly, without starting an Indian or provoking the bark of a dog. The low lands between the Indian village and the troops were covered with a rank growth of tall grass, so high and dense as to readily conceal an Indian on horseback, until within a few feet of him. The ground had become still more yielding by recent rains, rendering it almost impassable by mounted men. To prevent detection the soldiers had camped without lighting the usual camp-fires. The men lay down in their cold and cheerless camp, with many misgivings. They well remembered how the skulking savages fell upon Harrison's men at Tippecanoe during the night. To add to their fears, a gun in the hands of a soldier was carelessly discharged, raising great consternation in the camp.

Through a dense fog which prevailed the following morning, the army took up its line of march for the Indian town, Capt. Judy with his corps of spies in advance. In the tall grass they came up with an Indian and his squaw, both mounted. The Indian wanted to surrender, but Judy observed that he "did not leave home to take prisoners," and instantly shot one of them. With the blood streaming from his mouth and nose, and in his agony "singing the death song," the dying Indian raised his gun, shot and mortally wounded a Mr. Wright, and in a few minutes expired! Many guns were immediately discharged at the other Indian, not then known to be a squaw, all of which missed her. Badly scared, and her husband killed by her side, the agonizing wails of the squaw were heart-rending. She was taken prisoner, and afterward restored to her nation.

On nearing the town a general charge was made, the Indians fleeing to the interior wilderness. Some of their warriors made a stand, when a sharp engagement occurred, but the Indians were routed. In their flight they left behind all their winter's store of provisions, which was taken, and their town burned. Some Indian children were found who had been left in the hurried flight, also some disabled adults, one of whom was in a starving condition, and with a voracious appetite partook of the bread given him. He is said to have been killed by a cowardly trooper straggling behind, after the main army had resumed its retrograde march, who wanted to be able to boast that he had killed an Indian.

September 19, 1812, Gen. Harrison was put in command of the Northwestern army, then estimated at 10,000 men, with these orders: "Having provided for the protection of the western frontier, you will retake Detroit; and, with a view to the conquest of upper Canada, you will penetrate that country as far as the force under your command will in your judgment justify."

Although surrounded by many difficulties, the General began immediately to execute these instructions. In calling for volunteers from Kentucky, however, more men offered than could be received. At this time there were about 2,000 mounted volunteers at Vincennes, under the command of Gen. Samuel Hopkins, of the Revolutionary war, who was under instructions to operate against the enemy along the Wabash and Illinois rivers. Accordingly, early in October, Gen. Hopkins moved from Vincennes towards the Kickapoo villages in the Illinois territory, with about 2,000 troops; but after four or five days' march the men and officers raised a mutiny which gradually succeeded in carrying all back to Vincennes. The cause of their discontent is not apparent.

About the same time Col. Russell, with two small companies of U. S. rangers, commanded by Capts. Perry and Modrell, marched from the neighborhood of Vincennes to unite with a small force of mounted militia under the command of Gov. Edwards, of Illinois, and afterward to march with the united troops from Cahokia toward Lake Peoria, for the purpose of co-operating with Gen. Hopkins against the Indian towns in that vicinity; but not finding the latter on the ground, was compelled to retire.

Immediately after the discharge of the mutinous volunteers, Gen. Hopkins began to organize another force, mainly of infantry, to reduce the Indians up the Wabash as far as the Prophet's town. These troops consisted of three regiments of Kentucky militia,

commanded by Cols. Barbour, Miller and Wilcox; a small company of regulars commanded by Capt. Zachary Taylor; a company of rangers commanded by Capt. Beckes; and a company of scouts or spies under the command of Capt. Washburn. The main body of this army arrived at Fort Harrison Nov. 5; on the 11th it proceeded up the east side of the Wabash into the heart of the Indian country, but found the villages generally deserted. Winter setting in severely, and the troops poorly clad, they had to return to Vincennes as rapidly as possible. With one exception the men behaved nobly, and did much damage to the enemy. That exception was the precipitate chase after an Indian by a detachment of men somewhat in liquor, until they found themselves surrounded by an overwhelming force of the enemy, and they had to retreat in disorder.

At the close of this campaign Gen. Hopkins resigned his command.

In the fall of 1812 Gen. Harrison assigned to Lieut. Col. John B. Campbell, of the 19th U. S. Inf., the duty of destroying the Miami villages on the Mississinewa river, with a detachment of about 600 men. Nov. 25, Lieut. Col. Campbell marched from Franklinton, according to orders, toward the scene of action, cautiously avoiding falling in with the Delawares, who had been ordered by Gen. Harrison to retire to the Shawanee establishment on the Anglaize river, and arriving on the Mississinewa Dec. 17, when they discovered an Indian town inhabited by Delawares and Miamis. This and three other villages were destroyed. Soon after this, the supplies growing short and the troops in a suffering condition, Campbell began to consider the propriety of returning to Ohio; but just as he was calling together his officers early one morning to deliberate on the proposition, an army of Indians rushed upon them with fury. The engagement lasted an hour, with a loss of eight killed and 42 wounded, besides about 150 horses killed. The whites, however, succeeded in defending themselves and taking a number of Indians prisoners, who proved to be Munsies, of Silver Heel's band. Campbell, hearing that a large force of Indians were assembled at Mississinewa village, under Tecumseh, determined to return to Greenville. The privations of his troops and the severity of the cold compelled him to send to that place for re-enforcements and supplies. Seventeen of the men had to be carried on litters. They were met by the re-enforcement about 40 miles from Greenville.

Lieut. Col. Campbell sent two messages to the Delawares, who lived on White river and who had been previously directed and requested to abandon their towns on that river and remove into Ohio. In these messages he expressed his regret at unfortunately killing some of their men, and urged them to move to the Shawanee settlement on the Auglaize river. He assured them that their people, in his power, would be compensated by the Government for their losses, if not found to be hostile; and the friends of those killed satisfied by presents, if such satisfaction would be received. This advice was heeded by the main body of the Delawares and a few Miami. The Shawanee Prophet, and some of the principal chiefs of the Miami, retired from the country of the Wabash, and, with their destitute and suffering bands, moved to Detroit, where they were received as the friends and allies of Great Britain.

On the approach of Gen. Harrison with his army in September, 1813, the British evacuated Detroit, and the Ottawas, Chippewas, Pottawatomies, Miami and Kickapoos sued for peace with the United States, which was granted temporarily by Brig. Gen. McArthur, on condition of their becoming allies of the United States in case of war.

In June, 1813, an expedition composed of 137 men, under command of Col. Joseph Bartholomew, moved from Valonia toward the Delaware towns on the west fork of White river, to surprise and punish some hostile Indians who were supposed to be lurking about those villages. Most of these places they found deserted; some of them burnt. They had been but temporarily occupied for the purpose of collecting and carrying away corn. Col. Bartholomew's forces succeeded in killing one or two Indians and destroying considerable corn, and they returned to Valonia on the 21st of this month.

July 1, 1813, Col. William Russell, of the 7th U. S., organized a force of 573 effective men at Valonia and marched to the Indian villages about the mouth of the Mississinewa. His experience was much like that of Col. Bartholomew, who had just preceded him. He had rainy weather, suffered many losses, found the villages deserted, destroyed stores of corn, etc. The Colonel reported that he went to every place where he expected to find the enemy, but they nearly always seemed to have fled the country. The march from Valonia to the mouth of the Mississinewa and return was about 250 miles.

Several smaller expeditions helped to "checker" the surrounding

country, and find that the Indians were very careful to keep themselves out of sight, and thus closed this series of campaigns.

#### CLOSE OF THE WAR.

The war with England closed on the 24th of December, 1814, when a treaty of peace was signed at Ghent. The 9th article of the treaty required the United States to put an end to hostilities with all tribes or nations of Indians with whom they had been at war; to restore to such tribes or nations respectively all the rights and possessions to which they were entitled in 1811, before the war, on condition that such Indians should agree to desist from all hostilities against the United States. But in February, just before the treaty was sanctioned by our Government, there were signs of Indians accumulating arms and ammunition, and a cautionary order was therefore issued to have all the white forces in readiness for an attack by the Indians; but the attack was not made. During the ensuing summer and fall the United States Government acquainted the Indians with the provisions of the treaty, and entered into subordinate treaties of peace with the principal tribes.

Just before the treaty of Spring Wells (near Detroit) was signed, the Shawanee Prophet retired to Canada, but declaring his resolution to abide by any treaty which the chiefs might sign. Some time afterward he returned to the Shawanee settlement in Ohio, and lastly to the west of the Mississippi, where he died, in 1834. The British Government allowed him a pension from 1813 until his death. His brother Tecumseh was killed at the battle of the Thames, Oct. 5, 1813, by a Mr. Wheatty, as we are positively informed by Mr. A. J. James, now a resident of La Harpe township, Hancock county, Ill., whose father-in-law, John Pigman, of Coshocton county, Ohio, was an eye witness. Gen. Johnson has generally had the credit of killing Tecumseh.



TECUMSEH.





## TECUMSEH.

If one should inquire who has been the greatest Indian, the most noted, the "principal Indian" in North America since its discovery by Columbus, we would be obliged to answer, Tecumseh. For all those qualities which elevate a man far above his race; for talent, tact, skill and bravery as a warrior; for high-minded, honorable and chivalrous bearing as a man; in a word, for all those elements of greatness which place him a long way above his fellows in savage life, the name and fame of Tecumseh will go down to posterity in the West as one of the most celebrated of the aborigines of this continent,—as one who had no equal among the tribes that dwelt in the country drained by the Mississippi. Born to command himself, he used all the appliances that would stimulate the courage and nerve the valor of his followers. Always in the front rank of battle, his followers blindly followed his lead, and as his war-cry rang clear above the din and noise of the battle-field, the Shawnee warriors, as they rushed on to victory or the grave, rallied around him, foemen worthy of the steel of the most gallant commander that ever entered the lists in defense of his altar or his home.

The tribe to which Tecumseh, or Tecumtha, as some write it, belonged, was the Shawnee, or Shawanee. The tradition of the nation held that they originally came from the Gulf of Mexico; that they wended their way up the Mississippi and the Ohio, and settled at or near the present site of Shawneetown, Ill., whence they removed to the upper Wabash. In the latter place, at any rate, they were found early in the 18th century, and were known as the "bravest of the brave." This tribe has uniformly been the bitter enemy of the white man, and in every contest with our people has exhibited a degree of skill and strategy that should characterize the most dangerous foe.

Tecumseh's notoriety and that of his brother, the Prophet, mutually served to establish and strengthen each other. While the Prophet had unlimited power, spiritual and temporal, he distributed his greatness in all the departments of Indian life with a kind of fanaticism that magnetically aroused the religious and superstitious passions, not only of his own followers, but also of all the tribes in

this part of the country; but Tecumseh concentrated his greatness upon the more practical and business affairs of military conquest. It is doubted whether he was really a sincere believer in the pretensions of his fanatic brother; if he did not believe in the pretentious featnre of them he had the shrewdness to keep his unbelief to himself, knowing that religious fanaticism was one of the strongest impulses to reckless bravery.

During his sojourn in the Northwestern Territory, it was Tecumseh's uppermost desire of life to confederate all the Indian tribes of the country together against the whites, to maintain their choice hunting-grounds. All his public policy converged toward this single end. In his vast scheme he comprised even all the Indians in the Gulf country,—all in America west of the Alleghany mountains. He held, as a subordinate principle, that the Great Spirit had given the Indian race all these hunting-grounds to keep in common, and that no Indian or tribe could cede any portion of the land to the whites without the consent of all the tribes. Hence, in all his councils with the whites he ever maintained that the treaties were null and void.

When he met Harrison at Vincennes in council the last time, and, as he was invited by that General to take a seat with him on the platform, he hesitated; Harrison insisted, saying that it was the "wish of their Great Father, the President of the United States, that he should do so." The chief paused a moment, raised his tall and commanding form to its greatest height, surveyed the troops and crowd around him, fixed his keen eyes upon Gov. Harrison, and then turning them to the sky above, and pointing toward heaven with his sinewy arm in a manner indicative of supreme contempt for the paternity assigned him, said in clarion tones: "My father? The sun is my father, the earth is my mother, and on her bosom I will recline." He then stretched himself, with his warriors, on the green sward. The effect was electrical, and for some moments there was perfect silence.

The Governor, then, through an interpreter, told him that he understood he had some complaints to make and redress to ask, etc., and that he wished to investigate the matter and make restitution wherever it might be decided it should be done. As soon as the Governor was through with this introductory speech, the stately warrior arose, tall, athletic, manly, dignified and graceful, and with a voice at first low, but distinct and musical, commenced a reply. As he warmed up with his subject his clear tones might be heard,

as if "trumpet-tongued," to the utmost limits of the assembly. The most perfect silence prevailed, except when his warriors gave their guttural assent to some eloquent recital of the red man's wrong and the white man's injustice. Tecumseh recited the wrongs which his race had suffered from the time of the massacre of the Moravian Indians to the present; said he did not know how he could ever again be the friend of the white man; that the Great Spirit had given to the Indian all the land from the Miami to the Mississippi, and from the lakes to the Ohio, as a common property to all the tribes in these borders, and that the land could not and should not be sold without the consent of all; that all the tribes on the continent formed but one nation; that if the United States would not give up the lands they had bought of the Miamis and the other tribes, those united with him were determined to annihilate those tribes; that they were determined to have no more chiefs, but in future to be governed by their warriors; that unless the whites ceased their encroachments upon Indian lands, the fate of the Indians was sealed; they had been driven from the banks of the Delaware across the Alleghanies, and their possessions on the Wabash and the Illinois were now to be taken from them; that in a few years they would not have ground enough to bury their warriors on this side of the "Father of Waters;" that all would perish, all their possessions taken from them by fraud or force, unless they stopped the progress of the white man westward; that it must be a war of races in which one or the other must perish; that their tribes had been driven toward the setting sun like a galloping horse (ne-kat a-kush-e ka-top-o-lin-to).

The Shawnee language, in which this most eminent Indian statesman spoke, excelled all other aboriginal tongues in its musical articulation; and the effect of Tecumseh's oratory on this occasion can be more easily imagined than described. Gov. Harrison, although as brave a soldier and General as any American, was overcome by this speech. He well knew Tecumseh's power and influence among all the tribes, knew his bravery, courage and determination, and knew that he meant what he said. When Tecumseh was done speaking there was a stillness throughout the assembly which was really painful; not a whisper was heard, and all eyes were turned from the speaker toward Gov. Harrison, who after a few moments came to himself, and recollecting many of the absurd statements of the great Indian orator, began a reply which was more logical, if not so eloquent. The Shawnees were attentive un-

til Harrison's interpreter began to translate his speech to the Miamis and Pottawatomies, when Tecumseh and his warriors sprang to their feet, brandishing their war-clubs and tomahawks. "Tell him," said Tecumseh, addressing the interpreter in Shawnee, "he lies." The interpreter undertook to convey this message to the Governor in smoother language, but Tecumseh noticed the effort and remonstrated, "No, no; tell him he lies." The warriors began to grow more excited, when Secretary Gibson ordered the American troops in arms to advance. This allayed the rising storm, and as soon as Tecumseh's "He lies" was literally interpreted to the Governor, the latter told Tecumseh through the interpreter to tell Tecumseh he would hold no further council with him.

Thus the assembly was broken up, and one can hardly imagine a more exciting scene. It would constitute the finest subject for a historical painting to adorn the rotunda of the capitol. The next day Tecumseh requested another interview with the Governor, which was granted on condition that he should make an apology to the Governor for his language the day before. This he made through the interpreter. Measures for defense and protection were taken, however, lest there should be another outbreak. Two companies of militia were ordered from the country, and the one in town added to them, while the Governor and his friends went into council fully armed and prepared for any contingency. On this occasion the conduct of Tecumseh was entirely different from that of the day before. Firm and intrepid, showing not the slightest fear or alarm, surrounded with a military force four times his own, he preserved the utmost composure and equanimity. No one would have supposed that he could have been the principal actor in the thrilling scene of the previous day. He claimed that half the Americans were in sympathy with him. He also said that whites had informed him that Gov. Harrison had purchased land from the Indians without any authority from the Government; that he, Harrison, had but two years more to remain in office, and that if he, Tecumseh, could prevail upon the Indians who sold the lands not to receive their annuities for that time, and the present Governor displaced by a good man as his successor, the latter would restore to the Indians all the lands purchased from them.

The Wyandots, Kickapoos, Pottawatomies, Ottawas and the Winnebagoes, through their respective spokesmen, declared their adherence to the great Shawnee warrior and statesman. Gov. Harrison then told them that he would send Tecumseh's speech to the Presi-

dent of the United States and return the answer to the Indians as soon as it was received. Tecumseh then declared that he and his allies were determined that the old boundary line should continue; and that if the whites crossed it, it would be at their peril. Gov. Harrison replied that he would be equally plain with him and state that the President would never allow that the lands on the Wabash were the property of any other tribes than those who had occupied them since the white people first came to America; and as the title to the lands lately purchased was derived from those tribes by a fair purchase, he might rest assured that the right of the United States would be supported by the sword. "So be it," was the stern and haughty reply of the Shawnee chieftan, as he and his braves took leave of the Governor and wended their way in Indian file to their camping ground.

Thus ended the last conference on earth between the chivalrous Tecumseh and the hero of the battle of Tippecanoe. The bones of the first lie bleaching on the battle-field of the Thames, and those of the last in a mausoleum on the banks of the Ohio; each struggled for the mastery of his race, and each no doubt was equally honest and patriotic in his purposes. The weak yielded to the strong, the defenseless to the powerful, and the hunting-ground of the Shawnee is all occupied by his enemy.

Tecumseh, with four of his braves, immediately embarked in a birch canoe, descended the Wabash, and went on to the South to unite the tribes of that country in a general system of self-defense against the encroachment of the whites. His emblem was a disjointed snake, with the motto, "Join or die!" In union alone was strength.

Before Tecumseh left the Prophet's town at the mouth of the Tippecanoe river, on his excursion to the South, he had a definite understanding with his brother and the chieftains of the other tribes in the Wabash country, that they should preserve perfect peace with the whites until his arrangements were completed for a confederacy of the tribes on both sides of the Ohio and on the Mississippi river; but it seems that while he was in the South engaged in his work of uniting the tribes of that country some of the Northern tribes showed signs of fight and precipitated Harrison into that campaign which ended in the battle of Tippecanoe and the total route of the Indians. Tecumseh, on his return from the South, learning what had happened, was overcome with chagrin, disappointment and anger, and accused his brother of duplicity and coward-

ice; indeed, it is said that he never forgave him to the day of his death. A short time afterward, on the breaking out of the war of Great Britain, he joined Proctor, at Malden, with a party of his warriors, and finally suffered the fate mentioned on page 108.

### CIVIL MATTERS 1812-'5.

Owing to the absence of Gov. Harrison on military duty, John Gibson, the Secretary of the Territory, acted in the administration of civil affairs. In his message to the Legislature convening on the 1st of February, 1813, he said, substantially:

"Did I possess the abilities of Cicero or Demosthenes, I could not portray in more glowing colors our foreign and domestic political situation than it is already experienced within our own breasts. The United States have been compelled, by frequent acts of injustice, to declare war against England. For a detail of the causes of this war I would refer to the message of President Madison; it does honor to his head and heart. Although not an admirer of war, I am glad to see our little but inimitable navy riding triumphant on the seas, but chagrined to find that our armies by land are so little successful. The spirit of '76 appears to have fled from our continent, or, if not fled, is at least asleep, for it appears not to pervade our armies generally. At your last assemblage our political horizon seemed clear, and our infant Territory bid fair for rapid and rising grandeur; but, alas, the scene has changed; and whether this change, as respects our Territory, has been owing to an over anxiety in us to extend our dominions, or to a wish for retaliation by our foes, or to a foreign influence, I shall not say. The Indians, our former neighbors and friends, have become our most inveterate foes. Our former frontiers are now our wilds, and our inner settlements have become frontiers. Some of our best citizens, and old men worn down with age, and helpless women and innocent babes, have fallen victims to savage cruelty. I have done my duty as well as I can, and hope that the interposition of Providence will protect us."

The many complaints made about the Territorial Government Mr. Gibson said, were caused more by default of officers than of the law. Said he: "It is an old and, I believe, correct adage, that 'good officers make good soldiers.' This evil having taken root, I do not know how it can be eradicated; but it may be remedied. In place of men searching after and accepting commissions before they

are even tolerably qualified, thereby subjecting themselves to ridicule and their country to ruin, barely for the name of the thing, I think may be remedied by a previous examination."

During this session of the Legislature the seat of the Territorial Government was declared to be at Corydon, and immediately acting Governor Gibson prorogued the Legislature to meet at that place, the first Monday of December, 1813. During this year the Territory was almost defenseless; Indian outrages were of common occurrence, but no general outbreak was made. The militia-men were armed with rifles and long knives, and many of the rangers carried tomahawks.

In 1813 Thomas Posey, who was at that time a Senator in Congress from Tennessee, and who had been officer of the army of the Revolution, was appointed Governor of Indiana Territory, to succeed Gen. Harrison. He arrived in Vincennes and entered upon the discharge of his duties May 25, 1813. During this year several expeditions against the Indian settlements were set on foot.

In his first message to the Legislature the following December, at Corydon, Gov. Posey said: "The present crisis is awful, and big with great events. Our land and nation is involved in the common calamity of war; but we are under the protecting care of the beneficent Being, who has on a former occasion brought us safely through an arduous struggle and placed us on a foundation of independence, freedom and happiness. He will not suffer to be taken from us what He, in His great wisdom has thought proper to confer and bless us with, if we make a wise and virtuous use of His good gifts. \* \* \* Although our affairs, at the commencement of the war, wore a gloomy aspect, they have brightened, and promise a certainty of success, if properly directed and conducted, of which I have no doubt, as the President and heads of departments of the general Government are men of undoubted patriotism, talents and experience, and who have grown old in the service of their country. \* \* \* It must be obvious to every thinking man that we were forced into the war. Every measure consistent with honor, both before and since the declaration of war, has tried to be on amicable terms with our enemy. \* \* \* You who reside in various parts of the Territory have it in your power to understand what will tend to its local and general advantage. The judiciary system would require a revisal and amendment. The militia law is very defective and requires your immediate attention. It is necessary to have

good roads and highways in as many directions through the Territory as the circumstances and situation of the inhabitants will admit; it would contribute very much to promote the settlement and improvement of the Territory. Attention to education is highly necessary. There is an appropriation made by Congress, in lands, for the purpose of establishing public schools. It comes now within your province to carry into operation the design of the appropriation."

This Legislature passed several very necessary laws for the welfare of the settlements, and the following year, as Gen. Harrison was generally successful in his military campaigns in the Northwest, the settlements in Indiana began to increase and improve. The fear of danger from Indians had in a great measure subsided, and the tide of immigration began again to flow. In January, 1814, about a thousand Miamis assembled at Fort Wayne for the purpose of obtaining food to prevent starvation. They met with ample hospitality, and their example was speedily followed by others. These, with other acts of kindness, won the lasting friendship of the Indians, many of whom had fought in the interests of Great Britain. General treaties between the United States and the Northwestern tribes were subsequently concluded, and the way was fully opened for the improvement and settlement of the lands.

#### POPULATION IN 1815.

The population of the Territory of Indiana, as given in the official returns to the Legislature of 1815, was as follows, by counties:

COUNTIES.	White males of 21 and over.	TOTAL.
Wayne.....	1,225.....	6,407
Franklin.....	1,430.....	7,370
Dearborn.....	902.....	4,424
Switzerland.....	377.....	1,832
Jefferson.....	874.....	4,270
Clark.....	1,387.....	7,150
Washington.....	1,420.....	7,317
Harrison.....	1,056.....	6,975
Knox.....	1,391.....	8,068
Gibson.....	1,100.....	5,340
Posey.....	320.....	1,619
Warrick.....	280.....	1,415
Perry.....	350.....	1,720
Grand Totals.....	12,112.....	63,897

#### GENERAL VIEW.

The well-known ordinance of 1787 conferred many "rights and privileges" upon the inhabitants of the Northwestern Territory, and



consequently upon the people of Indiana Territory, but after all it came far short of conferring as many privileges as are enjoyed at the present day by our Territories. They did not have a full form of Republican government. A freehold estate in 500 acres of land was one of the necessary qualifications of each member of the legislative council of the Territory; every member of the Territorial House of Representatives was required to hold, in his own right, 200 acres of land; and the privilege of voting for members of the House of Representatives was restricted to those inhabitants who, in addition to other qualifications, owned severally at least 50 acres of land. The Governor of the the Territory was invested with the power of appointing officers of the Territorial militia, Judges of the inferior Courts, Clerks of the Courts, Justices of the Peace, Sheriffs, Coroners, County Treasurers and County Surveyors. He was also authorized to divide the Territory into districts; to apportion among the several counties the members of the House of Representatives; to prevent the passage of any Territorial law; and to convene and dissolve the General Assembly whenever he thought best. None of the Governors, however, ever exercised these extraordinary powers arbitrarily. Nevertheless, the people were constantly agitating the question of extending the right of suffrage. Five years after the organization of the Territory, the Legislative Council, in reply to the Governor's Message, said: "Although we are not as completely independent in our legislative capacity as we would wish to be, yet we are sensible that we must wait with patience for that period of time when our population will burst the trammels of a Territorial government, and we shall assume the character more consonant to Republicanism. \* \* \* The confidence which our fellow citizens have uniformly had in your administration has been such that they have hitherto had no reason to be jealous of the unlimited power which you possess over our legislative proceedings. We, however, cannot help regretting that such powers have been lodged in the hands of any one, especially when it is recollected to what dangerous lengths the exercise of those powers may be extended."

After repeated petitions the people of Indiana were empowered by Congress to elect the members of the Legislative Council by popular vote. This act was passed in 1809, and defined what was known as the property qualification of voters. These qualifications were abolished by Congress in 1811, which extended the right of voting for members of the General Assembly and for a Territorial delegate

to Congress to every free white male person who had attained the age of twenty-one years, and who, having paid a county or Territorial tax, was a resident of the Territory and had resided in it for a year. In 1814 the voting qualification in Indiana was defined by Congress, "to every free white male person having a freehold in the Territory, and being a resident of the same." The House of Representatives was authorized by Congress to lay off the Territory into five districts, in each of which the qualified voters were empowered to elect a member of the Legislative Council. The division was made, one to two counties in each district.

At the session in August, 1814, the Territory was also divided into three judicial circuits, and provisions were made for holding courts in the same. The Governor was empowered to appoint a presiding Judge in each circuit, and two Associate Judges of the circuit court in each county. Their compensation was fixed at \$700 per annum.

The same year the General Assembly granted charters to two banking institutions, the Farmers' and Mechanics' Bank of Madison and the Bank of Vincennes. The first was authorized to raise a capital of \$750,000, and the other \$500,000. On the organization of the State these banks were merged into the State Bank and its branches.

Here we close the history of the Territory of Indiana.



## ORGANIZATION OF THE STATE.

The last regular session of the Territorial Legislature was held at Corydon, convening in December, 1815. The message of Governor Posey congratulated the people of the Territory upon the general success of the settlements and the great increase of immigration, recommended light taxes and a careful attention to the promotion of education and the improvement of the State roads and highways. He also recommended a revision of the territorial laws and an amendment of the militia system. Several laws were passed preparatory to a State Government, and December 14, 1815, a memorial to Congress was adopted praying for the authority to adopt a constitution and State Government. Mr. Jennings, the Territorial delegate, laid this memorial before Congress on the 28th, and April 19, 1816, the President approved the bill creating the State of Indiana. Accordingly, May 30 following, a general election was held for a constitutional convention, which met at Corydon June 10 to 29, Johathan Jennings presiding and Wm. Hendricks acting as Secretary.

"The convention that formed the first constitution of the State of Indiana was composed mainly of clear-minded, unpretending men of common sense, whose patriotism was unquestionable and whose morals were fair. Their familiarity with the theories of the Declaration of American Independence, their Territorial experience under the provisions of the ordinance of 1787, and their knowledge of the principles of the constitution of the United States were sufficient, when combined, to lighten materially their labors in the great work of forming a constitution for a new State. With such landmarks in view, the labors of similar conventions in other States and Territories have been rendered comparatively light. In the clearness and conciseness of its style, in the comprehensive and just provisions which it made for the maintainance of civil and religious liberty, in its mandates, which were designed to protect the rights of the people collectively and individually, and to provide for the public welfare, the constitution that was formed for Indiana in 1816 was not inferior to any of the State constitutions which were in existence at that time."—*Dillon's History of Indiana*.

The first State election took place on the first Monday of August, 1816, and Jonathan Jennings was elected Governor, and Christopher Harrison, Lieut. Governor. Wm. Hendricks was elected to represent the new State in the House of Representatives of the United States.

The first General Assembly elected under the new constitution began its session at Corydon, Nov. 4, 1816. John Paul was called to the chair of the Senate pro tem., and Isaac Blackford was elected Speaker of the House of Representatives.

Among other things in the new Governor's message were the following remarks: "The result of your deliberation will be considered as indicative of its future character as well as of the future happiness and prosperity of its citizens. In the commencement of the State government the shackles of the colonial should be forgotten in our exertions to prove, by happy experience, that a uniform adherence to the first principles of our Government and a virtuous exercise of its powers will best secure efficiency to its measures and stability to its character. Without a frequent recurrence to those principles, the administration of the Government will imperceptibly become more and more arduous, until the simplicity of our Republican institutions may eventually be lost in dangerous expedients and political design. Under every free government the happiness of the citizens must be identified with their morals; and while a constitutional exercise of their rights shall continue to have its due weight in discharge of the duties required of the constituted authorities of the State, too much attention cannot be bestowed to the encouragement and promotion of every moral virtue, and to the enactment of laws calculated to restrain the vicious, and prescribe punishment for every crime commensurate with its enormity. In measuring, however, to each crime its adequate punishment, it will be well to recollect that the certainty of punishment has generally the surest effect to prevent crime; while punishments unnecessarily severe too often produce the acquittal of the guilty and disappoint one of the greatest objects of legislation and good government. \* \* \* The dissemination of useful knowledge will be indispensably necessary as a support to morals and as a restraint to vice; and on this subject it will only be necessary to direct your attention to the plan of education as prescribed by the constitution. \* \* \* I recommend to your consideration the propriety of providing by law, to prevent more effectually any unlawful attempts to seize and carry into bondage



INDIANS ATTACKING FRONTIERSMEN.



persons of color legally entitled to their freedom; and at the same time, as far as practicable, to prevent those who rightfully owe service to the citizens of any other State or Territory from seeking within the limits of this State a refuge from the possession of their lawful owners. Such a measure will tend to secure those who are free from any unlawful attempts (to enslave them) and secures the rights of the citizens of the other States and Territories as far as ought reasonably to be expected."

This session of the Legislature elected James Noble and Waller Taylor to the Senate of the United States; Robert A. New was elected Secretary of State; W. H. Lilley, Auditor of State; and Daniel C. Lane, Treasurer of State. The session adjourned January 3, 1817.

As the history of the State of Indiana from this time forward is best given by topics, we will proceed to give them in the chronological order of their origin.

The happy close of the war with Great Britain in 1814 was followed by a great rush of immigrants to the great Territory of the Northwest, including the new States, all now recently cleared of the enemy; and by 1820 the State of Indiana had more than doubled her population, having at this time 147,178, and by 1825 nearly doubled this again, that is to say, a round quarter of a million,—a growth more rapid probably than that of any other section in this country since the days of Columbus.

The period 1825-'30 was a prosperous time for the young State. Immigration continued to be rapid, the crops were generally good and the hopes of the people raised higher than they had ever been before. Accompanying this immigration, however, were paupers and indolent people, who threatened to be so numerous as to become a serious burden. On this subject Governor Ray called for legislative action, but the Legislature scarcely knew what to do and they deferred action.

## BLACK HAWK WAR.

In 1830 there still lingered within the bounds of the State two tribes of Indians, whose growing indolence, intemperate habits, dependence upon their neighbors for the bread of life, diminished prospects of living by the chase, continued perpetration of murders and other outrages of dangerous precedent, primitive ignorance and unrestrained exhibitions of savage customs before the children of the settlers, combined to make them subjects for a more rigid government. The removal of the Indians west of the Mississippi was a melancholy but necessary duty. The time having arrived for the emigration of the Pottawatomies, according to the stipulations contained in their treaty with the United States, they evinced that reluctance common among aboriginal tribes on leaving the homes of their childhood and the graves of their ancestors. Love of country is a principle planted in the bosoms of all mankind. The Laplander and the Esquimaux of the frozen north, who feed on seals, moose and the meat of the polar bear, would not exchange their country for the sunny clime of "Araby the blest." Color and shades of complexion have nothing to do with the heart's best, warmest emotions. Then we should not wonder that the Pottawatomie, on leaving his home on the Wabash, felt as sad as *Æschines* did when ostracised from his native land, laved by the waters of the classic *Scamander*; and the noble and eloquent *Naswaw-kay*, on leaving the encampment on Crooked creek, felt his banishment as keenly as *Cicero* when thrust from the bosom of his beloved *Rome*, for which he had spent the best efforts of his life, and for which he died.

On Sunday morning, May 18, 1832, the people on the west side of the Wabash were thrown into a state of great consternation, on account of a report that a large body of hostile Indians had approached within 15 miles of Lafayette and killed two men. The alarm soon spread throughout Tippecanoe, Warren, Vermillion, Fountain, Montgomery, and adjoining counties. Several brave commandants of companies on the west side of the Wabash in Tippecanoe county, raised troops to go and meet the enemy, and dispatched an express to Gen. Walker with a request that he should



make a call upon the militia of the county to equip themselves instantly and march to the aid of their bleeding countrymen. Thereupon Gen. Walker, Col. Davis, Lient-Col. Jenners, Capt. Brown, of the artillery, and various other gallant spirits mounted their war steeds and proceeded to the army, and thence upon a scout to the Grand Prairie to discover, if possible, the number, intention and situation of the Indians. Over 300 old men, women and children flocked precipitately to Lafayette and the surrounding country east of the Wabash. A remarkable event occurred in this stampede, as follows:

A man, wife and seven children resided on the edge of the Grand Prairie, west of Lafayette, in a locality considered particularly dangerous. On hearing of this alarm he made hurried preparations to fly with his family to Lafayette for safety. Imagine his surprise and chagrin when his wife told him she would not go one step; that she did not believe in being scared at trifles, and in her opinion there was not an Indian within 100 miles of them. Importunity proved unavailing, and the disconsolate and frightened husband and father took all the children except the youngest, bade his wife and babe a long and solemn farewell, never expecting to see them again, unless perhaps he might find their mangled remains, minus their scalps. On arriving at Lafayette, his acquaintances rallied and berated him for abandoning his wife and child in that way, but he met their jibes with a stoical indifference, avowing that he should not be held responsible for their obstinacy.

As the shades of the first evening drew on, the wife felt lonely; and the chirping of the frogs and the notes of the whippoorwill only intensified her loneliness, until she half wished she had accompanied the rest of the family in their flight. She remained in the house a few hours without striking a light, and then concluded that "discretion was the better part of valor," took her babe and some bed-clothes, fastened the cabin door, and hastened to a sink-hole in the woods, in which she afterward said that she and her babe slept soundly until sunrise next morning.

Lafayette literally boiled over with people and patriotism. A meeting was held at the court-house, speeches were made by patriotic individuals, and to allay the fears of the women an armed police was immediately ordered, to be called the "Lafayette Guards." Thos. T. Benbridge was elected Captain, and John Cox, Lieutenant. Capt. Benbridge yielded the active drill of his guards to the Lieutenant, who had served two years in the war of 1812. After

the meeting adjourned, the guards were paraded on the green where Purdue's block now stands, and put through sundry evolutions by Lieut. Cox, who proved to be an expert drill officer, and whose clear, shrill voice rung out on the night air as he marched and counter-marched the troops from where the paper-mill stands to Main street ferry, and over the suburbs, generally. Every old gun and sword that could be found was brought into requisition, with a new shine on them.

Gen. Walker, Colonels Davis and Jenners, and other officers joined in a call of the people of Tippecanoe county for volunteers to march to the frontier settlements. A large meeting of the citizens assembled in the public square in the town, and over 300 volunteers mostly mounted men, left for the scene of action, with an alacrity that would have done credit to veterans.

The first night they camped nine miles west of Lafayette, near Grand Prairie. They placed sentinels for the night and retired to rest. A few of the subaltern officers very injudiciously concluded to try what effect a false alarm would have upon the sleeping soldiers, and a few of them withdrew to a neighboring thicket, and thence made a charge upon the picket guards, who, after hailing them and receiving no countersign, fired off their guns and ran for the Colonel's marquee in the center of the encampment. The aroused Colonels and staff sprang to their feet, shouting "To arms! to arms!" and the obedient, though panic-stricken soldiers seized their guns and demanded to be led against the invading foe. A wild scene of disorder ensued, and amid the din of arms and loud commands of the officers the raw militia felt that they had already got into the red jaws of battle. One of the alarm sentinels, in running to the center of the encampment, leaped over a blazing camp fire, and alighted full upon the breast and stomach of a sleeping lawyer, who was, no doubt, at that moment dreaming of vested and contingent remainders, rich clients and good fees, which in legal parlance was suddenly estopped by the hob-nails in the stogas of the scared sentinel. As soon as the counselor's vitality and consciousness sufficiently returned, he put in some strong demurrers to the conduct of the affrighted picket men, averring that he would greatly prefer being wounded by the enemy to being run over by a cowardly booby. Next morning the organizers of the ruse were severely reprimanded.

May 28, 1832, Governor Noble ordered General Walker to call out his whole command, if necessary, and supply arms, horses and

provisions, even though it be necessary to seize them. The next day four baggage wagons, loaded with camp equipments, stores, provisions and other articles, were sent to the little army, who were thus provided for a campaign of five or six weeks. The following Thursday a squad of cavalry, under Colonel Sigler, passed through Lafayette on the way to the hostile region; and on the 13th of June Colonel Russell, commandant of the 40th Regiment, Indiana Militia, passed through Lafayette with 340 mounted volunteers from the counties of Marion, Hendricks and Johnson. Also, several companies of volunteers from Montgomery, Fountain and Warren counties, hastened to the relief of the frontier settlers. The troops from Lafayette marched to Sugar creek, and after a short time, there being no probability of finding any of the enemy, were ordered to return. They all did so except about 45 horsemen, who volunteered to cross Hickory creek, where the Indians had committed their depredations. They organized a company by electing Samuel McGeorge, a soldier of the war of 1812, Captain, and Amos Allen and Andrew W. Ingraham, Lieutenants.

Crossing Hickory creek, they marched as far as O'Plein river without meeting with opposition. Finding no enemy here they concluded to return. On the first night of their march home they encamped on the open prairie, posting sentinels, as usual. About ten o'clock it began to rain, and it was with difficulty that the sentinels kept their guns dry. Capt. I. H. Cox and a man named Fox had been posted as sentinels within 15 or 20 paces of each other. Cox drew the skirt of his overcoat over his gun-lock to keep it dry; Fox, perceiving this motion, and in the darkness taking him for an Indian, fired upon him and fractured his thigh-bone. Several soldiers immediately ran toward the place where the flash of the gun had been seen; but when they cocked and leveled their guns on the figure which had fired at Cox, the wounded man caused them to desist by crying, "Don't shoot him, it was a sentinel who shot me." The next day the wounded man was left behind the company in care of four men, who, as soon as possible, removed him on a litter to Col. Moore's company of Illinois militia, then encamped on the O'Plein, where Joliet now stands.

Although the main body returned to Lafayette in eight or nine days, yet the alarm among the people was so great that they could not be induced to return to their farms for some time. The presence of the hostiles was hourly expected by the frontier settlements of Indiana, from Vincennes to La Porte. In Clinton county the

inhabitants gathered within the forts and prepared for a regular siege, while our neighbors at Crawfordsville were suddenly astounded by the arrival of a courier at full speed with the announcement that the Indians, more than a thousand in number, were then crossing the Nine-Mile prairie about twelve miles north of town, killing and scalping all. The strongest houses were immediately put in a condition of defense, and sentinels were placed at the principal points in the direction of the enemy. Scouts were sent out to reconnoitre, and messengers were dispatched in different directions to announce the danger to the farmers, and to urge them to hasten with their families into town, and to assist in fighting the momentarily expected savages. At night-fall the scouts brought in the news that the Indians had not crossed the Wabash, but were hourly expected at Lafayette. The citizens of Warren, Fountain and Vermillion counties were alike terrified by exaggerated stories of Indian massacres, and immediately prepared for defense. It turned out that the Indians were not within 100 miles of these temporary forts; but this by no means proved a want of courage in the citizens.

After some time had elapsed, a portion of the troops were marched back into Tippecanoe county and honorably discharged; but the settlers were still loth for a long time to return to their farms. Assured by published reports that the Miamis and Pottawatomies did not intend to join the hostiles, the people by degrees recovered from the panic and began to attend to their neglected crops.

During this time there was actual war in Illinois. Black Hawk and his warriors, well nigh surrounded by a well-disciplined foe, attempted to cross to the west bank of the Mississippi, but after being chased up into Wisconsin and to the Mississippi again, he was in a final battle taken captive. A few years after his liberation, about 1837 or 1838, he died, on the banks of the Des Moines river, in Iowa, in what is now the county of Davis, where his remains were deposited above ground, in the usual Indian style. His remains were afterward stolen and carried away, but they were recovered by the Governor of Iowa and placed in the museum of the Historical Society at Burlington, where they were finally destroyed by fire.

## LAST EXODUS OF THE INDIANS.

In July, 1837, Col. Abel C. Pepper convened the Pottawatomie nation of Indians at Lake Ke-waw-nay for the purpose of removing them west of the Mississippi. That fall a small party of some 80 or 90 Pottawatomies was conducted west of the Mississippi river by George Proffit, Esq. Among the number were Ke-waw-nay, Nebash, Nas-waw-kay, Pash-po-ho and many other leading men of the nation. The regular emigration of these poor Indians, about 1,000 in number, took place under Col. Pepper and Gen. Tipton in the summer of 1838.

It was a sad and mournful spectacle to witness these children of the forest slowly retiring from the home of their childhood, that contained not only the graves of their revered ancestors, but also many endearing scenes to which their memories would ever recur as sunny spots along their pathway through the wilderness. They felt that they were bidding farewell to the hills, valleys and streams of their infancy; the more exciting hunting-grounds of their advanced youth, as well as the stern and bloody battle-fields where they had contended in riper manhood, on which they had received wounds, and where many of their friends and loved relatives had fallen covered with gore and with glory. All these they were leaving behind them, to be desecrated by the plowshare of the white man. As they cast mournful glances back toward these loved scenes that were rapidly fading in the distance, tears fell from the cheek of the downcast warrior, old men trembled, matrons wept, the swarthy maiden's cheek turned pale, and sighs and half-suppressed sobs escaped from the motley groups as they passed along, some on foot, some on horseback, and others in wagons,—sad as a funeral procession. Several of the aged warriors were seen to cast glances toward the sky, as if they were imploring aid from the spirits of their departed heroes, who were looking down upon them from the clouds, or from the Great Spirit, who would ultimately redress the wrongs of the red man, whose broken bow had fallen from his hand, and whose sad heart was bleeding within him. Ever and anon one of the party would start out into the brush and break back to their old encampments on Eel river and on the Tippe-

canoe, declaring that they would rather die than be banished from their country. Thus, scores of discontented emigrants returned from different points on their journey; and it was several years before they could be induced to join their countrymen west of the Mississippi.

Several years after the removal of the Pottawatomies the Miami nation was removed to their Western home, by coercive means, under an escort of United States troops. They were a proud and once powerful nation, but at the time of their removal were far inferior, in point of numbers, to the Pottawatomie guests whom they had permitted to settle and hunt upon their lands, and fish in their lakes and rivers after they had been driven southward by powerful and warlike tribes who inhabited the shores of the Northern lakes.

### INDIAN TITLES.

In 1831 a joint resolution of the Legislature of Indiana, requesting an appropriation by Congress for the extinguishment of the Indian title to lands within the State, was forwarded to that body, which granted the request. The Secretary of War, by authority, appointed a committee of three citizens to carry into effect the provisions of the recent law. The Miamis were surrounded on all sides by American settlers, and were situated almost in the heart of the State on the line of the canal then being made. The chiefs were called to a council for the purpose of making a treaty; they promptly came, but peremptorily refused to go westward or sell the remainder of their land. The Pottawatomies sold about 6,000,000 acres in Indiana, Illinois and Michigan, including all their claim in this State.

In 1838 a treaty was concluded with the Miami Indians through the good offices of Col. A. C. Pepper, the Indian agent, by which a considerable of the most desirable portion of their reserve was ceded to the United States.

## LAND SALES.

As an example of the manner in which land speculators were treated by the early Indianians, we cite the following instances from Cox's "Recollections of the Wabash Valley."

At Crawfordsville, Dec. 24, 1824, many parties were present from the eastern and southern portions of the State, as well as from Ohio, Kentucky, Tennessee and even Pennsylvania, to attend a land sale. There was but little bidding against each other. The settlers, or "squatters," as they were called by the speculators, had arranged matters among themselves to their general satisfaction. If, upon comparing numbers, it appeared that two were after the same tract of land, one would ask the other what he would take not to bid against him; if neither would consent to be bought off they would retire and cast lots, and the lucky one would enter the tract at Congress price, \$1.25 an acre, and the other would enter the second choice on his list. If a speculator made a bid, or showed a disposition to take a settler's claim from him, he soon saw the white of a score of eyes glaring at him, and he would "crawfish" out of the crowd at the first opportunity.

The settlers made it definitely known to foreign capitalists that they would enter the tracts of land they had settled upon before allowing the latter to come in with their speculations. The land was sold in tiers of townships, beginning at the southern part of the district and continuing north until all had been offered at public sale. This plan was persisted in, although it kept many on the ground for several days waiting, who desired to purchase land in the northern part of the district.

In 1827 a regular Indian scare was gotten up to keep speculators away for a short time. A man who owned a claim on Tippecanoe river, near Pretty prairie, fearing that some one of the numerous land hunters constantly scouring the country might enter the land he had settled upon before he could raise the money to buy it, and seeing one day a cavalcade of land hunters riding toward where his land lay, mounted his horse and darted off at full speed to meet them, swinging his hat and shouting at the top of his voice, "Indians! Indians! the woods are full of Indians,

murdering and scalping all before them!" They paused a moment, but as the terrified horseman still urged his jaded animal and cried, "Help! Longlois, Cicots, help!" they turned and fled like a troop of retreating cavalry, hastening to the thickest settlements and giving the alarm, which spread like fire among stubble until the whole frontier region was shocked with the startling cry. The squatter who fabricated the story and started this false alarm took a circuitous route home that evening, and while others were busy building temporary block-houses and rubbing up their guns to meet the Indians, he was quietly gathering up money and slipped down to Crawfordsville and entered his land, chuckling to himself, "There's a Yankee trick for you, done up by a Hoosier."

### HARMONY COMMUNITY.

In 1814 a society of Germans under Frederick Rappe, who had originally come from Wirtemberg, Germany, and more recently from Pennsylvania, founded a settlement on the Wabash about 50 miles above its mouth. They were industrious, frugal and honest Lutherans. They purchased a large quantity of land and laid off a town, to which they gave the name of "Harmony," afterward called "New Harmony." They erected a church and a public school-house, opened farms, planted orchards and vineyards, built flouring mills, established a house of public entertainment, a public store, and carried on all the arts of peace with skill and regularity. Their property was "in common," according to the custom of ancient Christians at Jerusalem, but the governing power, both temporal and spiritual, was vested in Frederick Rappe, the elder, who was regarded as the founder of the society. By the year 1821 the society numbered about 900. Every individual of proper age contributed his proper share of labor. There were neither spendthrifts, idlers nor drunkards, and during the whole 17 years of their sojourn in America there was not a single lawsuit among them. Every controversy arising among them was settled by arbitration, explanation and compromise before sunset of the day, literally according to the injunction of the apostle of the New Testament.

About 1825 the town of Harmony and a considerable quantity of land adjoining was sold to Robert Owen, father of David Dale Owen, the State Geologist, and of Robert Dale Owen, of later notoriety. He was a radical philosopher from Scotland, who had become distinguished for his philanthropy and opposition to



Christianity. He charged the latter with teaching false notions regarding human responsibility— notions which have since been clothed in the language of physiology, mental philosophy, etc. Said he:

“That which has hitherto been called wickedness in our fellow men has proceeded from one of two distinct causes, or from some combination of those causes. They are what are termed bad or wicked,

“1. Because they are born with faculties or propensities which render them more liable, under the same circumstances, than other men, to commit such actions as are usually denominated wicked; or,

“2. Because they have been placed by birth or other events in particular countries,—have been influenced from infancy by parents, playmates and others, and have been surrounded by those circumstances which gradually and necessarily trained them in the habits and sentiments called wicked; or,

“3. They have become wicked in consequence of some particular combination of these causes.

“If it should be asked, Whence then has wickedness proceeded? I reply, Solely from the ignorance of our forefathers.

“Every society which exists at present, as well as every society which history records, has been formed and governed on a belief in the following notions, assumed as first principles:

“1. That it is in the power of every individual to form his own character. Hence the various systems called by the name of religion, codes of law, and punishments; hence, also, the angry passions entertained by individuals and nations toward each other.

“2. That the affections are at the command of the individual. Hence insincerity and degradation of character; hence the miseries of domestic life, and more than one-half of all the crimes of mankind.

“3. That it is necessary a large portion of mankind should exist in ignorance and poverty in order to secure to the remaining part such a degree of happiness as they now enjoy. Hence a system of counteraction in the pursuits of men, a general opposition among individuals to the interests of each other, and the necessary effects of such a system,—ignorance, poverty and vice.

“Facts prove, however,

“1. That character is universally formed for and not by the individual;

"2. That *any* habits and sentiments may be given to mankind;

"3. That the affections are not under the control of the individual;

"4. That every individual may be trained to produce far more than he can consume, while there is a sufficiency left for him to cultivate;

"5. That nature has provided means by which population may be at all times maintained in the proper state to give the greatest happiness to every individual, without one check of vice and misery;

"6. That any community may be arranged on a due combination of the foregoing principles in such a manner as not only to withdraw vice, poverty, and in a great degree misery from the world, but also to place every individual under circumstances in which he shall enjoy more permanent happiness than can be given to *any* individual under the principles which have hitherto regulated society;

"7. That all the fundamental principles on which society has hitherto been founded are erroneous and may be demonstrated to be contrary to fact; and—

"8. That the change that would follow the abandonment of those erroneous maxims which bring misery into the world, and the adoption of the principles of truth, unfolding a system which shall remove and forever exclude that misery, may be effected without the slightest injury to any human being."

Mr. Owen's efforts to establish a community on his principles failed, probably because he overlooked the deeper principle that the main element of "Liberalism" is "individuality" of life in all respects.

## PIONEER LIFE.

Most of the early settlers of Indiana came from older States, as Pennsylvania, Kentucky and Virginia, where their prospects for even a competency were very poor. They found those States good—to emigrate from. Their entire stock of furniture, implements and family necessities were easily stored in one wagon, and sometimes a cart was their only vehicle.

### THE LOG CABIN.

After arriving and selecting a suitable location, the next thing to do was to build a log cabin, a description of which may be inter-

esting to many of our younger readers, as in some sections these old-time structures are no more to be seen. Trees of uniform size were chosen and cut into logs of the desired length, generally 12 to 15 feet, and hauled to the spot selected for the future dwelling. On an appointed day the few neighbors who were available would assemble and have a "house-raising." Each end of every log was saddled and notched so that they would lie as close down as possible; the next day the proprietor would proceed to "chink and daub" the cabin, to keep out the rain, wind and cold. The house had to be re-daubed every fall, as the rains of the intervening time would wash out a great part of the mortar. The usual height of the house was seven or eight feet. The gables were formed by shortening the logs gradually at each end of the building near the top. The roof was made by laying very straight small logs or stout poles suitable distances apart, generally about two and a half feet, from gable to gable, and on these poles were laid the "clapboards" after the manner of shingling, showing about two and a half feet to the weather. These clapboards were fastened to their place by "weight poles," corresponding in place with the joists just described, and these again were held in their place by "runs" or "knees," which were chunks of wood about 18 or 20 inches long fitted between them near the ends. Clapboards were made from the nicest oaks in the vicinity, by chopping or sawing them into four-foot blocks and riving these with a frow, which was a simple blade fixed at right angles to its handle. This was driven into the blocks of wood by a mallet. As the frow was wrenched down through the wood, the latter was turned alternately over from side to side, one end being held by a forked piece of timber.

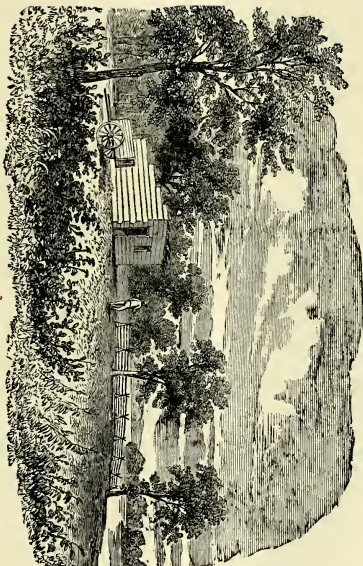
The chimney to the Western pioneer's cabin was made by leaving in the original building a large open place in one wall, or by cutting one after the structure was up, and by building on the outside from the ground up, a stone column, or a column of sticks and mud, the sticks being laid up cob-house fashion. The fire-place thus made was often large enough to receive fire-wood six to eight feet long. Sometimes this wood, especially the "back-log," would be nearly as large as a saw-log. The more rapidly the pioneer could burn up the wood in his vicinity the sooner he had his little farm cleared and ready for cultivation. For a window, a piece about two feet long was cut out of one of the wall logs, and the hole closed sometimes by glass, but generally with greased paper. Even greased deer-hide was sometimes used. A doorway was cut

through one of the walls if a saw was to be had; otherwise the door would be left by shortened logs in the original building. The door was made by pinning clapboards to two or three wood bars, and was hung upon wooden hinges. A wooden latch, with catch, then finished the door, and the latch was raised by any one on the outside by pulling a leather string. For security at night this latch-string was drawn in; but for friends and neighbors, and even strangers, the "latch-string was always hanging out," as a welcome. In the interior, over the fire-place would be a shelf, called "the mantel," on which stood the candlestick or lamp, some cooking and table ware, possibly an old clock, and other articles; in the fire-place would be the crane, sometimes of iron, sometimes of wood; on it the pots were hung for cooking; over the door, in forked cleats, hung the ever trustful rifle and powder-horn; in one corner stood the larger bed for the "old folks," and under it the trundle-bed for the children; in another stood the old-fashioned spinning-wheel, with a smaller one by its side; in another the heavy table, the only table, of course, there was in the house; in the remaining corner was a rude cupboard holding the table-ware, which consisted of a few cups and saucers and blue-edged plates, standing singly on their edges against the back, to make the display of table furniture more conspicuous; while around the room were scattered a few splint-bottomed or Windsor chairs and two or three stools.

These simple cabins were inhabited by a kind and true-hearted people. They were strangers to mock modesty, and the traveler, seeking lodgings for the night, or desirous of spending a few days in the community, if willing to accept the rude offering, was always welcome, although how they were disposed of at night the reader might not easily imagine; for, as described, a single room was made to answer for kitchen, dining-room, sitting-room, bed-room and parlor, and many families consisted of six or eight members.

#### SLEEPING ACCOMMODATIONS.

The bed was very often made by fixing a post in the floor about six feet from one wall and four feet from the adjoining wall, and fastening a stick to this post about two feet above the floor, on each of two sides, so that the other end of each of the two sticks could be fastened in the opposite wall; clapboards were laid across these, and thus the bed was made complete. Guests were given this bed, while the family disposed of themselves in another corner of the room, or in the "loft." When several guests were on hand



A PIONEER DWELLING.



at once, they were sometimes kept over night in the following manner: when bed-time came the men were requested to step out of doors while the women spread out a broad bed upon the mid-floor, and put themselves to bed in the center; the signal was given and the men came in and each husband took his place in bed next his own wife, and the single men outside beyond them again. They were generally so-crowded that they had to lie "spoon" fashion, and when any one wished to turn over he would say "Spoon," and the whole company of sleepers would turn over at once. This was the only way they could all keep in bed.

#### COOKING.

To witness the various processes of cooking in those days would alike surprise and amuse those who have grown up since cooking stoves and ranges came into use. Kettles were hung over the large fire, suspended with pot-hooks, iron or wooden, on the crane, or on poles, one end of which would rest upon a chair. The long-handled frying-pan was used for cooking meat. It was either held over the blaze by hand or set down upon coals drawn out upon the hearth. This pan was also used for baking pan-cakes, also called "flap-jacks," "batter-cakes," etc. A better article for this, however, was the cast-iron spider or Dutch skillet. The best thing for baking bread those days, and possibly even yet in these latter days, was the flat-bottomed bake kettle, of greater depth, with closely fitting cast-iron cover, and commonly known as the "Dutch-oven." With coals over and under it, bread and biseuit would quickly and nicely bake. Turkey and spare-ribs were sometimes roasted before the fire, suspended by a string, a dish being placed underneath to catch the drippings.

Hominy and samp were very much used. The hominy, however, was generally hulled corn—boiled corn from which the hull, or bran, had been taken by hot lye; hence sometimes called "lye hominy." True hominy and samp were made of pounded corn. A popular method of making this, as well as real meal for bread, was to cut out or burn a large hole in the top of a huge stump, in the shape of a mortar, and pounding the corn in this by a maul or beetle suspended on the end of a swing pole, like a well-sweep. This and the well-sweep consisted of a pole 20 to 30 feet long fixed in an upright fork so that it could be worked "teeter" fashion. It was a rapid and simple way of drawing water. When the samp was sufficiently pounded it was taken out, the bran floated

off, and the delicious grain boiled like rice.

The chief articles of diet in early day were corn bread, hominy or samp, venison, pork, honey, beans, pumpkin (dried pumpkin for more than half the year), turkey, prairie chicken, squirrel and some other game, with a few additional vegetables a portion of the year. Wheat bread, tea, coffee and fruit were luxuries not to be indulged in except on special occasions, as when visitors were present.

#### WOMEN'S WORK.

Besides cooking in the manner described, the women had many other arduous duties to perform, one of the chief of which was spinning. The "big wheel" was used for spinning yarn and the "little wheel" for spinning flax. These stringed instruments furnished the principal music of the family, and were operated by our mothers and grandmothers with great skill, attained without pecuniary expense and with far less practice than is necessary for the girls of our period to acquire a skillful use of their costly and elegant instruments. But those wheels, indispensable a few years ago, are all now superseded by the mighty factories which overspread the country, furnishing cloth of all kinds at an expense ten times less than would be incurred now by the old system.

The loom was not less necessary than the wheel, though they were not needed in so great numbers; not every house had a loom, one loom had a capacity for the needs of several families. Settlers, having succeeded in spite of the wolves in raising sheep, commenced the manufacture of woolen cloth; wool was carded and made into rolls by hand-cards, and the rolls were spun on the "big wheel." We still occasionally find in the houses of old settlers a wheel of this kind, sometimes used for spinning and twisting stocking yarn. They are turned with the hand, and with such velocity that it will run itself while the nimble worker, by her backward step, draws out and twists her thread nearly the whole length of the cabin. A common article woven on the loom was linsey, or linsey-woolsey, the chain being linen and the filling woolen. This cloth was used for dresses for the women and girls. Nearly all the clothes worn by the men were also home-made; rarely was a farmer or his son seen in a coat made of any other. If, occasionally, a young man appeared in a suit of "boughten" clothes, he was suspected of having gotten it for a particular occasion, which occurs in the life of nearly every young man.



## DRESS AND MANNERS.

The dress, habits, etc., of a people throw so much light upon their conditions and limitations that in order better to show the circumstances surrounding the people of the State, we will give a short exposition of the manner of life of our Indiana people at different epochs. The Indians themselves are credited by Charlevoix with being "very laborious,"—raising poultry, spinning the wool of the buffalo, and manufacturing garments therefrom. These must have been, however, more than usually favorable representatives of their race.

"The working and voyaging dress of the French masses," says Reynolds, "was simple and primitive. The French were like the lilies of the valley [the Old Ranger was not always exact in his quotations],—they neither spun nor wove any of their clothing, but purchased it from the merchants. The white blanket coat, known as the *capot*, was the universal and eternal coat for the winter with the masses. A cape was made of it that could be raised over the head in cold weather.

"In the house, and in good weather, it hung behind, a cape to the blanket coat. The reason that I know these coats so well is that I have worn many in my youth, and a working man never wore a better garment. Dressed deer-skins and blue cloth were worn commonly in the winter for pantaloons. The blue handkerchief and the deer-skin moccasins covered the head and feet generally of the French Creoles. In 1800 scarcely a man thought himself clothed unless he had a belt tied round his blanket coat, and on one side was hung the dressed skin of a pole-cat filled with tobacco, pipe, flint and steel. On the other side was fastened, under the belt, the butcher knife. A Creole in this dress felt like Tam O'Shanter filled with usquebaugh; he could face the devil. Checked calico shirts were then common, but in winter flannel was frequently worn. In the summer the laboring men and the voyagers often took their shirts off in hard work and hot weather, and turned out the naked back to the air and sun."

"Among the Americans," he adds, "home-made wool hats were the common wear. Fur hats were not common, and scarcely a boot was seen. The covering of the feet in winter was chiefly moccasins made of deer-skins and shoe-packs of tanned leather. Some wore shoes, but not common in very early times. In the summer the greater portion of the young people, male and female,

and many of the old, went barefoot. The substantial and universal outside wear was the blue linsey hunting shirt. This is an excellent garment, and I have never felt so happy and healthy since I laid it off. It is made of wide sleeves, open before, with ample size so as to envelop the body almost twice around. Sometimes it had a large cape, which answers well to save the shoulders from the rain. A belt is mostly used to keep the garment close around the person, and, nevertheless, there is nothing tight about it to hamper the body. It is often fringed, and at times the fringe is composed of red, and other gay colors. The belt, frequently, is sewed to the hunting shirt. The vest was mostly made of striped linsey. The colors were made often with alum, copperas and madder, boiled with the bark of trees, in such a manner and proportions as the old ladies prescribed. The pantaloons of the masses were generally made of deer-skin and linsey. Coarse blue cloth was sometimes made into pantaloons.

"Linsey, neat and fine, manufactured at home, composed generally the outside garments of the females as well as the males. The ladies had linsey colored and woven to suit their fancy. A bonnet, composed of calico, or some gay goods, was worn on the head when they were in the open air. Jewelry on the pioneer ladies was uncommon; a gold ring was an ornament not often seen."

In 1820 a change of dress began to take place, and before 1830, according to Ford, most of the pioneer costume had disappeared. "The blue linsey hunting-shirt, with red or white fringe, had given place to the cloth coat. [Jeans would be more like the fact.] The raccoon cap, with the tail of the animal dangling down behind, had been thrown aside for hats of wool or fur. Boots and shoes had supplied the deer-skin moccasins; and the leather breeches, strapped tight around the ankle, had disappeared before unmentionables of a more modern material. The female sex had made still greater progress in dress. The old sort of cotton or woolen frocks, spun, woven and made with their own fair hands, and striped and cross-barred with blue dye and Turkey red, had given place to gowns of silk and calico. The feet, before in a state of nudity, now charmed in shoes of calf-skin or slippers of kid; and the head, formerly unbonneted, but covered with a cotten handkerchief, now displayed the charms of the female face under many forms of bonnets of straw, silk and Leghorn. The young ladies, instead of walking a mile or two to church on Sunday, carrying their shoes and stockings in their hands until within a hundred yards of the place of worship, as formerly,

now came forth arrayed complete in all the pride of dress, mounted on fine horses and attended by their male admirers."

The last half century has doubtless witnessed changes quite as great as those set forth by our Illinois historian. The chronicler of to-day, looking back to the golden days of 1830 to 1840, and comparing them with the present, must be struck with the tendency of an almost monotonous uniformity in dress and manners that comes from the easy inter-communication afforded by steamer, railway, telegraph and newspaper. Home manufacturers have been driven from the household by the lower-priced fabrics of distant mills. The Kentucky jeans, and the copperas-colored clothing of home manufacture, so familiar a few years ago, have given place to the cassimeres and cloths of noted factories. The ready-made clothing stores, like a touch of nature, made the whole world kin—and may drape the charcoal man in a dress-coat and a stove-pipe hat. The prints and silks of England and France give a variety of choice and an assortment of colors and shades such as the pioneer women could hardly have dreamed of. Godey and Demorest and Harper's Bazar are found in our modern farm-houses, and the latest fashions of Paris are not uncommon.

#### FAMILY WORSHIP.

The Methodists were generally first on the ground in pioneer settlements, and at that early day they seemed more demonstrative in their devotions than at the present time. In those days, too, pulpit oratory was generally more eloquent and effective, while the grammatical dress and other "worldly" accomplishments were not so assiduously cultivated as at present. But in the manner of conducting public worship there has probably not been so much change as in that of family worship, or "family prayers," as it was often called. We had then most emphatically an American edition of that pious old Scotch practice so eloquently described in Burns' "Cotter's Saturday Night:"

The cheerfu' supper done, wi' serious face  
 They round the ingle formed a circle wide;  
 The sire turns o'er, wi' patriarchal grace,  
 The big ha' Bible, ance his father's pride;  
 His bonnet rev'rently is laid aside,  
 His lyart haffets wearing thin and bare;  
 Those strains that once did sweet in Zion glide;  
 He wales a portion with judicious care,  
 And "let us worsnip God," he says with solemn air.

They chant their artless notes in simple guise;  
 They tune their hearts,—by far the noblest aim;  
 Perhaps "Dundee's" wild warbling measures rise,  
 Or plaintive "Martyrs," worthy of the name;  
 Or noble "Elgin" beats the heavenward flame,—  
 The sweetest far of Scotia's hallowed lays.  
 Compared with these, Italian trills are tame;  
 The tickled ear no heart-felt raptures raise:  
 Nae unison hae they with our Creator's praise.

The priest-like father reads the sacred page,—  
 How Abraham was the friend of God on high, etc.

Then kneeling down, to heaven's Eternal King  
 The saint, the father and the husband prays;  
 Hope "springs exulting on triumphant wing,"  
 That thus they all shall meet in future days;  
 There ever bask in uncreated rays,  
 No more to sigh or shed the bitter tear,  
 Together hymning their Creator's praise,  
 In such society, yet still more dear,  
 While circling time moves round in an eternal sphere.

Once or twice a day, in the morning just before breakfast, or in the evening just before retiring to rest, the head of the family would call those around him to order, read a chapter in the Bible, announce the hymn and tune by commencing to sing it, when all would join; then he would deliver a most fervent prayer. If a pious guest was present he would be called on to take the lead in all the exercises of the evening; and if in those days a person who prayed in the family or in public did not pray as if it were his very last on earth, his piety was thought to be defective.

The familiar tunes of that day are remembered by the surviving old settlers as being more spiritual and inspiring than those of the present day, such as Bourbon, Consolation, China, Canaan, Conquering Soldier, Condescension, Devotion, Davis, Fiducia, Funeral Thought, Florida, Golden Hill, Greenfields, Ganges, Idumea, Imandra, Kentucky, Lenox, Leander, Mear, New Orleans, North field, New Salem, New Durham, Olney, Primrose, Pisgah, Pleyel's Hymn, Rockbridge, Rockingham, Reflection, Supplication, Salvation, St. Thomas, Salem, Tender Thought, Windham, Greenville, etc., as they are named in the Missouri Harmony.

Members of other orthodox denominations also had their family prayers in which, however, the phraseology of the prayer was somewhat different and the voice not so loud as characterized the real Methodists, United Brethren, etc.

## HOSPITALITY.

The traveler always found a welcome at the pioneer's cabin. It was never full. Although there might be already a guest for every puncheon, there was still "room for one more," and a wider circle would be made for the new-comer at the log fire. If the stranger was in search of land, he was doubly welcome, and his host would volunteer to show him all the "first-rate claims in this neck of the woods," going with him for days, showing the corners and advantages of every "Congress tract" within a dozen miles of his own cabin.

To his neighbors the pioneer was equally liberal. If a deer was killed, the choicest bits were sent to his nearest neighbor, a half-dozen miles away, perhaps. When a "shoat" was butchered, the same custom prevailed. If a new comer came in too late for "cropping," the neighbors would supply his table with just the same luxuries they themselves enjoyed, and in as liberal quantity, until a crop could be raised. When a new-comer had located his claim, the neighbors for miles around would assemble at the site of the new-comer's proposed cabin and aid him in "gittin'" it up. One party with axes would cut down the trees and hew the logs; another with teams would haul the logs to the ground; another party would "raise" the cabin; while several of the old men would "rive the clapboards" for the roof. By night the little forest domicile would be up and ready for a "house-warming," which was the dedicatory occupation of the house, when music and dancing and festivity would be enjoyed at full height. The next day the new-comer would be as well situated as his neighbors.

An instance of primitive hospitable manners will be in place here. A traveling Methodist preacher arrived in a distant neighborhood to fill an appointment. The house where services were to be held did not belong to a church member, but no matter for that. Boards were raked up from all quarters with which to make temporary seats, one of the neighbors volunteering to lead off in the work, while the man of the house, with the faithful rifle on his shoulder, sallied forth in quest of meat, for this truly was a "ground-hog" case, the preacher coming and no meat in the house. The host ceased not the chase until he found the meat, in the shape of a deer; returning, he sent a boy out after it, with directions on what "pint" to find it. After services, which had been listened to with rapt at-

tention by all the audience, mine host said to his wife, "Old woman, I reckon this 'ere preacher is pretty hungry and you must git him a bite to eat." "What shall I git him?" asked the wife, who had not seen the deer; "thar's nuthin' in the house to eat." "Why, look thar," returned he; "thar's a deer, and thar's plenty of corn in the field; you git some corn and grate it while I skin the deer, and we'll have a good supper for him." It is needless to add that venison and corn bread made a supper fit for any pioneer preacher, and was thankfully eaten.

#### TRADE.

In pioneer times the transactions of commerce were generally carried on by neighborhood exchanges. Now and then a farmer would load a flat-boat with beeswax, honey, tallow and peltries, with perhaps a few bushels of wheat or corn or a few hundred clapboards, and float down the rivers into the Ohio and thence to New Orleans, where he would exchange his produce for substantials in the shape of groceries and a little ready money, with which he would return by some one of the two or three steamboats then running. Betimes there appeared at the best steamboat landings a number of "middle men" engaged in the "commission and forwarding" business, buying up the farmers' produce and the trophies of the chase and the trap, and sending them to the various distant markets. Their winter's accumulations would be shipped in the spring, and the manufactured goods of the far East or distant South would come back in return; and in all these transactions scarcely any money was seen or used. Goods were sold on a year's time to the farmers, and payment made from the proceeds of the ensuing crops. When the crops were sold and the merchant satisfied, the surplus was paid out in orders on the store to laboring men and to satisfy other creditors. When a day's work was done by a working man, his employer would ask, "Well, what store do you want your order on?" The answer being given, the order was written and always cheerfully accepted.

#### MONEY.

Money was an article little known and seldom seen among the earlier settlers. Indeed, they had but little use for it, as they could transact all their business about as well without it, on the "barter" system, wherein great ingenuity was sometimes displayed. When

it failed in any instance, long credits contributed to the convenience of the citizens. But for taxes and postage neither the barter nor the credit system would answer, and often letters were suffered to remain a long time in the postoffice for the want of the twenty-five cents demanded by the Government. With all this high price on postage, by the way, the letter had not been brought 500 miles in a day or two, as is the case nowadays, but had probably been weeks on the route, and the mail was delivered at the pioneer's postoffice, several miles distant from his residence, only once in a week or two. All the mail would be carried by a lone horseman. Instances are related illustrating how misrepresentation would be resorted to in order to elicit the sympathies of some one who was known to have "two bits" (25 cents) of money with him, and procure the required Governmental fee for a letter.

Peltries came nearer being money than anything else, as it came to be custom to estimate the value of everything in peltries. Such an article was worth so many peltries. Even some tax collectors and postmasters were known to take peltries and exchange them for the money required by the Government.

When the first settlers first came into the wilderness they generally supposed that their hard struggle would be principally over after the first year; but alas! they often looked for "easier times next year" for many years before realizing them, and then they came in so sily as to be almost imperceptible. The sturdy pioneer thus learned to bear hardships, privation and hard living, as good soldiers do. As the facilities for making money were not great, they lived pretty well satisfied in an atmosphere of good, social, friendly feeling, and thought themselves as good as those they had left behind in the East. But among the early settlers who came to this State were many who, accustomed to the advantages of an older civilization, to churches, schools and society, became speedily home-sick and dissatisfied. They would remain perhaps one summer, or at most two, then, selling whatever claim with its improvements they had made, would return to the older States, spreading reports of the hardships endured by the settlers here and the disadvantages which they had found, or imagined they had found, in the country. These weaklings were not an unmitigated curse. The slight improvements they had made were sold to men of sterner stuff, who were the sooner able to surround themselves with the necessities of life, while their unfavorable report deterred other weaklings from coming. The men who stayed, who

were willing to endure privations, belonged to a different guild; they were heroes every one,—men to whom hardships were things to be overcome, and present privations things to be endured for the sake of posterity, and they never shrank from this duty. It is to these hardy pioneers who could endure, that we to-day owe the wonderful improvement we have made and the development, almost miraculous, that has brought our State in the past sixty years, from a wilderness, to the front rank among the States of this great nation.

#### MILLING.

Not the least of the hardships of the pioneers was the procuring of bread. The first settlers must be supplied at least one year from other sources than their own lands; but the first crops, however abundant, gave only partial relief, there being no mills to grind the grain. Hence the necessity of grinding by hand power, and many families were poorly provided with means for doing this. Another way was to grate the corn. A grater was made from a piece of tin, sometimes taken from an old, worn-out tin bucket or other vessel. It was thickly perforated, bent into a semicircular form, and nailed, rough side upward, on a board. The corn was taken in the ear, and grated before it got dry and hard. Corn, however, was eaten in various ways.

Soon after the country became more generally settled, enterprising men were ready to embark in the milling business. Sites along the streams were selected for water-power. A person looking for a mill-site would follow up and down the stream for a desired location, and when found he would go before the authorities and secure a writ of *ad quod damnum*. This would enable the miller to have the adjoining land officially examined, and the amount of damage by making a dam was named. Mills being so great a public necessity, they were permitted to be located upon any person's land where the miller thought the site desirable.

#### AGRICULTURAL IMPLEMENTS.

The agricultural implements used by the first farmers in this State would in this age of improvement be great curiosities. The plow used was called the "bar-share" plow; the iron point consisted of a bar of iron about two feet long, and a broad share of iron welded to it. At the extreme point was a coulter that passed through a beam six or seven feet long, to which were attached handles of corresponding length. The mold-board was a wooden one split out of



winding timber, or hewed into a winding shape, in order to turn the soil over. Sown seed was brushed in by dragging over the ground a sapling with a bushy top. In harvesting the change is most striking. Instead of the reapers and mowers of to-day, the sickle and cradle were used. The grain was threshed with a flail, or trodden out by horses or oxen.

#### HOG KILLING.

Hogs were always dressed before they were taken to market. The farmer, if forehanded, would call in his neighbors some bright fall or winter morning to help "kill hogs." Immense kettles of water were heated; a sled or two, covered with loose boards or plank, constituted the platform on which the hog was cleaned, and was placed near an inclined hogshead in which the scalding was done; a quilt was thrown over the top of the latter to retain the heat; from a crotch of some convenient tree a projecting pole was rigged to hold the animals for disemboweling and thorough cleaning. When everything was arranged, the best shot of the neighborhood loaded his rifle, and the work of killing was commenced. It was considered a disgrace to make a hog "squeal" by bad shooting or by a "shoulder-stick," that is, running the point of the butcher-knife into the shoulder instead of the cavity of the beast. As each hog fell, the "sticker" mounted him and plunged the butcher-knife, long and well sharpened, into his throat; two persons would then catch him by the hind legs, draw him up to the scalding tub, which had just been filled with boiling-hot water with a shovelful of good green wood ashes thrown in; in this the carcass was plunged and moved around a minute or so, that is, until the hair would slip off easily, then placed on the platform where the cleaners would pitch into him with all their might and clean him as quickly as possible, with knives and other sharp-edged implements: then two stout fellows would take him up between them, and a third man to manage the "gambrel" (which was a stout stick about two feet long, sharpened at both ends, to be inserted between the muscles of the hind legs at or near the hock joint), the animal would be elevated to the pole, where the work of cleaning was finished.

After the slaughter was over and the hogs had had time to cool, such as were intended for domestic use were cut up, the lard "tried" out by the women of the household, and the surplus hogs taken to market, while the weather was cold, if possible. In those days almost every merchant had, at the rear end of his place of

business or at some convenient building, a "pork-house," and would buy the pork of his customers and of such others as would sell to him, and cut it for the market. This gave employment to a large number of hands in every village, who would cut and pack pork all winter. The hauling of all this to the river would also give employment to a large number of teams, and the manufacture of pork barrels would keep many coopers employed.

Allowing for the difference of currency and manner of marketing, the price of pork was not so high in those days as at present. Now, while calico and muslin are ten cents a yard and pork two to four cents a pound, then, while calico and muslin were twenty-five cents a yard pork was one to two cents a pound. When, as the country grew older and communications easier between the seaboard and the great West, prices went up to two and a half and three cents a pound, the farmers thought they would always be content to raise pork at such a price; but times have changed, even contrary to the current-cy.

There was one feature in this method of marketing pork that made the country a paradise for the poor man in the winter time. Spare-ribs, tenderloins, pigs' heads and pigs' feet were not considered of any value, and were freely given to all who could use them. If a barrel was taken to any pork-house and salt furnished, the barrel would be filled and salted down with tenderloins and spare-ribs gratuitously. So great in many cases was the quantity of spare-ribs, etc., to be disposed of, that they would be hauled away in wagon-loads and dumped in the woods out of town.

In those early times much wheat was marketed at twenty-five to fifty cents a bushel, oats the same or less, and corn ten cents a bushel. A good young milch-cow could be bought for \$5 to \$10, and that payable in work.

Those might truly be called "close times," yet the citizens of the country were accommodating, and but very little suffering for the actual necessities of life was ever known to exist.

#### PRAIRIE FIRES.

Fires, set out by Indians or settlers, sometimes purposely and sometimes permitted through carelessness, would visit the prairies every autumn, and sometimes the forests, either in autumn or spring, and settlers could not always succeed in defending themselves against the destroying element. Many interesting incidents are related. Often a fire was started to bewilder game, or to bare



HUNTING PRAIRIE WOLVES IN AN EARLY DAY.



a piece of ground for the early grazing of stock the ensuing spring, and it would get away under a wind, and soon be beyond control. Violent winds would often arise and drive the flames with such rapidity that riders on the fleetest steeds could scarcely escape. On the approach of a prairie fire the farmer would immediately set about "cutting off supplies" for the devouring enemy by a "back fire." Thus, by starting a small fire near the bare ground about his premises, and keeping it under control next his property, he would burn off a strip around him and prevent the attack of the on-coming flames. A few furrows or a ditch around the farm constituted a help in the work of protection.

An original prairie of tall and exuberant grass on fire, especially at night, was a magnificent spectacle, enjoyed only by the pioneer. Here is an instance where the frontiersman, proverbially deprived of the sights and pleasures of an old community, is privileged far beyond the people of the present day in this country. One could scarcely tire of beholding the scene, as its awe-inspiring features seemed constantly to increase, and the whole panorama unceasingly changed like the dissolving views of a magic lantern, or like the aurora borealis. Language cannot convey, words cannot express, the faintest idea of the splendor and grandeur of such a conflagration at night. It was as if the pale queen of night, disdaining to take her accustomed place in the heavens, had dispatched myriads upon myriads of messengers to light their torches at the altar of the setting sun until all had flashed into one long and continuous blaze.

The following graphic description of prairie fires was written by a traveler through this region in 1849:

"Soon the fires began to kindle wider and rise higher from the long grass; the gentle breeze increased to stronger currents, and soon fanned the small, flickering blaze into fierce torrent flames, which curled up and leaped along in resistless splendor; and like quickly raising the dark curtain from the luminous stage, the scenes before me were suddenly changed, as if by the magician's wand, into one boundless amphitheatre, blazing from earth to heaven and sweeping the horizon round,—columns of lurid flames sportively mounting up to the zenith, and dark clouds of crimson smoke curling away and aloft till they nearly obscured stars and moon, while the rushing, crashing sounds, like roaring cataracts mingled with distant thunders, were almost deafening; danger, death, glared all around; it screamed for victims; yet, notwithstanding the imminent peril

of prairie fires, one is loth, irresolute, almost unable to withdraw or seek refuge."

#### WILD HOGS.

When the earliest pioneer reached this Western wilderness, game was his principal food until he had conquered a farm from the forest or prairie,—rarely, then, from the latter. As the country settled game grew scarce, and by 1850 he who would live by his rifle would have had but a precarious subsistence had it not been for "wild hogs." These animals, left by home-sick immigrants whom the chills or fever and ague had driven out, had strayed into the woods, and began to multiply in a wild state. The woods each fall were full of acorns, walnuts, hazelnuts, and these hogs would grow fat and multiply at a wonderful rate in the bottoms and along the bluffs. The second and third immigration to the country found these wild hogs an unfailing source of meat supply up to that period when they had in the townships contiguous to the river become so numerous as to be an evil, breaking in herds into the farmer's corn-fields or toling their domestic swine into their retreats, where they too became in a season as wild as those in the woods. In 1838 or '39, in a certain township, a meeting was called of citizens of the township to take steps to get rid of wild hogs. At this meeting, which was held in the spring, the people of the township were notified to turn out *en masse* on a certain day and engage in the work of catching, trimming and branding wild hogs, which were to be turned loose, and the next winter were to be hunted and killed by the people of the township, the meat to be divided *pro rata* among the citizens of the township. This plan was fully carried into effect, two or three days being spent in the exciting work in the spring.

In the early part of the ensuing winter the settlers again turned out, supplied at convenient points in the bottom with large kettles and barrels for scalding, and while the hunters were engaged in killing, others with horses dragged the carcasses to the scalding platforms where they were dressed; and when all that could be were killed and dressed a division was made, every farmer getting more meat than enough, for his winter's supply. Like energetic measures were resorted to in other townships, so that in two or three years the breed of wild hogs became extinct.

## NATIVE ANIMALS.

The principal wild animals found in the State by the early settler were the deer, wolf, bear, wild-cat, fox, otter, raccoon, generally called "coon," woodchuck, or ground-hog, skunk, mink, weasel, muskrat, opossum, rabbit and squirrel; and the principal feathered game were the quail, prairie chicken and wild turkey. Hawks, turkey buzzards, crows, blackbirds were also very abundant. Several of these animals furnished meat for the settlers; but their principal meat did not long consist of game; pork and poultry were raised in abundance. The wolf was the most troublesome animal, it being the common enemy of the sheep, and sometimes attacking other domestic animals and even human beings. But their hideous howlings at night were so constant and terrifying that they almost seemed to do more mischief by that annoyance than by direct attack. They would keep everybody and every animal about the farm-house awake and frightened, and set all the dogs in the neighborhood to barking. As one man described it: "Suppose six boys, having six dogs tied, whipped them all at the same time, and you would hear such music as two wolves would make."

To effect the destruction of these animals the county authorities offered a bounty for their scalps; and, besides, big hunts were common.

## WOLF HUNTS.

In early days more mischief was done by wolves than by any other wild animal, and no small part of their mischief consisted in their almost constant barking at night, which always seemed so menacing and frightful to the settlers. Like mosquitoes, the noise they made appeared to be about as dreadful as the real depredations they committed. The most effectual, as well as the most exciting, method of ridding the country of these hateful pests, was that known as the "circular wolf hunt," by which all the men and boys would turn out on an appointed day, in a kind of circle comprising many square miles of territory, with horses and dogs, and then close up toward the center of their field of operation, gathering not only wolves, but also deer and many smaller "varmint." Five, ten, or more wolves by this means would sometimes be killed in a single day. The men would be organized with as much system as a little army, every one being well posted in the meaning of every signal and the application of every rule. Guns were scarcely ever allowed to be brought on such occasions, as their use

would be unavoidably dangerous. The dogs were depended upon for the final slaughter. The dogs, by the way, had all to be held in check by a cord in the hands of their keepers until the final signal was given to let them loose, when away they would all go to the center of battle, and a more exciting scene would follow than can be easily described.

#### BEE-HUNTING.

This wild recreation was a peculiar one, and many sturdy back-woodsmen gloried in excelling in this art. He would carefully watch a bee as it filled itself with the sweet product of some flower or leaf-bud, and notice particularly the direction taken by it as it struck a "bee-line" for its home, which when found would be generally high up in the hollow of a tree. The tree would be marked, and in September a party would go and cut down the tree and capture the honey as quickly as they could before it wasted away through the broken walls in which it had been so carefully stowed away by the little busy bee. Several gallons would often be thus taken from a single tree, and by a very little work, and pleasant at that, the early settlers could keep themselves in honey the year round. By the time the honey was a year old, or before, it would turn white and granulate, yet be as good and healthful as when fresh. This was by some called "candid" honey.

In some districts, the resorts of bees would be so plentiful that all the available hollow trees would be occupied and many colonies of bees would be found at work in crevices in the rock and holes in the ground. A considerable quantity of honey has even been taken from such places.

#### SNAKES.

In pioneer times snakes were numerous, such as the rattlesnake, viper, adder, blood snake and many varieties of large blue and green snakes, milk snake, garter and water snakes, black snakes, etc., etc. If, on meeting one of these, you would retreat, they would chase you very fiercely; but if you would turn and give them battle, they would immediately crawl away with all possible speed, hide in the grass and weeds, and wait for a "greener" customer. These really harmless snakes served to put people on their guard against the more dangerous and venomous kinds.

It was the practice in some sections of the country to turn out in companies, with spades, mattocks and crow-bars, attack the principal snake dens and slay large numbers of them. In early spring



the snakes were somewhat torpid and easily captured. Scores of rattlesnakes were sometimes frightened out of a single den, which, as soon as they showed their heads through the crevices of the rocks, were dispatched, and left to be devoured by the numerous wild hogs of that day. Some of the fattest of these snakes were taken to the house and oil extracted from them, and their glittering skins were saved as specifics for rheumatism.

Another method was to so fix a heavy stick over the door of their dens, with a long grape-vine attached, that one at a distance could plug the entrance to the den when the snakes were all out sunning themselves. Then a large company of the citizens, on hand by appointment, could kill scores of the reptiles in a few minutes.

#### SHAKES.

One of the greatest obstacles to the early settlement and prosperity of this State was the "chills and fever," "fever and ague," or "shakes," as it was variously called. It was a terror to newcomers; in the fall of the year almost everybody was afflicted with it. It was no respecter of persons; everybody looked pale and sallow as though he were frost-bitten. It was not contagious, but derived from impure water and air, which are always developed in the opening up of a new country of rank soil like that of the Northwest. The impurities continue to be absorbed from day to day, and from week to week, until the whole body corporate becomes saturated with it as with electricity, and then the shock came; and the shock was a regular shake, with a fixed beginning and ending, coming on in some cases each day but generally on alternate days, with a regularity that was surprising. After the shake came the fever, and this "last estate was worse than the first." It was a burning-hot fever, and lasted for hours. When you had the chill you couldn't get warm, and when you had the fever you couldn't get cool. It was exceedingly awkward in this respect; indeed it was. Nor would it stop for any sort of contingency; not even a wedding in the family would stop it. It was imperative and tyrannical. When the appointed time came around, everything else had to be stopped to attend to its demands. It didn't even have any Sundays or holidays; after the fever went down you still didn't feel much better. You felt as though you had gone through some sort of collision, thrashing-machine or jarring-machine, and came out not killed, but next thing to it. You felt weak, as though you had run too far after something, and then didn't catch it. You felt languid, stupid and

sore, and was down in the mouth and heel and partially raveled out. Your back was out of fix, your head ached and your appetite crazy. Your eyes had too much white in them, your ears, especially after taking quinine, had too much roar in them, and your whole body and soul were entirely woe-begone, disconsolate, sad, poor and good for nothing. You didn't think much of yourself, and didn't believe that other people did, either; and you didn't care. You didn't quite make up your mind to commit suicide, but sometimes wished some accident would happen to knock either the malady or yourself out of existence. You imagined that even the dogs looked at you with a kind of self-complacency. You thought the sun had a kind of sickly shine about it.

About this time you came to the conclusion that you would not accept the whole State of Indiana as a gift; and if you had the strength and means, you picked up Hannah and the baby, and your traps, and went back "yander" to "Old Virginny," the "Jar-seys," Maryland or "Pennsylvania."

"And to-day the swallows flitting  
Round my cabin see me sitting  
Moodily within the sunshine,  
Just inside my silent door,  
Waiting for the 'Ager,' seeming  
Like a man forever dreaming;  
And the sunlight on me streaming  
Throws no shadow on the floor;  
For I am too thin and sallow  
To make shadows on the floor—  
Nary shadow any more!"

The above is not a mere picture of the imagination. It is simply recounting in quaint phrase what actually occurred in thousands of cases. Whole families would sometimes be sick at one time and not one member scarcely able to wait upon another. Labor or exercise always aggravated the malady, and it took General Laziness a long time to thrash the enemy out. And those were the days for swallowing all sorts of roots and "yarbs," and whisky, etc., with some faint hope of relief. And finally, when the case wore out, the last remedy taken got the credit of the cure.

#### EDUCATION.

Though struggling through the pressure of poverty and privation, the early settlers planted among them the school-house at the earliest practical period. So important an object as the education

of their children they did not defer until they could build more comely and convenient houses. They were for a time content with such as corresponded with their rude dwellings, but soon better buildings and accommodations were provided. As may readily be supposed, the accommodations of the earliest schools were not good. Sometimes school was taught in a room of a large or a double log cabin, but oftener in a log house built for the purpose. Stoves and such heating apparatus as are now in use were then unknown. A mud-and-stick chimney in one end of the building, with earthen hearth and a fire-place wide and deep enough to receive a four to six-foot back-log, and smaller wood to match, served for warming purposes in winter and a kind of conservatory in summer. For windows, part of a log was cut out in two sides of the building, and may be a few lights of eight by ten glass set in, or the aperture might be covered over with greased paper. Writing desks consisted of heavy oak plank or a hewed slab laid upon wooden pins driven into the wall. The four-legged slab benches were in front of these, and the pupils when not writing would sit with their backs against the front, sharp edge of the writing-desks. The floor was also made out of these slabs, or "puncheons," laid upon log sleepers. Everything was rude and plain; but many of America's greatest men have gone out from just such school-houses to grapple with the world and make names for themselves and reflect honor upon their country. Among these we can name Abraham Lincoln, our martyred president, one of the noblest men known to the world's history. Stephen A. Douglas, one of the greatest statesmen of the age, began his career in Illinois teaching in one of these primitive school-houses. Joseph A. Wright, and several others of Indiana's great statesmen have also graduated from the log school-house into political eminence. So with many of her most eloquent and efficient preachers.

Imagine such a house with the children seated around, and the teacher seated on one end of a bench, with no more desk at his hand than any other pupil has, and you have in view the whole scene. The "schoolmaster" has called "Books! books!" at the door, and the "scholars" have just run in almost out of breath from vigorous play, have taken their seats, and are for the moment "saying over their lessons" to themselves with all their might, that is, in as loud a whisper as possible. While they are thus engaged the teacher is perhaps sharpening a few quill pens for the pupils, for no other kind of writing pen had been thought of as

yet. In a few minutes he calls up an urchin to say his a b c's; the little boy stands beside the teacher, perhaps partially leaning upon his lap; the teacher with his pen-knife points to the letter and asks what it is; the little fellow remains silent, for he does not know what to say; "A," says the teacher; the boy echoes "A;" the teacher points to the next and asks what it is; the boy is silent again; "B," says the teacher; "B," echoes the little urchin; and so it goes through the exercise, at the conclusion of which the teacher tells the little "Major" to go back to his seat and study his letters, and when he comes to a letter he doesn't know, to come to him and he will tell him. He obediently goes to his seat, looks on his book a little while, and then goes trudging across the puncheon floor again in his bare feet, to the teacher, and points to a letter, probably outside of his lesson, and asks what it is. The teacher kindly tells him that that is not in his lesson, that he need not study that or look at it now; he will come to that some other day, and then he will learn what it is. The simple-minded little fellow then trudges, smilingly, as he catches the eye of some one, back to his seat again. But why he smiled, he has no definite idea.

To prevent wearing the books out at the lower corner, every pupil was expected to keep a "thumb-paper" under his thumb as he holds the book; even then the books were soiled and worn out at this place in a few weeks, so that a part of many lessons were gone. Consequently the request was often made, "Master, may I borrow Jimmy's book to git my lesson in? mine haint in my book: it's tore out." It was also customary to use book-pointers, to point out the letters or words in study as well as in recitation. The black stem of the maiden-hair fern was a very popular material from which pointers were made.

The a-b-ab scholars through with, perhaps the second or third-reader class would be called, who would stand in a row in front of the teacher, "toeing the mark," which was actually a chalk or charcoal mark drawn on the floor, and commencing at one end of the class, one would read the first "verse," the next the second, and so on around, taking the paragraphs in the order as they occur in the book. Whenever a pupil hesitated at a word, the teacher would pronounce it for him. And this was all there was of the reading exercise.

Those studying arithmetic were but little classified, and they were therefore generally called forward singly and interviewed, or the

teacher simply visited them at their seats. A lesson containing several "sums" would be given for the next day. Whenever the learner came to a sum he couldn't do, he would go to the teacher with it, who would willingly and patiently, if he had time, do it for him.

In geography, no wall maps were used, no drawing required, and the studying and recitation comprised only the committing to memory, or "getting by heart," as it was called, the names and locality of places. The recitation proceeded like this: Teacher—"Where is Norfolk?" Pupil—"In the southeastern part of Virginia." Teacher—"What bay between Maryland and Virginia?" Pupil—"Chesapeake."

When the hour for writing arrived, the time was announced by the master, and every pupil practicing this art would turn his feet over to the back of his seat, thus throwing them under the writing desk, already described, and proceed to "follow copy," which was invariably set by the teacher, not by rule, but by as nice a stroke of the pen as he could make. The first copies for each pupil would be letters, and the second kind and last consisted of maxims. Blue ink on white paper, or black ink on blue paper, were common; and sometimes a pupil would be so unfortunate as to be compelled to use blue ink on blue paper; and a "blue" time he had of it.

About half past ten o'clock the master would announce, "School may go out;" which meant "little play-time," in the children's parlance, called nowadays, recess or intermission. Often the practice was to have the boys and girls go out separately, in which case the teacher would first say, "The girls may go out," and after they had been out about ten minutes the boys were allowed a similar privilege in the same way. In calling the children in from the play-ground, the teacher would invariably stand near the door of the school-house and call out "Books! books!" Between play-times the request, "Teacher, may I go out?" was often iterated to the annoyance of the teacher and the disturbance of the school.

At about half past eleven o'clock the teacher would announce, "Scholars may now get their spelling lessons," and they would all pitch in with their characteristic loud whisper and "say over" their lessons with that vigor which characterizes the movements of those who have just learned that the dinner hour and "big play-time" is near at hand. A few minutes before twelve the "little spelling-class" would recite, then the "big spelling-class." The latter would comprise the larger scholars and the major part of the school. The classes would stand in a row, either toeing the mark

in the midst of the floor, or straggling along next an unoccupied portion of the wall. One end of the class was the "head," the other the "foot," and when a pupil spelled a word correctly, which had been missed by one or more, he would "go up" and take his station above all that had missed the word: this was called "turning them down." At the conclusion of the recitation, the head pupil would go to the foot, to have another opportunity of turning them all down. The class would number, and before taking their seats the teacher would say, "School's dismissed," which was the signal for every child rushing for his dinner, and having the "big play-time."

The same process of spelling would also be gone through with in the afternoon just before dismissing the school for the day.

The chief text-books in which the "scholars" got their lessons were Webster's or some other elementary spelling-book, an arithmetic, may be Pike's, Dilworth's, Daboll's, Smiley's or Adams', McGuffey's or the old English reader, and Roswell C. Smith's geography and atlas. Very few at the earliest day, however, got so far along as to study geography. Nowadays, in contrast with the above, look at the "ographies" and "ologies!" Grammar and composition were scarcely thought of until Indiana was a quarter of a century old, and they were introduced in such a way that their utility was always questioned. First, old Murray's, then Kirkham's grammar, were the text-books on this subject. "Book larnin'," instead of practical oral instruction, was the only thing supposed to be attained in the primitive log school-house days. But writing was generally taught with fair diligence.

#### "PAST THE PICTURES."

This phrase had its origin in the practice of pioneer schools which used Webster's Elementary Spelling-book. Toward the back part of that time-honored text-book was a series of seven or eight pictures, illustrating morals, and after these again were a few more spelling exercises of a peculiar kind. When a scholar got over into these he was said to be "past the pictures," and was looked up to as being smarter and more learned than most other people ever hoped to be. Hence the application of this phrase came to be extended to other affairs in life, especially where scholarship was involved.

## SPELLING-SCHOOLS.

The chief public evening entertainment for the first 30 or 40 years of Indiana's existence was the celebrated "spelling-school." Both young people and old looked forward to the next spelling-school with as much anticipation and anxiety as we nowadays look forward to a general Fourth-of-July celebration; and when the time arrived the whole neighborhood, yea, and sometimes several neighborhoods, would flock together to the scene of academical combat, where the excitement was often more intense than had been expected. It was far better, of course, when there was good sleighing; then the young folks would turn out in high glee and be fairly beside themselves. The jollity is scarcely equaled at the present day by anything in vogue.

When the appointed hour arrived, the usual plan of commencing battle was for two of the young people who might agree to play against each other, or who might be selected to do so by the school-teacher of the neighborhood, to "choose sides," that is, each contestant, or "captain," as he was generally called, would choose the best speller from the assembled crowd. Each one choosing alternately, the ultimate strength of the respective parties would be about equal. When all were chosen who could be made to serve, each side would "number," so as to ascertain whether amid the confusion one captain had more spellers than the other. In case he had, some compromise would be made by the aid of the teacher, the master of ceremonies, and then the plan of conducting the campaign, or counting the misspelled words, would be canvassed for a moment by the captains, sometimes by the aid of the teacher and others. There were many ways of conducting the contest and keeping tally. Every section of the country had several favorite methods, and all or most of these were different from what other communities had. At one time they would commence spelling at the head, at another time at the foot; at one time they would "spell across," that is, the first on one side would spell the first word, then the first on the other side; next the second in the line on each side, alternately, down to the other end of each line. The question who should spell the first word was determined by the captains guessing what page the teacher would have before him in a partially opened book at a distance; the captain guessing the nearest would spell the first word pronounced. When a word was missed, it would be re-pronounced, or passed along without re-pronouncing (as some teachers strictly

followed the rule never to re-pronounce a word), until it was spelled correctly. If a speller on the opposite side finally spelled the missed word correctly, it was counted a gain of one to that side; if the word was finally corrected by some speller on the same side on which it was originated as a missed word, it was "saved," and no tally mark was made.

Another popular method was to commence at one end of the line of spellers and go directly around, and the missed words caught up quickly and corrected by "word-catchers," appointed by the captains from among their best spellers. These word-catchers would attempt to correct all the words missed on his opponent's side, and failing to do this, the catcher on the other side would catch him up with a peculiar zest, and then there was fun.

Still another very interesting, though somewhat disorderly, method, was this: Each word-catcher would go to the foot of the adversary's line, and every time he "caught" a word he would go up one, thus "turning them down" in regular spelling-class style. When one catcher in this way turned all down on the opposing side, his own party was victorious by as many as the opposing catcher was behind. This method required no slate or blackboard tally to be kept.

One turn, by either of the foregoing or other methods, would occupy 40 minutes to an hour, and by this time an intermission or recess was had, when the buzzing, cackling and hurraing that ensued for 10 or 15 minutes were beyond description.

Coming to order again, the next style of battle to be illustrated was to "spell down," by which process it was ascertained who were the best spellers and could continue standing as a soldier the longest. But very often good spellers would inadvertently miss a word in an early stage of the contest and would have to sit down humiliated, while a comparatively poor speller would often stand till nearly or quite the last, amid the cheers of the assemblage. Sometimes the two parties first "chosen up" in the evening would re-take their places after recess, so that by the "spelling-down" process there would virtually be another race, in another form; sometimes there would be a new "choosing up" for the "spelling-down" contest; and sometimes the spelling down would be conducted without any party lines being made. It would occasionally happen that two or three very good spellers would retain the floor so long that the exercise would become monotonous, when a few outlandish words like "*chevaux-de-frise*," "*Ompompanoösne*" or "*Bangh-*



naugh-clangh-ber," as they used to spell it sometimes, would create a little ripple of excitement to close with. Sometimes these words would decide the contest, but generally when two or three good spellers kept the floor until the exercise became monotonous, the teacher would declare the race closed and the standing spellers acquitted with a "drawn game."

The audience dismissed, the next thing was to "go home," very often by a round-about way, "a-sleighing with the girls," which, of course, was with many the most interesting part of the evening's performances, sometimes, however, too rough to be commended, as the boys were often inclined to be somewhat rowdyish.

#### SINGING-SCHOOL.

Next to the night spelling-school the singing-school was an occasion of much jollity, wherein it was difficult for the average singing-master to preserve order, as many went more for fun than for music. This species of evening entertainment, in its introduction to the West, was later than the spelling-school, and served, as it were, as the second step toward the more modern civilization. Good sleighing weather was of course almost a necessity for the success of these schools, but how many of them have been prevented by mud and rain! Perhaps a greater part of the time from November to April the roads would be muddy and often half frozen, which would have a very dampening and freezing effect upon the souls, as well as the bodies, of the young people who longed for a good time on such occasions.

The old-time method of conducting singing-school was also somewhat different from that of modern times. It was more plodding and heavy, the attention being kept upon the simplest rudiments, as the names of the notes on the staff, and their pitch, and beating time, while comparatively little attention was given to expression and light, gleeful music. The very earliest scale introduced in the West was from the South, and the notes, from their peculiar shape, were denominated "patent" or "buckwheat" notes. They were four, of which the round one was always called *sol*, the square one *la*, the triangular one *fa*, and the "diamond-shaped" one *mi*, pronounced *me*; and the diatonic scale, or "gamut" as it was called then, ran thus: *fa, sol, la, fa, sol, la, mi, fa*. The part of a tune nowadays called "treble," or "soprano," was then called "tenor;" the part now called "tenor" was called "treble," and what is now "alto" was then "counter," and when sung according to the oldest rule, was sung by a female an octave higher than marked, and still

on the "chest register." The "old" "Missouri Harmony" and Mason's "Sacred Harp" were the principal books used with this style of musical notation.

About 1850 the "round-note" system began to "come around," being introduced by the Yankee singing-master. The scale was *do, re, mi, fa, sol, la, si, do*; and for many years thereafter there was much more do-re-mi-ing than is practiced at the present day, when a musical instrument is always under the hand. The *Carmina Sacra* was the pioneer round-note book, in which the tunes partook more of the German or Puritan character, and were generally regarded by the old folks as being far more spiritless than the old "Pisgah," "Fiducia," "Tender Thought," "New Durham," "Windsor," "Mount Zion," "Devotion," etc., of the old Missouri Harmony and tradition.

#### GUARDING AGAINST INDIANS.

The fashion of carrying fire-arms was made necessary by the presence of roving bands of Indians, most of whom were ostensibly friendly, but like Indians in all times, treacherous and unreliable. An Indian war was at any time probable, and all the old settlers still retain vivid recollections of Indian massacres, murders, plunder, and frightful rumors of intended raids. While target practice was much indulged in as an amusement, it was also necessary at times to carry their guns with them to their daily field work.

As an illustration of the painstaking which characterized pioneer life, we quote the following from Zebulon Collings, who lived about six miles from the scene of massacre in the Pigeon Roost settlement: "The manner in which I used to work in those perilous times was as follows: On all occasions I carried my rifle, tomahawk and butcher-knife, with a loaded pistol in my belt. When I went to plow I laid my gun on the plowed ground, and stuck up a stick by it for a mark, so that I could get it quick in case it was wanted. I had two good dogs; I took one into the house, leaving the other out. The one outside was expected to give the alarm, which would cause the one inside to bark, by which I would be awakened, having my arms always loaded. I kept my horse in a stable close to the house, having a port-hole so that I could shoot to the stable door. During two years I never went from home with any certainty of returning, not knowing the minute I might receive a ball from an unknown hand."



TRAPPING.



## THE BRIGHT SIDE.

The history of pioneer life generally presents the dark side of the picture; but the toils and privations of the early settlers were not a series of unmitigated sufferings. No; for while the fathers and mothers toiled hard, they were not averse to a little relaxation, and had their seasons of fun and enjoyment. They contrived to do something to break the monotony of their daily life and furnish them a good hearty laugh. Among the more general forms of amusements were the "quilting-bee," "corn-husking," "apple-paring," "log-rolling" and "house-raising." Our young readers will doubtless be interested in a description of these forms of amusement, when labor was made to afford fun and enjoyment to all participating. The "quilting-bee," as its name implies, was when the industrious qualities of the busy little insect that "improves each shining hour" were exemplified in the manufacture of quilts for the household. In the afternoon ladies for miles around gathered at an appointed place, and while their tongues would not cease to play, the hands were as busily engaged in making the quilt; and desire as always manifested to get it out as quickly as possible, for then the fun would begin. In the evening the gentlemen came, and the hours would then pass swiftly by in playing games or dancing. "Corn-huskings" were when both sexes united in the work. They usually assembled in a large barn, which was arranged for the occasion; and when each gentleman had selected a lady partner the husking began. When a lady found a red ear she was entitled to a kiss from every gentleman present; when a gentleman found one he was allowed to kiss every lady present. After the corn was all husked a good supper was served; then the "old folks" would leave, and the remainder of the evening was spent in the dance and in having a general good time. The recreation afforded to the young people on the annual recurrence of these festive occasions was as highly enjoyed, and quite as innocent, as the amusements of the present boasted age of refinement and culture.

The amusements of the pioneers were peculiar to themselves. Saturday afternoon was a holiday in which no man was expected to work. A load of produce might be taken to "town" for sale or traffic without violence to custom, but no more serious labor could be tolerated. When on Saturday afternoon the town was reached, "fun commenced." Had two neighbors business to transact, here it was done. Horses were "swapped." Difficulties settled and

free fights indulged in. Blue and red ribbons were not worn in those days, and whisky was as free as water; twelve and a half cents would buy a quart, and thirty-five or forty cents a gallon, and at such prices enormous quantities were consumed. Go to any town in the county and ask the first pioneer you meet, and he would tell you of notable Saturday-afternoon fights, either of which to-day would fill a column of the *Police News*, with elaborate engravings to match.

Mr. Sandford C. Cox quaintly describes some of the happy features of frontier life in this manner:

We cleared land, rolled logs, burned brush, blazed out paths from one neighbor's cabin to another and from one settlement to another, made and used hand-mills and hominy mortars, hunted deer, turkey, otter, and raccoons, caught fish, dug ginseng, hunted bees and the like, and—lived on the fat of the land. We read of a land of "corn and wine," and another "flowing with milk and honey;" but I rather think, in a temporal point of view, taking into account the richness of the soil, timber, stone, wild game and other advantages, that the Sugar creek country would come up to any of them, if not surpass them.

I once cut cord-wood, continues Mr. Cox, at 31 $\frac{1}{4}$  cents per cord, and walked a mile and a half night and morning, where the first frame college was built northwest of town (Crawfordsville). Prof. Curry, the lawyer, would sometimes come down and help for an hour or two at a time, by way of amusement, as there was little or no law business in the town or country at that time. Reader, what would you think of going six to eight miles to help roll logs, or raise a cabin? or ten to thirteen miles to mill, and wait three or four days and nights for your grist? as many had to do in the first settlement of this country. Such things were of frequent occurrence then, and there was but little grumbling about it. It was a grand sight to see the log heaps and brush piles burning in the night on a clearing of 10 or 15 acres. A Democratic torchlight procession, or a midnight march of the Sons of Malta with their grand Gyasticutus in the center bearing the grand jewel of the order, would be nowhere in comparison with the log-heaps and brush piles in a blaze.

But it may be asked, Had you any social amusements, or manly pastimes, to recreate and enliven the dwellers in the wilderness? We had. In the social line we had our meetings and our singing-schools, sugar-boilings and weddings, which were as good as ever

came off in any country, new or old; and if our youngsters did not "trip the light fantastic toe" under a professor of the Terpsichorean art or expert French dancing-master, they had many a good "hoe-down" on puncheon floors, and were not annoyed by bad whisky. And as for manly sports, requiring mettle and muscle, there were lots of wild hogs running in the cat-tail swamps on Lye creek, and Mill creek, and among them many large boars that Ossian's heroes and Homer's model soldiers, such as Achilles, Hector and Ajax would have delighted to give chase to. The boys and men of those days had quite as much sport, and made more money and health by their hunting excursions than our city gents nowadays playing chess by telegraph where the players are more than 70 miles apart.

#### WHAT THE PIONEERS HAVE DONE.

Indiana is a grand State, in many respects second to none in the Union, and in almost every thing that goes to make a live, prosperous community, not far behind the best. Beneath her fertile soil is coal enough to supply the State for generations; her harvests are bountiful; she has a medium climate, and many other things, that make her people contented, prosperous and happy; but she owes much to those who opened up these avenues that have led to her present condition and happy surroundings. Unremitting toil and labor have driven off the sickly miasmas that brooded over swampy prairies. Energy and perseverance have peopled every section of her wild lands, and changed them from wastes and deserts to gardens of beauty and profit. When but a few years ago the barking wolves made the night hideous with their wild shrieks and howls, now is heard only the lowing and bleating of domestic animals. Only a half century ago the wild whoop of the Indian rent the air where now are heard the engine and rumbling trains of cars, bearing away to markets the products of our labor and soil. Then the savage built his rude huts on the spot where now rise the dwellings and school-houses and church spires of civilized life. How great the transformation! This change has been brought about by the incessant toil and aggregated labor of thousands of tired hands and anxious hearts, and the noble aspirations of such men and women as make any country great. What will another half century accomplish? There are few, very few, of these old pioneers yet lingering on the shores of time as connecting links of the past with the present. What must their thoughts

be as with their dim eyes they view the scenes that surround them? We often hear people talk about the old-fogy ideas and foggy ways, and want of enterprise on the part of the old men who have gone through the experiences of pioneer life. Sometimes, perhaps, such remarks are just, but, considering the experiences, education and entire life of such men, such remarks are better unsaid. They have had their trials, misfortunes, hardships and adventures, and shall we now, as they are passing far down the western declivity of life, and many of them gone, point to them the finger of derision and laugh and sneer at the simplicity of their ways? Let us rather cheer them up, revere and respect them, for beneath those rough exteriors beat hearts as noble as ever throbbed in the human breast. These veterans have been compelled to live for weeks upon hominy and, if bread at all, it was bread made from corn ground in hand-mills, or pounded up with mortars. Their children have been destitute of shoes during the winter; their families had no clothing except what was carded, spun, wove and made into garments by their own hands; schools they had none; churches they had none; afflicted with sickness incident to all new countries, sometimes the entire family at once; luxuries of life they had none; the auxiliaries, improvements, inventions and labor-saving machinery of to-day they had not; and what they possessed they obtained by the hardest of labor and individual exertions, yet they bore these hardships and privations without murmuring, hoping for better times to come, and often, too, with but little prospect of realization.

As before mentioned, the changes written on every hand are most wonderful. It has been but three-score years since the white man began to exercise dominion over this region, erst the home of the red men, yet the visitor of to-day, ignorant of the past of the country, could scarcely be made to realize that within these years there has grown up a population of 2,000,000 people, who in all the accomplishments of life are as far advanced as are the inhabitants of the older States. Schools, churches, colleges, palatial dwellings, beautiful grounds, large, well-cultivated and productive farms, as well as cities, towns and busy manufactories, have grown up, and occupy the hunting grounds and camping places of the Indians, and in every direction there are evidences of wealth, comfort and luxury. There is but little left of the old landmarks. Advanced civilization and the progressive demands of revolving years have obliterated all traces of Indian occupancy, until they are only remembered in name.



In closing this section we again would impress upon the minds of our readers the fact that they owe a debt of gratitude to those who pioneered this State, which can be but partially repaid. Never grow unmindful of the peril and adventure, fortitude, self-sacrifice and heroic devotion so prominently displayed in their lives. As time sweeps on in its ceaseless flight, may the cherished memories of them lose none of their greenness, but may the future generations alike cherish and perpetuate them with a just devotion to gratitude.

#### MILITARY DRILL.

In the days of muster and military drill, so well known throughout the country, a specimen of pioneer work was done on the South Wea prairie, as follows, according to Mr. S. C. Cox:

The Captain was a stout-built, muscular man, who stood six feet four in his boots, and weighed over 200 pounds; when dressed in his uniform, a blue hunting-shirt fastened with a wide red sash, with epaulettes on each shoulder, his large sword fastened by his side, and tall plume waving in the wind, he looked like another William Wallace, or Roderick Dhu, unsheathing his claymore in defense of his country. His company consisted of about 70 men, who had reluctantly turned out to muster to avoid paying a fine; some with guns, some with sticks, and others carrying corn-stalks. The Captain, who had but recently been elected, understood his business better than his men supposed he did. He intended to give them a thorough drilling, and showed them that he understood the maneuvers of the military art as well as he did farming and fox hunting, the latter of which was one of his favorite amusements. After forming a hollow square, marching and counter-marching, and putting them through several other evolutions, according to Scott's tactics, he commanded his men to "form a line." They partially complied, but the line was crooked. He took his sword and passed it along in front of his men, straightening the line. By the time he passed from one end of the line to the other, on casting his eye back, he discovered that the line presented a zigzag and unmilitary appearance. Some of the men were leaning on their guns, some on their sticks a yard in advance of the line, and others as far in the rear. The Captain's dander arose; he threw his cocked hat, feather and all, on the ground, took off his red sash and hunting-shirt, and threw them, with his sword, upon his hat; he then rolled up his sleeves and shouted with the voice of a stentor, "Gentlemen, form a line

and keep it, or I'll thrash the whole company." Instantly the whole line was straight as an arrow. The Captain was satisfied, put on his clothes again, and never had any more trouble in drilling his company.

JACK, "THE PHILOSOPHER OF THE NINETEENTH CENTURY."

In early day in this State, before books and newspapers were introduced, a few lawyers were at a certain place in the habit of playing cards, and sometimes drinking a little too much whisky. During the session of a certain court, a man named John Stevenson, but who was named "Jack," and who styled himself the "philosopher of the 19th century," found out where these genteel sportsmen met of evenings to peruse the "history of the four kings." He went to the door and knocked for admission; to the question, "Who is there?" he answered, "Jack." The insiders hesitated; he knocked and thumped importunately; at length a voice from within said, "Go away, Jack; we have already four 'Jacks' in our game, and we will not consent to have a 'cold one' wrung in on us."

Indignant at this rebuff from gentlemen from whom he had expected kinder treatment, he left, muttering vengeance, which excited no alarm in the minds of the players. At first he started away to walk off his passion, but the longer he walked the madder he got, and he finally concluded that he would not "pass" while he held or might hold so many trumps in his hands, but would return and play a strong hand with them. Accordingly he gathered his arms full of stones a little larger than David gathered to throw at Goliath, and when he came near enough he threw a volley of them in through the window into the room where they were playing, extinguishing their lights, and routing the whole band with the utmost trepidation into the street, in search of their curious assailant. Jack stood his ground and told them that that was a mere foretaste of what they might expect if they molested him in the least.

Next day the pugnacious Jack was arrested to answer an indictment for malicious mischief; and failing to give bail, was lodged in jail. His prosecutors laughed through the grates of the prison as they passed. Meanwhile Jack "nursed his wrath to keep it warm," and indicted a speech in his own defense. In due time he was taken before the Court, the indictment was read, and he was asked what he pleaded to the indictment. "Not guilty,"

he answered in a deep, earnest tone. "Have you counsel engaged to defend you, Mr. Stevenson?" inquired the Judge. "No; please your honor; I desire none; with your permission I will speak for myself." "Very well," said the Judge. A titter ran through the crowd. After the prosecuting attorney had gone through with the evidence and his opening remarks in the case, the prisoner arose and said, "It is a lamentable fact well known to the Court and Jury and to all who hear me, that our county seat has for many years been infested and disgraced, especially during Court time, with a knot of drunken, carousing gamblers, whose Bacchanalian revels and midnight orgies disturb the quiet and pollute the morals of our town. Shall these nuisances longer remain in our midst, to debauch society and lead our young men to destruction? Fully impressed with a sense of their turpitude, and my duty as a good citizen to the community in which I live, I resolved to 'abate the nuisance,' which, according to the doctrine of the common law, with which your honor is familiar, I or any other citizen had a right to do. I have often listened with pleasure to the charges your honor gave the Grand Jury to ferret out crime and all manner of gaming in our community. I saw I had it in my power to ferret out these fellows with a volley of stones, and save the county the cost of finding and trying a half a dozen indictments. Judge, I did 'abate the nuisance,' and consider it one of the most meritorious acts of my life."

The prosecutor made no reply. The Judge and lawyers looked at each other with a significant glance. A *nolle prosequi* was entered, Jack was acquitted and was ever afterward considered "trump."—*Settlement of the Wabash Valley.*

"TOO FULL FOR UTTERANCE."

The early years of Indiana afford to the enquirer a rare opportunity to obtain a glimpse of the political and even social relation of the Indianians of the olden time to the moderns. As is customary in all new countries there was to be found, within the limits of the new State, a happy people, far removed from all those influences which tend to interfere with the public morals: they possessed the courage and the gait of freeborn men, took an especial interest in the political questions affecting their State, and often, when met under the village shade trees to discuss sincerely, and unostentatiously, some matters of local importance, accompanied the subject before their little convention with song and jest, and even the cup

which cheers but not inebriates. The election of militia officers for the Black Creek Regiment may be taken for example. The village school boys prowled at large, for on the day previous the teacher expressed his intention of attending the meeting of electors, and of aiding in building up a military company worthy of his own importance, and the reputation of the few villagers. The industrious matrons and maids—bless their souls—donned the habiliments of fashion, and as they arrived at the meeting ground, ornamented the scene for which nature in its untouched simplicity did so much. Now arrived the moment when the business should be entered on. With a good deal of urging the ancient Elward Tomkins took the chair, and with a pompons air, wherein was concentrated a consciousness of his own importance, demanded the gentlemen entrusted with resolutions to open the proceedings. By this time a respected elector brought forward a jar and an uncommonly large tin-cup. These articles proved objects of very serious attention, and when the chairman repeated his demand, the same humane elector filled the cup to the brim, passed it to the venerable president and bade him drink deep to the prosperity of Indiana, of Black Creek, and of the regiment about to be formed. The secretary was treated similarly, and then a drink all round the thirty electors and their friends. This ceremony completed, the military subject melted into nothingness before the great question, then agitating the people, viz., "Should the State of Indiana accept the grant of land donated by Congress for the construction of the Wabash and Erie canal, from Lake Erie to the mouth of Tippecanoe river?" A son of Esculapius, one Doctor Stone, protested so vehemently against entertaining even an idea of accepting the grant, that the parties favorable to the question felt themselves to be treading on tottering grounds. Stone's logic was to the point, unconquerable; but his enemies did not surrender hope; they looked at one another, then at the young school-teacher, whom they ultimately selected as their orator and defender. The meeting adjourned for an hour, after which the youthful teacher of the young ideas ascended the rostrum. His own story of his emotions and efforts may be acceptable. He says: "I was sorry they called upon me; for I felt about 'half seas over' from the free and frequent use of the tin-cup. I was puzzled to know what to do. To decline would injure me in the estimation of the neighborhood, who were strongly in favor of the grant; and, on the other hand, if I attempted to speak, and failed from intoxication, it would ruin me with my patrons. Soon a fence-rail was

slipped into the worn fence near by, and a wash-tub, turned bottom upward, placed upon it and on the neighboring rails, about five feet from the ground, as a rostrum for me to speak from. Two or three men seized hold of me and placed me upon the stand, amidst the vociferous shouts of the friends of the canal, which were none the less loud on account of the frequent circulation of the tin and jug. I could scarcely preserve my equilibrium, but there I was on the tub for the purpose of answering and exposing the Doctor's sophistries, and an anxious auditory waiting for me to exterminate him. But, strange to say, my lips refused utterance. I saw 'men as trees, walking,' and after a long, and to me, painful pause, I smote my hand upon my breast, and said, 'I feel too full for utterance.' (I meant of whisky, they thought of righteous indignation at the Doctor's effrontery in opposing the measure under consideration.) The *ruse* worked like a charm. The crowd shouted: 'Let him have it.' I raised my finger and pointed a moment steadily at the Doctor. The audience shouted, 'Hit him again.' Thus encouraged, I attempted the first stump speech I ever attempted to make; and after I got my mouth to go off (and a part of the whisky—in perspiration), I had no trouble whatever, and the liquor dispelled my native timidity that otherwise might have embarrassed me. I occupied the tub about twenty-five minutes. The Doctor, boiling over with indignation and a speech, mounted the tub and harangued us for thirty minutes. The 'young school-master' was again called for, and another speech from him of about twenty minutes closed the debate." A *vive voce* vote of the company was taken, which resulted in twenty-six for the grant and four against it. My two friends were elected Captain and Lieutenant, and I am back at my boarding house, ready for supper, with a slight headache. Strange as it may appear, none of them discovered that I was intoxicated. Lucky for me they did not, or I would doubtless lose my school. I now here promise myself, on this leaf of my day-book, that *I will not drink liquor again, except given as a medical prescription.*"

It is possible that the foregoing incident was the origin of the *double entendre*, "Too full for utterance."

#### THIEVING AND LYNCH LAW.

During the year 1868 the sentiment began to prevail that the processes of law in relation to criminal proceedings were neither prompt nor sure in the punishment of crime. It was easy to ob-

tain continuances and changes of venue, and in this way delay the administration of justice or entirely frustrate it. The consequence was, an encouragement and increase of crime and lynch law became apparent. An event this year excited the public conscience upon this subject. A gang of robbers, who had been operating many months in the southern counties, on the 22d of May attacked and plundered a railroad car of the Adams' Express company on the Jeffersonville road; they were captured, and after being kept several weeks in custody in Cincinnati, Ohio, they were put on board a train, July 20, to be taken to the county of Jackson, in this State, for trial. An armed body of the "Vigilance Committee" of Seymour county lay in wait for the train, stopped the cars by hoisting a red signal on the track, seized the prisoners, extorted a confession from them, and hanged them without the form of a trial.

This same committee, to the number of 75 men, all armed and disguised, entered New Albany on the night of December 12, forcibly took the keys of the jail from the Sheriff, and proceeded to hang four others of these railroad robbers in the corridors of the prison. They published a proclamation, announcing by printed handbills that they would "swing by the neck until they be dead every thieving character they could lay their hands on, without inquiry whether they had the persons who committed that particular crime or not."

#### CURING THE DRUNKEN HUSBAND.

Another case of necessity being the mother of invention occurred in Fountain county between 1825 and 1830, as thus related in the book above quoted:

A little old man, who was in the habit of getting drunk at every log rolling and house-raising he attended, upon coming home at night would make indiscriminate war upon his wife and daughters, and everything that came in his way. The old lady and the daughters bore with his tyranny and maudlin abuse as long as forbearance seemed to be a virtue. For awhile they adopted the doctrine of non-resistance and would fly from the house on his approach; but they found that this only made him worse. At length they resolved to change the order of things. They held a council of war, in which it was determined that the next time he came home drunk they would catch him and tie him hand and foot, take him out and tie him fast to a tree, and keep him there until he got duly sober.

It was not long before they had an opportunity to execute their

decree. True to their plan, when they saw him coming, two of them placed themselves behind the door with ropes, and the other caught him by the wrists as he crossed the threshold. He was instantly lassoed. A tussle ensued, but the old woman and girls fell uppermost. They made him fast with the ropes and dragged him out toward the designated tree. He raved, swore, remonstrated and begged alternately, but to no effect; they tied him to the tree and kept him there most of the night. They did not even untie him directly after he became sober, until they extorted a promise from him that he would behave himself and keep sober for the future, and not maltreat them for the favor they had conferred upon him and themselves.

Two or three applications of this mild and diluted form of lynch law had an admirable effect in restoring order and peace in that family and correcting the conduct of the delinquent husband and father. The old woman thinks the plan they pursued far better and less expensive than it would have been if they had gone ten miles to Esquire Makepeace every few weeks and got out a writ for assault and battery besides the trouble and expense of attending as witnesses, \$10 or \$20 every month or two, and withal doing no good toward reforming the old man.

#### THE "CHOKE TRAP."

About 1808, in the neighborhood on the east fork of White river, there occurred a flagrant breach of the peace which demanded a summary execution of the law. A certain ungallant offender had flogged his wife in a most barbarous manner and then drove her from home. Bleeding and weeping, the poor woman appeared before Justice Tongs for redress. The justice wrote out an affidavit, which was signed, sworn to, and subscribed in due form. A warrant was soon placed in the hands of a constable commanding him to arrest and forthwith bring the offender before Justice Tongs, to answer to the charge preferred against him. After an absence of some five or six hours, the constable returned with the prisoner in custody. He had had a vexatious time of it, for the prisoner, a gigantic man, had frequently on the way, after he had consented peaceably to accompany him to the magistrate's office, stopped short and declared he would go no further, observing at the same time that neither he (the constable) nor 'Squire Tongs had any business to meddle with his domestic concerns. It was during one of those vexatious parleys, the constable coaxing and persuading, and the

prisoner protesting and swinging back like an unruly ox, that the constable fortunately spied a hunter at a short distance who was armed and accoutred in real backwoods style. The constable beckoned to the hunter, who then came up to his assistance, and who, after hearing the particulars of the affair, cocked his rifle, and soon galloped off the prisoner to the 'Squire's office.

But this was only the beginning of the trouble in the case. The witnesses were yet to be summoned and brought before the justice; even the complaining witness had unexpectedly withdrawn from the house and premises of the justice, and was to be looked after. The hunter could not possibly stay long, as his comrades were to meet him at a point down 10 or 15 miles distant that evening. The prisoner was quite sullen, and it was evident that the 'Squire could not keep him safely if the constable and hunter were to leave. Although the 'Squire's jurisdiction extended from the west line of Ohio far toward the Rocky Mountains, and from the Ohio river north to Green Bay, yet so sparse was the neighborhood in point of population, and so scattering were the settlers, that he and his faithful constable found that it would be but little use to a call upon the *posse comitatus*. But in this critical situation of affairs, the fruitful mind of the justice hit upon a first-rate plan to keep the prisoner until the witnesses could be brought. It was simply to pry up the corner of his heavy eight-rail fence near by, make a crack two or three rails above the ground, and thrust the prisoner's head through the crack, and then take out the pry.

As soon as the 'Squire made known his plan to the company they with one accord resolved to adopt it. The constable immediately rolled out an empty "bee-gum" for a fulcrum, and applied a fence rail for a lever; up went the fence, the justice took hold of the prisoner's arm, and, with the assisting nudges of the hunter, who brought up the rear with rifle in hand, they thrust the prisoner's head through the crack, *nolens volens*, and then took out the prop. There lay the offender safe enough, his head on one side of the fence and his body on the other. The hunter went on his way, satisfied that he had done signal service to his country, and the constable could now be spared to hunt up the witnesses.

The prisoner in the meantime, although the crack in the fence was fully large enough without pinching, kept squirming about and bawling out lustily, "Choke trap! The devil take your choke trap!" Toward sunset the constable returned with the witnesses. The prisoner was taken from his singular duress, and was regularly





PONTIAC.



tried for his misdemeanor. He was found guilty, fined, and, as it appeared from the evidence on the trial that the defendant had been guilty aforetime of the same offense, the justice sentenced him to three hours' imprisonment in jail. There being no jail within 100 miles, the constable and bystanders led the offender to the fence again, rolled up the "bee-gum," applied the rail, and thrust his head a second time through the fence. There he remained in limbo until ten o'clock that night, when, after giving security for the final costs, he was set at liberty, with not a few cautions that he had better "let Betsey alone," or he would get another application of the law and the "choke trap."—*Cox' Recollections of the Wabash Valley.*

### MICHIGAN BOUNDARY.

About the year 1834 Michigan claimed that her southern boundary was properly about 10 miles south of the parallel fixed by Congress, that is, a line drawn from the extreme southern extremity of Lake Michigan directly east to Lake Erie, thus including Toledo. Ohio and Indiana, especially the former, stoutly opposed this claim. The contest grew so warm that military organization had actually commenced, and a war was expected. This was called the "Toledo war," and for a time there was as much excitement as on the eve of a great revolution. But the blustering Wolverine was soothed to rest by an offer of a large extent of territory north and west of the Strait of Mackinaw. Had that State succeeded in establishing its claim by decree of Congress, Indiana would have been cut off from the lakes, thrown entirely inland like Kentucky, and lost a very valuable strip of country. This State also would have probably lost the co-operation of Ohio in the conduct of the Wabash & Erie canal, the greatest and costliest pet of the State. It is amusing to observe, by the way, that the people of Michigan at first thought that their reward for yielding the golden strip on her southern boundary was a very meager one, thinking that she had naught but a barren waste and a large body of cold water; but behold, how vast are now her mineral resources in that same bleak country, the "upper peninsula!"

## THE MEXICAN WAR.

During the administration of Gov. Whitcomb the war with Mexico occurred, which resulted in annexing to the United States vast tracts of land in the south and west. Indiana contributed her full ratio to the troops in that war, and with a remarkable spirit of promptness and patriotism adopted all measures to sustain the general Government. These new acquisitions of territory re-opened the discussion of the slavery question, and Governor Whitcomb expressed his opposition to a further extension of the "national sin."

The causes which led to a declaration of war against Mexico in 1846, must be sought for as far back as the year 1830, when the present State of Texas formed a province of New and Independent Mexico. During the years immediately preceding 1830, Moses Austin, of Connecticut, obtained a liberal grant of lands from the established Government, and on his death his son was treated in an equally liberal manner. The glowing accounts rendered by Austin, and the vivid picture of Elysian fields drawn by visiting journalists, soon resulted in the influx of a large tide of immigrants, nor did the movement to the Southwest cease until 1830. The Mexican province held a prosperous population, comprising 10,000 American citizens. The rapacious Government of the Mexicans looked with greed and jealousy upon their eastern province, and, under the presidency of Gen. Santa Anna, enacted such measures, both unjust and oppressive, as would meet their design of goading the people of Texas on to revolution, and thus afford an opportunity for the infliction of punishment upon subjects whose only crime was industry and its accompaniment, prosperity. Precisely in keeping with the course pursued by the British toward the colonists of the Eastern States in the last century, Santa Anna's Government met the remonstrances of the colonists of Texas with threats; and they, secure in their consciousness of right quietly issued their declaration of independence, and proved its literal meaning on the field of Gonzales in 1835, having with a force of

500 men forced the Mexican army of 1,000 to fly for refuge to their strongholds. Battle after battle followed, bringing victory always to the Colonists, and ultimately resulting in the total rout of the Mexican army and the evacuation of Texas. The routed army after a short term of rest reorganized, and reappeared in the Territory, 8,000 strong. On April 21, a division of this large force under Santa Anna encountered the Texans under General Samuel Houston on the banks of the San Jacinto, and though Houston could only oppose 800 men to the Mexican legions, the latter were driven from the field, nor could they reform their scattered ranks until their General was captured next day and forced to sign the declaration of 1835. The signature of Santa Anna, though ignored by the Congress of the Mexican Republic, and consequently left unratified on the part of Mexico, was effected in so much, that after the second defeat of the army of that Republic all the hostilities of an important nature ceased, the Republic of Texas was recognized by the powers, and subsequently became an integral part of the United States, July 4, 1846. At this period General Herrera was president of Mexico. He was a man of peace, of common sense, and very patriotic; and he thus entertained, or pretended to entertain, the great neighboring Republic in high esteem. For this reason he grew unpopular with his people, and General Paredes was called to the presidential chair, which he continued to occupy until the breaking out of actual hostilities with the United States, when Gen. Santa Anna was elected thereto.

President Polk, aware of the state of feeling in Mexico, ordered Gen. Zachary Taylor, in command of the troops in the Southwest, to proceed to Texas, and post himself as near to the Mexican border as he deemed prudent. At the same time an American squadron was dispatched to the vicinity, in the Gulf of Mexico. In November, General Taylor had taken his position at Corpus Christi, a Texan settlement on a bay of the same name, with about 4,000 men. On the 13th of January, 1846, the President ordered him to advance with his forces to the Rio Grande; accordingly he proceeded, and in March stationed himself on the north bank of that river, within cannon-shot of the Mexican town of Matamoras. Here he hastily erected a fortress, called Fort Brown. The territory lying between the river Nueces and the Rio Grande river, about 120 miles in width, was claimed both by Texas and Mexico; according to the latter, therefore, General Taylor had actually invaded her Territory, and had thus committed an open

act of war. On the 26th of April, the Mexican General, Ampudia, gave notice to this effect to General Taylor, and on the same day a party of American dragoons, sixty-three in number, being on the north side of the Rio Grande, were attacked, and, after the loss of sixteen men killed and wounded, were forced to surrender. Their commander, Captain Thornton, only escaped. The Mexican forces had now crossed the river above Matamoras and were supposed to meditate an attack on Point Isabel, where Taylor had established a depot of supplies for his army. On the 1st of May, this officer left a small number of troops at Fort Brown, and marched with his chief forces, twenty-three hundred men, to the defense of Point Isabel. Having garrisoned this place, he set out on his return. On the 8th of May, about noon, he met the Mexican army, six thousand strong, drawn up in battle array, on the prairie near Palo Alto. The Americans at once advanced to the attack, and, after an action of five hours, in which their artillery was very effective, drove the enemy before them, and encamped upon the field. The Mexican loss was about one hundred killed; that of the Americans, four killed and forty wounded. Major Ringgold, of the artillery, an officer of great merit, was mortally wounded. The next day, as the Americans advanced, they again met the enemy in a strong position near Resaca de la Palma, three miles from Fort Brown. An action commenced, and was fiercely contested, the artillery on both sides being served with great vigor. At last the Mexicans gave way, and fled in confusion, General de la Vega having fallen into the hands of the Americans. They also abandoned their guns and a large quantity of ammunition to the victors. The remaining Mexican soldiers speedily crossed the Rio Grande, and the next day the Americans took up their position at Fort Brown. This little fort, in the absence of General Taylor, had gallantly sustained an almost uninterrupted attack of several days from the Mexican batteries of Matamoras.

When the news of the capture of Captain Thornton's party was spread over the United States, it produced great excitement. The President addressed a message to Congress, then in session, declaring "that war with Mexico existed by her own act;" and that body, May, 1846, placed ten millions of dollars at the President's disposal, and authorized him to accept the services of fifty thousand volunteers. A great part of the summer of 1846 was spent in preparation for the war, it being resolved to invade Mexico at several points. In pursuance of this plan, General Taylor, who had taken

possession of Matamoras, abandoned by the enemy in May, marched northward in the enemy's country in August, and on the 19th of September he appeared before Monterey, capital of the Mexican State of New Leon. His army, after having garrisoned several places along his route, amounted to six thousand men. The attack began on the 21st, and after a succession of assaults, during the period of four days, the Mexicans capitulated, leaving the town in possession of the Americans. In October, General Taylor terminated an armistice into which he had entered with the Mexican General, and again commenced offensive operations. Various towns and fortresses of the enemy now rapidly fell into our possession. In November, Saltillo, the capital of the State of Coahuila was occupied by the division of General Worth; in December, General Patterson took possession of Victoria, the capital of Tamaulipas, and nearly at the same period, Commodore Perry captured the fort of Tampico. Santa Fe, the capital of New Mexico, with the whole territory of the State had been subjugated by General Harney, after a march of one thousand miles through the wilderness. Events of a startling character had taken place at still earlier dates along the Pacific coast. On the 4th of July, Captain Fremont, having repeatedly defeated superior Mexican forces with the small band under his command, declared California independent of Mexico. Other important places in this region had yielded to the American naval force, and in August, 1846, the whole of California was in the undisputed occupation of the Americans.

The year 1847 opened with still more brilliant victories on the part of our armies. By the drawing off of a large part of General Taylor's troops for a meditated attack on Vera Cruz, he was left with a comparatively small force to meet the great body of Mexican troops, now marching upon him, under command of the celebrated Santa Anna, who had again become President of Mexico.

Ascertaining the advance of this powerful army, twenty thousand strong, and consisting of the best of the Mexican soldiers, General Taylor took up his position at Buena Vista, a valley a few miles from Saltillo. His whole troops numbered only four thousand seven hundred and fifty-nine, and here, on the 23d of February, he was vigorously attacked by the Mexicans. The battle was very severe, and continued nearly the whole day, when the Mexicans fled from the field in disorder, with a loss of nearly two thousand men. Santa Anna speedily withdrew, and thus abandoned the region of

the Rio Grande to the complete occupation of our troops. This left our forces at liberty to prosecute the grand enterprise of the campaign, the capture of the strong town of Vera Cruz, with its renowned castle of San Juan d'Ulloa. On the 9th of March, 1847, General Scott landed near the city with an army of twelve thousand men, and on the 18th commenced an attack. For four days and nights an almost incessant shower of shot and shells was poured upon the devoted town, while the batteries of the castle and the city replied with terrible energy. At last, as the Americans were preparing for an assault, the Governor of the city offered to surrender, and on the 26th the American flag floated triumphantly from the walls of the castle and the city. General Scott now prepared to march upon the city of Mexico, the capital of the country, situated two hundred miles in the interior, and approached only through a series of rugged passes and mountain fastnesses, rendered still more formidable by several strong fortresses. On the 8th of April the army commenced their march. At Cerro Gordo, Santa Anna had posted himself with fifteen thousand men. On the 18th the Americans began the daring attack, and by midday every intrenchment of the enemy had been carried. The loss of the Mexicans in this remarkable battle, besides one thousand killed and wounded, was three thousand prisoners, forty-three pieces of cannon, five thousand stand of arms, and all their amunitions and materials of war. The loss of the Americans was four hundred and thirty-one in killed and wounded. The next day our forces advanced, and, capturing fortress after fortress, came on the 18th of August within ten miles of Mexico, a city of two hundred thousand inhabitants, and situated in one of the most beautiful valleys in the world. On the 20th they attacked and carried the strong batteries of Contreras, garrisoned by 7,000 men, in an impetuous assault, which lasted but seventeen minutes. On the same day an attack was made by the Americans on the fortified post of Churubusco, four miles northeast of Contreras. Here nearly the entire Mexican army—more than 20,000 in number—were posted; but they were defeated at every point, and obliged to seek a retreat in the city, or the still remaining fortress of Chapultepec. While preparations were being made on the 21st by General Scott, to level his batteries against the city, prior to summoning it to surrender, he received propositions from the enemy, which terminated in an armistice. This ceased on the 7th of September. On the 8th the outer defense of Chapultepec was successfully



stormed by General Worth, though he lost one-fourth of his men in the desperate struggle. The castle of Chapultepec, situated on an abrupt and rocky eminence, 150 feet above the surrounding country, presented a most formidable object of attack. On the 12th, however, the batteries were opened against it, and on the next day the citadel was carried by storm. The Mexicans still struggled along the great causeway leading to the city, as the Americans advanced, but before nightfall a part of our army was within the gates of the city. Santa Anna and the officers of the Government fled, and the next morning, at seven o'clock, the flag of the Americans floated from the national palace of Mexico. This conquest of the capital was the great and final achievement of the war. The Mexican republic was in fact prostrate, her sea-coast and chief cities being in the occupation of our troops. On the 2d of February, 1848, terms of peace were agreed upon by the American commissioner and the Mexican Government, this treaty being ratified by the Mexican Congress on the 30th of May following, and by the United States soon after. President Polk proclaimed peace on the 4th of July, 1848. In the preceding sketch we have given only a mere outline of the war with Mexico. We have necessarily passed over many interesting events, and have not even named many of our soldiers who performed gallant and important services. General Taylor's successful operations in the region of the Rio Grande were duly honored by the people of the United States, by bestowing upon him the Presidency. General Scott's campaign, from the attack on Vera Cruz, to the surrender of the city of Mexico, was far more remarkable, and, in a military point of view, must be considered as one of the most brilliant of modern times. It is true the Mexicans are not to be ranked with the great nations of the earth; with a population of seven or eight millions, they have little more than a million of the white race, the rest being half-civilized Indians and mestizos, that is, those of mixed blood. Their government is inefficient, and the people divided among themselves. Their soldiers often fought bravely, but they were badly officered. While, therefore, we may consider the conquest of so extensive and populous a country, in so short a time, and attended with such constant superiority even to the greater numbers of the enemy, as highly gratifying evidence of the courage and capacity of our army, still we must not, in judging of our achievements, fail to consider the real weakness of the nation whom we vanquished.

One thing we may certainly dwell upon with satisfaction—the admirable example, not only as a soldier, but as a man, set by our commander, Gen. Scott, who seems, in the midst of war and the ordinary license of the camp, always to have preserved the virtue, kindness, and humanity belonging to a state of peace. These qualities secured to him the respect, confidence and good-will even of the enemy he had conquered. Among the Generals who effectually aided General Scott in this remarkable campaign, we must not omit to mention the names of Generals Wool, Twiggs, Shields, Worth, Smith, and Quitman, who generally added to the high qualities of soldiers the still more estimable characteristics of good men. The treaty of Guadalupe-Hidalgo stipulated that the disputed territory between the Nueces and the Rio Grande should belong to the United States, and it now forms a part of Texas, as has been already stated; that the United States should assume and pay the debts due from Mexico to American citizens, to the amount of \$3,500,000; and that, in consideration of the sum of \$15,000,000 to be paid by the United States to Mexico, the latter should relinquish to the former the whole of New Mexico and Upper California.

The soldiers of Indiana who served in this war were formed into five regiments of volunteers, numbered respectively, 1st, 2d, 3rd, 4th and 5th. The fact that companies of the three first-named regiments served at times with the men of Illinois, the New York volunteers, the Palmettos of South Carolina, and United States marines, under Gen. James Shields, makes for them a history; because the campaigns of the Rio Grande and Chihuahua, the siege of Vera Cruz, the desperate encounter at Cerro Gordo, the tragic contests in the valley, at Contreras and Churubusco, the storming of Chapultepec, and the planting of the stars and stripes upon every turret and spire within the conquered city of Mexico, were all carried out by the gallant troops under the favorite old General, and consequently each of them shared with him in the glories attached to such exploits. The other regiments under Cols. Gorman and Lane participated in the contests of the period under other commanders. The 4th Regiment of Indiana Volunteers, comprising ten companies, was formally organized at Jeffersonville, Indiana, by Capt. R. C. Gatlin, June 15, 1847, and on the 16th elected Major Willis A. Gorman, of the 3rd Regiment, to the Colonely; Ebenezer Dumont, Lieutenant-Colonel, and W. McCoy, Major. On the 27th of June the regiment left Jeffersonville for the front, and

subsequently was assigned to Brigadier-General Lane's command, which then comprised a battery of five pieces from the 3rd Regiment U. S. Artillery; a battery of two pieces from the 2nd Regiment U. S. Artillery, the 4th Regiment of Indiana Volunteers and the 4th Regiment of Ohio, with a squadron of mounted Louisianians and detachments of recruits for the U. S. army. The troops of this brigade won signal honors at Passo de Ovegas, August 10, 1847; National Bridge, on the 12th; Cerro Gordo, on the 15th; Las Animas, on the 19th, under Maj. F. T. Lally, of General Lane's staff, and afterward under Lane, directly, took a very prominent part in the siege of Puebla, which began on the 15th of September and terminated on the 12th of October. At Atlitxco, October 19th; Tlascala, November 10th; Matamoras and Pass Galajara, November 23rd and 24th; Guerrilla Ranche, December 5th; Napaloncean, December 10th, the Indiana volunteers of the 4th Regiment performed gallant service, and carried the campaign into the following year, representing their State at St. Martin's, February 27, 1848; Cholula, March 26th; Matacordera, February 19th; Sequalteplan, February 25th; and on the cessation of hostilities reported at Madison, Indiana, for discharge, July 11, 1848; while the 5th Indiana Regiment, under Col. J. H. Lane, underwent a similar round of duty during its service with other brigades, and gained some celebrity at Vera Cruz, Churubusco and with the troops of Illinois under Gen. Shields at Chapultepec.

This war cost the people of the United States sixty-six millions of dollars. This very large amount was not paid away for the attainment of mere glory; there was something else at stake, and this something proved to be a country larger and more fertile than the France of the Napoleons, and more steady and sensible than the France of the Republic. It was the defense of the great Lone Star State, the humiliation and chastisement of a quarrelsome neighbor.

## SLAVERY.

We have already referred to the prohibition of slavery in the Northwestern Territory, and Indiana Territory by the ordinance of 1787; to the imperfection in the execution of this ordinance and the troubles which the authorities encountered; and the complete establishment of the principles of freedom on the organization of the State. The next item of significance in this connection is the following language in the message of Gov. Ray to the Legislature of 1828: "Since our last separation, while we have witnessed with anxious solicitude the belligerent operations of another hemisphere, the cross contending against the crescent, and the prospect of a general rupture among the legitimates of other quarters of the globe, our attention has been arrested by proceedings in our own country truly dangerous to liberty, seriously premeditated, and disgraceful to its authors if agitated only to tamper with the American people. If such experiments as we see attempted in certain deluded quarters do not fall with a burst of thunder upon the heads of their seditious projectors, then indeed the Republic has begun to experience the days of its degeneracy. The union of these States is the people's only sure charter for their liberties and independence. Dissolve it and each State will soon be in a condition as deplorable as Alexander's conquered countries after they were divided amongst his victorious military captains."

In pursuance of a joint resolution of the Legislature of 1850, a block of native marble was procured and forwarded to Washington, to be placed in the monument then in the course of erection at the National Capital in memory of George Washington. In the absence of any legislative instruction concerning the inscription upon this emblem of Indiana's loyalty, Gov. Wright ordered the following words to be inscribed upon it: INDIANA KNOWS NO NORTH, NO SOUTH, NOTHING BUT THE UNION. Within a dozen years thereafter this noble State demonstrated to the world her loyalty to the Union and the principles of freedom by the sacrifice of blood and treasure which she made. In keeping with this sentiment Gov. Wright indorsed the compromise measures of Congress on the slavery question, remarking in his message that "Indiana takes her stand in the ranks, not of Southern destiny, nor yet of



LAW-LE-WAS-I-KAW, THE SHAWNEE PROPHET.



Northern destiny: she plants herself on the basis of the Constitution and takes her stand in the ranks of American destiny."

#### FIFTEENTH AMENDMENT.

At the session of the Legislature in January, 1869, the subject of ratifying the fifteenth amendment to the Federal Constitution, allowing negro suffrage, came up with such persistency that neither party dared to undertake any other business lest it be checkmated in some way, and being at a dead lock on this matter, they adjourned in March without having done much important business. The Democrats, as well as a portion of the conservative Republicans, opposed its consideration strongly on the ground that it would be unfair to vote on the question until the people of the State had had an opportunity of expressing their views at the polls; but most of the Republicans resolved to push the measure through, while the Democrats resolved to resign in a body and leave the Legislature without a quorum. Accordingly, on March 4, 17 Senators and 36 Representatives resigned, leaving both houses without a quorum.

As the early adjournment of the Legislature left the benevolent institutions of the State unprovided for, the Governor convened that body in extra session as soon as possible, and after the necessary appropriations were made, on the 19th of May the fifteenth amendment came up; but in anticipation of this the Democratic members had all resigned and claimed that there was no quorum present. There was a quorum, however, of Senators in office, though some of them refused to vote, declaring that they were no longer Senators; but the president of that body decided that as he had not been informed of their resignation by the Governor, they were still members. A vote was taken and the ratifying resolution was adopted. When the resolution came up in the House, the chair decided that, although the Democratic members had resigned, there was a quorum of the *de facto* members present, and the House proceeded to pass the resolution. This decision of the chair was afterward sustained by the Supreme Court.

At the next regular session of the Legislature, in 1871, the Democrats undertook to repeal the ratification, and the Republican members resigned to prevent it. The Democrats, as the Republicans did on the previous occasion, proceeded to pass their resolution of repeal; but while the process was under way, before the House Committee had time to report on the matter, 34 Republican members resigned, thereby preventing its passage and putting a stop to further legislation.

## THE WAR FOR THE UNION.

On the fourth day of March, 1861, after the most exciting and momentous political campaign known in the history of this country, Abraham Lincoln—America's martyred President—was inaugurated Chief Magistrate of the United States. This fierce contest was principally sectional, and as the announcement was flashed over the telegraph wires that the Republican Presidential candidate had been elected, it was hailed by the South as a justifiable pretext for dissolving the Union. Said Jefferson Davis in a speech at Jackson, Miss., prior to the election, "If an abolitionist be chosen President of the United States you will have presented to you the question whether you will permit the government to pass into the hands of your avowed and implacable enemies. Without pausing for an answer, I will state my own position to be that such a result would be a species of revolution by which the purpose of the Government would be destroyed, and the observances of its mere forms entitled to no respect. In that event, in such manner as should be most expedient, I should deem it your duty to provide for your safety outside of the Union." Said another Southern politician, when speaking on the same subject, "We shall fire the Southern heart, instruct the Southern mind, give courage to each, and at the proper moment, by one organized, concerted action, we can precipitate the Cotton States into a revolution." To disrupt the Union and form a government which recognized the absolute supremacy of the white population and the perpetual bondage of the black was what they deemed freedom from the galling yoke of a Republican administration.

### ABRAHAM LINCOLN DID NOT SEEK THE PRESIDENCY.

Hon. Rufus W. Miles, of Illinois, sat on the floor by the side of Abraham Lincoln in the Library-room of the Capitol, in Springfield, at the secret caucus meeting, held in January, 1859, when Mr. Lincoln's name was first spoken of in caucus as candidate for President. When a gentleman, in making a short speech, said, "We are going to bring Abraham Lincoln out as a candidate for President," Mr. Lincoln at once arose to his feet, and exclaimed, "For God's sake, let me alone! I have suffered enough!" This was soon after he had been defeated in the Legislature for United States Senate by Stephen A. Douglas, and only those who are



intimate with that important and unparalleled contest can appreciate the full force and meaning of these expressive words of the martyred President. They were spontaneous, and prove beyond a shadow of doubt that Abraham Lincoln did not seek the high position of President. Nor did he use any trickery or chicanery to obtain it. But his expressed wish was not to be complied with; our beloved country needed a savior and a martyr, and Fate had decreed that he should be the victim. After Mr. Lincoln was elected President, Mr. Miles sent him an eagle's quill, with which the chief magistrate wrote his first inaugural address. The letter written by Mr. Miles to the President, and sent with the quill, which was two feet in length, is such a jewel of eloquence and prophecy that it should be given a place in history:

PERSIFER, December 21, 1860.

HON. A. LINCOLN :

*Dear Sir* :—Please accept the eagle quill I promised you, by the hand of our Representative, A. A. Smith. The bird from whose wing the quill was taken, was shot by John F. Dillon, in Persifer township, Knox Co., Ills., in Feb., 1857. Having heard that James Buchanan was furnished with an eagle quill to write his Inaugural with, and believing that in 1860, a Republican would be elected to take his place, I determined to save this quill and present it to the fortunate man, whoever he might be. Reports tell us that the bird which furnished Buchanan's quill was a captured bird,—fit emblem of the man that used it; but the bird from which this quill was taken, yielded the quill only with his life,—fit emblem of the man who is expected to use it, for true Republicans believe that you would not think life worth the keeping after the surrender of principle. Great difficulties surround you; traitors to their country have threatened your life; and should you be called upon to surrender it at the post of duty, your memory will live forever in the heart of every freeman; and that is a grander monument than can be built of brick or marble.

"For if hearts may not our memories keep,  
Oblivion haste each vestige sweep,  
And let our memories end."

Yours Truly,

R. W. MILES.

#### STATES SECEDING.

At the time of President Lincoln's accession to power, several members of the Union claimed they had withdrawn from it, and styling themselves the "Confederate States of America," organized a separate government. The house was indeed divided against itself, but it should not fall, nor should it long continue divided, was the hearty, determined response of every loyal heart in the nation. The accursed institution of human slavery was the primary cause for this dissolution of the American Union. Doubtless other agencies served to intensify the hostile feelings which existed between the Northern and Southern portions

of our country, but their remote origin could be traced to this great national evil. Had Lincoln's predecessor put forth a timely, energetic effort, he might have prevented the bloody war our nation was called to pass through. On the other hand every aid was given the rebels; every advantage and all the power of the Government was placed at their disposal, and when Illinois' honest son took the reins of the Republic he found Buchanan had been a traitor to his trust, and given over to the South all available means of war.

#### THE FALL OF SUMTER.

On the 12th day of April, 1861, the rebels, who for weeks had been erecting their batteries upon the shore, after demanding of Major Anderson a surrender, opened fire upon Fort Sumter. For thirty-four hours an incessant cannonading was continued; the fort was being seriously injured; provisions were almost gone, and Major Anderson was compelled to haul down the stars and stripes. That dear old flag which had seldom been lowered to a foreign foe by rebel hands was now trailed in the dust. The first blow of the terrible conflict which summoned vast armies into the field, and moistened the soil of a nation in fraternal blood and tears, had been struck. The gauntlet thus thrown down by the attack on Sumter by the traitors of the South was accepted—not, however, in the spirit with which insolence meets insolence—but with a firm, determined spirit of patriotism and love of country. The duty of the President was plain under the constitution and the laws, and above and beyond all, the people from whom all political power is derived, demanded the suppression of the Rebellion, and stood ready to sustain the authority of their representative and executive officers. Promptly did the new President issue a proclamation calling for his countrymen to join with him to defend their homes and their country, and vindicate her honor. This call was made April 14, two days after Sumter was first fired upon, and was for 75,000 men. On the 15th, the same day he was notified, Gov. Yates issued his proclamation convening the Legislature. He also ordered the organization of six regiments. Troops were in abundance, and the call was no sooner made than filled. Patriotism thrilled and vibrated and pulsated through every heart. The farm, the workshop, the office, the pulpit, the bar, the bench, the college, the school-house,—every calling offered its best men, their lives and their fortunes, in defense of the Government's honor and unity.

Bitter words spoken in moments of political heat were forgotten and forgiven, and joining hands in a common cause, they repeated the oath of America's soldier-statesman: "*By the Great Eternal, the Union must and shall be preserved.*" The honor, the very life and glory of the nation was committed to the stern arbitrament of the sword, and soon the tramp of armed men, the clash of musketry and the heavy boom of artillery reverberated throughout the continent; rivers of blood saddened by tears of mothers, wives, sisters, daughters and sweethearts flowed from the lakes to the gulf, but a nation was saved. The sacrifice was great, but the Union was preserved.

#### A VAST ARMY RAISED IN ELEVEN DAYS.

In July and August of 1862 the President called for 600,000 men—our quota of which was 52,296—and gave until August 18 as the limits in which the number might be raised by volunteering, after which a draft would be ordered. The State had already furnished 17,000 in excess of her quota, and it was first thought this number would be deducted from the present requisition, but that could not be done. But thirteen days were granted to enlist this vast army, which had to come from the farmers and mechanics. The former were in the midst of harvest, but, inspired by love of country, over 50,000 of them left their harvests ungathered, their tools and their benches, the plows in their furrows, turning their backs on their homes, and before eleven days had expired the demands of the Government were met and both quotas filled.

The war went on, and call followed call, until it began to look as if there would not be men enough in all the Free States to crush out and subdue the monstrous war traitors had inaugurated. But to every call for either men or money there was a willing and ready response. And it is a boast of the people that, had the supply of men fallen short, there were women brave enough, daring enough, patriotic enough, to have offered themselves as sacrifices on their country's altar. On the 21st of December, 1864, the last call for troops was made. It was for 300,000. In consequence of an imperfect enrollment of the men subject to military duty, it became evident, ere this call was made, that Indiana, was furnishing thousands of men more than what her quota would have been, had it been correct. So glaring had this disproportion become, that under this call the quota of some districts exceeded the number of able-bodied men in them.

The people were liberal as well as patriotic; and while the men were busy enlisting, organizing and equipping companies, the ladies were no less active, and the noble, generous work performed by their tender, loving hands deserves mention along with the bravery, devotion and patriotism of their brothers upon the battle-field.

The continued need of money to obtain the comforts and necessities for the sick and wounded of our army suggested to the loyal women of the North many and various devices for the raising of funds. Every city, town and village had its fair, festival, picnic, excursion, concert, which netted more or less to the cause of hospital relief, according to the population of the place and the amount of energy and patriotism displayed on such occasions. Especially was this characteristic of our own fair State, and scarcely a hamlet within its borders which did not send something from its stores to hospital or battle-field, and in the larger towns and cities were well-organized soldiers' aid societies, working systematically and continuously from the beginning of the war till its close.

#### SHERMAN'S MARCH TO THE SEA.

On the 15th of November, 1864, after the destruction of Atlanta, and the railroads behind him, Sherman, with his army, began his march to the sea-coast. The almost breathless anxiety with which his progress was watched by the loyal hearts of the nation, and the trembling apprehension with which it was regarded by all who hoped for rebel success, indicated this as one of the most remarkable events of the war; and so it proved. Of Sherman's army, 45 regiments of infantry, three companies of artillery, and one of cavalry were from this State. Lincoln answered all rumors of Sherman's defeat with, "It is impossible; there is a mighty sight of fight in 100,000 Western men."

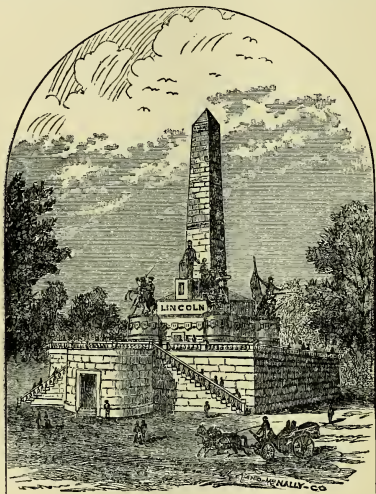
#### CHARACTER OF ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

One other name from the West comes up in all minds, embalmed in all hearts, that must have the supreme place in this sketch of our glory and of our nation's honor: that name is Abraham Lincoln. The analysis of Mr. Lincoln's character is difficult on account of its symmetry. In this age we look with admiration at his uncompromising honesty; and well we may, for this saved us. Thousands throughout the length and breadth of our country, who knew him only as "Honest Old Abe," voted for him on that account; and wisely did they choose, for no other man could have carried us through the fearful night of war. When his plans were too vast for our comprehension, and his faith in the cause too sub-

lime for our participation; when it was all night about us, and all dread before us, and all sad and desolate behind us; when not one ray shone upon our cause; when traitors were haughty and exultant at the South, and fierce and blasphemous at the North; when the loyal men seemed almost in the minority; when the stoniest heart quailed, the bravest cheek paled; when generals were defeating each other for place, and contractors were leeching out the very heart's blood of the republic; when everything else had failed us, we looked at this calm, patient man standing like a rock in the storm, and said, "Mr. Lincoln is honest, and we can trust him still." Holding to this single point with the energy of faith and despair, we held together, and under God he brought us through to victory. His practical wisdom made him the wonder of all lands. With such certainty did Mr. Lincoln follow causes to their ultimate effects, that his foresight of contingencies seemed almost prophetic. He is radiant with all the great virtues, and his memory will shed a glory upon this age that will fill the eyes of men as they look into history. Other men have excelled him in some points; but, taken at all points, he stands head and shoulders above every other man of 6,000 years. An administrator, he saved the nation in the perils of unparalleled civil war; a statesman, he justified his measures by their success; a philanthropist, he gave liberty to one race and salvation to another; a moralist, he bowed from the summit of human power to the foot of the cross; a mediator, he exercised mercy under the most absolute obedience to law; a leader, he was no partisan; a commander, he was untainted with blood; a ruler in desperate times, he was unsullied with crime; a man, he has left no word of passion, no thought of malice, no trick of craft, no act of jealousy, no purpose of selfish ambition. Thus perfected, without a model and without a peer, he was dropped into these troubled years to adorn and embellish all that is good and all that is great in our humanity, and to present to all coming time the representative of the divine idea of free government. It is not too much to say that away down in the future, when the republic has fallen from its niche in the wall of time; when the great war itself shall have faded out in the distance like a mist on the horizon; when the Anglo-Saxon shall be spoken only by the tongue of the stranger, then the generations looking this way shall see the great President as the supreme figure in this vortex of history.

## THE WAR ENDED—THE UNION RESTORED.

The rebellion was ended with the surrender of Lee and his army, and Johnson and his command in April, 1865. Our armies at the time were up to their maximum strength, never so formidable, never so invincible; and, until recruiting ceased by order of Secretary Stanton, were daily strengthening. The necessity, however,



LINCOLN MONUMENT AT SPRINGFIELD.

for so vast and formidable numbers ceased with the disbanding of the rebel forces, which had for more than four years disputed the supremacy of the Government over its domain. And now the joyful and welcome news was to be borne to the victorious legions that their work was ended in triumph, and they were to be permitted "to see homes and friends once more."

## INDIANA IN THE WAR.

The events of the earlier years of this State have been reviewed down to that period in the nation's history when the Republic demanded a first sacrifice from the newly erected States; to the time when the very safety of the glorious heritage, bequeathed by the fathers as a rich legacy, was threatened with a fate worse than death—a life under laws that harbored the slave—a civil defiance of the first principles of the Constitution.

Indiana was among the first to respond to the summons of patriotism, and register itself on the national roll of honor, even as she was among the first to join in that song of joy which greeted a Republic made doubly glorious within a century by the dual victory which won liberty for itself, and next bestowed the precious boon upon the colored slave.

The fall of Fort Sumter was a signal for the uprising of the State. The news of the calamity was flashed to Indianapolis on the 14th of April, 1861, and early the next morning the electric wire brought the welcome message to Washington:—

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT OF INDIANA, }  
INDIANAPOLIS, April 15, 1861. }

TO ABRAHAM LINCOLN, *President of the United States*:—On behalf of the State of Indiana, I tender to you for the defense of the Nation, and to uphold the authority of the Government, ten thousand men.

OLIVER P. MORTON,  
Governor of Indiana.

This may be considered the first official act of Governor Morton, who had just entered on the duties of his exalted position. The State was in an almost helpless condition, and yet the faith of the "War Governor" was prophetic, when, after a short consultation with the members of the Executive Council, he relied on the fidelity of ten thousand men and promised their services to the Protectorate at Washington. This will be more apparent when the military condition of the State at the beginning of 1861 is considered. At that time the armories contained less than five hundred stand of serviceable small arms, eight pieces of caannon which might be useful in a museum of antiquities, with sundry weapons which would merely do credit to the aborigines of one hundred years ago. The financial condition of the State was even worse than the military.

The sum of \$10,368.58 in trust funds was the amount of cash in the hands of the Treasurer, and this was, to all intents and purposes unavailable to meet the emergency, since it could not be devoted to the military requirements of the day. This state of affairs was dispiriting in the extreme, and would doubtless have militated against the ultimate success of any other man than Morton; yet he overleaped every difficulty, nor did the fearful realization of Floyd's treason, discovered during his visit to Washington, damp his indomitable courage and energy, but with rare persistence he urged the claims of his State, and for his exertions was requited with an order for five thousand muskets. The order was not executed until hostilities were actually entered upon, and consequently for some days succeeding the publication of the President's proclamation the people labored under a feeling of terrible anxiety mingled with uncertainty, amid the confusion which followed the criminal negligence that permitted the disbandment of the magnificent *corps d' armee* (51,000 men) of 1832 two years later in 1834. Great numbers of the people maintained their equanimity with the result of beholding within a brief space of time every square mile of their State represented by soldiers prepared to fight to the bitter end in defense of cherished institutions, and for the extension of the principle of human liberty to all States and classes within the limits of the threatened Union. This, their zeal, was not animated by hostility to the slave holders of the Southern States, but rather by a fraternal spirit, akin to that which urges the eldest brother to correct the persistent follies of his juniors, and thus lead them from crime to the maintenance of family honor; in this correction, to draw them away from all that was cruel, diabolical and inhuman in the Republic, to all that is gentle, holy and sublime therein. Many of the raw troops were not only animated by a patriotic feeling, but also by that beautiful idealization of the poet, who in his unconscious Republicanism, said:

"I would not have a slave to till my ground,  
To carry me, to fan me while I sleep,  
And tremble when I wake, for all the wealth  
That sinews bought and sold have ever earned  
No: dear as freedom is—and, in my heart's  
Just estimation, prized above all price—  
I had much rather be myself the slave,  
And wear the bonds, than fasten them on him."

Thus animated, it is not a matter for surprise to find the first call to arms issued by the President, and calling for 75,000 men,



answered nobly by the people of Indiana. The quota of troops to be furnished by the State on the first call was 4,683 men for three years' service from April 15, 1860. On the 16th of April, Governor Morton issued his proclamation calling on all citizens of the State, who had the welfare of the Republic at heart, to organize themselves into six regiments in defense of their rights, and in opposition to the varied acts of rebellion, charged by him against the Southern Confederates. To this end, the Hon. Lewis Wallace, a soldier of the Mexican campaign was appointed Adjutant-General, Col. Thomas A. Morris of the United States Military Academy, Quartermaster-General, and Isaiah Mansur, a merchant of Indianapolis, Commissary-General. These general officers converted the grounds and buildings of the State Board of Agriculture into a military headquarters, and designated the position Camp Morton, as the beginning of the many honors which were to follow the popular Governor throughout his future career. Now the people, imbued with confidence in their Government and leaders, rose to the grandeur of American freemen, and with an enthusiasm never equaled hitherto, flocked to the standard of the nation; so that within a few days (19th April) 2,400 men were ranked beneath their regimental banners, until as the official report testifies, the anxious question, passing from mouth to mouth, was, "Which of us will be allowed to go?" It seemed as if Indiana was about to monopolize the honors of the period, and place the 75,000 men demanded of the Union by the President, at his disposition. Even now under the genial sway of guaranteed peace, the features of Indiana's veterans flush with righteous pride when these days—remembrances of heroic sacrifice—are named, and freemen, still unborn, will read their history only to be blessed and glorified in the possession of such truly, noble progenitors. Nor were the ladies of the State unmindful of their duties. Everywhere they partook of the general enthusiasm, and made it practical so far as in their power, by embroidering and presenting standards and regimental colors, organizing aid and relief societies, and by many other acts of patriotism and humanity inherent in the high nature of woman.

During the days set apart by the military authorities for the organization of the regiments, the financiers of the State were engaged in the reception of munificent grants of money from private citizens, while the money merchants within and without the State offered large loans to the recognized Legislature without even imposing a condition of payment. This most practical generosity

strengthened the hands of the Executive, and within a very few days Indiana had passed the crucial test, recovered some of her military prestige lost in 1834, and so was prepared to vie with the other and wealthier States in making sacrifices for the public welfare.

On the 20th of April, Messrs. I. S. Dobbs and Alvis D. Gall received their appointments as Medical Inspectors of the Division, while Major T. J. Wood arrived at headquarters from Washington to receive the newly organized regiments into the service of the Union. At the moment this formal proceeding took place, Morton, unable to restrain the patriotic ardor of the people, telegraphed to the capitol that he could place six regiments of infantry at the disposal of the General Government within six days, if such a proceeding were acceptable; but in consequence of the wires being cut between the State and Federal capitol, no answer came. Taking advantage of the little doubt which may have had existence in regard to future action in the matter and in the absence of general orders, he gave expression to an intention of placing the volunteers in camp, and in his message to the Legislature, who assembled three days later, he clearly laid down the principle of immediate action and strong measures, recommending a vote of \$1,000,000 for the reorganization of the volunteers, for the purchase of arms and supplies, and for the punishment of treason. The message was received most enthusiastically. The assembly recognized the great points made by the Governor, and not only yielded to them *in toto*, but also made the following grand appropriations:

General military purposes.....	\$1,000,000
Purchase of arms.....	500,000
Contingent military expenses.....	100,000
Organization and support of militia for two years.....	140,000

These appropriations, together with the laws enacted during the session of the Assembly, speak for the men of Indiana. The celerity with which these laws were put in force, the diligence and economy exercised by the officers, entrusted with their administration, and that systematic genius, under which all the machinery of Government seemed to work in harmony,—all, all, tended to make for the State a spring-time of noble deeds, when seeds might be cast along her fertile fields and in the streets of her villages of industry to grow up at once and blossom in the ray of fame, and after to bloom throughout the ages. Within three days after the opening of the extra session of the Legislature (27th April) six new regiments were organized, and commissioned for three months' service. These reg-

iments, notwithstanding the fact that the first six regiments were already mustered into the general service, were known as "The First Brigade, Indiana Volunteers," and with the simple object of making the way of the future student of a brilliant history clear, were numbered respectively

Sixth Regiment,	commanded by	Col. T. T. Crittenden.
Seventh	"	" " Ebenezer Dumont.
Eighth	"	" " W. P. Benton.
Ninth	"	" " R. H. Milroy.
Tenth	"	" " T. T. Reynolds.
Eleventh	"	" " Lewis Wallace.

The idea of these numbers was suggested by the fact that the military representation of Indiana in the Mexican Campaign was one brigade of five regiments, and to observe consecutiveness the regiments comprised in the first division of volunteers were thus numbered, and the entire force placed under Brigadier General T. A. Morris, with the following staff: John Love, Major; Cyrus C. Hines, Aid-de-camp; and J. A. Stein, Assistant Adjutant General. To follow the fortunes of these volunteers through all the vicissitudes of war would prove a special work; yet their valor and endurance during their first term of service deserved a notice of even more value than that of the historian, since a commander's opinion has to be taken as the basis upon which the chronicler may expatiate. Therefore the following dispatch, dated from the headquarters of the Army of Occupation, Beverly Camp, W. Virginia, July 21, 1861, must be taken as one of the first evidences of their utility and valor:—

"GOVERNOR O. P. MORTON, *Indianapolis, Indiana.*

GOVERNOR:—I have directed the three months' regiments from Indiana to move to Indianapolis, there to be mustered out and reorganized for three years' service.

I cannot permit them to return to you without again expressing my high appreciation of the distinguished valor and endurance of the Indiana troops, and my hope that but a short time will elapse before I have the pleasure of knowing that they are again ready for the field. \* \* \* \* \*

I am, very respectfully, your obedient servant,  
 GEORGE B. McCLELLAN,  
*Major-General, U. S. A.*

On the return of the troops to Indianapolis, July 29, Brigadier Morris issued a lengthy, logical and well-deserved congratulatory address, from which one paragraph may be extracted to characterize

the whole. After passing a glowing eulogium on their military qualities and on that unexcelled gallantry displayed at Laurel Hill, Phillipi and Carrick's Ford, he says:—

"Soldiers! You have now returned to the friends whose prayers went with you to the field of strife. They welcome you with pride and exultation. Your State and country acknowledge the value of your labors. May your future career be as your past has been,—honorable to yourselves and serviceable to your country."

The six regiments forming Morris' brigade, together with one composed of the surplus volunteers, for whom there was no regiment in April, now formed a division of seven regiments, all reorganized for three years' service, between the 20th August and 20th September, with the exception of the new or 12th, which was accepted for one year's service from May 11th, under command of Colonel John M. Wallace, and reorganized May 17, 1862, for three years' service under Col. W. H. Link, who, with 172 officers and men, received their mortal wounds during the Richmond (Kentucky) engagement, three months after its reorganization.

The 13TH REGIMENT, under Col. Jeremiah Sullivan, was mustered into the United States in 1861 and joined Gen. McClellan's command at Rich Mountain on the 10th July. The day following it was present under Gen. Rosencrans and lost eight men killed; three successive days it was engaged under Gen. I. I. Reynolds, and won its laurels at Cheat Mountain summit, where it participated in the decisive victory over Gen. Lee.

The 14TH REGIMENT, organized in 1861 for one year's service, and reorganized on the 7th of June at Terre Haute for three years' service. Commanded by Col. Kimball and showing a muster roll of 1,134 men, it was one of the finest, as it was the first, three years' regiment organized in the State, with varying fortunes attached to its never ending round of duty from Cheat Mountain, September, 1861, to Morton's Ford in 1864, and during the movement South in May of that year to the last of its labors, the battle of Cold Harbor.

The 15TH REGIMENT, reorganized at La Fayette 14th June, 1861, under Col. G. D. Wagner, moved on Rich Mountain on the 11th of July in time to participate in the complete rout of the enemy. On the promotion of Col. Wagner, Lieutenant-Col. G. A. Wood became Colonel of the regiment, November, 1862, and during the first days of January, 1863, took a distinguished part in the severe action of Stone River. From this period down to the battle of Mission Ridge it was in a series of destructive engagements, and was,

after enduring terrible hardships, ordered to Chattanooga, and thence to Indianapolis, where it was mustered out the 18th June, 1864,—four days after the expiration of its term of service.

The 16TH REGIMENT, organized under Col. P. A. Hackleman at Richmond for one year's service, after participating in many minor military events, was mustered out at Washington, D.C., on the 14th of May, 1862. Col. Hackleman was killed at the battle of Inka, and Lieutenant-Col. Thomas I. Lucas succeeded to the command. It was reorganized at Indianapolis for three years' service, May 27, 1862, and took a conspicuous part in all the brilliant engagements of the war down to June, 1865, when it was mustered out at New Orleans. The survivors, numbering 365 rank and file, returned to Indianapolis the 10th of July amid the rejoicing of the populace.

The 17TH REGIMENT was mustered into service at Indianapolis the 12th of June, 1861, for three years, under Col. Hascall, who on being promoted Brigadier General in March, 1862, left the Colonelcy to devolve on Lieutenant Colonel John T. Wilder. This regiment participated in the many exploits of Gen. Reynold's army from Green Brier in 1862, to Macón in 1865, under Gen. Wilson. Returning to Indianapolis the 16th of August, in possession of a brilliant record, the regiment was disbanded.

The 18TH REGIMENT, under Colonel Thomas Pattison, was organized at Indianapolis, and mustered into service on the 16th of August, 1861. Under Gen. Pope it gained some distinction at Blackwater, and succeeded in retaining a reputation made there, by its gallantry at Pea Ridge, February, 1862, down to the moment when it planted the regimental flag on the arsenal of Augusta, Georgia, where it was disbanded August 28, 1865.

The 19TH REGIMENT, mustered into three years' service at the State capital July 29, 1861, was ordered to join the army of the Potomac, and reported its arrival at Washington, August 9. Two days later it took part in the battle of Lewinsville, under Colonel Solomon Meredith. Occupying Falls Church in September, 1861, it continued to maintain a most enviable place of honor on the military roll until its consolidation with the 20th Regiment, October, 1864, under Colonel William Orr, formerly its Lieutenant Colonel.

The 20TH REGIMENT of La Fayette was organized in July, 1861, mustered into three years' service at Indianapolis on the 22d of the same month, and reached the front at Cockeysville, Maryland, twelve days later. Throughout all its brilliant actions from Hatteras Bank, on the 4th of October, to Clover Hill, 9th of April, 1865,

including the saving of the United States ship *Congress*, at Newport News, it added daily some new name to its escutcheon. This regiment was mustered out at Louisville in July, 1865, and returning to Indianapolis was welcomed by the great war Governor of their State.

The 21ST REGIMENT was mustered into service under Colonel I. W. McMillan, July 24, 1861, and reported at the front the third day of August. It was the first regiment to enter New Orleans. The fortunes of this regiment were as varied as its services, so that its name and fame, grown from the blood shed by its members, are destined to live and flourish. In December, 1863, the regiment was reorganized, and on the 19th February, 1864, many of its veterans returned to their State, where Morton received them with that spirit of proud gratitude which he was capable of showing to those who deserve honor for honors won.

The 22D REGIMENT, under Colonel Jeff. C. Davis, left Indianapolis the 15th of August, and was attached to Fremont's Corps at St. Louis on the 17th. From the day it moved to the support of Colonel Mulligan at Lexington, to the last victory, won under General Sherman at Bentonville, on the 19th of March, 1865, it gained a high military reputation. After the fall of Johnston's southern army, this regiment was mustered out, and arrived at Indianapolis on the 16th June.

The 23D BATTALION, commanded by Colonel W. L. Sanderson, was mustered in at New Albany, the 29th July, 1861, and moved to the front early in August. From its unfortunate marine experiences before Fort Henry to Bentonville it won unusual honors, and after its disbandment at Louisville, returned to Indianapolis July 24, 1865, where Governor Morton and General Sherman reviewed and complimented the gallant survivors.

The 24TH BATTALION, under Colonel Alvin P. Hovey, was mustered at Vincennes the 31st of July, 1861. Proceeding immediately to the front it joined Fremont's command, and participated under many Generals in important affairs during the war. Three hundred and ten men and officers returned to their State in August, 1865, and were received with marked honors by the people and Executive.

The 25TH REGIMENT, of Evansville mustered into service there for three years under Col. J. C. Veatch, arrived at St. Louis on the 26th of August, 1861. During the war this regiment was present at 18 battles and skirmishes, sustaining therein a loss of 352 men

and officers. Mustered out at Louisville, July 17, 1865, it returned to Indianapolis on the 21st amid universal rejoicing.

The 26TH BATTALION, under W. M. Wheatley, left Indianapolis for the front the 7th of September, 1861, and after a brilliant campaign under Fremont, Grant, Heron and Smith, may be said to disband the 18th of September, 1865, when the non-veterans and recruits were reviewed by Morton at the State capital.

The 27th REGIMENT, under Col. Silas Colgrove, moved from Indianapolis to Washington City, September 15th, 1861, and in October was allied to Gen. Banks' army. From Winchester Heights, the 9th of March 1862, through all the affairs of General Sherman's campaign, it acted a gallant and faithful part, and was disbanded immediately after returning to their State.

The 28TH OR 1ST CAVALRY was mustered into service at Evansville on the 20th of August, 1861, under Col. Conrad Baker. From the skirmish at Ironton, on the 12th of September, wherein three companies under Col. Gavin captured a position held by a few rebels, to the battle of the Wilderness, the First Cavalry performed prodigies of valor. In June and July, 1865, the troops were mustered out at Indianapolis.

The 29TH BATTALION of La Porte, under Col. J. F. Miller, left on the 5th of October, 1861, and reaching Camp Nevin, Kentucky, on the 9th, was allied to Rosseau's Brigade, serving with McCook's division at Shiloh, with Buell's army in Alabama, Tennessee and Kentucky, with Rosencrans at Murfreesboro, at Decatur, Alabama, and at Dalton, Georgia. The Twenty-ninth won many laurels, and had its Colonel promoted to the rank of Brigadier General. This officer was succeeded in the command by Lieutenant-Col. D. M. Dunn.

The 30TH REGIMENT of Fort Wayne, under Col. Sion S. Bass, proceeded to the front *via* Indianapolis, and joined General Rosseau at Camp Nevin on the 9th of October, 1861. At Shiloh, Col. Bass received a mortal wound, and died a few days later at Paducah, leaving the Colonelcy to devolve upon Lieutenant-Col. J. B. Dodge. In October 1865, it formed a battalion of General Sheridan's army of observation in Texas.

The 31st REGIMENT, organized at Terre Haute, under Col. Charles Cruft, in September 1861, was mustered in, and left in a few days for Kentucky. Present at the reduction of Fort Donelson on the 13th, 14th, and 15th of February, 1862, its list of killed and wounded proves its desperate fighting qualities. The organization

was subjected to many changes, but in all its phases maintained a fair fame won on many battle fields. Like the former regiment, it passed into Gen. Sheridan's Army of Observation, and held the district of Green Lake, Texas.

The 32D REGIMENT OF GERMAN INFANTRY, under Col. August Willich, organized at Indianapolis, mustered on the 24th of August, 1861, served with distinction throughout the campaign. Col. Willich was promoted to the rank of Brigadier-General, and Lieut.-Col. Henry Von Trebra commissioned to act, under whose command the regiment passed into General Sheridan's Army, holding the post of Salado Creek, until the withdrawal of the corps of observation in Texas.

The 33D REGIMENT of Indianapolis possesses a military history of no small proportions. The mere facts that it was mustered in under Col. John Coburn, the 16th of September, won a series of distinctions throughout the war district and was mustered out at Louisville, July 21, 1865, taken with its name as one of the most powerful regiments engaged in the war, are sufficient here.

The 34TH BATTALION, organized at Anderson on the 16th September, 1861, under Col. Ashbury Steele, appeared among the investing battalions before New Madrid on the 30th of March, 1862. From the distinguished part it took in that siege, down to the 13th of May, 1865, when at Palmetto Rancho, near Palo Alto, it fought for hours against fearful odds the last battle of the war for the Union. Afterwards it marched 250 miles up the Rio Grande, and was the first regiment to reoccupy the position, so long in Southern hands, of Ringold barracks. In 1865 it garrisoned Beaconsville as part of the Army of Observation.

The 35TH OR FIRST IRISH REGIMENT, was organized at Indianapolis, and mustered into service on the 11th of December, 1861, under Col. John C. Walker. At Nashville, on the 22d of May, 1862, it was joined by the organized portion of the Sixty-first or Second Irish Regiment, and unassigned recruits. Col. Mullen now became Lieut.-Colonel of the 35th, and shortly after, its Colonel. From the pursuit of Gen. Bragg through Kentucky and the affair at Perryville on the 8th of October, 1862, to the terrible hand to hand combat at Kenesaw mountain, on the night of the 20th of June, 1864, and again from the conclusion of the Atlanta campaign to September, 1865, with Gen. Sheridan's army, when it was mustered out, it won for itself a name of reckless daring and unsurpassed gallantry.



The 36TH REGIMENT, of Richmond, Ind., under Col. William Grose, mustered into service for three years on the 16th of September, 1861, went immediately to the front, and shared the fortunes of the Army of the Ohio until the 27th of February, 1862, when a forward movement led to its presence on the battle-field of Shiloh. Following up the honors won at Shiloh, it participated in some of the most important actions of the war, and was, in October, 1865, transferred to Gen. Sheridan's army. Col. Grose was promoted in 1864 to the position of Brigadier-General, and the Colonelcy devolved on Oliver H. P. Carey, formerly Lieut.-Colonel of the regiment.

The 37TH BATTALION, of Lawrenceburg, commanded by Col. Geo. W. Hazzard, organized the 18th of September, 1861, left for the seat of war early in October. From the eventful battle of Stone river, in December, 1862, to its participation in Sherman's march through Georgia, it gained for itself a splendid reputation. This regiment returned to, and was present at, Indianapolis, on the 30th of July, 1865, where a public reception was tendered to men and officers on the grounds of the Capitol.

The 38TH REGIMENT, under Col. Benjamin F. Scribner, was mustered in at New Albany, on the 18th of September, 1861, and in a few days were *en route* for the front. To follow its continual round of duty, is without the limits of this sketch; therefore, it will suffice to say, that on every well-fought field, at least from February, 1862, until its dissolution, on the 15th of July, 1865, it earned an enviable renown, and drew from Gov. Morton, on returning to Indianapolis the 18th of the same month, a congratulatory address couched in the highest terms of praise.

The 39TH REGIMENT, OR EIGHTH CAVALRY, was mustered in as an infantry regiment, under Col. T. J. Harrison, on the 28th of August, 1861, at the State capital. Leaving immediately for the front it took a conspicuous part in all the engagements up to April, 1863, when it was reorganized as a cavalry regiment. The record of this organization sparkles with great deeds which men will extol while language lives; its services to the Union cannot be over estimated, or the memory of its daring deeds be forgotten by the unhappy people who raised the tumult, which culminated in their second shame.

The 40TH REGIMENT, of Lafayette, under Col. W. C. Wilson, subsequently commanded by Col. J. W. Blake, and again by Col. Henry Leaming, was organized on the 30th of December, 1861, and

at once proceeded to the front, where some time was necessarily spent in the Camp of Instruction at Bardstown, Kentucky. In February, 1862, it joined in Buell's forward movement. During the war the regiment shared in all its hardships, participated in all its honors, and like many other brave commands took service under Gen. Sheridan in his Army of Occupation, holding the post of Port Lavaca, Texas, until peace brooded over the land.

THE 41ST REGIMENT OR SECOND CAVALRY, the first complete regiment of horse ever raised in the State, was organized on the 3d of September, 1861, at Indianapolis, under Col. John A. Bridgland, and December 16 moved to the front. Its first war experience was gained *en route* to Corinth on the 9th of April, 1862, and at Pea Ridge on the 15th. Gallatin, Vinegar Hill, and Perryville, and Talbot Station followed in succession, each battle bringing to the cavalry untold honors. In May, 1864, it entered upon a glorious career under Gen. Sherman in his Atlanta campaign, and again under Gen. Wilson in the raid through Alabama during April, 1865. On the 22d of July, after a brilliant career, the regiment was mustered out at Nashville, and returned at once to Indianapolis for discharge.

THE 42D, under Col J. G. Jones, mustered into service at Evansville, October 9, 1861, and having participated in the principal military affairs of the period, Wartrace, Mission Ridge, Altoona, Kenesaw, Savannah, Charlestown and Bentonville, was discharged at Indianapolis on the 25th of July, 1865.

THE 43D BATTALION was mustered in on the 27th of September, 1861, under Col. George K. Steele, and left Terre Haute *en route* to the front within a few days. Later it was al'ied to Gen. Pope's corps, and afterwards served with Commodore Foote's marines in the reduction of Fort Pillow. It was the first Union regiment to enter Memphis. From that period until the close of the war it was distinguished for its unexcelled qualifications as a military body, and fully deserved the encomiums passed upon it on its return to Indianapolis in March, 1865.

THE 44TH OR THE REGIMENT OF THE 10TH CONGRESSIONAL DISTRICT was organized at Fort Wayne on the 24th of October, 1861, under Col. Hugh B. Reed. Two months later it was ordered to the front, and arriving in Kentucky, was attached to Gen. Cruft's Brigade, then quartered at Calhoun. After years of faithful service it was mustered out at Chattanooga, the 14th of September, 1865.

THE 45TH, OR THIRD CAVALRY, comprised ten companies

organized at different periods and for varied services in 1861-'62, under Colonel Scott Carter and George H. Chapman. The distinguished name won by the Third Cavalry is established in every village within the State. Let it suffice to add that after its brilliant participation in Gen. Sheridan's raid down the James' river canal, it was mustered out at Indianapolis on the 7th of August, 1865.

THE 46TH REGIMENT, organized at Logansport under Colonel Graham N. Fitch, arrived in Kentucky the 16th of February, 1862, and a little later became attached to Gen. Pope's army, then quartered at Commerce. The capture of Fort Pillow, and its career under Generals Curtis, Palmer, Hovey, Gorman, Grant, Sherman, Banks and Burbridge are as truly worthy of applause as ever fell to the lot of a regiment. The command was mustered out at Louisville on the 4th of September, 1865.

THE 47TH was organized at Anderson, under Col. I. R. Slack, early in October, 1862. Arriving at Bardstown, Kentucky, on the 21st of December, it was attached to Gen. Buell's army; but within two months was assigned to Gen. Pope, under whom it proved the first regiment to enter Fort Thompson near New Madrid. In 1864 the command visited Indianapolis on veteran furlough and was enthusiastically received by Governor Morton and the people. Returning to the front it engaged heartily in Gen. Banks' company. In December, Col. Slack received his commission as Brigadier-General, and was succeeded on the regimental command by Col. J. A. McLaughton; at Shreveport under General Heron it received the submission of General Price and his army, and there also was it mustered out of service on the 23d of October, 1865.

THE 48TH REGIMENT, organized at Goshen the 6th of December, 1861, under Col. Norman Eddy, entered on its duties during the siege of Corinth in May, and again in October, 1862. The record of this battalion may be said to be unsurpassed in its every feature, so that the grand ovation extended to the returned soldiers in 1865 at Indianapolis, is not a matter for surprise.

THE 49TH REGIMENT, organized at Jeffersonville, under Col. J. W. Ray, and mustered in on the 21st of November, 1861, for service, left *en route* for the camp at Bardstown. A month later it arrived at the unfortunate camp-ground of Cumberland Ford, where disease carried off a number of gallant soldiers. The regiment, however, survived the dreadful scourge and won its laurels on many

a well-fought field until September, 1865, when it was mustered out at Louisville.

The 50TH REGIMENT, under Col. Cyrus L. Dunham, organized during the month of September, 1861, at Seymour, left *en route* to Bardstown for a course of military instruction. On the 20th of August, 1862, a detachment of the 50th, under Capt. Atkinson, was attacked by Morgan's Cavalry near Edgefield Junction; but the gallant few repulsed their oft-repeated onsets and finally drove them from the field. The regiment underwent many changes in organization, and may be said to muster out on the 10th of September, 1865.

The 51ST REGIMENT, under Col. Abel D. Streight, left Indianapolis on the 14th of December, 1861, for the South. After a short course of instruction at Bardstown, the regiment joined General Buell's and acted with great effect during the campaign in Kentucky and Tennessee. Ultimately it became a participator in the work of the Fourth Corps, or Army of Occupation, and held the post of San Antonio until peace was doubly assured.

The 52D REGIMENT was partially raised at Rushville, and the organization completed at Indianapolis, where it was consolidated with the Railway Brigade, or 56th Regiment, on the 2d of February, 1862. Going to the front immediately after, it served with marked distinction throughout the war, and was mustered out at Montgomery on the 10th of September, 1865. Returning to Indianapolis six days later, it was welcomed by Gov. Morton and a most enthusiastic reception accorded to it.

The 53RD BATTALION was raised at New Albany, and with the addition of recruits raised at Rockport formed a standard regiment, under command of Col. W. Q. Gresham. Its first duty was that of guarding the rebels confined on Camp Morton, but on going to the front it made for itself an enduring name. It was mustered out in July, 1865, and returned to Indianapolis on the 25th of the same month.

The 54TH REGIMENT was raised at Indianapolis on the 10th of June, 1862, for three months' service under Col. D. G. Rose. The succeeding two months saw it in charge of the prisoners at Camp Morton, and in August it was pushed forward to aid in the defense of Kentucky against the Confederate General, Kirby Smith. The remainder of its short term of service was given to the cause. On the muster out of the three months' service regiment it was reorgan-

ized for one year's service and gained some distinction, after which it was mustered out in 1863 at New Orleans.

The 55TH REGIMENT, organized for three months' service, retains the brief history applicable to the first organization of the 54th. It was mustered in on the 16th of June, 1862, under Col. J. R. Mahon, disbanded on the expiration of its term and was not reorganized.

The 56TH REGIMENT, referred to in the sketch of the 52nd, was designed to be composed of railroad men, marshalled under J. M. Smith as Colonel, but owing to the fact that many railroaders had already volunteered into other regiments, Col. Smith's volunteers were incorporated with the 52nd, and this number left blank in the army list.

The 57TH BATTALION, actually organized by two ministers of the gospel,—the Rev. I. W. T. McMullen and Rev. F. A. Hardin, of Richmond, Ind., mustered into service on the 18th of November, 1861, under the former named reverend gentleman as Colonel, who was, however, succeeded by Col. Cyrus C. Haynes, and he in turn by G. W. Leonard, Willis Blanch and John S. McGrath, the latter holding command until the conclusion of the war. The history of this battalion is extensive, and if participation in a number of battles with the display of rare gallantry wins fame, the 57th may rest assured of its possession of this fragile yet coveted prize. Like many other regiments it concluded its military labors in the service of General Sheridan, and held the post of Port Lavaca in conjunction with another regiment until peace dwelt in the land.

The 58TH REGIMENT, of Princeton, was organized there early in October, 1861, and was mustered into service under the Colonelcy of Henry M. Carr. In December it was ordered to join General Buell's army, after which it took a share in the various actions of the war, and was mustered out on the 25th of July, 1865, at Louisville, having gained a place on the roll of honor.

The 59TH BATTALION was raised under a commission issued by Gov. Morton to Jesse I. Alexander, creating him Colonel. Owing to the peculiarities hampering its organization, Col. Alexander could not succeed in having his regiment prepared to muster in before the 17th of February, 1862. However, on that day the equipment was complete, and on the 18th it left *en route* to Commerce, where on its arrival, it was incorporated under General Pope's command. The list of its casualties speaks a history,—no less than 793 men were lost during the campaign. The regiment, after a term char-

acterized by distinguished service, was mustered out at Louisville on the 17th of July, 1865.

The 60TH REGIMENT was partially organized under Lieut.-Col. Richard Owen at Evansville during November 1861, and perfected at Camp Morton during March, 1862. Its first experience was its gallant resistance to Bragg's army investing Munfordsville, which culminated in the unconditional surrender of its first seven companies on the 14th of September. An exchange of prisoners took place in November, which enabled it to join the remaining companies in the field. The subsequent record is excellent, and forms, as it were, a monument to their fidelity and heroism. The main portion of this battalion was mustered out at Indianapolis, on the 21st of March, 1865.

The 61st was partially organized in December, 1861, under Col. B. F. Mullen. The failure of thorough organization on the 22d of May, 1862, led the men and officers to agree to incorporation with the 35th Regiment of Volunteers.

The 62D BATTALION, raised under a commission issued to William Jones, of Rockport, authorizing him to organize this regiment in the First Congressional District was so unsuccessful that consolidation with the 53d Regiment was resolved upon.

The 63D REGIMENT, of Covington, under James McManomy, Commandant of Camp, and J. S. Williams, Adjutant, was partially organized on the 31st of December, 1861, and may be considered on duty from its very formation. After guarding prisoners at Camp Morton and Lafayette, and engaging in battle on Manassas Plains on the 30th of August following, the few companies sent out in February, 1862, returned to Indianapolis to find six new companies raised under the call of July, 1862, ready to embrace the fortunes of the 63d. So strengthened, the regiment went forth to battle, and continued to lead in the paths of honor and fidelity until mustered out in May and June, 1865.

The 64TH REGIMENT failed in organization as an artillery corps; but orders received from the War Department prohibiting the consolidation of independent batteries, put a stop to any further move in the matter. However, an infantry regiment bearing the same number was afterward organized.

The 65TH was mustered in at Princeton and Evansville, in July and August, 1862, under Col. J. W. Foster, and left at once *en route* for the front. The record of this battalion is creditable, not only to its members, but also to the State which claimed it. Its

last action during the war was on the 18th and 20th of February, 1865, at Fort Anderson and Town creek, after which, on the 22d June, it was disbanded at Greensboro.

The 66TH REGIMENT partially organized at New Albany, under Commandant Roger Martin, was ordered to leave for Kentucky on the 19th of August, 1862, for the defense of that State against the incursions of Kirby Smith. After a brilliant career it was mustered out at Washington on the 3d of June, 1865, after which it returned to Indianapolis to receive the thanks of a grateful people.

The 67TH REGIMENT was organized within the Third Congressional District under Col. Frank Emerson, and was ordered to Louisville on the 20th of August, 1862, whence it marched to Munfordville, only to share the same fate with the other gallant regiments engaged against Gen. Bragg's advance. Its roll of honor extends down the years of civil disturbance,—always adding garlands, until Peace called a truce in the fascinating race after fame, and insured a term of rest, wherein its members could think on comrades forever vanished, and temper the sad thought with the sublime memories born of that chivalrous fight for the maintenance and integrity of a great Republic. At Galveston on the 19th of July, 1865, the gallant 67th Regiment was mustered out, and returning within a few days to its State received the enthusiastic ovations of her citizens.

The 68TH REGIMENT, organized at Greensburg under Major Benjamin C. Shaw, was accepted for general service the 19th of August, 1862, under Col. Edward A. King, with Major Shaw as Lieutenant Colonel; on the 25th its arrival at Lebanon was reported and within a few days it appeared at the defense of Munfordville; but sharing in the fate of all the defenders, it surrendered unconditionally to Gen. Bragg and did not participate further in the actions of that year, nor until after the exchange of prisoners in 1863. From this period it may lay claim to an enviable history extending to the end of the war, when it was disembodied.

The 69TH REGIMENT, of Richmond, Ind., under Col. A. Bickle, left for the front on the 20th of August, 1862, and ten days later made a very brilliant stand at Richmond, Kentucky, against the advance of Gen. Kirby Smith, losing in the engagement two hundred and eighteen men and officers together with its liberty. After an exchange of prisoners the regiment was reorganized under Col. T. W. Bennett and took the field in December, 1862, under

Generals Sheldon, Morgan and Sherman of Grant's army. Chickasaw, Vicksburg, Blakely and many other names testify to the valor of the 69th. The remnant of the regiment was in January, 1865, formed into a battalion under Oran Perry, and was mustered out in July following.

The 70TH REGIMENT was organized at Indianapolis on the 12th of August, 1862, under Col. B. Harrison, and leaving for Louisville on the 13th, shared in the honors of Bruce's division at Franklin and Russellville. The record of the regiment is brimful of honor. It was mustered out at Washington, June 8, 1865, and received at Indianapolis with public honors.

The 71ST OR SIXTH CAVALRY was organized as an infantry regiment, at Terre Haute, and mustered into general service at Indianapolis on the 18th of August, 1862, under Lieut.-Col. Melville D. Topping. Twelve days later it was engaged outside Richmond, Kentucky, losing two hundred and fifteen officers and men, including Col. Topping and Major Conklin, together with three hundred and forty-seven prisoners, only 225 escaping death and capture. After an exchange of prisoners the regiment was re-formed under Col. I. Bittle, but on the 28th of December it surrendered to Gen. J. H. Morgan, who attacked its position at Muldragh's Hill with a force of 1,000 Confederates. During September and October, 1863, it was organized as a cavalry regiment, won distinction throughout its career, and was mustered out the 15th of September, 1865, at Murfreesboro.

The 77TH REGIMENT was organized at Lafayette, and left *en route* to Lebanon, Kentucky, on the 17th of August, 1862. Under Col. Miller it won a series of honors, and mustered out at Nashville on the 26th of June, 1865.

The 73RD REGIMENT, under Col. Gilbert Hathaway, was mustered in at South Bend on the 16th of August, 1862, and proceeded immediately to the front. Day's Gap, Crooked Creek, and the high eulogies of Generals Rosencrans and Granger speak its long and brilliant history, nor were the welcoming shouts of a great people and the congratulations of Gov. Morton, tendered to the regiment on its return home, in July, 1865, necessary to sustain its well won reputation.

The 74TH REGIMENT, partially organized at Fort Wayne and made almost complete at Indianapolis, left for the seat of war on the 22d of August, 1862, under Col. Charles W. Chapman. The desperate opposition to Gen. Bragg, and the magnificent defeat of Morgan,



together with the battles of Dallas, Chattahoochie river, Kenesaw and Atlanta, where Lieut. Col. Myron Baker was killed, all bear evidence of its never surpassed gallantry. It was mustered out of service on the 9th of June, 1865, at Washington. On the return of the regiment to Indianapolis, the war Governor and people tendered it special honors, and gave expression to the admiration and regard in which it was held.

The 75TH REGIMENT was organized within the Eleventh Congressional District, and left Wabash, on the 21st of August, 1862, for the front, under Col. I. W. Petit. It was the first regiment to enter Tullahoma, and one of the last engaged in the battles of the Republic. After the submission of Gen. Johnson's army, it was mustered out at Washington, on the 8th of June 1865.

The 76TH BATTALION was solely organized for thirty days' service under Colonel James Gavin, for the purpose of pursuing the rebel guerrillas, who plundered Newburg on the 13th July, 1862. It was organized and equipped within forty-eight hours, and during its term of service gained the name, "The Avengers of Newburg."

The 77TH, OR FOURTH CAVALRY, was organized at the State capital in August, 1862, under Colonel Isaac P. Gray. It carved its way to fame over twenty battlefields, and retired from service at Edgefield, on the 29th June, 1865.

The 79TH REGIMENT was mustered in at Indianapolis on the 2nd September, 1862, under Colonel Fred Knefler. Its history may be termed a record of battles, as the great numbers of battles, from 1862 to the conclusion of hostilities, were participated in by it. The regiment received its discharge on the 11th June, 1865, at Indianapolis. During its continued round of field duty it captured eighteen guns and over one thousand prisoners.

The 80TH REGIMENT was organized within the First Congressional District under Col. C. Denby, and equipped at Indianapolis, when, on the 8th of September, 1862, it left for the front. During its term it lost only two prisoners; but its list of casualties sums up 325 men and officers killed and wounded. The regiment may be said to muster out on the 22nd of June, 1865, at Saulsbury.

The 81ST REGIMENT, of New Albany, under Colonel W. W. Caldwell, was organized on the 29th August, 1862, and proceeded at once to join Buell's headquarters, and join in the pursuit of General Bragg. Throughout the terrific actions of the war its influence was felt, nor did its labors cease until it aided in driving the rebels across the Tennessee. It was disembodied at Nashville

on the 13th June, 1865, and returned to Indianapolis on the 15th, to receive the well-merited congratulations of Governor Morton and the people.

The 82ND REGIMENT, under Colonel Morton C. Hunter, was mustered in at Madison, Ind., on the 30th August, 1862, and leaving immediately for the seat of war, participated in many of the great battles down to the return of peace. It was mustered out at Washington on the 9th June, 1865, and soon returned to its State to receive a grand recognition of its faithful service.

The 83RD REGIMENT, of Lawrenceburg, under Colonel Ben. J. Spooner, was organized in September, 1862, and soon left *en route* to the Mississippi. Its subsequent history, the fact of its being under fire for a total term of 4,800 hours, and its wanderings over 6,285 miles, leave nothing to be said in its defense. Master of a thousand honors, it was mustered out at Louisville, on the 15th July, 1865, and returned home to enjoy a well-merited repose.

The 84TH REGIMENT was mustered in at Richmond, Ind., on the 8th September, 1862, under Colonel Nelson Trusler. Its first military duty was on the defenses of Covington, in Kentucky, and Cincinnati; but after a short time its labors became more congenial, and tended to the great disadvantage of the slaveholding enemy on many well-contested fields. This, like the other State regiments, won many distinctions, and retired from the service on the 14th of June, 1865, at Nashville.

The 85TH REGIMENT was mustered at Terre Haute, under Colonel John P. Bayard, on the 2d September, 1862. On the 4th March, 1863, it shared in the unfortunate affair at Thompson's Station, when in common with the other regiments forming Coburn's Brigade, it surrendered to the overpowering forces of the rebel General, Forrest. In June, 1863, after an exchange, it again took the field, and won a large portion of that renown accorded to Indiana. It was mustered out on the 12th of June, 1865.

The 86TH REGIMENT, of La Fayette, left for Kentucky on the 26th August, 1862, under Colonel Orville S. Hamilton, and shared in the duties assigned to the 84th. Its record is very creditable, particularly that portion dealing with the battles of Nashville on the 15th and 16th December, 1864. It was mustered out on the 6th of June, 1865, and reported within a few days at Indianapolis for discharge.

The 87TH REGIMENT, organized at South Bend, under Colonels Kline G. Sherlock and N. Gleason, was accepted at Indianapolis on the 31st of August, 1862, and left on the same day *en route* to

the front. From Springfield and Perryville on the 6th and 8th of October, 1862, to Mission Ridge, on the 25th of November, 1863, thence through the Atlanta campaign to the surrender of the Southern armies, it upheld a gallant name, and met with a true and enthusiastic welcome home on the 21st of June, 1865, with a list of absent comrades aggregating 451.

The 88TH REGIMENT, organized within the Fourth Congressional District, under Col. Geo. Humphrey, entered the service on the 29th of August, 1862, and presently was found among the front ranks in war. It passed through the campaign in brilliant form down to the time of Gen. Johnson's surrender to Gen. Grant, after which, on the 7th of June, 1865, it was mustered out at Washington.

The 89TH REGIMENT, formed from the material of the Eleventh Congressional District, was mustered in at Indianapolis, on the 28th of August, 1862, under Col. Chas. D. Murray, and after an exceedingly brilliant campaign was discharged by Gov. Morton on the 4th of August, 1865.

The 90TH REGIMENT, OR FIFTH CAVALRY, was organized at Indianapolis under the Colonelcy of Felix W. Graham, between August and November, 1862. The different companies, joining headquarters at Louisville on the 11th of March, 1863, engaged in observing the movements of the enemy in the vicinity of Cumberland river until the 19th of April, when a first and successful brush was had with the rebels. The regiment had been in 22 engagements during the term of service, captured 640 prisoners, and claimed a list of casualties mounting up to the number of 829. It was mustered out on the 16th of June, 1865, at Pulaski.

The 91ST BATTALION, of seven companies, was mustered into service at Evansville, the 1st of October, 1862, under Lieut.-Colonel John Mehringer, and in ten days later left for the front. In 1863 the regiment was completed, and thenceforth took a very prominent position in the prosecution of the war. During its service it lost 81 men, and retired from the field on the 26th of June, 1865.

The 92D REGIMENT failed in organizing.

The 93D REGIMENT was mustered in at Madison, Ind., on the 20th of October, 1862, under Col. De Witt C. Thomas and Lieut.-Col. Geo. W. Carr. On the 9th of November it began a movement south, and ultimately allied itself to Buckland's Brigade of

Gen. Sherman's. On the 14th of May it was among the first regiments to enter Jackson, the capital of Mississippi; was next present at the assault on Vicksburg, and made a stirring campaign down to the storming of Fort Blakely on the 9th of April, 1865. It was discharged on the 11th of August, that year, at Indianapolis, after receiving a public ovation.

The 94TH AND 95TH REGIMENTS, authorized to be formed within the Fourth and Fifth Congressional Districts, respectively, were only partially organized, and so the few companies that could be mustered were incorporated with other regiments.

The 96TH REGIMENT could only bring together three companies, in the Sixth Congressional District, and these becoming incorporated with the 99th then in process of formation at South Bend, the number was left blank.

The 97TH REGIMENT, raised in the Seventh Congressional District, was mustered into service at Terre Haute, on the 20th of September, 1861, under Col. Robert F. Catterson. Reaching the front within a few days, it was assigned a position near Memphis, and subsequently joined in Gen. Grant's movement on Vicksburg, by overland route. After a succession of great exploits with the several armies to which it was attached, it completed its list of battles at Bentonville, on the 21st of March, 1865, and was disembodied at Washington on the 9th of June following. During its term of service the regiment lost 341 men, including the three Ensigns killed during the assaults on rebel positions along the Augusta Railway, from the 15th to the 27th of June, 1864.

The 98TH REGIMENT, authorized to be raised within the Eighth Congressional District, failed in its organization, and the number was left blank in the army list. The two companies answering to the call of July, 1862, were consolidated with the 100th Regiment then being organized at Fort Wayne.

The 99TH BATTALION, recruited within the Ninth Congressional District, completed its muster on the 21st of October, 1862, under Col. Alex. Fawler, and reported for service a few days later at Memphis, where it was assigned to the 16th Army Corps. The varied vicissitudes through which this regiment passed and its remarkable gallantry upon all occasions, have gained for it a fair fame. It was disembodied on the 5th of June, 1865, at Washington, and returned to Indianapolis on the 11th of the same month.

The 100TH REGIMENT, recruited from the Eighth and Tenth Congressional Districts, under Col. Sandford J. Stoughton, mustered

into the service on the 10th of September, left for the front on the 11th of November, and became attached to the Army of Tennessee on the 26th of that month, 1862. The regiment participated in twenty-five battles, together with skirmishing during fully one-third of its term of service, and claimed a list of casualties mounting up to four hundred and sixty-four. It was mustered out of the service at Washington on the 9th of June, and reported at Indianapolis for discharge on the 14th of June, 1865.

The 101ST REGIMENT was mustered into service at Wabash on the 7th of September, 1862, under Col. William Garver, and proceeded immediately to Covington, Kentucky. Its early experiences were gained in the pursuit of Bragg's army and John Morgan's cavalry, and these experiences tendered to render the regiment one of the most valuable in the war for the Republic. From the defeat of John Morgan at Milton on the 18th of March, 1863, to the fall of Savannah on the 23rd of September, 1863, the regiment won many honors, and retired from the service on the 25th of June, 1865, at Indianapolis.

#### THE MORGAN RAID REGIMENTS—MINUTE MEN.

The 102D REGIMENT, organized under Col. Benjamin M. Gregory from companies of the Indiana Legion, and numbering six hundred and twenty-three men and officers, left Indianapolis for the front early in July, and reported at North Vernon on the 12th of July, 1863, and having completed a round of duty, returned to Indianapolis on the 17th to be discharged.

The 103D, comprising seven companies from Hendricks county, two from Marion and one from Wayne counties, numbering 681 men and officers, under Col. Lawrence S. Shuler, was contemporary with the 102d Regiment, varying only in its service by being mustered out one day before, or on the 16th of July, 1863.

The 104TH REGIMENT OF MINUTE MEN was recruited from members of the Legion of Decatur, La Fayette, Madison, Marion and Rush counties. It comprised 714 men and officers under the command of Col. James Gavin, and was organized within forty hours after the issue of Governor Morton's call for minute men to protect Indiana and Kentucky against the raids of Gen. John H. Morgan's rebel forces. After Morgan's escape into Ohio the command returned and was mustered out on the 18th of July, 1863.

The 105th REGIMENT consisted of seven companies of the Legion and three of Minute Men, furnished by Hancock, Union, Randolph,

Putnam, Wayne, Clinton and Madison counties. The command numbered seven hundred and thirteen men and officers, under Col. Sherlock, and took a leading part in the pursuit of Morgan. Returning on the 18th of July to Indianapolis it was mustered out.

The 106TH REGIMENT, under Col. Isaac P. Gray, consisted of one company of the Legion and nine companies of Minute Men, aggregating seven hundred and ninety-two men and officers. The counties of Wayne, Randolph, Hancock, Howard, and Marion were represented in its rank and file. Like the other regiments organized to repel Morgan, it was disembodied in July, 1863.

The 107TH REGIMENT, under Col. De Witt C. Rugg, was organized in the city of Indianapolis from the companies' Legion, or Ward Guards. The successes of this promptly organized regiment were unquestioned.

The 108TH REGIMENT comprised five companies of Minute Men, from Tippecanoe county, two from Hancock, and one from each of the counties known as Carroll, Montgomery and Wayne, aggregating 710 men and officers, and all under the command of Col. W. C. Wilson. After performing the only duties presented, it returned from Cincinnati on the 18th of July, and was mustered out.

The 109TH REGIMENT, composed of Minute Men from Coles county, Ill., La Porte, Hamilton, Miami and Randolph counties, Ind., showed a roster of 709 officers and men, under Col. J. R. Mahon. Morgan having escaped from Ohio, its duties were at an end, and returning to Indianapolis was mustered out on the 17th of July, 1863, after seven days' service.

The 110TH REGIMENT of Minute Men comprised volunteers from Henry, Madison, Delaware, Cass, and Monroe counties. The men were ready and willing, if not really anxious to go to the front. But happily the swift-winged Morgan was driven away, and consequently the regiment was not called to the field.

The 111TH REGIMENT, furnished by Montgomery, Lafayette, Rush, Miami, Monroe, Delaware and Hamilton counties, numbering 733 men and officers, under Col. Robert Canover, was not requisitioned.

The 112TH REGIMENT was formed from nine companies of Minute Men, and the Mitchell Light Infantry Company of the Legion. Its strength was 703 men and officers, under Col. Hiram F. Braxton. Lawrence, Washington, Monroe and Orange counties were represented on its roster, and the historic names of North Vernon and Sunman's Station on its banner. Returning from the South

after seven days' service, it was mustered out on the 17th of July, 1863.

The 113TH REGIMENT, furnished by Daviess, Martin, Washington, and Monroe counties, comprised 526 rank and file under Col. Geo. W. Burge. Like the 112th, it was assigned to Gen. Hughes' Brigade, and defended North Vernon against the repeated attacks of John H. Morgan's forces.

The 114TH REGIMENT was wholly organized in Johnson county, under Col. Lambertson, and participated in the affair of North Vernon. Returning on the 21st of July, 1863, with its brief but faithful record, it was disembodied at Indianapolis, 11 days after its organization.

All these regiments were brought into existence to meet an emergency, and it must be confessed, that had not a sense of duty, military instinct and love of country animated these regiments, the rebel General, John H. Morton, and his 6,000 cavalry, would doubtless have carried destruction as far as the very capital of their State.

#### SIX-MONTHS' REGIMENTS.

The 115TH REGIMENT, organized at Indianapolis in answer to the call of the President in June, 1863, was mustered into service on the 17th of August, under Col. J. R. Mahon. Its service was short but brilliant, and received its discharge at Indianapolis the 10th of February, 1864.

The 116TH REGIMENT, mustered in on the 17th of August, 1863, moved to Detroit, Michigan, on the 30th, under Col. Charles Wise. During October it was ordered to Nicholasville, Kentucky, where it was assigned to Col. Mahon's Brigade, and with Gen. Willcox's entire command, joined in the forward movement to Cumberland Gap. After a term on severe duty it returned to Lafayette and there was disembodied on the 24th of February, 1864, whither Gov. Morton hastened, to share in the ceremonies of welcome.

The 117TH REGIMENT of Indianapolis was mustered into service on the 17th of September, 1863, under Col. Thomas J. Brady. After surmounting every obstacle opposed to it, it returned on the 6th of February, 1864, and was treated to a public reception on the 9th.

The 118TH REGIMENT, whose organization was completed on the 3d of September, 1863, under Col. Geo. W. Jackson, joined the 116th at Nicholasville, and sharing in its fortunes, returned to the

State capital on the 14th of February, 1864. Its casualties were comprised in a list of 15 killed and wounded.

The 119TH, or SEVENTH CAVALRY, was recruited under Col. John P. C. Shanks, and its organization completed on the 1st of October, 1863. The rank and file numbered 1,213, divided into twelve companies. On the 7th of December its arrival at Louisville was reported, and on the 14th it entered on active service. After the well-fought battle of Guntown, Mississippi, on the 10th of June, 1864, although it only brought defeat to our arms, General Grierson addressed the Seventh Cavalry, saying: "Your General congratulates you upon your noble conduct during the late expedition. Fighting against overwhelming numbers, under adverse circumstances, your prompt obedience to orders and unflinching courage commanding the admiration of all, made even defeat almost a victory. For hours on foot you repulsed the charges of the enemies' infantry, and again in the saddle you met his cavalry and turned his assaults into confusion. Your heroic perseverance saved hundreds of your fellow-soldiers from capture. You have been faithful to your honorable reputation, and have fully justified the confidence, and merited the high esteem of your commander."

Early in 1865, a number of these troops, returning from imprisonment in Southern bastiles, were lost on the steamer "Sultana." The survivors of the campaign continued in the service for a long period after the restoration of peace, and finally mustered out.

The 120TH REGIMENT. In September, 1863, Gov. Morton received authority from the War Department to organize eleven regiments within the State for three years' service. By April, 1864, this organization was complete, and being transferred to the command of Brigadier General Alvin P. Hovey, were formed by him into a division for service with the Army of Tennessee. Of those regiments, the 120th occupied a very prominent place, both on account of its numbers, its perfect discipline and high reputation. It was mustered in at Columbus, and was in all the great battles of the latter years of the war. It won high praise from friend and foe, and retired with its bright roll of honor, after the success of Right and Justice was accomplished.

The 121ST, OR NINTH CAVALRY, was mustered in March 1, 1864, under Col. George W. Jackson, at Indianapolis, and though not numerically strong, was so well equipped and possessed such excellent material that on the 3rd of May it was ordered to the front. The record of the 121st, though extending over a brief period, is



pregnant with deeds of war of a high character. On the 26th of April, 1865, these troops, while returning from their labors in the South, lost 55 men, owing to the explosion of the engines of the steamer "*Sultana*." The return of the 386 survivors, on the 5th of September, 1865, was hailed with joy, and proved how well and dearly the citizens of Indiana loved their soldiers.

The 122D REGIMENT ordered to be raised in the Third Congressional District, owing to very few men being then at home, failed in organization, and the regimental number became a blank.

The 123D REGIMENT was furnished by the Fourth and Seventh Congressional Districts during the winter of 1863-'64, and mustered, March 9, 1864, at Greensburg, under Col. John C. McQuiston. The command left for the front the same day, and after winning rare distinction during the last years of the campaign, particularly in its gallantry at Atlanta, and its daring movement to escape Forrest's 15,000 rebel horsemen near Franklin, this regiment was discharged on the 30th of August, 1865, at Indianapolis, being mustered out on the 25th, at Raleigh, North Carolina.

The 124TH REGIMENT completed its organization by assuming three companies raised for the 125th Regiment (which was intended to be cavalry), and was mustered in at Richmond, on the 10th of March, 1864, under Colonel James Burgess, and reported at Louisville within nine days. From Buzzard's Roost, on the 8th of May, 1864, under General Schofield, Lost Mountain in June, and the capture of Decatur, on the 15th July, to the 21st March, 1865, in its grand advance under General Sherman from Atlanta to the coast, the regiment won many laurel wreaths, and after a brilliant campaign, was mustered out at Greensboro on the 31st August, 1865.

The 125TH, OR TENTH CAVALRY, was partially organized during November and December, 1862, at Vincennes, and in February, 1863, completed its numbers and equipment at Columbus, under Colonel T. M. Pace. Early in May its arrival in Nashville was reported, and presently assigned active service. During September and October it engaged rebel contingents under Forrest and Hood, and later in the battles of Nashville, Reynold's Hill and Sugar Creek, and in 1865 Flint River, Courtland and Mount Hope. The explosion of the *Sultana* occasioned the loss of thirty-five men with Captain Gaffney and Lieutenants Twigg and Reeves, and in a collision on the Nashville & Louisville railroad, May, 1864, lost five men killed and several wounded. After a term of service un-

surpassed for its utility and character it was disembodied at Vicksburg, Mississippi, on the 31st August, 1865, and returning to Indianapolis early in September, was welcomed by the Executive and people.

The 126TH, OR ELEVENTH CAVALRY, was organized at Indianapolis under Colonel Robert R. Stewart, on the 1st of March, 1864, and left in May for Tennessee. It took a very conspicuous part in the defeat of Hood near Nashville, joining in the pursuit as far as Gravelly Springs, Alabama, where it was dismounted and assigned infantry duty. In June, 1865, it was remounted at St. Louis, and moved to Fort Riley, Kansas, and thence to Leavenworth, where it was mustered out on the 19th September, 1865.

The 127TH, OR TWELFTH CAVALRY, was partially organized at Kendallville, in December, 1863, and perfected at the same place, under Colonel Edward Anderson, in April, 1864. Reaching the front in May, it went into active service, took a prominent part in the march through Alabama and Georgia, and after a service brilliant in all its parts, retired from the field, after discharge, on the 22d of November, 1865.

The 128TH REGIMENT was raised in the Tenth Congressional District of the period, and mustered at Michigan City, under Colonel R. P. De Hart, on the 18th March, 1864. On the 25th it was reported at the front, and assigned at once to Schofield's Division. The battles of Resaca, Dallas, New Hope Church, Lost Mountain, Kenesaw, Atlanta, Jonesboro, Dalton, Brentwood Hills, Nashville, and the six days' skirmish of Columbia, were all participated in by the 128th, and it continued in service long after the termination of hostilities, holding the post of Raleigh, North Carolina.

The 129TH REGIMENT was, like the former, mustered in at Michigan City about the same time, under Colonel Charles Case, and moving to the front on the 7th April, 1864, shared in the fortunes of the 128th until August 29, 1865, when it was disembodied at Charlotte, North Carolina.

The 130TH REGIMENT, mustered at Kokomo on the 12th March, 1864, under Colonel C. S. Parrish, left *en route* to the seat of war on the 16th, and was assigned to the Second Brigade, First Division, Twenty-third Army Corps, at Nashville, on the 19th. During the war it made for itself a brilliant history, and returned to Indianapolis with its well-won honors on the 13th December, 1865.

The 131st, OR THIRTEENTH CAVALRY, under Colonel G. M. L. Johnson, was the last mounted regiment recruited within the State.

It left Indianapolis on the 30th of April, 1864, in infantry trim, and gained its first honors on the 1st of October in its magnificent defense of Huntsville, Alabama, against the rebel division of General Buford, following a line of first-rate military conduct to the end. In January, 1865, the regiment was remounted, won some distinction in its modern form, and was mustered out at Vicksburg on the 18th of November, 1865. The *morale* and services of the regiment were such that its Colonel was promoted Brevet Brigadier-General in consideration of its merited honors.

#### THE ONE HUNDRED-DAYS VOLUNTEERS.

Governor Morton, in obedience to the offer made under his auspices to the general Government to raise volunteer regiments for one hundred days' service, issued his call on the 23rd of April, 1864. This movement suggested itself to the inventive genius of the war Governor as a most important step toward the subjection or annihilation of the military supporters of slavery within a year, and thus conclude a war, which, notwithstanding its holy claims to the name of Battles for Freedom, was becoming too protracted, and proving too detrimental to the best interests of the Union. In answer to the esteemed Governor's call eight regiments came forward, and formed The Grand Division of the Volunteers.

The 132d REGIMENT, under Col. S. C. Vance, was furnished by Indianapolis, Shelbyville, Franklin and Danville, and leaving on the 18th of May, 1864, reached the front where it joined the forces acting in Tennessee.

The 133d REGIMENT, raised at Richmond on the 17th of May, 1864, under Col. R. N. Hudson, comprised nine companies, and followed the 132d.

The 134th REGIMENT, comprising seven companies, was organized at Indianapolis on the 25th of May, 1864, under Col. James Gavin, and proceeded immediately to the front.

The 135th REGIMENT was raised from the volunteers of Bedford, Noblesville and Goshen, with seven companies from the First Congressional District, under Col. W. C. Wilson, on the 25th of May, 1864, and left at once *en route* to the South.

The 136th REGIMENT comprised ten companies, raised in the same districts as those contributing to the 135th, under Col. J. W. Foster, and left for Tennessee on the 24th of May, 1864.

The 137th REGIMENT, under Col. E. J. Robinson, comprising volunteers from Kokomo, Zanesville, Medora, Sullivan, Rockville,

and Owen and Lawrence counties, left *en route* to Tennessee on the 28th of May, 1864, having completed organization the day previous.

The 138TH REGIMENT was formed of seven companies from the Ninth, with three from the Eleventh Congressional District (unreformed), and mustered in at Indianapolis on the 27th of May, 1864, under Col. J. H. Shannon. This fine regiment was reported at the front within a few days.

The 139TH REGIMENT, under Col. Geo. Humphrey, was raised from volunteers furnished by Kendallville, Lawrenceburg, Elizaville, Knightstown, Connersville, Newcastle, Portland, Vevay, New Albany, Metamora, Columbia City, New Haven and New Philadelphia. It was constituted a regiment on the 8th of June, 1864, and appeared among the defenders in Tennessee during that month.

All these regiments gained distinction, and won an enviable position in the glorious history of the war and the no less glorious one of their own State in its relation thereto.

#### THE PRESIDENT'S CALL OF JULY, 1864.

The 140th REGIMENT was organized with many others, in response to the call of the nation. Under its Colonel, Thomas J. Brady, it proceeded to the South on the 15th of November, 1864. Having taken a most prominent part in all the desperate struggles, round Nashville and Murfreesboro in 1864, to Town Creek Bridge on the 20th of February, 1865, and completed a continuous round of severe duty to the end, arrived at Indianapolis for discharge on the 21st of July, where Governor Morton received it with marked honors.

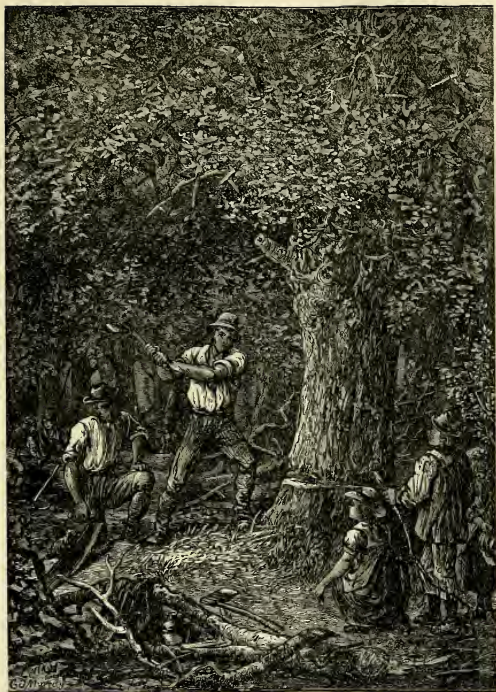
The 141st REGIMENT was only partially raised, and its few companies were incorporated with Col. Brady's command.

The 142D REGIMENT was recruited at Fort Wayne, under Col. I. M. Comparet, and was mustered into service at Indianapolis on the 3d of November, 1864. After a steady and exceedingly effective service, it returned to Indianapolis on the 16th of July, 1865.

#### THE PRESIDENT'S CALL OF DECEMBER, 1864,

Was answered by Indiana in the most material terms. No less than fourteen serviceable regiments were placed at the disposal of the General Government.

The 143D REGIMENT was mustered in, under Col. J. T. Grill, on the 21st February, 1865, reported at Nashville on the 24th, and after a brief but brilliant service returned to the State on the 21st October, 1865.



OPENING AN INDIANA FOREST.



The 144TH REGIMENT, under Col. G. W. Riddle, was mustered in on the 6th March, 1865, left on the 9th for Harper's Ferry, took an effective part in the close of the campaign and reported at Indianapolis for discharge on the 9th August, 1865.

The 145TH REGIMENT, under Col. W. A. Adams, left Indianapolis on the 18th of February, 1865, and joining Gen. Steadman's division at Chattanooga on the 23d was sent on active service. Its duties were discharged with rare fidelity until mustered out in January, 1866.

The 146TH REGIMENT, under Col. M. C. Welsh, left Indianapolis on the 11th of March *en route* to Harper's Ferry, where it was assigned to the army of the Shenandoah. The duties of this regiment were severe and continuous, to the period of its muster out at Baltimore on the 31st of August, 1865.

The 147TH REGIMENT, comprised among other volunteers from Benton, Lafayette and Henry counties, organized under Col. Milton Peden on the 13th of March, 1865, at Indianapolis. It shared a fortune similar to that of the 146th, and returned for discharge on the 9th of August, 1865.

The 148TH REGIMENT, under Col. N. R. Ruckle, left the State capital on the 28th of February, 1865, and reporting at Nashville, was sent on guard and garrison duty into the heart of Tennessee. Returning to Indianapolis on the 8th of September, it received a final discharge.

The 149TH REGIMENT was organized at Indianapolis by Col. W. H. Fairbanks, and left on the 3d of March, 1865, for Tennessee, where it had the honor of receiving the surrender of the rebel forces, and military stores of Generals Roddy and Polk. The regiment was welcomed home by Morton on the 29th of September.

The 150TH REGIMENT, under Col. M. B. Taylor, mustered in on the 9th of March, 1865, left for the South on the 13th and reported at Harper's Ferry on the 17th. This regiment did guard duty at Charleston, Winchester, Stevenson Station, Gordon's Springs, and after a service characterized by utility, returned on the 9th of August to Indianapolis for discharge.

The 151ST REGIMENT, under Col. J. Healy, arrived at Nashville on the 9th of March, 1865. On the 14th a movement on Tullahoma was undertaken, and three months later returned to Nashville for garrison duty to the close of the war. It was mustered out on the 22d of September, 1865.

The 152D REGIMENT was organized at Indianapolis, under Col.

W. W. Griswold, and left for Harper's Ferry on the 18th of March, 1865. It was attached to the provisional divisions of Shenandoah Army, and engaged until the 1st of September, when it was discharged at Indianapolis.

The 153<sup>D</sup> REGIMENT was organized at Indianapolis on the 1st of March, 1865, under Col. O. H. P. Carey. It reported at Louisville, and by order of Gen. Palmer, was held on service in Kentucky, where it was occupied in the exciting but very dangerous pastime of fighting Southern guerrillas. Later it was posted at Louisville, until mustered out on the 4th of September, 1865.

The 154<sup>TH</sup> REGIMENT, organized under Col. Frank Wilcox, left Indianapolis under Major Simpson, for Parkersburg, W. Virginia, on the 28th of April, 1865. It was assigned to guard and garrison duty until its discharge on the 4th of August, 1865.

The 155<sup>TH</sup> REGIMENT, recruited throughout the State, left on the 26th of April for Washington, and was afterward assigned to a provisional Brigade of the Ninth Army Corps at Alexandria. The companies of this regiment were scattered over the country,—at Dover, Centreville, Wilmington, and Salisbury, but becoming reunited on the 4th of August, 1865, it was mustered out at Dover, Delaware.

The 156<sup>TH</sup> BATTALION, under Lieut.-Colonel Charles M. Smith, left *en route* to the Shenandoah Valley on the 27th of April, 1865, where it continued doing guard duty to the period of its muster out the 4th of August, 1865, at Winchester, Virginia.

On the return of these regiments to Indianapolis, Gov. Morton and the people received them with all that characteristic cordiality and enthusiasm peculiarly their own.

#### INDEPENDENT CAVALRY COMPANY OF INDIANA VOLUNTEERS.

The people of Crawford county, animated with that inspiring patriotism which the war drew forth, organized this mounted company on the 25th of July, 1863, and placed it at the disposal of the Government, and it was mustered into service by order of the War Secretary, on the 13th of August, 1863, under Captain L. Lamb. To the close of the year it engaged in the laudable pursuit of arresting deserters and enforcing the draft; however, on the 18th of January, 1864, it was reconstituted and incorporated with the Thirteenth Cavalry, with which it continued to serve until the treason of Americans against America was conquered.



## OUR COLORED TROOPS.

The 28TH REGIMENT OF COLORED TROOPS was recruited throughout the State of Indiana, and under Lieut.-Colonel Charles S. Russell, left Indianapolis for the front on the 24th of April, 1864. The regiment acted very well in its first engagement with the rebels at White House, Virginia, and again with Gen. Sheridan's Cavalry, in the swamps of the Chickahominy. In the battle of the "Crater," it lost half its roster; but their place was soon filled by other colored recruits from the State, and Russell promoted to the Colonelcy, and afterward to Brevet Brigadier-General, when he was succeeded in the command by Major Thomas H. Logan. During the few months of its active service it accumulated quite a history, and was ultimately discharged, on the 8th of January, 1866, at Indianapolis.

## BATTERIES OF LIGHT ARTILLERY.

FIRST BATTERY, organized at Evansville, under Captain Martin Klauss, and mustered in on the 16th of August, 1861, joined Gen. Fremont's army immediately, and entering readily upon its salutary course, aided in the capture of 950 rebels and their position at Blackwater creek. On March the 6th, 1862 at Elkhorn Tavern, and on the 8th at Pea Ridge, the battery performed good service. Port Gibson, Champion Hill, Jackson, the Teche country, Sabine Cross Roads, Grand Encore, all tell of its efficacy. In 1864 it was subjected to reorganization, when Lawrence Jacoby was raised to the Captiancy, *vice* Klauss resigned. After a long term of useful service, it was mustered out at Indianapolis on the 18th of August, 1865.

SECOND BATTERY was organized, under Captain D. G. Rabb, at Indianapolis on the 9th of August, 1861, and one month later proceeded to the front. It participated in the campaign against Col. Coffee's irregular troops and the rebellious Indians of the Cherokee nation. From Lone Jack, Missouri, to Jenkin's Ferry and Fort Smith it won signal honors until its reorganization in 1864, and even after, to June, 1865, it maintained a very fair reputation.

The THIRD BATTERY, under Capt. W. W. Frybarger, was organized and mustered in at Connersville on the 24th of August, 1861, and proceeded immediately to join Fremont's Army of the Missouri. Moon's Mill, Kirksville, Meridian, Fort de Russy, Alexandria, Round Lake, Tupelo, Clinton and Tallahatchie are names

which may be engraven on its guns. It participated in the affairs before Nashville on the 15th and 16th of December, 1864, when General Hood's Army was put to route, and at Fort Blakely, outside Mobile, after which it returned home to report for discharge, August 21, 1865.

The **FOURTH BATTERY**, recruited in La Porte, Porter and Lake counties, reported at the front early in October, 1861, and at once assumed a prominent place in the army of Gen. Buell. Again under Rosencrans and McCook and under General Sheridan at Stone River, the services of this battery were much praised, and it retained its well-earned reputation to the very day of its muster out—the 1st of August, 1865. Its first organization was completed under Capt. A. K. Bush, and reorganized in Oct., 1864, under Capt. B. F. Johnson.

The **FIFTH BATTERY** was furnished by La Porte, Allen, Whitley and Noble counties, organized under Capt. Peter Simonson, and mustered into service on the 22d of November, 1861. It comprised four six pounders, two being rifled cannon, and two twelve-pounder Howitzers with a force of 158 men. Reporting at Camp Gilbert, Louisville, on the 29th, it was shortly after assigned to the division of Gen. Mitchell, at Bacon Creek. During its term, it served in twenty battles and numerous petty actions, losing its Captain at Pine Mountain. The total loss accruing to the battery was 84 men and officers and four guns. It was mustered out on the 20th of July, 1864.

The **SIXTH BATTERY** was recruited at Evansville, under Captain Frederick Behr, and left, on the 2d of Oct., 1861, for the front, reporting at Henderson, Kentucky, a few days after. Early in 1862 it joined Gen. Sherman's army at Paducah, and participated in the battle of Shiloh, on the 6th of April. Its history grew in brilliancy until the era of peace insured a cessation of its great labors.

The **SEVENTH BATTERY** comprised volunteers from Terre Haute, Arcadia, Evansville, Salem, Lawrenceburg, Columbus, Vincennes and Indianapolis, under Samuel J. Harris as its first Captain, who was succeeded by G. R. Shallow and O. H. Morgan after its reorganization. From the siege of Corinth to the capture of Atlanta it performed vast services, and returned to Indianapolis on the 11th of July, 1865, to be received by the people and hear its history from the lips of the veteran patriot and Governor of the State.

The EIGHTH BATTERY, under Captain G. T. Cochran, arrived at the front on the 26th of February, 1862, and subsequently entered upon its real duties at the siege of Corinth. It served with distinction throughout, and concluded a well-made campaign under Will Stokes, who was appointed Captain of the companies with which it was consolidated in March, 1865.

The NINTH BATTERY. The organization of this battery was perfected at Indianapolis, on the 1st of January, 1862, under Capt. N. S. Thompson. Moving to the front it participated in the affairs of Shiloh, Corinth, Queen's Hill, Meridian, Fort Dick Taylor, Fort de Russy, Henderson's Hill, Pleasant Hill, Cotile Landing, Bayou Rapids, Mansura, Chicot, and many others, winning a name in each engagement. The explosion of the steamer Eclipse at Johnsonville, above Paducah, on Jan. 27, 1865, resulted in the destruction of 58 men, leaving only ten to represent the battery. The survivors reached Indianapolis on the 6th of March, and were mustered out.

The TENTH BATTERY was recruited at Lafayette, and mustered in under Capt. Jerome B. Cox, in January, 1861. Having passed through the Kentucky campaign against Gen. Bragg, it participated in many of the great engagements, and finally returned to report for discharge on the 6th of July, 1864, having, in the meantime, won a very fair fame.

The ELEVENTH BATTERY was organized at Lafayette, and mustered in at Indianapolis under Capt. Arnold Sutermeister, on the 17th of December, 1861. On most of the principal battle-fields, from Shiloh, in 1862, to the capture of Atlanta, it maintained a high reputation for military excellence, and after consolidation with the Eighteenth, mustered out on the 7th of June, 1865.

The TWELFTH BATTERY was recruited at Jeffersonville and subsequently mustered in at Indianapolis. On the 6th of March, 1862, it reached Nashville, having been previously assigned to Buell's Army. In April its Captain, G. W. Sterling, resigned, and the position devolved on Capt. James E. White, who, in turn, was succeeded by James A. Dunwoody. The record of the battery holds a first place in the history of the period, and enabled both men and officers to look back with pride upon the battle-fields of the land. It was ordered home in June, 1865, and on reaching Indianapolis, on the 1st of July, was mustered out on the 7th of that month.

The THIRTEENTH BATTERY was organized under Captain Sewell Coulson, during the winter of 1861, at Indianapolis, and proceeded to the front in February, 1862. During the subsequent months it

was occupied in the pursuit of John H. Morgan's raiders, and aided effectively in driving them from Kentucky. This artillery company returned from the South on the 4th of July, 1865, and were discharged the day following.

The **FOURTEENTH BATTERY**, recruited in Wabash, Miami, Lafayette, and Huntington counties, under Captain M. H. Kidd, and Lieutenant J. W. H. McGuire, left Indianapolis on the 11th of April, 1862, and within a few months one portion of it was captured at Lexington by Gen. Forrest's great cavalry command. The main battery lost two guns and two men at Guntown, on the Mississippi, but proved more successful at Nashville and Mobile. It arrived home on the 29th of August, 1865, received a public welcome, and its final discharge.

The **FIFTEENTH BATTERY**, under Captain I. C. H. Von Sehlin, was retained on duty from the date of its organization, at Indianapolis, until the 5th of July, 1862, when it was moved to Harper's Ferry. Two months later the gallant defense of Maryland Heights was set at naught by the rebel Stonewall Jackson, and the entire garrison surrendered. Being paroled, it was reorganized at Indianapolis, and appeared again in the field in March, 1863, where it won a splendid renown on every well-fought field to the close of the war. It was mustered out on the 24th of June, 1865.

The **SIXTEENTH BATTERY** was organized at Lafayette, under Capt. Charles A. Naylor, and on the 1st of June, 1862, left for Washington. Moving to the front with Gen. Pope's command, it participated in the battle of Slaughter Mountain, on the 9th of August, and South Mountain, and Antietam, under Gen. McClellan. This battery was engaged in a large number of general engagements and flying column affairs, won a very favorable record, and returned on the 5th of July, 1865.

The **SEVENTEENTH BATTERY**, under Capt. Milton L. Miner, was mustered in at Indianapolis, on the 20th of May, 1862, left for the front on the 5th of July, and subsequently engaged in the Gettysburg expedition, was present at Harper's Ferry, July 6, 1863, and at Opequan on the 19th of September. Fisher's Hill, New Market, and Cedar Creek brought it additional honors, and won from Gen. Sheridan a tribute of praise for its service on these battle grounds. Ordered from Winchester to Indianapolis it was mustered out there on the 3d of July, 1865.

The **EIGHTEENTH BATTERY**, under Capt. Eli Lilly, left for the

front in August, 1862, but did not take a leading part in the campaign until 1863, when, under Gen. Rosencrans, it appeared prominent at Hoover's Gap. From this period to the affairs of West Point and Macon, it performed first-class service, and returned to its State on the 25th of June, 1865.

The NINETEENTH BATTERY was mustered into service at Indianapolis, on the 5th of August, 1862, under Capt. S. J. Harris, and proceeded immediately afterward to the front, where it participated in the campaign against Gen. Bragg. It was present at every post of danger to the end of the war, when, after the surrender of Johnson's army, it returned to Indianapolis. Reaching that city on the 6th of June, 1865, it was treated to a public reception and received the congratulations of Gov. Morton. Four days later it was discharged.

The TWENTIETH BATTERY, organized under Capt. Frank A. Rose, left the State capital on the 17th of December, 1862, for the front, and reported immediately at Henderson, Kentucky. Subsequently Captain Rose resigned, and, in 1863, under Capt. Osborn, turned over its guns to the 11th Indiana Battery, and was assigned to the charge of siege guns at Nashville. Gov. Morton had the battery supplied with new field pieces, and by the 5th of October, 1863, it was again in the field, where it won many honors under Sherman, and continued to exercise a great influence until its return on the 23d of June, 1865.

The TWENTY-FIRST BATTERY recruited at Indianapolis, under the direction of Captain W. W. Andrew, left on the 9th of September, 1862, for Covington, Kentucky, to aid in its defense against the advancing forces of Gen. Kirby Smith. It was engaged in numerous military affairs and may be said to acquire many honors, although its record is stained with the names of seven deserters. The battery was discharged on the 21st of June, 1865.

The TWENTY-SECOND BATTERY was mustered in at Indianapolis on the 15th of December, 1862, under Capt. B. F. Denning, and moved at once to the front. It took a very conspicuous part in the pursuit of Morgan's Cavalry, and in many other affairs. It threw the first shot into Atlanta, and lost its Captain, who was killed in the skirmish line, on the 1st of July. While the list of casualties numbers only 35, that of desertions numbers 37. This battery was received with public honors on its return, the 25th of June, 1865, and mustered out on the 7th of the same month.

The TWENTY-THIRD BATTERY, recruited in October 1862, and mustered in on the 8th of November, under Capt. I. H. Myers, proceeded south, after having rendered very efficient services at home in guarding the camps of rebel prisoners. In July, 1865, the battery took an active part, under General Boyle's command, in routing and capturing the raiders at Brandenburg, and subsequently to the close of the war performed very brilliant exploits, reaching Indianapolis in June, 1865. It was discharged on the 27th of that month.

The TWENTY-FOURTH BATTERY, under Capt. I. A. Simms, was enrolled for service on the 29th of November, 1862; remained at Indianapolis on duty until the 13th of March, 1863, when it left for the field. From its participation in the Cumberland River campaign, to its last engagement at Columbia, Tennessee, it aided materially in bringing victory to the Union ranks and made for itself a widespread fame. Arriving at Indianapolis on the 28th of July, it was publicly received, and in five days later disembodied.

The TWENTY-FIFTH BATTERY was recruited in September and October, 1864, and mustered into service for one year, under Capt. Frederick C. Sturm. December 13th, it reported at Nashville, and took a prominent part in the defeat of Gen. Hood's army. Its duties until July, 1865, were continuous, when it returned to report for final discharge.

The TWENTY-SIXTH BATTERY, or "WILDER'S BATTERY," was recruited under Capt. I. T. Wilder, of Greensburg, in May, 1861; but was not mustered in as an artillery company. Incorporating itself with a regiment then forming at Indianapolis it was mustered as company "A," of the 17th Infantry, with Wilder as Lieutenant-Colonel of the regiment. Subsequently, at Elk Water, Virginia, it was converted into the "First Independent Battery," and became known as "Rigby's Battery." The record of this battery is as brilliant as any won during the war. On every field it has won a distinct reputation; it was well worthy the enthusiastic reception given to it on its return to Indianapolis on the 11th and 12th of July, 1865. During its term of service it was subject to many transmutations; but in every phase of its brief history, a reputation for gallantry and patriotism was maintained which now forms a living testimonial to its services to the public.

The total number of battles in the "War of the Rebellion" in which the patriotic citizens of the great and noble State of Indiana were more or less engaged, was as follows:

Locality.	No. of Battles.	Locality.	No. of Battles.
Virginia.....	90	Maryland.....	7
Tennessee.....	51	Texas.....	3
Georgia.....	41	South Carolina.....	2
Mississippi.....	24	Indian Territory.....	2
Arkansas.....	19	Pennsylvania.....	1
Kentucky.....	16	Ohio.....	1
Louisiana.....	15	Indiana.....	1
Missouri.....	9		
North Carolina.....	8	Total.....	308

The regiments sent forth to the defense of the Republic in the hour of its greatest peril, when a host of her own sons, blinded by some unholy infatuation, leaped to arms that they might trample upon the liberty-giving principles of the nation, have been passed in very brief review. The authorities chosen for the dates, names, and figures are the records of the State, and the main subject is based upon the actions of those 267,000 gallant men of Indiana who rushed to arms in defense of all for which their fathers bled, leaving their wives and children and homes in the guardianship of a truly paternal Government.

The relation of Indiana to the Republic was then established; for when the population of the State, at the time her sons went forth to participate in war for the maintenance of the Union, is brought into comparison with all other States and countries, it will be apparent that the sacrifices made by Indiana from 1861-'65 equal, if not actually exceed, the noblest of those recorded in the history of ancient or modern times.

Unprepared for the terrible inundation of modern wickedness, which threatened to deluge the country in a sea of blood and rob, a people of their richest, their most prized inheritance, the State rose above all precedent, and under the benign influence of patriotism, guided by the well-directed zeal of a wise Governor and Government, sent into the field an army that in numbers was gigantic, and in moral and physical excellence never equaled.

It is laid down in the official reports, furnished to the War Department, that over 200,000 troops were specially organized to aid in crushing the legions of the slave-holder; that no less than 50,000 militia were armed to defend the State, and that the large, but absolutely necessary number of commissions issued was 17,114. All this proves the scientific skill and military economy exercised by the Governor, and brought to the aid of the people in a most terrible emergency; for he, with some prophetic sense of the gravity of the situation, saw that unless the greatest powers of the Union were put forth to crush the least justifiable and most pernicious

of all rebellions holding a place in the record of nations, the best blood of the country would flow in a vain attempt to avert a catastrophe which, if prolonged for many years, would result in at least the moral and commercial ruin of the country.

The part which Indiana took in the war against the Rebellion is one of which the citizens of the State may well be proud. In the number of troops furnished, and in the amount of voluntary contributions rendered, Indiana, in proportion and wealth, stands equal to any of her sister States. "It is also a subject of gratitude and thankfulness," said Gov. Morton, in his message to the Legislature, "that, while the number of troops furnished by Indiana alone in this great contest would have done credit to a first-class nation, measured by the standard of previous wars, not a single battery or battalion from this State has brought reproach upon the national flag, and no disaster of the war can be traced to any want of fidelity, courage or efficiency on the part of any Indiana officer. The endurance, heroism, intelligence and skill of the officers and soldiers sent forth by Indiana to do battle for the Union, have shed a luster on our beloved State, of which any people might justly be proud. Without claiming superiority over our loyal sister States, it is but justice to the brave men who have represented us on almost every battle-field of the war, to say that their deeds have placed Indiana in the front rank of those heroic States which rushed to the rescue of the imperiled Government of the nation. The total number of troops furnished by the State for all terms of service exceeds 200,000 men, much the greater portion of them being for three years; and in addition thereto not less than 50,000 State militia have from time to time been called into active service to repel rebel raids and defend our southern border from invasion."

#### AFTER THE WAR.

In 1867 the Legislature comprised 91 Republicans and 59 Democrats. Soon after the commencement of the session, Gov. Morton resigned his office in consequence of having been elected to the U. S. Senate, and Lieut.-Gov. Conrad Baker assumed the Executive chair during the remainder of Morton's term. This Legislature, by a very decisive vote, ratified the 14th amendment to the Federal Constitution, constituting all persons born in the country or subject to its jurisdiction, citizens of the United States and of the State wherein they reside, without regard to race or color; reduc-





VIEW ON THE WABASH RIVER.



ing the Congressional representation in any State in which there should be a restriction of the exercise of the elective franchise on account of race or color; disfranchising persons therein named who shall have engaged in insurrection or rebellion against the United States; and declaring that the validity of the public debt of the United States authorized by law, shall not be questioned.

This Legislature also passed an act providing for the registry of votes, the punishment of fraudulent practices at elections, and for the apportionment and compensation of a Board of Registration; this Board to consist, in each township, of two freeholders appointed by the County Commissioners, together with the trustee of such township; in cities the freeholders are to be appointed in each ward by the city council. The measures of this law are very strict, and are faithfully executed. No cries of fraud in elections are heard in connection with Indiana.

This Legislature also divided the State into eleven Congressional Districts and apportioned their representation; enacted a law for the protection and indemnity of all officers and soldiers of the United States and soldiers of the Indiana Legion, for acts done in the military service of the United States, and in the military service of the State, and in enforcing the laws and preserving the peace of the country; made definite appropriations to the several benevolent institutions of the State, and adopted several measures for the encouragement of education, etc.

In 1868, Indiana was the first in the field of national politics, both the principal parties holding State conventions early in the year. The Democrats nominated T. A. Hendricks for Governor, and denounced in their platform the reconstruction policy of the Republicans; recommended that United States treasury notes be substituted for national bank currency; denied that the General Government had a right to interfere with the question of suffrage in any of the States, and opposed negro suffrage, etc.; while the Republicans nominated Conrad Baker for Governor, defended its reconstruction policy, opposed a further contraction of the currency, etc. The campaign was an exciting one, and Mr. Baker was elected Governor by a majority of only 961. In the Presidential election that soon followed the State gave Grant 9,572 more than Seymour.

During 1868 Indiana presented claims to the Government for about three and a half millions dollars for expenses incurred in the war, and \$1,958,917.94 was allowed. Also, this year, a legislative

commission reported that \$413,599.48 were allowed to parties suffering loss by the Morgan raid.

This year Governor Baker obtained a site for the House of Refuge. (See a subsequent page.) The Soldiers' and Seamen's Home, near Knightstown, originally established by private enterprise and benevolence, and adopted by the Legislature of the previous year, was in a good condition. Up to that date the institution had afforded relief and temporary subsistence to 400 men who had been disabled in the war. A substantial brick building had been built for the home, while the old buildings were used for an orphans' department, in which were gathered 86 children of deceased soldiers.

### DIVORCE LAWS.

By some mistake or liberal design, the early statute laws of Indiana on the subject of divorce were rather more loose than those of most other States in this Union; and this subject had been a matter of so much jest among the public, that in 1870 the Governor recommended to the Legislature a reform in this direction, which was pretty effectually carried out. Since that time divorces can be granted only for the following causes: 1. Adultery. 2. Impotency existing at the time of marriage. 3. Abandonment for two years. 4. Cruel and inhuman treatment of one party by the other. 5. Habitual drunkenness of either party, or the failure of the husband to make reasonable provision for the family. 6 The failure of the husband to make reasonable provision for the family for a period of two years. 7. The conviction of either party of an infamous crime.

## FINANCIAL.

Were it not for political government the pioneers would have got along without money much longer than they did. The pressure of governmental needs was somewhat in advance of the monetary income of the first settlers, and the little taxation required to carry on the government seemed great and even oppressive, especially at certain periods.

In November, 1821, Gov. Jennings convened the Legislature in extra session to provide for the payment of interest on the State debt and a part of the principal, amounting to \$20,000. It was thought that a sufficient amount would be realized in the notes of the State bank and its branches, although they were considerably depreciated. Said the Governor: "It will be oppressive if, the State, after the paper of this institution (State bank) was authorized to be circulated in revenue, should be prevented by any assignment of the evidences of existing debt, from discharging at least so much of that debt with the paper of the bank as will absorb the collections of the present year; especially when their notes, after being made receivable by the agents of the State, became greatly depreciated by great mismanagement on the part of the bank itself. It ought not to be expected that a public loss to the State should be avoided by resorting to any measures which would not comport with correct views of public justice; nor should it be anticipated that the treasury of the United States would ultimately adopt measures to secure an uncertain debt which would interfere with arrangements calculated to adjust the demand against the State without producing any additional embarrassment."

The state of the public debt was indeed embarrassing, as the bonds which had been executed in its behalf had been assigned. The exciting cause of this proceeding consisted in the machinations of unprincipled speculators. Whatever disposition the principal bank may have made of the funds deposited by the United States, the connection of interest between the steam-mill company and the bank, and the extraordinary accommodations, as well as their amount, effected by arrangements of the steam-mill agency and some of the officers of the bank, were among the principal causes which

had prostrated the paper circulating medium of the State, so far as it was dependent on the State bank and its branches. An abnormal state of affairs like this very naturally produced a blind disbursement of the fund to some extent, and this disbursement would be called by almost every one an "unwise administration."

During the first 16 years of this century, the belligerent condition of Europe called for agricultural supplies from America, and the consequent high price of grain justified even the remote pioneers of Indiana in undertaking the tedious transportation of the products of the soil which the times forced upon them. The large disbursements made by the general Government among the people naturally engendered a rage for speculation; numerous banks with fictitious capital were established; immense issues of paper were made; and the circulating medium of the country was increased fourfold in the course of two or three years. This inflation produced the consequences which always follow such a scheme, namely, unfounded visions of wealth and splendor and the wild investments which result in ruin to the many and wealth to the few. The year 1821 was consequently one of great financial panic, and was the first experienced by the early settlers of the West.

In 1822 the new Governor, William Hendricks, took a hopeful view of the situation, referring particularly to the "agricultural and social happiness of the State." The crops were abundant this year, immigration was setting in heavily and everything seemed to have an upward look. But the customs of the white race still compelling them to patronize European industries, combined with the remoteness of the surplus produce of Indiana from European markets, constituted a serious drawback to the accumulation of wealth. Such a state of things naturally changed the habits of the people to some extent, at least for a short time, assimilating them to those of more primitive tribes. This change of custom, however, was not severe and protracted enough to change the intelligent and social nature of the people, and they arose to their normal height on the very first opportunity.

In 1822-'3, before speculation started up again, the surplus money was invested mainly in domestic manufactories instead of other and wilder commercial enterprises. Home manufactories were what the people needed to make them more independent. They not only gave employment to thousands whose services were before that valueless, but also created a market for a great portion

of the surplus produce of the farmers. A part of the surplus capital, however, was also sunk in internal improvements, some of which were unsuccessful for a time, but eventually proved remunerative.

Noah Noble occupied the Executive chair of the State from 1831 to 1837, commencing his duties amid peculiar embarrassments. The crops of 1832 were short, Asiatic cholera came sweeping along the Ohio and into the interior of the State, and the Black Hawk war raged in the Northwest,—all these at once, and yet the work of internal improvements was actually begun.

#### STATE BANK.

The State bank of Indiana was established by law January 28, 1834. The act of the Legislature, by its own terms, ceased to be a law, January 1, 1857. At the time of its organization in 1834, its outstanding circulation was \$4,208,725, with a debt due to the institution, principally from citizens of the State, of \$6,095,368. During the years 1857-'58 the bank redeemed nearly its entire circulation, providing for the redemption of all outstanding obligations; at this time it had collected from most of its debtors the money which they owed. The amounts of the State's interest in the stock of the bank was \$1,390,000, and the money thus invested was procured by the issue of five per cent bonds, the last of which was payable July 1, 1866. The nominal profits of the bank were \$2,780,604.36. By the law creating the sinking fund, that fund was appropriated, first, to pay the principal and interest on the bonds; secondly, the expenses of the Commissioners; and lastly the cause of common-school education.

The stock in all the branches authorized was subscribed by individuals, and the installment paid as required by the charter. The loan authorized for the payment on the stock allotted to the State, amounting to \$500,000, was obtained at a premium of 1.05 per per cent. on five per cent. stock, making the sum of over \$5,000 on the amount borrowed. In 1836 we find that the State bank was doing good service; agricultural products were abundant, and the market was good; consequently the people were in the full enjoyment of all the blessings of a free government.

By the year 1843 the State was experiencing the disasters and embarrassment consequent upon a system of over-banking, and its natural progeny, over-trading and deceptive speculation. Such a state of things tends to relax the hand of industry by creating false

notions of wealth, and tempt to sudden acquisitions by means as delusive in their results as they are contrary to a primary law of nature. The people began more than ever to see the necessity of falling back upon that branch of industry for which Indiana, especially at that time, was particularly fitted, namely, agriculture, as the true and lasting source of substantial wealth.

Gov. Whitcomb, 1843-'49, succeeded well in maintaining the credit of the State. Measures of compromise between the State and its creditors were adopted by which, ultimately, the public works, although incomplete, were given in payment for the claims against the Government.

At the close of his term, Gov. Whitcomb was elected to the Senate of the United States, and from December, 1848, to December, 1849, Lieut-Gov. Paris C. Dunning was acting Governor.

In 1851 a general banking law was adopted which gave a new impetus to the commerce of the State, and opened the way for a broader volume of general trade; but this law was the source of many abuses; currency was expanded, a delusive idea of wealth again prevailed, and as a consequence, a great deal of damaging speculation was indulged in.

In 1857 the charter of the State bank expired, and the large gains to the State in that institution were directed to the promotion of common-school education.

#### WEALTH AND PROGRESS.

During the war of the Rebellion the financial condition of the people was of course like that of the other Northern States generally. 1870 found the State in a very prosperous condition. October 31 of this year, the date of the fiscal report, there was a surplus of \$373,249 in the treasury. The receipts of the year amounted to \$3,605,639, and the disbursements to \$2,943,600, leaving a balance of \$1,035,288. The total debt of the State in November, 1871, was \$3,937,821.

At the present time the principal articles of export from the State are flour and pork. Nearly all the wheat raised within the State is manufactured into flour within its limits, especially in the northern part. The pork business is the leading one in the southern part of the State.

When we take into consideration the vast extent of railroad lines in this State, in connection with the agricultural and mineral resources, both developed and undeveloped, as already noted, we can



see what a substantial foundation exists for the future welfare of this great commonwealth. Almost every portion of the State is coming up equally. The disposition to monopolize does not exist to a greater degree than is desirable or necessary for healthy competition. Speculators in flour, pork and other commodities appeared during the war, but generally came to ruin at their own game. The agricultural community here is an independent one, understanding its rights, and "knowing them will maintain them."

Indiana is more a manufacturing State, also, than many imagine. It probably has the greatest wagon and carriage manufactory in the world. In 1875 the total number of manufacturing establishments in this State was 16,812; number of steam engines, 3,684, with a total horse-power of 114,961; the total horse-power of water wheels, 38,614; number of hands employed in the manufactories, 86,402; capital employed, is \$117,462,161; wages paid, \$35,461,987; cost of material, \$104,321,632; value of products, \$301,304,271. These figures are on an average about twice what they were only five years previously, at which time they were about double what they were ten years before that. In manufacturing enterprise, it is said that Indiana, in proportion to her population, is considerably in advance of Illinois and Michigan.

In 1870 the assessed valuation of the real estate in Indiana was \$460,120,974; of personal estate, \$203,334,070; true valuation of both, \$1,268,180,543. According to the evidences of increase at that time, the value of taxable property in this State must be double the foregoing figures. This is utterly astonishing, especially when we consider what a large matter it is to double the elements of a large and wealthy State, compared with its increase in infancy.

The taxation for State purposes in 1870 amounted to \$2,943,078; for county purposes, \$4,654,476; and for municipal purposes, \$3,193,577. The total county debt of Indiana in 1870 was \$1,127,269, and the total debt of towns, cities, etc., was \$2,523,934.

In the compilation of this statistical matter we have before us the statistics of every element of progress in Indiana, in the U. S. Census Reports; but as it would be really improper for us further to burden these pages with tables or columns of large numbers, we will conclude by remarking that if any one wishes further details in these matters, he can readily find them in the Census Reports of the Government in any city or village in the country. Besides, almost any one can obtain, free of charge, from his representative in

Congress, all these and other public documents in which he may be interested.

#### INTERNAL IMPROVEMENTS.

This subject began to be agitated as early as 1818, during the administration of Governor Jennings, who, as well as all the Governors succeeding him to 1843, made it a special point in their messages to the Legislature to urge the adoption of measures for the construction of highways and canals and the improvement of the navigation of rivers. Gov. Hendricks in 1822 specified as the most important improvement the navigation of the Falls of the Ohio, the Wabash and White rivers, and other streams, and the construction of the National and other roads through the State.

In 1826 Governor Ray considered the construction of roads and canals as a necessity to place the State on an equal financial footing with the older States East, and in 1829 he added: "This subject can never grow irksome, since it must be the source of the blessings of civilized life. To secure its benefits is a duty enjoined upon the Legislature by the obligations of the social compact."

In 1830 the people became much excited over the project of connecting the streams of the country by "The National New York & Mississippi railroad." The National road and the Michigan and Ohio turnpike were enterprises in which the people and Legislature of Indiana were interested. The latter had already been the cause of much bitter controversy, and its location was then the subject of contention.

In 1832 the work of internal improvements fairly commenced, despite the partial failure of the crops, the Black Hawk war and the Asiatic cholera. Several war parties invaded the Western settlements, exciting great alarm and some suffering. This year the canal commissioners completed the task assigned them and had negotiated the canal bonds in New York city, to the amount of \$100,000, at a premium of  $13\frac{1}{4}$  per cent., on terms honorable to the State and advantageous to the work. Before the close of this year \$54,000 were spent for the improvement of the Michigan road, and \$52,000 were realized from the sale of lands appropriated for its construction. In 1832, 32 miles of the Wabash and Erie canal was placed under contract and work commenced. A communication was addressed to the Governor of Ohio, requesting him to call the attention of the Legislature of that State to the subject of the extension of the canal from the Indiana line through Ohio to the

Lake. In compliance with this request, Governor Lucas promptly laid the subject before the Legislature of the State, and, in a spirit of courtesy, resolutions were adopted by that body, stipulating that if Ohio should ultimately decline to undertake the completion of that portion of the work within her limits before the time fixed by the act of Congress for the completion of the canal, she would, on just and equitable terms, enable Indiana to avail herself of the benefit of the lands granted, by authorizing her to sell them and invest the proceeds in the stock of a company to be incorporated by Ohio; and that she would give Indiana notice of her final determination on or before January 1, 1838. The Legislature of Ohio also authorized and invited the agent of the State of Indiana to select, survey and set apart the lands lying within that State. In keeping with this policy Governor Noble, in 1834, said: "With a view of engaging in works of internal improvement, the propriety of adopting a general plan or system, having reference to the several portions of the State, and the connection of one with the other, naturally suggests itself. No work should be commenced but such as would be of acknowledged public utility, and when completed would form a branch of some general system. In view of this object, the policy of organizing a Board of Public Works is again respectfully suggested." The Governor also called favorable attention to the Lawrenceburg & Indianapolis railway, for which a charter had been granted.

In 1835 the Wabash & Erie canal was pushed rapidly forward. The middle division, extending from the St. Joseph dam to the forks of the Wabash, about 32 miles, was completed, for about \$232,000, including all repairs. Upon this portion of the line navigation was opened on July 4, which day the citizens assembled "to witness the mingling of the waters of the St. Joseph with those of the Wabash, uniting the waters of the northern chain of lakes with those of the Gulf of Mexico in the South." On other parts of the line the work progressed with speed, and the sale of canal lands was unusually active.

In 1836 the first meeting of the State Board of Internal Improvement was convened and entered upon the discharge of its numerous and responsible duties. Having assigned to each member the direction and superintendence of a portion of the work, the next duty to be performed preparatory to the various spheres of active service, was that of procuring the requisite number of engineers. A delegation was sent to the Eastern cities, but returned

without engaging an Engineer-in-Chief for the roads and railways, and without the desired number for the subordinate station; but after considerable delay the Board was fully organized and put in operation. Under their management work on public improvements was successful; the canal progressed steadily; the navigation of the middle division, from Fort Wayne to Huntington, was uninterrupted; 16 miles of the line between Huntington and La Fontaine creek were filled with water this year and made ready for navigation; and the remaining 20 miles were completed, except a portion of the locks; from La Fontaine creek to Logansport progress was made; the line from Georgetown to Lafayette was placed under contract; about 30 miles of the Whitewater canal, extending from Lawrenceburg through the beautiful valley of the Whitewater to Brookville, were also placed under contract, as also 23 miles of the Central canal, passing through Indianapolis, on which work was commenced; also about 20 miles of the southern division of this work, extending from Evansville into the interior, were also contracted for; and on the line of the Cross-Cut canal, from Terre Haute to the intersection of the Central canal, near the mouth of Eel river, a commencement was also made on all the heavy sections. All this in 1836.

Early in this year a party of engineers was organized, and directed to examine into the practicability of the Michigan & Erie canal line, then proposed. The report of their operations favored its expediency. A party of engineers was also fitted out, who entered upon the field of service of the Madison & Lafayette railroad, and contracts were let for its construction from Madison to Vernon, on which work was vigorously commenced. Also, contracts were let for grading and bridging the New Albany & Vincennes road from the former point to Paoli, about 40 miles. Other roads were also undertaken and surveyed, so that indeed a stupendous system of internal improvement was undertaken, and as Gov. Noble truly remarked, upon the issue of that vast enterprise the State of Indiana staked her fortune. She had gone too far to retreat.

In 1837, when Gov. Wallace took the Executive chair, the reaction consequent upon "over-work" by the State in the internal improvement scheme began to be felt by the people. They feared a State debt was being incurred from which they could never be extricated; but the Governor did all he could throughout the term of his administration to keep up the courage of the citizens. He

told them that the astonishing success so far, surpassed even the hopes of the most sanguine, and that the flattering auspices of the future were sufficient to dispel every doubt and quiet every fear. Notwithstanding all his efforts, however, the construction of public works continued to decline, and in his last message he exclaimed: "Never before—I speak it advisedly—never before have you witnessed a period in our local history that more urgently called for the exercise of all the soundest and best attributes of grave and patriotic legislators than the present. \* \* \* The truth is—and it would be folly to conceal it—we have our hands full—full to overflowing; and therefore, to sustain ourselves, to preserve the credit and character of the State unimpaired, and to continue her hitherto unexampled march to wealth and distinction, we have not an hour of time, nor a dollar of money, nor a hand employed in labor, to squander and dissipate upon mere objects of idleness, or taste, or amusement."

The State had borrowed \$3,827,000 for internal improvement purposes, of which \$1,327,000 was for the Wabash & Erie canal and the remainder for other works. The five per cent. interest on debts—about \$200,000—which the State had to pay, had become burdensome, as her resources for this purpose were only two, besides direct taxation, and they were small, namely, the interest on the balances due for canal lands, and the proceeds of the third installment of the surplus revenue, both amounting, in 1838, to about \$45,000.

In August, 1839, all work ceased on these improvements, with one or two exceptions, and most of the contracts were surrendered to the State. This was done according to an act of the Legislature providing for the compensation of contractors by the issue of treasury notes. In addition to this state of affairs, the Legislature of 1839 had made no provision for the payment of interest on the State debt incurred for internal improvements. Concerning this situation Gov. Bigger, in 1840, said that either to go ahead with the works or to abandon them altogether would be equally ruinous to the State, the implication being that the people should wait a little while for a breathing spell and then take hold again.

Of course much individual indebtedness was created during the progress of the work on internal improvement. When operations ceased in 1839, and prices fell at the same time, the people were left in a great measure without the means of commanding money to pay their debts. This condition of private enterprise more than

ever rendered direct taxation inexpedient. Hence it became the policy of Gov. Bigger to provide the means of paying the interest on the State debt without increasing the rate of taxation, and to continue that portion of the public works that could be immediately completed, and from which the earliest returns could be expected.

In 1840 the system embraced ten different works, the most important of which was the Wabash & Erie canal. The aggregate length of the lines embraced in the system was 1,160 miles, and of this only 140 miles had been completed. The amount expended had reached the sum of \$5,600,000, and it required at least \$14,000,000 to complete them. Although the crops of 1841 were very remunerative, this perquisite alone was not sufficient to raise the State again up to the level of going ahead with her gigantic works.

We should here state in detail the amount of work completed and of money expended on the various works up to this time, 1841, which were as follows:

1. The Wabash & Erie canal, from the State line to Tippecanoe, 129 miles in length, completed and navigable for the whole length, at a cost of \$2,041,012. This sum includes the cost of the steamboat lock afterward completed at Delphi.

2. The extension of the Wabash & Erie canal from the mouth of the Tippecanoe to Terre Haute, over 104 miles. The estimated cost of this work was \$1,500,000; and the amount expended for the same \$408,855. The navigation was at this period opened as far down as Lafayette, and a part of the work done in the neighborhood of Covington.

3. The cross-cut canal from Terre Haute to Central canal, 49 miles in length; estimated cost, \$718,672; amount expended, \$420,679; and at this time no part of the course was navigable.

4. The White Water canal, from Lawrenceburg to the mouth of Nettle creek, 76½ miles; estimated cost, \$1,675,738; amount expended to that date, \$1,099,867; and 31 miles of the work was navigable, extending from the Ohio river to Brookville.

5. The Central canal, from the Wabash & Erie canal, to Indianapolis, including the feeder bend at Muncietown, 124 miles in length; total estimated cost, \$2,299,853; amount expended, \$568,046; eight miles completed at that date, and other portions nearly done.

6. Central canal, from Indianapolis to Evansville on the Ohio river, 194 miles in length; total estimated cost, \$3,532,394; amount expended, \$831,302, 19 miles of which was completed at that date, at the southern end, and 16 miles, extending south from Indianapolis, were nearly completed.

7. Erie & Michigan canal, 182 miles in length; estimated cost, \$2,624,823; amount expended, \$156,394. No part of this work finished.

8. The Madison & Indianapolis railroad, over 85 miles in length; total estimated cost, \$2,046,600; amount expended, \$1,493,013. Road finished and in operation for about 28 miles; grading nearly finished for 27 miles in addition, extending to Edensburg.

9. Indianapolis & Lafayette turnpike road, 73 miles in length; total estimated cost, \$593,737; amount expended, \$72,118. The bridging and most of the grading was done on 27 miles, from Crawfordsville to Lafayette.

10. New Albany & Vincennes turnpike road, 105 miles in length; estimated cost, \$1,127,295; amount expended, \$654,411. Forty-one miles graded and macadamized, extending from New Albany to Paoli, and 27 miles in addition partly graded.

11. Jeffersonville & Crawfordsville road, over 164 miles long; total estimated cost, \$1,651,800; amount expended, \$372,737. Forty-five miles were partly graded and bridged, extending from Jeffersonville to Salem, and from Greencastle north.

12. Improvement of the Wabash rapids, undertaken jointly by Indiana and Illinois; estimated cost to Indiana, \$102,500; amount expended by Indiana, \$9,539.

Grand totals: Length of roads and canals, 1,289 miles, only 281 of which have been finished; estimated cost of all the works, \$19,914,424; amount expended, \$8,164,528. The State debt at this time amounted to \$18,469,146. The two principal causes which aggravated the embarrassment of the State at this juncture were, first, paying most of the interest out of the money borrowed, and, secondly, selling bonds on credit. The first error subjected the State to the payment of compound interest, and the people, not feeling the pressure of taxes to discharge the interest, naturally became inattentive to the public policy pursued. Postponement of the payment of interest is demoralizing in every way. During this period the State was held up in an unpleasant manner before the gaze of the world; but be it to the credit of this great

and glorious State, she would not repudiate, as many other States and municipalities have done.

By the year 1850, the so-called "internal improvement" system having been abandoned, private capital and ambition pushed forward various "public works." During this year about 400 miles of plank road were completed, at a cost of \$1,200 to \$1,500 per mile, and about 1,200 miles more were surveyed and in progress. There were in the State at this time 212 miles of railroad in successful operation, of which 124 were completed this year. More than 1,000 miles of railroad were surveyed and in progress.

An attempt was made during the session of the Legislature in 1869 to re-burden the State with the old canal debt, and the matter was considerably agitated in the canvass of 1870. The subject of the Wabash & Erie canal was lightly touched in the Republican platform, occasioning considerable discussion, which probably had some effect on the election in the fall. That election resulted in an average majority in the State of about 2,864 for the Democracy. It being claimed that the Legislature had no authority under the constitution to tax the people for the purpose of aiding in the construction of railroads, the Supreme Court, in April, 1871, decided adversely to such a claim.

## GEOLOGY.

In 1869 the development of mineral resources in the State attracted considerable attention. Rich mines of iron and coal were discovered, as also fine quarries of building stone. The Vincennes railroad passed through some of the richest portions of the mineral region, the engineers of which had accurately determined the quality of richness of the ores. Near Brooklyn, about 20 miles from Indianapolis, is a fine formation of sandstone, yielding good material for buildings in the city; indeed, it is considered the best building stone in the State. The limestone formation at Gosport, continuing 12 miles from that point, is of great variety, and includes the finest and most durable building stone in the world. Portions of it are susceptible only to the chisel; other portions are soft and can be worked with the ordinary tools. At the end of this limestone formation there commences a sandstone series of strata which extends seven miles farther, to a point about 60 miles from Indianapolis. Here an extensive coal bed is reached consisting of seven distinct veins. The first is about two feet thick, the next three feet, another four feet, and the others of various thicknesses.



These beds are all easily worked, having a natural drain, and they yield heavy profits. In the whole of the southwestern part of the State and for 300 miles up the Wabash, coal exists in good quality and abundance.

The scholars, statesmen and philanthropists of Indiana worked hard and long for the appointment of a State Geologist, with sufficient support to enable him to make a thorough geological survey of the State. A partial survey was made as early as 1837-'8, by David Dale Owen, State Geologist, but nothing more was done until 1869, when Prof. Edward T. Cox was appointed State Geologist. For 20 years previous to this date the Governors urged and insisted in all their messages that a thorough survey should be made, but almost, if not quite, in vain. In 1852, Dr. Ryland T. Brown delivered an able address on this subject before the Legislature, showing how much coal, iron, building stone, etc., there were probably; in the State, but the exact localities and qualities not ascertained, and how millions of money could be saved to the State by the expenditure of a few thousand dollars; but "they answered the Doctor in the negative. It must have been because they hadn't time to pass the bill. They were very busy. They had to pass all sorts of regulations concerning the negro. They had to protect a good many white people from marrying negroes. And as they didn't need any labor in the State, if it was 'colored,' they had to make regulations to shut out all of that kind of labor, and to take steps to put out all that unfortunately got in, and they didn't have time to consider the scheme proposed by the white people"—*W. W. Clayton.*

In 1853, the State Board of Agriculture employed Dr. Brown to make a partial examination of the geology of the State, at a salary of \$500 a year, and to this Board the credit is due for the final success of the philanthropists, who in 1869 had the pleasure of witnessing the passage of a Legislative act "to provide for a Department of Geology and Natural Science, in connection with the State Board of Agriculture." Under this act Governor Baker immediately appointed Prof. Edward T. Cox the State Geologist, who has made an able and exhaustive report of the agricultural, mineral and manufacturing resources of this State, world-wide in its celebrity, and a work of which the people of Indiana may be very proud. We can scarcely give even the substance of his report in a work like this, because it is of necessity deeply scientific and made up entirely of local detail.

## COAL.

The coal measures, says Prof. E. T. Cox, cover an area of about 6,500 square miles, in the southwestern part of the State, and extend from Warren county on the north to the Ohio river on the south, a distance of about 150 miles. This area comprises the following counties: Warren, Fountain, Parke, Vermillion, Vigo, Clay, Sullivan, Greene, Knox, Daviess, Martin, Gibson, Pike, Dubois, Vanderburg, Warriek, Spencer, Perry and a small part of Crawford, Monroe, Putnam and Montgomery.

This coal is all bituminous, but is divisible into three well-marked varieties: caking-coal, non-caking-coal or block coal and cannel coal. The total depth of the seams or measures is from 600 to 800 feet, with 12 to 14 distinct seams of coal; but these are not all to be found throughout the area; the seams range from one foot to eleven feet in thickness. The caking coal prevails in the western portion of the area described, and has from three to four workable seams, ranging from three and a half to eleven feet in thickness. At most of the places where these are worked the coal is mined by adits driven in on the face of the ridges, and the deepest shafts in the State are less than 300 feet, the average depth for successful mining not being over 75 feet. This is a bright, black, sometimes glossy, coal, makes good coke and contains a very large percentage of pure illuminating gas. One pound will yield about  $4\frac{1}{4}$  cubic feet of gas, with a power equal to 15 standard sperm candles. The average calculated calorific power of the caking coals is 7,745 heat units, pure carbon being 8,080. Both in the northern and southern portions of the field, the caking coals present similar good qualities, and are a great source of private and public wealth.

The block coal prevails in the eastern part of the field and has an area of about 450 square miles. This is excellent, in its raw state, for making pig iron. It is indeed peculiarly fitted for metallurgical purposes. It has a laminated structure with carbonaceous matter, like charcoal, between the lamina, with slaty cleavage, and it rings under the stroke of the hammer. It is "free-burning," makes an open fire, and without caking, swelling, scaffolding in the furnace or changing form, burns like hickory wood until it is consumed to a white ash and leaves no clinkers. It is likewise valuable for generating steam and for household uses. Many of the principal railway lines in the State are using it in preference to any other coal, as it does not burn out the fire-boxes, and gives as little trouble as wood.

There are eight distinct seams of block coal in this zone, three of which are workable, having an average thickness of four feet. In some places this coal is mined by adits, but generally from shafts, 40 to 80 feet deep. The seams are crossed by cleavage lines, and the coal is usually mined without powder, and may be taken out in blocks weighing a ton or more. When entries or rooms are driven angling across the cleavage lines, the walls of the mine present a zigzag, notched appearance resembling a Virginia worm fence.

In 1871 there were about 24 block coal mines in operation, and about 1,500 tons were mined daily. Since that time this industry has vastly increased. This coal consists of  $81\frac{1}{2}$  to  $83\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. of carbon, and not quite three fourths of one per cent. of sulphur. Calculated calorific power equal to 8,283 heat units. This coal also is equally good both in the northern and southern parts of the field.

The great Indiana coal field is within 150 miles of Chicago or Michigan City, by railroad, from which ports the Lake Superior specular and red hematite ores are landed from vessels that are able to run in a direct course from the ore banks. Considering the proximity of the vast quantities of iron in Michigan and Missouri, one can readily see what a glorious future awaits Indiana in respect to manufactories.

Of the cannel coal, one of the finest seams to be found in the country is in Daviess county, this State. Here it is three and a half feet thick, underlaid by one and a half feet of a beautiful, jet-black caking coal. There is no clay, shale or other foreign matter intervening, and fragments of the caking coal are often found adhering to the cannel. There is no gradual change from one to the other, and the character of each is homogeneous throughout.

The cannel coal makes a delightful fire in open grates, and does not pop and throw off scales into the room, as is usual with this kind of coal. This coal is well adapted to the manufacture of illuminating gas, in respect to both quantity and high illuminating power. One ton of 2,000 pounds of this coal yields 10,400 feet of gas, while the best Pennsylvania coal yields but 8,680 cubic feet. This gas has an illuminating power of 25 candles, while the best Pennsylvania coal gas has that of only 17 candles.

Cannel coal is also found in great abundance in Perry, Greene, Parke and Fountain counties, where its commercial value has already been demonstrated.

Numerous deposits of bog iron ore are found in the northern part of the State, and clay iron-stones and impure carbonates and brown

oxides are found scattered in the vicinity of the coal field. In some places the beds are quite thick and of considerable commercial value.

An abundance of excellent lime is also found in Indiana, especially in Huntington county, where many large kilns are kept in profitable operation.

## AGRICULTURAL.

In 1852 the Legislature passed an act authorizing the organization of county and district agricultural societies, and also establishing a State Board, the provisions of which act are substantially as follows:

1. Thirty or more persons in any one or two counties organizing into a society for the improvement of agriculture, adopting a constitution and by-laws agreeable to the regulations prescribed by the State Board, and appointing the proper officers and raising a sum of \$50 for its own treasury, shall be entitled to the same amount from the fund arising from show licenses in their respective counties.

2. These societies shall offer annual premiums for improvement of soils, tillage, crops, manures, productions, stock, articles of domestic industry, and such other articles, productions and improvements as they may deem proper; they shall encourage, by grant of rewards, agricultural and household manufacturing interests, and so regulate the premiums that small farmers will have equal opportunity with the large; and they shall pay special attention to cost and profit of the inventions and improvements, requiring an exact, detailed statement of the processes competing for rewards.

3. They shall publish in a newspaper annually their list of awards and an abstract of their treasurers' accounts, and they shall report in full to the State Board their proceedings. Failing to do the latter they shall receive no payment from their county funds.

### STATE BOARD OF AGRICULTURE.

The act of Feb. 17, 1852, also established a State Board of Agriculture, with perpetual succession; its annual meetings to be held at Indianapolis on the first Thursday after the first Monday in January, when the reports of the county societies are to be received and agricultural interests discussed and determined upon; it shall make an annual report to the Legislature of receipts, expenses, proceedings, etc., of its own meeting as well as of those of the local

societies; it shall hold State fairs, at such times and places as they may deem proper; may hold two meetings a year, certifying to the State Auditor their expenses, who shall draw his warrant upon the Treasurer for the same.

In 1861 the State Board adopted certain rules, embracing ten sections, for the government of local societies, but in 1868 they were found inexpedient and abandoned. It adopted a resolution admitting delegates from the local societies.

#### THE EXPOSITION.

As the Board found great difficulty in doing justice to exhibitors without an adequate building, the members went earnestly to work in the fall of 1872 to get up an interest in the matter. They appointed a committee of five to confer with the Council or citizens of Indianapolis as to the best mode to be devised for a more thorough and complete exhibition of the industries of the State. The result of the conference was that the time had arrived for a regular "exposition," like that of the older States. At the January meeting in 1873, Hon. Thomas Dowling, of Terre Haute, reported for the committee that they found a general interest in this enterprise, not only at the capital, but also throughout the State. A sub-committee was appointed who devised plans and specifications for the necessary structure, taking lessons mainly from the Kentucky Exposition building at Louisville. All the members of the State Board were in favor of proceeding with the building except Mr. Poole, who feared that, as the interest of the two enterprises were somewhat conflicting, and the Exposition being the more exciting show, it would swallow up the State and county fairs.

The Exposition was opened Sept. 10, 1873, when Hon. John Sutherland, President of the Board, the Mayor of Indianapolis, Senator Morton and Gov. Hendricks delivered addresses. Senator Morton took the high ground that the money spent for an exposition is spent as strictly for educational purposes as that which goes directly into the common school. The exposition is not a mere show, to be idly gazed upon, but an industrial school where one should study and learn. He thought that Indiana had less untillable land than any other State in the Union; 'twas as rich as any and yielded a greater variety of products; and that Indiana was the most prosperous agricultural community in the United States.

The State had nearly 3,700 miles of railroad, not counting side-track, with 400 miles more under contract for building. In 15 or 18 months one can go from Indianapolis to every county in the State by railroad. Indiana has 6,500 square miles of coal field, 450 of which contain block coal, the best in the United States for manufacturing purposes.

On the subject of cheap transportation, he said: "By the census of 1870, Pennsylvania had, of domestic animals of all kinds, 4,006,589, and Indiana, 4,511,094. Pennsylvania had grain to the amount of 60,460,000 bushels, while Indiana had 79,350,454. The value of the farm products of Pennsylvania was estimated to be \$183,946,000; those of Indiana, \$122,914,000. Thus you see that while Indiana had 505,000 head of live stock more, and 19,000,000 bushels of grain more than Pennsylvania, yet the products of Pennsylvania are estimated at \$183,946,000, on account of her greater proximity to market, while those of Indiana are estimated at only \$122,914,000. Thus you can understand the importance of cheap transportation to Indiana.

"Let us see how the question of transportation affects us on the other hand, with reference to the manufacturer of Bessemer steel. Of the 174,000 tons of iron ore used in the blast furnaces of Pittsburg last year, 84,000 tons came from Lake Superior, 64,000 tons from Iron Mountain, Missouri, 20,000 tons from Lake Champlain, and less than 5,000 tons from the home mines of Pennsylvania. They cannot manufacture their iron with the coal they have in Pennsylvania without coking it. We have coal in Indiana with which we can, in its raw state, make the best of iron; while we are 250 miles nearer Lake Superior than Pittsburg, and 430 miles nearer to Iron Mountain. So that the question of transportation determines the fact that Indiana must become the great center for the manufacture of Bessemer steel."

"What we want in this country is diversified labor."

The grand hall of the Exposition buildings is on elevated ground at the head of Alabama street, and commands a fine view of the city. The structure is of brick, 308 feet long by 150 in width, and two stories high. Its elevated galleries extend quite around the building, under the roof, thus affording visitors an opportunity to secure the most commanding view to be had in the city. The lower floor of the grand hall is occupied by the mechanical, geological and miscellaneous departments, and by the offices of the Board, which extend along the entire front. The second floor, which is

approached by three wide stairways, accommodates the fine art, musical and other departments of light mechanics, and is brilliantly lighted by windows and skylights. But as we are here entering the description of a subject magnificent to behold, we enter a description too vast to complete, and we may as well stop here as anywhere.

The Presidents of the State Fairs have been: Gov. J. A. Wright, 1852-'4; Gen. Jos. Orr, 1855; Dr. A. C. Stevenson, 1856-'8; G. D. Wagner, 1859-60; D. P. Holloway, 1861; Jas. D. Williams, 1862, 1870-'1; A. D. Hamrick, 1863, 1867-'9; Stearns Fisher, 1864-'6; John Sutherland, 1872-'4; Wm. Crim, 1875. Secretaries: John B. Dillon, 1852-'3, 1855, 1858-'9; Ignatius Brown, 1856-'7; W. T. Dennis, 1854, 1860-'1; W. H. Loomis, 1862-'6; A. J. Holmes, 1867-'9; Joseph Poole, 1870-'1; Alex. Heron, 1872-'5. Place of fair, Indianapolis every year except: Lafayette, 1853; Madison, 1854; New Albany, 1859; Fort Wayne, 1865; and Terre Haute, 1867. In 1861 there was no fair. The gate and entry receipts increased from \$4,651 in 1852 to \$45,330 in 1874.

On the opening of the Exposition, Oct. 7, 1874, addresses were delivered by the President of the Board, Hon. John Sutherland, and by Govs. Hendricks, Bigler and Pollock. Yvon's celebrated painting, the "Great Republic," was unveiled with great ceremony, and many distinguished guests were present to witness it.

The exhibition of 1875 showed that the plate glass from the southern part of the State was equal to the finest French plate; that the force-blowers made in the eastern part of the State was of a world-wide reputation; that the State has within its bounds the largest wagon manufactory in the world; that in other parts of the State there were all sorts and sizes of manufactories, including rolling mills and blast furnaces, and in the western part coal was mined and shipped at the rate of 2,500 tons a day from one vicinity; and many other facts, which "would astonish the citizens of Indiana themselves even more than the rest of the world."

#### INDIANA HORTICULTURAL SOCIETY.

This society was organized in 1842, thus taking the lead in the West. At this time Henry Ward Beecher was a resident of Indianapolis, engaged not only as a minister but also as editor of the *Indiana Farmer and Gardener*, and his influence was very extensive in the interests of horticulture, floriculture and farming. Prominent among his pioneer co-laborers were Judge Coburn,

Aaron Aldridge, Capt. James Sigarson, D. V. Culley, Reuben Ragan, Stephen Hampton, Cornelius Ratliff, Joshua Lindley, Abner Pope and many others. In the autumn of this year the society held an exhibition, probably the first in the State, if not in the West, in the hall of the new State house. The only premium offered was a set of silver teaspoons for the best seedling apple, which was won by Reuben Ragan, of Putnam county, for an apple christened on this occasion the "Osceola."

The society gave great encouragement to the introduction of new varieties of fruit, especially of the pear, as the soil and climate of Indiana were well adapted to this fruit. But the bright horizon which seemed to be at this time looming up all around the field of the young society's operations was suddenly and thoroughly darkened by the swarm of noxious insects, diseases, blasts of winter and the great distance to market. The prospects of the cause scarcely justified a continuation of the expense of assembling from remote parts of the State, and the meetings of the society therefore soon dwindled away until the organization itself became quite extinct.

But when, in 1852 and afterward, railroads began to traverse the State in all directions, the Legislature provided for the organization of a State Board of Agriculture, whose scope was not only agriculture but also horticulture and the mechanic and household arts. The rapid growth of the State soon necessitated a differentiation of this body, and in the autumn of 1860, at Indianapolis, there was organized the

#### INDIANA POMOLOGICAL SOCIETY.

October 18, Reuben Ragan was elected President and Wm H. Loomis, of Marion county, Secretary. The constitution adopted provided for biennial meetings in January, at Indianapolis. At the first regular meeting, Jan. 9, 1861, a committee-man for each congressional district was appointed, all of them together to be known as the "State Fruit Committee," and twenty-five members were enrolled during this session. At the regular meeting in 1863 the constitution was so amended as to provide for annual sessions, and the address of the newly elected President, Hon. I. G. D. Nelson, of Allen county, urged the establishment of an agricultural college. He continued in the good cause until his work was crowned with success.



In 1864 there was but little done on account of the exhaustive demands of the great war; and the descent of mercury 60° in eighteen hours did so much mischief as to increase the discouragement to the verge of despair. The title of the society was at this meeting, Jan., 1864 changed to that of the Indiana Horticultural Society.

The first several meetings of the society were mostly devoted to revision of fruit lists; and although the good work, from its vastness and complication, became somewhat monotonous, it has been no exception in this respect to the law that all the greatest and most productive labors of mankind require perseverance and toil.

In 1866, George M. Beeler, who had so indefatigably served as secretary for several years, saw himself hastening to his grave and showed his love for the cause of fruit culture by bequeathing to the society the sum of \$1,000. This year also the State Superintendent of Public Instruction was induced to take a copy of the Society's transactions for each of the township libraries in the State, and this enabled the Society to bind its volume of proceedings in a substantial manner.

At the meeting in 1867 many valuable and interesting papers were presented, the office of corresponding secretary was created, and the subject of Legislative aid was discussed. The State Board of Agriculture placed the management of the horticultural department of the State fair in the care of the Society.

The report for 1868 shows for the first time a balance on hand, after paying expenses, the balance being \$61.55. Up to this time the Society had to take care of itself,—meeting current expenses, doing its own printing and binding, “boarding and clothing itself,” and diffusing annually an amount of knowledge utterly incalculable. During the year called meetings were held at Salem, in the peach and grape season, and evenings during the State fair, which was held in Terre Haute the previous fall. The State now assumed the cost of printing and binding, but the volume of transactions was not quite so valuable as that of the former year.

In 1870 \$160 was given to this Society by the State Board of Agriculture, to be distributed as prizes for essays, which object was faithfully carried out. The practice has since then been continued.

In 1871 the Horticultural Society brought out the best volume of papers and proceedings it ever has had published.

In 1872 the office of corresponding secretary was discontinued; the appropriation by the State Board of Agriculture diverted to the payment of premiums on small fruits given at a show held the previous summer; results of the exhibition not entirely satisfactory.

In 1873 the State officials refused to publish the discussions of the members of the Horticultural Society, and the Legislature appropriated \$500 for the purpose for each of the ensuing two years.

In 1875 the Legislature enacted a law requiring that one of the trustees of Purdue University shall be selected by the Horticultural Society.

The aggregate annual membership of this society from its organization in 1860 to 1875 was 1,225.

## EDUCATION.

The subject of education has been referred to in almost every gubernatorial message from the organization of the Territory to the present time. It is indeed the most favorite enterprise of the Hoosier State. In the first survey of Western lands, Congress set apart a section of land in every township, generally the 16th, for school purposes, the disposition of the land to be in hands of the residents of the respective townships. Besides this, to this State were given two entire townships for the use of a State Seminary, to be under the control of the Legislature. Also, the State constitution provides that all fines for the breach of law and all commutations for militia service be appropriated to the use of county seminaries. In 1825 the common-school lands amounted to 680,207 acres, estimated at \$2 an acre, and valued therefore at \$1,216,044. At this time the seminary at Bloomington, supported in part by one of these township grants, was very flourishing. The common schools, however, were in rather a poor condition.

## PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

In 1852 the free-school system was fully established, which has resulted in placing Indiana in the lead of this great nation. Although this is a pleasant subject, it is a very large one to treat in a condensed notice, as this has to be.

The free-school system of Indiana first became practically operative the first Monday of April, 1853, when the township trustees

for school purposes were elected through the State. The law committed to them the charge of all the educational affairs in their respective townships. As it was feared by the opponents of the law that it would not be possible to select men in all the townships capable of executing the school laws satisfactorily, the people were thereby awakened to the necessity of electing their very best men; and although, of course, many blunders have been made by trustees, the operation of the law has tended to elevate the adult population as well as the youth; and Indiana still adheres to the policy of appointing its best men to educational positions. The result is a grand surprise to all old fogies, who indeed scarcely dare to appear such any longer.

To instruct the people in the new law and set the educational machinery going, a pamphlet of over 60 pages, embracing the law, with notes and explanations, was issued from the office of a superintendent of public instruction, and distributed freely throughout the State. The first duty of the Board of Trustees was to establish and conveniently locate a sufficient number of schools for the education of all the children of their township. But where were the school-houses, and what were they? Previously they had been erected by single districts, but under this law districts were abolished, their lines obliterated, and houses previously built by districts became the property of the township, and all the houses were to be built at the expense of the township by an appropriation of township funds by the trustees. In some townships there was not a single school-house of any kind, and in others there were a few old, leaky, dilapidated log cabins, wholly unfit for use even in summer, and in "winter worse than nothing." Before the people could be tolerably accommodated with schools at least 3,500 school-houses had to be erected in the State.

By a general law, enacted in conformity to the constitution of 1852, each township was made a municipal corporation, and every voter in the township a member of the corporation; the Board of Trustees constituted the township legislature as well as the executive body, the whole body of voters, however, exercising direct control through frequent meetings called by the trustees. Special taxes and every other matter of importance were directly voted upon.

Some tax-payers, who were opposed to special townships' taxes, retarded the progress of schools by refusing to pay their assessment. Contracts for building school-houses were given up, houses

half finished were abandoned, and in many townships all school operations were suspended. In some of them, indeed, a rumor was circulated by the enemies of the law that the entire school law from beginning to end had been declared by the Supreme Court unconstitutional and void; and the Trustees, believing this, actually dismissed their schools and considered themselves out of office. Hon. W. C. Larrabee, the (first) Superintendent of Public Instruction, corrected this error as soon as possible.

But while the voting of special taxes was doubted on a constitutional point, it became evident that it was weak in a practical point; for in many townships the opponents of the system voted down every proposition for the erection of school-houses.

Another serious obstacle was the great deficiency in the number of qualified teachers. To meet the newly created want, the law authorized the appointment of deputies in each county to examine and license persons to teach, leaving it in their judgment to lower the standard of qualification sufficiently to enable them to license as many as were needed to supply all the schools. It was therefore found necessary to employ many "unqualified" teachers, especially in the remote rural districts. But the progress of the times enabled the Legislature of 1853 to erect a standard of qualification and give to the county commissioners the authority to license teachers; and in order to supply every school with a teacher, while there might not be a sufficient number of properly qualified teachers, the commissioners were authorized to grant temporary licenses to take charge of particular schools not needing a high grade of teachers.

In 1854 the available common-school fund consisted of the congressional township fund, the surplus revenue fund, the saline fund, the bank tax fund and miscellaneous fund, amounting in all to \$2,460,600. This amount, from many sources, was subsequently increased to a very great extent. The common-school fund was intrusted to the several counties of the State, which were held responsible for the preservation thereof and for the payment of the annual interest thereon. The fund was managed by the auditors and treasurers of the several counties, for which these officers were allowed one-tenth of the income. It was loaned out to the citizens of the county in sums not exceeding \$300, on real estate security. The common-school fund was thus consolidated and the proceeds equally distributed each year to all the townships, cities and towns

of the State, in proportion to the number of children. This phase of the law met with considerable opposition in 1854.

The provisions of the law for the establishment of township libraries was promptly carried into effect, and much time, labor and thought were devoted to the selection of books, special attention being paid to historical works.

The greatest need in 1854 was for qualified teachers; but nevertheless the progress of public education during this and following years was very great. School-houses were erected, many of them being fine structures, well furnished, and the libraries were considerably enlarged.

The city school system of Indiana received a heavy set-back in 1858, by a decision of the Supreme Court of the State, that the law authorizing cities and townships to levy a tax additional to the State tax was not in conformity with that clause in the Constitution which required uniformity in taxation. The schools were stopped for want of adequate funds. For a few weeks in each year thereafter the feeble "uniform" supply from the State fund enabled the people to open the schools, but considering the returns the public realizes for so small an outlay in educational matters, this proved more expensive than ever. Private schools increased, but the attendance was small. Thus the interests of popular education languished for years. But since the revival of the free schools, the State fund has grown to vast proportions, and the schools of this intelligent and enterprising commonwealth compare favorably with those of any other portion of the United States.

There is no occasion to present all the statistics of school progress in this State from the first to the present time, but some interest will be taken in the latest statistics, which we take from the 9th Biennial Report (for 1877-'8) by the State Superintendent of Public Instruction, Hon. James H. Smart. This report, by the way, is a volume of 480 octavo pages, and is free to all who desire a copy.

The rapid, substantial and permanent increase which Indiana enjoys in her school interests is thus set forth in the above report.

Year.	Length of School in Days.	No of Teachers.	Attendance at School.	School Enumeration.	Total Am't Paid Teachers.
1855	61	4,016	206,994	445,791	\$ 239,924
1860	65	7,649	303,744	495,019	481,020
1865	66	9,493	402,812	557,092	1,020,440
1870	97	11,826	462,527	619,627	1,810,866
1875	130	13,133	502,362	667,736	2,830,747
1878	129	13,676	512,535	699,153	3,065,968

The increase of school population during the past ten years has been as follows:

Total in 1868, 592,865.			
Increase for year ending		Increase for year ending	
Sept. 1, 1869.....	17,699	May 1, 1874.....	13,922
" 1, 1870.....	9,063	" 1, 1875.....	13,372
" 1, 1871.....	3,101	" 1, 1876.....	11,494
" 1, 1872.....	8,811	" 1, 1877.....	15,476
May 1, 1873 (8 months).....	8,903	" 1, 1878.....	4,447
		Total, 1878.....	699,153
No. of white males.....	354,271;	females.....	333,033.....
" " colored " .....	5,937;	" .....	5,912.....
		699,153	

Twenty-nine per cent. of the above are in the 49 cities and 212 incorporated towns, and 71 per cent. in the 1,011 townships.

The number of white males enrolled in the schools in 1878 was 267,315, and of white females, 237,739; total, 505,054; of colored males, 3,794; females, 3,687; total, 7,481; grand total, 512,535.

The average number enrolled in each district varies from 51 to 56, and the average daily attendance from 32 to 35; but many children reported as absent attend parochial or private schools. Seventy-three per cent. of the white children and 63 per cent. of the colored, in the State, are enrolled in the schools.

The number of days taught vary materially in the different townships, and on this point State Superintendent Smart iterates: "As long as the schools of some of our townships are kept open but 60 days and others 220 days, we do not have a uniform system,—such as was contemplated by the constitution. The school law requires the trustee of a township to maintain each of the schools in his corporation an equal length of time. This provision cannot be so easily applied to the various counties of the State, for the reason that there is a variation in the density of the population, in the wealth of the people, and the amount of the township funds. I think, however, there is scarcely a township trustee in the State who cannot, under the present law, if he chooses to do so, bring his schools up to an average of six months. I think it would be wise to require each township trustee to levy a sufficient local tax to maintain the schools at least six months of the year, provided this can be done without increasing the local tax beyond the amount now permitted by law. This would tend to bring the poorer schools up to the standard of the best, and would thus unify the system, and make it indeed a common-school system."

The State, however, averages six and a half months school per year to each district.

The number of school districts in the State in 1878 was 9,380, in all but 34 of which school was taught during that year. There are 396 district and 151 township graded schools. Number of white male teachers, 7,977, and of female, 5,699; colored, male, 62, and female, 43; grand total, 13,781. For the ten years ending with 1878 there was an increase of 409 male teachers and 811 female teachers. All these teachers, except about 200, attend normal institutes,—a showing which probably surpasses that of any other State in this respect.

The average daily compensation of teachers throughout the State in 1878 was as follows: In townships, males, \$1.90; females, \$1.70; in towns, males, \$3.09; females, \$1.81; in cities, males, \$4.06; females, \$2.29.

In 1878 there were 89 stone school-houses, 1,724 brick, 7,608 frame, and 124 log; total, 9,545, valued at \$11,536,647.39.

And lastly, and best of all, we are happy to state that Indiana has a larger school fund than any other State in the Union. In 1872, according to the statistics before us, it was larger than that of any other State by \$2,000,000! the figures being as follows:

Indiana.....	\$8,437,593.47	Michigan.....	\$2,500,214.91
Ohio.....	6,614,816.50	Missouri.....	2,525,252.52
Illinois.....	6,348,538.32	Minnesota.....	2,471,199.31
New York.....	2,880,017.01	Wisconsin.....	2,237,414.37
Connecticut.....	2,809,770.70	Massachusetts.....	2,210,864.09
Iowa.....	4,274,581.93	Arkansas.....	2,000,000.00

Nearly all the rest of the States have less than a million dollars in their school fund.

In 1872 the common-school fund of Indiana consisted of the following:

Non-negotiable bonds.....	\$3,591,316.15	Escheated estates.....	17,866.55
Common-school fund,....	1,666,24.50	Sinking fund, last distrib-	
Sinking fund, at 8 per cent	569,139.94	ution.....	67,068.72
Congressional township		Sinking fund undistrib-	
fund.....	2,281,076.69	uted.....	100,165.92
Value of unsold Congres-		Swamp land fund .....	42,418.40
sional township lands..	94,245.00		
Saline fund.....	5,727.66		
Bank tax fund.....	1,744.94		
			<hr/>
			\$8,437,593 47

In 1878 the grand total was \$8,974,455.55.

The origin of the respective school funds of Indiana is as follows:

1. The "Congressional township" fund is derived from the proceeds of the 16th sections of the townships. Almost all of these

have been sold and the money put out at interest. The amount of this fund in 1877 was \$2,452,936.82.

2. The "saline" fund consists of the proceeds of the sale of salt springs, and the land adjoining necessary for working them to the amount of 36 entire sections, authorized by the original act of Congress. By authority of the same act the Legislature has made these proceeds a part of the permanent school fund.

3. The "surplus revenue" fund. Under the administration of President Jackson, the national debt, contracted by the Revolutionary war and the purchase of Louisiana, was entirely discharged, and a large surplus remained in the treasury. In June, 1836, Congress distributed this money among the States in the ratio of their representation in Congress, subject to recall, and Indiana's share was \$860,254. The Legislature subsequently set apart \$573,502.96 of this amount to be a part of the school fund. It is not probable that the general Government will ever recall this money.

4. "Bank tax" fund. The Legislature of 1834 chartered a State Bank, of which a part of the stock was owned by the State and a part by individuals. Section 15 of the charter required an annual deduction from the dividends, equal to  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents on each share not held by the State, to be set apart for common-school education. This tax finally amounted to \$80,000, which now bears interest in favor of education.

5. "Sinking" fund. In order to set the State bank under good headway, the State at first borrowed \$1,300,000, and out of the unapplied balances a fund was created, increased by unapplied balances also of the principal, interest and dividends of the amount lent to the individual holders of stock, for the purpose of sinking the debt of the bank; hence the name sinking fund. The 114th section of the charter provided that after the full payment of the bank's indebtedness, principal, interest and incidental expenses, the residue of said fund should be a permanent fund, appropriated to the cause of education. As the charter extended through a period of 25 years, this fund ultimately reached the handsome amount of \$5,000,000.

The foregoing are all interest-bearing funds; the following are additional school funds, but not productive:

6. "Seminary" fund. By order of the Legislature in 1852, all county seminaries were sold, and the net proceeds placed in the common-school fund.



7. All fines for the violation of the penal laws of the State are placed to the credit of the common-school fund

8. All recognizances of witnesses and parties indicted for crime, when forfeited, are collectible by law and made a part of the school fund. These are reported to the office of the State Superintendent of Public Instruction annually. For the five years ending with 1872, they averaged about \$34,000 a year.

9. Escheats. These amount to \$17,865.55, which was still in the State treasury in 1872 and unapplied.

10. The "swamp-land" fund arises from the sale of certain Congressional land grants, not devoted to any particular purpose by the terms of the grant. In 1872 there was \$42,418.40 of this money, subject to call by the school interests.

11. Taxes on corporations are to some extent devoted by the Constitution to school purposes, but the clause on this subject is somewhat obscure, and no funds as yet have been realized from this source. It is supposed that several large sums of money are due the common-school fund from the corporations.

Constitutionally, any of the above funds may be increased, but never diminished.

#### INDIANA STATE UNIVERSITY.

So early as 1802 the U. S. Congress granted lands and a charter to the people of that portion of the Northwestern Territory residing at Vincennes, for the erection and maintenance of a seminary of learning in that early settled district; and five years afterward an act incorporating the Vincennes University asked the Legislature to appoint a Board of Trustees for the institution and order the sale of a single township in Gibson county, granted by Congress in 1802, so that the proceeds might be at once devoted to the objects of education. On this Board the following gentlemen were appointed to act in the interests of the institution: William H. Harrison, John Gibson, Thomas H. Davis, Henry Vanderburgh, Walter Taylor, Benjamin Parke, Peter Jones, James Johnson, John Rice Jones, George Wallace, William Bullitt, Elias McNamee, John Badolett, Henry Hurst, Gen. W. Johnston, Francis Vigo, Jacob Kuykendall, Samuel McKee, Nathaniel Ewing, George Leech, Luke Decker, Samuel Gwathmey and John Johnson.

The sale of this land was slow and the proceeds small. The members of the Board, too, were apathetic, and failing to meet, the institution fell out of existence and out of memory.

In 1816 Congress granted another township in Monroe county, located within its present limits, and the foundation of a university was laid. Four years later, and after Indiana was erected into a State, an act of the local Legislature appointing another Board of Trustees and authorizing them to select a location for a university and to enter into contracts for its construction, was passed. The new Board met at Bloomington and selected a site at that place for the location of the present building, entered into a contract for the erection of the same in 1822, and in 1825 had the satisfaction of being present at the inauguration of the university. The first session was commenced under the Rev. Baynard R. Hall, with 20 students, and when the learned professor could only boast of a salary of \$150 a year; yet, on this very limited sum the gentleman worked with energy and soon brought the enterprise through all its elementary stages to the position of an academic institution. Dividing the year into two sessions of five months each, the Board acting under his advice, changed the name to the "Indiana Academy," under which title it was duly chartered. In 1827 Prof. John H. Harney was raised to the chairs of mathematics, natural philosophy and astronomy, at a salary of \$300 a year; and the salary of Mr. Hall raised to \$400 a year. In 1828 the name was again changed by the Legislature to the "Indiana College," and the following professors appointed over the different departments: Rev. Andrew Wylie, D. D., Prof. of mental and moral philosophy and belles lettres; John H. Harney, Prof. of mathematics and natural philosophy; and Rev. Bayard R. Hall, Prof. of ancient languages. This year, also, dispositions were made for the sale of Gibson county lands and for the erection of a new college building. This action was opposed by some legal difficulties, which after a time were overcome, and the new college building was put under construction, and continued to prosper until 1854, when it was destroyed by fire, and 9,000 volumes, with all the apparatus, were consumed. The curriculum was then carried out in a temporary building, while a new structure was going up.

In 1873 the new college, with its additions, was completed, and the routine of studies continued. A museum of natural history, a laboratory and the Owen cabinet added, and the standard of the studies and *morale* generally increased in excellence and in strictness.

Bloomington is a fine, healthful locality, on the Louisville, New Albany & Chicago railway. The University buildings are in the

collegiate Gothic style, simply and truly carried out. The building, fronting College avenue is 145 feet in front. It consists of a central building 60 feet by 53, with wings each 38 feet by 26, and the whole, three stories high. The new building, fronting the west, is 130 feet by 50. Buildings lighted by gas.

The faculty numbers thirteen. Number of students in the collegiate department in 1879-'80, 183; in preparatory, 169; total, 349, allowing for three counted twice.

The university may now be considered on a fixed foundation, carrying out the intention of the President, who aimed at scholarship rather than numbers, and demands the attention of eleven professors, together with the State Geologist, who is ex-officio member of the faculty, and required to lecture at intervals and look after the geological and mineralogical interests of the institution. The faculty of medicine is represented by eleven leading physicians of the neighborhood. The faculty of law requires two resident professors, and the other chairs remarkably well represented.

The university received from the State annually about \$15,000, and promises with the aid of other public grants and private donations to vie with any other State university within the Republic.

#### PURDUE UNIVERSITY.

This is a "college for the benefit of agricultural and the mechanic arts," as provided for by act of Congress, July 2, 1862, donating lands for this purpose to the extent of 30,000 acres of the public domain to each Senator and Representative in the Federal assembly. Indiana having in Congress at that time thirteen members, became entitled to 390,000 acres; but as there was no Congress land in the State at this time, scrip had to be taken, and it was upon the following condition (we quote the act):

"SECTION 4. That all moneys derived from the sale of land scrip shall be invested in the stocks of the United States, or of some other safe stocks, yielding no less than five per centum upon the par value of said stocks; and that the moneys so invested shall constitute a perpetual fund, the capital of which shall remain undiminished, except so far as may be provided in section 5 of this act, and the interest of which shall be inviolably appropriated by each State, which may take and claim the benefit of this act, to the endowment, support and maintenance of at least one college, where the leading object shall be, without excluding other scientific and

classical studies, and including military tactics, to teach such branches of learning as are related to agriculture and the mechanic arts, in such a manner as the Legislatures of the States may respectively prescribe, in order to promote the liberal and practical education of the industrial classes in the several pursuits and professions of life.

"SEC. 5. That the grant of land and land scrip hereby authorized shall be made on the following conditions, to which, as well as the provision hereinbefore contained, the previous assent of the several States shall be signified by Legislative act:

"First. If any portion of the funds invested as provided by the foregoing section, or any portion of the interest thereon, shall by any action or contingency be diminished or lost, it shall be replaced by the State to which it belongs, so that the capital of the fund shall remain forever undiminished, and the annual interest shall be regularly applied, without diminution, to the purposes mentioned in the fourth section of this act, except that a sum not exceeding ten per centum upon the amount received by any State under the provisions of this act may be expended for the purchase of lands for sites or experimental farms, whenever authorized by the respective Legislatures of said States.

"Second. No portion of said fund, nor interest thereon, shall be applied, directly or indirectly, under any pretence whatever, to the purchase, erection, preservation or repair of any building or buildings.

"Third. Any State which may take and claim the benefit of the provisions of this act, shall provide, within five years at least, not less than one college, as provided in the fourth section of this act, or the grant to such State shall cease and said State be bound to pay the United States the amount received of any lands previously sold, and that the title to purchase under the States shall be valid.

"Fourth. An annual report shall be made regarding the progress of each college, recording any improvements and experiments made, with their cost and result, and such other matter, including State industrial and economical statistics, as may be supposed useful, one copy of which shall be transmitted by mail free, by each, to all other colleges which may be endowed under the provisions of this act, and also one copy to the Secretary of the Interior.

"Fifth. When lands shall be selected from those which have been raised to double the minimum price in consequence of railroad

grants, that they shall be computed to the States at the maximum price, and the number of acres proportionately diminished.

"Sixth. No State, while in a condition of rebellion or insurrection against the Government of the United States, shall be entitled to the benefits of this act.

"Seventh. No State shall be entitled to the benefits of this act unless it shall express its acceptance thereof by its Legislature within two years from the date of its approval by the President."

The foregoing act was approved by the President, July 2, 1862. It seemed that this law, amid the din of arms with the great Rebellion, was about to pass altogether unnoticed by the next General Assembly, January, 1863, had not Gov. Morton's attention been called to it by a delegation of citizens from Tippecanoe county, who visited him in the interest of Battle Ground. He thereupon sent a special message to the Legislature, upon the subject, and then public attention was excited to it everywhere, and several localities competed for the institution; indeed, the rivalry was so great that this session failed to act in the matter at all, and would have failed to accept of the grant within the two years prescribed in the last clause quoted above, had not Congress, by a supplementary act, extended the time two years longer.

March 6, 1865, the Legislature accepted the conditions of the national gift, and organized the Board of "Trustees of the Indiana Agricultural College." This Board, by authority, sold the scrip April 9, 1867, for \$212,238.50, which sum, by compounding, has increased to nearly \$400,000, and is invested in U. S. bonds. Not until the special session of May, 1869, was the locality for this college selected, when John Purdue, of Lafayette, offered \$150,000 and Tippecanoe county \$50,000 more, and the title of the institution changed to "Purdue University." Donations were also made by the Battle Ground Institute and the Battle Ground Institute of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

The building was located on a 100-acre tract near Chauncey, which Purdue gave in addition to his magnificent donation, and to which 86½ acres more have since been added on the north. The boarding-house, dormitory, the laboratory, boiler and gas house, a frame armory and gymnasium, stable with shed and work-shop are all to the north of the gravel road, and form a group of buildings within a circle of 600 feet. The boiler and gas house occupy a rather central position, and supply steam and gas to the boarding-house, dormitory and laboratory. A description of these buildings

may be apropos. The boarding-house is a brick structure, in the modern Italian style, planked by a turret at each of the front angles and measuring 120 feet front by 68 feet deep. The dormitory is a quadrangular edifice, in the plain Elizabethan style, four stories high, arranged to accommodate 125 students. Like the other buildings, it is heated by steam and lighted by gas. Bathing accommodations are in each end of all the stories. The laboratory is almost a duplicate of a similar department in Brown University, R. I. It is a much smaller building than the boarding-house, but yet sufficiently large to meet the requirements. A collection of minerals, fossils and antiquities, purchased from Mr. Richard Owen, former President of the institution, occupies the temporary cabinet or museum, pending the construction of a new building. The military hall and gymnasium is 100 feet frontage by 50 feet deep, and only one story high. The uses to which this hall is devoted are exercises in physical and military drill. The boiler and gas house is an establishment replete in itself, possessing every facility for supplying the buildings of the university with adequate heat and light. It is further provided with pumping works. Convenient to this department is the retort and great meters of the gas house, capable of holding 9,000 cubic feet of gas, and arranged upon the principles of modern science. The barn and shed form a single building, both useful, convenient and ornamental.

In connection with the agricultural department of the university, a brick residence and barn were erected and placed at the disposal of the farm superintendent, Maj. L. A. Burke.

The buildings enumerated above have been erected at a cost approximating the following: boarding-house, \$37,807.07; laboratory, \$15,000; dormitory, \$32,000; military hall and gymnasium, \$6,410.47; boiler and gas house, \$4,814; barn and shed, \$1,500; work-shop, \$1,000; dwelling and barn, \$2,500.

Besides the original donations, Legislative appropriations, varying in amount, have been made from time to time, and Mr. Pierce, the treasurer, has donated his official salary, \$600 a year, for the time he served, for decorating the grounds,—if necessary.

The opening of the university was, owing to varied circumstances, postponed from time to time, and not until March, 1874, was a class formed, and this only to comply with the act of Congress in that connection in its relation to the university. However, in September following a curriculum was adopted, and the first regular term of the Purdue University entered upon. This curriculum

comprises the varied subjects generally pertaining to a first-class university course, namely: in the school of natural science—physics and industrial mechanics, chemistry and natural history; in the school of engineering—civil and mining, together with the principles of architecture; in the school of agriculture—theoretical and practical agriculture, horticulture and veterinary science; in the military school—the mathematical sciences, German and French literature, free-hand and mechanical drawing, with all the studies pertaining to the natural and military sciences. Modern languages and natural history embrace their respective courses to the fullest extent.

There are this year (1880) eleven members of the faculty, 86 students in the regular courses, and 117 other students. In respect to attendance there has been a constant increase from the first. The first year, 1874-'5, there were but 64 students.

#### INDIANA STATE NORMAL SCHOOL.

This institution was founded at Terre Haute in 1870, in accordance with the act of the Legislature of that year. The building is a large brick edifice situated upon a commanding location and possessing some architectural beauties. From its inauguration many obstacles opposed its advance toward efficiency and success; but the Board of Trustees, composed of men experienced in educational matters, exercised their strength of mind and body to overcome every difficulty, and secure for the State Normal School every distinction and emolument that lay within their power. Their efforts to this end being very successful; and it is a fact that the institution has arrived at, if not eclipsed, the standard of their expectations. Not alone does the course of study embrace the legal subjects known as reading, writing, spelling, arithmetic, geography, United States history, English grammar, physiology, manners and ethics, but it includes also universal history, the mathematical sciences and many other subjects foreign to older institutions. The first studies are prescribed by law and must be inculcated; the second are optional with the professors, and in the case of Indiana generally hold place in the curriculum of the normal school.

The model, or training school, specially designed for the training of teachers, forms a most important factor in State educational matters, and prepares teachers of both sexes for one of the most important positions in life; viz., that of educating the youth of the

State. The advanced course of studies, together with the higher studies of the normal school, embraces Latin and German, and prepares young men and women for entrance to the State University.

The efficiency of this school may be elicited from the following facts, taken from the official reports: out of 41 persons who had graduated from the elementary course, nine, after teaching successfully in the public schools of this State from two terms to two years, returned to the institution and sought admission to the advanced classes. They were admitted; three of them were gentlemen and six ladies. After spending two years and two terms in the elementary course, and then teaching in the schools during the time already mentioned they returned to spend two and a half or three years more, and for the avowed purpose of qualifying themselves for teaching in the most responsible positions of the public school service. In fact, no student is admitted to the school who does not in good faith declare his intention to qualify himself for teaching in the schools of the State. This the law requires, and the rule is adhered to literally.

The report further says, in speaking of the government of the school, that the fundamental idea is rational freedom, or that freedom which gives exemption from the power of control of one over another, or, in other words, the self-limiting of themselves, in their acts, by a recognition of the rights of others who are equally free. The idea and origin of the school being laid down, and also the means by which scholarship can be realized in the individual, the student is left to form his own conduct, both during session hours and while away from school. The teacher merely stands between this scholastic idea and the student's own partial conception of it, as expositor or interpreter. The teacher is not legislator, executor or police officer; he is expounder of the true idea of school law, so that the only test of the student's conduct is obedience to, or nonconformity with, that law as interpreted by the teacher. This idea once inculcated in the minds of the students, insures industry, punctuality and order.

NORTHERN INDIANA NORMAL SCHOOL AND BUSINESS INSTITUTE,  
VALPARAISO.

This institution was organized Sept. 16, 1873, with 35 students in attendance. The school occupied the building known as the Valparaiso Male and Female College building. Four teachers



were employed. The attendance, so small at first, increased rapidly and steadily, until at the present writing, the seventh year in the history of the school, the yearly enrollment is more than three thousand. The number of instructors now employed is 23.

From time to time, additions have been made to the school buildings, and numerous boarding halls have been erected, so that now the value of the buildings and grounds owned by the school is one hundred thousand dollars.

A large library has been collected, and a complete equipment of philosophical and chemical apparatus has been purchased. The department of physiology is supplied with skeletons, manikins, and everything necessary to the demonstration of each branch of the subject. A large cabinet is provided for the study of geology. In fact, each department of the school is completely furnished with the apparatus needed for the most approved presentation of every subject.

There are 15 chartered departments in the institution. These are in charge of thorough, energetic, and scholarly instructors, and send forth each year as graduates, a large number of finely cultured young ladies and gentlemen, living testimonials of the efficiency of the course of study and the methods used.

The Commercial College in connection with the school is in itself a great institution. It is finely fitted up and furnished, and ranks foremost among the business colleges of the United States.

The expenses for tuition, room and board, have been made so low that an opportunity for obtaining a thorough education is presented to the poor and the rich alike.

All of this work has been accomplished in the short space of seven years. The school now holds a high place among educational institutions, and is the largest normal school in the United States.

This wonderful growth and development is wholly due to the energy and faithfulness of its teachers, and the unparalleled executive ability of its proprietor and principal. The school is not endowed.

#### DENOMINATIONAL AND PRIVATE INSTITUTIONS.

Nor is Indiana behind in literary institutions under denominational auspices. It is not to be understood, however, at the present day, that sectarian doctrines are insisted upon at the so-called "denominational" colleges, universities and seminaries; the youth at these places are influenced only by Christian example.

*Notre Dame University*, near South Bend, is a Catholic institution, and is one of the most noted in the United States. It was founded in 1842 by Father Sorin. The first building was erected in 1843, and the university has continued to grow and prosper until the present time, now having 35 professors, 26 instructors, 9 tutors, 213 students and 12,000 volumes in library. At present the main building has a frontage of 224 feet and a depth of 155. Thousands of young people have received their education here, and a large number have been graduated for the priesthood. A chapter was held here in 1872, attended by delegates from all parts of the world. It is worthy of mention that this institution has a bell weighing 13,000 pounds, the largest in the United States and one of the finest in the world.

The *Indiana Asbury University*, at Greencastle, is an old and well-established institution under the auspices of the Methodist Episcopal Church, named after its first bishop, Asbury. It was founded in 1835, and in 1872 it had nine professors and 172 students.

*Howard College*, not denominational, is located at Kokomo, and was founded in 1869. In 1872 it had five professors, four instructors, and 69 students.

*Union Christian College*, Christian, at Merom, was organized in 1858; and in 1872 had four resident professors, seven instructors and 156 students.

*Moore's Hill College*, Methodist Episcopal, is situated at Moore's Hill, was founded in 1854, and in 1872 had five resident professors, five instructors, and 142 students.

*Earlham's College*, at Richmond, is under the management of the Orthodox Friends, and was founded in 1859. In 1872 they had six resident professors and 167 students, and 3,300 volumes in library.

*Wabash College*, at Crawfordsville, was organized in 1834, and had in 1872, eight professors and teachers, and 231 students, with about 12,000 volumes in the library. It is under Presbyterian management.

*Concordia College*, Lutheran, at Fort Wayne, was founded in 1850; in 1872 it had four professors and 148 students: 3,000 volumes in library.

*Hanover College*, Presbyterian, was organized in 1833, at Hanover, and in 1872 had seven professors and 118 students, and 7,000 volumes in library.

SURRENDER OF THE OJATAWEN INDIANS TO GEN. WILKINSON.





*Hartsville University*, United Brethren, at Hartsville, was founded in 1854, and in 1872 had seven professors and 117 students.

*Northwestern Christian University*, Disciples, is located at Irvington, near Indianapolis. It was founded in 1854, and by 1872 it had 15 resident professors, 181 students, and 5,000 volumes in library.

## BENEVOLENT AND PENAL INSTITUTIONS.

By the year 1830, the influx of paupers and invalid persons was so great that the Governor called upon the Legislature to take steps toward regulating the matter, and also to provide an asylum for the poor, but that body was very slow to act on the matter. At the present time, however, there is no State in the Union which can boast a better system of benevolent institutions. The Benevolent Society of Indianapolis was organized in 1843. It was a pioneer institution; its field of work was small at first, but it has grown into great usefulness.

### INSTITUTE FOR THE EDUCATION OF THE BLIND.

In behalf of the blind, the first effort was made by James M. Ray, about 1846. Through his efforts William H. Churchman came from Kentucky with blind pupils and gave exhibitions in Mr. Beccher's church, in Indianapolis. These entertainments were attended by members of the Legislature, for whom indeed they were especially intended; and the effect upon them was so good, that before they adjourned the session they adopted measures to establish an asylum for the blind. The commission appointed to carry out these measures, consisting of James M. Ray, Geo. W. Mears, and the Secretary, Treasurer and Auditor of State, engaged Mr. Churchman to make a lecturing tour through the State and collect statistics of the blind population.

The "Institute for the Education of the Blind" was founded by the Legislature of 1847, and first opened in a rented building Oct. 1, of that year. The permanent buildings were opened and occupied in February, 1853. The original cost of the buildings and ground was \$110,000, and the present valuation of buildings and grounds approximates \$300,000. The main building is 90 feet long by 61 deep, and with its right and left wings, each 30 feet in front and 83 in depth, give an entire frontage of 150 feet. The main building is five stories in height, surmounted by a cupola of

the Corinthian style, while each wing is similarly overcapped. The porticoes, cornices and verandahs are gotten up with exquisite taste, and the former are molded after the principle of Ionic architecture. The building is very favorably situated, and occupies a space of eight acres.

The nucleus of a fund for supplying indigent graduates of the institution with an outfit suitable to their trades, or with money in lieu thereof, promises to meet with many additions. The fund is the out-come of the benevolence of Mrs. Fitzpatrick, a resident of Delaware, in this State, and appears to be suggested by the fact that her daughter, who was smitten with blindness, studied as a pupil in the institute, and became singularly attached to many of its inmates. The following passage from the lady's will bears testimony not only to her own sympathetic nature but also to the efficiency of the establishment which so won her esteem. "I give to each of the following persons, friends and associates of my blind daughter, Margaret Louisa, the sum of \$100 to each, to wit, viz: Melissa and Phœbe Garrettson, Frances Cundiff, Dallas Newland, Naomi Unthunk, and a girl whose name before marriage was Rachel Martin, her husband's name not recollected. The balance of my estate, after paying the expenses of administering, I give to the superintendent of the blind asylum and his successor, in trust, for the use and benefit of the indigent blind of Indiana who may attend the Indiana blind asylum, to be given to them on leaving in such sums as the superintendent may deem proper, but not more than \$50 to any one person. I direct that the amount above directed be loaned at interest, and the interest and principal be distributed as above, agreeably to the best judgment of the superintendent, so as to do the greatest good to the greatest number of blind persons."

The following rules, regulating the institution, after laying down in preamble that the institute is strictly an educational establishment, having its main object the moral, intellectual and physical training of the young blind of the State, and is not an asylum for the aged and helpless, nor an hospital wherein the diseases of the eye may be treated, proceed as follows:

1. The school year commences the first Wednesday after the 15th day of September, and closes on the last Wednesday in June, showing a session of 40 weeks, and a vacation term of 84 days.

2. Applicants for admission must be from 9 to 21 years of age; but the trustees have power to admit blind students under 9 or

over 21 years of age; but this power is extended only in very extreme cases.

3. Imbecile or unsound persons, or confirmed immoralists, cannot be admitted knowingly; neither can admitted pupils who prove disobedient or incompetent to receive instruction be retained on the roll.

4. No charge is made for the instruction and board given to pupils from the State of Indiana; and even those without the State have only to pay \$200 for board and education during the 40 weeks' session.

5. An abundant and good supply of comfortable clothing for both summer and winter wear, is an indispensable adjunct of the pupil.

6. The owner's name must be distinctly marked on each article of clothing.

7. In cases of extreme indigence the institution may provide clothing and defray the traveling expenses of such pupil and levy the amount so expended on the county wherein his or her home is situated.

8. The pupil, or friends of the pupil, must remove him or her from the institute during the annual vacation, and in case of their failure to do so, a legal provision enables the superintendent to forward such pupil to the trustee of the township where he or she resides, and the expense of such transit and board to be charged to the county.

9. Friends of the pupils accompanying them to the institution, or visiting them thereat, cannot enter as boarders or lodgers.

10. Letters to the pupils should be addressed to the care of the Superintendent of the Institute for the Education of the Blind, so as the better to insure delivery.

11. Persons desirous of admission of pupils should apply to the superintendent for a printed copy of instructions, and no pupil should be sent thereto until the instructions have been complied with.

#### INSTITUTE FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB.

In 1843 the Governor was also instructed to obtain plans and information respecting the care of mutes, and the Legislature also levied a tax to provide for them. The first one to agitate the subject was William Willard, himself a mute, who visited Indiana in 1843, and opened a school for mutes on his own account, with 16 pupils.

The next year the Legislature adopted this school as a State institution, appointing a Board of Trustees for its management, consisting of the Governor and Secretary of State, ex-officio, and Revs. Henry Ward Beecher, Phineas D. Gurley, L. H. Jameson, Dr. Dunlap, Hon. James Morrison and Rev. Matthew Simpson. They rented the large building on the southeast corner of Illinois and Maryland streets, and opened the first State asylum there in 1844; but in 1846, a site for a permanent building just east of Indianapolis was selected, consisting first of 30 acres, to which 100 more have been added. On this site the two first structures were commenced in 1849, and completed in the fall of 1850, at a cost of \$30,000. The school was immediately transferred to the new building, where it is still flourishing, with enlarged buildings and ample facilities for instruction in agriculture. In 1869-'70, another building was erected, and the three together now constitute one of the most beneficent and beautiful institutions to be found on this continent, at an aggregate cost of \$220,000. The main building has a façade of 260 feet. Here are the offices, study rooms, the quarters of officers and teachers, the pupils' dormitories and the library. The center of this building has a frontage of eighty feet, and is five stories high, with wings on either side 60 feet in frontage. In this Central structure are the store rooms, dining-hall, servants' rooms, hospital, laundry, kitchen, bakery and several school-rooms. Another structure known as the "rear building" contains the chapel and another set of school-rooms. It is two stories high, the center being 50 feet square and the wings 40 by 20 feet. In addition to these there are many detached buildings, containing the shops of the industrial department, the engine-house and wash-house.

The grounds comprise 105 acres, which in the immediate vicinity of the buildings partake of the character of ornamental or pleasure gardens, comprising a space devoted to fruits, flowers and vegetables, while the greater part is devoted to pasture and agriculture.

The first instructor in the institution was Wm. Willard, a deaf mute, who had up to 1844 conducted a small school for the instruction of the deaf at Indianapolis, and now is employed by the State, at a salary of \$800 per annum, to follow a similar vocation in its service. In 1853 he was succeeded by J. S. Brown, and subsequently by Thomas McIntire, who continues principal of the institution.



## HOSPITAL FOR THE INSANE.

The Legislature of 1832-'3 adopted measures providing for a State hospital for the insane. This good work would have been done much earlier had it not been for the hard times of 1837, intensified by the results of the gigantic scheme of internal improvement. In order to survey the situation and awaken public sympathy, the county assessors were ordered to make a return of the insane in their respective counties. During the year 1842 the Governor, acting under the direction of the Legislature, procured considerable information in regard to hospitals for the insane in other States; and Dr. John Evans lectured before the Legislature on the subject of insanity and its treatment. As a result of these efforts the authorities determined to take active steps for the establishment of such a hospital. Plans and suggestions from the superintendents and hospitals of other States were submitted to the Legislature in 1844, which body ordered the levy of a tax of one cent on the \$100 for the purpose of establishing the hospital. In 1845 a commission was appointed to obtain a site not exceeding 200 acres. Mount Jackson, then the residence of Nathaniel Bolton, was selected, and the Legislature in 1846 ordered the commissioners to proceed with the erection of the building. Accordingly, in 1847, the central building was completed, at a cost of \$75,000. It has since been enlarged by the addition of wings, some of which are larger than the old central building, until it has become an immense structure, having cost over half a million dollars.

The wings of the main building are four stories high, and entirely devoted to wards for patients, being capable of accommodating 500.

The grounds of the institution comprise 160 acres, and, like those of the institute for the deaf and dumb, are beautifully laid out.

This hospital was opened for the reception of patients in 1848. The principal structure comprises what is known as the central building and the right and left wings, and like the institute for the deaf and dumb, erected at various times and probably under various adverse circumstances, it certainly does not hold the appearance of any one design, but seems to be a combination of many. Notwithstanding these little defects in arrangement, it presents a very imposing appearance, and shows what may be termed a frontage

of 624 feet. The central building is five stories in height and contains the store-rooms, offices, reception parlors, medical dispensing rooms, mess-rooms and the apartments of the superintendent and other officers, with those of the female employes. Immediately in the rear of the central building, and connected with it by a corridor, is the chapel, a building 50 by 60 feet. This chapel occupies the third floor, while the under stories hold the kitchen, bakery, employes' dining-room, steward's office, employes' apartments and sewing rooms. In rear of this again is the engine-house, 60 by 50 feet, containing all the paraphernalia for such an establishment, such as boilers, pumping works, fire plugs, hose, and above, on the second floor, the laundry and apartments of male employes.

#### THE STATE PRISON SOUTH.

The first penal institution of importance is known as the "State Prison South," located at Jeffersonville, and was the only prison until 1859. It was established in 1821. Before that time it was customary to resort to the old-time punishment of the whipping-post. Later the manual labor system was inaugurated, and the convicts were hired out to employers, among whom were Capt. Westover, afterward killed at Alamo, Texas, with Crockett, James Keigwin, who in an affray was fired at and severely wounded by a convict named Williams, Messrs. Patterson Hensley, and Jos. R. Pratt. During the rule of the latter of these lessees, the attention of the authorities was turned to a more practical method of utilizing convict labor; and instead of the prisoners being permitted to serve private entries, their work was turned in the direction of their own prison, where for the next few years they were employed in erecting the new buildings now known as the "State Prison South." This structure, the result of prison labor, stands on 16 acres of ground, and comprises the cell houses and workshops, together with the prisoners' garden, or pleasure-ground.

It seems that in the erection of these buildings the aim of the overseers was to create so many petty dungeons and unventilated laboratories, into which disease in every form would be apt to creep. This fact was evident from the high mortality characterizing life within the prison; and in the efforts made by the Government to remedy a state of things which had been permitted to exist far too long, the advance in prison reform has become a reality. From 1857 to 1871 the labor of the prisoners was devoted

to the manufacture of wagons and farm implements; and again the old policy of hiring the convicts was resorted to; for in the latter year, 1871, the Southwestern Car Company was organized, and every prisoner capable of taking a part in the work of car-building was leased out. This did very well until the panic of 1873, when the company suffered irretrievable losses; and previous to its final down-fall in 1876 the warden withdrew convict labor a second time, leaving the prisoners to enjoy a luxurious idleness around the prison which themselves helped to raise.

In later years the State Prison South has gained some notoriety from the desperate character of some of its inmates. During the civil war a convict named Harding mutilated in a most horrible manner and ultimately killed one of the jailors named Tesley. In 1874, two prisoners named Kennedy and Applegate, possessing themselves of some arms, and joined by two other convicts named Port and Stanley, made a break for freedom, swept past the guard, Chamberlain, and gained the fields. Chamberlain went in pursuit but had not gone very far when Kennedy turned on his pursuer, fired and killed him instantly. Subsequently three of the prisoners were captured alive and one of them paid the penalty of death, while Kennedy, the murderer of Chamberlain, failing committal for murder, was sent back to his old cell to spend the remainder of his life. Bill Rodifer, better known as "The Hoosier Jack Sheppard," effected his escape in 1875, in the very presence of a large guard, but was recaptured and has since been kept in irons.

This establishment, owing to former mismanagement, has fallen very much behind, financially, and has asked for and received an appropriation of \$20,000 to meet its expenses, while the contrary is the case at the Michigan City prison.

#### THE STATE PRISON NORTH.

In 1859 the first steps toward the erection of a prison in the northern part of the State were taken, and by an act of the Legislature approved March 5, this year, authority was given to construct prison buildings at some point north of the National road. For this purpose \$50,000 were appropriated, and a large number of convicts from the Jeffersonville prison were transported northward to Michigan City, which was just selected as the location for the new penitentiary. The work was soon entered upon, and continued to meet with additions and improvements down to a very recent period. So late as 1875 the Legislature appropriated \$20,000

toward the construction of new cells, and in other directions also the work of improvement has been going on. The system of government and discipline is similar to that enforced at the Jeffersonville prison; and, strange to say, by its economical working has not only met the expenses of the administration, but very recently had amassed over \$11,000 in excess of current expenses, from its annual savings. This is due almost entirely to the continual employment of the convicts in the manufacture of cigars and chairs, and in their great prison industry, cooperage. It differs widely from the Southern, insomuch as its sanitary condition has been above the average of similar institutions. The strictness of its silent system is better enforced. The petty revolutions of its inmates have been very few and insignificant, and the number of punishments inflicted comparatively small. From whatever point this northern prison may be looked at, it will bear a very favorable comparison with the largest and best administered of like establishments throughout the world, and cannot fail to bring high credit to its Board of Directors and its able warden.

#### FEMALE PRISON AND REFORMATORY.

The prison reform agitation which in this State attained telling proportions in 1869, caused a Legislative measure to be brought forward, which would have a tendency to ameliorate the condition of female convicts. Gov. Baker recommended it to the General Assembly, and the members of that body showed their appreciation of the Governor's philanthropic desire by conferring upon the bill the authority of a statute; and further, appropriated \$50,000 to aid in carrying out the objects of the act. The main provisions contained in the bill may be set forth in the following extracts from the proclamation of the Governor:

"Whenever said institution shall have been proclaimed to be open for the reception of girls in the reformatory department thereof, it shall be lawful for said Board of Managers to receive them into their care and management, and the said reformatory department, girls under the age of 15 years who may be committed to their custody, in either of the following modes, to-wit:

"1. When committed by any judge of a Circuit or Common Pleas Court, either in term time or in vacation, on complaint and due proof by the parent or guardian that by reason of her incorrigible or vicious conduct she has rendered her control beyond the power of such parent or guardian, and made it manifestly requisite

that from regard to the future welfare of such infant, and for the protection of society, she should be placed under such guardianship.

"2. When such infant has been committed by such judge, as aforesaid, upon complaint by any citizen, and due proof of such complaint that such infant is a proper subject of the guardianship of such institution in consequence of her vagrancy or incorrigible or vicious conduct, and that from the moral depravity or otherwise of her parent or guardian in whose custody she may be, such parent or guardian is incapable or unwilling to exercise the proper care or discipline over such incorrigible or vicious infant.

"3. When such infant has been committed by such judge as aforesaid, on complaint and due proof thereof by the township trustee of the township where such infant resides, that such infant is destitute of a suitable home and of adequate means of obtaining an honest living, or that she is in danger of being brought up to lead an idle and immoral life."

In addition to these articles of the bill, a formal section of instruction to the wardens of State prisons was embodied in the act, causing such wardens to report the number of all the female convicts under their charge and prepare to have them transferred to the female reformatory immediately after it was declared to be ready for their reception. After the passage of the act the Governor appointed a Board of Managers, and these gentlemen, securing the services of Isaac Hodgson, caused him to draft a plan of the proposed institution, and further, on his recommendation, asked the people for an appropriation of another \$50,000, which the Legislature granted in February, 1873. The work of construction was then entered upon and carried out so steadily, that on the 6th of September, 1873, the building was declared ready for the reception of its future inmates. Gov. Baker lost no time in proclaiming this fact, and October 4 he caused the wardens of the State prisons to be instructed to transfer all the female convicts in their custody to the new institution which may be said to rest on the advanced intelligence of the age. It is now called the "Indiana Reformatory Institution for Women and Girls."

This building is located immediately north of the deaf and dumb asylum, near the arsenal, at Indianapolis. It is a three-story brick structure in the French style, and shows a frontage of 174 feet, comprising a main building, with lateral and transverse wings. In front of the central portion is the residence of the superintendent and his associate reformatory officers, while in the

rear is the engine house, with all the ways and means for heating the buildings. Enlargements, additions and improvements are still in progress. There is also a school and library in the main building, which are sources of vast good.

October 31, 1879, there were 66 convicts in the "penal" department and 147 in the "girls' reformatory" department. The "ticket-of-leave" system has been adopted, with entire satisfaction, and the conduct of the institution appears to be up with the times.

#### INDIANA HOUSE OF REFUGE.

In 1867 the Legislature appropriated \$50,000 to aid in the formation of an institution to be entitled a house for the correction and reformation of juvenile defenders, and vested with full powers in a Board of Control, the members of which were to be appointed by the Governor, and with the advice and consent of the Senate. This Board assembled at the Governor's house at Indianapolis, April 3, 1867, and elected Charles F. Coffin, as president, and visited Chicago, so that a visit to the reform school there might lead to a fuller knowledge and guide their future proceedings. The House of Refuge at Cincinnati, and the Ohio State Reform school were also visited with this design; and after full consideration of the varied governments of these institutions, the Board resolved to adopt the method known as the "family" system, which divides the inmates into fraternal bodies, or small classes, each class having a separate house, house father and family offices, —all under the control of a general superintendent. The system being adopted, the question of a suitable location next presented itself, and proximity to a large city being considered rather detrimental to the welfare of such an institution, Gov. Baker selected the site three-fourths of a mile south of Plainfield, and about fourteen miles from Indianapolis, which, in view of its eligibility and convenience, was fully concurred in by the Board of Control. Therefore, a farm of 225 acres, claiming a fertile soil and a most picturesque situation, and possessing streams of running water, was purchased, and on a plateau in its center a site for the proposed house of refuge was fixed.

The next movement was to decide upon a plan, which ultimately met the approval of the Governor. It favored the erection of one principal building, one house for a reading-room and hospital, two large mechanical shops and eight family houses. January 1, 1868,

three family houses and work-shop were completed; in 1869 the main building, and one additional family house were added; but previous to this, in August, 1867, a Mr. Frank P. Ainsworth and his wife were appointed by the Board, superintendent and matron respectively, and temporary quarters placed at their disposal. In 1869 they of course removed to the new building. This is 64 by 128 feet, and three stories high. In its basement are kitchen, laundry and vegetable cellar. The first floor is devoted to offices, visitors' room, house father and family dining-room and store-rooms. The general superintendent's private apartments, private offices and five dormitories for officers occupy the second floor; while the third floor is given up to the assistant superintendent's apartment, library, chapel and hospital.

The family houses are similar in style, forming rectangular buildings 36 by 58 feet. The basement of each contains a furnace room, a store-room and a large wash-room, which is converted into a play-room during inclement weather. On the first floor of each of these buildings are two rooms for the house father and his family, and a school-room, which is also convertible into a sitting room for the boys. On the third floor is a family dormitory, a clothes-room and a room for the "elder brother," who ranks next to the house father. And since the reception of the first boy, from Hendricks county, January 23, 1868, the house plan has proved equally convenient, even as the management has proved efficient.

Other buildings have since been erected.

#### STATE CAPITOL.

About 1832, at the suggestion of the architect who was to build the State House, with the concurrence of the commissioners, the block north of the State House square was reserved for sale, to await the determination of the Legislature as to the propriety of adding it to the public ground, making it an oblong square corresponding to the form of the edifice to be erected. The plan drawn by Mr. Town, the artist, was adopted by the Legislature, and he was to complete the building by November, 1837, for \$58,000. The building erected in pursuance of this contract served the State until within a few years; and now Indiana has a new, beautiful capitol, equal in proportions, style, etc., to those of her sister States, under headway.

## STATE OFFICERS,

FROM THE EARLIEST DATE TO THE PRESENT.

Arthur St. Clair, Governor of the Territory of the United States Northwest of the Ohio, from Oct. 5, 1787, to July 4, 1800.

### GOVERNORS OF INDIANA TERRITORY.

Wm. Henry Harrison, from July 4, 1800, to 1812.  
John Gibson, Acting Governor from 1812 to 1813.  
Thomas Posey, from March 3, 1813, to Nov. 7, 1816.

### GOVERNORS OF THE STATE OF INDIANA.

Jonathan Jennings, from Nov. 7, 1816, to Dec. 4, 1822.  
Wm. Hendricks, from Dec. 4, 1822, to Feb. 12, 1825.  
James B. Ray, from Dec. 7, 1825, to Dec. 7, 1831.  
Noah Noble, from Dec. 7, 1831, to Dec. 6, 1837.  
David Wallace, from Dec. 6, 1837, to Dec. 9, 1840.  
Samuel Bigger, from Dec. 9, 1840, to Dec. 6, 1843.  
James Whitcomb, from Dec. 6, 1843, to Dec. 26, 1848.  
Paris C. Dunning, Acting-Governor, from Dec. 26, 1848, to Dec. 6, 1849.  
Joseph A. Wright, from Dec. 6, 1849, to Jan. 5, 1857.  
Ashbel P. Willard.  
Abram A. Hammond.  
Henry S. Lane, a few days in January, 1860.  
Oliver P. Morton, acting, from 1860, to January 12, 1865.  
Oliver P. Morton, from Jan. 12, 1865, to Jan. 12, 1867.  
Conrad Baker, acting, from 1867 to 1869.  
Conrad Baker, from 1869 to 1873  
Thomas A. Hendricks, from 1873 to 1877.  
James D. Williams, 1877 to 1881.

### LIEUTENANT GOVERNORS.

Christopher Harrison, from 1816 to Dec. 17, 1818.  
Ratliff Boone, from 1819 to 1824.



James B. Ray, acting, from 1824 to 1825.  
John H. Thompson, from 1825 to 1828.  
Milton Stapp, from 1828 to 1831.  
David Wallace, from 1831 to 1837.  
David Hillis, from 1837 to 1840.  
Samuel Hall, from 1840 to 1843.  
Jesse D. Bright, from 1843 to 1845.  
Godlove S. Orth, acting, 1845.  
James G. Read, acting, 1846.  
Paris C. Dunning, from 1846 to 1848.  
James G. Read, 1849.  
James H. Lane, from 1849 to 1853.  
Ashbel P. Willard, from 1853 to 1857.  
Abram A. Hammond, from 1857 to 1859.  
John R. Cravens, acting, from 1859 to 1863.  
Paris C. Dunning, acting, from 1863 to 1865.  
Conrad Baker, from 1865 to 1867.  
Will Cumback, from 1867 to 1869.  
Will Cumback, from 1869 to 1873.  
Leonidas Sexton, from 1873 to 1877.  
Isaac P. Gray, from 1877 to 1881.

## SECRETARIES OF STATE.

John Gibson, Territorial, from 1800 to 1816.  
Robert A. New, from 1816 to 1825.  
W. W. Wick, from 1825 to 1829.  
James Morrison, from 1829 to 1833.  
Wm. Sheets, from 1833 to 1837.  
Wm. J. Brown, from 1837 to 1841.  
Wm. Sheets, from 1841 to 1845.  
John H. Thompson, from 1845 to 1849.  
Charles H. Test, from 1849 to 1853.  
Nehemiah Hayden, from 1853 to 1855.  
Erasmus B. Collins, from 1855 to 1857.  
Daniel McClure, from 1857 to 1858.  
Cyrus L. Dunham, from 1858 to 1859.  
Daniel McClure, from 1859 to 1861.  
Wm. A. Peele, from 1861 to 1863.  
James S. Anthon, from 1863 to 1865.  
Nelson Trusler, from 1865 to 1869.

Max F. A. Hoffman, from 1869 to 1871,  
Norman Eddy, from 1871 to 1872.  
John H. Farquhar, from 1872 to 1873.  
W. W. Curry, from 1873 to 1874.  
John E. Neff, from 1874 to  
John P. Shanklin, from 1879 to 1881.

## AUDITORS OF STATE.

Wm. H. Lilley, from 1816 to 1829.  
Morris Morris, from 1829 to 1844.  
Horatio J. Harris, from 1844 to 1847.  
Douglas McGuire, from 1847 to 1850.  
E. W. H. Ellis, from 1850 to 1853.  
John P. Dunn, from 1853 to 1855.  
Hiram E. Talbot, from 1855 to 1857.  
John W. Dodd, from 1857 to 1860.  
Albert Lange, from 1861 to 1863.  
Joseph Ristine, from 1863 to 1865.  
Thomas B. McCarty, from 1865 to 1869.  
John D. Evans, from 1869 to 1871.  
John C. Shoemaker, from 1871 to 1873.  
James A. Wildman, from 1873 to 1874.  
Ebenezer Henderson, from 1875 to  
M. D. Manson, from 1879 to 1881.

## TREASURERS OF STATE.

Daniel C. Lane, from 1816 to 1823.  
Samuel Merrill, from 1823 to 1835.  
Nathan B. Palmer, from 1835 to 1841.  
Geo. H. Dunn, from 1841 to 1844.  
Royal Mayhew, from 1844 to 1847.  
Samuel Hanna, from 1847 to 1850.  
J. P. Drake, from 1850 to 1853.  
Elijah Newland, from 1853 to 1855.  
Wm. B. Noffsinger, from 1855 to 1857.  
Aquilla Jones, from 1857 to 1859.  
Nathaniel F. Cunningham, from 1859 to 1861.  
J. S. Harvey, 1861 to 1863.  
Matthew L. Brett, from 1863 to 1865.  
John I. Morrison, from 1865 to 1867.

Nathan Kimball, from 1867 to 1871.

James B. Ryan, from 1871 to 1873.

John B. Glover, from 1873 to 1875.

B. C. Shaw, from 1875 to

Wm. Fleming, from 1879 to 1881.

#### ATTORNEY-GENERALS.

James Morrison, from March 5, 1855.

J. E. McDonald, from Dec. 17, 1857.

J. G. Jones, from Dec. 17, 1859.

John P. Usher, from Nov. 10, 1861.

Oscar B. Hord, from Nov. 3, 1862.

D. E. Williamson, from Nov. 3, 1864.

Bayliss W. Hanna, from Nov. 3, 1870.

James C. Denny, from Nov. 6, 1872.

Clarence A. Buskirk, from Nov. 6, 1874.

Thomas Woolen, from Nov., 1878 to Nov., 1880.

#### JUDGES OF THE SUPREME COURT.

James Scott, from 1816 to 1831.

John Johnston, from 1816 to 1817.

J. L. Holman, from 1816 to 1831.

Isaac Blackford, from 1817 to 1853.

S. C. Stevens, from 1831 to 1836.

J. T. McKinney, from 1831 to 1837.

Charles Dewey, from 1836 to 1847.

Jeremiah Sullivan, from 1837 to 1846.

Samuel E. Perkins, from 1846 to 1865.

Thomas L. Smith, from 1847 to 1853.

Andrew Davidson, from 1853 to 1865.

Wm. L. Stewart, from 1853 to 1857.

Addison L. Roache, from 1853 to 1854.

Alvin P. Hovey, appointed, to 1854.

S. B. Gookins, from 1854 to 1857.

James L. Worden, appointed, from 1858 to 1865.

James M. Hanna, appointed, from 1858 to 1865.

Charles A. Ray, from 1865 to 1871.

John P. Elliott, from 1865 to 1871.

James S. Frazier, from 1865 to 1871.

Robert S. Gregory, from 1865 to 1871.

James L. Worden, from 1871 to  
Alex. C. Downey, from 1871 to  
Samuel H. Buskirk, from 1871 to  
John Pettit, from 1871 to  
Andrew L. Osborn, from 1872 to  
Horace P. Biddle, from 1874 to  
Samuel E. Perkins.  
George V. Howk.  
Wm. E. Niblack.

## UNITED STATES SENATORS.

James Noble, from 1816 to 1831.  
Waller Taylor, from 1816 to 1825.  
Wm. Hendricks, from 1825 to 1837.  
Robert Hanna, appointed, 1831.  
John Tipton, from 1831 to 1839.  
Oliver H. Smith, from 1837 to 1843.  
Albert S. White, from 1839 to 1845.  
Edward A. Hannegan, from 1843 to 1849.  
Jesse D. Bright, from 1845 to 1861.  
James Whitcomb, from 1849 to 1852.  
Charles W. Cathcart, appointed, from 1852 to 1853.  
John Pettit, from 1853 to 1857.  
Graham N. Fitch, from 1857 to 1861.  
Joseph A. Wright, from 1861 to 1863.  
Henry S. Lane, from 1861 to 1867.  
David Turpie, 1863.  
Thos. A. Hendricks, from 1863 to 1869.  
Oliver P. Morton, from 1867 to 1877.  
Daniel D. Pratt, from 1869 to 1875.  
Joseph E. McDonald, from 1875 to

## TERRITORIAL DELEGATES.

Wm. H. Harrison, delegate from the "Territory Northwest of the Ohio River;" resigned in 1800, succeeded by Wm. McMillan, who took his seat Nov. 24, 1800.

## INDIANA TERRITORY.

Benjamin Parke, Dec. 12, 1805; resigned in 1808; succeeded by Jesse B. Thomas, who took his seat Dec. 1, 1808. Jonathan Jennings, Nov. 27, 1809.

## REPRESENTATIVES IN CONGRESS.

1817-'22.—Wm. Hendricks.

1822-'4.—Jonathan Jennings.

1823-'5.—Jonathan Jennings, Wm. Prince, John Test and Jacob Call.

1825-'7.—Ratliff Boon, Jonathan Jennings, John Test.

1827-'9.—Thomas H. Blake, Jonathan Jennings, Oliver H. Smith.

1829-'31.—Ratliff Boon, Jonathan Jennings, John Test.

1831-'3.—Ratliff Boon, John Carr, Jonathan McCarty.

1833-'5.—Ratliff Boon, John Carr, John Ewing, Jonathan McCarty.

1835-'7.—Ratliff Boon, John Carr, John W. Davis, Edward A. Hannegan, Wm. Herod, George L. Kinnard, Amos Lane, Jonathan McCarty.

1837-'9.—Ratliff Boon, George H. Dunn, John Ewing, Wm. Graham, Wm. Herod, James Rariden, Albert S. White.

1839-'41.—John Carr, John W. Davis, Tilghman A. Howard, Henry S. Lane, George H. Proffit, James Rariden, Thomas Smith, Wm. W. Wick.

1841-'3.—James H. Cravens, Andrew Kennedy, Henry S. Lane, Geo. H. Proffit, Richard W. Thompson, David Wallace, Joseph L. White.

1843-'5.—Wm. J. Brown, John W. Davis, Thomas J. Henley, Andrew Kennedy, Robert Dale Owen, John Pettit, Samuel C. Sample, Caleb B. Smith, Thomas Smith, Joseph A. Wright.

1845-'7.—Charles W. Cathcart, John W. Davis, Thomas J. Henley, Andrew Kennedy, Edward W. McGaughey, Robert D. Owen, John Pettit, Caleb B. Smith, Thomas Smith, Wm. W. Wick.

1847-'9.—Chas. W. Cathcart, George G. Dunn, Elisha Embree, Thomas J. Henley, John Pettit, John L. Robinson, Wm. Rockhill, Caleb B. Smith, Richard W. Thompson, Wm. W. Wick.

1849-'51.—Nathaniel Albertson, Wm. J. Brown, Cyrus L. Dunham, Graham N. Fitch, Willis A. Gorman, Andrew J. Harlan, Geo. W. Julian, Joseph E. McDonald, Edward W. McGaughey, John L. Robinson.

1851-'3.—Samuel Brenton, John G. Davis, Cyrus L. Dunham, Graham N. Fitch, Willis A. Gorman, Thomas A. Hendricks, Jas. Lockhart, Daniel Mace, Samuel W. Parker, John L. Robinson.

1853-'5.—Ebenezer M. Chamberlain, John G. Davis, Cyrus L. Duham, Norman Eddy, Wm. H. English, Andrew J. Harlan, Thomas A. Hendricks, James H. Lane, Daniel Mace, Smith Miller, Samuel W. Parker.

1855-'7.—Lucien Barbour, Samuel Brenton, Schuyler Colfax, Wm. Cumback, George G. Dunn, Wm. H. English, David P. Holloway, Daniel Mace, Smith Miller, John U. Pettit, Harvey D. Scott.

1857-'9.—Charles Case, Schuyler Colfax, John G. Davis, Wm. H. English, James B. Foley, James M. Gregg, James Hughes, David Kilgore, Wm. E. Niblack, John U. Pettit, James Wilson.

1859-'61.—Charles Case, Schuyler Colfax, John G. Davis, Wm. M. Dunn, Wm. H. English, Wm. S. Holman, David Kilgore, Wm. E. Niblack, John U. Pettit, Albert G. Porter, James Wilson.

1861-'3.—Schuyler Colfax, James A. Cravens, W. McKee Dunn, Wm. S. Holman, Geo. W. Julian, John Law, Wm. Mitchell, Albert G. Porter, John P. C. Shanks, Daniel W. Voorhees, Albert S. White.

1863-'5.—Schuyler Colfax, James A. Cravens, Ebenezer Dumont, Joseph K. Edgerton, Henry W. Harrington, Wm. S. Holman, Geo. W. Julian, John Law, James F. McDowell, Godlove S. Orth, Daniel W. Voorhees.

1865-'7.—Schuyler Colfax, Joseph H. Defrees, Ebenezer Dumont, John H. Farquhar, Ralph Hill, Geo. W. Julian, Michael C. Kerr, Wm. E. Niblack, Godlove S. Orth, Thomas N. Stillwell, Daniel W. Voorhees, Henry D. Washburn.

1867-'9.—John Coburn, Schuyler Colfax, Wm. S. Holman, Morton C. Hunter, Geo. W. Julian, Michael C. Kerr, Wm. E. Niblack, Godlove S. Orth, John P. C. Shanks, Henry D. Washburn, Wm. Williams.

1869-'71.—John Coburn, Wm. S. Holman, Geo. W. Julian, Michael C. Kerr, Wm. E. Niblack, Godlove S. Orth, Jasper Packard, John P. C. Shanks, James N. Tyner, Daniel W. Voorhees, Wm. Williams.

1871-'3.—John Coburn, Wm. S. Holman, Michael C. Kerr, Mahlon D. Manson, Wm. E. Niblack, Jasper Packard, John P. C. Shanks, James N. Tyner, Daniel W. Voorhees, Wm. Williams, Jeremiah M. Wilson.

1873-'5.—Thomas J. Cason, John Coburn, Wm. S. Holman, Morton C. Hunter, Wm. E. Niblack, Godlove S. Orth, Jasper

Packard, Henry B. Sayler, John P. C. Shauks, James N. Tyner, Wm. Williams, Jeremiah M. Wilson, Simeon K. Wolfe.

1875-'7—John H. Baker, Nathan T. Carr, Thomas J. Cason, James L. Evans, Benoni S. Fuller, Andrew H. Hamilton, Wm. S. Haymond, W. S. Holman, Andrew Humphreys, Morton C. Hunter, Michael C. Kerr, Franklin Landers, Jephtha D. New, Milton S. Robinson, James D. Williams,

1877-'9—John H. Baker, George A. Bicknell, Thomas M. Browne, Wm. H. Calkins, Thomas R. Cobb, James L. Evans, B. S. Fuller, A. H. Hamilton, John Hanna, M. C. Hunter, M. S. Robinson, Leonidas Sexton, M. D. White.

1879-'81—William Heilman, Thomas R. Cobb, George A. Bicknell, Jephtha D. New, Thomas M. Browne, Wm. R. Myers, Gilbert De La Matyr, Abraham J. Hostetter, Godlove S. Orth, Wm. H. Calkins, Calvin Cowgill, Walpole G. Colerick, John H. Baker.



## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

### GOVERNORS.

*Arthur St. Clair* was born in Scotland in 1734, a grandson of the Earl of Rosslyn; educated at the University of Edinburgh; studied medicine under John Hunter; inherited a large fortune on the death of his mother; entered the British army as an ensign, May 13, 1757, and the next year he came to America; became distinguished under General Wolfe at Quebec; married at Boston, May 14, 1760, Miss Phœbe Bayard, half-sister of Gov. James Bowdoin; resigned his commission in 1762; settled in Pennsylvania, in 1764, erecting a fine residence and several mills; held many offices, civil and military, and during the Revolutionary war was eminent in his services; was a member of the Continental Congress 1785-'87; became the first Governor of the Northwestern Territory February 1, 1788; made the treaty of Fort Harmar with the Indian tribes in 1789; fixed the seat of the Supreme Court for the Territory, January, 1790, at a point which he named Cincinnati, after the society of which he was an officer; became Commander-in-Chief of the U. S. army, March 4, 1791, which position he resigned, May 5, 1792; made an unsuccessful expedition against the Indians of the Miami and the Wabash, but was vindicated from all blame by a Congressional committee of investigation; was removed from the post of Governor, by Jefferson, Nov. 22, 1802, when he settled in a log house on the summit of Chestnut Ridge, near Greensburg, Pa., where he passed his remaining years in poverty and fruitless efforts to effect a settlement of claims against the U. S. Government, but receiving small pensions, both from the National and State Governments. He died near Greensburg, Aug. 31, 1818. In 1812 he published a "Narrative of the Manner in which the Campaign against the Indians in 1791 was conducted."

*William Henry Harrison* was born at Berkeley, Virginia, in 1773. In 1801 he was appointed Governor of the Territory of Indiana, which position he held more than ten years. In 1811, in the hard-fought battle of Tippecanoe, he defeated the Indians under the command of the "Prophet." In 1812, was made Brigadier General;



and in March, 1813 was made Major-General. In 1824 he was elected to United States Senate from Ohio. In 1836 was defeated by Van Buren for President. He again became the nominee of the Whig party in 1840, and was chosen President by an overwhelming majority. He was inaugurated March 4, 1841, but died just one month afterward, and his remains now lie near the old homestead at North Bend, Ind.

*Thomas Posey* was born in Virginia, July 9, 1750; received an ordinary common-school education; removed to Western Virginia in 1769; participated in expeditions against the Ohio Indians, and in many battles of the Revolution, after which he resided for a number of years in Spotsylvania county, Va.; was appointed Brigadier-General, Feb. 14, 1793; moved soon afterward to Kentucky, where he became Lieut.-Governor and Major-General in 1809; was U. S. Senator from Louisiana, 1812-'3; succeeded Harrison as Governor of Indiana, in 1813, and became Agent for Indian affairs in 1816. He died at Shawneetown, Ill., March, 19, 1818.

*Jonathan Jennings*, first Governor of the State of Indiana, 1816-'22, was born in Hunterdon county, N. J., and died near Charlestown, Clark Co., Indiana, July 26, 1834; he was a member of Congress, 1809-'16 and 1822-'31, and in 1818 he was appointed Indian Commissioner by President Monroe.

*William Hendricks*, the second Governor of the State of Indiana, was born in Westmoreland county, Pa., in 1783, and settled in Madison, Indiana, in 1814, where he died May 16, 1850. Besides that of State Executive, he filled many important offices. He was Secretary of the Convention which formed the present Constitution of Indiana, was a Representative in Congress, 1816-'22, and U. S. Senator, 1825-'37.

*Noah Noble*, Governor, 1831-'7, was born in Virginia, Jan. 15, 1794, and died at Indianapolis in February, 1844. During his term as Governor occurred the Black Hawk war, the inauguration of the great "internal improvements" of so much notoriety, the hard times of 1837, the last exodus of Indians from the State, etc.

*David Wallace* was born in Philadelphia, Pa., April 4, 1799; graduated at West Point in 1821 as Lieutenant of Artillery, which position he resigned June 1, 1822; removed with his father's family in 1817 to Brookville, Ind.; studied law and acquired an extensive practice in Franklin county; was several times a member

of the Legislature, once a member of the State Constitutional Convention, Lieutenant-Governor, 1837-'40, member of Congress, 1841-'3, and Judge of Marion county, 1856-'9. He died Sept. 4, 1859.

*Samuel Bigger* was born in Warren county, Ohio, about 1800, graduated at Athens University; studied law at Lebanon and commenced practice in Indiana, attaining eminence in the profession; was a Representative in the State Legislature, 1834-'5, and afterward Judge of the Circuit Court. He was elected Governor of Indiana in 1840, on the Whig ticket, and served his term acceptably. By his recommendation the Indiana Hospital for the Insane was established. He died in 1845 at Fort Wayne.

*James Whitcomb* was born in Stockbridge, Vt., Dec. 1, 1791, educated at Transylvania University; Jan. 1, 1824 he established himself in the practice of law at Bloomington, Ind.; in 1826 he was appointed Prosecuting Attorney for his district; was State Senator, 1830-'5, and a leader of the Democratic party; in 1836 he was appointed Superintendent of the Land Office; resumed practice at Terre Haute in 1841; was Governor, 1843-'8, when he was elected to the U. S. Senate. He died in New York, October 4, 1852.

*Joseph A. Wright* was born in Pennsylvania, April 17, 1810; educational advantages limited; early in life he settled in Indiana; admitted to the Bar in 1829, and rose to eminence as a practitioner; member of the Legislature in 1833, and State Senator in 1840; member of Congress, 1843-'5; Governor of Indiana, 1849-'57; Minister to Prussia, 1857-'61; U.S. Senator, 1861-'2; U.S. Commissioner to the Hamburg Exhibition in 1863, and Minister to Prussia again, from 1865 until his death, at Berlin, May 11, 1867.

*Ashbel P. Willard* was born in Oneida county, New York, the son of Erastus Willard, sheriff of that county, 1832-'5; graduated at Hamilton College in 1842; was Governor of Indiana, 1853-'8; died at St. Paul in October, 1860.

*Henry S. Lane*, brother of Gen. James H. Lane, was born in Montgomery county, Ky., Feb., 24, 1811; received a good common-school education and some knowledge of the classics, studied law, moved to Indiana and was admitted to the Bar; elected to the Legislature in 1837; to Congress in 1841; was Lieutenant-Colonel of volunteers in the Mexican war, 1846-'7; elected U. S. Senator, 1859, but denied the seat; elected Governor of Indiana in 1861, but in a

few days after he took the chair he was elected U. S. Senator again, and as such served until 1867.

*Oliver P. Morton* was born in Wayne county, Indiana, Aug. 4, 1823; was apprenticed to a hatter at the age of 15, and worked at the trade four years, spending his leisure in study; graduated at the Miami University in 1843; studied law with John S. Newman, admitted to the Bar in 1847, and commenced practice at Centreville, this State; elected Circuit Judge in 1852; was defeated as the Republican nominee for Governor in 1856; was elected Lieutenant Governor in 1860, with the understanding that Gen. Henry S. Lane, who was placed at the head of the ticket, was to be elected to the U. S. Senate in the event of Republican success, which plan was carried out, and he became Governor of Indiana; was elected Governor in 1864, and United States Senator, as a Union-Republican, to succeed Henry S. Lane, same politics, and was re-elected, serving all together from March 4, 1867, until his death, Nov. 1, 1877, at Indianapolis. In the autumn of 1865 he was stricken with partial paralysis, from which he never recovered. He was compelled to do his work by secretaries, to be carried in and out of the Senate Chamber, and to address the Senate seated. As he was the noted "war Governor" of this glorious State, see section on the war with the Rebellion, pages 205 to 249, for further particulars of this illustrious man's life.

*Conrad Baker* first served as acting Governor during the exciting times over the 15th amendment described on pages 197, *supra*, of this volume. He was elected by the Republicans Lieutenant Governor of the State, on the same ticket with Oliver P. Morton for Governor, with the understanding that Mr. Morton should be sent to the United States Senate and resign the government of this State to Mr. Baker. The programme was carried out, and Mr. Baker served his place so well that at the end of the term he was elected by the people Governor, and he served the second term,—making in all six years. Governor Baker was a faithful Executive, in sympathy with all the institutions of Republicanism and the interests of his State. He had a work compiled on "Indiana and her Resources," which is well calculated to draw men of capital to this fine commonwealth and enable her to compete with all her sister States in the Union.

*Thomas A. Hendricks* was born in Muskingum county, Ohio, Sept. 7, 1819; removed with his father in 1822 to Shelby county, Ind.; graduated in 1841 at South Hanover College; admitted to

the Bar in 1843. Was an active member of State Constitutional Convention of 1850, member of Congress 1851-'5 from the Indianapolis district; Commissioner of the General Land Office of the United States 1855-'9; United States Senator, Democratic, 1863-'9, and lastly Governor of Indiana 1872-'6. In the latter year he was candidate for Vice President of the United States.

*James D. Williams* was born in Pickaway county, O., Jan. 16, 1808; removed to Knox county, Ind., in 1818; was educated in the log school-house of the country; is by occupation a farmer; was a member of the State House of Representatives in 1843, 1847, 1851, 1856 and 1858; was elected to the State Senate in 1858, 1862 and 1870; was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at Baltimore in 1872; was the Democratic nominee for United States Senator in 1873 against O. P. Morton; was elected a Representative from Indiana in the 44th Congress, 1875-'7, receiving 17,393 votes against 9,545 for Levi Ferguson, and Dec. 1, 1876, he resigned this office, on account of having been elected Governor. His term will expire Jan. 3, 1881.

#### UNITED STATES SENATORS.

*James Noble* was born at Battletown, Va., went to the frontier when a youth, located in Kentucky, and afterward in Indiana; served as United States Senator from Dec. 12, 1816, to Feb. 26, 1831, when he died, in Washington, D. C.

*Waller Taylor* was a Major and Aide to Gen. Harrison at Tippecanoe, United States Senator 1816-'25, and a man of much literary culture. He was breveted General, and died at Lunenburg, Va., August 26, 1826.

*William Hendricks*, see page 311.

*Robert Hanna* was born in Laurens District, S. C., April 6, 1786; removed with his parents to Indiana and subsequently settled in Brookville in 1802; was Sheriff of the Eastern District of Indiana in 1809, and held the position until the organization of the State Government; was appointed Register of the Land Office, and removed to Indianapolis in 1825; was appointed United States Senator as a Whig, in place of James Noble, deceased, serving from Dec. 5, 1831, to Jan. 3, 1832, when his successor took his seat; was elected a State Senator, but was defeated when a candidate for re-election; was killed by a railroad train while walking on the track at Indianapolis, Nov. 19, 1859.

*John Tipton* was born in Sevier county, Tenn., in August, 1785; his father having been killed by the Indians in 1793, he did not even enjoy the advantages of a public-school education, having to support a mother, two sisters and a half brother; in 1807 he removed with them to Indiana, where he purchased 50 acres of land, paying for it by splitting rails at 50 cents a hundred; was elected Ensign of that noted frontier company, the "Yellow-Jackets," in 1811, and served with them in the Tippecanoe campaign; was chosen Sheriff of Harrison county, Ind., in 1815; was elected Master of Pisgah Lodge of Freemasons in 1819, and was Grand Master of Masons in Indiana in 1819 and 1829; was elected a Representative in the State Legislature in 1821; was U. S. Indian Agent with the Miami and Pottawatomie tribes from 1824 to 1831, when he was elected U. S. Senator, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of James Noble; was re-elected for a full term, and served from Jan. 3 1832, until his death, April 5, 1839, by pulmonary apoplexy, at Logansport, Ind.

*Oliver H. Smith* was born in Trenton, N. J., Oct. 23, 1794. emigrated to Indiana in 1817, practiced law, and in 1824 was Prosecuting Attorney for the 3d District of Indiana; was a member of Legislature in 1822, of Congress 1827-'9, and of the U. S. Senate 1837-'43. He published "Recollections of Congressional Life," and "Early Indiana Trials, Sketches and Reminiscences." He died at Indianapolis, March 19, 1859.

*Albert S. White* was born at Blooming Grove, N. Y., Oct. 24, 1803; received a classical education, graduating at Union College in 1822; studied law and was admitted to the Bar in 1825, and commenced practice at Lafayette, Ind.; was for five years Clerk of the Indiana House of Representatives; was elected Representative in Congress as a Whig in 1837, receiving 10,737 votes against 3,369 votes for N. Jackson, Democrat, serving from Sept. 4, 1837, to March 3, 1839; was president of several railroads; was elected U. S. Senator from Indiana, serving from Dec. 2, 1839, to March 3, 1845; declined a re-election; was again elected Representative in Congress in 1861, as a Republican, receiving 13,310 votes against 11,489 votes for Wilson, Democrat, serving from July 4, 1861, to March 3, 1863; was a commissioner to adjust claims against the Sioux Indians; was appointed by President Lincoln in 1864, U. S. Judge for Indiana; died at Stockwell, Ind., September 4, 1864.

*Edward A. Hannegan* was born in Ohio, received a good education, studied law, admitted to the Bar in his 23d year, settling

in Indiana. He was several times a member of the Legislature, and was a member of Congress 1833-'7, U. S. Senator 1843-'9, Minister to Prussia, 1849-'53. While partially drunk, in 1852, he killed his brother-in-law, Capt. Duncan.

*Jesse D. Bright* was born in Norwich, Chenango Co., N. Y., Dec. 18, 1812; moving to Indiana, he received an academic education, and studied and practiced law; was Circuit Judge, State Senator, U. S. Marshall, Lieut. Governor of the State, and President of the U. S. Senate during several sessions. In 1857 the Democratic members of the State Legislature re-elected him to the U. S. Senate in a manner which was denounced as fraudulent and unconstitutional by his Republican opponents, and his seat was contested. He continued a Senator until February, 1862, when he was expelled for disloyalty by a vote of 32 to 14. The principal proof of his crime was recommending to Jeff. Davis, in March, 1861, a person desirous of furnishing arms.

*James Whitcomb*, see page 312.

*Charles W. Cathcart* was born on the island of Madeira in 1809, received a good English education, followed the sea in his boyhood, located at LaPorte, Ind., in 1831, and engaged in farming; was U. S. Land Surveyor several years, a Representative in the State Legislature, a Democratic Elector in 1845, Representative in Congress 1845-'7, re-elected to serve 1847-'9, appointed U. S. Senator in place of James Whitcomb, deceased, and served from Dec. 6, 1852, to March 3, 1853; then returned to farming.

*John Pettit* was born at Sackett's Harbor, N. Y., July 24, 1807; received an academical education, studied law and was admitted to the Bar in 1838, commencing practice at Lafayette, Ind.; was a member of the State House of Representatives two terms, U. S. District Attorney, representative in Congress 1843-'5, as a Democrat, re-elected to the next Congress, serving all together from Dec. 4, 1843, to March 3, 1849; was a Delegate to the State Constitutional Convention in 1850; was a Democratic Elector in 1852; was U. S. Senator from Jan. 18, 1853, to March 3, 1855, in place of James Whitcomb, deceased; was appointed by President Buchanan, Chief Justice of the U. S. Courts in Kansas; in 1870, was elected Supreme Judge of Indiana. He was renominated for this position in 1876, but owing to scandals in connection with the Court, which excited popular indignation, he was forced off the ticket, and the name of Judge Perkins substituted; he died at Lafayette, Ind., June 17, 1877.

*Graham N. Fitch* was born at LeRoy, N. Y., Dec. 7, 1810; received a classical education, studied medicine and practiced at Logansport, Ind.; was professor in Rush Medical College, Chicago, 1844-'49; was an Indiana Presidential Elector in 1844, 1848 and 1856, a member of the State Legislature in 1836 and 1839; was a Representative in Congress from Dec. 3, 1849, to March 3, 1853, being elected the last time over Schuyler Colfax, Whig; was U. S. Senator from Indiana from Feb. 9, 1857, to March 3, 1861; was a Delegate to the National Democratic Convention at New York City in 1868.

*Henry S. Lane*, see page 312.

*David Turpie* was born in Hamilton county, Ohio, July 8, 1829, graduated at Kenyon College in 1848, studied law, admitted to the Bar in 1849, and commenced practice at Logansport, Ind.; was a member of the State House of Representatives in 1852; was appointed Judge of the Court of Common Pleas in 1854, and of the Circuit Court in 1856, both of which positions he resigned; was again a member of the Legislature in 1858; was U. S. Senator, as a Democrat, in place of Jesse D. Bright, expelled, from Jan. 22, 1863, to March 3, same year.

*Joseph A. Wright*, see page 312.

*Thomas A. Hendricks*, see page 313.

*Oliver P. Morton*, see page 313.

*Daniel D. Pratt* was born at Palermo, Me., Oct. 26, 1813, and was taken to New York State by his parents when a lad; graduated at Hamilton College in 1831; removed to Indiana in 1832 where he taught school; went to Indianapolis in 1834, where he wrote in the Secretary of State's office and studied law; commenced practice at Logansport in 1836; was elected to the Legislature in 1851 and 1853; was elected to the 41st Congress in 1868, by a majority of 2,287, and, before taking his seat, was elected U. S. Senator as a Republican, to succeed Thos. A. Hendricks, Democrat and served from March 4, 1869, to March 3, 1875; was appointed by President Grant Commissioner of Internal Revenue, serving from May 15, 1875, to August 1, 1876; he died at Logansport, very suddenly, of heart disease, June 17, 1877.

*Joseph E. McDonald* was born in Butler county, Ohio, Aug. 29 1819, taken to Indiana in 1826, and at Lafayette was apprenticed to the saddler's trade; was two years in college, but did not graduate; studied law, and was admitted to the Bar in 1843, and commenced practice; was Prosecuting Attorney in 1843-'7; was

elected a Representative in Congress as a Democrat in 1849, receiving 7,432 votes against 7,098 for Lane, Whig, and served from December 3, 1849, to March 3, 1851; in 1856 he was elected Attorney General of Indiana, and in 1858 re-elected; in 1859 removed to Indianapolis; in 1864 was the unsuccessful candidate for Governor of Indiana, but in 1875 he was elected U. S. Senator, as a Democrat, to succeed D. D. Pratt, Republican.

*Daniel W. Voorhees* was born in Fountain county, Ind., Sept. 26, 1828; graduated at the Asbury University in 1849; studied law, admitted to the Bar in 1851, when he commenced practice at Crawfordsville; was defeated as a candidate for Congress in 1857, by only 230 votes in a total of 22,374, James Wilson being his opponent. Was appointed by President Buchanan, U. S. Attorney for Indiana, 1858-'60; in 1859 he went to Virginia as counsel for John E. Cook, one of John Brown's raiders; was elected a Representative to Congress from Indiana in 1861, receiving 12,535 votes against 11,516 votes for T. H. Nelson, Republican; was re-elected in 1863, receiving 12,457 votes against 9,976 for H. D. Scott, Republican; was again elected in 1865, by 12,880 against 12,296 for Washburn, but the latter in 1866 successfully contested his seat; was again re-elected twice, serving from March 4, 1869, to March 3, 1873; was appointed U. S. Senator November 12, 1877, to serve in place of O. P. Morton; and in 1879 was elected for a full term.



## THE SUPREMACIES.

Indiana belonged to the "Territory of Louisiana" till 1721; was then included in Illinois as a "District" of said Territory until 1774; then included in the "Province of Quebec" until 1788; then was a part of the "Territory Northwest of the Ohio river" until 1800; then "Indiana Territory" until 1816, since which time it has been a "State." French to 1774; British, 1774 to 1788; U. S. Government, 1788 to the present time.

## STATES OF THE UNION.

THEIR SETTLEMENT, ORIGIN OF NAME AND MEANING, COGNOMEN, MOTTOES, ADMISSION INTO THE UNION, POPULATION, AREA, NUMBER OF SOLDIERS FURNISHED DURING THE REBELLION, NUMBER OF REPRESENTATIVES IN CONGRESS, PRESENT GOVERNORS, ETC., ETC., ETC.

*Alabama.*—This State was first explored by LaSalle in 1684, and settled by the French at Mobile in 1711, and admitted as a State in 1817. Its name is Indian, and means "Here we rest." Has no motto. Population in 1860, 964,201; in 1870, 996,992. Furnished 2,576 soldiers for the Union army. Area 50,722 square miles. Montgomery is the capital. Has 8 Representatives and 10 Presidential electors. Rufus W. Cobb is Governor; salary, \$3,000; politics, Democratic. Length of term, 2 years.

*Arkansas.*—Became a State in 1836. Population in 1860, 435,450; in 1870, 484,471. Area 52,198 square miles. Little Rock, capital. Its motto is *Regnant Populi*—"The people rule." It has the Indian name of its principal river. Is called the "Bear State." Furnished 8,289 soldiers. She is entitled to 4 members in Congress, and 6 electoral votes. Governor, W. R. Miller, Democrat; salary, \$3,500; term, 2 years.

*California.*—Has a Greek motto, *Eureka*, which means "I have found it." It derived its name from the bay forming the peninsula of Lower California, and was first applied by Cortez. It was first visited by the Spaniards in 1542, and by the celebrated English

navigator, Sir Francis Drake, in 1578. In 1846 Fremont took possession of it, defeating the Mexicans, in the name of the United States, and it was admitted as a State in 1850. Its gold mines from 1868 to 1878 produced over \$800,000,000. Area 188,982 square miles. Population in 1860, 379,994. In 1870, 560,247. She gave to defend the Union 15,225 soldiers. Sacramento is the capital. Has 4 Representatives in Congress. Is entitled to 6 Presidential electors. Present Governor is William Irwin, a Democrat; term, 4 years; salary, \$6,000.

*Colorado*—Contains 106,475 square miles, and had a population in 1860 of 34,277, and in 1870, 39,864. She furnished 4,903 soldiers. Was admitted as a State in 1876. It has a Latin motto, *Nil sine Numine*, which means, "Nothing can be done without divine aid." It was named from its river. Denver is the capital. Has 1 member in Congress, and 3 electors. T. W. Pitkin is Governor; salary, \$3,000; term, 2 years; politics, Republican.

*Connecticut*—*Qui transtulit sustinet*, "He who brought us over sustains us," is her motto. It was named from the Indian Quonch-ta-Cut, signifying "Long River." It is called the "Nutmeg State." Area 4,674 square miles. Population 1860, 460,147; in 1870, 537,454. Gave to the Union army 55,755 soldiers. Hartford is the capital. Has 4 Representatives in Congress, and is entitled to 6 Presidential electors. Salary of Governor \$2,000; term, 2 years.

*Delaware*.—"Liberty and Independence," is the motto of this State. It was named after Lord De La Ware, an English statesman, and is called, "The Blue Hen," and the "Diamond State." It was first settled by the Swedes in 1638. It was one of the original thirteen States. Has an area of 2,120 square miles. Population in 1860, 112,216; in 1870, 125,015. She sent to the front to defend the Union, 12,265 soldiers. Dover is the capital. Has but 1 member in Congress; entitled to 3 Presidential electors. John W. Hall, Democrat, is Governor; salary, \$2,000; term, 2 years.

*Florida*—Was discovered by Ponce de Leon in 1512, on Easter Sunday, called by the Spaniards, Pascua Florida, which, with the variety and beauty of the flowers at this early season caused him to name it Florida—which means in Spanish, flowery. Its motto is, "In God we trust." It was admitted into the Union in 1845. It has an area of 59,268 square miles. Population in 1860, 140,424; in

1870, 187,756. Its capital is Tallahassee. Has 2 members in Congress. Has 4 Presidential electors. George F. Drew, Democrat, Governor; term, 4 years; salary, \$3,500.

*Georgia*—Owes its name to George II., of England, who first established a colony there in 1732. Its motto is, "Wisdom, justice and moderation." It was one of the original States. Population in 1860, 1,057,286; 1870, 1,184,109. Capital, Atlanta. Area 58,000 square miles. Has 9 Representatives in Congress, and 11 Presidential electors. Her Governor is A. H. Colquitt, Democrat; term, 4 years; salary, \$4,000.

*Illinois*—Motto, "State Sovereignty, National Union." Name derived from the Indian word, *Illini*, meaning, superior men. It is called the "Prairie State," and its inhabitants, "Suckers." Was first explored by the French in 1673, and admitted into the Union in 1818. Area 55,410 square miles. Population, in 1860, 1,711,951; in 1870, 2,539,871. She sent to the front to defend the Union, 258,162 soldiers. Capital, Springfield. Has 19 members in Congress, and 21 Presidential electors. Shelby M. Cullom, Republican, is Governor; elected for 4 years; salary, \$6,000.

*Indiana*—Is called "Hoosier State." Was explored in 1682, and admitted as a State in 1816. Its name was suggested by its numerous Indian population. Area 33,809 square miles. Population in 1860, 1,350,428; in 1870, 1,680,637. She put into the Federal army, 194,363 men. Capital, Indianapolis. Has 13 members in Congress, and 15 Presidential electors. J. D. Williams, Governor, Democrat; salary, \$3,000; term, 4 year.

*Iowa*—Is an Indian name and means "This is the land." Its motto is, "Our liberties we prize, our rights we will maintain." It is called the "Hawk Eye State." It was first visited by Marquette and Joliet in 1673; settled by New Englanders in 1833, and admitted into the Union in 1846. Des Moines is the capital. It has an area of 55,045, and a population in 1860 of 674,913, and in 1870 of 1,191,802. She sent to defend the Government, 75,793 soldiers. Has 9 members in Congress; 11 Presidential electors. John H. Gear, Republican, is Governor; salary, \$2,500; term, 2 years.

*Kansas*—Was admitted into the Union in 1861, making the thirty-fourth State. Its motto is *Ad astra per aspera*, "To the stars through difficulties." Its name means, "Smoky water," and

is derived from one of her rivers. Area 78,841 square miles. Population in 1860, 107,209; in 1870 was 362,812. She furnished 20,095 soldiers. Capital is Topeka. Has 3 Representatives in Congress, and 5 Presidential electors. John P. St. John, Governor; politics, Republican; salary, \$3,000; term, 2 years.

*Kentucky*—Is the Indian name for "At the head of the rivers." Its motto is, "United we stand, divided we fall." The sobriquet of "dark and bloody ground" is applied to this State. It was first settled in 1769, and admitted in 1792 as the fifteenth State. Area 37,680. Population in 1860, 1,155,684; in 1870, 1,321,000. She put into the Federal army 75,285 soldiers. Capital, Frankfort. Has 10 members in Congress; 12 Electors. J. B. McCreary, Democrat, is Governor; salary, \$5,000; term, 4 years.

*Louisiana*—Was called after Louis XIV., who at one time owned that section of the country. Its motto is "Union and Confidence." It is called "The Creole State." It was visited by La Salle in 1684, and admitted into the Union in 1812, making the eighteenth State. Population in 1860, 708,002; in 1870, 732,731. Area 46,431 square miles. She put into the Federal army 5,224 soldiers. Capital, New Orleans. Has 6 Representatives and 8 Electors. F. T. Nichols, Governor, Democrat; salary, \$8,000; term, 4 years.

*Maine*.—This State was called after the province of Maine in France, in compliment of Queen Henrietta of England, who owned that province. Its motto is *Dirigo*, meaning "I direct." It is called "The Pine Tree State." It was settled by the English in 1625. It was admitted as a State in 1820. Area 31,766 square miles. Population in 1860, 628,279; in 1870, 626,463; 69,738 soldiers went from this State. Has 5 members in Congress, and 7 Electors. Selden Conner, Republican, Governor; term, 1 year; salary, \$2,500.

*Maryland*—Was named after Henrietta Maria, Queen of Charles I. of England. It has a Latin motto, *Crescite et multiplicamini*, meaning "Increase and Multiply." It was settled in 1634, and was one of the original thirteen States. It has an area of 11,124 square miles. Population in 1860 was 687,049; in 1870, 780,806. This State furnished 46,053 soldiers. Capital, Annapolis. Has 6 Representatives, and 8 Presidential electors. J. H. Carroll, Democrat, Governor; salary, \$4,500; term, 4 years.

*Massachusetts*—Is the Indian for "The country around the great hills." It is called the "Bay State," from its numerous bays. Its motto is *Ense petit placidam sub libertate quietem*, "By the sword she seeks placid rest in liberty." It was settled in 1620 at Plymouth by English Puritans. It was one of the original thirteen States, and was the first to take up arms against the English during the Revolution. Area 7,800 square miles. Population in 1860, 1,231,066; in 1870, 1,457,351. She gave to the Union army 146,467 soldiers. Boston is the capital. Has 11 Representatives in Congress, and 13 Presidential electors. Thomas Talbot, Republican, is Governor; salary, \$5,000; term, 1 year.

*Michigan*—Latin motto, *Tuebor*, and *Si quæris peninsulam amœnam circumspice*, "I will defend"—"If you seek a pleasant peninsula, look around you." The name is a contraction of two Indian words meaning "Great Lake." It was early explored by Jesuit missionaries, and in 1837 was admitted into the Union. It is known as the "Wolverine State." It contains 56,243 square miles. In 1860 it had a population of 749,173; in 1870, 1,184,059. She furnished 88,111 soldiers. Capital, Lansing. Has 9 Representatives and 11 Presidential electors. C. M. Croswell is Governor; politics, Republican; salary, \$1,000; term, 2 years.

*Minnesota*—Is an Indian name, meaning "Cloudy Water." It has a French motto, *L'Etoile du Nord*—"The Star of the North." It was visited in 1680 by La Salle, settled in 1846, and admitted into the Union in 1858. It contains 83,531 square miles. In 1860 had a population of 172,023; in 1870, 439,511. She gave to the Union army 24,002 soldiers. St. Paul is the capital. Has 3 members in Congress, 5 Presidential electors. Governor, J. S. Pillsbury, Republican; salary, \$3,000; term, 2 years.

*Mississippi*—Is an Indian name, meaning "Long River," and the State is named from the "Father of Waters." The State was first explored by De Sota in 1541; settled by the French at Natchez in 1716, and was admitted into the Union in 1817. It has an area of 47,156 square miles. Population in 1860, 791,305; in 1870, 827,922. She gave to suppress the Rebellion 545 soldiers. Jackson is the capital. Has 6 representatives in Congress, and 8 Presidential electors. J. M. Stone is Governor, Democrat; salary, \$4,000; term, 4 years.

*Missouri*—Is derived from the Indian word "muddy," which

more properly applies to the river that flows through it. Its motto is *Salus populi suprema lex esto*, "Let the welfare of the people be the supreme law." The State was first settled by the French near Jefferson City in 1719, and in 1821 was admitted into the Union. It has an area of 67,380 square miles, equal to 43,123,200 acres. It had a population in 1860 of 1,182,012; in 1870, 1,721,000. She gave to defend the Union 108,162 soldiers. Capital, Jefferson City. Its inhabitants are known by the offensive cognomen of "Pukes." Has 13 representatives in Congress, and 15 Presidential electors. J. S. Phelps is Governor; politics, Democratic; salary, \$5,000; term, 4 years.

*Nebraska*—Has for its motto, "Equality before the law." Its name is derived from one of its rivers, meaning "broad and shallow, or low." It was admitted into the Union in 1867. Its capital is Lincoln. It had a population in 1860 of 28,841, and in 1870, 123,993, and in 1875, 246,280. It has an area of 75,995 square miles. She furnished to defend the Union 3,157 soldiers. Has but 1 Representative and 3 Presidential electors. A. Nance, Republican, is Governor; salary, \$2,500; term, 2 years.

*Nevada*—"The Snowy Land" derived its name from the Spanish. Its motto is Latin, *Volens et potens*, and means "willing and able." It was settled in 1850, and admitted into the Union in 1864. Capital, Carson City. Its population in 1860 was 6,857; in 1870 it was 42,491. It has an area of 112,090 square miles. She furnished 1,080 soldiers to suppress the Rebellion. Has 1 Representative and 3 Electors. Governor, J. H. Kinkhead, Republican; salary, \$6,000; term, 4 years.

*New Hampshire*—Was first settled at Dover by the English in 1623. Was one of the original States. Has no motto. It is named from Hampshire county in England. It also bears the name of "The Old Granite State." It has an area of 9,280 miles, which equals 9,239,200 acres. It had a population in 1860 of 326,073, and in 1870 of 318,300. She increased the Union army with 33,913 soldiers. Concord is the capital. Has 3 Representatives and 5 Presidential electors. N. Head, Republican, Governor; salary, \$1,000; term, 1 year.

*New Jersey*—Was named in honor of the Island of Jersey in the British channel. Its motto is "Liberty and Independence." It was first settled at Bergen by the Swedes in 1624. It is one of the orig-

inal thirteen States. It has an area of 8,320 square miles, or 5,324,800 acres. Population in 1860 was 672,035; in 1870 it was 906,096. She put into the Federal army 75,315 soldiers. Capital, Trenton. Has 7 Representatives and 9 Presidential electors. Governor, George B. McClelland, Democrat; salary, \$5,000; term, 3 years.

*New York*.—The "Empire State" was named by the Duke of York, afterward King James II. of England. It has a Latin motto, *Excelsior*, which means "Still Higher." It was first settled by the Dutch in 1614 at Manhattan. It has an area of 47,000 square miles, or 30,080,000 acres. The population in 1860 was 3,880,735; in 1870 it was 4,332,759. It is one of the original thirteen States. Capital is Albany. It gave to defend our Government 445,959 men. Has 33 members in Congress, and 35 Presidential electors. Governor, L. Robinson, Democrat; salary, \$10,000; term, 3 years.

*North Carolina*.—Was named after Charles IX., King of France. It is called "The Old North," or "The Turpentine State." It was first visited in 1524 by a Florentine navigator, sent out by Francis I., King of France. It was settled at Albemarle in 1663. It was one of the original thirteen States. It has an area of 50,704 square miles, equal to 32,450,560 acres. It had in 1860 a population of 992,622, and in 1870, 1,071,361. Raleigh is the capital. She furnished 3,156 soldiers to put down the Rebellion. Has 8 members in Congress, and is entitled to 10 Presidential electors. Z. B. Vance, Democrat, is Governor; salary, \$5,000; term, 4 years.

*Ohio*.—Took its name from the river on its Southern boundary, and means "Beautiful." Its motto is *Imperium in Imperio*—"An Empire in an Empire." It was first permanently settled in 1788 at Marietta by New Englanders. It was admitted as a State in 1803. Its capital is Columbus. It contains 39,964 square miles, or 25,576,960 acres. Population in 1860, 2,339,511; in 1870 it had 2,665,260. She sent to the front during the Rebellion 310,654 soldiers. Has 20 Representatives, and 22 Presidential electors. Governor, R. M. Bishop, Democrat; salary, \$4,000; term, 2 years.

*Oregon*.—Owes its Indian name to its principal river. Its motto is *Alis volat propriis*—"She flies with her own wings." It was first visited by the Spaniards in the sixteenth century. It was settled by the English in 1813, and admitted into the Union in 1859. Its capital is Salem. It has an area of 95,274 square miles, equal to 60,975,360 acres. It had in 1860 a population of 52,465; in

1870, 90,922. She furnished 1,810 soldiers. She is entitled to 1 member in Congress, and 3 Presidential electors. W. W. Thayer, Republican, is Governor; salary, \$1,500; term, 4 years.

*Pennsylvania*.—This is the "Keystone State," and means "Penn's Woods," and was so called after William Penn, its original owner. Its motto is, "Virtue, liberty and independence." A colony was established by Penn in 1682. The State was one of the original thirteen. It has an area of 46,000 square miles, equaling 29,440,000 acres. It had in 1860 a population of 2,906,215; and in 1870, 3,515,993. She gave to suppress the Rebellion; 338,155. Harrisburg is the capital. Has 27 Representatives and 29 electors. H. M. Hoyt, is Governor; salary, \$10,000; politics, Republican; term of office, 3 years.

*Rhode Island*.—This, the smallest of the States, owes its name to the Island of Rhodes in the Mediterranean, which domain it is said to greatly resemble. Its motto is "Hope," and it is familiarly called, "Little Rhody." It was settled by Roger Williams in 1636. It was one of the original thirteen States. It has an area of 1,306 square miles, or 835,840 acres. Its population in 1860 numbered 174,620; in 1870, 217,356. She gave to defend the Union, 23,248. Its capitals are Providence and Newport. Has 2 Representatives, and 4 Presidential electors. C. Vanzandt is Governor; politics, Republican; salary, \$1,000; term, 1 year.

*South Carolina*.—The Palmetto State wears the Latin name of Charles IX., of France (Carolus). Its motto is Latin, *Animis opibusque parati*, "Ready in will and deed." The first permanent settlement was made at Port Royal in 1670, where the French Huguenots had failed three-quarters of a century before to found a settlement. It is one of the original thirteen States. Its capital is Columbia. It has an area of 29,385 square miles, or 18,806,400 acres, with a population in 1860 of 703,708; in 1870, 728,000. Has 5 Representatives in Congress, and is entitled to 7 Presidential electors. Salary of Governor, \$3,500; term, 2 years.

*Tennessee*.—Is the Indian name for the "River of the Bend," *i. e.* the Mississippi, which forms its western boundary. She is called "The Big Bend State." Her motto is, "Agriculture, Commerce." It was settled in 1757, and admitted into the Union in 1796, making the sixteenth State, or the third admitted after the Revolutionary War—Vermont being the first, and Kentucky the second. It



has an area of 45,600 square miles, or 29,184,000 acres. In 1860 its population numbered 1,109,801, and in 1870, 1,257,983. She furnished 31,092 soldiers to suppress the Rebellion. Nashville is the capital. Has 10 Representatives, and 12 Presidential electors. Governor, A. S. Marks, Democrat; salary, \$4,000; term, 2 years.

*Texas*—Is the American word for the Mexican name by which all that section of the country was known before it was ceded to the United States. It is known as "The Lone Star State." The first settlement was made by LaSalle in 1685. After the independence of Mexico in 1822, it remained a Mexican Province until 1836, when it gained its independence, and in 1845 was admitted into the Union. It has an area of 237,504 square miles, equal to 152,002,560 acres. Its population in 1860 was 604,215; in 1870, 818,579. She gave to put down the Rebellion 1,965 soldiers. Capital, Austin. Has 6 Representatives, and 8 Presidential electors. Governor, O. M. Roberts, Democrat; salary, \$5,000; term, 2 years.

*Vermont*—Bears the French name of her mountains *Verde Mont*, "Green Mountains." Its motto is "Freedom and Unity." It was settled in 1731, and admitted into the Union in 1791. Area 10,212 square miles. Population in 1860, 315,098; in 1870, 330,551. She gave to defend the Government, 33,272 soldiers. Capital, Montpelier. Has 3 Representatives, and 5 electors. Governor, H. Fairbanks, Republican; term, 2 years; salary, \$1,000.

*Virginia*.—The Old Dominion, as this State is called, is the oldest of the States. It was named in honor of Queen Elizabeth, the "Virgin Queen," in whose reign Sir Walter Raleigh made his first attempt to colonize that region. Its motto is *Sic semper tyrannis*, "So always with tyrants." It was first settled at Jamestown, in 1607, by the English, being the first settlement in the United States. It is one of original thirteen States, and had before its division in 1862, 61,352 square miles, but at present contains but 38,352 square miles, equal to 24,545,280 acres. The population in 1860 amounted to 1,596,318, and in 1870 it was 1,224,830. Richmond is the capital. Has 9 Representatives, and 11 electors. Governor, F. W. M. Halliday, Democrat; salary, \$5,500; term, 4 years.

*West Virginia*.—Motto, *Montani semper liberi*, "Mountaineers are always free." This is the only State ever formed, under the Constitution, by the division of an organized State. This was done in 1862, and in 1863 was admitted into the Union. It has an area of

23,000 square miles, or 14,720,000 acres. The population in 1860 was 376,000; in 1870 it numbered 445,616. She furnished 32,003. Capital, Wheeling. Has 3 Representatives in Congress, and is entitled to 5 Presidential electors. The Governor is H. M. Mathews, Democrat; term, 4 years; salary, \$2,700.

*Wisconsin*—Is an Indian name, and means "Wild-rushing channel." Its motto, *Civitas successit barbarum*, "The civilized man succeeds the barbarous." It is called "The Badger State." The State was visited by the French explorers in 1665, and a settlement was made in 1669 at Green Bay. It was admitted into the Union in 1848. It has an area of 52,924 square miles, equal to 34,511,360 acres. In 1860 its population numbered 775,881; in 1870, 1,055,167. Madison is the capital. She furnished for the Union army 91,021 soldiers. Has 8 members in Congress, and is entitled to 10 Presidential electors. The Governor is W. E. Smith; politics, Republican; salary, \$5,000; term, 2 years.







ST. JOSEPH COUNTY COURT HOUSE

# HISTORY OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

---

## CHAPTER I.

---

FIRST WHITE MEN IN THE COUNTY.—ORIGINAL INHABITANTS.—AREA OF THE COUNTY.—TOPOGRAPHY OF THE COUNTY.—THE WATER-SHED.—RIVERS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.—FIRST ENTRIES OF LAND.—FIRST ROAD.

Father Marquette was doubtless the first European ever to visit this section of the country. In 1673 he passed up the Illinois and Kankakee rivers and across the portage to the "St. Joseph of the Lakes," and tradition tells us that he reached the river and first gazed upon its beauties at a point about two miles from where the city of South Bend now stands. The mouth of the St. Joseph river was discovered by La Salle in 1679. At that time and for a century and a half afterward, the Miami and Pottawatomie tribes of Indians were the principal occupants of the country, and interspersed among them were French traders who adopted many of the habits and customs of the aborigines. It thus becomes impossible to determine to whom really belongs the honor of being the first white settler of what is now known as St. Joseph county. It is also doubtless the fact that during the century and a half following the visit of Father Marquette and LaSalle, that many Catholic priests, in the fulfillment of their work, labored among the Indians in this vicinity. In the neighborhood of Niles, Michigan, about three miles from the county and State line, are yet to be seen the ruins of an old mission, the one doubtless referred to by Father Hennepin, a quotation from whose narrative is given elsewhere.

In 1820 Pierre F. Navarre, in the employ of the American Fur Company, came here, and in the vicinity of the present city of South Bend married a squaw of the Pottawatomie tribe of Indians, and here made a permanent home, raising a family of some half dozen children, who are now scattered throughout the West, one of whom became a preacher of the Mormon faith. Pierre F. Navarre was a man about six feet in height, slimly built, dark complexion, with a very intelligent countenance. He was as well educated as

the majority of frontiersmen, and gave his children as good an education as the country afforded at that early day. No one ever impeached his honesty, and he was always regarded as an upright man. Shortly after the Pottawatomic Indians were removed to their reservation in the West, Navarre followed them, remaining but a short time, and then returning to South Bend, where he died at the residence of one of his daughters, on the 27th day of December, 1864.

The second white man to effect a settlement was Alexis Coquillard, who, in the employ of the American Fur Company, established an agency here in 1823, and with his wife, made it his home the following year. Mr. Coquillard at this time was a young man of fine personal appearance, energetic, and the right kind of a man to build up a new place. To him, more than any other one man, is due the excellent start made by the county, and especially the city of South Bend. Coquillard was of French parentage and born in Detroit. He spent much of his time among the Indians, and being a man of large frame and powerful muscle, weighing about two hundred and fifty pounds, he was held in high esteem, and was greatly feared by them. Many incidents are yet remembered by the early settlers of the remarkable influence wielded by him over these people. They talked, at one time, of electing him chief, and his trading post on the banks of the St. Joseph river was a favorite resort for all the tribes in Northern Indiana and Southern Michigan. (For a sketch of the life of Coquillard, the reader's attention is directed to the chapter entitled "Some of the Illustrious Dead of St. Joseph County.")

Lathrop M. Taylor came next, in September, 1827. He was likewise an Indian trader and agent for a Fort Wayne firm. He was elected the first Clerk and Recorder, and has held various important positions in the business and civil concerns of the county for a half century. He was appointed the first postmaster, June 6, 1829, and held the office for about ten years, being removed in 1839 on account of his failure to indorse the administration then in power.

Lewis San Comb, Job Brookfield, Timothy Smith and family, settled near the trading posts of Coquillard and Taylor, in 1827, and William Brookfield, about two miles down the river, in what is now German township. It was on the farm of William Brookfield that the village of St. Joseph was laid out, and where the county seat was first located by the Commissioners appointed for the purpose.

In 1828 came Samuel L. Cottrell, and settled at the trading post. Mr. Cottrell afterward became quite influential in the affairs of the county, serving as Sheriff for several terms, besides holding other important offices. During the same year came Henry Painter and Eli Smith, who settled in or near South Bend, while William and Timothy Moat settled in what is now known as Penn township, and Jacob Cripe, Daniel Eiler, and Samuel Cannon took up their residence in Clay township.

In 1829 Benjamin Potter, John Hague, Mr. McCombs, and others settled in Clay township; John Smith, David and Aaron Miller, in German; and William Holt and S. I. H. Ireland in Penn.

In 1830 emigrants began to pour into the county in large numbers, among whom were Messrs. Rush, Druliner, Vail, Garwood, Nickerson, Egbert, White, Boyd, Rapel, Antrim, Whitmer, Bird, Rudduck, Haller, Ritter, Cripe, Longley, Millings, Peckover, Palmer, Rose, Skinner, Cottrell, West, Smith, Enstler, Harris, Bell, Miller, Ringle, Baldwin and others, the names of many of whom will be found in the histories of the various townships.

#### ORIGINAL INHABITANTS.

The original inhabitants of that tract of country which now constitutes the county of St. Joseph, as well as the entire St. Joseph Valley, were various tribes of Indians, more particularly the Miami and Pottawatomies, the first named being in possession when the Catholics established their missions here in the latter part of the seventeenth century. The principal station of the mission, for the instruction of the Miami, was established on the borders of the St. Joseph river, then known as the "river of the Miami," but which was changed by the missionaries somewhat later to "the St. Joseph of Lake Michigan."

The Missionary Hennepin gives the following account of the building of the first French post within the territory of the Miami. "Just at the mouth of the river Miami there was an eminence with a kind of platform naturally fortified. It was pretty high and steep, of a triangular form, defended on two sides by the river, and on the other by a deep ditch, which the fall of the water had made. We fell the trees that were on the top of the hill, and having cleared the same from bushes for about two musket shot, we began to build a redoubt of about 80 feet long and 40 feet broad, with great square pieces of timber laid one upon another, and prepared a great number of stakes of about 25 feet long, to drive into the ground, to make our fort the more inaccessible on the river side. We employed the whole month of November (1679) about that work, which was very hard, though we had no other food but the bear's flesh our savage (Indian) killed. These beasts are very common in that place, because of the great quantity of grapes that they find there; but their flesh being too fat and insidious, our men began to be weary of it, and desired leave to go a hunting to kill some wild goats. M. LaSalle denied them that liberty, which caused some murmur among them, and it was but unwillingly that they continued their work. This, together with the approach of winter, and the apprehension M. LaSalle had that his vessel (the Griffin) was lost, made him very melancholy, though he concealed it as much as he could. We had made a cabin wherein we performed divine service every Sunday, and Father Gabriel and I, who preached alternately, took care to take such texts as were suitable to our present circumstances,

and fit to inspire us with courage, concord and brotherly love. \*  
\* \* The fort was at last perfected and called Fort Miamis."

In the year 1711, the Missionary Chardon, who, it is said, "was full of zeal, and had a rare talent for acquiring languages," had his station on the St. Joseph river, about 60 miles above its mouth. In 1721, about half a century after the year in which Allouez and Dablon traversed the country lying on the southern shores of Lake Michigan, Charlevoix, a distinguished missionary from France, visited a small fort, or trading post, on the St. Joseph river, where there was a missionary station. In a letter dated "River St. Joseph, Aug. 16, 1721," Charlevoix says: "It was eight days yesterday since I arrived at this post, where we have a mission, and where there is a commandant with a small garrison. The commandant's house, which is but a very sorry one, is called the fort, from its being surrounded with an indifferent palisado, which is pretty near the case in all the rest. We have here two villages of Indians, one of the Miamis and the other of the Pottawatomies, both of them mostly Christians; but as they have been for a long time without any pastor, the missionary who has been lately sent to them will have no small difficulty in bringing them back to the exercise of their religion. The river St. Joseph comes from the southeast and discharges itself into Lake Michigan, the eastern shore of which is a hundred leagues in length, and which you are obliged to sail along before you come to the entry of this river. You afterward sail up 20 leagues in it before you reach the fort, which navigation requires great precaution. Several Indians of the two nations (Miamis and Pottawatomies) settled upon this river are just returned from the English colonies, whither they have been to sell their furs, and whence they have brought back, in return, a great quantity of spirituous liquors. The distribution of it is made in the usual manner; that is to say, a certain number of persons have, daily, delivered to each of them *a quantity sufficient to get drunk with*; so that the whole has been drunk up in eight days. They began to drink in the villages as soon as the sun was down; and every night the fields echoed with the most hideous howling."

As has already been stated, this vicinity was then the home of the Miami and Pottawatomie tribes of Indians, many of whom, especially of the latter tribe, soon became converts to the Christian religion as proclaimed by the self-sacrificing priests who cheerfully bore the cross into the wilderness. Through the influence of these God-fearing men, the latter tribe of Indians became fast friends of the whites. Though surrounded by other hostile tribes, and every influence brought to bear upon them to compel them to unite in an insurrection, they never wavered. In 1792, while other tribes, in small war parties, continued to lurk about the white settlements on the borders of the Ohio river, way-laying the paths, capturing horses and cattle, killing some of the settlers, and carrying others into captivity, the Pottawatomies remained true. In response to an invitation to visit the capital of the country, Lagesse, the principal



chief of the tribe, sent an address in which he said: "We are very glad to hear from you, but sorry we cannot comply with your request. The situation of affairs in this country prevents us. We are every day threatened by the other Indians, that if we do not take a part with them against the Americans they will destroy our villages. This alone, my father, makes it necessary for all the chiefs to remain at home. \* \* \* My father: You tell us you are ignorant why the red people makes war on your white people. We are as ignorant of it as you are; for ever since the beginning of the war, we have lain still in our villages, although we have repeatedly been invited to go to war; but, my father, the confidence we have in you has prevented us from making war against you, and we hold you by the hand with a stronger grip than ever. My father: Keep up your spirits more than ever; for you have this year more red people to fight than you have had yet. \* \* \* If I could give you a hand I would do it; but I cannot, and I am glad if me and my people have a quiet life this summer. If I had been disposed to believe all the reports I have heard, I would have made your messengers prisoners; for we are told they are spies, and that you have an army coming against us; but I am deaf to every thing that comes from the Miamis. Every day we receive messengers from those people, but we have been deaf to them, and will remain so."

Various treaties having been made with the Indians by Governor Cass, then Governor of Michigan, and others, and their lands having been purchased at various times and places, they were removed in 1840-'43, per order of the general Government, into Iowa, under the conduct of Alexis Coquillard.

The Pottawatomies were a kind and peaceful people when not excited by liquor. Many of the old settlers of the county regretted their departure from the country, and the Indians seemed equally reluctant to go. In many instances they came to the cabins of the whites to bid them good-bye, while flowing tears showed the depth of their feelings on leaving the hunting grounds and graves of their fathers.

A writer in the South Bend *Tribune* in 1878 has this to say of the first inhabitants of this country: "Over a century ago the red men of the forest were the sole occupants of the northwestern part of our country. A number of different tribes were thus scattered over that portion which now forms the States of Michigan, Indiana and Illinois. As they occasionally visited each other during favorable seasons, when those who lived in Michigan desired to see their friends in Illinois, they would go down the St. Joseph river in their canoes, being joined by others along the route who wished to accompany them, and proceed on their way to a point on the river now known as Pinhook, from a peculiar bend around a long, narrow peninsula of pin-like form, being about two miles below the present city of South Bend, where they would land; and putting their luggage, traps and other things into their canoes, one large Indian would shoulder the bow and another the stern of their

canoes, and in this way carry them across the high, rolling prairie, calling it Portage Prairie on account of the porterage across it. Some of them would take the trail to the headwaters of the Kankakee river, while others would cross over to Terre Coupee (signifying 'land cut off'), where the land was cut off by the water for many miles around, forming a large, shallow lake. Here they would build temporary huts and wait for the rest of the party to come up, in the meantime amusing themselves by rowing across and around the lake, fishing, trapping and hunting most of the time, until they were ready to start again, when they would cross the water in their canoes to the Grapevine creek, which was the outlet to this shallow lake; then down the Grapevine to the Kankakee river, and down the Kankakee, hunting, fishing and trapping on the way to the Illinois country, where they would spend some weeks visiting, enjoying themselves well, smoking their pipes of peace, and in due time return by the same route, and in much the same manner, to their homes in Michigan. These were happy days with them, being the true owners of all the forests and fields, natives to the manor born. The buffalo, the deer and the antelope, as well as the wild fowls and fish, all belonged to them for their sustenance and support. The wild beasts roamed over these lands unmolested, with the exception of an occasionally well-directed arrow from the red man's bow, killing one or two for his present need, carefully leaving the rest to increase and multiply for his future wants. These red men could roam over woodland and field without limit; the soil being all their own no one had a right to molest them in their enjoyments. Their principal occupations were hunting, fishing, trapping, raising a little common tobacco, smoking their pipes of peace, and visiting one another."

#### AREA OF THE COUNTY.

In general terms St. Joseph county may be said to be twenty-four miles long from east to west, and twenty-one miles wide from north to south. From this is to be taken a strip from the west part of about seventeen sections, and to which nine sections on the southwest part is to be attached, leaving as the area of the county four hundred and ninety-seven square miles, or sections, a total of 318,080 acres of land. From the table of assessments, on file in the Auditor's office, it is found there are 285,831 acres of land subject to taxation, leaving a balance of 32,267 acres not taxable, or that have been laid out into city, town and village plats and taxed as town lots. Of this total of 285,831, Olive township has 36,111 acres; Warren, 20,142; German, 12,350; Clay, 13,293; Harris, 13,329; Penn, 40,534; Portage, 14,148; Green, 21,969; Union, 27,278; Liberty, 27,558; Maison, 33,094; Lincoln, 13,395; town of Walkerton, 135.

## TOPOGRAPHY OF THE COUNTY.

The surface of the county is pleasingly diversified, there being no long stretches of prairie which, in traveling over, becomes tiresome to the eye, nor impenetrable forests, nor mountainous ranges; but a pleasing variety of prairie, openings, and timber in almost every part of the county. The principal prairies are Terre Coupee, the largest in the county, and which was at one-time covered by water, lying in Olive township; Sumption's, in Green township; Portage, in German township; Harris, in Harris township, and Palmer's, in Center township. As one passes through the various townships of the county, he will notice the light, sandy soil of the original oak openings, the dark, sandy loam of the densely wooded regions, the decayed vegetable mold of the prairies, and the peat-beds of the marshes and natural meadows. There is a large percentage of silica in most of the soil, and wheat consequently has always been an abundant crop. Corn is excelled nowhere east of the Mississippi except in Illinois. Fruit is easily raised, and in large quantities, and of excellent quality.

Along the Kankakee river for quite a distance on either side is marsh land, but the marshes are becoming gradually dried each year, and one of the most extensive peat-beds in the State has been discovered here. It is upward of sixty miles in length and about three miles in width, lying on both sides of the Kankakee, and is from ten to fifteen feet in depth. This will in time become invaluable as fuel, and will also furnish an inexhaustible fountain for the manufacture of gas. On the north and south of Mishawaka are marsh lands which furnish an inexhaustible supply of bog ore, which was extensively used for some years.

## THE WATER-SHED.

A line drawn from the east part of the county four miles south of the St. Joseph river, and extending due west to Bolin's lake (a little to the west of south from South Bend), thence a little to the west of north to the head waters of the Kankakee, thence north-west to the northwest corner of Warren township, marks the watershed of St. Joseph county. To the north and northeast from this line the streams flow into the St. Joseph river, and to Lake Michigan, reaching the Atlantic ocean through Lakes Huron, St. Clair, Erie, St. Lawrence river, and the Gulf of St. Lawrence; whereas, to the south and southwest they flow into the Kankakee, and down the Illinois and Mississippi, reaching the Atlantic through the Gulf of Mexico. A mill-race was once dug from the head waters of the Kankakee to the St. Joseph river at South Bend, and the waters of that river made to flow, by the assistance of art, in both directions from this fountain head, so level is the division line of the watershed.

## RIVERS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

The principal river in St. Joseph county is the St. Joseph, which takes its rise in Hillsdale county, Michigan, and by a winding, tortuous way enters the county on section 9, township 37 north of range 4 east, taking a westerly course passes through sections 9, 8, 7, of the same township and range, sections 12, 11, 10, 15, 16, 17, 18 of township 37 north, of range 3 east, whence it takes a northerly course, through sections 12, 1 and 2, township 37, range 2 east, end sections 35, 26, 27, 23, 14 and 11, township 38 north, of range 2 east, into the State of Michigan, through which it wends its way to Lake Michigan, at the city of St. Joseph, in that State. The river was first called the "River of the Miamis," from the fact that when discovered by the white men, it was in the country of the Miami Indians who lived principally upon its banks. After the Catholic missionaries established their missions here in the latter part of the seventeenth or the beginning of the eighteenth century, the name of the river was changed to the St. Joseph of Lake Michigan, by which name it is yet sometimes called, to distinguish it from the St. Joseph river that takes its rise in Ohio and enters Indiana in the northeastern part, emptying into the Maumee river near Fort Wayne.

On this river are some very fine water-powers, the best being at South Bend, where it is used to run a large number of manufactories of various kinds. The river is about 250 miles in length, and is the most beautiful and picturesque stream in the State.

The Kankakee river takes its rise about one mile west of the city of South Bend, on section 9, township 37 north of range 2 east. Taking a southwesterly course it passes through sections 16, 20, 19 and 30 of the same town and range where it takes its rise, thence through sections 25, 26, 35, 34, 33, township 37 north of range 1 east sections 4, 5, 6, 7, township 36 north of range 1 east, and sections 12 and 13, township 36 north of range 1 west, into La Porte county, whence it passes on to the Illinois river, into which it empties.

## FIRST ENTRIES OF LAND.

The lands in St. Joseph county, although ceded to the United States Government some years previous by the Pottawatomie Indians, did not come into market until the spring of 1830. The first entries made were on the 19th day of April, of the same year. John Johnston entered the southwest quarter of the southeast quarter of section 11, township 38 north, of range 3 east, and Samuel Bell entered the southeast quarter of the southwest quarter of the same section, township and range. Other entries rapidly followed these, so that during the first year a large quantity of the most valuable land in the county was taken up.

## FIRST ROAD.

For several years after the settlement of this county by the whites, the only roads over which there were any travel were the Indian trails, or the blazed path of the white men through the timbers.

The first regularly located road was made in 1830, under the supervision of Judge Polk, of Logansport, Indiana, by order of the State, and is known as the Michigan road. This road was run from Madison, Indiana, on the Ohio river to the mouth of Trail creek, where has since been located Michigan City, on Lake Michigan. The road first struck this county in township 35 north, of range 2 east, and taking a northerly course, was run to South Bend, and thence west, leaving the county on section 34, township 38 north, of range 1 west, where since has been located the town of New Carlisle. The reason the road was run to the present city of South Bend, instead of going in a direct course to its terminus was to avoid the Kankakee marsh.



## CHAPTER II.

### NATURAL HISTORY—QUADRUPEDS—BIRDS—REPTILES—FISHES—PLANTS.

Of the species of native quadrupeds that once roamed the flowery prairies and wild forests of this county, but few of the smaller remain, and none of the larger. Of the latter we cannot even find a specimen preserved in taxidermy. The buffalo which grazed upon the verdant prairies has been driven westward. With or before it went the beaver, elk, badger, panther, black wolf and black bear. Some animals that were quite numerous have become very rare, such as the gray fox, the catamount, otter, lynx, the beautiful Virginia deer, the opossum, raccoon, mink, muskrat, the common weasel, the small brown weasel, skunk, woodchuck, or Maryland marmot, prairie mole, common shrew mole, meadow and deer mouse, and the gray rabbit. Of squirrels there are the gray timber squirrel, the fox, chipmunk, the large gray prairie squirrel, the striped and the spotted prairie squirrel, and the beautiful flying squirrel. The dark-brown and the reddish bat are common. Other small animals have been found here which have strayed from other localities.

#### BIRDS.

Of the 5,000 existing species of birds many have sojourned in this county, some temporarily and others for a considerable time. Many migratory species come only at long intervals, and therefore but little is known of them. Most species seen here are migratory between the North and the South.

There is not a more fascinating study than that afforded by our feathered friends. Their free movements through seemingly boundless space, the joyous songs of many, and the characteristic tones of all, their brilliant colors, their lively manners, and their wonderful instincts, have from earliest ages made a strong impression on the minds of men, and in the infancy of intellect gave rise to many peculiar and mysterious associations. Hence the flight of birds was made the foundation of a peculiar art of divination. Religion borrowed many symbols from them, and poetry many of its ornaments. Birds avail themselves of their powers of wing to seek situations adapted for them in respect to temperature and supply of food. The arrival of summer birds is always a welcome sign of advancing spring, and is associated with all that is cheerful and delightful. Some birds come almost at the same date annually; others are more influenced by the character of the season, as mild or severe.

The following list is as nearly correct as can be compiled from the available information upon the subject.

*Perchers.*—This order of birds is by far the most numerous, and includes nearly all those which are attractive either in plumage or in song. The ruby-throated humming-bird, with its exquisite plumage and almost ethereal existence, is at the head of the list. This is the humming-bird which is always the delight of the children, and the only one found in this State. The chimney swallow, easily known from other swallows by its very long wings and forked tail, and which is a true swift, is quite numerous. Of the Whippoorwill family there are two representatives,—the whippoorwill proper, whose note enlivens the forest at night, and the night-hawk. The belted king-fisher, so well known to the school boy, is the only member of its family in this region. At the head of the fly-catchers is the king-bird, the crested fly-catcher and the wood pewee.

Of the Thrush family are the robin, the wood thrush, Wilson's thrush, the blue-bird, the ruby-crowned and the golden-crested wren, tit-lark, the black and the white creeper, blue yellow-backed warbler, yellow-breasted chat, worm-eating warbler, blue-winged yellow warbler, Tennessee warbler, and golden-crowned thrush. The Shrike family is represented by the great northern shrike, red-eyed fly-catcher, white-eyed fly-catcher, the blue-headed and the yellow-throated fly-catcher. The Swallow family of birds are very numerous in this country. Among them are the barn swallow, white-bellied swallow, bank swallow, cliff swallow and purple martin. The cedar-bird is the representative of the wax-wing family in America. The genera of the Mocking-bird family are the cat-bird, brown thrush, the house and winter wren. Of the Finch and Sparrow family, the snow bunting and Smith's bunting appear only in winter. The purple finch, the yellow-bird and the lark finch inhabit this county. Of the Passerine genus of this family are the savannah sparrow, the field and the chipping sparrow, the black snow-bird, the tree sparrow, the song sparrow, the swamp and the fox-colored sparrow, the black-throated bunting, the rose-breasted gros-beak and the ground robin. The Titmouse family is represented by the chickadee and the tufted titmouse. There are two species of the Creeper family—the white bellied nut-hatch and the American creeper. The melodious family of Skylarks is represented here by only the common skylark of the prairie. Of the Black-bird family, the rusty black-bird, the crow black-bird, the cow-bird, the red-winged black-bird, the meadow lark, the orchard and the Baltimore oriole, are the most beautiful and brilliant that inhabit this region. The blue-jay and the common crow comprise the species of the Crow family.

*Birds of Prey.*—This order of birds comprises all those, with few exceptions, which pursue and capture birds and other animals for food. They are mostly of large size, the females are larger than the males, they live in pairs, and choose their mates for life. Most raptorial birds have disappeared. Among them are the golden

eagle, which was always rare but now no longer seen here; the bald eagle, or properly the white-headed eagle, once quite common, now scarce. Some well-preserved specimens of this genus are in the county. This eagle enjoys the honor of standing as our national emblem. Benjamin Franklin lamented the selection of this bird as emblematical of the Union, for its great cowardice. It has the ability of ascending in circular sweeps without any apparent motion of the wings or the tail, and it often rises in this manner until it disappears from view, when at an immense height, and as if observing an object on the ground, it sometimes closes its wings and glides toward the earth with such velocity that the eye can scarcely follow it, causing a loud rustling sound like a violent gust of wind among the branches of the forest. The Hawk family has eight or nine species, some but seldom seen, others common. The turkey-buzzard has almost, if not quite, disappeared. It is still abundant further south. Of the Owl genera are several species, though all are but seldom seen because of their nocturnal habits. Among them are the barn owl, the screech owl, the long and the short eared owl, the barred owl, and the snowy owl, the latter being the rarest.

*Climbers.*—But few of this order remain in the county, the most common of which are the woodpeckers. Of the various kinds of these are the golden-winged, the pileated, the hairy, the downy, the yellow-bellied, red-bellied and the red-headed. The yellow billed cuckoo is occasionally seen; the black-billed cuckoo is rare.

*Scratchers.*—This order contains but few genera in this county. The wild turkey, the choicest of game, has almost entirely disappeared, and was the only one of its family that ever sojourned here. In an early day they were in abundance. The chiefest among the Grouse family is the prairie chicken, which, if not carefully protected, must ere long follow the wild turkey, never to return. The ruffed grouse, wrongfully called "pheasant," has of late made its appearance. When frightened it takes to flight with a smothered, drum-like noise. It is quite fond of cultivated fields, and, if properly protected and encouraged until it becomes fairly settled, will make a fine addition to the game, and fill the place of the prairie chicken. Partridge family.—The fate of that excellent bird, the quail, is only a question of a short time. The Dove family.—The wild pigeons continue to make their semi-annual visits, but not in such vast numbers as years ago. Acres of forest were so often filled at night with these birds that the breaking of boughs and the flying of pigeons made a noise that could be heard for miles, and the shot of a sportsman's gun could not be heard at a distance of ten feet. Highly interesting is the description by Audubon of the enormous flights which he observed on the Ohio in the fall of 1813; they obscured the daylight and lasted three days without interruption. According to a very moderate estimate of his, each flight contained the stupendous number of one billion, one hundred and fifteen thousand million, one hundred and thirty-six thousand pigeons. These flights caused a general commotion



among the entire rural population. Desirous of booty, and anxious lest their crops should be spoiled, the farmers, arming themselves with rifles, clubs, poles, torches and iron pots filled with sulphur, proceed to the resting places of the birds. The work of slaughter being accomplished, everybody sat down among mountains of dead pigeons, plucking and salting the birds which they selected, abandoning the rest to the foxes, wolves, raccoons, opossums and hogs, whole herds of which were driven to the battle-field. The plaintive notes of the Carolina dove, commonly known as the turtle-dove, are still heard.

*Swimmers*.—This order of birds, which formerly frequented this county in large numbers, have almost disappeared. They are migratory, and in their usual season would appear coming from the north or south, as winter passes into summer or summer into winter. Of the Diver family, the great northern diver, or loon, sometimes visits this section, but inhabits the frigid zone. Of the Gull family are Wilson's tern and silvery gull.—The roughed-billed pelican was the only genus of the Pelican family that ever stopped in this county, and it has now altogether ceased to make its visits here. Of the Cormorant family, the double-crested cormorant, or sea-raven, has been seen here. Duck family.—This family of migratory birds visited the ponds and streams of this county in large numbers before it became so thickly settled, both on their northern and southern passage, but now mostly confine themselves to the wilder places, where large numbers are found. This family furnishes most game for sportsmen and for the table. There are the wood-duck, the big black-headed duck, the ring-necked duck, the red-head, the canvas-back, the dipper, the shell-drake or goosander, the fish-duck, the red-breasted, and the hooded merganser, the mallard and the pintail, the green-winged and the blue-winged teal, the spoonbill and the gadwall, the baldpate, the American swan, the trumpeter swan and the white-fronted goose.

*Waders*.—Probably less is known of this order of birds than of any other, because of their shyness and solitary habits. They frequented the marshes, but cultivation has drained their favorite haunts. Of the Crane family, the whooping crane, always rare, is now never seen. The sand-hill cranes stop on their journeys north and south. Of the Heron family, the great blue heron or crane, least bittern, the green heron, night heron and the American bittern visit this region. Of the Ibis family, the glossy ibis has been seen here. Of the Plover family, the golden plover, the kildeer and the king plover comprise this family known here. Of the Phalarope family, the Wilson's and the red phalarope have frequented the swamps of this county. Various birds of the Snipe family have been common in and around the swamps of this county. Among them were Wilson's snipe, grey or red-breasted snipe, the least and the semi-palmated sandpiper, the willet, the tell-tale, the yellow-leg, the solitary sandpiper, the spotted sandpiper, the field plover, long-billed curlew, the common rail, the clapper rail or mud hen, and the coot.

*Reptiles.*—All of the species of this class that ever inhabited this region are still to be found here except most of the poisonous snakes. The rattlesnake is of a yellowish-brown color, and has a series of horny joints at the end of the tail, which make a rattling sound. These were the most venomous of all snakes found here, and were numerous in the early settlement. There are two kinds, the bandy, or striped, and the prairie rattlesnake, the latter being still occasionally found. The copperhead was always rare. Among the harmless snakes are the water-snake, the garter-snake, the bull-snake, the milk-snake, the black-snake, and the blue racer.

Many reptiles found here are erroneously called lizards, but are salamanders and other like innocent creatures. Lizards are never found in this county. The so-called "water lizards" are newts, or Tritons. Among the tortoises or turtles are found the map turtle, the snapping and the soft-shelled turtle. Of the batrachian, or naked reptiles, there are a few, and, though loathsome to sight and touch, are harmless. The toad, the bull-frog, the leopard-frog, the tree-toad, with some tailed batrachia, comprise the most of this order. The bull-frog is often as large as a man's head, or larger, and his deep bellowing can be heard for a mile or more.

*Fishes.*—Although fishes are the lowest class of vertebrates, their varied forms and colors, which often rival those of precious stones and burnished gold, the wonderful power and velocity of some, the wholesome food furnished by many, and the exciting sport of their capture, combine to render fishes subjects of great interest to the casual observer, as well as to the amateur and professional naturalist. The number of known species of fishes is about ten thousand. The waters of this country are quite prolific of the finny tribe. The commerce in fish has become quite extensive along some of the and lakes. The Sickle-backed family furnishes the game fish, and are never caught larger than four pounds in weight. The various genera found here are the black bass, goggle-eye, the croppy, or big black sun-fish, and the two common sun-fish. There are but two species of the Pike family,—the pickerel, weighing from five to twenty-five pounds, and the gar pike. Of the Sucker family are the buffalo, red-horse, white-sucker, two species of black-suckers and mullet ranick. Fish of this family are found in all the streams of the county. They abound wherever there is water. Of the Cat-fish family the channel cat-fish, the mud cat-fish and two species of the small cat-fish inhabit the waters of this county, and are caught ranging in weight from one to thirty pounds. The bull-head is yet abundant, and its flesh, as well as its general appearance, resembles that of the cat-fish.

Besides these varieties there are the chub, silver-sides and fresh-water herring, and large numbers of other species denominated minnows, which are found in the smallest spring branches, as well as the larger streams.

## BOTANY.

This county is favorably situated for the production of a great variety of interesting plants. Out of about 2,400 species of flowering plants in the United States, about 1,600 can be found within the limits of this State, and about 1,000 within this county. In the following list we will enumerate only the most common and remarkable, growing spontaneously in this county; and we give the English names from Gray's Manual, fifth edition, being well aware that most localities have different names for many plants, and that even in the books some English names are given to two or more plants, as sycamore, button snakeroot, black snakeroot, goose-grass, hair-grass, loosestrife, etc.

*Crowfoots*.—Common virgin's bower, a vine, is occasionally found: the leather-flower, a cultivated vine bearing large, blue flowers, is of the same genus. The Pennsylvanian, Virginian and wood anemones occur here and there. Liver-leaf ("liver-wort") is common on forest hillsides. Rue anemone, and the early, the purplish and the tall meadow-rues are common in the woods. The true buttercups of the East are not found here, but the most common flower corresponding to them is the creeping crowfoot. The small-flowered, the hooked, the bristly and the early crowfoots also occur. Isopyrum grows in moist, shady places. Marsh marigold is common in early spring, growing in mud supplied with fresh water: in the East they are called "cowslips" and sometimes used for greens. Water plantain spearwort, growing in mud, and yellow water crowfoot, growing in water and with the submersed leaves finely divided, are seen occasionally. Wild columbine, so easily recognized by its resemblance to the cultivated species, abounds in the margins of the woods; so also two species of wild larkspur. Yellow puccoon is very scarce. White baneberry is occasionally seen in the deep woods.

*Custard-Apple Family*.—The papaw is common. This is a fragile bush, with large leaves, bearing fruit about the size and appearance of short, thick, green cucumbers, which have a pulp like the banana. To "learn" to like them one must merely taste of them at times far apart.

*Moonseed*.—Canadian moonseed is abundant in the woods. It is a smooth, twining vine like the morning-glory, with a beautiful, round, yellow root, which has a tonic-bitter taste, and is sometimes called sarsaparilla. The true wild sarsaparilla belongs to the Ginseng family.

*Barberry Family*.—May-apple, or mandrake, is abundant, and blue cohosh somewhat rare.

*Water Lilies*.—The pond, or white water lily, is abundant in large, open ponds in the river bottoms, and the yellow water, or frog lily, growing in shallow, stagnant water, is common. The yellow nelumbo, a similar plant, is sometimes found.

*Poppy Family*.—The well-known blood-root is the only representative of this family growing wild in this county.

*Fumitory Family*.—The celebrated Dutchman's breeches is common, and squirrel-corn is sometimes found. Bleeding heart is of the same genus.

*Mustards*.—Marsh cress is common; lake cress, growing in water, is sometimes seen; and horse-radish flourishes beyond the bounds of cultivation. Pepper-root, an early-flowering plant, is common in the dense forest. Two varieties of spring cress are frequent. Two species of the delicate little rock cress and *Arabis dentata* are also frequent. Hedge mustard is the most common mustard-like weed that grows on cultivated and waste grounds. Tansy mustard is rare. Black mustard, the type of this family, flourishes on cultivated and waste grounds. White mustard is very rare at the present day. Shepherd's purse is abundant early in the season,—a weed everywhere: its seed-pod is triangular, somewhat inflated, and in shape resembles a shepherd's purse of the olden time. Wild peppergrass is common in late summer: seed-pods, wafer-form. Whitlow grass grows in sandy ground. To the Mustard family belong the radish, turnip and cabbage of our gardens.

*Caper Family*.—*Polanisia*, a fetid pod-bearing plant, is common on sandy ground, and is extending along the railroads where sand and gravel are deposited. *Cleome pungens*, or spider-flower, is escaping from cultivation.

*Violets*.—Common blue violet is abundant, the other kinds more rare, namely, hand-leaf, arrow-leaved, larkspur, bird-foot, downy yellow, etc. Heart's-ease belongs to this order.

*Rock-Roses*.—Frost-weed grows in sandy soil, and pin-weed on dry ground. *Hudsonia*, the smallest shrub in the country, grows on some of the sandy hills.

*Sundews*.—Round-leaved sundew is common in some places.

*St. John's-worts*.—Several species are found in this county.

*Pinks*.—Starry campion, sleepy catchfly, corn cockle, sandwort, long-leaved stitchwort and forked chickweed are found here and there. Common chickweed and three species of mouse-ear chickweed and bouncing bet are more common. Carpet weed is common on the sand; it grows in the form of a bunchy lamp-mat.

*Purslanes*.—Akin to the beautiful portulaca is our universal purslane, often called "pursley." Spring beauty belongs to this family. It is one of the earliest spring flowers, and may be distinguished by the plant's having but two leaves, long and narrow and somewhat fleshy. The flower is a light rose color, with deeper veins.

*Mallows Family*.—Common, or low mallows and velvet-leaf, or Indian mallows are very abundant. The latter is a tall, pestiferous weed about our fields, with seed-vessels resembling poppy-bolls. *Sida* and bladder ketmia, or flower of an hour, are common. To this order belong the hollyhock and okra, in cultivation.

*Linden*.—Bass-wood, known as lin among Southern people, is the only member of this family growing here.

*Geranium Family*.—Wild crane's-bill is common in early spring, having a solitary, rose-colored flower on the summit. Carolina crane's-bill is rather rare. Spotted and pale touch-me-nots are common in moist, shaded places, growing in dense patches. The balsamine of cultivation is of the same genus. Yellow wood-sorrel is everywhere, and here and there the violet wood-sorrel prevails to some extent. This is erroneously called "sheep-sorrel." Sheep, or field-sorrel, grows on sandy or gravelly ground, has lance-shaped and pointed leaves, obscure flowers, and seeds like pie-plant or yellow-dock, while wood-sorrel grows mostly in clay soil, has three leaflets like clover, showy flowers, and seeds in a pod. The two sorrels belong to different orders, but have a similar taste.

*Rueworts*.—The northern prickly ash, a common shrub in our woods, but growing scarcer, and the still rarer hop-tree, are the only members of this family in this county. Garden rue is of the same order, or family.

*Cashew Family*.—In America this would seem to be rather the sumac family. The smooth sumac is common everywhere, fragrant sumac abundant in sandy ground, and poison ivy is common along fences—some places abundant. The latter is a coarse, woody vine with innumerable rootlets, and has three leaflets to each leaf, with these leaflets sometimes partly divided. When the plant is young it can be distinguished from box-elder by the latter having a white "bloom" on the stem, and at all times it can be distinguished from Virginia creeper (American ivy, an innocent plant) by the latter having five leaflets to each leaf, and the whole leaf in shape like that of buckeye. Poison, dwarf and stag-horn sumacs are common in some places.

*Vine Family*, that is, the Grape-vine family.—Virginia creeper, just described, is as abundant as any weed. The winter, or frost-grape and the northern fox-grape are common, but the summer grape, a delicious fruit, is very scarce, if indeed it can be found at all in this county. It used to be abundant, but the vines have been destroyed by reckless grape gatherers.

*Buckthorn Family*.—The noted red-root, or New Jersey tea, a shrub in the margin of prairies, and to some extent in all other situations, is the only representative of this family here, and it is becoming rarer by the encroachments of cultivation and pasturage. The leaves make very good tea.

*Staff-tree Family*.—The climbing bittersweet and waahoo are all there are of this family in our limits. The former is a smooth, woody vine, common in the woods, climbing by simply twining, and bearing orange-colored berries in clusters, often called wax-work, and used in ornamentation. This vine is often called simply bittersweet, but the true medical bittersweet is a very different plant, scarcely a vine at all, and not growing wild in this county. The waahoo, or burning-bush, is a real bush of about the size and

proportions of a plum-tree; its twigs have four white lines, and its crimson fruit in autumn after the leaves have fallen is very showy. The flowers are dark purple. Strawberry-bush is rare.

*Soapberry Order* includes the Maple, Bladdernut and Soapberry (proper) families. Of the maples the most common are the sugar, the red and the white. The latter are the soft maples. Box-elder is sometimes called ash-leaved maple, and belongs to this family. The American bladdernut is a tree-like shrub about 10 feet high, producing large three-lobed, inflated seed pods. Two species of buck-eye are common in the river bottoms.

*Milkworts*.—Seneca snakeroot and four other species of milkwort are found in this region.

*Pulse Family*.—This large family is characterized by having seeds in pods like beans and peas, which are members of the family. The first in the list, according to the books, are the clovers—red and white. Two other species of this genus occur, indeed, but are too rare to enumerate here. Then the white sweet clover, more recently escaped from cultivation; then two species of prairie clover, almost extinct. Goat's rue, false indigo (*Amorpha*) and lead plant abound on dry, sandy loam in river bottoms. The common locust was introduced here, but this is too far north for it to be hardy enough to withstand our winds and the borer. A honey-locust occurs here and there. One milk vetch is frequent. Six species of tick trefoil abound and nine others occur. These are those plants in the woods bearing "pods" of triangular, flat burs. Five species of bush clover are found here. Three vetches (tares) and four marsh vetchlings, ground nut, kidney bean, false indigo (*Baptisia*) and wild senna are found here and there. Hog peanut, called wild pea or bean by some, abounds everywhere in the woods. Red-bud is an ugly little tree except in the spring before the leaves appear, when the whole top is of a beautiful purplish-red from the blossoms. Partridge pea is abundant "in spots," grows like a weed in low places, 20 inches to two feet high, has leaves like a locust, and bears a very large, yellow flower. The sensitive plant may be found within the bounds of this county, but if so, it is very scarce. The Kentucky coffee-tree is rare. It is famous for its beautiful compound leaves and glossy beans.

*Rose Family*.—Most of our edible fruits come from this family of trees and herbs, as the apple, peach, plum, cherry, strawberry, etc. The wild plum (yellow or red) is becoming very scarce; the wild red cherry is always rare; the wild black cherry is abundant; choke-cherry is a shrub occasionally found; dwarf cherry is common on sandy ridges; nine-bark and goat's-beard are species of spiræa frequently found; common meadow sweet and Canadian burnet, rare; agrimony is a coarse herb occasionally seen, having leaves resembling those of the strawberry, and bearing a kind of drooping bur,—a plant about two feet high. One species of avens is very common, and four other species are found. Common cinquefoil, or five-finger, resembles the strawberry very closely, and

abounds in dry soil; Norwegian cinquefoil has similar leaves, but the plant is coarse and grows three feet high,—not common; silvery and several other species of cinquefoil are also found. One species of wild strawberry abounds in retired situations; it was common over the original prairie. The high blackberry and the raspberry prevail here as elsewhere, but their sylvan territory is narrowed to close limits by the encroachments of man; the low blackberry, or dewberry, and the running swamp blackberry also occur; the dwarf raspberry grows only a foot or two high. Of the roses proper, the dwarf wild rose is the most common, but its territory has also become very limited; the “early wild” rose may be found. Three species of red haw (hawthorn) occur; the black, or pear, thorn is the most common, then the scarlet-fruited thorn, and lastly the cockspur thorn. The crab apple and choke berry are well known. Several varieties of June berry are common.

*Saxifrages*.—Two or three species of gooseberry are common; three species of currant grow here; and swamp saxifrage and two species of alum-root are sometimes met with. Mitre-wort, or bishop’s cap, is common, flowering in early spring; this is an interesting little plant.

*Orpine Family*.—Ditch stone-crop is common during wet seasons; can occasionally be found in the ditches during dry seasons; mossy stone-crop has escaped from cultivation to gravelly roadsides, etc.; one other species of stone-crop occurs.

*Witch Hazel* is abundant, flowering in late autumn.

*Water-Milfoil*.—Two species.

*Evening Primroses*.—Common evening primrose, enchanter’s nightshade and two species of willow-herb are common. Seed-box, water-purslane and sun-drops are found here and there.

*Melastoma Family*.—Deer-grass, or meadow-beauty is a modest little purple-flowered plant growing in sandy swamps.

*Loosestrife Family*.—One species of *Ammannia*, one of *Lythrum*, one of swamp loosestrife (*Nesaea*) and clammy *Cuphea* are not infrequent.

*Cactus Family*.—One species common on sandy ridges.

*Gourd Family*.—Wild balsam apple is a common vine, well known, and in heavily wooded river bottoms one-seeded cucumber occurs.

*Parsley Family*.—This family is characterized by having their seed-bearing tops like those of parsnips. Most of the poisonous plants growing in this country belong to this family. Two species of black snakeroot prevail in this county; water pennywort, polytaenia, cowbane, meadow parsnip, spotted cowbane (two species), rattlesnake master, water parsnip (two species), chervil and poison hemlock occur here and there, while smoother and hairy sweet cicely are abundant; even garden parsnip is becoming a common weed in open, protected places. Of the whole family the most poisonous are the spotted cowbane and poison hemlock. Cow parsnip is the largest plant of this order, and grows in shaded bottom lands.



*Ginseng Family.*—Ginseng, on account of its popular medical qualities, has been pretty well thinned out; dwarf ginseng, or ground-nut, is a modest little plant flowering in April. The true wild sarsaparilla (a plant of the appearance of a large ginseng) is sometimes found, and spikenard is common in the forest ravines.

*Dogwoods.*—The most common dogwood is the white-berried, or paniced cornel, next the rough-leaved, the alternate-leaved, the flowering, the silky, red-osier, dwarf and round-leaved. Pepperidge, a middle-sized tree, occurs here and there.

*Honeysuckles.*—Common elder and yellow honeysuckle are common. Horse gentian, or fever-wort, is a forest weed bearing five to ten yellow berries in a circle around the stem at every place where the two opposite leaves are attached. The true black haw is scarce, but sheep-berry, which is generally called black haw, is common. Two species of arrow-wood and the cranberry tree occur here and there.

*Madder Family.*—The small bedstraw, two species of the rough and the northern bed-straw are abundant, and the sweet-scented is common, while occasionally may be found cleavers, or goose-grass. Wild liquorice occurs rarely. These herbs are all of a flax-like appearance, having several beautiful little leaves in a whorl at each joint. Button bush is common in wet ground. Partridge-berry is common further north.

*Composites.*—This order is by far the largest of all. Its flowers are compound, that is, there are several, sometimes many, small flowers crowded close together in a head, as sunflower, lettuce, dandelion, aster, chrysanthemum, May-weed, etc. Their time of flowering is generally late in the season.

Iron-weed is common on flat ground; its summit in August is a beautiful royal purple. Four species of button snakeroot (one called also blazing star) are abundant on protected original prairie, and occur nowhere else. Five species of thoroughwort grow here, that called boneset being abundant. The species called trumpet, or Joe-Pye weed, is a tall, interesting weed, with 3 to 6 leaves in each whorl, that is, at each joint. Kuhnia is not rare; it resembles boneset. Mist-flower grows in our limits. Of the asters there are about 30 species growing within this county; about half of them are very common. The flowers have a starry appearance; hence the name. The most remarkable of them is the New England aster, a large purple flower along the roadsides in September. Five species of fleabane, similar to the asters in appearance, are common, namely: horseweed, which is abundant on waste and cultivated grounds, Robin's plantain, common fleabane, and two daisy fleabanes, one of them called also sweet scabious. About 20 species of golden-rod can be found in this county, only half of them common, however. The most abundant is the *Solidago Canadensis*. From these much honey is made by bees in September. Four species of rosin-weed used to prevail on the original prairie, but their territory is very limited at the present day. The most noted



of them has divided leaves, and is also called compass plant, or polar plant, the leaves having once been thought to point north and south. They do indeed stand with their faces somewhat parallel, but they are just as apt to have their edges toward other points of the compass. One species of rosin-weed has undivided leaves, large and rough, and is called prairie dock. This and the compass plant flourish on flat prairie soil which is not pastured. The species called cup-plant grows along the banks of channeled sloughs. The leaves join together at the base so as to form a cup. It is a very large weed. Parthenium, a similar plant, is not rare. Rag-weed is the most common weed we have along the roadsides; called also hogweed, Roman wormwood, etc. Great ragweed is the largest weed that grows in this country: common along fences. Cockle-bur is on the increase. Ox-eye, *Lepachys* and six species of cone-flower are almost common. Six species of wild sunflower flourish along fences in unfrequented situations. They are tall weeds, but not troublesome. One kind has tuberous roots, and is really an artichoke. Three species of tickseed occur in this county. The true Spanish needle does not grow here, but three species of its genus abound here, especially during wet seasons, namely, common and swamp beggar ticks and the larger bur-marigold. The smaller bur-marigold is found in shallow running water. Fetid marigold is abundant in dry situations along the wagon roads. When struck, even lightly, it yields a rank, aromatic odor; called also false dog-fennel. Sneezeweed, which looks somewhat like a Spanish needle, is abundant during wet seasons and exceedingly scarce at other times. May-weed, or dog fennel, every one is familiar with. So with yarrow. The ox-eye daisy or white-weed, a vexatious weed in the East, is just beginning to creep in along the railroads. Biennial wormwood is a common but harmless weed in waste places. Common and plantain-leaved everlasting are common. Fire-weed, abundant. Golden rag-wort, several species of hawkweed and *Cynthia* here and there. The famous Canada thistle is seldom seen; the common thistle abounds more and more. Two other species are common, growing very tall. Burdock and dandelion are abundant. Wild lettuce and false or blue lettuce are common milky weeds, growing very tall. Two species of sow thistle, comparatively harmless, are modestly on the increase.

*Lobelias*.—The celebrated medical lobelia, or Indian tobacco, flourishes along our garden fences. The great lobelia, or blue cardinal flower, is abundant in moist ground. The cardinal flower is the most showy, dazzling-red flower we have growing wild: found in wet ground and on the banks of sloughs. A small and slender species of lobelia is common in protected situations.

*Campanula or Bellflower Family*.—The tall bellflower is common. Venus's looking-glass is found here and there. "Blue-bells" do not belong here; they are the smooth lungwort, belonging to the Borage family.

*Holly*.—Mountain holly is common in places.

*Heaths*.—Large and small cranberry, black huckleberry, and dwarf, low and swamp blueberries are found here, the first three in swamps. Creeping snowberry (in peat bogs), bearberry in sandy ground, creeping wintergreen, shin leaf, sheep laurel, Labrador tea, Indian pipe and pipsissewa are occasionally found.

*Plantain Family*.—The common plantain of our door-yards. Two other species of this family may occur in this county, but they are exceedingly rare.

*Primrose*.—Several species of loosestrife (*Lysimachia*), chickweed, wintergreen and one or two pimpernels occur. Moneywort is common about some door-yards.

*Bladderworts*.—Greater bladderwort, in ponds, is very common.

*Figworts*.—Mullein, toad-flax ("butter-and-eggs"), fig-wort, beard-tongue, two species of *Gerardia*, two species of louse-wort and cow-wheat are common, while monkey-flower, hedge-hyssop, false pimpernel, purslane, Culver's root, water, marsh, purslane, common and corn speedwell and blue-hearts are sometimes seen. Toad-flax has persistent roots like witch-grass and threatens to become a pest. The snap-dragon of our gardens is a fig-wort.

*Vervains*.—Verbenas belong to this order. The most abundant plant belonging to this family and growing wild is the hoary vervain; next are the bracted (prostrate), the white or nettle-leaved, and the blue. They all prefer dry, waste grounds, and are much inclined to hybridize. Fog-fruit is abundant in sandy ground along the rivers. Lopseed is common in woods.

*Mints*.—Common are wood sage, or American germander, wild mint, bugle-weed, American pennyroyal, and hedge nettle (two species). Motherwort, catnip, heal-all, and wild mint are abundant. Here and there are water horehound, mountain mint, horse-mint, calaminth, *Blephilia*, (two species), giant hyssop (two species), false dragon head, or lion's heart, mad-dog skullcap and one other species of skullcap. Ground ivy, or gill-over-the-ground, is abundant about dwellings. What is generally called "horse-mint" in the West is "wild bergamot" according to the books. Wild mint is often taken for peppermint. True peppermint, spearmint, and horehound are scarce within our limits. *Salvia*, sage and Mexican sage are cultivated plants belonging to this order.

*Borageworts*.—Hairy and hoary puccoon, smooth lungwort, stick-seed, beggar's lice and common hound's-tongue are common; all other species rare. Comfrey belongs to this family. Smooth lungwort is often called "blue-bells." It is common in early spring about door-yards and along fences near dwellings. Common hound's-tongue flourishes along the roads; flowers a dull purple, appearing in early summer. Beggar's lice is a species of hound's-tongue.

*Water-leaf Family*.—Two or three species of water-leaf and *Ellisia* appear in cool, shady places. The latter resembles small tomatoes in leaf and fruit.

*Polemoniums* or *Phloxes*.—Greek valerian, paniculate, hairy and divaricate phlox are frequent. The true wild sweet-William is very rare. Moss pink is more common in cultivation.

*Convolvulus* or *Morning-glory Family*.—The most common plant of this order growing spontaneously beyond the bounds of cultivation is hedge bindweed or Rutland beauty. Eight species of dodder ("love-vine") may be found, all rare but one which appears like orange-colored thread growing on the tops of weeds. Wild potato-vine is occasionally found on woody hillsides.

*Nightshade Family*.—To this family belong Irish potatoes, tomatoes, egg-plant, bitter-sweet, matrimony vine, tobacco and Jerusalem cherry. The most common weeds of this family are jimson-weed, horse-nettle ("bull nettles"), common or black nightshade and two species of ground-cherry. The white-flowered jimson-weed (*Datura Stramonium*) is called common Stramonium or thornapple by Dr. Gray, while the purple-flowered he calls purple thornapple.

*Gentians*.—One beautiful species of American centaury, American Columbo and five-flowered, fringed, smaller fringed, whitish, yellowish white, and closed gentian are found within our limits. "Horse gentian" belongs to the Honeysuckle family. Buck-bean is common in bogs.

*Dogbanes*.—Spreading dogbane and Indian hemp, in the borders of thickets, are common.

*Milkweeds*.—Common milkweed, or silkweed, is common; has large, boat-shaped pods of glistening cotton. Swamp milkweed, butterfly weed, or pleurisy-root, whorled milkweed and two species of green milkweed are common in places.

*Olive Family*.—It would seem more natural to us Westerners to call this the Ash family, as we have no members of this order about us except the five species of ash,—white, black, blue, red and green, the white being the most common. Some of these kinds are difficult for the beginner in botany to distinguish.

*Birthworts*.—Wild ginger is common in deep, wooded ravines. The leaf is kidney-shaped, plant but few inches high, and the root tastes like ginger.

*Pokeweeds*.—The common poke, with its purple-juiced clusters of berries, is well known.

*Goosefoots*.—Lamb's-quarters, or pigweed, a common weed in our gardens, is the type of this order. Beet and spinach are cultivated plants of this order. Next in abundance to lamb's-quarters are maple-leaved goosefoot, Jerusalem oak and Mexican tea. Wormseed is a fetid plant, belonging to the genus goosefoot. Orache is becoming abundant in the towns and cities. Bug-seed grows on the borders of the lakes.

*Amaranths*.—The cultivated coxcomb, globe amaranth and prince's feather (red, chaffy spikes) illustrate the characters of this family. Pigweed is one of the most common weeds in cultivated

ground. The pigweed of the last paragraph should be called goose-foot only, or lamb's-quarters. White pigweed, generally known in the West as "tumble-weed," is abundant in some fields. *Amarantus blitoides* has recently become very abundant in our towns. At a little distance it resembles common purslane. *Acnida tamariscina* is common in sandy soil near the rivers and lakes.

*Buckwheat Family or Knotweeds.*—Goose-grass is the most ubiquitous member of this order, forming a carpet in every doorway. A taller variety with wider leaves also abounds under the shade trees about the premises. Two species of smart-weed, mild water-pepper, water *Persicaria* and two other species of knotweed are all common. Out of 14 species of what appears to be smart-weed, only two are biting to the taste. Arrow-leaved tear-thumb, black bindweed and climbing false buckwheat are common vines. Pie-plant, "yellow dock" and sheep-sorrel represent another division of the knotweed family. The most common member of this division in this county is curled, or "yellow" dock; then follow sheep-sorrel (abounding in sandy soil), pale, water, swamp and bitter docks.

*Laurel Family.*—Sassafras is common along the bluffs and bottoms of the rivers. Spice bush is common.

*Mezereum Family.*—Leather-wood, with its remarkably tough bark, is not abundant anywhere.

*Sandal-wood Family.*—Bastard toad-flax is rather scarce.

*Lizard's-tail Family.*—Lizard's tail is common in swamps.

*Spurges.*—Spotted spurge, an herb growing more prostrate than all others, on cultivated ground; milky; no visible flowers. Three other species of spurge are almost common. Three-seeded mercury, known in former years to inhabit only the dark forest, has followed to our city residences where it can find a similar situation.

*Nettle Order.*—Of the Elm family are the white and the slippery elm and the hackberry,—the first mentioned abundant, the other two scarce. Of the Bread-fruit and Fig family is the red mulberry, which is scarce. Of the Nettle family proper are the true nettle (rare), wood nettle (common), richweed, pellitory, hemp and hop. Richweed, or clearweed, like the mercury of the last paragraph, has followed man to his artificial groves and is very abundant on flat ground under heavy shade-trees, in some places. It is remarkable that botanists have placed in this order the osage orange tree of our hedges, the bread-fruit tree of the Pacific isles, the fig and the banyan, and the poison upas of the East Indies.

*Plane-Tree Family.*—"Sycamore," or button-wood, or American plane. The true sycamore of Europe is a different tree.

*Walnut Family.*—Black and white walnut (butternut) are well known. Three species of shell-bark and two of smooth-bark, are common in this country. The list comprises the shag-bark, the Western shell-bark, the mockernut or white-heart, the pig-nut or broom, and the bitter-nut or swamp hickories.

*Oak Family.*—This family comprises not only the oaks but also the chestnut, beech, hazel-nut and iron-wood. Some of the oaks hybridize so much that it is difficult to keep track of the species and varieties. White oak, of course, takes the lead here as elsewhere, but the black jack is about as abundant. The latter is usually the "second growth," and is as good as hickory for fire-wood. Bur-oak, scarlet oak and black oak (yellow-barked, or quercitron) are common. Laurel or shingle oak, yellow chestnut oak and red oak are occasionally met with. Laurel oak is so called on account of the shape of its leaves, and is also called shingle oak, on account of its being so good in pioneer times for clapboards. Two species of iron-wood flourish here. They belong to different genera, one having seeds in clusters of involucre resembling hops; hence it is called hop hornbeam. The other iron-wood or hornbeam is also called blue or water beech.

*Birch Family.*—The red, or river birch is sometimes found along the rivers and creeks, the dwarf birch in swamps. Paper birch is rather common.

*Willows.*—The most common willow, as well as the largest, is the black; then the prairie, glaucous, heart-leaved, shining and long-leaved. The black and the shining willows have tough twigs which are very brittle at the base. Several other species of willow occur, but are rare. The quaking asp, or American aspen, the cottonwood, balsam-of-Gilead, Lombardy poplar and silver-leaf, or white poplar, are well known. Glandular-leaved willow is common about the head of Lake Michigan.

*Pines.*—The most common pines in this region are the white and northern scrub. Black and hemlock spruce and balsam fir may be found.

*Arum Family.*—Indian turnip (Jack-in-the pulpit) abundant; skunk cabbage common in wet places supplied by spring-water; green dragon common; sweet flag rare.

*Duckweeds.*—Two species common on the surface of ponds. They do not take root in the earth.

*Cat-tails.*—Common cat-tail (a kind of flag) and a species of bur reed occur in wet places.

*Pondweeds.*—Several species grow throughout this country. Their habitat is in or under water.

*Water-Plantain Family.*—Arrowhead (two species, with several variations) is abundant. Has large, arrow-shaped leaves and white flowers in threes, and grows along the sloughs. Water plantain and arrow-grass are sometimes found, growing in same situation as last.

*Orchids.*—Showy orchis, eight or ten species of Habenaria, rattlesnake plantain, ladies' tresses, Pogonia, crane-fly orchis, adder's mouth, coral-root and five species of lady's slipper are found in this county, and Calopogon is common. The lady's slippers are

being thinned out rapidly by parties shipping them East, for a price.

*Amaryllis Family*.—Star-grass is common in prairies. It is a modest little grass-like plant, putting forth its conspicuous, yellow, three-petaled flowers in June.

*Iris Family*.—The larger blue flag is becoming rare. Blue-eyed grass looks like the star-grass just mentioned, except that the flowers are white or pale blue. Its habitat is the prairie.

*Yam Family*.—Wild yam-root is a green vine sometimes seen in the woods.

*Smilax Family*.—Common green-brier, smilax hispida and carion flower are all not very rare.

*Lily Family*.—Purple trillium, or three-leaved nightshade, and the large white trillium are abundant: flower in May. One or two other species of trillium sometimes occur. Bellwort is an early flower in the woods. Smaller Solomon's seal and false spikenard are common. Wild orange-red lily is common in the margins of prairies which are not pastured and have never been broken. White dog's-tooth violet, white hellebore and great Solomon's seal are reported here. Yellow dog's tooth violet is abundant; it is a prominent flower in April, in the woods. Squill (eastern quamash, or wild hyacinth) is also found in this county. Wild garlic, having tops like our garden top-onions, and wild leek are common in low places not pastured.

*Rushes*.—The bog-rush is a very common, yellowish, grass-like herb along roads and paths, especially those leading through the forest; but it is also found to some extent in all other situations. Common, or soft rush is common, and several other species are also common.

*Pickereel-weeds*.—Water star-grass, growing under running water in the forest brooks, is common. Pickereel-weed is occasional.

*Spiderworts*.—Common spiderwort is common. Day-flower is rare.

*Sedges*.—There are three or four dozen species of sedge growing within the limits of any one county, but they are all unimportant plants. They have a grass-like appearance, but can readily be distinguished from the grasses by their having triangular stems and bur-like tops (seed clusters), while the grasses have round or roundish stems. What is generally called lake grass along the rivers is a true sedge, and its English name is great bulrush. It is by far the largest of the sedges. The river club-rush is next in size.

*Grasses*.—Blue grass takes the lead for prevalence and utility. Next, two species of fox-tail. Besides these the most common grasses are white grass, rice cut grass, Indian rice or water oats, timothy, rush grass (two species), bent grass, wood reed-grass, dropseed (two genera); reed bent-grass, blue joint grass, porcupine grass, fresh-water cord-grass, Koeleria, Eatonia (two species), melic grass, fowl meadow grass and its congener, Glyceria fluitans, low spear-grass, red top, Eragrostis (three species), fescue (two species),

chess, *Bromus ciliatus*, reed (a tall, broom-corn-like grass growing in dense fields in the swamps of the river bottom), *Hordeum pratense* (a kind of wild barley), two species of lyme-grass or wild rye, bottle-brush grass, reed canary grass, *Paspalum*, wire grass, eight species of panic-grass, among them two kinds of tickle-grass, and one old-witch grass, crab-grass and barn-yard grass, sand-bur (in sand) and two species of beard-grass. About two dozen other kinds of grass can be found in the county, but they are all very rare.

*Horse-tails*.—Scouring rush and common horse-tail (especially along railroads) are common: two other species scarce.

*Ferns*.—Maiden-hair, brake, a spleenwort, a shield fern, a bladder-fern, one species of flowering fern and the sensitive fern are common in the order here named, while two or three other ferns may be found.

*Club-Mosses*.—Several species are found here, one being common.



## CHAPTER III.

### ORGANIZATION OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY—ACTS OF THE BOARD OF JUSTICES—FURTHER ACTS OF THE BOARD OF JUSTICES—ACTS OF THE BOARD OF COUNTY COMMISSIONERS.

By an act of the Legislature, approved Jan. 29, 1830, the county of St. Joseph was formed with boundary lines determined as follows: "Beginning at range No. 2 west from the second principal meridian of the State of Indiana, on the northern line of the State, thence running east to where range No. 3 east intersects the State line, thence south with the range line thirty miles, thence west to range 2 west, thence north to the place of beginning." Its organized existence was to take effect from and after April 1, 1830, from which time it was to "enjoy all the rights, privileges and jurisdiction which to separate and independent counties do and may properly belong and appertain."

Thomas J. Evans and Gillis McBane, of Cass county; Daniel Worth, of Randolph county; John Berry, of Madison county, and John Ross, of Fayette county, were appointed Commissioners to locate the seat of justice of the county, and instructed to meet at the house of Alexander [Alexis] Coquillard on the fourth Monday of May, 1880, for that purpose. After the county seat was located the agent appointed for the sale of lots was required to reserve ten per cent. out of the proceeds of the sale, and pay the same over to such person as was appointed by law to receive the same, for the purpose of a county library.

The qualified electors of the county were, at the time of electing a Recorder, Clerk and Associate Judges, to elect three Justices of the Peace who were to perform all the duties prescribed by law relating to the Board of Justices in the several counties.

All the territory lying west of the boundary line of this county was attached to it for civil and criminal jurisdiction, the citizens residing within its territory being entitled to all the rights and privileges, and subject to all taxes and assessments, as if a part of the county.

Various changes were made from time to time in its boundary lines, territory being added to or taken from it at nearly every session of the Legislature. At the twenty-third session of the General Assembly an act was passed and approved Feb. 16, 1839, fixing the boundary lines as follows: "Commencing on the north boundary of this State at the intersection thereon of the section line running north and south through the center of range 4 east,



thence south to the center of township 35 north, thence west to the second meridian line, being that line between ranges one east and one west, thence south to the township line between townships 34 and 35 north, thence west to the section line running north and south through the center of range one west, thence north by said section line to the north boundary of this State, thence east to the place of beginning." This remained unchanged until 1850, when by an act approved January 14 of that year, the following territory was taken from the county and attached to La Porte county: "Beginning at the present county line, at the northwest corner of section 22, township 37 north of range 1 west, thence with the north line of said section, and that of section 23, to the northeast corner of said section 23, thence south with the section line until it shall strike the Great Kankakee river, thence with said river to the present county line." Since 1850 no further changes have been made.

The first election held in the county was on the first Monday in August, 1830, at which time L. M. Taylor was elected Clerk and Recorder, and Adam Smith, Lambert McComb and Levi F. Arnold were elected Justices of the Peace. The name St. Joseph was given the county from the river which flows through its territory.

On Friday, Aug. 27, 1830, having received their commissions from the Governor, the Board of Justices assembled at the house of Alexis Coquillard, L. M. Taylor, Clerk of the county, being present, and proceeded in the further act of organizing the county and the transaction of its business. The first entry upon the records of the Board is as follows:

"In pursuance of an act of the General Assembly of the State of Indiana, entitled an act to provide for the carrying the laws into effect in new counties, approved January the 2d, 1818; and also the act entitled, An Act for the Formation of the Counties of St. Joseph and Elkhart, passed and approved Jan. 29, 1820, the Justices of the Peace met at the house of Alexis Coquillard, in St. Joseph county, on Friday, the 27th day of August in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty.

"Adam Smith now comes forth and produces his commission from His Excellency, James B. Ray, Governor of the State of Indiana, commissioning him, the said Adam Smith, Justice of the Peace in and for said county of St. Joseph for and during the term of five years from the 11th day of August, 1830; and on the back of said commission is the following endorsement, to-wit:

STATE OF INDIANA, }  
ST. JOSEPH COUNTY. } ss.

Be it remembered, that on the 27th day of August, A. D. 1830, personally came Adam Smith, within commissioned, before me, L. M. Taylor, Clerk of the Circuit Court, and being duly sworn on his solemn oath, says that he will support the Constitution of the United States and of the State of Indiana, and that he will to the best of his abilities and judgment discharge the duties of his office as Justice of the Peace in St. Joseph county faithfully, and that he has not since the first day of January, 1819, either directly or indirectly, knowingly given, accepted or carried

a challenge to any person in or out of this State to fight a single combat with any deadly weapon, and that he will not knowingly accept or carry a challenge to any person or persons to fight with any deadly weapon in single combat, either in or out of this State, during his continuance in office. Given under my hand and seal the day and date first above written.

L. M. TAYLOR, *Clerk*, [SEAL.]

Lambert McComb and Levi F. Arnold also presented like credentials, and the Board of Justices was then organized by the election of Lambert McComb as President.

The first order made by the Board was in the following terms: "Ordered by the Board of Justices of St. Joseph county, that John D. Lasly be appointed Treasurer of St. Joseph county for the year of our Lord 1830, and he is required to give bond and security in the penal sum of \$1,000." James Nixon was then appointed Assessor; Daniel A. Fullerton, Collector; Benjamin Potter, Thomas Skiles and Jacob Keith, Constables; Jacob Cripe and John Heag, Overseers of the Poor.

At this meeting of the Board, in addition to the appointment of the officers named, fence viewers were appointed, treasurer's bonds approved, and licenses granted to Samuel Hanna and the American Fur Company to sell "fouren [foreign] merchandize" one year for the sum of \$10 each.

The second meeting of the Board of Justices was held at the house of Alexis Coquillard on the first Monday in September, 1830. The first business transacted was the selection of Grand and Petit Jurors. Those drawn to serve on the Grand Jury were Samuel Cannon, Jacob White, John Clyburn, William E. Ahart, Adam Keith, John Banker, Samuel Leeper, Charles Lobby, Henry Clyburn, Gamiel Drilinger, Zachariah Grant, Jacob Cripe, Benjamin Potter, James Nixon, Thomas Clyburn, Philip Fail, Louis Lancock and Joseph Adams. The Petit Jurors were Paul Egbert, John Drilinger, Daniel Eiler, C. B. Overrocker, John Whiticer, Benjamin Coquillard, Israel Rush, Barzillia Druliner, Jacob Harris, John Hague, Richard Harris, Nathaniel Steele, Samuel Johnstone, Jacob Egbert, John Ronleau, Jacob Ritter, Jacob Rhae, Alexis Coquillard, John Wills, John Skiles, Lewis Sherley, Joseph Rorer, Horace Marcum and Samuel Garwood.

#### FURTHER ACTS OF THE BOARD OF JUSTICES.

Sept. 14, 1830, a called session of the Board was held, at which time Thomas J. Evans was allowed the sum of \$51 for his services in locating the county seat. John Berry was allowed the sum of \$87; Daniel Worth, \$108; Gillis McBean, \$27, for the same purpose. William Brookfield was appointed agent of the county for the sale of lands, with bond fixed in the sum of \$5,000. Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor were accepted as his bondsmen.

The county seat was located upon the farm of William Brookfield, section 27, township 8 north, of range 2 east, and a beautiful village was laid out by Mr. Brookfield and given the name of St. Joseph.

At a special session, held on the 25th day of November, 1830, the Board ordered the agent of the county to proceed to make sale of the lots of the town, either by "private or public sale to the best advantage and interests of the county." Lots were to be sold one-third cash, one-third in nine months, and the remainder in eighteen months, secured by forfeiture of the lots in case of non-payment when due. A public sale was ordered to be held on the first day of January, 1831, and every three months thereafter, unless otherwise ordered by the Board.

At this session of the Board the county was divided into four townships, as follows: All the district of country lying west of the range line dividing ranges two and three west of the second principal meridian was to constitute a township, to be known as Michigan township; ranges one and two west of the second principal meridian, Deschemin township; from the second principal meridian of the State until the center of range two east, German township; all the district of country lying and being from the center of range two east of the second principal meridian of the State, and thence running east to the eastern boundary of St. Joseph county, Portage township. Michigan township comprised all the territory west of the county line to the State line.

Elections were ordered held on the 18th day of December, 1830, for the election of one Justice of the Peace in each township, except Portage; in Michigan township, at the house of Louis Sherby; in German township, at the house of David Miller; in Deschemin township, at the house of John Druliner. Aaron Stanton was appointed inspector of elections in Michigan township; John Egbert, in Deschemin township; and David Miller, in German township. Each of these inspectors was to hold his office for the year 1830.

This was the last session of the Board of Justices. In pursuance of an act of the General Assembly of the State, approved January 19, 1831, county governments were changed, and in place of a Board of Justices, the government of the county was placed in the hands of a Board of County Commissioners.

#### ACTS OF THE BOARD OF COUNTY COMMISSIONERS.

On the first Monday in September, 1831, the newly elected Board of Commissioners met at the house of Alexis Coquillard. Certificates of election were produced and the oath of office duly taken by David Miller, Joseph Rorer, and later by Aaron Stanton. In addition to swearing to support the Constitution of the United States and of this State, the Commissioners were sworn not to receive, directly or indirectly, a county order for a less sum than its face. This was doubtless to prevent their speculation in the orders.

The Board at this session adopted a seal with the insignia of an eagle and the words "St. Joseph County, Indiana," around the margin.

N. B. Griffith was licensed to keep a ferry across the St. Joseph river at the east end of Water street, and the rates of ferriage were fixed as follows: For each person,  $6\frac{1}{4}$  cents; for a man and horse,  $12\frac{1}{2}$  cents; one horse and wagon or carriage, 25 cents; two horses and wagons,  $31\frac{1}{4}$  cents; each additional horse with a wagon,  $6\frac{1}{4}$  cents; for oxen in wagons, the same as for horses; loose cattle, 3 cents a head; hogs and sheep, 2 cents a head.

License for taverns, or for the purpose of retailing spirituous or strong liquors, was fixed at \$5 each; for peddling wooden clocks, \$8 was required.

The Commissioners appointed to re-locate the county seat, made the following report:

The undersigned, Commissioners appointed by an act of the Legislature of the State of Indiana at their session in the year A. D. 1831, entitled "An act to re-locate the county seat of St. Joseph county," met at the house of William Brookfield in the said county of St. Joseph, on the second Monday of May, A. D. 1831; and after being duly sworn as the law directs, proceeded immediately to examine the present seat of justice for said county of St. Joseph, and are of opinion that public interest requires a removal of said seat of justice, and immediately proceeded to select a suitable site for the county seat of said county of St. Joseph, and after making all the examinations required by law, have selected the town of South Bend as laid out and recorded on the records of said county, and have hereby established the same, and have received from the persons hereinafter mentioned the following donations in lands, lots and obligations for the payment of the sums of money stipulated in the following bonds, to-wit: The bonds of Lathrop M. Taylor and Alexis Coquillard, guaranteed by Samuel Hanna, Joseph Rorer, Samuel Studebaker and D. H. Coldrick, for the conveyance to the use of the county, the following distinguished lots in the town of South Bend; Lots Nos. 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 400, 401, 402, 296, 299, 302, 344, 323 and 257. And also the lots specified in said bond to religious societies, school purposes, and four acres of land described in said bond for a public grave yard. In addition to the lots and grounds set apart and marked on the plat of said town for a public square, religious and school purposes, and also the joint bond and obligation of the above mentioned Lathrop M. Taylor, Alexis Coquillard, Joseph Rorer, Samuel Studebaker, Samuel Hanna and David Coldrick, for the payment of \$3,000 to the Commissioners of said county, payable in the annual installments of \$1,000 each, which said several bonds and obligations are hereby particularly referred to and made a part of this report; all of which bears date herewith. In witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands, this twelfth day of May, A. D. 1831.

ABSALOM HOLCOMB,  
WILLIAM N. WOOD,  
CHESTER SAGE,  
JOHN JACKSON,  
*Commissioners.*

The bonds and obligations referred to are given below:

*Know all men by these presents:*—That we, Lathrop M. Taylor, Alexis Coquillard, Joseph Rorer, Samuel Studebaker, Samuel Hanna and David H. Coldrick, do hereby bind and obligate ourselves and our heirs and representatives to well and truly pay, or cause to be paid unto the Commissioners of the county of St. Joseph, in the State of Indiana, or their successors in office, in the full and just sum of three thousand dollars, to be paid as follows: One thousand in one year from the signing and en sealing this bond, and one thousand in two years; and the residuary one thousand in three years; in consideration that the county seat of St. Joseph county, in the State aforesaid, shall be permanently located at South Bend, in said county. In testimony whereof, we have hereunto set our hands and

seals on this, the twelfth day of May, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-one.

LATHROP M. TAYLOR, [SEAL.]  
ALEXIS COQUILLARD, [SEAL.]  
JOSEPH RORER, [SEAL.]  
SAMUEL STUDEBAKER, [SEAL.]  
SAMUEL HANNA, [SEAL.]  
D. H. COLDRIK, [SEAL.]

Attest:

HORACE WOOD,  
HIRAM DAYTON.

*Know all men by these presents:*—That we, Lathrop M. Taylor and Alexis Coquillard, do by these presents obligate ourselves and representatives to well and truly convey and donate by an indisputable title to the county whom the Commissioners shall appoint Agent of the county of St. Joseph, in the State of Indiana, for the use of said county, fifteen in lots, situated in the town of South Bend, and designated on the plat of said town by being numbered 274, 275, 276, 277, 278, 279, 400, 401, 402, 296, 299, 302, 344, 323 and 257, and to give and donate and convey in lot number 341, in said town plat, to and for the use of a religious denomination of people, called the United Brethren, to build thereon a church for worship; also in lot No. 403, in said town plat, for the same purpose for the German Baptist congregation; also in lot number 234, in said town plat, for a church for the denomination commonly called the Presbyterians; also to give and to donate to and for the use and convenience of said town, four acres on the east half of the southwest quarter of section No. 12, in township No. 37, of range No. 2 east, to be dedicated and used for a public grave yard; all of which said several donations are to be legally conveyed in a reasonable time after the patents shall have been issued to the said Coquillard and Taylor, in consideration that the county seat shall be permanently located at South Bend, in said county. Witness our hands and seals on this twelfth day of May, 1831.

LATHROP M. TAYLOR, [SEAL.]  
ALEXIS COQUILLARD, [SEAL.]

Attest:

HORACE WOOD,  
HIRAM DAYTON.

*Know all men by these presents:*—That we, Samuel Hanna, Joseph Rorer, Samuel Studebaker and David Coldrick, do bind and obligate ourselves and our representatives, under a penalty of two thousand dollars, to secure and guarantee the stipulations and obligations of the said Coquillard and Taylor, in the above bond, according to the true spirit and equitable meaning thereof, waiving all legal technicalities or inaccuracies, if any there be. Witness our hands and seals this 12th day of May, 1831.

SAMUEL HANNA, [SEAL.]  
JOSEPH RORER, [SEAL.]  
SAMUEL STUDEBAKER, [SEAL.]  
D. H. COLDRIK, [SEAL.]

Attest:

HORACE WOOD,  
HIRAM DAYTON.

John Egbert was appointed county agent to carry out the provisions of the bonds and obligations given. He gave bond under the penal sum of six thousand dollars, for the faithful discharge of his duties, with William McCartney and Jacob Egbert as bondsmen.

The Board of Commissioners at this session repealed the order of the Board of Justices in regard to the political divisions of the county, and fixed the boundary lines and named the several townships as follows: Ranges two and three east of the second principal meridian, or so much of it as lay in this county, was to be known as Portage township. This township was to form the first County

Commissioners' district. Ranges No. 1 east and No. 1 west of the second principal meridian was to be known as Centre township, and the second Commissioners' district; all the territory lying west of the range line dividing ranges No. 1 and No. 2, west of the second principal meridian, Highland township, and the third Commissioners' district. The Sheriff was ordered to notify the electors of the several townships as organized to meet and elect officers on the fourth Saturday in September.

The next meeting of the Board was held at the house of Alexis Coquillard, on the 31st day of October, 1831. A jail was ordered built, and William Clark was appointed County Surveyor, which was about the only business transacted.

At the November (1831) term of the Board of Commissioners, Calvin Lilly, Joseph Cissna, Barzilla Druliner, and John Garrard were appointed Constables. At this time Benjamin McCarty was Sheriff, and was allowed forty dollars for assessing the unassessed property in the county, a service which the owners would just as soon he had neglected altogether. William Clark was appointed County Surveyor, and was ordered to procure certified copies from the Registers of different land offices where land had been sold; field notes of townships, ranges, sections, fractional sections, as originally surveyed, and deposit them in the Recorder's office of St. Joseph county, according to law. With reference to a county jail, which had previously been determined upon, the following order was made:

"Ordered by the Board of County Commissioners, that the County Agent be required to sell out to the lowest bidder on the eighth of this month, at the hour of one o'clock on said day, the building of a county jail of the following dimensions, to-wit: The gaol to be 30 feet long and 16 feet wide, with a partition wall through the center of the building; all the timber of the walls to be good white-oak timber, and to be hewed at least one foot square, as also both the under and upper floor to be of like timber of one foot square; the foundation of the building to be laid one foot and a half below the surface of the ground, and to be raised six inches above the ground; the sills to be fifteen inches wide, and the logs for the floor to be let in onto the sills six inches, and the logs to be rabbeted out that goes on the top floor, and let down over so as to completely cover the ends of the logs and prevent the floor from being raised; the building to be raised with a half dovetailed notch in each of the corners as well as the partition wall; the story to be eight feet between the under and upper floors; the upper floor to be the ends of the logs cut off about six inches at each end, and the under side of the ends to be cut out or blocked off about four inches, and let down on the logs so as to prevent them from slipping out; the plates to be rabbeted out and let down over the ends of the floor logs, and onto them, the roof to be put on with good white-oak rafters covered with good sheeting, and good joint pine shingles; the gable ends to be done up with good poplar weather

boarding; the corners of the building to be raised up plumb, and the corners to be sawed down smooth; the outside door to be cut one foot from the partition wall, and to be two feet wide and four feet high in the clear when finished. There shall be an iron rod run up through the ends of the logs on the side of the door opposite the partition-wall of one inch bolt and to extend six inches into the log below those cut out and six inches up into the log above those cut out, and running through the same. The door shall be made of white oak plank of two inches thick, and to be made double with said planks; the door shall be hung on the strap-hinges, the straps to be three inches broad and a half inch thick, and the door shall also be lined with iron straps to be put on within four inches of each other, and on each side of the door, and all straps as well as the hinges shall be riveted through the door within four inches of each other; the straps other than the hinges shall be at least one-eighth of an inch thick; the door to be hung on hooks to be in proportional size to the straps, and two of the hooks to be set upward, and one turned downward; the lock of the door to be set on the inside by the contractor, the lock to be furnished by the Agent. The hooks on which the door is to be hung is to be entered into the timber well, and the cheeks of said door shall be lined with good white oak plank one and a half inches thick, to be well spiked on. There shall also be another door made in the center of the partition wall to be two feet wide and four feet high in the clear of said door, after being finished; the cheeks of said door shall be faced with good oak planks one and a half inches thick and well pinned on; the door shall be made of two-inch white-oak plank; the door shall be hung on two strap hinges to extend across the door and hung on two sufficient hooks drove into the wall; the whole of the door to be drove with spikes within four inches of each other; the contractor shall put the lock on furnished by the Agent. There shall be a window cut out in each end of the house two feet wide and one foot high, and there shall be bars of iron put in each of said windows of one and a quarter inches square, and shall be placed up and down in the windows within two inches of each other, and the ends of such bars shall be sunk in the lower and upper logs at least three inches. And the jail shall be put in the southwest corner of the public square in the town of South Bend, and shall be set lengthways north and south on the line of said lot, and the door shall be on the east side of said house. The undertaker shall be required to give bond and security, to be approved of by the Agent, in the penal sum of one thousand dollars, the contract to be completed by the last Monday in April next ensuing the date hereof. The contractor shall be entitled to receive a county order on the county treasury as soon as the contract is completed for the building of said gaol. All the work to be done in a good workmanlike and substantial manner."

The contract was awarded to Andrew Woods and Dennis McCormick. It was completed and accepted by the Board on the



28th day of April, 1832, Messrs. Woods and McCormick each receiving an order for the sum of two hundred and six dollars and ninety cents.

In January, 1835, the County Agent was instructed to receive proposals for building an additional story to the jail.

At a meeting of the Board of County Commissioners held January, 1832, it was resolved to build a court-house, and the County Agent was instructed to advertise in the *Northwestern Pioneer* for sealed proposals for building the same. On the 6th day of February, 1832, the Board again met to receive the proposals, but declined to accept any that were made. On the next day, however, they met, received and acted favorably upon the proposals of Peter Johnson, letting the contract to him for building a court-house according to the following agreement.

*Know all men by these presents:* That we, Peter Johnson, Alexis Coquillard, L. M. Taylor, Pleasant Harris and Samuel Martin, all of the county of St. Joseph, in the State of Indiana, are held and firmly bound unto Aaron Stanton, David Miller and Joseph Rorer, a Board doing county business in and for the county of St. Joseph, and their successors in office, in the penal sum of \$6,000 lawful money of the United States, for the payment whereof well and truly to be made, we hereby bind ourselves and our representatives firmly by these presents sealed with our seals and dated this 7th day of February, A. D. 1832. The condition of the above obligation is such that if the said Peter Johnson, the above bounden, shall well and truly build a court-house in and for the said county of St. Joseph, of the following description, to-wit: The building to be 40 feet square and made of good merchantable brick. The foundation shall be made of good durable arch brick and sunk one foot below the surface of the ground, and the said wall shall be raised three feet high above said foundation, and the wall that high shall be 22 inches thick, and there shall also be a foundation wall run through said house north and south in the center of said building and raised so high that when a sill of 18 inches square, with the joists raised in said wall, shall raise the floor of the first-story only three feet from the foundation. The walls of the first-story of the building shall be raised so high as to leave 12 feet between the first floor and the ceiling. The walls of the first-story shall be 18 inches thick. The walls of the second-story shall be raised ten feet above the second floor, and be made 13 inches thick. There shall be a plate of yellow poplar timber of 13 inches square placed on the top of the wall all around said building. There shall be four stacks of chimneys carried up in said building, one in each corner of the house, and there shall be a fire-place made in each of said chimneys in the lower story, of three and a half feet wide in the back and five feet in the flare or front of the jambs except the southeast, which may only be three feet in the back of the fire-place and four feet in the front; and there shall be also a fire-place made in each of said chimneys in the second story of said building, except the southeast, of three feet wide in the back and four in the flare or front of the fire-places. The east half of the under room shall be filled up with earth nearly to the top of the aforementioned sill, and then well laid over with good hard brick. There shall be good substantial iron bars placed under the arch of each of said fire-places. And in the north end of said under room there shall be joists placed east and west across in said sill and wall, and within two feet of each other, of good white-oak timber of 14 inches wide and three inches thick, and placed so that when the floor is laid on that the floor shall be only three feet from the foundation. The floor of said end shall be laid of good white-oak boards of one and a quarter inches thick and six inches wide on an average. There shall be four air holes left in the west side of said building of nine inches deep and four inches wide to let the air in under the floor. There shall be two columns set up on said sill, running through the center of said building, one twelve feet from the north side of said building, and the other twelve feet from the south side of said building. The columns shall be turned by a beliction with a handsome mold on each end of the same, and there shall be a hole bored through the center of each of said columns with a common



pump augur. There shall be a poplar girder of 14 inches square, running across said building north and south, placed on said columns. And the joists for the second floor shall be laid into said girder on the walls east and west. The said joists shall be three inches thick and 14 inches wide, and placed within two feet of each other; and the second floor shall be made of, laid on said joists of poplar boards one and a quarter inches thick, and to average six inches wide. There shall be a door made on the east side of said house, and in the center, and in the lower story, of at least four feet wide, and shall be prepared for a transom light sash above the door, and made so high as to correspond with the height of the windows; and also another door of the same description to be placed in the center of the north side of the building, in the lower story. The door shall be made with eight panels and lined and braced on the inside of the door; said doors shall be three inches thick and hung on three good strong butts, and have each a good wrought thumb latch with a 12-inch stock lock placed thereon. There shall be three 24-light windows of glass, 10 by 12 inches square, placed in on the west side of said building, and placed so in the walls as to have the columns even on each side; and also two windows of like description on the north side of said building, and the door, and also two windows on the east side of said building of the aforesaid description to be placed half way between the corners of the building and the door; and also two windows on the south side of said building of the aforesaid description, to be placed in the wall a proper distance apart so the columns on each side shall be even of a width; and in the second story there shall be three windows, of the aforesaid description, put in on the north side of said building to be placed parallel over the door and windows in the lower story; and on the west side two windows placed over the two windows in the lower story nearest to the corners; and on the south side of the building two windows to be placed parallel over those in the lower story; and on the east side of the building three windows to be placed parallel over the windows and door in the lower story, all of the aforesaid description. There is no glass nor sash to be put in said windows or any of them, but only the window frames to be made and put in ready to receive the sash; but there shall be Venetian shutters made and hung to each of the aforesaid. There shall be Venetian shutter-blinds fastened into the stiles and hung with good strap hinges, put on with screws; and there shall be shutter-holders put into the wall to hold the shutters open, and have bolts put on for fastening said shutters. And said shutters shall be painted green. In the third story there shall be two poplar or oak girders running across north and south through said building, of ten by twelve inches square, and placed in the center of the building and 18 feet from each other to start the cupola on, and all further necessary work for the foundation of the cupola. The building shall be covered with a hip roof drawn from each corner, and covered with good joint pine shingles. There shall be a cornice put on each side of said building of 18 inches wide, with a bed mold thereon. The tubes shall be fixed in said cornices to receive the conductors. The cornice is to be put up with good screw bolts of three-quarter inches square, and five feet to each cornice. There shall be a temporary rough pair of stairs run from the lower story up into the second. The cornice to be painted with three good coats of white lead and oil. The door frames shall be made the width of the walls, and the door frames as well as the window frames shall be painted with two coats of white lead and oil. The doors shall be painted with a mahogany color. There shall be pieces of timber of four inches square and four feet long framed on the ends of the principal girders and joists for the better support of the walls, at suitable distance from the corners. All of the aforesaid materials for the aforesaid building to be of the best and most durable kind that the country affords; and all and every part thereof of said building to be done off and finished in good workmanlike order, according to the particulars aforesaid. And the said court-house shall be set and placed on the northeast corner of the public square in the town of South Bend, and county and State aforesaid; and all of said work to be done for the consideration that the aforesaid boundens, or Commissioners, shall pay unto the said bounden on the 15th day of May, 1832, the sum of \$400; on the 1st of December, 1832, the sum of \$400; on the 15th of May, 1833, the sum of \$900; and on the 15th day of May, 1834, the sum of \$1,300. Now, therefore, should the said Peter Johnson, the above bounden, have the aforesaid court-house fully completed and finished off according to the true spirit and equitable meaning of the aforesaid particulars, on or before the 1st of December next ensuing the date hereof, then the aforesaid obligation of the said Peter Johnson, Alexia

Coquillard, L. M. Taylor, Pleasant Harris and Samuel Martin to be null and void; else to be and remain in full force and virtue in law and equity.

PETER JOHNSON,	[SEAL.]
ALEXIS COQUILLARD,	[SEAL.]
L. M. TAYLOR,	[SEAL.]
PLEASANT HARRIS,	[SEAL.]
SAMUEL MARTIN,	[SEAL.]

Signed and sealed in the presence of  
JOHN EGBERT.

Mr. Johnson, on the second day of September, 1833, reported to the Board the fulfillment of his contract. After inspection the work was received. Although in an unfinished condition, the house was used for some years. In May, 1837, Lathrop M. Taylor was appointed to superintend the work of completing the building, and in September, 1837, a contract was made with William Keeley and Samuel C. Russ to build a Clerk and Recorder's office 40x20 feet "one story, of sufficient height." Lot Day was appointed to superintend the work.

At the same session in which it was determined to build the court-house, the Board established the following rate of taxation:

Horses, mules or asses, over three years old.....	37½ cents.
Each work ox.....	18¾ "
Brass clocks, each .....	.50 "
Gold watches, each .....	.50 "
Silver and composition watches.....	.25 "
Pleasure carriages, four wheels.....	.50 "
Pleasure carriages, two wheels.....	.25 "
Each poll.....	.50 "

Those interested may note the comparison at the present day.

Among the dealers in South Bend, John McClellan was licensed to retail foreign and domestic groceries. The number of stores and taverns at that time it would seem was amply sufficient to meet all demands.

At this session, the Clerk was required to publish a statement of county expenses, which was published and placed on file, and it only needs comparison with the present county expenses to show the growth of the county in wealth and material prosperity.

Calls were ordered for the election of School Commissioners for the county, and three School Trustees, and the county was divided into two school districts, numbered one and two.

At the March term the Board appointed Aaron Miller County Treasurer, and laid off Penn township, naming the house of Joseph Pemberton as the place of holding the elections; also laid off Olive township, and appointed the place of holding the elections at the house of Jacob Egbert. They also divided the county into four road districts. At this time Benjamin McCarty was Sheriff, and R. West Scott Deputy Sheriff. The State road, as surveyed by George Crawford from Fort Wayne to South Bend, with field notes, was ordered recorded May 15, 1832.

At the September term Anthony Defrees was appointed County Agent, giving bonds in the sum of six thousand dollars.

At the November term Horatio Chapin was appointed School Commissioner, in place of William McCartney, resigned.

N. B. Griffith was ordered to furnish a "flat" forty-five feet long and twelve feet wide for the use of the ferry at South Bend.

Complaint having been made to the Board of Commissioners, it was ordered at the March term, 1833, that N. B. Griffith's ferry license be discontinued. At the same session Samuel L. Cottrell was allowed a license to sell "strong liquors and groceries" in South Bend.

In the May term, 1833, John Rush was appointed Trustee of the St. Joseph County Library, in place of Joseph White, resigned.

The field notes of the State road from the Yellow river to the mouth of Trail creek, surveyed by A. Burnside, were placed on record at this session.

At the November term, Benjamin Hardman, David Miller and Jesse Frame were appointed to lay out three county roads. The Commissioners of the Vistula road were paid off, and other unimportant business transacted.

On the sixth day of January, 1834, German township was set off, and the place of election was designated at Lot Day's house. At the March term, the election for Penn township was ordered to be held at "St. Joseph Iron Works," which place (now Mishawaka) was rapidly becoming quite a town. Joseph Nichols was licensed to retail spirituous liquors, and Orlando Hurd to keep tavern at the same place.

The township of Plymouth was laid off at this session, and the place of election designated at Grove Pomeroy's house.

At the September term, the "St. Joseph Iron Works," through their officials, made application for incorporation, and John Brownfield was licensed to vend foreign merchandise.

At the November term, the field notes of the State road, from South Bend through Sumption's prairie, down the Kankakee river to the western boundary of the State, were ordered recorded. Hiram Dayton was the Commissioner appointed to locate the road.

At the May term, 1835, it was ordered by the Board that public notice be given that the citizens of the county assemble at South Bend on the last Saturday of that month to organize a County Agricultural Society agreeable to the statute made and provided. It was also ordered that notice be given the citizens of German township for the purpose of organizing a Township Agricultural Society.

At the September term, a petition was presented for an order incorporating the town of South Bend. The Sheriff was ordered to call an election for officers under the act of incorporation.

Harris township was organized by the Board at their January term, 1836.

## CHAPTER IV.

### PIONEER LIFE.

One of the most interesting phases of national or local history is that of the settlement of a new country. What was the original state in which the pioneer found this country? and How was it made to blossom as the rose? are questions propounded by almost every individual of the country in which he makes his home, or sojourns in for a time. Pioneer life in St. Joseph county finds its parallel in almost every county in the State, and throughout the entire West. In addition to what is given in the State history, in this volume, we add the following items.

When Pierre Navarre, Alexis Coquillard, L. M. Taylor and others of that noble band of pioneers settled here, they found an unbroken wilderness. Wild beasts, and but little less wild savages, roamed at will over the prairies, through the forests, and along the waters of the Kankakee or the beautiful "River St. Joseph of the Lakes." Forests were to be felled, cabins erected, mills built and the rivers and creeks made to labor for the benefit of mankind; the beautiful prairies were to be robbed of their natural ornaments, and the hand of art was to assist in their decoration. Who was to undertake this work? Are they qualified for the task? What will be the effect of their labors upon future generations?

The St. Joseph county pioneers had many difficulties to contend with, not the least of which was the journey from civilization to their forest homes. The route lay for the most part through a rough country; swamps and marshes were crossed with great exertion and fatigue; rivers were forded with difficulty and danger; nights were passed on open prairies, with the sod for a couch and the heavens for a shelter; long, weary days and weeks of travel were endured, but finally "the promised land" was reached.

For several years the early settlers of the St. Joseph valley were compelled to go to Logansport or Fort Wayne for their flour or meal, requiring almost a week's time to make the journey.

The fever and ague, or "chills and fever," was a disease of which every pioneer was required to have a taste. For a racy description of this miserable malady see pages 159 and 160.

The first thing upon arrival was to set about building the cabin. While this was being done the family slept in their wagons or upon the grass; while the horses or mules hobbled to prevent escape, grazed the prairie around them. Trees of a suitable and uniform size were selected, felled and prepared for their places. The day for the raising is announced, and from far and near come other

pioneers to assist in this labor. The structure goes up, a log at a time, those engaged stopping now and then to "wet their whistles," and soon it is ready for the clapboard roof, which was held on by huge weight poles. A door and a window is cut where the "good wife" directs, a chimney built and the building is ready for the occupants. It is not a model home, but it is the beginning of a great prosperity, and as such is worthy of preservation in history, on account of its obscurity and its severe economy. The window was very small, sometimes glass being inserted, but often covered with greased paper. The door was made of spliced clapboards and hung with wooden hinges. It was opened by pulling a leather latch-string which raised a wooden latch inside the door. For security at night this latch-string was pulled in, but for friends and neighbors, and even strangers, it always hung out as a sign of welcome.

These simple cabins were inhabited by a kind and true-hearted people. They were strangers to mock modesty, and the traveler seeking lodgings for the night, or desirous of spending a few days in the community, if willing to accept the rude offering, was always welcome, although how they were disposed of at night the reader may not easily imagine; for, as described, a single room was made to serve the purpose of kitchen, dining-room, sitting-room and parlor, and many families consisted of six or eight members.

Next came the work of preparing the soil for agricultural purposes. Spring comes and the ground is prepared for the seed. The father takes his post at the plow, and the daughter takes possession of the reins. This is a grand scene—one full of grace and beauty. The pioneer girl thinks but little of fine dress; knows less of the fashions; has probably heard of the opera, but does not understand its meaning; has been told of the piano, but has never seen one; wears a dress "buttoned up behind;" has on leather boots, and "drives plow" for father.

The character of the pioneers of St. Joseph county falls properly within the range of the historian. They lived in a region of exuberant fertility, where nature had scattered her blessings with a liberal hand. The beautiful St. Joseph river winding its serpentine way to the lake, the inexhaustible forest supply, the fertile prairie, and the many improvements constantly going forward, and the bright prospect for a glorious future in everything that renders life pleasant, combined to deeply impress their character, to give them a spirit of enterprise, an independence of feeling, and a joyousness of hope. They were a thorough admixture of many nations, characters, languages, conditions and opinions. There was scarcely a State in the Union that was not represented among the early settlers. All the various religious sects had their advocates. All now form one society. Says an early writer: "Men must cleave to their kind, and must be dependent upon each other. Pride and jealousy give way to the natural yearnings of the human heart for society. They begin to rub off mutual prejudices; one takes a step, and then the other;

they meet half way and embrace; and the society thus newly organized and constituted is more liberal, enlarged, unprejudiced, and of course more affectionate, than a society of people of like birth and character, who bring all their early prejudices as a common stock, to be transmitted as an inheritance to posterity."

The wedding was an attractive feature of pioneer life. There was no distinction of life and very little of fortune. On these accounts, the first impressions of love generally resulted in marriage. The family establishment cost but little labor—nothing more. The marriage was always celebrated at the house of the bride, and she was generally left to choose the officiating clergyman. A wedding, however, engaged the attention of the whole neighborhood. It was anticipated by both old and young with eager expectation. In the morning of the wedding day the groom and his intimate friends assembled at the house of his father, and after due preparation, departed, *en masse*, for the "mansion" of his bride. The journey was sometimes made on horseback, sometimes on foot, and sometimes in farm wagons and carts. It was always a merry journey; and, to insure merriment, the bottle was taken along. On reaching the house of the bride, the marriage ceremony took place, and then dinner or supper was served. After the meal the dancing commenced, and generally lasted until the following morning. The figures of the dances were three and four-handed reels, or square sets and jigs. The commencement was always a square four, which was followed by what pioneers called "jigging;" that is, two of the four would single out for a jig, and were followed by the remaining couple. The jigs were often accompanied with what was called "cutting out," that is, when either of the parties became tired of the dance, on intimation, the place was supplied by some one of the company, without interruption of the dance. In this way the reel was often continued until the musician was exhausted. About nine or ten o'clock in the evening a deputation of young ladies stole off the bride and put her to bed. In doing this, they had to ascend a ladder from the kitchen to the upper floor, which was composed of loose boards. Here, in this pioneer bridal chamber, the young, simple-hearted girl was put to bed by her enthusiastic friends. This done, a deputation of young men escorted the groom to the same department, and placed him snugly by the side of his bride. The dance still continued, and if seats were scarce, which was generally the case, says a local writer, every young man when not engaged in the dance, was obliged to offer his lap as a seat for one of the girls; and the offer was sure to be accepted. During the night's festivities spirits were freely used, but seldom to great excess. The infair was held on the following evening, when the same order of exercises was observed.

Election days were observed as holidays. The men went to town, voted, drank whisky, smoked, swore, wrestled and fought, all for a little fun.

The "little brown jug" was often brought into requisition as affording a means of enjoyment that nothing else could supply. No caller was permitted to leave the house without an invitation to partake of its contents; not to so invite was a breach of hospitality not to be thought of for a moment. It was brought out upon all conceivable occasions, and freely dispensed to old and young alike with no thought of danger. It was a thing of prime importance in all the assemblages of men—at log-rollings, house-raising, huskings and elections. It was essential at all births, and even at funerals.



## CHAPTER V.

CIRCUIT COURT—COMMON PLEAS COURT—PROBATE COURT—THE BAR—  
ST. JOSEPH BAR ASSOCIATION—THE BAR IN A NEW ROLE.

### CIRCUIT COURT.

On its organization, St. Joseph county was made part of the first Judicial District. In 1833 there was a re-organization of districts and it then formed part of the eighth, and remained in this connection until the spring of 1837, when it was attached to the Ninth Judicial Circuit. No further change was made until 1873, when the Common Pleas Court was abolished and the Judicial Districts of the State were made smaller and largely increased in number. By this change St. Joseph county was united with La Porte county, the two forming the Thirty-second Judicial District.

The first session of the Circuit Court was held on the 22d day of October, 1832, at the tavern of Calvin Lilley, in the village of South Bend, Hon. John R. Porter, of the first Judicial District, presiding. The Grand Jurors were Lowdy Stevenson, Eli Roe, Pleasant Harris, Nathan Green, Robert Redding, Peter Johnson, George Wilkinson, Anthony Defrees, John Smith, Sr., Stanton Porter, John Massey, William P. Howe, Frederick Beuter, William Runnion, Peter Russell, Jacob Harris, George Holloway and Jacob Bowman. The court appointed George Holloway as foreman of the jury.

The first case called for trial was that of Matthias Redding and Hannah Redding. This was an action for divorce. The case was continued to the June term, 1833, when it was heard and the divorce granted. The second case was one of chancery, the third libel, and fourth slander. The two last were dismissed at cost of plaintiffs. Sarah McLelland was indicted by the Grand Jury for selling liquor to Indians, and was tried at this term of court, and a fine of five dollars and cost of suit was assessed against her. She was committed to jail, by order of the court, until the fine was paid. There were in all nine cases on the docket,—one divorce, one libel, one slander, one selling liquor unlawfully, and five chancery.

The second term of court was held in June, 1833, Hon. Gustavus A. Everts, Presiding Judge of the Eighth Judicial District in attendance. The first case docketed this term was for divorce, William Antrim *vs.* Elizabeth Antrim. The knot that tied the two was cut by the accommodating judge, and each was permitted to pursue his or her way without hindrance from the other.



Since the organization of the county nine judges have presided over the Judicial Districts, of which St. Joseph county has formed a part, the first of whom was John R. Porter, who presided, as has already been stated, at the first term of the court held in this county. Judge Porter was a good judge, one who was prompt and decided in his actions upon the Bench.

*Gustavus A. Everts* was born in Virginia in 1792. Came to Indiana at a very early day and read law in Union county. He was a tall, slim and fine-looking man, of liberal education, and one of the wittiest men that ever practiced before an Indiana court. He has been known to hold the judge, jury and audience for three hours, keeping all in continual laughter at his excessive wit. He was a good advocate, and one of the best criminal lawyers in Northern Indiana. On the Bench he was an entirely different man from what he was before a jury, being calm and dignified, quick to decide a point of law, and impartial in all his rulings. He emigrated to Texas some years since and is still living, though past his four-score years.

*Samuel C. Sample* was born in Maryland. He emigrated with his father's family to Connersville, in this State, as early as 1823 or 1824. He, too, studied law with Hon. O. H. Smith. After being prepared for practice he settled in South Bend, in 1833. He was soon after elected prosecuting attorney for the circuit, then embracing Logansport and Fort Wayne, and all the territory in the State north. It took him three months to go around his circuit and attend to its criminal business. He was painstaking and careful, and therefore successful. He became the president judge of his circuit in 1835 and continued on the Bench until 1843, when he was, very much against his own wishes, elected to Congress.

As a lawyer, he was able, judicious and reliable; as a judge, correct, upright and impartial; as a member of Congress, unswervingly faithful to the interests of his constituents; and in all his business transactions, whether in public or private capacity, he has ever exhibited the most sterling integrity, totally uninfluenced by the least unworthy or selfish motives. As a citizen, he has been enterprising and valuable; as a friend and neighbor, open-hearted, sociable, generous and accommodating; as a husband, a father and a Christian, he was all that is worthy of emulation. After a life without reproach, passed in the most valuable services in public and in private, Judge Sample passed to his reward in the better land, leaving his memory to be regarded with love and veneration, not only by relatives and personal friends, but by all who have known and can appreciate one of the noblest works of God. Judge Sample died at South Bend, Dec. 2, 1855.

*Ebenezer M. Chamberlain* was born in Maine, and came to Indiana about 1832, and settled at Goshen, Elkhart county. Read law at Connersville with Samuel Parker. He was the fourth judge elected upon this circuit. He was a man possessed of an abundance of good common sense and sterling integrity; firm and decided

character. In personal appearance he was tall and slim, with a very solemn cast of countenance. On the Bench he was quite dignified and rendered his decisions very deliberately. After his retirement from the Bench he was elected to Congress from the Elkhart district and served one term. Judge Chamberlain died at Goshen, in 1859.

*Thomas S. Stanfield*, who succeeded Judge Chamberlain, was born in Logan county, Ohio, in 1814, and with his parents emigrated to Indiana in the fall of 1830, and settled in South Bend in the spring of 1831. Here he attended school taught by Elisha Egbert, the first practicing attorney in St. Joseph county, and likewise the first school-teacher. Young Stanfield entered the law office of John D. Defrees at an early day, reading law for some time, after which he attended a law school in Cincinnati, at which he graduated in 1840. Opening an office in South Bend, he engaged in general practice until 1852, when he was elected Circuit Judge, and served five and a half years, when he resigned his office and resumed the practice of law. In 1870 he was again elected to the Bench, serving the full term of six years. When Judge Stanfield was elected the first time his circuit was composed of fourteen counties, but was reduced to nine before the expiration of his term. In 1845 Judge Stanfield was elected to the lower house of the Legislature. He was placed on the Committee of Ways and Means, which committee founded all the present asylums of the State—that of the insane, blind and deaf and dumb. In 1846 Mr. Stanfield was again elected, and during this session served as chairman of the Judiciary Committee. In 1849 he was a candidate for Lieutenant-Governor, on the Whig ticket, but failed of election. In 1851 he was again nominated by his party for the House of Representatives and elected. Was placed at this session with Judges Stewart, Gookins and Holman and Mr. Gibson on the Committee on the Revision of the State Laws. Again, in 1855, Judge Stanfield was nominated and elected a member of the Legislature, serving two terms, and being upon the Judiciary and Committee on the Organization of the Courts. Politically, Judge Stanfield was first a Whig, during the existence of that party, and is now a Republican. For a number of years he was a director in the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana Railroad, and also the Grand Trunk Railway. At present he occupies the position of attorney for both roads.

*Albert G. Deavitt*, of South Bend, was appointed to fill vacancy on the Bench caused by the resignation of Judge Stanfield. Immediately after his appointment he was taken sick and was removed to the house of his brother in the State of Vermont, where he died in 1858.

*John B. Niles*, of La Porte, one of the ablest lawyers in the State of Indiana, was the next incumbent of the Bench. Mr. Niles was born in Vermont in 1808, came to Indiana in 1832 and settled at

La Porte, where he died in June, 1879. As an advocate and counselor he had no superior in this section of the State. He was quite slender in person, and was in feeble health for a number of years prior to his death. He was for a time member of the State Senate, and was also a member of the Convention which framed the present Constitution of the State.

*Andrew L. Osborne* succeeded Judge Niles. Mr. Osborne was born in Connecticut in 1814, and came to Indiana in 1836, settling in Michigan City, from which place he moved to La Porte on his elevation to the Bench. Judge Osborne read law with J. Y. Scammon, of Chicago. He is a diligent student, a man of remarkable memory, quick in his perceptions of a case, and was an excellent and popular judge. He was elected in 1858 and served twelve years, being succeeded by Judge Stanfield.

*Daniel Noyes.*—On the expiration of Judge Stanfield's second term, Daniel Noyes, of La Porte, was elected, and is the present incumbent. Daniel Noyes was born in Vermont and came to Indiana in 1851, making his home at La Porte. He is a good lawyer, a man of sterling worth, and makes a popular judge.

*Associated Judges.*—From the organization of the county up to 1852, the Circuit Court was composed of a president judge and two associate judges. The following named have occupied the honorable position of associate judges from this county: John Banker, Chapel W. Brown, William McCartney, John Ireland, Reynolds Dunn, Powers Green, Peter Johnson and John D. Robertson.

#### COMMON PLEAS COURT.

In 1852 the Legislature of the State passed an act creating the Court of Common Pleas, with original and conclusive jurisdiction in all matters relating to the probate of last wills and testaments, granting of letters testamentary, of administration and guardianship, and all other matters heretofore pertaining to the Probate Court, which court by this act was abolished. It also had concurrent jurisdiction with the Circuit Court in all cases of criminal nature where the penalty affixed was less than the penitentiary.

Elisha Egbert was elected judge of this court in 1853 and served until his death. (See sketch elsewhere in this work.) Judge Egbert was succeeded by Edward J. Wood, of Elkhart county, who was elected in 1863. Judge Wood was a bright, quick-witted and clear-headed judge and served acceptably upon the Bench. During the war he served his country as Lieutenant-Colonel of the Forty-eighth Regiment Indiana Volunteers. Judge Wood died in 1872. He was succeeded by Daniel Noyes, who served only a short time, being legislated out of office, the Common Pleas Court being abolished.

## PROBATE COURT.

By the Constitution of 1816 Probate Courts were established. The first commissioned in this county was James P. Antrim, who held the office until 1834, when Elisha Egbert was commissioned and served until 1838, being succeeded by John J. Deming, who continued in office eight years, his successor being Edward F. Dibble, who served two years, when Elisha Egbert was again elected. Judge Egbert served until the office was abolished in 1852 by the organization of the Common Pleas Court. A term of the Probate Court was held in January, 1832, lasting one day, and was presided over by E. W. Brown and John Banker, associate judges of the Circuit Court. The first term of the court held by Judge Antrim was in February, 1833.

## THE BAR.

The Bar of St. Joseph county has been represented by some talented men, some of whom have gained a State and national reputation. Elisha Egbert was the first representative. (See sketch under head of "Some of the Illustrious Dead.")

*Jonathan A. Liston* came next; he settled here in 1832. He was born in Delaware, and emigrated with his father's family to Indiana when in his teens; he studied law with the late Hon. Oliver H. Smith at Connersville; his preceptor was a United States Senator from this State and one of her ablest lawyers. Mr. Liston was a man of talent and full of zeal and energy in his profession; never knew any body in his case but his client; every body else differing in opinion was wrong and must yield if the heavens fell; such persistence and energy coupled with an agreeable presence and popular manners, soon made him one of the leading lawyers of the northern part of the State, with a large and profitable practice. He was elected to the House of Representatives from this county in 1835, and to the Senate in 1836. He served as one of the three Commissioners in 1852 who prepared the new code of legal proceedings adopted in this State, in conformity with the requirements of the new constitution. He is still living, in Marion county, enjoying a quiet old age.

*Thos. D. Baird* came next; he was born in Kentucky. After becoming of age he came to Crawfordsville, in this State, and commenced the practice of law there; got married and moved to this county and settled on Portage Prairie as a farmer. He came in the year 1832. He occasionally attended the courts and tried causes, but did not enter into general practice until 1837, when he went into partnership with John D. Defrees, who commenced practicing law here that year. Mr. Baird gave more attention to his farm than to his profession and was not therefore a very profound lawyer, but he was an attractive speaker and a popular man. He was elected a Representative from this county in 1836, and Senator in

1837, which office he held until he died in 1842. If he had lived longer he would probably have been in Congress from this district. He had, as he deserved, the respect and confidence of the people.

The fourth lawyer in St. Joseph county was Samuel C. Sample, who afterward became judge of the Circuit Court, member of Congress, and whose sketch is found elsewhere in this work.

*John D. Defrees* was born in Tennessee. He left there when young and settled in Ohio. He became a citizen of South Bend in the summer of 1831, as editor of the *Northwestern Pioneer*, the first newspaper published north of the Wabash. He conducted this paper and its successor, the St. Joseph county *Beacon*, for several years, and finally moved to Goshen and engaged in a different pursuit. He had been reading law as he could find opportunity, when, in 1837, feeling that he had gained a competent knowledge of the law, he returned to South Bend, and went into partnership with Thos. D. Baird. After practicing law with him for some time, he entered into partnership with Joseph L. Jernegan, and they practiced law together for several years. Mr. Defrees was a natural born politician, a fluent and sharp political writer, well posted on all political questions, and the history and peculiarities of all the public men of that day, and on intimate and confidential relations with the great leaders of the Whig party. He had the capacity for a good lawyer, but his time was too much taken with politics to become a profound lawyer. He was elected to the House of Representatives in 1840, and the Senate in 1842, to fill vacancy, and in 1843 again elected for the full term. At the expiration of this term he moved to Indianapolis, and became the editor of the *Indianapolis Journal*. After conducting this paper with great ability for some years, he was elected Government printer, which office he yet holds. His political experience and careful observation gives him a high standing among his political friends at Washington.

*Joseph L. Jernegan* was born in Massachusetts, educated at Brown University, married when he was about 20, and settled in Goshen about the year 1832. He practiced law there until 1837, when he moved to South Bend. He succeeded S. C. Sample as Prosecuting Attorney for the circuit. He soon became one of the ablest lawyers in the northern part of the State. He had a wonderful memory, capable of calling up and readily and accurately stating all the essential facts of a long case, and in addition to this he could state points concisely and clearly that everybody who heard it would at once comprehend it and wonder why there should be any doubt about it. The only way to defeat his argument was to knock out his premises. He had a successful practice until 1850, when he went into a commission bank at Michigan City. In 1855 he moved to New York city, and again commenced the practice of law. Subsequently he went to Italy, and is now living in Naples.

*Edwin B. Crocker* was born in New York, and educated at an academy in Troy. He came to South Bend in 1841, and there entered Mr. Jernegan's office as a student. He afterward became his partner, and they continued in business together while Mr. Jernegan remained here. Mr. Crocker was a fat, jolly, good-hearted man, with considerable intellectual ability and a wonderful working capacity. In 1852 he went to California and commenced practicing law in Sacramento. In a few years he became one of the judges of the Supreme Court of that State. After he left the Bench, he and his brother Charles, who had also been a resident of this county, several years as a laborer in a Mishawaka furnace, together, with Gov. Stanford Hopkins and one or two others, undertook to build the first section of twenty miles of the Central Pacific railroad, and who afterward built the whole road and became its owners. About the time the road was completed to Ogden, Mr. Crocker was stricken down with paralysis. He partially recovered, but had another attack, which so utterly destroyed his mind that he could not recognize his family. After lingering in that condition for some time he died, leaving a fortune of \$10,000,000.

*Reuben L. Farnsworth* was born in Ohio, and came here in 1839 to study law with Judge Sample. He was an industrious and diligent student. After he got through with his preparatory studies he went into partnership with Mr. Liston. Subsequently he and Thos. S. Stanfield were in partnership a short time. Mr. Farnsworth might have been an able and successful lawyer, but his conscience troubled him, not that he thought it was wrong to practice law, but he thought he was called to preach the gospel, and he ought not to stand out against that conviction. He tried it in several denominations with undoubted sincerity and determination to obey the call. After awhile he would begin to think somebody else was called and he made a mistake when he answered. Then he would quit preaching and go to practicing law again. At one of those intervals he was Prosecuting Attorney for this circuit and made a good and efficient one. Finally he settled down in the Swedenborgian faith, and has since been a confirmed and undoubted believer in that doctrine. He has written and published several books to illustrate and prove the truth of that faith. He is now living a retired life in St. Paul, Minnesota.

*Norman Eddy* was another member of the early Bar of this county. (See sketch.)

#### THE PRESENT BAR.

The present Bar of St. Joseph county is composed of men who are the peer of any in the State—men of sound judgment in law, eloquent pleaders and honorable attorneys. The following named comprise those who at present are members, and who appear in the courts of this county at almost every session: Thomas S. Stanfield, James Davis, Alvin S. Dunbar, George W. Matthews, Frank R. Tutt, Timothy G. Turner, William G. George, Joseph Henderson,

John F. Kirby, O. S. Witherill, Andrew Anderson, H. E. Hurlbut, Joseph B. Arnold, Jr., George Pfeiffer, Lucius Hubbard, Willis A. Bugbee, John R. Foster, Geo. H. Alward, John E. Fisher, George Ford, John Hagerty, Jonathan P. Creed, John Brownfield, Jr., Lucius G. Tong, John Dixon, E. G. McCollum, James H. Ellsworth, E. Volney Bingham, John W. Harbon, W. H. Dawley, B. H. Beall, A. N. Thomas, Sam D. Graham, Wm. A. Dailey, L. F. Copeland, James Du Shane.

#### ST. JOSEPH BAR ASSOCIATION.

In the fall of 1873 an Association was formed in the city of South Bend under the name and style of the St. Joseph Bar Association. At a meeting Oct. 8, 1873, held at the court room, it was found that 17 shares had been subscribed of \$25 each, for the purpose of procuring a library and meeting the expenses of the Association. Twelve of the shareholders being present, they proceeded to organize. Alvin S. Dunbar was chosen President, and Lucius Hubbard, Secretary. A. S. Dunbar, Andrew Anderson, Wm. G. George, H. E. Hurlbut, Joseph Henderson, Jos. B. Arnold, Jr., and Lucius Hubbard, Directors.

On motion, it was agreed that any member of the Bar of St. Joseph county might become a member of the Association by subscribing for and paying one share of stock, and such annual dues as thereafter should be fixed by the Board of Directors.

On motion, it was resolved that the Board of Directors be authorized and empowered to make any arrangement that they may deem proper and expedient for the loan and control of libraries and books, and to pledge the Association for their proper care and return.

At a Directors' meeting held the same day, Andrew Anderson was appointed President of the Board, and L. Hubbard, Secretary and Treasurer. A. Anderson, Wm. G. George and L. Hubbard were appointed a committee to draft and report by-laws to be considered at a future meeting. Joseph B. Arnold, Jr., A. G. Dunbar and H. E. Hurlbut were appointed a committee to make such arrangements for a room and shelving as they should find necessary, and for that purpose to wait on the Board of Commissioners.

At a meeting of the Directors held Dec. 23, 1873, the following by-laws were read and adopted:

1. All members of this Association holding one share of stock, who shall promptly pay their quarterly dues, shall be entitled to use the library. Also such non-resident attorneys as on invitation of members. No member in arrears shall be entitled to use the books or room.

2. Annual dues shall be twenty dollars per annum, payable quarterly of \$5 each, the first installment to be payable April 1, 1874.

3. Receipts shall be given for all books deposited, and no book shall be taken out of the court-house, except by the owner thereof, and receipts shall be taken for all books taken out.

4. No person shall become a member of this Association except on application in writing and on recommendation of the Directors at some regular meeting.



5. There shall be a meeting of Directors on the first Monday of every month, at the rooms of the Association, at 7½ o'clock P. M.
6. The President and Secretary and one of the Directors of the Association shall constitute an Executive Committee, and shall determine as to purchase and expenses of the Association.
7. The Treasurer shall pay out money only on order of the President.
8. All stock shall be at once paid up.

At the first annual meeting held Jan. 1, 1874, A. Anderson was elected President and Lucius Hubbard, Secretary. At the third regular meeting Thomas S. Stanfield was elected President, and has been re-elected each year. Mr. Hubbard has been the only Secretary. At the annual meeting in 1875, the following resolutions were adopted as an amendment to the constitution and by-laws:

ART. 1. All quarterly dues heretofore or hereafter to be paid shall be held and considered to be and shall be additional subscriptions for stock, and each member of this Society who has or shall have paid quarterly dues to the amount of \$25 shall be entitled to and shall have and hold one share of stock therefor, and shall have from time to time an additional share of stock whenever his additional quarterly payments shall have amounted to the additional sum of \$25, and the Secretary and President are authorized from time to time to issue stock certificates therefor.

ART. 2. Members of this Association residing outside the corporate limits of the city of South Bend shall be required to pay only one-half of the amount of quarterly dues which other members are required to pay.

Andrew Anderson, at this meeting, made a proposition that if a glass case was furnished by the Association he would fill the same with books in the coming year. His proposition was accepted and the Directors authorized to procure a suitable case.

In 1877 the dues were fixed at \$10 per year, at which amount it now remains. At the annual meeting this year Hons. Daniel Noyes, William S. Haymond, William H. Calkins, Joseph E. McDonald, Schuyler Colfax, O. P. Morton and D. D. Pratt were elected honorary members of the Association.

The Association has at the present time under its control \$4,500 worth of books, \$1,315 of which it has expended from its own resources, the balance being the amount that has been loaned to the Association for its use by individual members, and for which it becomes responsible. Several law periodicals are taken, and the Government supplies it with all patent office reports issued.

Feb. 22, 1875, the Association held its first annual banquet at the Dwight House, then under control of Mills & Knight. A splendid supper had been provided and about forty persons sat down to partake. The discussion of the meal occupied about an hour, after which came the toasts and speeches of the evening.

The first toast was "Washington," which was responded to by Major Calkins, of La Porte. The Major, always interesting, was doubly so on this occasion. He deviated from the ordinary treatment of the subject by a witty style altogether different from the usual somewhat stereotyped oration.



C. H. Reves, of Plymouth, was called upon to respond to the toast "The Legal Profession," which he did in a manner eliciting the applause of his hearers.

"English Common Law" was the third toast, and C. M. Alward, of Niles, did the honors on that topic.

The next toast given was "The Judiciary," to which Judge Stanfield responded. He alluded to the prime factors in the Government of the country—the Legislative, the Executive and the Judiciary. The Judiciary, which by virtue of the Constitution, had one-third the power of the Government, had, in reality, much more. We did not feel the power of the National or State Executive in the every day business of life; were never reminded of it, in fact, except when armies were required to be raised, or something out of the ordinary course of events in that department transpired; but the power of the Judiciary was felt everywhere. Not a day passed but we were cognizant through the daily press of its operations. The importance of an honest, inflexible and fearless Judiciary, before whom must recur questions for adjudication involving interests of the deepest moment, was duly set forth.

Professor L. G. Tong, of the University of Notre Dame, was next introduced and read the following poem, which was received with cheers by those present:

In the earliest days of each people and nation,  
All mankind was honest in dealing and station;  
But lawyers were born with the first extra ration,  
Then *meum* and *tuum* brought forth litigation.  
Old Horace informs us that hickory clubs  
Were the courts of first instance, when acorns and grubs  
Were the highest-prized objects of human ambition,  
Ere the jurist came forth to mend our condition.

O, talkative *laudatores temporis acti*,  
Ye show your strange *ignorantia facti*,  
When ye strive to show cause why the old is the best;  
Henceforth, ye wild dreamers, do give us a rest.  
An acorn is good to a man if he's starving,  
But what is an acorn when capons are carving?  
Let strict truth prevail,—those times are top-sawyers  
Which can boast of the busiest number of lawyers.  
For what is enlightenment but common law,  
Just leaving the sword and then taking to jaw?  
Say, look at those barbarous nations of moke,  
As black as a coal, though quite ignorant of *Coke*.  
They haven't got stocks, and they haven't got shares;  
Their bulls are quadrupled and so are their bears;  
Their law is like Jack's with a very fat porpoise;  
Harpoon him, then issue a *habeas corpus*.  
Make the right of appeal the point of a spear,  
Have justice veer round through a smile or a tear,  
Deciding all things in a terrible passion,  
And seeking indictments that headsmen may quash 'em.  
As money goes down, or is in the ascendant,  
Interpreting law *pro* or *contra* defendant,  
When the only idea of the law of appeals  
Is to drop your just cause and then take to your heels.

How different we in this fair land of freedom,  
 Where statutes are shaped as the citizens need 'em,  
 Where causes are crystal, and pure jurists plead 'em,  
 Where clients are sought to defend, not to bleed 'em!  
 Let blockheads indulge in their hints and their sneers  
 About setting society, sir, by the ears;  
 Let them mutter the tale of the shell and the oyster,  
 And growl about pettifog, humbug and shyster.  
 Know they not, poor, pitiful, pragmatic daws,  
 That rogues are inclined to hate lawyers and laws?  
 While honesty praises the good that it sees,  
 Though once in awhile it may suffer a squeeze,  
 Knowing well, if you give but a moment's reflection,  
 That lawyers and law lay no claim to perfection.  
 Who otherwise argues is naught but a Hindoo,  
 And fit for a writ *de lunatico inquirendo*.

Who shall sneer at the law when a Stanfield is there,  
 Of the old Spartan days both the model and peer;  
 Who carefully weighs in the scales his decision  
 Shows each year his pure ermine more white to the vision,  
 And proves that, no matter how much he's commended,  
 He merits the praise, for, in him things are blended.  
 So noble and useful in heart and in head,  
 His deserving is always beyond the word said;  
 The title he's earned, since the world began,  
 Is the noblest of all titles "a true, honest man."

Next, Davis stands forth, of the silvery look,  
 In defense of the right, just as firm as a rock;  
 A terror to villains, to honest men hope,  
 To these giving justice, to those a tight rope.  
 Straightforward and true, his "exceptions" are clean,  
 For he always excepts to what's tricky and mean.

Then Alvin *Dunbar*, who has long *done bar*,  
 Where his honor has never received the least scar;  
 Time watches his chance, sir, but all the world knows it;  
 His mortgage is safe until Death shall foreclose it.

And there is grave *Tutt*, who, on forum or farm,  
 Succeeds in all things, as you know, to a charm.  
 Agriculture and law he knows how to adorn,  
 Forcing judges in both to "acknowledge the corn."

The *nomen* of George is a name, sir, to brag on,  
 Since the days of St. George and the venomous dragon!  
 We, too, had a George, all worthy of glory,  
 Who whipped a red dragon—you all know the story—  
 And the man who would doubt of our George, of South Bend,  
 Would merit a "special plea" at a rope's end.

Then Anderson's name must give satisfaction,  
 A practical mind, though given to "Abstraction."  
 Treat him well, or you'll smart for your blind lack of county,  
 For he knows all the *deeds* of the city and county.

To all men's esteem Arnold has many "Titles,"  
 He can diagnose skillfully Property's vitals;  
 And, more for the service than for the base pelf,  
 Dresses titles as well as he dresses himself.

Here comes the most genial of jurists, G. Pfeleger,  
Who's ready to plead for a king or a beggar;  
Who lightens the visage of law with a smile,  
And, while others are pulling on boots, walks a mile.

When Hubbard is mentioned, let critics grow dumb,  
A stern foe of whisky in his character does run.  
Let us hope that the law of "natural selection"  
Shall wrest from the bottle the power of "election."  
For, truly 'tis strange that chronic law-breakers  
Should hold in their hands the fate of law-makers.

Then Bugbee, and Foster, and Alward, and Fisher,  
In every citizen have a well-wisher.  
Their Protean genius is known afar  
In *deeds* and in *banks*, in a *writ* or *cigar*.  
Perhaps, now and then, one or other's iron-ic,  
But doctors say iron is an excellent tonic.  
So let us be glad for the gifts the gods send us—  
If we're not, all I say, sir, is this: Devil mend us!

And here let the bard pause to speak a kind word  
Of our absent sick friend, the excellent Ford.  
Let our judge issue forth a writ *feri facias*  
To the doctor, that all may say *Deo Gratias*.

Next, Hagerty enters this ower true ditty,  
The choice of good men as the judge of the city;  
I think, if the subject we carefully scan,  
We'll agree that they've honored themselves and the man.

In goodness and judgment our county is first;  
We are free from an ill with which others are curst.  
Unanimous in our own thinking and deed,  
We're attached, every man of us, sir, to our Creed.

Davis, Brownfield, Witherill, Turner and others,  
Are the acme of lawyers and well-esteemed brothers;  
Well read in the pages of forensic lore,  
In the temple of Fame may they yet make their score.

Here Matthews comes last, but by no means the least,  
To grace with his presence our grave Attic feast;  
A character kindly; a name without flaw,  
Law honors him less than he honors the law.  
He has never been soiled by the stain of court dust;  
He has never betrayed a friend or a trust;  
And I think the best toast a true man could give  
Is: "Here to Geo. Matthews" and "long may he live."

Thus ends my long rhyme, and do not abuse  
The eulogies sung by my diffident muse;  
I do not believe that the best paragraph  
Should be kept till it's writ for a man's epitaph.  
"*De mortuis nil nisi bonum*," is said,  
But why not some "*bonum*" before a man's dead?  
And with this short *critique*, which all must call fair,  
I salute you, *Messieurs*, and shall here take the chair.

A. S. Dunbar was importuned for some remarks, responding in a neat, crisp and appropriate speech, concluding by calling up Judge Turner.

The Judge was quite happy in his remarks. He said while on the way to the hotel, a lady (he knew she was a lady, or, being a stranger, she would not have been attracted by his noble form and handsome features) stopped him, and learning that he was going to the banquet at the Dwight House, placed in his hands a paper which she desired him to read before the guests. A local critic says: "Of course every one will guess that this was only an innocent device of the Judge's born of extreme modesty, to avoid being thought the author." The paper lost nothing by the reading. It was as follows:

The Mills of the gods they say ever grind slow,  
 But exceedingly fine. Well, now, don't you know  
 There's truth in that saying? For here, now, to Knight,  
 We've seen the thing tried, and you know it is right.  
 If the Mills were *not pros'd* and the Knight turned to day,  
 We'd have nothing to eat,—perhaps nothing to pay.  
 But Mills is still grinding, and Knight is well spent,  
 And both are quite anxious we all should keep lent,  
 But we cannot keep "lent," we all have to borrow  
 The cash to pay bills which will come in to-morrow.  
 To-morrow's the day we all have to fix up  
 The "how-come-you-so?" for this little "sup."  
 Yet Mills are worth something, though grinding so slow,  
 And Knights are the better the larger they grow.  
 The Mills of the Dwight House, grind he ever so fine,  
 Can never beat Jerry, the Knight of the Rhine (rind).  
 Then three cheers for Mills, and three more for Knight,  
 And let us go home before it gets light.

L. Hubbard was next called and responded in a speech showing a thorough knowledge of legal history. He also paid a compliment to the members of the legal profession in always being true to their clients, and concluded by saying: "If ever the liberties of our Republic are undermined, are lost by neglect or corruption, it will be, in a great measure, the fault of the legal profession."

The next banquet of the Association was held at the Grand Central, Feb. 22, 1877. The following were present: Judge Stanfield, A. Anderson, L. Hubbard, George W. Matthews, Judge Pfleger, Prosecuting Attorney Ford, Judge Alward, L. G. Tong, Judge Hagerty, City Attorney Brownfield, J. E. Fisher, W. E. Bugbee, J. R. Foster, O. G. Witherill, J. H. Ellsworth, H. E. Hurlbut, John Dixon, Charles Evans, Captain Nicar, J. W. Harbou, and representatives of the press.

After doing full justice to the generous bill of fare, a resolution was passed unanimously thanking Mr. Knill for the splendid manner in which they were entertained.

#### THE BAR IN A NEW ROLE.

The Bar of 1879 was composed of staid men, yet they would relax their dignity enough, occasionally, to have a little sport. On the evening of November 21, they presented the play of Bardell *vs.*

Pickwick. There are few reading people who have not read the "Pickwick Papers" and laughed themselves to tears over the characters that live and move in its pages. Many of these characters are such gross exaggerations that they might almost be called caricatures; but so many foibles of this day as well as that in which they were written are touched up, so many keen thrusts and deserved ones, too, are made at certain professions and callings, that the reader is prone to overlook the exaggerations in his endorsement of the other. The "Pickwick Papers" were written in 1836 by Charles Dickens, who was then a poor young man of 25, eking out a precarious living as a newspaper reporter, so poorly paid that he was forced to spend all his leisure time writing stories and sketches. He conceived the idea of the Pickwick club as a production into which he could utilize much of his experience with persons and things as a newspaper reporter. The Pickwick club was organized with the venerable Samuel Pickwick as president, and shortly thereafter he, with three of its members, started on a tour of scientific investigation which soon merged into one of social experience so varied and amusing that the book recording them is to-day the most popular of any of Dickens' works, although his earlier and almost first effort.

When Mr. Pickwick started on his travels he found it necessary to have a man-servant, and he engaged Sam Weller. He communicated his intention to his landlady, Mrs. Bardell, and did it in such an awkward yet delicate manner, that that lady took it for a proposal of marriage, and in her ecstasy of delight fell fainting into his arms, where she was seen by some of his brother members who accidentally called. Out of this episode grew the celebrated *Bardell vs. Pickwick* breach of promise case, which was presented to a South Bend audience last night, at Price's theatre by the St. Joseph County Bar, for the benefit of our city's poor. The attorneys were ably assisted by several ladies and by Mr. C. B. VanPelt and Master Willie Elliott. The cast of characters was as follows:

Mr. Pickwick.....	Thos. S. Stanfield	Betsey Cluppins....	Mrs. C. N. Fassett
Mrs. Bardell.....	Mrs. J. L. Taylor	Susannah Sanders....	Mrs. M. A. Jones
Old Mr. Weller.....	T. G. Turner	Nathaniel Winkle.....	J. E. Fisher
Sam Weller.....	C. B. Van Pelt	Tracy Tupman.....	Geo. Ford
Judge Stareleigh.....	L. G. Tong	Augustus Snodgrass....	W. A. Bugbee
Sergeant Buzfuz.....	A. Anderson	Sheriff.....	Geo. H. Alward
Sergeant Snubbin.....	W. G. George	Clerk.....	J. W. Harbou
Mr. Skimpin.....	L. Hubbard	Thomas Groffin.....	John Hagerty
Mr. Phunkey.....	J. P. Creed	Bailiffs.....	{ John Brownfield, Jr.
Mr. Perker.....	G. W. Matthews		{ O. S. Witherill
Mr. Dodson.....	James DuShane	Master Bardell.....	Willie Elliott
Mr. Fogg.....	J. H. Ellsworth		

Mr. Dickens confessed that he introduced the *Bardell vs. Pickwick* case to show the license unprincipled lawyers (could there be such a thing?) take, and the degree to which witnesses and jurors can be ingeniously hoodwinked. It also gave him an opportunity to place the practice of the English courts in a ridiculous

light, and enabled him to have some revenge by taking off the quirks of attorneys' clerks. The manner in which the piece was put upon the stage by stage manager Hubbard, and the spirit with which all the performers entered into the play showed that they had a perfect appreciation of the author's intentions. It is rarely, indeed, that any of our amateurs have had so crowded a house as greeted this performance, and that may have been a great incentive to the actors. Whether it was or not they all acquitted themselves in a manner so creditable that there was a unanimous vote to have the performance repeated to-night. The speeches of Messrs. Hubbard, Anderson and George were masterpieces of irony and satire, and nothing could be more perfect in its way than the examination of witnesses by Messrs. George and Anderson, unless it was Mayor Tong's judge's charge, which, like Messrs. Anderson and George's speeches, "brought down the house." There was more perfect acting in the witnesses—Mrs. Jones and Mrs. Fassett, and Messrs. VanPelt, Bugbee, Ford and Fisher, than is generally found among veteran actors. Mr. Ford made much out of an unimportant part, while Messrs. VanPelt and Bugbee, whose parts were important, set the house in roars of laughter. Willie Elliott also made much of a minor part. Mrs. Reynolds, Mrs. Taylor, and Messrs. Stanfield, Turner, Creed, Matthews, Witherill, Brownfield, Du Shane, Alward, Harbon, Hagerty and Ellsworth, by dress and acting, added much to the interest of the play, which was more laughable than a farce all the time. Of the jury, we can only say that it was above the average.



## CHAPTER VI.

NORTHERN INDIANA MEDICAL SOCIETY.—ST. JOSEPH COUNTY MEDICAL SOCIETY.—ST. JOSEPH VALLEY MEDICAL SOCIETY.—DISEASES OF THE ST. JOSEPH VALLEY.

### NORTHERN INDIANA MEDICAL SOCIETY.

The first organized effort made by the physicians of St. Joseph valley was in 1839. In May of that year a number of the medical fraternity met at the American Hotel in South Bend, and adopted a constitution taking the name of the Medical Society of Northern Indiana. Asa Egbert was elected President; George Rex, Vice President; Daniel Dayton, Recording Secretary; F. W. Hunt, Corresponding Secretary; A. B. Merritt, Treasurer; L. B. Rush, Griffin Smith, Lyman Griffin, J. Chapman and R. L. Groton, Censors. The society adopted as its seal a serpent winding in a spiral form around a knotty club, the whole being surrounded with the words, "Medical Society of Northern Indiana." The committee reporting the seal gave the following explanation of it: "The serpent represents *Æsculapius*, the god of physic, as depicted by the ancients and worshiped at Epidaurus, his native place. The spiral form in which he is winding around the knotty club denotes that protection from disease which the world receives from the medical profession. The club represents the art of medicine, which is used in beating back those diseases which otherwise would destroy life. The knots on the club show the perplexing difficulties and knotty questions which arise in the study of medicine. *Æsculapius* was the son of *Apollo*, and was educated in the art of curing diseases by *Chiron*, the Centaur, who by living in the woods had discovered the medical virtues of so many plants that he became the founder of a new art. *Æsculapius* soon excelled his preceptor, and learn so much that he restored those whose situations were considered desperate, and it was even thought he had power of recalling the dead to life. His divinity being established, and his power over disease unprecedented, he was sent for to Rome to deliver the city from a pestilence. When the Romans came to Epidaurus to transport the god to Rome, a great serpent came into their ship which they believed to be the god in the form of a serpent, and returned with him to Rome. Others say that when the Romans arrived at Epidaurus they were kindly received by the citizens, and when they came to the temple of *Æsculapius*, the serpent, in whose form the god was worshiped, went voluntarily into the

ship of the Romans, was carried to Rome, and after delivering the city from the pestilence, was worshiped in the form of a great serpent in a temple erected for him on an isle in the Tiber. Esculapius having restored so many to life that the infernal regions were in danger of becoming depopulated, Pluto complained that his revenues and the number of the dead were very much diminished, and persuaded Jupiter to employ the thunder in destroying the inventor and god of the healing art. Thus was fulfilled the prophecy uttered at his birth.

Thy art shall animate the sleeping dead,  
And draw the thunder on thy guilty head.

#### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY MEDICAL SOCIETY.

Pursuant to a notice in the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, a number of the physicians of St. Joseph county met at the Odd Fellows hall, in South Bend, June 11, 1855, for the purpose of forming a County Medical Society. Dr. R. Pierce was called to the chair, and D. B. Van Tuyl appointed Secretary.

The object of the meeting having been stated, a committee, consisting of Drs. Humphreys, Hardman and Buchtel, was appointed to draft a constitution and by-laws and report to the meeting, which they accordingly did, their report being received and constitution and by-laws adopted.

On the 2d day of July following another meeting was held and the constitution was signed by the following named physicians: Daniel Dayton, L. Humphreys, Jacob Hardman, David B. Van Tuyl, J. B. Buchtel, John H. Rerick, A. H. Johnson and J. R. Brown. The officers were then elected, as follows: L. Humphreys, President; R. Pierce, Vice-President; J. H. Rerick, Secretary; Jacob Hardman, Treasurer; J. B. Buchtel, D. B. Van Tuyl, J. R. Brown, Committee on Admission.

In pursuance of the objects of their organization, a committee was appointed on "epidemics and epidemic diseases," consisting of Drs. D. B. Van Tuyl, J. R. Brown, J. B. Buchtel, and Reuben Pierce. A committee, consisting of Drs. Dayton, D. B. Van Tuyl, and J. R. Brown, was appointed on "ethics."

At the October meeting, in 1856, considerable discussion ensued in relation to consulting with irregulars, and the practice was generally condemned. Dr. Van Tuyl introduced a resolution allowing members to judge for themselves as to the propriety of such consultation, without throwing any responsibility on the society. The resolution was not acted on at this meeting, and at a subsequent meeting held in January, 1857, it was withdrawn.

At the first regular meeting the following preamble and Constitution was adopted:

At a meeting of the physicians of St. Joseph county, Indiana, held pursuant to notice, in South Bend, June 11, 1855, it was

*Resolved*, That it is expedient to organize a County Medical Society, believing that the popular standard of the medical profession is now too low, and, as a



consequence, that many are to be found in its ranks who are not qualified for its high and responsible duties, and that such an organization as is now proposed to be made by this convention, when duly perfected, may be made to embody in its transactions the united views and purposes of the medical profession of this county, hereby rendering more efficient and available the means of promoting true medical science, and enlightening a distorted public sentiment in reference to the healing art. And, further, that it is necessary for emulation and concert of action in the profession, and for securing brotherly and friendly intercourse between all who are the commissioned agents of its responsibilities. Therefore, be it

*Resolved*, That this convention organize a medical society by volunteer association, and adopt the following

#### CONSTITUTION AND BY-LAWS.

SECTION 1. This organization shall be called the "St. Joseph County Medical Society."

SEC. 2. The regular meetings of the society shall be held quarterly in South Bend at such times as the society shall specify.

SEC. 3. This society shall be governed by the system of medical ethics adopted by the American Medical Association.

SEC. 4. A candidate to be eligible to membership must be of good moral character, and be a graduate of a regular medical school, or a practicing physician eligible to graduate in such school by attending one course of lectures. In which case, if recommended by the Committee on Admissions, and voted for by two thirds of the members present, he may become a member by signing the constitution and by-laws, and paying an initiation fee of one dollar.

SEC. 5. Reputable physicians and surgeons, possessed of the necessary qualifications as set forth in the preceding section, who are present at the adoption of this constitution and by-laws of this society by signing the same and paying the initiation fee, shall be considered members.

SEC. 6. Honorary members shall only be admitted by a vote of two-thirds of the members present at any regular meeting, having first been recommended by the Committee on Admissions.

SEC. 7. A vote of two-thirds of the members present shall be requisite to the expulsion of a member; which vote shall be had in consequence of a report of the Committee on Ethics, and at the next regular meeting subsequent to such report.

SEC. 8. The officers of this society shall be a President, Vice President, Secretary, Treasurer, and a Committee on Admissions consisting of three, all of whom shall be elected annually by ballot, on the first Monday in January.

SEC. 9. The President shall preside at all meetings, preserve order, promote the progress of business, appoint committees not otherwise provided for, give the casting vote, perform such other duties as pertain to his office by usage or custom, and deliver a written essay before the society at the close of his term.

SEC. 10. The Vice-President shall assist the President in the discharge of his duties, and preside in his absence.

SEC. 11. The Secretary shall keep a fair record of the proceedings of each meeting, and perform all other duties usually connected with his office.

SEC. 12. The Treasurer shall hold the funds of the society subject to its order, and shall annually exhibit in writing the state of the treasury.

SEC. 13. The Committee on Admissions shall ascertain the eligibility of all applicants for membership, and report thereon to the society.

SEC. 14. The following standing committees shall be annually appointed by the President: A committee on medical ethics, a committee of five members who shall make annually a report to this society upon the endemic and epidemic diseases which have prevailed during the year in the county, giving in full their pathology and treatment.

SEC. 15. The President may call a meeting at any time when in his judgment the good of the society may require it, or upon petition of a quorum.

SEC. 16. A quorum shall consist of five members for the transaction of business.

SEC. 17. The regular stated meetings of this society shall be held on the first Monday in January, April, July and October, commencing at one o'clock P. M.

SEC. 18. Standing committees shall keep regular minutes of their proceedings, and furnish a copy thereof to the Secretary.

SEC. 19. Any member vacating his membership shall thereby be divested of any right to the funds or property of the society.

SEC. 20. The Committee on Ethics shall hear all complaints of breach of etiquette or violation of medical ethics, and shall decide all questions of ethics submitted to it, taking the American Code for their guide. If any member shall be charged in writing with any violation of the provisions of the constitution, or with unprofessional conduct, a copy of such charge shall be furnished to him, himself and accuser cited to appear, when the committee shall proceed to hear the case, reserving its decision to be reported to the society, when its action may be affirmed by a majority of the members present.

SEC. 21. No member of this society shall engage in making or using any secret nostrum in his practice, or circulate publicly or privately any hand-bills or cards, claiming to treat general or specific diseases by a method unknown to the profession at large, thereby inducing public patronage on the assumption that he is in possession of a secret or specific remedy, or a secret mode of treating general or specific diseases; and it shall be deemed by this society as unprofessional in any of its members to solicit public patronage by proposing to receive no compensation when no cure follows the treatment in any case of disease.

SEC. 22. It shall be the duty of every member of this society, in attendance at any regular meeting, to report at least one case that has occurred in his practice during the year, embracing its history, treatment and pathology.

SEC. 23. This society shall appoint one or more delegates to the State Medical Society and to the American Medical Association.

SEC. 24. This society shall, as early as practicable, adopt measures for keeping a meteorological register, noting the temperature and density of the atmosphere, fogs, dews, dew point, rain, hail, hoar-frost, clouds, winds, electrical phenomena, and other conditions that may be supposed to shed light upon the etiology of our diseases.

SEC. 25. This constitution may be amended at any regular meeting of the society, by a vote of two-thirds of the members present, provided the amendment has been proposed in writing at a previous meeting.

In addition to the names already given as forming the society the Constitution was signed by R. Pierce, Andrew Foster, W. W. Butterworth, Ross W. Pierce, F. T. Bryson, G. F. Myers, J. M. Stover, S. Eisenbise, S. Higenbotham and S. Laning.

Meetings were held with more or less regularity until 1859, when they ceased altogether. No successful effort was made to revive them for several years. On the 12th day of May, 1865, a number of the physicians of the county assembled at South Bend, re-organized and adopted a new constitution. For about two years the meetings of the society were continued, and again it suspended.

In response to a call issued by Dr. W.W. Butterworth, the members of the society assembled at the office of Drs. Hamond McAllister March 16, 1875, and again re-organized, adopting for their guidance the following :

#### CONSTITUTION.

ARTICLE 1. The name and title of this society shall be "The St. Joseph County Medical Society," and shall be auxiliary to and under the control of the Indiana State Medical Society.

ART. 2. The objects of this society shall be the advancement of medical knowledge, the elevation of professional character, the protection of the interests of its members, the extension of the bounds of medical science, the promotion of all measures adapted to the relief of the suffering, and to improve the health and protect the lives of the community.

ART. 3.—Sec. 1. Any graduate in medicine of a respectable medical school or licentiate of any regularly organized medical society, who is in good moral and

professional standing, upon signing the constitution and paying three dollars (\$3.00) to the Treasurer, shall be entitled to full membership by a vote of the society.

Sec. 2. In the absence of the credentials mentioned in the first section of this article, the candidate for membership, by presenting a certificate of qualification to practice medicine and surgery, from the Board of Censors, may, upon signing the constitution and paying five dollars (\$5.00) to the Treasurer, be admitted to full membership by a vote of the society.

ART. 4.—Sec. 1. The officers of this society shall be a President, two Vice-Presidents, Secretary, Treasurer, and three Censors.

Sec. 2. Each officer shall be elected by a vote of all the members present, and serve one year or until a successor is elected.

ART. 5.—Sec. 1. The President shall preside over the meetings, preserve order, and perform such other duties as custom and parliamentary usage may require. He may call meetings whenever in his judgment the interests of the society may demand them, or upon the written request of three members of the society. He shall sign certificates of membership and those of discharge; also, the written warrants authorized to be drawn upon the Treasurer, and all the official instruments and proceedings of the society. He shall deliver an address before the society at the close of his official term.

Sec. 2. In the absence of the President his duties shall be performed by one of the Vice-Presidents.

Sec. 3. The Secretary shall keep a fair, legible and correct record of the proceedings of the society, and when approved, transcribe them in a book kept for that purpose. He shall record a list of the members' names with specifications of such as fail to pay their dues, taxes or fines. He shall have charge of all papers belonging to the society, excepting such as may properly belong to the Treasurer. He shall give notice of the meetings of the society. He shall collect the dues of the members to the State Society and forward them with such papers and documents as may be directed to the Secretary of the State Society, on or before the first day of each annual meeting of said State Society.

Sec. 4. The Treasurer shall collect all dues payable to this society and pay, upon presentation, the orders regularly drawn upon him by the Secretary and signed by the President. He shall keep a full account of all moneys received and disbursed, and make satisfactory reports thereof at least annually, and oftener, if required by the society. Upon the expiration of his term of office, he shall exhibit to the parties appointed to receive them, an account current of the receipts and disbursements of his term, accompanied with vouchers, and hand over to his successor in office all moneys, books, papers, or other property held and received by virtue of his office.

Sec. 5. It shall be the duty of the Censors to examine candidates for membership who have not the credentials prescribed by section first of article third, and when the applicant gives satisfactory evidence of qualifications in the various branches of medical science, give him a certificate of the fact, if in the interim of the meetings, or during a session, report the same directly to the society.

ART. 6.—Sec. 1. Two-thirds of the members shall constitute a quorum, competent to alter or amend this constitution.

Sec. 2. Five members shall constitute a quorum to do any business, except as provided in section first of this article, or levy fines, make assessments, or appropriate moneys belonging to the society.

ART. 7.—Sec. 1. The society shall have full power to adopt such measures as may be deemed most efficient for mutual improvement, for exciting a spirit of emulation, for dissemination of useful knowledge, for promoting friendly professional intercourse among its members, and for the advancement of medical science.

Sec. 2. It shall have power to censure or expel any who, after due notice of charges preferred, may be convicted of violating its provisions, or of conduct derogatory to the honor of the medical profession, and enforce the observance by its members of the Code of Ethics adopted by the society.

Sec. 3. It shall have the power to compel the attendance of its members upon its meetings and their service upon committees by the imposition of fines, which shall not in any case exceed three dollars: *Provided, however,* that when satisfactory excuse is rendered for delinquency, the society may refuse to assess any fine.

Sec. 4. It shall have power to raise money of its members for the purpose of securing its objects, by a tax which shall not exceed five dollars annually on each member, and the dues annually assessed by the State Society.

Sec. 5. It shall have a right to fix a fee bill for regulating the charges of its members for their professional services.

Sec. 6. It shall have power to adopt a seal for the use of the society.

Sec. 7. It shall hold at least two meetings annually, and as many more as may be deemed necessary for the promotion of its objects.

Sec. 8. The place of each succeeding meeting shall be determined by a vote of the society.

ART. 8.—Sec. 1. Any member who shall remove from the location he may occupy at the time of his admission into the society, so as to change his postoffice address, shall be considered without the bounds of the society, and shall thereby forfeit his right of membership until he shall have notified the Secretary of the post-office to which his notice of the meetings may properly be directed.

Sec. 2. Such forfeiture of membership shall not exonerate the member from payment of any dues to the society which may at the time be standing against him.

ART. 9. Any member upon signifying his intention or wish to withdraw from the society, and producing a certificate from the Secretary that he is not in arrears to the Treasurer, may be permitted to make such withdrawal: *Provided*, there are no charges against him of violating the provisions of the society, or of conduct derogatory to the honor of the medical profession, in which case the member shall be required to answer to such charge before permitted to withdraw.

ART. 10. Any member who may be expelled shall be debarred from the right of consultation or any of the privileges of professional intercourse with any member of the society, and shall forfeit all interest in its funds and property, but shall be held to the payment of all dues he may owe the society at the time of his expulsion.

ART. 11. This society may admit honorary members, upon compliance of the applicant with the same forms as prescribed for the admission of *bona fide* members, except that no initiatory fee shall be required. They shall not be permitted to vote, nor shall they participate in any of the proceedings, except by the express permission of the society.

ART. 12. The funds of this society shall be devoted exclusively to the promotion of its objects as set forth in article second of this constitution.

ART. 13. This society adopts as a part of its regulations the Code of Ethics of the American Medical Association.

ART. 14. Every proposal to alter or amend this constitution shall be in writing, and if such proposed alteration or amendment receive the unanimous vote of the meeting—if there be a competent quorum present—it shall be adopted, but if objection be made, it shall lie over until the next regular meeting, when if it receive two-thirds of a quorum competent to amend the constitution, it shall be adopted.

ART. 15. This society may enact by-laws for its government not inconsistent with this constitution.

ART. 16. This society adopts as its seal a circular disc, upon the face of which are the words, "St. Joseph County Medical Society, Indiana, *Physiologica Medicina Cautiois et Cura Morborum Vera Scientia est*," with the figures "1855," giving date of its organization.

ART. 17. In order more effectually to secure the objects of this society, we hereunto subscribe our names, do agree with, and to each other, that we will faithfully observe all the requirements of the constitution, Code of Ethics, and all other regulations adopted for the government of the society, and all requirements of the State Medical Society of Indiana, to which this is auxiliary; and that we will in no case whatever, knowingly consult with, or extend the courtesies of the profession to any one who is not a graduate of some respectable medical college, licensee of this or some other regularly organized medical society, or in any other way countenance or encourage quackery in any of its forms or pretensions; for the faithful performance of which we do hereby individually pledge our truth, our honor and professional standing.

This Constitution was signed by the following named physicians: Levi J. Ham, South Bend (expelled); Louis Humphreys, South Bend; John Cassidy, South Bend; James B. Green, Mish-

waka (withdrawn); G. V. Voorhees, South Bend; Joshua A. Kettring, South Bend; J. R. Brown, Sumption Prairie; S. Lanning, North Liberty; B. R. O'Conner, Mishawaka; C. A. Fletcher, South Bend (removed); W. W. Butterworth, Mishawaka; E. W. McAllister, South Bend; J. C. Sack, South Bend; O. P. Barbour, South Bend; D. Dayton, South Bend.

## ST. JOSEPH VALLEY MEDICAL SOCIETY.

This society was organized July 10, 1874, at South Bend, and is composed of physicians of St. Joseph, Elkhart and La Porte counties, Indiana, and Cass and Berrien counties, Michigan. Louis Humphreys, of South Bend, was elected President, and E. W. McAllister, Secretary. Thirty-eight physicians from the counties named signed the constitution adopted at the meeting. Semi-annual meetings of the society were decided upon.

The second meeting was held at South Bend, Jan. 12, 1875.

The third meeting was held at La Porte, June 8, 1875, at which time R. J. Hagerty, of Elkhart county, was elected President, and C. S. Pixley, of the same county, Secretary.

The fourth meeting was held at Elkhart, Jan. 11, 1876.

Niles, Michigan, was the next place of meeting, which was held June 13, 1876. Landon C. Rose, of La Porte county, was elected President, and C. S. Pixley of Elkhart, Secretary.

On the 9th of January, 1877, at South Bend, the third semi-annual meeting was held.

The third annual meeting was held at the same place, June 12, 1877. At this meeting L. C. Rose, of La Porte, was elected President and G. V. Voorhees, of South Bend, Secretary.

The semi-annual meeting was held Jan. 18, 1878, at South Bend.

The fourth annual meeting was held at South Bend, June 11, 1878; the officers were re-elected.

At the semi-annual meeting L. H. Dunning was elected Secretary to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of G. V. Voorhees. This meeting was held on the 17th of January, 1879.

On the 10th of June, 1879, the fifth annual meeting was held at South Bend. Dr. W. W. Butterworth, of Mishawaka, was elected President, and L. H. Dunning, of South Bend, Secretary.

The semi-annual meeting was held at South Bend, Jan. 13, 1880.

The sixth annual meeting of the St. Joseph Valley District Medical Society was held at the Grand Central Hotel, South Bend, June 10, 1880, and was the most animated and enthusiastic in the history of the society. Among those present were Drs. Butterworth, of Mishawaka; Dodge, of Bristol; Reeves, of Niles; Frink, of Elkhart; Greener, of Middlebury; Put, of Millersburg; Montgomery, of Wakarusa; Harrington and Neal, of Elkhart; Morse, of Dowagiac; Thompkins, of Cassopolis; Hani, of Middlebury; O'Conner, of Mishawaka; Work, of Elkhart; Dunning, Kilmer and Stockwell,

of South Bend, and a number of visitors. Dr. Butterworth, the President, occupied the chair.

The names of Drs. Milton White, of Cass county, and J. C. Wallace, of South Bend, were proposed for membership and admitted.

Members in arrears were ordered to be admitted by paying their dues.

Mrs. Dr. Stockwell read a paper on the differential diagnoses of cholera infantum. The paper was freely discussed.

Dr. Ham was extended the courtesies of the Society and asked to participate in the discussions.

Dr. Dunning read a paper on the treatment of cholera infantum. The paper was discussed at considerable length, Dr. Ham taking part.

The Chair, on motion of Dr. Neal, appointed the following Committee on Necrology—Drs. Neal, Dodge and Wallace.

The society then proceeded to the election of officers for the ensuing year with the following result: Dr. Thompkins, President; Drs. Hani, Morse, O'Conner, Rose and Belknap, Vice-Presidents; Dr. Dunning, Secretary; Dr. Frink, Treasurer.

A resolution was offered by Dr. Frink and adopted, "that, in the opinion of this society any physician becoming a member obligates himself morally to comply with its requirements, and that failing to comply with them or giving a reasonable excuse for not doing so renders himself liable to a vote of censure."

The Committee on Necrology was directed to report at the next meeting. The society then adjourned to meet at the dinner table.

The annual banquet was served in the dining room of the Grand Central Hotel, and was a collation worthy of the house and the occasion, for doctors, like other mortals, enjoy the good things of life. The tables, two in number, were arranged to seat thirty, and were well filled. The bill of fare included a long list of substantials, supplemented by all the delicacies of the season served in the most approved style.

At the conclusion of the banquet Dr. L. H. Dunning, the toastmaster, arose, and after a few introductory remarks in an exceedingly happy vein, proceeded to read the toasts and introduce the respondents, as follows:

"The St. Joseph Valley District Medical Society;" response by Dr. W. W. Butterworth, of Mishawaka.

"The Medical Profession;" response by Dr. J. S. Dodge, of Bristol.

"The Patriarchs of the Profession;" Dr. S. L. Kilmer, of South Bend.

"The Press;" response by Dr. L. J. Ham, of South Bend.

"Science, Art and Literature, the Hand Maidens of the Profession;" response by Dr. C. S. Frink, of Elkhart.

The respondents without exception did honor to the occasion by their happy, instructive and highly entertaining addresses. It is

worthy of special mention, however, that Dr. Ham paid a glowing tribute to the memory of the lamented Dr. Louis Humphreys. It was a grand effort, and heartily indorsed by all who listened to it.

Subjects of papers for the next meeting were assigned and the society adjourned.

#### DISEASES OF ST. JOSEPH VALLEY.\*

On the first settlement of the St. Joseph valley and its surroundings, no part of the West rivaled it in beauty and loveliness. Previous to 1835 it possessed an almost fabulous reputation throughout the Eastern and Middle States for its exemption from disease of every kind. The early inhabitants of the valley, when writing to "the friends they left behind them," grew enthusiastic over the attractions of their new homes, possessed of a climate, mild and genial (except in winter), a soil of unrivaled fertility, equaling in productions the far-famed valley of the Nile, in Egypt's palmiest days—landscapes of pleasing variety, in prairies, streams and lakes, while the openings excelled the parks of the nobles of the old world. To crown all, the inhabitants were in a land where they could say, "We know no sickness," and it seemed the long-sought-for ideal, earthly paradise of some of the early explorers of the Western world had been realized.

At the period of which we are speaking, the country was thinly populated; and but here and there the deep, rich mold of the prairies had been disturbed. About the year 1835 large accessions to the population were received, attracted by the fame of the country for fertility and beauty, and the speculative epidemic in wild lands that pervaded the West. The hosts of emigration moved into our lovely valley, like pilgrim devotees to some modern Mecca. Columns of smoke from the domiciles of the new settlers were soon to be counted by hundreds upon the plains and prairies. In every direction the eye was greeted by lines of zigzag fences, peculiar to new countries; and thousands of long, dark furrows met the vision of the beholder, attesting that the broad, green bosom of the earth had been torn by the plow of the hardy pioneer.

The effects of that mysterious agent, to which medical writers have given various names, but generally known by that of *malaria*, began to manifest its presence here and there, and victims to its barbaric disregard of the feelings of those who had left their "dear native lands" to brave the perils of frontier life were occasionally seen in the pale and sallow countenances of those upon whom the hand of this subtle enemy to humanity had been laid. The victims of chills and intermittents received at the hands of their *well* neighbors but little commiseration or anxious care, for their sickness was regarded as "only the ague" and of slight consequence, only from loss of time and inability to work. As a general thing, those

---

\* Address of Dr. L. Humphreys before the St. Joseph County Medical Society delivered at South Bend, January, 1858.



having attacks of ague resorted to but little medication, most of them "wearing out their relation to the disease," many of whom were left with sadly impaired constitutions, and a few sank from organic diseases resulting from repeated attacks. There were but few physicians in the country at that time, and remedial agents were scarce and difficult to obtain. The county continued to prosper, increasing in population and wealth, with perhaps no increase of sickness above the ratio of increase in inhabitants, up to the year 1838. This is a memorable year in the annals of the entire West. No portion of the Mississippi valley, north of the Ohio river, could, with justice, set up any claims of salubrity of climate, or healthfulness of locality over another, and the Western citizens of that year find but few pleasing associations connected with it.

Before any attempt is made at a delineation of the sickness of 1838, it will be proper to refer briefly to the combination of causes that existed to produce such deplorable results. The months of March, April, May, June and the first ten or twelve days of July, of that year, were remarkable for the quantities of rain that fell during that period. During the previous winter the water in the lakes, ponds and marshes had been unprecedentedly low. Add to continuity of rain of these months, as yet, the unaccounted-for periodic "rises" of all western Waters, and we find sufficient cause for an extensive and unusual submergence of the low lands of the country. The air was necessarily loaded with moisture; for humidity it could only be paralleled, perhaps, in the low countries of Holland. So marked was this state of the atmosphere that articles of furniture, books and wearing apparel were frequently found to be mildewed in the houses of the inhabitants. Many of the dwellings of the settlers were illy calculated to resist the effects of the existing dampness of the climate. A large majority of the residences were of wood, having foundations and cellars walled with the same material, subject to rapid decay underground, furnishing an abundant source for unhealthy emanations. Many of the inhabitants used, for drinking and culinary purposes, surface water, while nearly all the wells constructed at that day were curbed or lined with wood, which, from its rapid decomposition, impregnated the water with a deposit disagreeable to the taste, and presumed to be anything but healthy in its character.

Large numbers of the settlers, from necessity, were compelled to expose their persons to the exceedingly damp air of morning and evening. Their mental and physical capacities were often, also, taxed beyond a healthy point by over-work. Add to this a diet of the plainest kind, which was devoured with voracious appetites, by which derangement of the stomach and biliary organs were almost necessarily induced; nearly all were deprived of the articles of diet requisite to the preservation of good health, especially, the various kinds of fruits; in addition to all this, the turning over by the plow of thousands of acres of turf, and we find a combination of circumstances, with the peculiarities of the summer



and fall seasons of that memorable year, which in the absence of a more scientific explanation of causes, seem to be well calculated to produce the results that followed.

The spring season and early part of the summer of 1838 were noted for the rapid and luxuriant growth of all kinds of vegetation and the development of organic germs of cryptogamous growth. About the 12th of July the rains ceased, and, with the exception of two or three light showers, remained suspended until about the 15th of the ensuing October. The cessation of rain was followed by an unusually (for this latitude) high temperature. The thousands of acres of land covered by superficial ponds were rapidly uncovered by evaporation, leaving a deposit of decayed vegetable matter exposed to the action of the intense heat of the sun, generating as is generally believed, although not susceptible of scientific demonstration, a malarial influence by the evolution of miasma. So rapidly was the superficial water exhaled from the surface of the ground that fissures of several inches in depth and an indefinite width and length, were not unfrequently seen. There is no record of observation upon the dew point at that time. During the months of August and September no moisture from dew was visible for weeks in succession. The sky each morning presented a lurid, brassy appearance, and the strata of atmosphere upon the earth's surface presented the tremulous, vibratory phenomenon, before the rising of the sun, caused by radiation of heat from the surface of the ground. The ground at the same time was covered by the debris of dead vegetation.

During the latter part of the month of July a few cases of bilious remittent and intermittent fever manifested themselves, and, soon after, a general and wide-spread epidemic of those types of disease prevailed from which but few escaped. Persons of robust constitution, and whose habits of life were nearly in accordance with the laws of health, constituted no exception. Unhappily, but few were situated so as to be able to observe the rules requisite to the preservation of health. A very large majority of the residents of the entire valley of St. Joseph were sick at one time from the prevailing epidemic. Not unfrequently whole families were prostrated on sick beds, no one of their numbers possessing the ability to procure even cold water sufficient to allay the thirst of their suffering associates. An incalculable amount of suffering, and in some instances death, resulted from want of proper care and nursing. Perhaps no one attendant circumstance of the great epidemic of that memorable year served to dishearten and paralyze the energies of the new settlers, while they lay languishing on their beds, haunted by fitful, feverish imaginings of the profusion of comforts they had left in their native lands, as the deprivation of the services of kind and sympathizing friends.

There were occasional instances of almost entire exemption from the prevailing disease. Those persons escaping were mostly women who, true to their natural promptings, were almost nightly and

daily at the bedsides of the sick and suffering. The number of medical men at that time was very inadequate to the wants of the people, and many of them mere pretenders in the profession. There were some (notwithstanding uncharitable strictures upon them, that we sometimes hear from our self-sufficient brethren of the present day) who were then, as they would be now, if living, ornaments, doing honor to the profession and the age in which they lived. Not a few of the physicians in the St. Joseph valley fell victims that year to the prevailing epidemic; but like true sentinels at their post, emphatically, they died with the professional harness on. A very large portion of the corps of medical men were sick and disabled from excessive fatigue and exposure, and the fatality of a large number of cases was, no doubt, attributable to a want of proper and timely medical aid. Perhaps a majority of the cases were simply agues, of the "every-day or every-other-day" type, attended with regular rigors during the cold stage, succeeded by the hot and sweating stages. This form of the disease was attended by no immediate danger, but the sequel was often ruinous beyond reparation in producing obstructions and disorganization of the lungs and other vital organs. The type of disease in many others was that of bilious remittent or intermittent fever proper, attended with more danger to the lives of those thus attacked, but which seldom or never ran into proper typhoid form. This latter form of fever was but rarely seen in the valley prior to the year 1847. As was stated in the earlier history of the diseases of this valley so was it in 1838. The remedial agents most needed in the treatment of that year could not be obtained, owing to the scarcity of the supply, and the want of facilities to bring them here (there were no railroads in those days, and but few steamers upon the upper lakes). That most reliable of all the preparations of Peruvian bark as a tonic and anti-periodic agent, *quinine*, was not to be had. The various substitutes sought out and devised by physicians and people were sadly deficient in meeting the indications. It would be safe to state that a very large portion of the fatal cases (the percentage of which was exceedingly small in proportion to the number of sick) proved fatal for want of that agent; against which, it is to be regretted, even at the present day, there exists much popular prejudice, caused mainly by unprincipled mountebanks, who crowd the profession, altogether unjustifiable in its nature. It is but just to say that the effects of Peruvian bark and its preparations were not then understood by the profession as at present, and the discoveries in its uses within the last ten or twelve years are invaluable and constitute one of the proudest monuments in the progress of our profession. The principal treatment of the epidemic by intelligent physicians consisted in the use of cathartics, alteratives, anodynes, and such febrifuge agents as could be procured at the time. The lancet then, as now, was seldom resorted to.

This great epidemic of the West gradually subsided with the approach of white frosts and rain storms of autumn. A few cases,

occurring late in the fall, exhibited an approximation to typhoid features, but none were sufficiently marked to entitle them to the name of typhoid proper. As has been stated, there were comparatively few cases to the number sick, which terminated in death, and many of the fatal cases occurred from the causes already set forth. The inhabitants of the St. Joseph valley in the fall of 1838 were emphatically a *pale-faced race*, resembling more nearly a community of *stalking ghosts* than living, active specimens of humanity. Many bereft of all energy or inclination to mental or physical efforts became impersonations of despair, while not a few, as soon as they were sufficiently restored to health, set out for their native hills and valleys, thoroughly disgusted with the West.

Since that memorable year of suffering, time has worn on, but the country has never been visited, and there is no probability that it ever will be again, by so widely diffused and general an epidemic, for there never can exist again such a combination of causes, as did then, to produce disease. Although nearly twenty years have elapsed since that year of suffering, yet the "West" has scarcely recovered from the reputation it acquired at that time, in the Eastern and Middle States, for its supposed unhealthy climate; while the facts are, in relation to health and general prosperity, the citizens of the valley of St. Joseph may safely challenge a comparison with any portion of the American continent, possessing a soil of equal fertility.\* From the first settlement of the St. Joseph valley and the West, generally, to the present day, the intermittent and remittent types have constituted a distinguishing feature in nearly all prevalent diseases. Prior to the last ten years they were generally "pure and simple," or without complications, when the practice of the merest tyro in the profession would be attended with some degree of success. Subsequent to the period mentioned, complications with almost every form of acute disease became prevalent, almost always disguised or masked behind functional derangement of some vital organ or organs. Indeed, this feature of the disease of our country, at the present day, may be said to be protean in form.

The intermittent and remittent complications of the most frequent occurrence are neuralgia, pneumonia (popularly termed lung fever), rheumatism, dysentery, diarrhoea and erysipelas, besides numerous other phases, all requiring in a greater or less degree the anti-periodic and supporting plan of treatment, demanding the exercise of a sound judgment and careful discrimination on the part of the practitioner, to determine when to exhibit and when to withhold that class of remedies, without which the greatest errors will assuredly be committed. In addition to the everchanging forms of intermittent and remittent diseases we have had, for the last ten years, more or less typhoid fever. Since the appearance of this fever there has been less of the former types in simple forms.

---

\* It is a well established fact that all countries having a fertile soil are more or less subject to malarial diseases.

The annual period of sickness, since the appearance of typhoid, has in a great measure changed from the summer and early fall seasons to the late fall and winter seasons. Physicians in active practice for the last ten or twelve years often encounter difficulty with the typhoid patients and their friends (who resided in the West previous to that time), in making them understand the radical difference between that form of fever and the intermittent and remittent forms in point of duration. Especially has this been the case since the latter types of fever have become so amenable to an improved method of medication, by which most cases are cut short in a few days from inception. In typhoid fever the attending physician is often importuned by non-professional persons for reasons "why the fever is not broken up," they failing to see essential differences in types of disease. The marked disturbance of the brain and nervous system, and especially the characteristic local disease of the lining membrane and small glands of the intestinal canal, bearing a striking analogy to skin diseases, such as small-pox, scarlet fever, and other diseases of the skin and underlying tissues, the depraved condition of the blood and humors of the system generally can only be understood by the close observing professional man. It is therefore not strange that they escape the observation of persons outside of the profession, and hence the difficulties physicians encounter in explaining why they can no more hope to cure or shorten the duration of typhoid fever, as a general thing, than they can hope to arrest small-pox or other eruptive fevers. There are many cases, however, in which the duration is materially shortened by appropriate treatment, but they constitute the exception to the general rule. The physician's duty consists in sustaining the enfeebled powers of the system, and meeting, by timely remedial aid, if possible, the unfavorable symptoms as they arise in these cases. Typhoid, as are other types of fever, is often complicated in a variety of ways. The more serious the complication, of course, the greater will be the danger. This form of fever, though serious, is not often fatal. It is, however, one of those ailments which put on very different degrees of violence under different circumstances. On some occasions it is exceedingly fatal--more so in hospitals than in private practice. There are few diseases that exhibit more happily the good results of judicious medical treatment than this. It is true that the disease cannot be suddenly interrupted, as has been intimated, but often materially shortened, and still more frequently conducted to a favorable issue, when, if left to nature and without treatment, it would inevitably end in death. It is generally admitted not to occur twice in the same person; it very often prevails epidemically. Not unfrequently the most healthy localities in this country are visited by it in this form. This disease is often supposed to be contagious. Typhoid patients sometimes suffer for want of proper care and nursing through fear of contracting the disease on the part of those who, under other circumstances, would respond promptly to the calls of suffering

humanity. Nothing can be more erroneous, and it is the duty of every physician to disabuse the public mind upon this subject. There is almost always an epidemic influence abroad when typhoid fever prevails. At such times persons predisposed to disease, if sick at all, will be very likely to have a typhoid type of sickness. Fatigue, exposure to vicissitudes of weather, and mental disturbances sometimes act as exciting causes of the disease in those already predisposed; hence it is not unfrequently the case that persons engaged in nursing typhoid patients days and nights and weeks, continuously deprived of their accustomed sleep, and suffering from mental anxiety at the same time, take the disease. Farther than this I am constrained to believe there is no inherent principle of contagion about typhoid fever, although many eminent men and scientific observers have arrived at different conclusions.

Amongst the various diseases in which the people of the valley of St. Joseph, as elsewhere, are deeply interested, none enlists more solicitude than that of pulmonary consumption. This disease, aside from collateral causes, may be said to be produced only in those predisposed to it, or hereditarily, or about whom a combination of causes has been operating a sufficient length of time to develop a *consumptive diathesis*. From the remarkably damp and cold character of the spring seasons in this latitude a superficial observer would be led to suppose that consumption was quite a common disease in this country, although nearly all cases which do occur of this disease are developed by the variable weather of our "open winter" and spring seasons in those predisposed, or who wantonly or indifferently expose themselves. Yet it is not in the West, as a general thing, the great scourge of the human race, as in the Atlantic States, where it is estimated that one-seventh of all the deaths north of the tropics occur from consumption. I believe it is the received opinion of physicians that there are fewer cases of consumption at this time in the St. Joseph valley, in proportion to the number of inhabitants, than there were a few years ago, when congestive forms of chills were more frequent, inducing disease of the lungs by some sanguineous engorgement, which takes place more or less extensively during the cold stage of that formidable type of intermittents. Some persons have come into this climate with marked symptoms of pulmonary consumption, and after a few years residence have appeared comparatively restored to health. Many solutions of this problem in physiology have been offered, but none as yet have appeared sufficiently demonstrative to be incorporated with the truths of science. Among other suggestions, we may ask if it may not be accounted for on the principle that the shock sustained by the nervous system during intermittent attacks diverts diseased action from the lungs, and by revulsion diffuses it through the system at large, from the effect of which its recuperative energies rescues it from that which would destroy life if concentrated upon a given organ or set of organs. As before stated, the variable effect of open winters and damp, cold

spring seasons are productive of most cases of this disease, the evil effects of which can be guarded against by proper precautionary measures, such as the use of warm clothing and careful protection of the feet and lower extremities from the effects of humidity and cold.

While on this part of my subject I would make an appeal to parents and guardians in behalf of little girls and misses. Almost one-half of this part of our population are suffering from enlarged tonsils (better known as quinsy), the result of which in most cases is cough from irritation of the throat, imperfect respiration, difficulty in swallowing, an impaired voice, and almost entire destruction of the vocal powers, as exhibited in that most useful and charming of all acquirements in young ladies,—the ability to sing well and effectively. The disease is but rarely seen in men and boys, compared with the number suffering of the opposite sex. The cause can be no other than *low-necked, short-sleeved dresses and thin shoes*. The preventives are within the reach of all.

There is, perhaps, no class of diseases like those of the lungs that affords so wide a field for the operation of charlatans and mountebanks in the profession of medicine. It is too often the case that some traveling lecturer and vender of specifics for consumption, after heralding his advent into our towns and villages by flaming posters, equaled only by circus and Ethiopian minstrel announcements, promising to work miracles upon diseased humanity, and from his itinerant character, perfectly irresponsible, reaps a golden harvest from those who are not able to be "fleeced" by exorbitant charges, such as would utterly destroy the reputation and business of any permanently located physician. And it is often the case, those who are thus deceived and cajoled by hopes raised only to be blasted, return to their family physician, soliciting aid and comfort, in a worse condition than before they turned their backs upon professional friends who have a permanent abiding place and a character to sustain, to run after professional new lights.

Nine times out of ten remedies taken by inhalation are a positive injury to the consumptive, from irritation produced by direct contact with the delicate and sensitive linings of the air passages of the lungs, though some agents, properly and judiciously used in this manner, may be beneficial.

Much of the scrofulous and consumptive diathesis in our native population is the result of our habits in diet, dress, want of hygienic cleanliness, and the construction of our houses, in relation to the laws of respiration. There is, perhaps, no article of diet so universal in use that contributes so much to produce and develop scrofulous diseases in its protean forms as pork. So common is it found constituting one of the staples of the American table, among all classes, that pork-eating may be said to constitute a national trait of character. That swine are afflicted with scrofula and tubercles has been demonstrated time and time again, and much of the scrofula witnessed by physicians is attributable to this

universal pork-eating. The indigestibility of swine flesh is a well established fact, and the hog should be raised in a great measure for the fat and oil furnished by him. Beef, mutton and poultry of a good quality are much superior to pork as articles of diet, and if more generally used would add greatly to the health of the masses. It is unquestionably the duty of every physician to discourage so general a use of pork among those to whom he sustains the relation of medical adviser. Our native German and English citizens are striking illustrations of the truth of this position, with reference to the effects of large indulgence in swine's flesh. They use but little pork diet compared with the quantity used by Americans. Consumption is rarely seen in either of the two classes named, and this is no doubt attributable to their comparative abstinence from pork. This, conjoined to the national trait of character in the German, giving vigorous exercise to the lungs and auxiliary organs in vocal music, in which the English indulge to a certain extent; also, add to this the universal habit of the two classes mentioned of warm and substantial clothing, especially for the feet and lower extremities, and we are again more than fortified in our position.

A large majority of cases of pulmonary consumption are first developed by indigestion (dyspepsia), induced by repeated violation of the physiological laws of digestion. The use of large quantities of stimulating food of any kind will produce derangement of the functions of digestion. Perhaps no one popular custom contributes so much to produce indigestion and its sequel, disease of the lungs, as that of meeting together socially, in crowded apartments, and at very late hours of the night, indulging freely in eating nearly every kind of indigestible food, most generally accompanied by large draughts of strong hot coffee and tea, and, immediately after, dispersing to their homes to spend the remainder of the night in fruitless efforts to sleep, and to leave their beds the ensuing morning with aching heads, flushed countenances, nausea of the stomach, and almost entire loathing of nutritious food. This absurd practice should receive the unqualified condemnation of every right-thinking man and woman.

The pleasures of the appetite are legitimate pleasures, but our Creator did not implant the sense of taste in mankind to ruin the beautiful structure of the body, or impair the noble faculties of the soul. Like all other appetites, that for food may be abused. If its proper condition be violated, loss of power, premature decay and untimely death are inevitable. The life of the offender is deprived of its own enjoyment and of its power of being useful to others.

Another habit of our people which contributes largely to develop disease of the lungs, is the small and almost air-tight sleeping apartments so generally used, the temperature of which, during hours of sleep, in cold weather, is often raised to summer heat by means of air-tight stoves. The deleterious effect of all this upon



the lungs and general system must be obvious to every thinking mind. A full supply of oxygen from the air we breathe is necessary to sustain life, which after being inhaled by the lungs, is converted into carbonic acid, one of the most destructive agents to animal life. To effect this change the oxygen must unite with certain portions of the blood, thus producing a species of combustion. The blood contains two combustible materials, carbon and hydrogen. By the union of these with oxygen a great amount of heat will be evolved, while the product of this combustion will be carbonic acid and water, the same that results from the combustion of wood in your grate, or a candle on your table. Life is really a process of combustion, and the smoke evolved, or in other words, the carbonic acid and water, are continually passing off through the lungs and skin. Thus, we see that the human machine is furnished with facilities for preserving a comfortable temperature, in a great measure, independent of artificial heat; but, in order to do this, it must have an abundant supply of oxygen, the agent of combustion. In small, tight sleeping apartments, how is it possible the requisite supply of oxygen can be obtained, when there is not sufficient to keep up a healthy action of the lungs of the sleeping inmates for a few hours, much less a whole night? Disease of the lungs must be induced, to a greater or less extent, when there is nothing for their sustentation but an atmosphere almost deprived of the life-giving principle of oxygen, and loaded with poisonous carbonic acid and unhealthy exhalations from the bodies of the sleeping occupants.

Every sleeping apartment should be large, or at least well ventilated and supplied with fresh air, and no artificial heat, especially by means of stoves, as the body, for reasons already set forth, will generate its own warmth if supplied with a sufficiency of material for combustion to the lungs, through a healthy animation and a free supply of the agent essential to the process. Another duty that should be enjoined by physicians upon those who are accustomed to look to them for advice respecting health, especially the preservation of a healthy condition of the lungs, is the use of cold-water bathing not the "plunge" bath, the "sitz" bath, the "shower" bath, or the "wet-sheet" pack, but the simple application of water to the entire surface of the body by means of a sponge or towel, followed by brisk friction for the purpose of cleaning and preserving a healthy action of the skin. Every person should know the close alliance that exists between the functions of the skin and air passages of the lungs, that a healthy performance of one aids materially the healthy performance of the other. Bathing should be resorted to in the manner indicated two or three times a week in cold weather, and much oftener in warm or temperate weather. The best time to bathe is in the morning. Under no circumstances should the water be applied so freely, or so cold, as to produce a disagreeable shock to the system, by which the equilibrium of the circulation may be disturbed, and thereby induce



diseased action, but always at such a temperature as to be followed by pleasurable sensations of warmth. Bathing should never be resorted to until sufficient vital heat is supplied by fire or exercise to resist and overcome the slight shock resulting from the application of water. We should begin the sponge bath in a guarded manner. Persons of delicate constitutions should use water of the temperature of the body only, and in a warm apartment. Let there be sufficient exercise before and after the bath to maintain the general glow. In this way bathing may be enjoyed, not as a physiological duty, but as a refreshing luxury. By pursuing this course we can gradually lower the temperature of the water to any degree desired. When we have thus far succeeded, we have overcome our morbid sensibility, increased our vital forces, and given such a tone to the constitution as will protect us from colds and other agencies so prolific of lung diseases. The bath, thus used, I believe entitled to much consideration, not as a curative agent, but as a preventive of disease, especially diseases of the lungs.

To conclude, the valley of the St. Joseph, as also the West generally, from the observations of medical men and others, is, beyond doubt becoming from year to year more healthy. The exemption of our entire population from diseases of all kinds the past two or three years has been most remarkable. The universal good health which prevailed during the year 1856 is mainly attributable to the uniform dryness of the seasons of that year. The health enjoyed through the year 1857 being fully equal to the preceding year, is the result of the opposite,—uniformity in the periods of rain. Whether the position that an excited state of the public mind (politically or from other causes) conduces to health, as has been stated, is correct or not, can only be determined by statistics of the past and careful observations of the future. The year 1857 being almost entirely free from any general public excitement, and the year 1832, the great cholera year, and noted in the annals of our country for the tempest of political excitement that swept over the whole Union, would seem to controvert the truth of that position.

Whenever our State Legislature can be induced to pass such registration laws and other enactments necessary, by which a fair and just comparison can be instituted between the West and the Atlantic States in respect to health, the preponderance will be found to be largely in favor of the former as the most healthy locality, especially that portion embraced within our beautiful valley and its surroundings.

## CHAPTER VI.

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY IN THE WAR.—RESPONSE TO THE CALL.—REMEMBER BUENA VISTA.—NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.—FIFTEENTH.—TWENTY-NINTH.—FORTY-EIGHTH.—SEVENTY-THIRD.—EIGHTY-SEVENTH.—ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY-EIGHTH.—ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-FIFTH.—TWELFTH CAVALRY.—TWENTY-FIRST BATTERY.—ROLL OF HONOR.—DECORATION DAY.

### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY IN THE WAR.

In 1860, when some of the Southern leaders threatened a dissolution of the Union in the event of the election of Abraham Lincoln to the Presidency, there were very few men in the North who believed they were in earnest. In consequence of the division in the Democratic party, the election of Lincoln was an easy matter. In pursuance of their threat, one after another of the Southern States to the number of twelve passed acts of secession, and organized an independent government under the name of the "Confederate States of America."

Abraham Lincoln took the oath of office as President of the United States on the 4th of March, 1861, and immediately took steps to strengthen the Government. Already the rebels were making preparations for the capture of Fort Sumter, then occupied by the gallant Major Anderson and a handful of men. On the 12th day of April, after first demanding its surrender, the rebels opened fire upon the fort. The first shot sent an electric thrill through every loyal heart in the North, and immediately the cry went up for vengeance. The news of the fall of Sumter was received on Sunday morning, April 14. On that day the loyal people of the United States abandoned the field of argument and ceased to discuss measures and plans for the peaceable restoration of the national authority in the revolted States, and with singular unanimity and determination accepted the issue of war as the only means left to save and perpetuate the National existence and the priceless liberties so long enjoyed.

On the morning of the 15th the telegraph bore the following message from Governor Morton to President Lincoln at Washington:

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT OF INDIANA,  
INDIANAPOLIS, April 15, 1861.

*To ABRAHAM LINCOLN, President of the United States:*

On behalf of the State of Indiana I tender to you, for the defense of the Nation, and to uphold the authority of the Government, *ten thousand men.*

The same day the President issued his proclamation calling for the militia of the several States of the Union, to the number of seventy-five thousand, in order to suppress the Rebellion and cause the laws to be duly executed. The quota of Indiana was subsequently fixed by the Secretary of War at six regiments of infantry, or riflemen, comprising, in officers and men, 4,683, to serve for a period of three months unless sooner discharged. Instructions were issued in general orders by the Adjutant-General of the State, for the formation of companies; the several military departments were speedily organized for business, and all available measures taken to fill the quota with the least possible delay. In the meantime, every class of the community manifested the wildest enthusiasm and most intense excitement. Public meetings to facilitate the formation of companies, and to give expression to the sentiments of the people touching their duty in the pending crisis, were held in every city, town and neighborhood, and an ardent and unquenchable military spirit was at once aroused that bid fair to embrace in its sweep every able-bodied man in the State. The day after the call was made five hundred men were in camp, and the Governor, apprehensive (as was the whole country at the time) that an effort would be made by the rebels to take possession of the Federal capital, proposed to send forward half a regiment if required, although unable to furnish the necessary arms and equipments. Receiving no reply to this offer from the War Department, it was renewed the day following, and the number increased to one thousand men. By the 19th—three days after the call—there were 2,400 men in camp, and arrivals continued by every train. So rapidly did volunteering proceed, in less than seven days more than 12,000 men, or nearly three times the quota required, had been tendered. Contests to secure the acceptance of companies were earnest and frequent. The question was not "Who will go?" but, "Who will be allowed to go?" In many cases companies came forward without orders, or rather in defiance of orders, in the hope that they could be received, or that a second call would at once be made, and frequently their enlistment rolls contained twice, and even thrice, the number of names required. Hundreds who were unable to get into companies at home, came singly and in squads to the general rendezvous on their own responsibility, and, by combining with others in like condition, and with fragments of companies having a surplus, formed new companies and joined in the clamor for acceptance. The response was as gratifying as it was universal, and left no doubt as to the entire and lasting devotion of Indiana to the fortunes of the Union. Like the sun-light the "war fever" permeated every locality. The "Old Flag" at once became sacred and was proudly displayed in every breeze from the highest peaks of churches, school-houses and private dwellings. The presentation of a stand of National colors by patriotic ladies to each company was rarely omitted, and, wherever practicable, brass bands were provided to escort them to the general camp.

The excitement in South Bend, Mishawaka, and, in fact, all parts of the county was intense. Says a local writer: "South Carolina has courted the glory of lighting the torch of civil war. Forbearance on the part of the Government almost to the extreme of humiliation, has been met with arrogance and insult; until, unable to force the United States into any act of bloodshed and violence which they could make a pretext for their act, they have most wickedly precipitated the Republic into war. They have opened the fire of their murderous batteries upon the flag which Washington loved, and which Jackson, Scott and Taylor illuminated with so many glorious triumphs—a parricidal act as infamous as the ruffian who aims a death-blow at the mother who has borne and nurtured him. They have trampled the Constitution and the laws which they have sworn to support, under their feet, and they avow their purpose to overthrow the Government which they can no longer rule, by the force and power of arms. But the awakened and bounding patriotism of the American people proves that they have reckoned without their host. Henceforth it is evident that all party divisions are to be forgotten. The question whether our Government has a right to exist towers above all others. The only issue is to be between patriots and traitors; and all men must range themselves under the reptile flag of disunion, or the resplendent stars and stripes, every thread of which has been consecrated by the blood of heroes who lived and died under its folds. There can be no neutrals in this struggle. He who is not for the American Union, American Constitution and the American Flag, against treason and rebellion, against perfidy and revolution, against the architects of ruin and the inaugurators of civil war, are in sympathy with the traitors, and will be known as the Cow-Boys of 1861, who, like the Cow-Boys of the Revolution, will be regarded in history as lower than the enemies whom they aided and abetted. While, with all loyal men, the motto, 'God and our country,' will unite them as with one heart and soul, for the stern duties of the impending contest."

On Monday night, April 15, 1861, on a few hours' notice, the court house at South Bend was crowded with a mass of voters, irrespective of party, who hailed this opportunity of showing their determination to stand by the Government, the Union and the Constitution. John A. Henricks, president. A. E. Drapier, editor of the *Forum*, and Judge Robertson, were made vice-presidents; E. E. Ames, E. R. Farnum and W. H. Drapier, secretaries. Boyne's Cornet Band played the soul-stirring National airs which our fathers loved so well. Speeches were made eliciting the heartiest applause, by Messrs. Henricks, Colfax, Drapier, Miller, George, Anderson, Lynch and Revs. Reed and Moore. A Volunteer Aid Association was organized to equip the company, to be formed at once, and to assist in the support of their families while they were absent, and a committee to solicit subscriptions.

At Mishawaka, the same night, a large and enthusiastic meeting was held, presided over by George Milburn. Patriotic speeches were made by Milburn, Niles, Merrifield, Cowles, Hurlbut, Butterworth, Thomas, Fuller, Judson and Minzie.

A second meeting was held at South Bend on Friday evening, April 19, at which the following committees were appointed to solicit and collect subscriptions to aid in forming and equipping volunteer companies, and to provide for the families of such volunteers as may need assistance:

*Green Township*.—Jackson Green, Daniel Green, Thomas L. Holloway.

*Clay*.—T. P. Bulla, G. E. Benton, Jacob Eaton.

*German*.—J. F. Ullery, Reuben Dunn, A. J. Hatfield.

*Olive*.—J. H. Service, T. J. Garoutte, John Reynolds.

*Warren*.—J. E. Mikesell, Goble Brown, William Crann.

*Liberty*.—G. H. Loring, C. W. M. Stevens, Samuel Loring.

*Union*.—John Jackson, John Moon, C. J. Turner.

*Centre*.—Edwin Pickett, D. R. Leeper, John Rush.

The foregoing committees were instructed to report their proceedings to the Disbursing Committee of Portage township, consisting of the following named persons: Isaac Ford, E. V. Clark, Joseph H. Massey, S. L. Cottrell, J. T. Lindsey, J. W. Chess and Caspar Rochstroch.

On Monday, April 23, a meeting was held at the court-house, presided over by Norman Eddy, which resolved to forthwith form a military organization composed of citizens over the age of forty-five years, to arm themselves, and be drilled and held in readiness for duty. In a few minutes upward of 80 names were obtained to the pledge. The company at once elected their officers, as follows: S. L. Cottrell, Captain; Jacob Hardman, First Lieutenant; E. C. Johnson, Second Lieutenant; A. A. Webster, Third Lieutenant. The subordinate officers were then appointed. In the afternoon the company paraded for drill, and marched to the depot, where they saluted the Elkhart Volunteers, who were on the train bound to Indianapolis. This movement was headed by the best men in South Bend, and such was the ardor and enthusiasm manifested, that a number of the most venerable citizens, those who served in the war of 1812 and the various Indian wars, pressed forward with eagerness to join the ranks and tender their services again to their country.

The first company was soon raised in response to the call of the President and Governor, and left South Bend for the rendezvous at Indianapolis on Friday, April 19, 1861, being the first volunteer company from Northern Indiana to take up its line of march. An immense crowd assembled at the depot, and eloquent and patriotic speeches were made by Rev. J. C. Reed and Schnyler Colfax. Many were the tears shed by fond mothers and loving wives as they bid farewell to the loved ones whom they might never press to their

hearts again. But there was not one of all that number who would have had any one of the departing boys turn back.

For four long years the organization of new companies and enlistment of men for old companies, whose ranks had been decimated by disease and rebel bullets, was carried on. Gray-headed men who had almost reached three-score years and ten, and boys not yet out of their teens, went to the camp, and through the most urgent solicitation, were accepted and sworn into the service. Neither age nor youth kept them back, and when rejected from either cause, or from physical inability, would insist on being received, believing themselves as capable of doing a soldier's duty as thousands who had already gone. More than two thousand of as brave men as ever handled a musket or drew a sword went out from this county, many, very many, never to return again. If one goes to the battle-fields of the South, he will see how these fell at Donelson, Shiloh, Mission Ridge, Lookout Mountain, Chattanooga, Chickamanga, Atlanta, Vicksburg, and other places, those who were the pride of fond fathers, loving mothers, and unselfish, devoted wives. He will see them dropping off, one by one, and often, without coffin or burial shroud, thrown into the cold ground, there to await the resurrection morn, and the re-union upon the other side of the River of Death. In many a home throughout the county will be found the vacant chair, and where you will see the mournful look of those ever watching for one that cometh not. Upon the streets, day by day, will be met those wearing sleeveless garments, or walking in a way that tells too plainly the sound of the footfall is not made by flesh and blood. Inquire the reason and it will be learned that while charging the enemies' lines at Vicksburg, Shiloh, or elsewhere, a cannon ball deprived them of a limb. But no word of complaint is heard, the only regret expressed being that it was not possible to do more for their country.

The first company, as already stated, to go from this county to the tented field left South Bend in less than one week after the surrender of Fort Sumter. It became part of the 9th Regiment Indiana Volunteers, the muster roll of which will be found elsewhere in this work, accompanied by a historical sketch of the regiment. Among other regiments formed in part of St. Joseph county men were the 15th, 29th, 35th, 48th, 73d, 87th, 99th, 128th, 138th and 155th Infantry, 4th and 12th Cavalry and 21st Battery, historical sketches of which are given where a full company is represented from the county. In the perusal of these sketches it will be seen that one and all bore an honorable part. The honor of Indiana was felt to be at stake by these brave men. The stigma cast upon the State by reason of the course of one of its regiments at the battle of Buena Vista was to be wiped out in blood. In one of the battles, a Captain in the 10th Indiana Regiment placed himself at the head of his company and said, "Remember Buena Vista, boys. There's a stain upon our battle-shield that must be wiped out to-day." This incident was taken as a theme for a poem

by Lieutenant A. B. Miller, of the 21st Battery, which reads as follows:

Remember Buena Vista!  
 Aye, Captain, that we will;  
 The world shall know there's brave men left  
 In Indiana still.  
 The world shall know there's willing hearts,  
 And willing hands also,  
 To wipe from off our battle-shield  
 The stain of Mexico.

Remember Buena Vista!  
 Yes, Captain, lead us on,  
 Into the thickest of the fight:  
 We'll show what can be done.  
 Although the foemen double us,  
 Yet we will let them know  
 That Hoosier boys have not forgot  
 The stain of Mexico.

We were thinking of it, Captain  
 (It was only yesterday),  
 That a little skirmish now and then  
 Would not wash that stain away;  
 But there must be a victory,  
 Glorious and grand, you know,  
 To wash from off our battle-shield  
 The stain of Mexico.

Now, Captain, lead us on,  
 And see what manly stuff  
 There is in our rough natures—  
 We're Hoosiers, that's enough.  
 We're Hoosiers, that's enough for us,  
 As all the world will know;  
 When they see how tiger-like we fight,  
 They'll not think of Mexico.

\* \* \* \* \*

Well, the fight is over, Captain,  
 And we have not fought in vain;  
 Many a rebel over there  
 Will not see home again.  
 My "Enfield" did her duty well,  
 Laid many a foeman low,  
 For I had not forgotten  
 The stain of Mexico.

I drew the bead on many forms  
 That I had known of old;  
 And saw them drop down in their tracks  
 All bloody, stark and cold.  
 It brought the tears into my eyes  
 To see them falling so,  
 But somehow I could not forget  
 The stain of Mexico.

And, Captain, when you led us up  
 Before the rebel rank,  
 Each soldier singled out his man  
 And fired his shot, point-blank.  
 The rebels fell beneath our fire,  
 In a way that wasn't slow;  
 With rebel blood we washed away  
 That stain of Mexico.

There are many hearts down yonder,  
 In sunny Southern homes,  
 Will mourn the loss of loved ones,  
 With bitter tears and groans.  
 But it'll be the same up North,  
 For here lies friend as well as foe.  
 Thank God! we've washed away at last  
 That stain of Mexico.

While the brave boys in the field were doing their whole duty, the patriotic men and women at home were not idle. Each and every one not only felt it a duty, but a blessed privilege, to render all the aid in their power to the families of the soldiers. During the four years of the war but little actual suffering was experienced by any at home on account of the absence of their natural protectors, who were serving their country. Fairs and festivals were held for the purpose of obtaining sanitary supplies for those in the field, and Soldiers' Aid Societies were continually investigating and relieving the wants of the needy at home.

#### NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

The first regiment in which St. Joseph county was represented was the Ninth Indiana Volunteers, the first enlistment being under the three months' call, and the second for three years, or during the war. The following is the original muster roll of Co. I, three months' men:

Andrew Anderson, jr., Captain.	Brown, Alexis	Miller, David B.
Henry Loring, jr., First Lieutenant.	Bunker, Miles	Miller, Jesse
Henry J. Blowney, Sec- ond Lieutenant.	Carl, John	Miller, William H. H.
<i>Sergeants.</i>	Carpenter, Jay S.	Myers, John C.
Chapin, Edward P.	Casad, Martin V. B.	Niles, George F.
Doolittle, James	Childs, Frank W.	Nogle, John
Pettit, Isaac M.	Cushaw, William	Parks, Seth B.
Wheeler, John Q.	Dabuff, Amos	Pierson, Lorenzo
<i>Corporals.</i>	Dealman, Jacob	Peterman, Lewis C.
Pettit, Willis H.	Dewey, Charles A.	Price, Charles W.
Hollinshead, George W.	Duffield, John W.	Replugle, Andrew L.
Jenkins, James H. M.	Fitch, Horace B.	Reynolds, Amos
Kreighbaum, Nathan	Gibson, Absalom	Sandilands, James
<i>Musicians.</i>	Gillman, William B.	Shank, Daniel L.
Badger, Henry L.	Glassman, Peter	Shepley, Samuel
Morrow, Charles S.	Hadley, Charles	Sherman, Francis M.
<i>Privates.</i>	Halsted, Riley	Shoup, Peter D.
Adams, Andrew	Ham, Edwin	Smyser, Josiah F.
Ames, Andrew J.	Haupris, Philip	Stilson, Calvin R.
Anderson, James	Huber, Uriah	Sweet, James H.
Auten, John	Hunter, Orin C.	Sweeney, George C.
Beglen, John A.	Kelley, Charles G.	Tarbell, William L.
Bowes William	Korp, Andrew	Taylor, John
Breeze, William	Lind, George W.	Utter, George
Breeze, Henry	Martin, Warren	Wade, Alfred B.
	Matthews, Sanford B.	Whitten, William
	McCarthy, Joseph F.	Whitman, Martin J.
	Merrifield, William M.	Young, Robert

The Ninth Regiment was organized and mustered into service, for three months, at Indianapolis, on the 25th of April, 1861, with



Robert H. Milroy as Colonel. This regiment was the first that left the State for Western Virginia, departing from Indianapolis on the 29th of May and arriving at Grafton on the 1st of June. From thence it marched toward Philippi, in the column commanded by Colonel Kelley, and took part in the surprise of the rebel camp at that place on the morning of the 3d of June. Returning to Grafton, the Ninth was assigned to Gen. Morris's brigade and participated in all the marches and skirmishes of that command during its brief campaign, and in the engagements at Laurel Hill and Carrick's Ford. The regiment returned home in the latter part of July, and was finally discharged at Indianapolis soon after.

Returning home, steps were at once taken for its re-organization for the three years' service. A company was formed in this county principally from among those who had seen service. The following is the roster of officers and men as accepted and sworn into service:

James Houghton, Captain.	Cottrell, Peter	Pitman, Warren C.
Isaac M. Pettit, First Lieutenant.	Crook, Clark B.	Powers, Moses
William Merrifield, Second Lieutenant.	Dalhuff, Amos	Pressey, Charles O.
<i>Sergeants.</i>	Dawley, Darius	Reid, Samuel H. J.
Nutt, James	Dressler, Jonas C.	Reed, Stephen
Parks, Seth B.	Ellsworth, Norman E.	Rogers, Joseph
Childs, Frank W.	Giles, William W.	Roper, Wallace W.
Holliday, Lewis A.	Gilman, Francis M.	Rosebaugh, George W.
Criswell, William H.	Gilman, William B.	Shearer, Harrison
<i>Corporals.</i>	Gordon, Sylvester	Sherman, Ira
Oliver, James G.	Ham, Emmett	Slain, Thomas
Sherman, Francis M.	Hardy, Charles E.	Slough, David
Miller, Jesse	Harrington, William E.	Snure, Levi P.
Pettit, Sylvester	Heckerthom, William	Sternburgh, Peter
Boyd, Robert F.	Heiss, David G.	Stuart, Almon
Stebbins, Sherman B.	Heiss, Samuel	Swintz, Henry
Sherman, William L.	Holliday, John N.	Taber, Leonard H.
Mailer, John	Halsted, Riley	Ungry, Daniel B.
<i>Musicians.</i>	Hunter, Oren C.	Vanoverback, August
Badger, George I.	Jennings, Phineas E.	Willard, Frank
Hosper, Isaac	Knowlton, John P.	Wood, Joseph S.
<i>Wagoner.</i>	Kuney, Henry M.	Worle, John
Calwell, William	Lescohier, Charles	<i>Recruits.</i>
<i>Privates.</i>	Lescohier, Frederick	Andrews, Frank M.
Anderson, Benjamin	Marsh, James T.	Baugh, Henry
Avery, William F.	Metzger, John A.	Bonney, Benjamin
Beck, Hanson	Michael, Solomon	Crampton, Taylor
Bliss, Christopher	Mosher, Melville	Ham, Edwin
Bonney, William	Newman, Eli O.	Kreiner, Henry O.
Brown, Thomas	Nodurft, John H.	Long, John A.
Brower, Norman V.	Norwood, David L.	Long, Isaac M.
Buck, Henry H.	Packard, Leverene	Reynolds, Amos
Clark, Ellis	Parks, Horace	Slaughter, Jacob
Clemments, James	Pettit, William	Tober, Winfield S.
Copper, Isaiah	Perry, Henry	Taber, Niles
	Pickett, Selah	<i>Substitute.</i>
	Pickett, Joseph	Dressler, Josiah F.
	Pidge, Charles B.	

The Ninth Regiment was mustered into the United States service at La Porte Sept. 5, 1861, for three years, or during the war. Soon after it was moved, in command of Colonel Robert H. Milroy,

to Western Virginia, proceeding by rail to Webster, where it disembarked and marched to Elkwater valley, and from thence to Cheat Mountain Summit, where winter quarters were built, the regiment remaining there until the 9th of January, 1862. During this time the regiment participated in the battles of Green Brier, Oct. 3, and of Allegheny on the 13th of December, 1861. It then marched to Fetterman, Virginia, where it remained until the 19th of February, when it was transferred to General Buell's army, being transported by rail to Cincinnati, and from thence by steamer to Nashville. Here it was assigned to General Nelson's division, and marched on the 29th of March, to the Tennessee river, reaching there in time to participate in the second day's engagement at Shiloh. From there it marched to Corinth, Mississippi, and after the evacuation pursued the rebels to Boonville. It then marched to Nashville, by way of Athens, Alabama, and Franklin and Murfreesboro, Tennessee. From thence it moved to Bowling Green, Kentucky, and back again to Nashville. From the latter place the Ninth marched to Louisville, Kentucky, and from there, in the pursuit of Bragg, through Bardstown, Perryville, Danville, Camp Dick Robinson, Crab Orchard and London, to the Wild Cat Mountains, and returned to Nashville, through Crab Orchard, Somerset, Columbia and Glasgow. During this march the regiment was engaged in the battles of Perryville, Danville and Wild Cat mountain. The Ninth then marched to Murfreesboro, where it participated in the battle of Stone River, December 31, 1862, and Jan. 1 and 2, 1863; after which it marched across the Cumberland mountains and the Tennessee river to Chattanooga. On the 19th and 20th of September, it was engaged in the battle of Chickamunga. After its return to Chattanooga it participated in the battles of Lookout Mountain, November 24th, and Mission Ridge on the 25th of November, after which it marched over the Cumberland mountains to Bridgeport, Alabama, and from there to Whiteside, Tennessee. At the latter place the Ninth re-enlisted as a veteran organization, on Dec. 12, 1863. The regiment returned to the State on veteran furlough, and on the 21st of February, 1864, left Valparaiso, Indiana, for the front, passing through Indianapolis, Madison, Louisville, Nashville and Chattanooga to Cleveland, Tennessee. In the spring of 1864 the Atlanta campaign was commenced, the Ninth participating in all the marches of that campaign, through Ringold, Dalton, Resaca, Kingston, Calhoun, Cassville, around the Alatoona mountains, through Ackworth, Big Shanty, Marietta, the investment of Atlanta, in the flank movement around Atlanta, through Jonesboro and Lovejoy, and back again to Atlanta, taking part in the skirmishing on the route, and in the engagements at Taylor's Ridge, Buzzard's Roost, Dalton, Resaca, Cassville, Dallas. New Hope Church, Kenesaw mountain, Marietta, Peach Tree creek, Atlanta, Jonesboro and Lovejoy. It then participated in the retrograde movement in the pursuit of Hood's army, to Dalton, and thence through Summerville, Georgia, Galesville,

Bridgeport, Stevenson and Huntsville to Athens, Alabama. From thence it marched to Pulaski, Tennessee, arriving there November, 1864. Falling back before Hood's advance, on the 26th of November, it was engaged in the fight at Columbia, in the heavy skirmishing that followed on the route to Franklin, and in the severe engagement at that place. Dec. 1 the Ninth entered Nashville, and Dec. 15, participated in the battle of Nashville; after which it set out with the army in pursuit of Hood's retreating rebels, following them to Huntsville, Alabama, when the pursuit was abandoned. It remained at the latter place from Jan. 16 to March 13, 1865, when it marched into East Tennessee beyond Bull's Gap, and back again, reaching Nashville on the 25th of May. Soon after it was transferred to the vicinity of New Orleans, and afterward to Texas, where it remained as part of General Sheridan's army of occupation until September, 1865, when it was mustered out of service and returned to Indiana.

The following promotions were made during the war: Isaac M. Pettit, from First Lieutenant to Captain; James Nutt, from Orderly Sergeant to First Lieutenant, then Captain; William H. Criswell, from Sergeant to Second, then First Lieutenant; Seth B. Parks, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant; Frank W. Childs, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant.

Co. I, of this regiment, had three officers killed in battle and one died of wounds received in battle; of the privates, three were killed in battle, and fifteen died of wounds received, or from disease.

#### FIFTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

The Fifteenth Regiment was originally organized as one of the six regiments of State troops, at La Fayette, in May, 1861, and was re-organized and mustered into the United States service for three years, at the same place, June 14, 1861, with George D. Wagner as Colonel. St. Joseph county was represented by Co. B, in this regiment, and by one member in Co. A. The following are the names of officers and enlisted men from this county:

<i>Adjutant.</i>	Whitman, Scott	Bertrand, Alexander
John E. George,	Miliken, Noyes	Bertrand, Victor
Edwin Nicar.	Metcalf, Henry H.	Brick, Charles
<i>Captain.</i>	Kimble, Barclay	Briggs, Luther
Alexander Fowler.	Halligan, Patrick	Bucher, George
<i>Lieutenants.</i>	Pursell, Edwin	Burke, Patrick
John H. Gardner,	<i>Musicians.</i>	Clarke, Pierce T.
John E. George.	Johnson, Henry	Clogher, Peter A.
<i>Sergeants.</i>	Curtis, John C.	Castelle, Bernard
Nicar, Edwin	<i>Wagoner.</i>	Cox, Lemuel
Haller, Joseph	Crakes, George	Cooper, Henry
Owens, John	<i>Privates.</i>	Dahuff, Nathan
Weed, William H.	Anderson, William S.	Dagraff, Frank
Pegg, William A.	Baker, John F.	Devoy, Francis
<i>Corporals.</i>	Baker, Nelson C.	Doyle, William E.
Turnock, Edwin	Barnhart, Frederick	Finch, Walter L.
Curtis, Samuel F.	Bedker, Frederick	Fuller, Cornelius
		Gardner, James M.

Garaghty, John  
 Goodin, Daniel A.  
 Guy, Thomas  
 Hague, John M.  
 Ham, Thomas  
 Hamilton, James M.  
 Harris, Edmund  
 Hargis, John  
 Harris, Martin V.  
 Hennessey, Michael  
 Higgins, James  
 Hight, William  
 Hill, William  
 Hillebran, Oliver H.  
 Hogle, William H. H.  
 Holland, William A.  
 Hoover, James H.  
 Huston, Harrison  
 Huntsinger, Edwin  
 Keck, Alfred A.  
 Knapp, Charles M.  
 Lendenberger, Michael  
 Logan, Robert L.

Lucia, Sheffield  
 Macy, Abijah  
 McDonald, Michael  
 Markel, Benjamin F.  
 Martin, Horace  
 Martin, Jacob  
 Melvin, William T.  
 Miller, Ludwig  
 Norman, James  
 Parks, John  
 Peck, Abel R.  
 Pegg, Charles B.  
 Perrault, Edward  
 Pierce, Thomas V.  
 Replogle, William  
 Rockwell, Evi  
 Rhoads, Gilbert  
 Ruley, Salathiel  
 Schutt, Joseph  
 Shearer, Henry  
 Smith, Ferdinand  
 Swaney, John  
 Sweeney, James

Telford, Jacob  
 Tinsley, Francis I.  
 Trueblood, Adolphus  
 Trueblood, Hamarchs  
 Trueblood, William  
 Tutt, John F.  
 Tutt, Robert E.  
 Van Nest, John  
 Van Riper, James  
 Varney, William C.  
 Watkins, William  
 White, George  
 Zimmerman, John B.

*Recruits.*

Clark, Joseph M.  
 Corcoran, Anthony  
 Hague, John  
 Huey, Melvin G.  
 Martindale, Henry W.  
 Munger, Erastus  
 Schenck, Daniel C.  
 Thomas, William H.

Company B lost in killed six men, while twelve died from disease or of wounds received in battle. Capt. Alexander Fowler was promoted Major Oct. 21, 1861, and resigned Oct. 28, 1862, for promotion to Colonel of 99th Regiment. John E. George was promoted Captain Co. B, and resigned May 21, 1864. Edwin Nicar was promoted from a Sergeant to Second Lieutenant of Co. B, and then First Lieutenant Co. A. Joseph Haller was promoted Second Lieutenant Dec. 1861, and First Lieutenant July 24, 1862, and mustered out at expiration of term. Edwin Turnock was commissioned Second Lieutenant July 24, 1862, and Captain, May 22, 1864.

Soon after the organization of the Fifteenth Regiment, it moved to Indianapolis, which place it left on the first of July, 1861, for Western Virginia, stopping at Cincinnati until the 4th of July. Proceeding by rail to Clarksburg, it marched from thence to Rich Mountain, where it arrived on the 11th, while the battle was in progress, and next day formed part of the pursuing force, assisting in the capture of many prisoners. The regiment was afterward stationed at Elkwater valley, where it remained until Nov. 19, taking an active part in the operations of General Reynolds that season, among which were the repulse of General Lee and battle of Green Brier. The Fifteenth left Huttonsville Nov. 19, and reported to General Buell at Louisville, the last of the same month. It took an active part in the campaign under General Buell, arriving at Shiloh during the battle, in time to render excellent service; was constantly on duty during the siege of Corinth, and took part in the closing scenes of the battle of Perryville. In the pursuit of Bragg toward Cumberland Gap, the duty was arduous, forced marches and skirmishes being the daily routine for some time. In November, 1862, in connection with other troops, the regiment marched to Nashville, where the army of the Cumberland was re-organized under General Rosecrans. Col. Wagner was appointed

a Brigadier General Nov. 29, and Lieutenant Colonel Gustavus A. Wood was commissioned his successor. In the march toward Murfreesboro it participated, and in the battle of Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862, and January 1st and 2d, 1863, it bore a conspicuous part, losing 197 officers and men killed and wounded, out of 440 engaged. After this the regiment remained at Murfreesboro until June 24, taking part in the various expeditions sent out from that place. It then marched to Tullahoma, where, as part of Crittenden's corps, it aided in turning the rebel position on the left, compelling the evacuation of Tullahoma. The regiment then remained in camp at Pelham, Tennessee, until Aug. 17, when the army advanced on Chattanooga, General Wagner's brigade, of which the Fifteenth was a portion, being the first to enter Chattanooga. Here the regiment performed post duty from Sept. 9 until shortly before the battle of Mission Ridge, in which engagement it participated, suffering heavily. Its loss was 202 out of 334 engaged, being over sixty per cent. The day after the battle it marched with other troops to the relief of General Burnside, at Knoxville, marching the whole distance—over 100 miles—in 60 days; a great many of the men without shoes, and all on very short rations. The regiment remained in the vicinity of Knoxville, on very severe duty, without baggage or tents, and with very little to eat, until February, 1864, when it was ordered to Chattanooga to do garrison duty. While there a portion of the regiment enlisted, Feb. 15, 1864. It remained at that place, under General Steadman, until June 16, 1864, when, in obedience to orders from General Thomas, it left for Indianapolis, to be mustered out of the service, its time having expired on the 14th of June. A detachment of veterans and recruits were left behind, and these were transferred to the 17th regiment of Indiana Volunteers (mounted infantry) in the month of June, 1864, and served with that organization until Aug. 8, 1865, when it was finally discharged.

#### TWENTY-NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

The next regiment of volunteers composed in part of St Joseph county men was that of the 29th Infantry Regiment. The following names comprise those who enlisted from the county:

<i>Colonel.</i>	<i>Captain.</i>	Taylor, John
John F. Miller.	Frank A. Hardman.	Eddy, Owen M.
<i>Major.</i>	<i>Lieutenants.</i>	<i>Corporals.</i>
Henry J. Blowney.	John C. Myers,	Sipes, Levi H.
<i>Quartermaster.</i>	Henry E. Hain.	Shanks, Daniel L.
James B. McCurdy.	<i>Co. C.—Privates.</i>	Whitney, Alden
<i>Chaplain.</i>	Butler, Alfred A.	Glass, John
Joseph C. Reed.	Crouch, Ayers,	Schenck, Charles W.
<i>Surgeon.</i>	Croch, David W.	Allcock, Zachariah
Lewis Humphreys.	Hall, Hiram A.	Shields, Robert
<i>Assistant Surgeons.</i>	<i>Co. F.—Sergeants.</i>	Groff, Charles W.
John M. Stover,	Goodrich, Isaac B.	<i>Musicians.</i>
Jacob R. Brown.	Paige, Timothy	Eller, Homer C.
	Stillson, Calvin	Epps, George J.

*Wagoner.*

Lash, William

*Privates.*

Anderson, John W.

Augustine, William H.

Aubert, Antony

Baker, Israel

Bentley, Franklin O.

Bowers, Samuel

Bowers, Casper

Boquet, Joseph A.

Brown, Ashbel M.

Brewer, Lewis

Brewer, William H.

Burdick, Joseph N.

Burke, Joseph

Caudle, Joseph

Christy, Solomon W.

Duffield, John W.

Dodd, William H.

Earls, Asa

Frame, David M.

Gillan, James M.

Hagerty, Rowen

Hardy Fritz

Hardy, Jacob

Judie, Daniel

Kiner, John W.

Lario, Augustus

Lario, Augustus A.

Lioneous, Augustus

Mangus, Solomon

Mangus, Elias

Mangus, Peter

Mangus, Eli

Manuel, Simon

Mapes, Henry

Matlock, Samuel S.

Miller, David B.

Miller, Solomon C.

Mc rehouse, Daniel R.

Munday, Warren.

Parks, Henry F.

Paff, John

Pratt, William

Quigley, George W.

Rentfrow, Turpen

Rizor, George W.

Rice, Elum

Schenck, Chrineyance I.

Segel, Bernhard

Shearer, Adam W.

Shultz, William M.

Shultz, Abraham S.

Sheddrick, Henry C.

Snyder, Jerry D.

Steimer, Frederick

Swintz, Andrew

Tipton, Edward

Traub, John J.

Williams, Albion A.

Williams, Henry S.

Whitman, Daniel E.

Wood, William

York, Nathan

*Recruits.*

Brewer, Peter

Blyler, James M.

Black, William

Reynolds, Virgil

*Co. G.—Sergeants.*

Vanderhoff, John W.

Ade, Henry

*Corporal.*

Miller, Aaron H.

*Musician.*

Abbott, Alfred R.

*Privates.*

Abbott, James

Cunningham, Francis

Daugherty, Jacob

Donaldson, James M.

Gonld, Whceler

Hicks, Philip

Haskin, Joseph J.

Lapp, Henry

Roberts, Amos H.

Usher, John E.

Vader, Seth

Ocker, John A.

*Co. H.—Recruits.*

Ault, John

Allen, Charles D.

Adams, Andrew

Buckley, Charles

Becraft, John

Conover, Jefferson

Delaney, William

Flagel, Frederick

Francis, George

Green, Ezra

Green, John

Goodrich, Alexander

George, Parkinson F.

Harding, Edward

Holwell, Henry

Jones, Asa

Keller, David

Laughton, Nelson

Laughton, Lewis

Lafevre, Oscar P.

Lenegar, Isaac

Miller, Elias

McLean, Owen

Musson, Alonzo

Mareen, James P.

Miller, Jacob W.

McDonald, Anson M.

Muttesbaugh, Benjamin F.

Price, Charles W.

Porter, Daniel

Rennoe, David M.

Smyzer, Josiah F.

Swigert, Daniel

Streable, William J.

Senior, Louis

Surdam, George

Thornton, Martin

Thomas, Quigley

Willis, Anthony

Willard, David F.

*Co. K.—Sergeants.*

Ducomb, Phillip

Moon, John R.

Henderson, Edwin

Welch, Daniel T.

*Corporals.*

Bunch, Joseph A.

Ducomb, James M.

Sample, John

Mauntz, Andrew

Wynn, Jacob

Henderson, Richard J.

Swzey, Charles J.

*Musicians.*

Perry, Henry

Decamp, Aurelius

*Wagoner.*

Leonard, Abner

*Privates.*

Aldrich, Luke

Annis, Lorenzo

Annis, William

Bailey, Simon

Bunch, John L.

Burnsides, William B.

Cole, Tobias

Cline, William

Cotton, Wilson C.

Donahue, John

Elder, John M.

Fogus, Jasper

Hildebrand, John

Hathaway, Henry C.

Hathaway, Jesse

Hart John W.

Henderson, Dayton

Henderson, Parla

Hildebrand, Elijah

Hughes, John

Huyler, Simon S.

Jackson, William

Kirkendall, Philip

King, Nelson

Lamb, John A.

Mangus, Frederick

Mangus, John

McGuire, Morgan

Mountz, Eli

Oliver, Zehadiah

Ream, Charles

Seybold, Benjamin F.

Smith, Francis M.

Steiner, Benjamin F.

Tener, Henry

Tener, Philip

Tener, Samuel

Wolverton, Burroughs	Jay, Henry B.	Ritter, Benjamin
Wood, John	Murphy, Henry	Steiner, Henry
Wynn, John C.	Miller, Daniel	Watkins, Rezin
<i>Recruits.</i>	Ott, John	Whiteman, Samuel T.
Beal, Harrison	Parker, Thomas	Wood, Delos
Henry, James B.	Roberts, Levi	Wiley, John
Jackson Hiram E.	Rose, Samuel J.	

Out of the various companies that went from this county, five laid down their lives upon the field of battle, one was drowned in the Tennessee river, four died in Andersonville prison, and 28 others died from wounds or disease, among the latter being Capt. Frank A. Hardman. Among the promotions in Company F, John J. Traub was promoted from the ranks to 2d Lieutenant; Robert Shields, from Corporal to 2d and then 1st Lieutenant; Alden Whitney, from Corporal to 2d Lieutenant; Calvin R. Stillsom, from Sergeant to 2d Lieutenant; Henry E. Hain, from 2d to 1st Lieutenant; John Taylor, from Sergeant to 1st Lieutenant and then Captain.

The Twenty-Ninth Regiment was organized at La Porte, and mustered into service for three years, Aug. 27, 1861, with John F. Miller, of South Bend, as Colonel. October 9 it joined General Rosseau's command at Camp Nevin, Kentucky, and moved with the army to the vicinity of Mumfordsville, remaining there until the movement upon Bowling Green was commenced in February, 1862. Reaching Nashville in March, it moved with McCook's division to the Tennessee river, and participated in the battle of Shiloh on the 7th of April. In this engagement the regiment was under fire for more than five hours, suffering severely in killed and wounded.

In the siege of Corinth it took an active part, and upon the evacuation moved with Buell's army, through northern Alabama and Tennessee into Kentucky, and following in the pursuit of Bragg through the latter State, returning to Nashville in December. Marching with Rosecrans' army toward Murfreesboro, it participated in the battle of Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862, and Jan. 1 and 2, 1863, losing many men and officers. After the occupation of Murfreesboro the regiment remained at that place until May, when it moved forward with Rosecrans' army to Tullahoma, and afterward to Chattanooga. In addition to the engagements before mentioned, the 29th, after joining Rosecrans' army, participated in the skirmishes had with the enemy at Levergne, Triune and Liberty Gap. In the great battle of Chickamauga the regiment was engaged both days, and sustained heavy losses. After this battle the regiment was stationed at Bridgeport, Alabama, where it re-enlisted as a veteran organization Jan. 1, 1864, and the same month proceeded to Indianapolis on veteran furlough.

On returning to the field the regiment was stationed at Chattanooga, where it remained until December, when it moved to Decatur, Alabama, and was engaged in a skirmish at that place Dec. 27, 1864. Returning to Chattanooga it remained at that



place until May, 1865, when it moved to Dalton, Georgia, where it participated in a skirmish with the enemy. Subsequently the 29th marched to Marietta, Georgia, where it was stationed in October, 1865. Jan. 5, 1864, Colonel Miller (who, since the month of February, 1862, had been serving as Post and Brigade Commander at Nashville and elsewhere) was promoted to Brigadier-General, whereupon Lieutenant-Colonel David M. Dunn was commissioned Colonel.

#### FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

This regiment was represented by three entire companies of St. Joseph county volunteers,—B., E and F. The following are the names of those in the original roster, together with the recruits:

<i>Colonel.</i>	Cushman, Silas	Monroe, George
Norman Eddy.	Carr, Joseph	McCormick, James
<i>Adjutant.</i>	Cathrell, Levi	Nihart, James M.
Edward P. Stanfield.	Clay, Sylvanus	Pearson, Samuel
<i>Surgeons.</i>	Crites, Phillip	Reddick, David
Levi J. Ham,	Classon, Isaac	Rays, John B.
Sylvester Laning.	Cripe, Jonathan	Ritter, Jacob
<i>Assistant Surgeon.</i>	Caslet, William W.	Ross, Benjamin H.
W. W. Butterworth.	Duwit, Martin	Ross, Joseph M.
<i>Co. B.—Captain.</i>	Dunham, John E.	Sheak, Benjamin
William H. Sutphen,	Edwards, Andrew J.	Saeger, Josiah
<i>Lieutenants.</i>	Fowler, Joseph W.	Sously, John
Asa Knott,	Finch, John	Shepherd, Charles
George H. Loring.	Fuller, Amos	Shismadine, Edward
<i>Sergeants.</i>	Frame, Lewis	Straub, Paul
Collins, Thomas J.	Frame, Nely	Swathwood, Jonathan
Jaquith, Albert D.	Felkner, William H.	Tashur, John C.
Augustine, Jacob	Frazer, David	Valentine, Michael
Coulter, John C.	Gillon, Edward	Wheeler, Michael
Rhone, Abraham	Gordon, William	Wykoff, George
<i>Corporals.</i>	Ganoung, Harvey	Wyckenn, Worthy
Nelson, James	Heston, Amos	Whitman, James E.
Nickals, Henry S.	Herchelrode, John	Webster, Christopher
Asbshire, Thomas H.	Harriman, John	Wells, William H.
Clark, Joshua	Howe, Peter J.	Wheeler, Peter
Buckels, Enoch F.	Horn, John	Woollett, Michael
McBride, Clark	Hunt, Jesse	Wiggins, John
Ruddick, Daniel	Hiley, Samuel	Ziegler, James
<i>Musicians.</i>	Hall, George	
Saunders, William S.	Hay, John	<i>Recruits.</i>
Wells, Ozias W.	James, Joel	Biddle, Henry N.
<i>Wagoner.</i>	Jones, John L.	Bossler, Simon Z.
Whitmore, William	Kelly, Levi	Bradley, Luther
<i>Privates.</i>	Kline, John	Brookney, George W.
Adams, Jerome	Kolb, Mathias	Blackman, Sylvester
Baxter, William	Kizar, Henry	Bruner, Franklin
Biddle, Thomas	Kullner, Henry	Brower, Reuben L.
Barre, William	Liba, Cornelius B.	Busby, Thomas C.
Bowen, Joseph	Liggett, Joseph S.	Casteller, Benton W.
Bowen, Abner	Loy, Michael	Caldwell, Archibald
Bowers, Isaiah	Miller, Miles H.	Clelland, Jonathan
Brown, Benjamin F.	Moyer, Maynard	Collins, Samuel B.
Behee, Leonard	McCullom, William	Custer, James
	Moore, Alonzo	Cripe, David R.
	Mougo, Lewis	Donaldson, James H.
		Decamp, Simeon



Dewitt, Martin  
 Davis, Charles D.  
 Emberlin, Alexander  
 Emberlin, John H.  
 Edginton, William  
 Elkins, Reuben  
 Eaglebarger, Hartman  
 Fifer, William  
 Fifer, Jacob  
 Fabim, John  
 Fisher, Moses  
 Gaddis, John W.  
 Klickinger, Philip  
 Little, Hoburt  
 Layne, Logan A.  
 Lobdell, Taylor  
 Morris, George S.  
 Miner, Eli W.  
 Marolet, John  
 Pierson, Hart E.  
 Perry, Albert  
 Preston, Leonard Z.  
 Power, William H.  
 Perrin, John  
 Replogle, Noah  
 Reaves, John M.  
 Rupe, William H.  
 Raustead, John  
 Reaves, Riley  
 Roland, George  
 Ramsby, Ephraim  
 Russel, William W.  
 Ridenour, George W.  
 Stuck, Daniel  
 Slater, Silas L.  
 Schwartz, John  
 Shafer, John D.  
 Scrantin, Francis W.  
 Saltgiver, Franklin J.  
 Sallenberger, Thomas  
 Whorwell, Adolphus W.  
 Weaver, Jacob  
 Winebreuer, James  
 Wiess, Enoch R.

*Co. E.—Captain.*

Thomas B. Roberts.

*Lieutenants.*

David F. Spain,  
 George W. Hart.

*Sergeants.*

Spain, William B.  
 Kelley, Charles G.  
 Miller, William H.  
 Pidge, Edwin F.  
 Stiner, Daniel B.

*Corporals.*

Lapierre, John A. M.  
 Alexander, John E.  
 Simonton, Thomas  
 Johnson, John  
 Jones, Silas  
 Tarble, William L.

Shepley, Samuel M.  
 Martin, John

*Musicians.*

Johnson, Charles T.  
 Hoge, Israel.

*Wagoner.*

Trueblood, Ephraim O.

*Privates.*

Annick, Samuel  
 Archambo, Joseph  
 Banard, Enzel  
 Bertrand, Charles  
 Becknell, Edward  
 Becknell, Ananias  
 Black, William  
 Blyler, Andrew J.  
 Blyler, John  
 Bonebrake, Abraham F.  
 Bresette, Edward J.  
 Britton, Henry  
 Brown, Jesse  
 Burn, Henry  
 Copen, Robert B.  
 Casada, Samuel  
 Catey, Wilson  
 Chaudonia, Theodore T.  
 Cottrell, Samuel  
 Cottrell, John L.  
 Coquillard, Augustus  
 Coquillard, George W.  
 Curn, Edward  
 Darr, Franklin  
 Doughty, George W. E.  
 Drake, John  
 Dudley, William  
 Ellis, James  
 Frederick, Benjamin  
 Fritzer, John I.  
 Fritzer, Nicholas  
 Gephart, William  
 Gipson, William  
 Gokey, Ezra  
 Grindle, Henry  
 Hann, John  
 Haight, James  
 Haney, Alpheus  
 Hunter, Robert  
 Junnel, Martin  
 Kollar, Josiah D.  
 Kollar, James  
 Kitung, Reuben  
 Kembel, Alexander M.  
 Kembel, Frederick T.  
 Kerns, Elisha  
 Lamountain, Charles  
 Larimer, Ebenezer  
 Larimer, John  
 Leech, James  
 Myers, Benjamin  
 Matthews, Joseph  
 Matlock, Thomas  
 McDonald, Perry  
 Miller, Moses

Neddo, John  
 Omea, George  
 Peffley, Henry  
 Palmer, Elias  
 Peterman, George W.  
 Pray, Leander C.  
 Rana, Peter  
 Rokestraw, Elmsley P.  
 Rockhill, Jasper N.  
 Replogle, Joseph W.  
 Ronell, William F.  
 Sipes, Jacob  
 Slusser, Obadiah B.  
 Slusser, Oliver E.  
 Shelmadine, John  
 Sharp, George  
 Stiner, Frederick  
 Stonebaugh, Peter S.  
 Stockman, John J.  
 Stock, John J.  
 Tuttle, Francis D.  
 Weiss, John  
 White, John  
 Wikeson, Levi  
 Watkins, George  
 Warner, Jacob  
 Zanger, Charles

*Recruits.*

Bowles, Lewis M.  
 Barton, James  
 Beckwell, Edward  
 Butler, Rolla  
 Brunson, Reuben  
 Campbell, Alvin G.  
 Carr, Cyrus  
 Cousins, William  
 Denson, George  
 Dunlap, William T.  
 Dugan, John D.  
 Douglass, Robert B.  
 Eason, John I.  
 Forwood, Amos  
 Fox, Simon W.  
 Hench, Samuel M.  
 Hand, Henry N.  
 Kilpatrick, Azariah  
 Lockhart, William P.  
 Lee, William R.  
 Levi, Lisle L.  
 Morse, Lemuel  
 Marts, Daniel  
 Morrille, James  
 McGraw, John  
 McGinnis, William  
 Miller, Charles H.  
 Newhouse, Alexander  
 Olinger, Cyrus  
 Phelps, George S.  
 Pickerell, Hugh  
 Prebble, Alexander J.  
 Phillips, Hector  
 Potts, John  
 Robison, Andrew M.

Rawson, Thomas  
 Slocum, Daniel H.  
 Saunders, Charles W.  
 Thompson, John W.  
 Thompson, William H.  
 Wheeler, John W.  
 Wilson, Ira A.  
 Whitlow, James B.  
 York, Francis M.

*Co. F.—Captain.*  
 Barnett Byrkett.

*Lieutenants.*  
 William A. Judkins,  
 Crawford McDonald.

*Sergeants.*  
 Bingham, Newton  
 Ham, Edwin  
 Caldwell, William  
 Evans, Amos E.  
 Crampton, Adelbert

*Corporals.*  
 Curtis, Alfred  
 Robbison, John L.  
 Mason, Charles  
 Keifer, Jacob  
 Andrews, Michael  
 Sandals, John  
 Crakes, Thomas  
 Anderson, James

*Musicians.*  
 Perry, George E.  
 Uline, Barney.

*Wagoner.*  
 Myers, Joseph

*Privates.*  
 Albert, John  
 Alger, Pratt  
 Allison, George  
 Andrews, Lewis  
 Babbit, Lewis  
 Beiter, Constantine  
 Bowker, Matthew  
 Boyce, Nathan  
 Chapin, William H.  
 Cline, John  
 Cook, Henry  
 Coghill, Josiah  
 Corn, Albert  
 Cushman, William  
 Deppin, Isaac N.  
 Dewey, Charles A.  
 Doolittle, John  
 Doolittle, Holden A.  
 Doolittle, George W.  
 Elder, James  
 Finch, William

Fitch, Horace B.  
 Garrison, George A.  
 Ghrist, Wesley  
 Gouyer, Andrew  
 Grant, Alexander  
 Grop, Jacob  
 Hadley, Charles  
 Hall, Thomas  
 Hann, George  
 Haskell, George  
 Heiss, Elam W.  
 Heiss, Daniel B.  
 Heiner, William  
 Hopkins, William C.  
 Hopkins, Hiram H.  
 Hurley, John  
 Hurley, William B.  
 Hutchinson, William  
 Johnson, Thomas  
 Kerns, John A.  
 Kirkwood, Thomas  
 Kling, John  
 Lahman, Henry  
 Lampert, Ovid W.  
 Leslie, William F.  
 Livenwood, Joseph A.  
 Lees, James  
 Lyttle, John G.  
 Mine, Casper  
 Metcalf, Joel  
 McAchren, Joseph D.  
 McCarry, Edward S.  
 Michael, Edmond  
 Michael, John  
 More, Ephraim  
 Mots, David  
 Myers, David  
 Myers, Henry  
 Owens, Micajah  
 Poobaugh, Philip  
 Porter, Samuel  
 Riffle, David  
 Ritchardt, George C.  
 Rockwell, Willard  
 Roper, James Albert  
 Ruple, Charles E.  
 Sebring, Charles  
 Sheldon, Stephen F.  
 Shields, Patrick  
 Shirley, Albert  
 Schouler, Ernst  
 Smith, Madison R.  
 Sweitzer, David  
 Underwood, Anderson C.  
 Underwood, Henry H.  
 Varney, Burton  
 Watkins, James  
 Wilhelm, John

Wisel, Madnel  
 Williams, Jonas  
 Wilson, Thomas

*Recruits.*

Arnold, Samuel  
 Briggs, James M.  
 Baker, Solomon  
 Barntreger, George  
 Buck, Horace H.  
 Carpenter, Albert H.  
 Carithus, David  
 Cashaw, William  
 Cary, Abram  
 Deshyne, Emanuel  
 Eagle, John D.  
 Fuller, Warren  
 Frank, Andrew J.  
 Gallagher, Charles G.  
 Grise, Franklin  
 Guise, John M.  
 Goldsberry, Henry  
 Haswell, Lewis R.  
 Holloway, William  
 Judkins, William H.  
 Kelly, John  
 Kassins, Albert H.  
 Leavitt, Jr., Philander C.  
 Lampart, Almarin W.  
 Milstead, Frank  
 Pellet, Henry  
 Parrott, John R.  
 Personett, Isaac R.  
 Robbins, Levi  
 Reed, Joseph W.  
 Sheak, Benjamin  
 Squires, Benjamin D.  
 Smith, Nelson G.  
 Smith, John W.  
 Smith, Henry  
 Snyder, John M.  
 Stevens, Henry  
 Saur, Edwin  
 Sedinger, Philip  
 Sherman, John Q. A.  
 Sims, Charles  
 Sheldon, Moses J.  
 Shirley, Ephraim  
 Tupper, Frank  
 Wedgeworth, James R.  
 Wilson, William H.

*Co. A.—Captain.*  
 Abner J. Dean.

*Co. G.—Captain.*  
 Newton Bingham.

*Co. H.—Captain.*  
 Henry Milburn.

Many promotions were made in the various companies, among whom Thomas J. Collins was promoted from First Sergeant to First Lieutenant, and then Captain; Jacob Augustine, from Sergeant to

First Lieutenant and then Captain; Albert D. Jaquith from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant; Enoch F. Buckles, from Corporal to Second Lieutenant; David F. Spain, from First Lieutenant to Captain; George W. Hart, from Second to First Lieutenant, and Captain; William B. Spain, from Sergeant to Second and then First Lieutenant; William H. Miller, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant and Captain; Oliver E. Slusser, from private to Second Lieutenant; John A. M. Lapierre, from Corporal to First Lieutenant and Adjutant; Charles T. Chandonia, from First Lieutenant to Captain; George W. Coquillard, from private to First Lieutenant; Barnett Byrnett, from Captain to Major, and then Lieutenant Colonel; William A. Judkins, from First Lieutenant to Captain; Crawford McDonald, from Second to First Lieutenant; Barney Uhline, from Musician to First Lieutenant; William Caldwell, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant and then Captain; Charles Mason, from Corporal to Second Lieutenant. The loss of the companies from this county were 8 killed, and 48 died of diseases or of wounds received in battle.

The Forty-Eighth Regiment was organized at Goshen on the 6th of December, 1861, with Norman Eddy as Colonel, and left for Fort Donelson by way of Cairo, Feb. 1, 1862, where it arrived the day after the surrender. It then moved to Paducah, where it remained until May, when it moved up the Tennessee river and engaged in the siege of Corinth. After the evacuation of Corinth it was assigned to the First Brigade, Second Division of the Army of the Mississippi, and took part in marches and countermarches in pursuit of General Price. On the 19th of September it participated in the battle of Iuka, losing 116 men in killed and wounded, out of 420 engaged. Oct. 3 and 4 it was engaged in the second battle of Corinth, under Rosecrans, and lost 26 killed and wounded. The regiment next moved down the Mississippi Central railroad as far as Oxford, Mississippi, and on its return marched to Memphis, where, in January, 1863, it was assigned to the First Brigade, Seventh Division of the Seventeenth Army Corps. After remaining here two months it was transported down the Mississippi, and joining the army of General Grant, marched with it to the rear of Vicksburg. During this campaign the regiment participated in the skirmish of Forty Hills, May 3; the battle of Raymond, May 13; the battle of Jackson on the 14th, and the engagement at Champion Hills on the 16th, losing in the latter battle 33 killed and wounded. It was actively engaged in the trenches during the long siege of the rebel works at Vicksburg, and took part in the assault May 22, losing 38 in killed and wounded.

At the surrender of Vicksburg it remained in that vicinity until August, and then moved up the river to Memphis, and from thence marched across the country to Chattanooga, and while in that vicinity engaged the enemy at Tunnel Hill. From the latter place it marched back to Huntsville, Alabama, and while stationed there in January, 1864, the regiment re-enlisted as a veteran organization,

and returned home on veteran furlough, reaching Indianapolis Feb. 6, with 369 veterans, and on the 8th were publicly received in welcoming speeches by Governor Morton and others. After the expiration of its furlough it proceeded to Huntsville, Alabama, where it remained until June.

The Forty-Eighth then moved to Cartersville, Georgia, and was kept on duty in that vicinity, looking after the guerrillas and protecting General Sherman's railroad communications during the campaign against Atlanta. It was continued on this duty until Hood's invasion, when it joined Sherman's army, and marched with the First Brigade, Third Division of the Fifteenth Army Corps, in its campaign from Atlanta to Savannah. From Savannah it first moved to Beaufort, and then on the campaign through the Carolinas, going through Columbia, Cheraw, Fayetteville and Goldsboro to Raleigh. From Raleigh it moved northward, after the surrender of Johnson's army, making the distance from Raleigh to Petersburg, 165 miles, in six days. From Petersburg it marched to Washington, and soon after its arrival was transferred to Louisville, Kentucky, where it was mustered out of service July 15, 1865. Returning to Indianapolis it was present at a public reception given to a large number of returned troops in the capitol grounds, on the 18th, on which occasion addresses were made by Governor Morton, General Hovey and others.

While at Washington about 250 men were transferred to the Forty-Eighth from the Twelfth, Eighty-Third, Ninety-Seventh and Ninety-Ninth Regiments, being retained recruits whose organizations had been mustered out. These transferred men served with the Forty-Eighth until its final muster-out, and were discharged with it. During its term of service the regiment lost in battle 213 men, in killed and wounded.

#### SEVENTY-THIRD REGIMENT INFANTRY.

St. Joseph county was represented by one full company in this regiment, together with a few in other companies. The following are the names and rank at date of enlistment:

<i>Adjutant.</i>	<i>Sergeants.</i>	<i>Musicians.</i>
Alfred B. Wade.	Finley, James B.	Gorsuch, Wilber E.
<i>Quartermaster.</i>	Pearson, Lorenzo	Hall, James F.
Edward Bacon.	Clemens, Charles W.	<i>Wagoner.</i>
<i>Co. C—Captain.</i>	Pierce, John M.	Cotton, Gregory H.
Charles W. Price.	Ruple, John W.	<i>Privates.</i>
<i>Lieutenants.</i>	<i>Corporals.</i>	Annis, Augustus
John A. Richley,	Romig, John A.	Babcock, Hiram
John G. Greenwalt.	Teel, John W.	Ballou, Albert
<i>Chaplain.</i>	Cole, Benjamin R.	Ballou, Orin
George Guyon.	Ferote, Nathaniel S.	Barr, Samuel T.
<i>Surgeon.</i>	Brown, George S.	Bivins, Joseph
Seth F. Myers.	Trueblood, William	Brewer, William H.
<i>Assistant Surgeon.</i>	Thomas, Andrew N.	Brewer, John
Charles H. Applegate.	Kendall, Howard L.	Brittenham, John
		Brown, Mahlon

Brown, Nathaniel	Lembeck, Simon	Steele, Henry C.
Brumfield, Stanton J.	Liggett, Joseph	Steele, Austin
Burk, Milton M.	Lonzo, Moses	Stone, Frederick
Clark, John	Loy, Jacob	Streets, James B.
Curtis, James A.	Madgeburg, Guide	Swank, Conrad
Davis, Andrew	Mapes, John J.	Teel, Moses
Dively, Lorenzo	Marter, Samuel D.	Thompson, John M.
Dively, George	Marter, Ezra	Turner, Melvin F.
Eaton, James R.	Mattes, George	Vaughelson, Richard A.
Fetzer, John	May, John	Zu Tavern, Charles
Finch, Newton M.	McDaniel, John W.	
Finney, Abram	McGoggy, Elijah K.	<i>Recruits.</i>
Finney, Egbert	McGowan, William	Burden, Nathaniel
Frame, Allen	McLloyd, Joseph F.	Cothia, Woodford
Frazer, John A.	Miller, Jeremiah F.	Hughly, Thomas M.
Fulmer, William M.	Miller, John H.	Polk, William G.
Gilvey, Michael	Moon, William H.	Roberts, Levi
Herring, Henry	Morgan, Henry C.	
Henry, John	O'Conner, John	<i>Privates — Various Com-</i>
Huey, William H.	Parrish, William T.	<i>panies.</i>
Hinebaugh, Jacob	Paul, George	Bulhand, Charles L.
Hoover, William B.	Pearson, Hiram	Westfall, George
Hosler, Christian	Quigley, John V.	Paxon, John W.
Houser, David M.	Quigley, George W.	World, Otto
Huber, John	Roof, William	Robinson, Joseph
King, Christian	Rose, Asbury	Kilmer, Christian
Jay, Barton H.	Schiller, Daniel	Hagerty, Timothy
Lane, Ephraim T.	Schreffler, Tiras	Haskin, Abner S.
Lario, Lewis	Shultz, John B.	Wigmore, James S.
Ledwick, James	Slick, John T.	Wilkinson, James B.

Albert B. Wade was promoted from Adjutant to Major, then Lieutenant-Colonel, and afterward Colonel; John A. Richley, from First Lieutenant to Captain; A. N. Thomas from Corporal to First Lieutenant; John T. Slick, from private to Second Lieutenant.

The loss of this regiment from St. Joseph county was 26, of whom two were killed in battle, two accidentally killed, one killed in military prison, and the remainder died of disease or wounds received in battle.

The Seventy-third Regiment was organized and mustered into service Aug. 16, 1862, at South Bend, with Gilbert Hathaway as Colonel. The regiment was recruited entirely from the Ninth Congressional District, of which St. Joseph county then formed a part, and entered the service one thousand and ten strong, in less than three weeks from the day recruiting commenced. It was ordered at once to Lexington, by way of Louisville, Kentucky. The defeat of the Union forces at Richmond, Kentucky, Aug. 30, necessitated the evacuation of Lexington, and the regiment made a long and weary march to Louisville, distant ninety miles. On the 1st of October the Seventy-third was assigned to the Twentieth Brigade (Harker's) of the Sixth Division (Wood's) of Buell's army, and commenced the pursuit of Bragg. October 8 it was deployed in line in reserve and witnessed the battle of Chaplin Hills, losing one man, killed. It then pursued Bragg as far as Wild Cat with slight skirmishing. Returning, it marched to Glasgow, Kentucky, and from there to Gallatin, Tennessee, where Nov. 7, it surprised the

enemy, driving him out of the place and capturing nineteen prisoners.

November 26 the regiment marched into Nashville, having previously encamped for several days at Silver Springs, and engaged in an expedition to Lebanon. While foraging on the 1st and 25th of December it skirmished with the enemy, and on the 26th marched with the army under General Rosecrans to engage the enemy. Pressing him back with skirmishing the army reached Stone river on the 29th, and on the evening of that day the Seventy-third, with the Fifty-first Indiana, was the first of the whole army to cross Stone river under the fire of the enemy. The Twentieth Brigade, encountering Breckenridge's whole division, was compelled to re-cross, which was effected after dark without serious loss. On the 30th the day was passed in artillery firing and sharp skirmishing. On the 31st most terrific fighting occurred. The right wing of our army was driven back two miles, and the Twentieth Brigade was double-quickened a mile and a half to reinforce it, and taking position on the extreme right of the whole army, immediately engaged two rebel brigades. The Seventy-third fought for about twenty minutes at very close range, losing more than one-third of the number engaged; and then, charging down, drove the force in its front from the field, and in turn was compelled to turn back a short distance by a rebel brigade on its flank. But the enemy's advance was checked and the right wing of the army saved by the desperate fighting made at this point. General Rosecrans complimented the regiment in person, immediately after the battle, and recognized these facts. More or less fighting with some loss to the regiment occurred Jan. 1 and 2, 1863. During these operations the regiment was at the front and under fire for six days, and Jan. 3, being completely exhausted, it was placed in reserve. The enemy retreated the same day. During this battle the regiment occupied, at different times, the following important positions: The extreme right of the whole army, the extreme left, and the center. Every member of the color guard except the color bearer was either killed or wounded. The regiment lost 22 killed, 46 wounded and 36 missing.

On the 10th of April the regiment was assigned to Colonel A. D. Straight's "Independent Provisional Brigade," organized and mounted for the purpose of penetrating into the enemy's country and cutting his communications. Embarking at Nashville on the steamer, it moved down the Cumberland and up the Tennessee river, disembarking at Eastport, Mississippi. The brigade was mounted by impressments from the country, and moved by land to Tusculumbia, Alabama, in company with General Dodge's Division of the Sixteenth Army Corps. On the 28th of April the "Independent Provisional Brigade" left Tusculumbia on its perilous expedition. General Dodge's Division was to have co-operated with the movement eastward, but failed of success. On the morning of

April 13, at Day's Gap, Alabama, the Provisional Brigade, numbering fifteen hundred, was attacked by four thousand cavalry, under Generals Forrest and Roddy. The Seventy-third occupied the left flank of the line formed, and gallantly repulsed a fierce charge made by the enemy, some of whom charged within twenty feet of its colors. The whole brigade then charged the enemy's line and drove him from the field, capturing two fine pieces of artillery. The brigade at once pushed southward to execute its mission, but the enemy, having collected its scattered cavalry, overtook and attacked the Brigade late in the afternoon, at Crooked Creek, Alabama. A spirited engagement was kept up until night closed the battle, with a loss to the Seventy-third during the day of 23 killed and wounded. The enemy, however, was repulsed with heavy loss.

On the 2d of May the brigade was again attacked at Blount's Farm, Alabama. The Seventy-third bore the brunt of this fight, and here the gallant Colonel, Gilbert Hathaway, fell, mortally wounded, while at the head of, and cheering on his men. On the 3d of May Colonel Streight, being nearly out of ammunition, and exhausted by five days' incessant traveling and skirmishing, and surrounded by superior forces, surrendered his brigade to the enemy, at Cedar Bluffs, Alabama, on most honorable conditions, which, after surrender, were basely violated by the enemy. The men were soon forwarded North and exchanged. The officers were kept in close confinement nearly two years with the exception of a few who were specially exchanged or escaped.

The men of the regiment were kept in parole camp for several months and then sent to Tennessee, where, March 28, 1864, Major Wade, being released from rebel prison, assumed the command of the regiment. During the spring of 1864 the regiment was engaged in guarding the Nashville & Chattanooga Railroad, and during the summer it was placed on duty picketing the Tennessee river from Draper's Ferry to Limestone Point, with headquarters at Triana. While performing this duty many encounters occurred between parties of the enemy and detachments from the regiment, in nearly all of which success attended the Union arms. For its bravery and efficiency in this line of duty, the regiment was several times complimented by General Granger. During this time, and until April, 1865, the regiment was attached to the First Brigade, Fourth Division, Twentieth Army Corps.

In the latter part of September, 1864, the regiment, after having been engaged in defending Prospect, Tennessee, during Wheeler's raid, was ordered to Decatur, Alabama, which place Forrest had captured a few days before with a garrison of 600. The enemy abandoned the place; Lieutenant-Colonel Wade was ordered to hold it, and at once went to work to put it in condition for defense, constructing a bomb-proof in the fort, etc. At three o'clock in the



afternoon of the 1st of October, the pickets of the Seventy-third were driven in by the enemy, who numbered 4,000 cavalry and four pieces of artillery, under command of General Buford. The garrison numbered 500 men and two pieces of artillery. Skirmishing continued during the rest of the day. At six o'clock next morning the enemy opened with a fierce artillery fire, which was kept up without intermission for two hours. The rebel firing was extremely accurate. Our artillery spiritedly replied, inflicting much loss on the enemy, while the bomb-proof afforded ample protection to our forces: no loss was sustained by the garrison. At eight o'clock A. M. General Buford sent in a flag of truce and demanded the surrender of the place, which was promptly refused. So soon as the flag of truce disappeared, the fire upon the enemy was resumed. The enemy, repulsed at every point, retired in haste.

Oct. 26 General Hood appeared before and invested Decatur, Alabama, with an army of 35,000 men. The Seventy-third had previously been ordered to that place to assist in its defense. The Union garrison numbered 5,000, and so stubborn was the resistance they made to the large army investing the place, that after four days' fighting, Hood raised the siege and withdrew his army, saying: that "it would cost more to take the place than it was worth." In the engagement the Seventy-third bore an honorable part, losing one killed and six wounded.

Part of the winter of 1864 was passed in Stevenson, Alabama, and in January, 1865, it was moved to Huntsville and then placed on duty along the line of the Mobile & Charleston railroad, with headquarters at Larkinsville, Alabama. While upon this line, skirmishing with the enemy was of almost daily occurrence. Feb. 16 a detachment of 20 men repulsed an attacking party of rebel cavalry, killing and wounding five, and taking one wounded prisoner. On the 30th of April, 15 men from Company "D" attacked 30 rebel cavalry, killing two and wounding two, without loss to themselves. Other skirmishes occurred in which the regiment lost four killed and two wounded. The regiment remained on this duty until the summer of 1865, when it proceeded to Nashville, where, on the 1st of July, 1865, it was mustered out of service. Returning home the Seventy-third was publicly received in the State House Grove, at Indianapolis, and addressed by Governor Morton and General Hovey.

#### EIGHTY-SEVENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

The Eighty-seventh regiment was represented by Co. K and one or two others. The following are the names as recorded in the Adjutant-General's Report and credited to St. Joseph county:



<i>Chaplain.</i>	Chrisman, Andrew J.	Molloy, Edward
Joseph R. Albright.	Currier, William	Odell, Jonas
<i>Surgeon.</i>	Deelman, Adam	Russ, Nathan F. F.
Samuel Higginbotham.	Dirst, Herman	Schmidt, Benjamin
<i>Captain.</i>	Dressler, Daniel N.	Spousler, Alexander
John Q. Wheeler,	Ferris, John A.	Stevens, George S.
<i>Lieutenants.</i>	Fleming, Peter	Stuckey, James A.
George H. Niles,	Gay, Ebert	Sumstine, John
James M. Holliday.	Ghrist, Wallace S.	Sweeney, George C.
<i>Sergeants.</i>	Gordon, William H.	Terrill, Oscar
Boyd, John W.	Greenleaf, Henry C.	Turner, Asher
Beglin, John A.	Guibert, George	Van Nest, Lewis T.
<i>Corporals.</i>	Harris, Henry C.	Van Riper, Garrett
Bulla, William H.	Hays, Henry C.	Van Riper, John
Tutt, Charles E.	Heckathorn, Adam	Van Riper, Bradford
Williams, Alonzo S.	Heminger, Peter	<i>Recruits.</i>
Milliken, Francis M.	James, Zebedee	Everhart, Gabriel M.
Hutson, Charles E.	Jones, Ira	Leslie, John H.
Boston, Daniel	Jones, John	Pyle, Abraham C.
<i>Musician.</i>	Keifer, Jacob H.	<i>Musician.</i>
Cobb, William	Kelsey, Irwin H.	Hooton, Benjamin F.
<i>Privates.</i>	Leslie, Lawyous	<i>Co. G.</i>
Aldrick, Luke A.	Leslie, Albert R.	Roof, John M.
Ashley, Henry J.	Long, Charles W.	Gilfayle, Michael
Bartlett, Edwin A.	Long, George E.	Garner, John
Bell, Jacob H.	Mardling, George H.	Montgomery, Thomas
Bradley, Philander	Martin, John H.	Mofit, Ephraim
Burgner, John	Mangherman, William H.	Rogers, Amos
Buysee, Charles	Mangherman, John G.	
	McMichael, John A.	
	Miller, Loren C.	

The loss from this county were four killed; five died from wounds; one died in Andersonville prison; and ten died of disease—a total of twenty.

The companies composing the Eighty-seventh regiment were recruited in the Ninth Congressional District. The regiment was organized at South Bend Aug. 28, 1862, and at once moved to Indianapolis, where, on the 31st of August, it was mustered into the three years' service, with Kline G. Shryock as Colonel. On the day of its muster it left Indianapolis and proceeded to Louisville, Kentucky, where on the 1st of September, it was assigned to General Burbridge's Brigade. October 1st it was transformed to the Third Brigade, Third Division, of the 14th Army Corps, and with it took part in General Buell's campaign through Kentucky. It was under fire at Springfield on the 6th of October, and on the 8th of that month engaged in the battle at Perryville.

After marching and counter-marching through Kentucky, the regiment encamped near Mitchellville, Tennessee, in November. During this campaign the loss to the regiment was light, not exceeding six killed and wounded. After this the Eighty-seventh occupied camps at Tunnel Hill, Pilot Knob and Gallatin, Tennessee, and Jan. 29, 1863, it moved to Concord Church, south of Nashville. On the 4th of March it engaged in a skirmish at Chapel Hill against General Forrest's command, after which it moved to Triune. On the 28th of March Colonel Shryock resigned, whereupon Lieutenant-Colonel Newell Gleason was promoted Colonel,

which rank that officer held until the close of Sherman's last campaign, when he was brevetted a Brigadier-General.

June 23 the Eighty-seventh moved with the Army of the Cumberland, and engaged in the summer campaign against Tullahoma, being under fire at Hoover's Gap, and being with that part of the army which entered Tullahoma. It then marched to Winchester, Tennessee, and thence over the mountains to Battle Creek, on the Tennessee river. In the fall campaign against Chattanooga, the regiment participated, crossing the Tennessee and marching over several high mountain ranges. It bore a conspicuous part in the bloody battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19 and 20, losing of its number 40 killed, 142 wounded, and 8 missing, among whom were eight officers killed and four wounded—being more than half of all the officers and men engaged. The regiment remained at Chattanooga during the siege of that place, and upon the reorganization of the Army of the Cumberland, it formed a part of the Second Brigade, Third Division, Fourteenth Army Corps. Nov. 25 the regiment was in the front line of its brigade in the storming of Mission Ridge, and lost in killed and wounded sixteen men. After the victory it engaged in the pursuit of the enemy to Ringold, Georgia. Feb. 22, 1864, it participated in an expedition against Dalton, and skirmished with the enemy in front of Buzzard's Roost, near that place. Returning from this expedition, it went into camp at Ringold, where it remained until the 7th of May.

In the laborious campaign against Atlanta, the Eighty-seventh participated in all the principal battles and skirmishes, confronting the enemy at Rocky Face, Resaca, Cassville, near Dallas, Kennesaw, Peach Tree Creek, and before Atlanta. In a charge upon the enemy's works at Utoy's creek in front of Atlanta, on the 4th of August, the loss of the regiment was seventeen killed and wounded. It also participated in the battle of Jonesboro, on the 1st of September, and then moved into Atlanta, where it went into camp for a brief period.

Moving with its corps from Atlanta on the 3d of October, it participated in the campaign in the pursuit of Hood through Northern Georgia, marching to Resaca, and thence through Snake Creek Gap to the Chattanooga valley. From thence it marched to Gaylesville, Alabama, and then returned to Atlanta, going by way of Rome and Kingston, Georgia. Nov. 16, the regiment left Atlanta with the Fourteenth Corps, and marching through Decatur and Covington, took the road to Milledgeville. On the 24th the march toward Savannah was resumed, the regiment moving by way of Black Spring, Fair Play and Long Bridge, to Saundersville, which was reached on the morning of the 26th. The advance guard of Wheeler's cavalry was met near that place and skirmished with, but offered no serious opposition. Marching to the left of the Georgia Central railroad, and crossing the Ogeechee, the regiment reached Louisville on the 28th, where it rested until the 1st of December. It then moved toward Jacksonboro, going by way of Reynolds,

Thomas' Station and Waynesboro, destroying a portion of the railroad and skirmishing with Wheeler's cavalry, near the latter place. From Jacksonboro it marched to Hudson's Ferry, on the Savannah river, reaching there on the 6th. On the 9th Ebenezer Church was reached, and on the 10th the immediate defenses of Savannah were approached and the siege begun. After the evacuation of Savannah, on the 21st of December, the Eighty-seventh marched into the city and remained there until Jan. 30, 1865.

The regiment participated in the campaign made through the Carolinas, marching with the Fourteenth corps to Goldsboro, North Carolina, where it remained in camp until April 10, 1865. It then moved to Smithfield and took part in the capture of that town. From thence it proceeded to Raleigh and then to a point near Holly Springs, where it camped until after the surrender of General Johnston's rebel army. From North Carolina the regiment marched to Richmond, Virginia, and thence to Washington city, where it participated in the grand review of Sherman's army. June 10, 1865, the Eighty-seventh was mustered out of service at Washington, and proceeded to Indianapolis, where, on the 21st, it was publicly welcomed home by Governor Morton, in behalf of the State, at a reception meeting held in the capitol grounds, at which addresses were also made by Generals Hovey and Gleason.

The total casualties of the regiment were as follows: Killed in action, 47; wounded in action, 198; died from wounds and disease, 214.

The promotions in Company K were, James M. Holliday, from Second Lieutenant to Captain; Andrew J. Chrisman, from private to First Lieutenant.

#### ONE HUNDRED AND TWENTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

Company D of this regiment was made up entirely from St. Joseph county. In addition to this company a number of men from the county enlisted in other companies, the names of all being given.

*Co. D.—Captain.*  
John M. Pierce.

*Lieutenants.*  
Solomon H. Fountain,  
William W. Finch.

*Sergeants.*  
Harris, Erastus A.  
Finch, George O.  
James, Zebedee  
Cottrell, John L.  
Hose, Jacob

*Corporals.*  
Witner, David  
Kreider, Aquilla B.  
Green, William B.

Hardy, Jacob  
Marsh, James T.  
Waxham, Herbert  
Hathaway, Jesse  
Emery, Joseph R.

*Wagoner.*  
Kelley, Martin

*Privates.*  
Anderson, John W.  
Avery, John  
Avery, William H.  
Aubert, Antonia  
Ballinger, Charles H.  
Benway, Edward  
Bodway Zavyer

Blyler, William C.  
Buchtel, William  
Buchtel, Jonathan  
Buchtel, William D.  
Bowen, George W.  
Baker, Daniel W.  
Caudle, Ensley  
Coho, Bishop R. C.  
Clay, Sylvanus  
Donaghue, Francis  
Ditch, Michael J.  
Emery, Edward  
Finch, Zimri  
Finch, Franklin A.  
Fisher, Peter  
Frasier, William A.

Friar, Jackson  
 Green, Albert C.  
 Gillen, Hugh  
 Getting, Samuel  
 Hathaway, Daniel  
 Hathaway, Peter  
 Hughes, Edward  
 Hughes, Patrick  
 Huyler, Simon S.  
 Huyler, Thomas J.  
 Hanville, Charles M.  
 Heminger, John  
 Hardy, James M.  
 Hardy, Elmsley H.  
 Hardy, James  
 Huey, David N.  
 Hagerty, Spencer  
 Keider, John E.  
 Klink, John D.  
 Kiser, Daniel  
 Lario, Augustus A.  
 Lammondee, August  
 Liphart, George  
 Lyons, Dennis  
 Lichtenberger, William  
 Liggert, William  
 Long, John A.  
 Miller, Isaac  
 McCann, Charles  
 Mayer, Casper

Matthews, Arthur J.  
 Moon, James  
 McLearn, Owen  
 Minzey, James  
 Milner, Isaiah T.  
 Mangus, Caleb  
 Neddo, Columbus  
 Orange, Patrick  
 Oliver, Alonzo  
 Owens, Henry  
 O'Connor, Musgrove E.  
 O'Ragen, John  
 Odiorne, Leonard M.  
 Pilson, Kane  
 Price, George  
 Price, Mordecai M.  
 Runnion, Jonathan  
 Ramsberger, John  
 Rowe, John M.  
 Smith, John I.  
 Smith, James  
 Smeltz, Valentine  
 Shearer, Daniel  
 Snodgrass, Harrison  
 Stevens, Horace H.  
 Shinewa, Joseph  
 Wier, John  
 Willard, Emanuel  
 Williams, William O.  
 Young, Silas

#### *Recruits.*

Gilman, Andrew J.  
 McFarland, Albert  
 McDonald, William H.  
 Morgan, William D.  
 Myers, Christian  
 McEntorfer, Peter A.  
 McCloud, Edward  
 Munday, Warren  
 McEntorfer, John C.  
 McAfee, Hiram  
 Marshall, William H.  
 Neidigh, Francis M.  
 Runnion, William  
 Smiser, William F.  
 Stanbrough, Levi  
 Thompson, James

#### *Other Companies.*

Butler, Harris  
 Gaa, John  
 Palmer, Jesse  
 Ager, Washington  
 Bowen, Benjamin B.  
 Cobb, Henry  
 Fluckey, William C.  
 Lambert, William  
 Moon, Robert A.  
 Mullen, George W.  
 Wolf, John

Only one of the foregoing number was killed in battle, two were killed by railroad accident, and nineteen died from wounds received in battle or from disease.

The One Hundred and Twenty-eighth Regiment was recruited from the Ninth Congressional District, during the fall and winter of 1863, rendezvoused at Michigan City, and was mustered into service March 18, 1864. On the 23d the regiment left Michigan City by rail, and proceeded by way of Indianapolis and Louisville, to Nashville, where the division commanded by General Hovey was organized, and the regiment assigned to the First Brigade. April 6 the regiment started on a march to the front, and, moving by way of Stevenson, Bridgeport and Chattanooga,—through a section of country famed for the beauty of its mountain scenery, where the hills kiss the clouds, and the silver streams laugh in the sunshine,—reach Charleston, East Tennessee, on the 21st. General Hovey's division was then designated as the First Division, and assigned to the Twenty-third Army Corps, under command of General Schofield.

May 4 the regiment marched with its corps from Charleston, and entered immediately on the campaign against Atlanta. Sherman's moving columns were concentrating in the vicinity of Chattanooga, preparatory to moving with determined vigor upon the forces of the rebel General Johnson, who, apparently secure behind the inaccessible ridges of Rocky Face, challenged our advance through the dangerous defile of Buzzard's Roost Gap,

leading to Dalton. But Sherman decided to take another route, and not expose his men to certain destruction from the fire of plunging shot, or the deep waters of the creek by which the enemy flooded the pass. The pass was unapproachable, and the "Great Flanker" turned to the left, and left the enemy in position.

May 9 General Schofield moved with his corps close to Dalton, while General Thomas demonstrated with vigor against Rocky Face Ridge. Meanwhile McPherson reached Snake Creek Gap, surprised a force of the enemy and held the gap. On the 12th the whole army, save one corps, moved through the gap on Resaca. The battle of Resaca followed. Thus constantly moving, threatening, flanking and fighting, the approaches to Atlanta were won, the One Hundred and Twenty-eighth taking part in the principal movements, culminating in such battles as Resaca, Dallas, New Hope Church, Lost Mountain, Kenesaw Mountain, Atlanta and Jonesboro.

From May 8 until Sept. 5, under the broiling sun by day and the pestilential dews by night, through difficult ravines, skirmishing in dense forests, drenched by heavy rains, struggling through mud and mire, our troops pressed on. Some portion of the regiment was on the skirmish line nearly every day for four months.

June 9 General Hovey retired from the command of the First Division, and the First Brigade was assigned to the Third Division (Cox's) of the same corps. June 6, Colonel De Harb having been disabled by wounds, Lieutenant-Colonel Packard assumed command of the regiment. Aug. 9 the First Brigade was re-organized, and the One Hundred and Twenty-eighth assigned to the Third Brigade of the same division, the brigade being under command of Colonel I. N. Stiles, of the Sixty-third Indiana. After the fall of Atlanta the regiment marched from Jonesboro to Decatur, Georgia, where it went into camp with the rest of the corps.

Oct. 1 the rebel General Hood crossed the Chattahoochee river with his army, and marched north by way of Dallas. Sherman's army, with the exception of the Twentieth Corps, moved in pursuit. The regiment left Decatur with its corps on the 4th, and, crossing the Chattahoochee, moved toward Dallas, threatening the flank and rear of the enemy's forces then assaulting Alatoona. The rebels being defeated at Alatoona, moved rapidly to the northwest, striking the railway at Resaca on the 12th, and capturing Tilton and Dalton. The army of Sherman meanwhile made a march to Rome, where the Twenty-third Corps crossed the Oostanaula and drove a brigade of the enemy through the narrow entrance of the valley of the Chattanooga, capturing two guns. Then learning that the enemy had moved for Resaca, the pursuit was continued through Resaca, Snake Creek Gap, Villanow, Dirt Town and Grover's Gap to Gaylesville, Alabama, which place was reached on the 20th. The regiment marched in this pursuit over three hundred miles.

Oct. 3, the Twenty-third Corps was detached from Sherman's army, and ordered to proceed to Chattanooga and report to General

Thomas. The regiment marched with its corps to Chattanooga, and was moved from thence by rail to Pulaski and Nashville. So soon as it was ascertained that Hood was moving to invade Tennessee, the regiment moved with its corps to Columbia. Nov. 24 the skirmishers of the One Hundred and Twenty-eighth encountered the advance of the enemy. For six days severe skirmishing was had with the enemy's line at Columbia, one-half of the regiment being alternately on the skirmish line. The enemy's line pressed our line strongly but did not assault. Meanwhile General Schofield made preparations to fall back to Franklin. During the night of the 29th the regiment marched twenty-six miles, and reached Franklin at day-break of the 30th. The enemy followed closely, and repeatedly assaulted our line at Franklin as soon as we had formed, but General Schofield had chosen an excellent position, and repulsed the rebel onslaught with decisive results. The regiment lost several officers and men in this battle, which was fought with great fury and obstinacy, the enemy continuing his assaults until late on the night of the 30th. The battle of Franklin was the first severe check of Hood's invasion of Tennessee.

The regiment fell back the night after the battle, to Brentwood Hills, and the next morning marched to Nashville and took position in its defenses. For two weeks the army of General Thomas faced the rebel force of General Hood, who occupied the southern approaches to Nashville.

December 15 General Thomas' army moved upon the enemy in his chosen position, and, after two days' fighting, utterly defeated the boastful foe, and drove his demoralized command beyond the waters of the Tennessee. This battle closed the existence of Hood's army. From that time it ceased to exist as an organized body. The regiment was actively engaged in the closing up of Hood, and joined in the pursuit as far as Columbia, Tennessee, arriving at that place on the 26th. Here the command rested for a short time preparatory to another campaign which was to strangle the last army of the Rebellion.

Jan. 5, 1865, the regiment left Columbia and marched by way of Mount Pleasant and Waynesboro to Clifton, on the Tennessee river, where it embarked on transports and sailed to Cincinnati, Ohio. From thence the regiment moved by rail to Washington city, and thence to Alexandria, Virginia. February 20 it embarked on the steamer Atlantic, and sailed to Fort Fisher, North Carolina, and from thence, without landing, sailed to Morehead City, North Carolina, where the regiment disembarked and was conveyed by rail to Newburn.

Early in March the regiment set out with its division, and marched along the Atlantic & North Carolina railroad, in the direction of Kingston, repairing the railroad as the column moved. March 8 the enemy was encountered in force, at Wise's Fork, four miles below Kingston. The enemy had met with success in capturing two regiments of Eastern troops, by surprise, and was pushing on, confident of easy victory, when it was met and

checked by Rogers' division, just arriving on the field. For two days heavy skirmishing resulted, and on the 10th the enemy made a heavy assault, but was repulsed and fled in great disorder from the field. The regiment took an active part in this fight, losing severely in killed and wounded. The whole command then moved to Kingston, which was occupied without resistance from the enemy.

On the 20th the regiment left Kingston, and after a march of thirty miles, reached Goldsboro on the evening of the next day.

On the 25th it left Goldsboro and marched to Le Noir Institute, where the regiment was employed in protecting the railroad until April 9. The regiment then returned to Goldsboro, and was assigned to duty in that city. It soon after was sent to Raleigh.

April 29, 1865, Colonel De Harb being mustered out by order of the War Department, Lieutenant-Colonel Packard was promoted to the Colonely. Subsequently Colonel Packard was promoted to the rank of Brevet Brigadier-General of volunteers, by the President, to date, March 13, 1865. The regiment was mustered out in 1866.

The promotions of the St. Joseph county men were as follows: John M. Pierce, from Captain to Major; Erastus A. Harris, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant, and then to First Lieutenant; George O. Finch, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant.

#### ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

This regiment was composed of one hundred days men, and was mustered into the service May 27, 1864, with James H. Shannon as Colonel. St. Joseph county was represented in this regiment by company H, the muster roll of which follows:

<i>Captain.</i>		
James K. Gore.	Farris, Finley	Pettit, Enos F.
<i>Lieutenants.</i>		
John T. Kellogg.	Fulmer, Martin	Pickett, Raymond
Johu H. Quigg.	Freeman, Lewis	Platz, Charles
<i>Privates.</i>		
Austin, William	Garrison, Marion	Reymirs, Dasery
Besinger, George	Gilbert, Henry	Reynolds, Charles
Beiger, Martin	Greuert, Michael	Riddle, James
Beal, Harvey	Harris, James	Roach, Samuel C.
Bingham, Frank	Harris, Henry	Sandilands, John
Boys, Abraham	Hollingshead, N.	Seifert, Daniel
Bodkin, Alexander J.	Holston, John	Sherer, William
Bowers, Jacob	Hutchinson, George	Seniard, Alfred
Boyd, James C.	Johnson, Albert G.	Simanton, Brevet
Bond, Colonel	King, Henry	Sibley, Levi
Brower, Harvey	Kurtz, Edward	Slough, Adam
Brittall, Almon	Laidlow, Edwin	Slusser, Levi
Carlton, Willis	Leonard, William	Spake, James
Collier, Christopher	Loughman, Thomas B.	Sweetland, E. N. B.
Crain, Calvin	Metzger, Charles	Taylor, Christopher
Crockett, Elmer	Michael, Edward	Tutt, Elliott
Deno, William S.	Milburn, John	Usher, Roberts
Dixon, James	McDonough, Sylvester	Vine, Samuel H.
Eberhart, Frank R.	Macumber, Milo	Warren, William H.
Ernest, Gabriel	Martin, Edwin	Ward, Jacob
Ferris, Waverly	Niles, George F.	Weber, Jacob
	Oliver, William H.	Weiss, John
	Onsalman, Joseph	Young, Joseph
	Peck, Asahel	

The regiment was mustered out September 30, 1864.



## ONE HUNDRED AND FIFTY-FIFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY.

This regiment was composed of men enlisting for one year. Company "I" was composed principally of St. Joseph county men, while a number joined other companies, the names of which are given as compiled from the Adjutant-General's report:

*Co. I.—Captain.*  
Calvin R. Stillson.

*Lieutenants.*  
Alexis S. Bertrand.  
Henry Smyser.

*Privates.*  
Anton, Mahlon W.  
Apey, Andrew  
Adams, James  
Anderson, John F.  
Bassett, William  
Berg, Henry  
Blyler, William C.  
Bell, Charles H.  
Bailey, Lewis V.  
Bonday, Alexander  
Bodkin, Alexander J.  
Byerly, Jr., Samuel  
Chenay, Jerry W.  
Cotton, Joseph  
Creed, John  
Epley, Theodore  
Ebberson, George M.  
Flagle, Frederick  
Galling, Celestine  
Hahn, Henry C.  
Hosler, Peter  
Harris, William J.  
Hager, Stephen  
Hall, Charles  
Henzman, Gottfrey  
Keiner, John M.  
Koller, William  
Kimble, Benjamin B.  
Laffour, Frederick  
Miller, David M.

Meikel, Albert  
Metzger, Charles L.  
Morgan, John T.  
Metzger, Alfred  
Moore, Stephen  
Monhue, Thomas  
McMeikel, Wayne  
McManus, Peter  
Norris, Leonidas  
Nicholson, Henry  
Ordway, Joseph S.  
Perry, Oliver  
Perry, Charles  
Penwell, Henry C.  
Pierce, William H.  
Roof, David R.  
Rouch, Henry  
Reeves, Salathiel  
Rinehart, Jacob  
Robinson, William A.  
Ross, Alanson  
Smyser, Josiah F.  
Stevens, David  
Sample, Robert M.  
Simpson, Charles A.  
Stonebill, Daniel  
Smith, Frederick  
Schwin, Ephraim  
Staples, Charles C.  
Sauls, Francis  
Treanor, John W.  
Turner, William  
Thomas, William H.  
Varney, Henry H.  
Vanderhoof, Nathan  
Woofter, John H.

Webb, David T.  
Webb, George  
Webber, Abraham  
Waner, Frank  
Watkins, Simeon  
Williams, George V.  
Welton, Samuel G.  
Whitmore, William B.  
Yingst, Nathan

*Co. G.*  
Heckethorn, John  
Holmes, George W.  
Ketring, John  
Slough, Adam  
Slough, Michael

*Co. H.*  
Anderson, George A.  
Beckwith, Franklin J.  
Butler, Alfred A.  
Cummins, Peter  
Clark, Robert  
Evans, William W.  
Herrman, George  
Heller, Abraham  
Hardy, Avilda  
Haseldon, David  
Kidder, Krandal G.  
Mills, Elijah  
Martin, James  
McGowan, William  
Singleton, Thomas  
Smith, Noah  
Six, James  
Taylor, John  
Wood, Jeremiah

The loss was only one, Francis Sauls, who died at Indianapolis May 6, 1865. The following are the names of those mustered out as Sergeants: David M. Miller, Alexander J. Bodkin, William A. Robinson, Josiah F. Smyser, William Turner. The following are the names of the Corporals on mustering out: Andrew Apey, John T. Morgan, Peter McManus, Joseph S. Ordway, Daniel Stonebill. George V. Williams and Henry Berg were mustered out as musicians.

The regiment was organized at Indianapolis on the 18th of April, 1865, with John M. Wilson as Colonel. April 26, the regiment left for Washington, and upon its arrival there it was sent to Alexandria, and was assigned to the provisional brigade of the Third Division of the Ninth Army Corps. May 3 it was transferred to Dover,



Delaware, at which place companies were detached and sent to Centreville and Wilmington, Delaware, and Salisbury, Maryland. On the return to the regiment of two of these companies, a railroad accident occurred by which a number were severely injured. The regiment being brought together was, Aug. 4, 1865, mustered out at Dover, Delaware. Arriving at Indianapolis on the 10th with 32 officers and 800 men, for final discharge, it was publicly welcomed home, at a reception meeting held in the State House Grove, at which addresses were made by Lieutenant Governor Baker, General Benjamin Harrison and others.

## TWELFTH CAVALRY.

Company H, of the Twelfth Cavalry, was composed of men from the county of St. Joseph. Following will be found the original muster, as taken from the report of the Adjutant General:

*Co. H.—Captain.*  
Amos DaHuff.

*Lieutenants.*

Joseph Turnock,  
Henry R. Fields.

*Privates.*

Augustine, William  
Augustine, David  
Abdill, Aaron E.  
Abdill, Joseph S.  
Barnhart, Benjamin J.  
Ball, Leander N.  
Ball, Wilber W.  
Beck, Hansom M.  
Baker, David  
Beer, Strong  
Brown, Alexis S.  
Brown, Erastus  
Brown, James M.  
Crumb, William  
Curtis, Luther  
Curtis, Andrew  
Crocker, Henry  
Claffey, Thomas  
Cotton, Daniel H.  
Clark, John  
Castellen, Daniel M.  
Carpenter, William  
Cruthers, Andrew J.  
Dressler, Daniel N.  
Durst, Enos  
Dewey, Charles A.  
Donaldson, Madison  
Ditto, Philip E.  
Diltz, William T.  
Ells, William P.  
Eddy, George H.  
Frazier, Mozier  
Fulmer, Oliver R.

Friend, Amos  
Green, William L.  
Graham, Charles B.  
Goit, James W.  
Herman, John  
Herman, Peter W.  
Herman, Reuben  
Hay, Noah  
Hollingshead, Daniel  
Harlin, William  
Hillard, Martin  
Hausman, Henry  
Hague, Benjamin F.  
Krill, Ceraphine  
Kelley, Daniel P.  
Liggit, Joseph E.  
Liggit, Joseph S.  
Long, Frederick  
McKnabb, Horton  
Morrow, Josiah  
Miller, Marcus L.  
McBride, Lewis C.  
Modlin, Adam  
Maxwell, Richard  
McDaniel, James F.  
Martin, Jacob  
McQuiston, George W.  
Metz, Frederick D.  
Noel, John  
Nier, Robert H.  
Ocker, Jacob B.  
Pippenger, Jerome  
Penrod, Alexander  
Patridge, Franklin  
Pool, Malachi  
Reece, William M.  
Rittig, George  
Reggion, Edward  
Robinson, Martin G.  
Schock, Joseph

Summey, Jacob  
Scholtz, Benjamin  
Smith, Nehemiah  
Smith, Jacob  
Smith, David H.  
Swyhart, Martin  
Simpson, Orin J.  
Shamp, Jerome  
Staffer, Samuel J.  
Sheaks, John  
Sheaks, Sanford  
Throckmorton, Charles  
Tank, John  
Vaumerdstrand, David  
Viney, Lewis  
Woodbury, Delos M.  
Whitney, Alden  
Wood, William  
Wood, John  
Wright, George W.  
Woollet, Solomon S.  
Watking, Lee  
Wilcockson, Joseph  
Zweite, Reinhold

*Recruits.*

Harris, William  
Mann, George W.  
Mitchell, Francis  
Turner, William H. B.  
Tank, Christian  
Woodbury, Emerson

*Other Companies.*

Captain Edwin Turnock.

*Privates.*

Lancaster, Enoch  
Newman, Frederick  
Vandoosen, Robert  
Vandoosen, Daniel

The loss of Company H was eleven, of whom five died from wounds, and the remainder from disease. In the line of promotion First Lieutenant Joseph Turnock was promoted to Captain; Henry R. Fields, from Second to First Lieutenant; Alden Whitney, from the ranks to Second Lieutenant; Daniel N. Dressler, from the ranks to Second Lieutenant and then First Lieutenant; Hansom M. Beck, from the ranks to Second Lieutenant. William Augustine, Josiah Morrow, William M. Reece, were mustered out as Sergeants; Daniel M. Castetten, as Q. M. Sergeant; John Noel, as Com. Sergeant; Andrew J. Cruthers, as Bugler; David Augustine, David Baker, Daniel H. Cotton, Peter W. Herman and George W. Wright, as Corporals.

The Twelfth Cavalry was organized at Kendallville, Indiana, March 1, 1864, under Colonel Edward Anderson. Early in May, 1864, it left camp at Kendallville, and proceeded to Indianapolis, and, on the 6th of the same month, the regiment left that city for the field, under orders to proceed to Nashville, Tennessee. But six companies of the regiment were mounted, and all of the companies were armed as infantry, for want of cavalry arms, until the regiment arrived at Louisville, where the infantry arms were turned over by the six mounted companies, and cavalry arms were issued instead. The mounted portion of the regiment marched from Louisville to Nashville, under the command of Colonel Anderson, while the dismounted portion proceeded to Nashville by rail, under the command of Lieutenant Alfred Reed.

The regiment remained at Nashville, in camp of instruction, for about three weeks, when it was ordered to Huntsville, Alabama, for which place it started May 29, the dismounted portion proceeding thence by rail, under command of Colonel Anderson, the mounted portion marching from Nashville under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Reed. Colonel Anderson was assigned to the command of the railroad defenses from Decatur, Alabama, to Point Rock, Alabama, a distance of about sixty miles, and to the command of all that district of country lying between Huntsville and Point Rock, and between the Tennessee river and the Memphis & Charleston railroad, that portion of the country being, at the time, infested with several bands of guerrillas and "bushwhackers."

The dismounted companies were assigned to the especial defense of the railroad, and to the erection of block-houses, under the command of Major Orris Blake, and the six mounted companies (which were the only mounted cavalry then at or near Huntsville), under command of Colonel Anderson, were employed very actively in fighting and ridding the country of guerrillas and "bushwhackers," in which numerous skirmishes and engagements were fought, and quite a large number of the regiment were killed and wounded.

For about a month after the arrival of the regiment at Huntsville, the headquarters of the regiment were at that place, when they were removed to Brownsborough, where they remained until Sept. 15, 1864, when the regiment was ordered to Tullahoma, Tennessee, to garrison that post, where it arrived on the night of the same day, and reported to Major-General Milroy. Colonel Anderson was assigned to the command of the post, and also retained command of the regiment. Sept. 23d Colonel Anderson was relieved by orders from the Secretary of War, and was ordered to Indianapolis to report to Governor Morton for special service, soon after which he joined his command in the field. In the absence of Colonel Anderson, Major Blake was assigned to the post of Tullahoma and of the regiment, during which time the regiment was constantly employed in watching movements of the rebel General Forrest, who, with a large force, was then threatening Tullahoma and several other points along the line of the Nashville & Chattanooga railroad. In the meantime the regiment had several skirmishes with a part of Forrest's command, and with bands of guerrillas. In the month of October, 1864, Major Blake was ordered by the Secretary of War to report for duty to the Acting Assistant Provost Marshal General at Indianapolis, as assistant.

Three mounted companies—C, D and H—stationed at Huntsville, under command of Captain M. D. Williams, participated in the defense of that place, with the Thirteenth Cavalry, on the 1st of October, 1864, against the attack of a portion of the rebel Forrest's command. These companies subsequently joined the regiment at Tullahoma, and Nov. 26th, upon the evacuation of that post, the regiment proceeded to Murfreesboro, Tennessee, and participated in the battle of Wilkinson's Pike and Overall's Creek, and was employed in the several skirmishes in the defense of Murfreesboro against the command of Forrest, in December, 1864, Lieutenant-Colonel Reed commanding the regiment, and Colonel Anderson commanding the brigade to which the regiment was attached; soon after which the regiment proceeded to Nashville and went into winter quarters, and there received new arms, and was assigned to the Second Brigade, Seventh Division, Cavalry Corps.

Feb. 11, 1865, the regiment embarked on board transports and steamers, under orders to proceed to New Orleans, which orders were subsequently countermanded, and the regiment disembarked at Vicksburg, by order of Major General Canby, to engage in a raid along the Mobile and Ohio railroad. These orders were subsequently countermanded, and the regiment was newly mounted, arms changed and embarked again for New Orleans, where it arrived March 12, 1865, whence it proceeded to Navy Cove, Mobile Bay, reported to Major General Canby, and participated in the operations against the forts and defenses of Mobile, Alabama,

a portion of the regiment acting as escort to Major General Canby, and the balance engaged in running a courier line into Florida from near Fort Blakely, Alabama.

After the fall of Mobile the regiment reported, on the 17th of April, to Major General Grierson, and under the command of Major William H. Calkins, participated in the raid of over eight hundred miles through Alabama, into Georgia, and then across the State of Alabama to Columbus, Mississippi, where it arrived on the 28th day of May, 1865. The regiment was highly and specially complimented by Major General Grierson, in a letter to Governor Morton, for its gallant conduct and military discipline. Here the regiment remained under the command of Major Blake until about the middle of July, when Colonel Anderson rejoined his command, after a temporary absence, and proceeded with a portion of the regiment to Grenada, Mississippi, establishing the headquarters of the regiment there. Three companies, — D, K and L, — proceeded to Austin, on the Mississippi river, in command of Captain D. M. Graves, where they remained about two months, employed in protecting Government cotton and other property, and again reported for duty to Colonel Anderson, at Grenada, where that portion of the regiment remained, until orders were received for muster out.

The remaining six companies remained at Columbus, Mississippi, and vicinity, engaged in protecting Government cotton and other property, under the command of Major Blake, until they were ordered to proceed to Vicksburg, Mississippi, to join the balance of the regiment, which had proceeded there. These companies arrived Nov. 2, and Nov. 10, 1865, the regiment was mustered out of the service at Vicksburg, and ordered to proceed to Indianapolis, where it arrived November 16, and on the next day was honored with a public dinner by the citizens of the city, and was welcomed home by a public reception at the State House Grove, where addresses were delivered by Governor Baker and Colonel Trussler, Secretary of State, and were responded to by Colonel Anderson, Lieutenant-Colonel Reed, Major Calkins and Major Blake. The regiment was finally paid off, and its members received their discharges Nov. 22, 1865.

#### TWENTY-FIRST BATTERY.

This battery was made up principally from St. Joseph and La Porte counties. By reference to the report of the Adjutant-General of the State it will be found the following named are credited to St Joseph county, with their rank at date of enlistment:

*Second Lieutenant.*  
William E. Chess.

*Q. M. Sergeant.*  
Miller, Alfred B.

*Sergeants.*  
Hicks, George F.  
Baird, Henry C.  
Whitten, William M.

*Corporals.*  
Young, Joseph  
Lobdell, David M.  
Ritter, William H.  
Gross, William  
Miller, David B.  
Pennewell, Frank  
Keller, Lewis

*Bugler.*  
Cory, George F.

*Privates.*  
Bernhart, Welchom  
Blake, James E.  
Barrett, Wesley  
Coonly, Benjamin  
Carpenter, Jay S.  
Dodd, William H.  
Gibson, Absalom  
Green, James H.  
Green, Edward M.  
Gipsom, George B.  
Hoover, William S.  
Hartzell, Elijah H.  
Hardman, Hiram E.  
Huff, Benjamin F.  
Huff, William H.  
Huff, Aaron  
Holloway, Edward P.  
Hintzman, John A.

Johnson, James A.  
Johnson, Henry  
Keazey, Jr., Joseph  
Kent, James D.  
Miller, Martin M.  
McNabb, Addison  
McNabb, Ezra F.  
Meyer, George  
Meyer, John J.  
Mather, John  
Orvis, Willard  
Peffley, Simon P.  
Peak, Alexander  
Ryan, Jeremiah  
Roof, Daniel  
Ritter, David M.  
Ritter, Marcus D.  
Slick, Thomas J.  
Schaffer, Peter  
Siexas, Eugene  
Shank, John H.  
Taylor, Charles J.  
Tarbell, Ami H.  
Vandorn, John  
Wagoner, Prosper  
Wickely, Augustus

*Recruits.*  
Brandenburg, Sylvester  
Blyler, John  
Balm, Allen  
Bills, Frederick  
Burnhart, Nicholas  
Busett, James E.  
Bonebrake, William H. H.  
Best, Franklin  
Cease, William G.  
Casteter, Samuel  
Cummings, Richard  
Dodd, George A.  
Drury, John B.  
Eads, Lewis T.  
Gorman, Patrick J.  
Hoose, John  
Heck, William C.  
Ingersoll, Jerry W.  
Jennings, Samuel  
Knepp, Jonathan  
Klindinst, John  
Kindigg, Daniel  
Keller, Cyrenius  
Karcher, Jacob  
Laurand, Anthony  
Lind, George W.  
McCrary, George  
Murphy, Benjamin  
McCarthy, James S.  
McCombs, John  
McCombs, Lambert  
Metcalf, Charles P.  
Maurer, Charles  
Orvis, George W.  
Osborne, Peter  
Pool, William  
Peters, Henry  
Putnam, Albert B.  
Phinny, William  
Reidinger, Jacob  
Ruunion, Isaac  
Staples, Alexander  
Staples, Henry  
Sandwehr, Mark  
Sollenburger, Thomas  
Vogle, Peter  
Woolman, Henry  
Whiteman, Jesse W.  
West, Thomas J.  
White, John

The loss of the battery from St. Joseph county was eleven who died from wounds or disease.

The Twenty-first Battery of Light Artillery was organized and mustered into service at Indianapolis Sept. 9, 1862, with William W. Andrew as Captain, and immediately left for Covington, Kentucky, then threatened by the invading forces of Kirby Smith. From Covington it moved to Lexington, and from thence marched to Richmond and Danville, and then to Louisville. At the latter place it remained until Feb. 2, 1863, when it proceeded to Nashville, Tennessee. From there it moved to Carthage, Tennessee, from whence it marched with an expedition to Rome, Georgia, and there skirmished with the enemy March 19 and 20, and after capturing a number of prisoners returned to Carthage. While on duty at this place they engaged in other expeditions, skirmishing with the enemy at Gainsboro on the 5th of April, and at Carthage May 4.

June 3 the battery left Carthage and proceeded to Murfreesboro, joining General Reynold's division of Rosecrans' army at that

place and advancing with it June 24, toward Manchester. In the engagement at Hoover's Gap the battery participated, and during the summer and fall marched with the army in the campaign against Chattanooga. After crossing the Tennessee it engaged the enemy at Catlett's Gap, Georgia, and participated in the great battle of Chickamanga. Falling back with the army from that field, it remained at Chattanooga until the 5th of December, during which time it was engaged in the storming of Mission Ridge Nov. 25. Proceeding to Nashville, the battery remained there during the winter and the following spring.

March 26, 1864, it moved to Columbia, at which place it was engaged with the rebels under General Forrest on the 1st of October. Sept. 17 Capt. William W. Andrew was discharged for disability from wounds and Lieutenant Abram P. Andrew was promoted his successor. On Hood's advance the battery moved to Nashville, and was under fire in the engagement before that place on the 15th and 16th of December. After the battle it remained at Nashville as part of the reserve artillery until it was ordered to be mustered out of service. Arriving at Indianapolis from Nashville June 21, 1865, with five officers and one hundred and forty-two men for final discharge, it was present at a public reception given to the returned soldiers at the State House, at which welcoming speeches were made by Governor Morton, Generals Hovey and Wilder, and others. On the same day the battery was formally mustered out of and discharged from service. The Twenty-first Battery entered service with one hundred and forty-one men and five officers, and during its term of service received sixty-nine recruits. Its losses were as follows: Killed in action, two; died of wounds received in action, one; died from injuries received by explosion of ammunition, two; died of disease, twenty-one; discharged, twenty-nine; deserted, seven.

In the line of promotion William E. Chess was promoted from Second to First Lieutenant; William M. Whitten, from Sergeant to Second Lieutenant; Alfred B. Miller, from Quartermaster Sergeant to Second Lieutenant.

#### ROLL OF HONOR.

"It is sweet and honorable to die for one's country." Thus it may be written over the graves of the following named, who freely gave their lives to save the Union, and whose memory will ever be kept green by those who remain behind:

#### OFFICERS.

Capt. James Houghton—Killed at Battle of Shiloh, Tenn., April 7, 1862.  
Capt. Isaac M. Pettit—Died of wounds received in action, March 19, 1863.  
Capt. Frank A. Hardman—Died March 15, 1862, near Nashville, Tenn.  
Lieut. Seth B. Parker—Killed at battle of Chickamauga, Georgia, Sept. 19, 1863.  
Lieut. William H. Criswell—Killed at battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.

Lieut. Solomon H. Fountain—Died April 9, 1865, of wounds received in action.  
 Capt. Thomas B. Roberts—Died July 4, 1862.  
 Chaplain Joseph R. Albright—Died of disease, Dec. 5, 1862.  
 Surgeon Samuel Higginbotham—Died of disease, May 29, 1863.  
 Capt. James M. Holliday—Killed at battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.

## NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND PRIVATES.

Auten, John—Killed at Bealington, Virginia, July 10, 1861.  
 Asoshire, John H.—Died at La Grange, Tenn., Jan. 30, 1863.  
 Adams, Andrew—Killed at battle of Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Ashley, Henry J.—Died October 21, 1863, from wounds.  
 Boyd, Robert F.—Died at Cheat Mountain, Nov. 6, 1861.  
 Brown, Thomas—Died May 9, 1862, from wounds received in action.  
 Baugh, Henry—Died at Corinth, Miss., June 7, 1862.  
 Bonney, Benjamin—Died at Nashville, March 20, 1864.  
 Bedker, Frederick—Died at Louisville, April 28, 1862.  
 Bowers, Samuel—Died at Louisville, Jan. 20, 1862.  
 Brewer, John—Died near Murfreesboro, Feb. 15, 1863.  
 Brown, Mahlon—Died at Bowling Green, Jan. 5, 1863.  
 Beglin, John A.—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Jan. 25, 1863.  
 Bulla, William H.—Died Oct. 15, 1863, from wounds.  
 Bartlett, Edwin A.—Died at Richmond, Va., Nov. 18, 1863.  
 Bowen, Benjamin B.—Died in prison in Georgia, Oct. 28, 1864.  
 Bowen, George W.—Died at Nashville, July 9, 1864.  
 Baker, Daniel W.—Died at Knoxville, Tenn., July 14, 1864.  
 Blake, James E.—Died at Danville, Ky., Jan. 31, 1863.  
 Bowen, Abner—Died in 1863.  
 Behee, Leonard—Died at Paducah, Ky., in 1862.  
 Brown, Jesse—Died July 4, 1862.  
 Clements, James—Died at Louisville, March 18, 1862.  
 Clemens, Charles W.—Killed in military prison, July, 1863.  
 Cotton, Gregory H.—Killed by accidental shot, Oct. 2, 1864.  
 Currier, William—Died in Andersonville prison, May 30, 1864.  
 Claffey, Thomas—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Jan. 10, 1865.  
 Crites, Philip—Killed at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Custer, James—Died.  
 Curn, Edward—Killed at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Daugherty, Jacob—Killed by railroad accident at Chattanooga, May, 25, 1864.  
 Ducomb, James M.—Died in rebel hospital, May 15, 1862.  
 Dively, Lorenzo—Died at Danville, Ky., Dec. 1, 1862.  
 Dively, George—Died at Nashville, Nov. 21, 1862.  
 Deelman, Adam—Killed at Atlanta, Aug. 4, 1864.  
 Dirst, Herman—Died at Nashville, May 3, 1863.  
 Davis, Charles D.—Died at Madison, Ind., Feb. 23, 1865.  
 Drake, John—Killed at Corinth, Oct. 4, 1862.  
 Ells, William P.—Died at Huntsville, Ala., July 7, 1864.  
 Fluckey, William C.—Died at Knoxville, Tenn., Aug. 13, 1864.  
 Finley, James B.—Died near Murfreesboro, Jan. 28, 1863.  
 Finney, Abram—Killed by accidental shot, Feb. 6, 1865.  
 Frazer, David—Killed at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Frederick, Benjamin—Died July 4, 1862.  
 Fulmer, William M.—Died Feb. 11, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Gilman, Francis M.—Died at Cheat Mountain, Dec. 10, 1861.  
 Gillan, James M.—Died in Andersonville prison, Sept. 18, 1864.  
 Gondrich, Alexander—Died May 10, 1862.  
 Gay, Ebert—Died Jan. 14, 1864, from wounds.  
 Greenleaf, Henry C.—Died at Louisville, Sept. 16, 1862.  
 Guibert, George—Died at Nashville, March 31, 1863.  
 Green, Albert C.—Died at Chattanooga, May 23, 1864.  
 Gipsom, George B.—Died at Carthage, Tenn., June 3, 1863.



- Grindle, Henry—Died at Paducah, Ky., in 1862.  
 Gilfoyle, Michael—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Hooper, Isaac—Died at New Albany.  
 Harris, Edward—Died at Huttonville, Va., Nov. 17, 1861.  
 Hennessey, Michael—Killed at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Higgins, James—Died at Louisville, Jan. 19, 1863.  
 Hight, William—Died at Liberty Mills, Ind., May 23, 1863.  
 Hill, William—Killed at Mission Ridge, Nov. 25, 1863.  
 Hogle, William H. H.—Died Jan. 7, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Hoover, Jonas H.—Killed at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Harding, Edward—Died at Columbia, Tenn., May 31, 1862.  
 Holwell, Henry—Died at Louisville, March 6, 1862.  
 Hart, John W.—Died at Camp Nevin, Nov. 23, 1861.  
 Henderson, Dayton—Died at home in 1862.  
 Hildebrand, Elijah—Died in 1863, from wounds received at Chickamauga.  
 Henry, John—Died at Rick's River, Ky., Oct. 16, 1862.  
 Huey, William H.—Died at Nashville, Feb. 3, 1863.  
 Hincbaugh, Jacob—Died near Glasgow, Ky., Nov. 18, 1862.  
 Heminger, Peter—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 20, 1863.  
 Hathaway, Jesse—Died at Newbern, N. C., April 28, 1865, from wounds.  
 Huyler, Simon H.—Killed by railroad accident, Nov. 1, 1864.  
 Hanville, Charles M.—Killed by railroad accident, Nov. 1, 1864.  
 Hardy, James—Died at Nashville, Sept. 8, 1864.  
 Herman, John—Died at Vienna, Ala., Aug. 11, 1864, from wounds.  
 Herman, Reuben—Died at Vienna, Ala., Aug. 11, 1864, from wounds.  
 Huff, Aaron—Died at home, March 11, 1863.  
 Hicks, George F.—Died at Chattanooga, Tenn., Oct. 7, 1863, of wounds.  
 Herchelrode, John—Died at Memphis, Aug. 21, 1863.  
 Harriman, John—Died at Memphis, Aug. 21, 1863.  
 Horn, John—Died at St. Louis, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 Hunt, Jesse—Died at Memphis, Oct. 14, 1862.  
 Hall, George—Died at Vicksburg, in 1864.  
 Ham, John—Died in 1862.  
 Hunter, Robert—Died at Paducah in 1862.  
 Johnson, James A.—Died at Carthage, Tenn., March 25, 1863.  
 James, Joel—Died at Memphis, June 4, 1863.  
 Jones, John L.—Died at Memphis, June 4, 1863.  
 Jennings, Phineas E.—Died Jan. 8, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Keller, David—Died at Savannah, Tenn., April 15, 1862.  
 Keifer, Jacob H.—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 20, 1863.  
 Kelsey, Irwin H.—Died at New Albany, Ind., July 17, 1863.  
 Klink, John D.—Died at Louisville, Jan. 2, 1865.  
 Kiser, Daniel—Died at Lakeville, Ind., Sept. 2, 1864.  
 Keazey, Jr., Joseph—Died at home, Jan. 14, 1864.  
 Kline, John—Died.  
 Kizar, Henry—Died in 1862.  
 Kelley, Charles G.—Died of wounds at Corinth, Oct. 10, 1862.  
 Kitung, Reuben—Died in 1862.  
 Kembel, Alexander M.—Died in 1862.  
 Lescobier, Frederick—Died at Cheat Mountain, Oct. 25, 1861.  
 Landenberger, Michael—Died Jan. 23, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Lucia, Sheffield—Died Jan. 25, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Lenegar, Isaac—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Lane, Ephraim T.—Killed at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Lichtenberger, William—Died at South Bend, Ind., March 26, 1864.  
 Lahman, Henry—Killed at Kingston, N. C., March 10, 1865.  
 Miller, Jesse—Killed at Shiloh, April 7, 1862.  
 Michael, Solomon—Died at Mishawaka, Ind., July 11, 1862.  
 McDonald, Michael—Killed at Mission Ridge, Nov. 25, 1863.  
 Markel, Benjamin F.—Killed at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Mangus, Elias—Died at Danville, Va., prison, April 15, 1862.  
 Mangus, Peter—Died in Florence, South Carolina, prison, Oct. 10, 1864.  
 Mangus, Eli—Died at Tullahoma, Tenn., Sept. 8, 1862.



- Mapes, Henry—Died at Andersonville prison, Oct. 6, 1864.  
 Miller, Elias—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Musson, Alonzo—Died at Louisville, April 13, 1862.  
 Mareen, James P.—Died at Corinth, Miss., Jan. 14, 1862.  
 Mountz, Eli—Died at Nashville, April 8, 1862.  
 Mapes, John J.—Died at Louisville, July 17, 1863.  
 Moon, William H.—Killed at Stone River, Dec. 31, 1862.  
 Mangherman, William H.—Died at Louisville, July 23, 1863.  
 Miller, Isaac—Died at Marietta, Georgia, Aug. 7, 1864.  
 Mangus, Caleb—Died at New Albany, Ind., May 1, 1864.  
 McKnabb, Horton—Died at Vienna, Ala., Aug. 11, 1864, from wounds.  
 Maxwell, Richard—Died at Fort Gaines, Ala., May 1, 1865.  
 Martin, Jacob—Died at Vienna, Ala., Aug. 11, 1864, from wounds.  
 Metz, Frederick D.—Died at Huntsville, Ala., Aug. 27, 1864.  
 Miller, Martin M.—Died at Nashville, March 10, 1863.  
 Murphy, Benjamin—Died at Columbia, Tenn., July 1, 1864.  
 Miller, Miles H.—Killed at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Martin, John—Died from wounds, at Memphis, Jan. 6, 1863.  
 Miller, Moses—Died at Paducah in 1862.  
 Myers, David—Died at Louisville, July 26, 1862.  
 Moon, John R.—Died at Camp Nevin, Nov. 12, 1861.  
 Mountz, Andrew—Died at Louisville, Oct. 12, 1862.  
 Moffit, Ephraim—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Jan. 18, 1863.  
 Norman, James—Died at Clarksville, Va., July 8, 1861.  
 Owens, John—Died at Nashville, Sept. 3, 1863.  
 Odell, Jonas—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Dec. 13, 1862.  
 Oliver, Alonzo—Died at Kingston, Ga., July 5, 1864.  
 Potts, John—Died at Andersonville, Feb. 2, 1865.  
 Packard, Leverene—Died at Corinth, June 18, 1862.  
 Pickett, Selah—Died at Madison, Ind., Dec. 1, 1863.  
 Pressey, Charles O.—Died at Bowling Green, Ky., Dec. 2, 1862.  
 Pratt, William—Died at Andersonville prison, Sept. 13, 1864.  
 Parrish, William T.—Died at Louisville, Dec. 10, 1862.  
 Paul, George—Died Jan. 2, 1863, from wounds.  
 Pearson, Hiram—Died at Danville, Ky., Nov. 9, 1862.  
 Palmer, Jesse—Died Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Parker, Thomas—Died at Murfreesboro, Aug. 1, 1863.  
 Quigley, John V.—Died at Harrodsburg, Ky., Nov. 9, 1862.  
 Rodgers, Joseph—Died at Huntsville, Ala.  
 Rockwell, Evi.—Died near Corinth, Miss., May 26, 1862.  
 Ritter, Benjamin—Died in Andersonville prison, Aug. 21, 1864.  
 Robinson, Joseph—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Nov. 25, 1862.  
 Ramsberger, John—Died at Nashville, Dec. 8, 1864.  
 Robinson, Martin G.—Died at Huntsville, Ala., Aug. 15, 1864.  
 Ritter, Jacob—Died at Paducah, Ky., Nov. 20, 1862.  
 Ross, Benjamin H.—Died.  
 Roberts, Thomas B.—Died July 4, 1862.  
 Rockhill, Jasper N.—Died at Corinth, Oct. 7, 1862, from wounds.  
 Rockwell, Willard—Died at Paducah, March 6, 1862.  
 Robbins, Levi—Died at Louisville, July 13, 1865.  
 Stiner, Daniel B.—Drowned in 1863.  
 Shepley, Samuel M.—Killed at Iuka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862.  
 Sipes, Jacob—Died at Vicksburg, Aug. 8, 1863.  
 Shelfmadine, John—Died at Jackson, Tenn., Sept. 11, 1862.  
 Shields, Patrick—Died at Paducah, Feb. 28, 1862.  
 Shearer, Harrison—Died in Andersonville prison.  
 Snure, Levi P.—Killed at Chickamauga, Sept. 19, 1863.  
 Schutt, Joseph—Drowned at Bowling Green, March 3, 1862.  
 Schenck, Daniel C.—Died Dec. 3, 1863, from wounds received at Mission Ridge.  
 Schultz, Abraham S.—Killed at Chickamauga, Dec. 19, 1863.  
 Steiner, Frederick—Died at Andersonville prison, Nov. 13, 1864.  
 Streable, William J.—Died at Savannah, Tenn., April 15, 1862.  
 Seybold, Benjamin F.—Died at Louisville, June 1, 1862.  
 Steiner, Benjamin F.—Died at Camp Nevin, Dec. 10, 1861.

Steiner, Henry—Drowned in Tenn. river, Dec. 12, 1864.  
 Streets, James B.—Died at Scottsville, Ky., Nov. 6, 1862.  
 Swank, Conrad—Died at Louisville, Dec. 11, 1862.  
 Schmidt, Benjamin—Died Nov. 7, 1863, from wounds.  
 Sumstine, John—Died Jan. 14, 1864, from wounds.  
 Smith, John I.—Died in St. Joseph county, Ind., May 5, 1865.  
 Shearer, Daniel—Died at Chattanooga, Aug. 1, 1864.  
 Shinewa, Joseph—Killed at Columbia, Tenn., Nov. 29, 1864.  
 Sauls, Francis—Died at Indianapolis, May 6, 1865.  
 Smith, David H.—Died in Andersonville prison, Feb. 3, 1865.  
 Swathwood, Jonathan—Died in 1862.  
 Somsley, Elias—Died at Terre Haute, Ind., June 28, 1862.  
 Tener, Henry—Died at Camp Nevin, Nov. 27, 1861.  
 Tener, Samuel—Died at Camp Nevin, Feb. 9, 1862.  
 Trueblood, William—Died at Nashville, Dec. 16, 1862.  
 Teel, Moses—Died Jan. 19, 1863, from wounds received at Stone River.  
 Thompson, John M.—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Nov. 29, 1862.  
 Tarbell, Ami H.—Died at home, Sept. 8, 1864.  
 Tuttle, Francis D.—Died at Memphis, Feb. 20, 1864.  
 Ungry, Daniel B.—Killed at Shiloh, April 17, 1862.  
 Vanriper, John—Died at Gallatin, Tenn., Jan. 22, 1863.  
 Varney, William C.—Killed at Mission Ridge, Nov. 25, 1863.  
 Valentine, Michael—Died.  
 Watkins, Regin—Died at Chattanooga, July 4, 1864.  
 Westfall, George—Died near Nashville, Dec. 5, 1862.  
 Whitman, Daniel E.—Died at Camp Nevin, Nov. 14, 1861.  
 Williams, Albion A.—Died at Louisville, Nov. 21, 1861.  
 Weir, John—Died at Knoxville, Tenn., July 14, 1864.  
 Wilson, Ira A.—Died from accident at Washington, June 3, 1865.  
 Wedgeworth, Jonas R.—Died at Columbia, South Carolina, Feb. 15, 1865.  
 Wilson, William H.—Died March 3, 1865.  
 Wells, Ozias—Died July 2, 1863.  
 Wykoff, George—Died in 1863.  
 Wells, William H.—Died in 1862.  
 Woollett, Michael—Died at Evansville, Aug. 7, 1862.  
 Wiggins, John—Died at Evansville in 1862.  
 Wagoner, Prosper—Died at home, Jan. 29, 1864.  
 Woolman, Henry—Died at Louisville, Feb. 25, 1863.  
 Woodbury, Emerson—Died at Murfreesboro, Dec. 20, 1864, from wounds.  
 Young, Silas—Died at Knoxville, Tenn., Dec. 2, 1864.  
 Zeigler, James—Killed at Iuka, Sept. 19, 1862.

#### THE FIRST MARTYR.

John Auten, a member of Co. I, Ninth Regiment Indiana Volunteers, was killed in a scouting expedition the afternoon of July 10, 1861, being the first man from St. Joseph county killed by the enemy. He was a son of Abram Auten, of Portage township, and was in the 22d year of his age. His energy, patriotism and bravery were evinced in that he was not detailed to go with the expedition, but of his own accord joined the scouting party, who were taken from another company. He could not brook the idea of being inactive when there was work to be done, or an enemy to fight. His death was well avenged, and his friends and relatives, in their anguish at his loss, had at least the consolation of knowing that he fell bravely fighting in the sacred cause of his country, "with his feet to the field, and his face to the foe." He was loved and respected by all who knew him, and his death was deeply mourned by all the citizens. His body was sent home for interment, and his funeral at South

Bend, on Friday, Aug. 2, 1861, was attended by at least 5,000 people, testifying their respect for the deceased, and their sympathy for the noble cause in which he had sacrificed his life. The services were held in the court-house, and an eloquent and appropriate sermon was preached by Rev. J. C. Reed. The coffin was enveloped in the national flag, and was tastily ornamented with evergreen. Upon the top of the coffin were laid the revolvers captured by the deceased from a rebel officer. His body was escorted to the grave by a large number of his brother soldiers, marching with arms reversed and to the sound of military music. Three rounds of eight guns were fired over his grave by the military squad under command of Lieutenant Blowney, and the vast assemblage then retired.

#### BLACK HAWK WAR.

*By Judge Thomas S. Stanfield.*

The great event in this locality in 1832 was the Black Hawk war. One morning John Defrees came into our house and told us that the Indians had broken out into open hostility against the frontier people way beyond us. This was the first we had heard of it. It was not long, however, before fugitives from the west came dashing through pell-mell, as if they expected every instant to hear the dread war-whoop of Black Hawk behind them. Many of them were so frightened they hardly took time to take up their women and children before starting, and went sailing through South Bend without stopping to inform us of our danger. Others had come so far and fast they were compelled to stop and feed and rest their horses, and while so employed embraced the opportunity to circulate the most frightful stories of savage brutality perpetrated by Black Hawk and his followers upon the unoffending and unprotected inhabitants just beyond where the fugitives came from. The continuance of this flight and its increase in volume, together with the enlarged area of Indian hostilities, and the apprehension that the Pottawatomies, who then more than equaled the white population of this county, might be in sympathy with the warring tribes under Black Hawk, began to alarm a great many people in our locality, especially people not familiar with frontier life.

Different localities immediately organized, drilled military companies, and built forts for their protection. The people on Portage Prairie and vicinity were among the first to build a block house. It was situated on old Daniel Miller's farm. It was understood here (South Bend) to be occupied by a military force, and was regarded as an advance guard that would have to be overcome before the enemy would reach us. It was understood there was a night picket guard kept up around the block house, so that we need not apprehend a night surprise from the enemy. Many people reposed in confident slumbers, believing that the lives of themselves and little ones were protected by the watchful diligence of the night guard. On one occasion when the excitement was

up to the highest pitch, the guard was set at proper distance and duly cautioned as to their responsibilities, and what their country expected of them. Among the rest was an old fellow who had lived on the frontier all his life, and knew about what reliance was to be placed in such rumors; and having no fear of the Indians, and believing the whole thing so far as there being any danger to the people of this part of the country a childish fear of the Indians, with such feelings he took his station as a watchman for the night. After the night began to wear away he got sleepy, and entertaining the opinion he did of the folly of the whole performance, it was an easy matter to give way to his drowsy feelings, so he stood his gun up against a tree, and quietly laid himself down and went to sleep, and was soon oblivious to all danger from the tomahawk and scalping-knife of the red-skins. At the proper time an officer in charge of the picket-guard passed around to see that all were in the strict discharge of their duty, when to his great astonishment and utter disgust he found this man not only asleep on his post, but actually snoring away as unconscious of danger as if Black Hawk and his followers were in a similar condition in the bottom of Lake Michigan. This was a fearful breach of military law; a reckless disregard of human life; a capital offense. Such a willful disregard of duty could not be overlooked. It must be punished, or all military subordination would be at an end. Without enforcing strict military discipline no efficient defense could be expected, and all would be inevitably lost. With all these thoughts fighting through the mind of the officer, he indignantly and in no gentle manner aroused the unconscious sleeper into a realizing sense of the enormity of his crime, and in an unceremonious manner marched him off to the guard-house, duly admonishing him of his impending fate. It is easier to imagine than to describe what must have been the feelings of this poor, thoughtless soldier while waiting in the guard-house to hear his doom announced.

When the officers assembled in the block house in the morning, his case was reported in all its naked deformity. They all felt it was a grievous thing to inflict the extreme penalty of the law, but duty was their imperative master, and they were not the men to shirk duty. So with one voice it was declared that the delinquent should be shot. It was a painful duty, but it must be done. Before this resolution could be carried out, it occurred to some of them that it was unlawful to put a man to death without a trial—that there must be a judgment or sentence pronounced by a competent court, or the taking off would be murder. Then they were all in a quandary. Who was to compose such a court? How was it to be organized? Did it have a jury? Were they to be selected from soldiers or citizens? Was the criminal entitled to be present by himself and counsel? Was the trial to be public or secret? All these questions were discussed. They searched the revised statutes and consulted ex-justice of the peace, but no light was thrown upon the vexed question. It had never been revealed to them that there

was such a thing as a written military code, and they were all left in the dark and perplexed as to what they should do, and in that condition of mind concluded it would be better to let the poor culprit go than to run the risk of putting a man to death without due process of law. So the victim was permitted to enjoy a whole hide for many years afterward, and died a natural death. I will not swear this story is all true, but it is in substance as it was reported at the time, and as it took place so long ago I do not believe it can be disproved, and therefore I have recorded it as veritable history. My own personal observations were more strictly confined to South Bend and its immediate neighborhood. It could hardly be expected that one could note and remember all the military operations in a distant field like around the block house on Portage Prairie, and remember them after the lapse of 49 years.

Col. Hiram Dayton was quite a noted man of that period. He lived where Adam Baker now resides. He was not only willing to sacrifice all his wife's relations upon the altar of his country, but was willing to sacrifice himself. In our present peril he volunteered to lead a company against the enemy. He beat up for volunteers, and the fighting men soon flocked to his standard. A company was immediately organized. The Captain drilled his men until he was satisfied with their proficiency, and then dismissed them with his compliments to meet again at one minute's call. Hence they were called minute men. Allow me to whisper in your ear that I was one of that Spartan Band. Still the people were not satisfied that all had been done for their protection that ought to be done. No one doubted the courage or skill of Captain Dayton and his company, but not long could such a short wall of flesh stand against the concentrated forces of the enemy under Black Hawk. It was a question of too much importance to be postponed or trifled with. A large majority insisted on building a fort. They said other exposed places were protecting themselves in this way, and we must also. So it was agreed on all hands that a fort should be built. At first there was some difficulty about its location. But after consulting the best military experience it was concluded to occupy that triangular piece of ground bounded by Jefferson street on the south, St. Joseph on the west, and Pearl on the northeast. Some objected to this location because they said the Indians might conceal themselves in the brush under the hill just above where Menssel's old brewery now stands, and slip up at night and cut off the picket guard, but their criticisms were disregarded, and we went on with the construction of the fort in good earnest on the location described. The ground was to be enclosed by a wall of timbers made of split logs or puncheons, to be set in the ground three feet deep and rising above nine or ten feet. This wall was to be pierced at proper places with port-holes to fire from. I cannot for the life of me recall the name of the military engineer who designed the fort. I have no recollection of seeing Captain Dayton there. It was before Lathrop M. Taylor had been elevated

to the Coloneley of the 79th Regiment, or Francis R. Tutt to the Lient.-Coloneley of the same; nor had Dr. Hardman yet become Major of that regiment, and it is very doubtful whether that regiment had been organized, and it is certain that neither Taylor, Tutt, nor Hardman had then risen above the rank of a private; so that there is no certainty that the plan of the fort sprang from the fertile brain of either of them. It is feared that the name of the designer of this fort will forever be lost to the history of South Bend.

The people of the town went to work earnestly to build the fort, according to the plans and specifications. The excitement was then up to fever heat. The county was full of the wildest and most improbable stories of Indian atrocities, and yet a great many people would believe them and insist that the Pottawatomies were secretly hostile and only waiting a favorable opportunity to break out into open warfare. As an illustration of the feeling then existing, I remember while we were at work on the fort, a Pottawatomie came sauntering along by us, looking through the cracks between the puncheons, and as soon as it was noticed, it was earnestly asserted by many that he was a spy, and ought to be arrested and shot at once. One man was particularly fierce on the subject. After awhile the work on the fort began to lag. People were coming to their senses and regarded the danger as much farther off than at first supposed, and besides, the United States Government was now earnestly engaged in suppressing Black Hawk and his hostile tribes. Still there was a lurking fear in the minds of some, and it was thought best to send out a party of our own people to make a reconnoissance sixty or seventy miles west. These men went out on the expedition. I think it was made up of Jonathan A. Liston, Elisha Egbert and Dr. Stoddard; but I am not certain as to the persons, though I saw them on their horses as they started off.

After several days' absence they returned and reported to the people in front of Johnson's tavern. Among other things they said they had been sixty or seventy miles west and had made diligent inquiries as to the whereabouts of Black Hawk and his warriors, and they felt perfectly sure there was not a hostile Indian within one hundred and fifty miles of us, and that no apprehension need be felt of any danger from the Pottawatomies; that the chief, Po Kagon, was undoubtedly friendly, and as evidence of it he kept the American flag flying over his cabin, and that if any of his tribes were unfriendly they would remain neutral. At the announcement of this word neutral Joe Hanby, an erratic kind of a Pennsylvania Dutchman, cried out, "Tam old Neutral; he is mit Black Hawk now!" The fears of the people were well quieted by this time, and they raised a great laugh at Joe's blunder. This was the end of the Black Hawk excitement in this part of the country; but there was a little breeze sprung up in South Bend a short time afterward growing out of it. The Governor of this State had called out a battalion of three hundred cavalry, and started them under

command of Col. Rupel to the front. They never got nearer than one hundred miles of the place where their services were needed, and while they were dallying along between Lafayette and Chicago, John Defrees, without expecting them to return by way of South Bend, had the temerity to say in his paper, "That it was not to be expected that this holiday battalion would ever be found within a hundred miles of a hostile Indian," and other hostile things not very complimentary to their bravery or efficiency. In a short time afterward these fellows lit down on us suddenly as if they had dropped out of the sky. They were going to make mince-meat of John Defrees right off. I saw a company overhaul and surround him as he was passing along the street. Judging from the threatening language and manner of his captors, I expected to see him depart life in about three seconds, but some of the prominent officers rushed in and kept the furious ones at bay. Notwithstanding his perilous situation, Mr. Defrees stood up manfully before them and insisted upon his right as an editor of a newspaper to criticise the conduct of this battalion. But the men swore if they were not permitted to lynch him, his press and type should go into the river. The printing office was in the second story of a hewed-log house, accessible only by an outside stairway. A squad started for it, but in the meantime Capt. Anthony Defrees had collected around him, in the printing office, five or six men all well armed. As soon as one of the squad put his foot on the stairway, the Captain warned him that if he came any further it would be at the peril of his life; then he would back out, and another would come as if he intended to go right up, but as soon as he saw five or six guns leveled at him, he would suddenly conclude that it would not be a healthy undertaking and would back out. The squad would leave and another would come more determined and threatening than their predecessors, but as soon as the old Captain and his men would level their guns on them, their courage would ooze out and they would retire in good order. And so they kept coming and going for three or four hours. They had swords and pistols, but no guns, and they knew some one would get hurt before they could get Captain Defrees and his men out of that hewed log-house, and considering discretion the better part of valor, marched off without exterminating John D. Defrees or his printing office, and were always afterward recognized and known as "the bloody three hundred."

This closes the history of our connection with the Black Hawk war. The unrequited services of that valiant corps under Captain Dayton is but another instance of the ingratitude of a republic.



## CHAPTER VIII.

RAILROADS.—TERRIBLE RAILROAD ACCIDENT.—THE TELEGRAPH.—  
FERRIES.

### RAILROADS.

The citizens of this county early took an interest in railroad matters, and were determined at the earliest practical moment the iron horse should speed over the prairies and through the timber of the beautiful St. Joseph valley. Notwithstanding a large number were favorable to a railroad enterprise, there were yet those that opposed it and favored the less expensive canal. The same argument offered by farmers and breeders of horses throughout the country, was made here: the building of a railroad would destroy this industry, and horses, which then commanded a good price, would be worthless in the markets.

In February, 1835, the Legislature of the State passed an act incorporating the Buffalo & Mississippi Railroad, it being the design of the company to build a railroad from Buffalo, New York, to some point on the Mississippi river. Under this act a company was organized in 1838, to build a road through this State from some point on the eastern line of the State to Michigan City on the west. Gen. Joseph Orr, of La Porte county, was made president of the company. During this same year a survey was made from Michigan City to South Bend, and the contract let for grading the road from the former place to La Porte. Some three or four miles were properly graded, when the company ran out of money, and the work was abandoned.

Everything in the direction of railroad building now lay dormant for a number of years. In the spring of 1847 the discussion of the question was again commenced, and in August of that year a meeting of all interested in a line from Toledo, Ohio, to Chicago, Illinois, was called at Mishawaka. A large number of leading men from Chicago and Toledo, as well as many other points, met according to the call, Judge Stanfield, of South Bend, presiding. Great interest was manifested by all in having the road built, but nothing was directly accomplished at that meeting.

A party of capitalists in New York, about that time, purchased the Michigan Southern railroad, then running from Toledo, Ohio, and Monroe, Michigan, to Hillsdale, in the latter State. It was now thought the objects of the people in this county, as well as in the entire St. Joseph valley, could be accomplished by uniting with that company, having them build the road in this direction.



To this end correspondence was opened between interested parties who responded to the call at Mishawaka, and the officers of the Michigan Southern. The latter party responded favorably, and made a proposition to build their road to the Indiana State line on the east, provided a company was organized to build through the State to the Illinois line, and from thence to Chicago.

Agreeably to this proposition a company was organized in Indiana and a charter obtained for a road, under the name of the Northern Indiana Railroad Company. Soon after this object was effected, an effort was made to consolidate the two companies into one, which effort was successful, the consolidation taking effect in 1850 under the name of the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana Railway Company. The united company now proceeded to let contracts and build the road through Northern Indiana to La Porte and from Michigan City to Chicago, in the meantime making a further survey and leaving open the project for building the road between La Porte and Michigan City.

It being the desire of the company to reach Chicago by the easiest, shortest and most practicable route, and the grade between La Porte and Michigan City being so great, as well as the line being lengthened in reaching Chicago in that way, it was determined to abandon the charter of the Northern Indiana Railroad Company, under which they were operating, west of La Porte, and adopt that of the Buffalo & Mississippi Company. Under the charter of this latter company the road was then constructed from La Porte to Chicago as it now runs. About 20 miles of track west of Michigan City was taken up, the present line intersecting the road as built from that point to Chicago at this place.

It must not be inferred from what has already been said that the railroad company was pursuing this work without serious obstacles being thrown in the way of accomplishing their ends. At the same time this road was being constructed, the Michigan Central was also being built, and this was upon an almost parallel line. Each road had for its terminus Chicago, and each wished to reach the city first, and if possible prevent the other from reaching it at all. It was not thought possible there could be business enough to pay both roads. The friends of the Michigan Central could not, of course, prevent altogether the building of the Michigan Southern, but did manage to have incorporated into the charter of the latter road, by the Michigan Legislature, that it should not go nearer than two miles of the Indiana line until after it reached Constantine, in Michigan. This did not suit the Michigan Southern Company. They did not care about taking in Constantine, but did wish to reach Indiana as quickly as possible, and thence by the shortest route into Chicago. As "love laughs at locksmiths," so railroad companies laugh at legislative enactments designed to throw obstacles in their way.

When the Michigan Southern Company reached White Pigeon, Michigan, they were within two miles of the Indiana line on the

south, but four miles in the direction they were running. At this juncture Judge Stanfield, of South Bend, proposed to the company, if they would furnish the money he would undertake to buy the right of way, get the roads vacated by the county authorities, and build it the four miles from White Pigeon to the Indiana line. His proposition was accepted, and he lost no time in carrying out his contract, this road being known as the Portage railroad. For ten years the Judge held this line in his own name, the Michigan Legislature refusing to amend the charter allowing them to run into Indiana east of Constantine. When the charter was amended, however, the Judge assigned all his right and title to the company, which, of course, had been operating it all this time under a lease from Mr. Stanfield.

In order to aid in the construction of the road, the County Commissioners, under instruction from the people who petitioned them for that purpose, voted a subscription of \$40,000 to the capital stock of the company; but in consequence of there being a sufficient sum subscribed by the people to build and equip the road, the amount was never issued. About \$15,000 was subscribed by the people of this county, which amount was all bought up by Judge Stanfield for Eastern parties, at a premium of 25 per cent., in the year 1851. This was fortunate for those investing, as in a short time the stock went down to 60 cents on the dollar. Thus a line of railroad was obtained in this county without costing the people one cent.

The name of the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana Railway Company was retained until its consolidation with the Lake Shore road from Cleveland to Buffalo, when it took the name of the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroad, by which name it is now known. It is one of the leading railroad companies in the United States.

On Saturday evening, Oct. 4, 1851, the first through train from Lake Erie reached South Bend, and created a great deal of excitement and enthusiasm. Says a local writer at the time: "Brilliant bonfires were the order of the evening, and when, at 9 p. m., the locomotive, John Stryker, came puffing into the midst of the multitudes who were assembled, cheer after cheer rent the air, the cannon also poured forth its deep-toned greeting in forty-eight rounds, and for the first time in our streets were heard 'Walk this way to the Washington House omnibus,' 'Show your baggage for the American Hotel.' We did not estimate the number of hundreds that were present. All the town were there in the first place, men, women and children, ministers, merchants and mechanics, old and young, and quite a number from the country around. And this, too, when it was more than doubtful whether the cars would come that evening or not, the track not being finished that evening until after nightfall. The first train east from here Monday morning took thirty passengers—a very fair commencement, and its departure was honored by seventeen rounds of the cannon. Monday

afternoon the locomotive Goshen brought in a heavy freight train, and in the evening another mass meeting assembled to welcome the second passenger train. The moonlight evening was enlivened by the fire and drum, and when the E. C. Litchfield rattled in with the train, another towering bonfire lit up the heavens with its flame, and the cheers of welcome again rang forth to greet our visitors.

"The rapidity with which the work has been done on this road is almost, if not entirely, without parallel in the annals of our country. On the 22d of August last the railroad crossed the Michigan State line, thirty miles distant, and since that time one-half mile a day of the track has been laid. The directors of the road have determined to complete it at the earliest possible moment, and what they *intend* to do, they do. By the way, do our Niles friends over the line begin to believe that South Bend will have a railroad, or are they all doubtful Thomases still?"

In 1867 a railroad meeting was held at Jackson, Michigan, to which the people along the St. Joseph valley in Indiana, and Michigan were invited. The object of the meeting was to see what inducements could be held out to the Grand Trunk Railroad of Canada, to extend their line of road from Ridgeway, Michigan, through the States of Michigan and Indiana to Chicago. A company was formed at this meeting and organized under the name of the Michigan Grand Trunk Railway Company. A route was proposed and adopted, fixing the points which the road should take, and making it obligatory upon the company, after reaching Niles, Michigan, to take the most direct route to Chicago. This cut off the city of South Bend, even if not the entire county of St. Joseph, Indiana, much to the disgust of the people.

A survey was made and a line adopted for the proposed road. Subscriptions were opened at different points, quite a large amount of stock subscribed and some work done; but in consequence of some places west of Jackson, Michigan, failing to subscribe the amount agreed with the company, work was suspended. A meeting was then called at Jackson for the purpose of amending the charter of the road and changing some of the points west. At that meeting the provision was struck out providing that the road should go the most direct route from Niles, Michigan, to Chicago. This left it in the power of the company, if it was thought advisable, to run the road from the State line to South Bend. About this time the name of the company was changed from Michigan Grand Trunk Railway Company to the Michigan Air Line Company.

The latter company began now the construction of the road, but soon after became so embarrassed it could not go on with the work, and therefore, in 1869, leased it to the Michigan Central Railroad Company. The latter company at once completed the road to Niles, Michigan. In order now to get it to South Bend, a company was formed at the latter place, and organized under the name

of the St. Joseph Valley Railway Company. The city of South Bend subscribed \$25,000 to the capital stock of the company in order to assist in building the road. An agreement was now made between the St. Joseph Valley Railway Company, and the Michigan Air Line Company to consolidate the two companies. In consideration of the St. Joseph Valley Railway Company transferring to the Air Line the amount subscribed to its capital stock, the Air Line agreed to build, equip and run the road to South Bend. This, too, was leased to the Michigan Central Railroad Company, who yet operate it. The road was completed to South Bend in the spring of 1870, and was the second road secured to the city.

While these operations were going on the people of Michigan undertook to build a parallel line from Port Huron, Michigan, by way of Flint, Lansing, Battle Creek, to the Indiana line in the direction of South Bend, with the expectation of its being extended through Indiana, the most feasible route to Chicago. To accomplish this a company was organized, under the name of Port Huron & Lake Michigan Railway Company, for the purpose of building a road from Port Huron to Flint, Michigan. Another company was organized at the same time, called the Peninsular Railway Company, to build a road from Lansing, Michigan, by way of Battle Creek, to the Indiana State line. In Indiana a company was organized to build a road from the point where the Michigan touched the State line, through the State by way of Mishawaka, South Bend and Valparaiso to the Illinois line, where it was to be completed, by a company formed in Illinois, to Chicago. These various companies were afterward all consolidated into one company under the name of the Chicago & Lake Huron Railway Company. Under this organization the road was built through from Port Huron to Flint, and from Lansing to Valparaiso, Indiana.

In consequence of the hard times and other adverse circumstances the railway company was unable to pay its interest on its mortgaged road, and the road was therefore put in the hands of a receiver to run it in the interest of the mortgagees. While in the receiver's hands a company was organized called the Northeastern Railway Company, which built the line from Flint to Lansing, thereby making a through line as originally intended from Port Huron to Valparaiso.

The road was in the hands of the receiver until 1879, when the Grand Trunk Railway Company, of Canada, finally came to the conclusion they must be placed in better connection with Chicago; therefore an arrangement between that company and the bondholders of the Chicago & Lake Huron railroad was made by which the mortgages on the latter road were foreclosed and the road sold, the Grand Trunk Railway Company being the purchaser. A new company was now organized by the purchasers of the road under the name of the Chicago & Northwestern Grand Trunk Railway

Company. Previous to this these parties had purchased about seventeen miles of a road running out from Chicago, and the whole was now united, forming a through line from Chicago to Port Huron, and on the 26th of March, 1880, all the companies were consolidated into one, which was called the Chicago & Grand Trunk Railway Company.

#### TERRIBLE RAILROAD ACCIDENT.

Two miles east of South Bend, midway between that place and Mishawaka, the track of the Michigan Southern & Lake Shore railroad crosses a narrow ravine on an embankment about 25 feet high. At its base was a culvert through which ran a rivulet, too small a stream, indeed, to be called a creek, and whose waters were drained from the high ground south of the road. When this culvert was put in, the neighbors, remembering the sudden and extraordinary rise of this rivulet in 1841, contended that it was too small; but it seemed impossible that its waters could be swollen to such an extent as to exceed its capacity to carry off; and it had not been until the fatal night of June 27. The afternoon and evening of that day the rain poured down in torrents, and the little rivulet grew rapidly, but no danger was apprehended. At half past 8 o'clock p. m. the express train from the East passed over it in safety. What happened after that time until midnight can only be inferred; but it is evident that the culvert must have been choked up with driftwood and sand, as it might have done even if larger—that the embankment thus became a dam, behind which the water rapidly accumulated, and that it rose to almost the level of the track.

A little before midnight, the night express from Chicago passed South Bend, Mr. Osgood, conductor, and T. Chulip, of La Porte, engineer, and one of the most careful ones on the line. The passengers all testified as to how carefully he had run his train when it passed over a bridge or other locality he thought might be dangerous. He checked up the train when passing the Studebaker bridge, less than a mile west of the ravine, and then regarding the embankment as unquestionably safe, increased his speed. He must have been running, however, at less than twenty miles per hour when he reached the fatal spot. The embankment was, beyond a doubt, thoroughly water-soaked and ready to give way as he reached it; and the weight of the train, or any other violent concussion, was all that was needed to complete the work of destruction. Down went the track, train, embankment and all, into the narrow gorge. The tender, baggage car, and two second-class cars mostly shattered into fragments, piled up their ruins on the engine upon the opposite side of the bank. Two passenger cars followed, landing nearer the center of the channel, and the sleeping car, the last of the train, with all its inmates, escaped apparently uninjured, though taking the frightful leap with the rest. The vast volume of water thus released by the destruction of the dam which had confined it, swept

for a few moments over them, carrying several, who finally escaped down its stream, and drowning many others. Three of the dead bodies were found two hundred yards below where the rivulet empties into the St. Joseph river. In a short time the waters of the rivulet had run down, and the uninjured were enabled to look for the wounded and the dead.

As soon as possible the alarm was given at Mishawaka and South Bend, the citizens of both places going to the wreck and working zealously through the remaining hours of the night and the following day. Physicians, with many other citizens, came from La Porte and other neighboring towns, and all was done that was within the power of man. The engineer and fireman, who were brothers, were killed at their post—so were the baggage man and express messenger. The express safe was broken open by the crash, but the money (over \$60,000) was nearly all found during the day.

The dead, as they were found, were mostly taken to Mishawaka, and many of the wounded also. The rest were taken to South Bend. The scene at the wreck was sorrowful beyond description. There were at least 150 passengers upon the train.

#### THE TELEGRAPH.

The progressive spirit of the citizens of St. Joseph county has often been tested, and almost invariably has it been proven to the world that in no matter of public interest has she been wanting. About the first of April, 1847, J. J. Speed, a representative of a proposed telegraph line from Buffalo to Milwaukee, visited the county and proposed to run his line through the valley, establishing an office at South Bend, provided citizens would take stock to the amount of \$2,000. This was easily raised, and it was confidently expected the tick of the telegraph wire would be heard in South Bend in the following fall. In consequence of the unprogressive spirit of the citizens of Chicago in refusing to take the share of stock apportioned to that place, the enterprise was for a time abandoned, to be resumed when Chicago was ready to do her share of the work. In June the work was again commenced, subscriptions having all been taken. In the spring of 1848 the line was complete, and South Bend was in instant communication with places far distant.

#### FERRIES.

In 1831, at the September term of the Board of County Commissioners, a ferry was authorized established over the St. Joseph river at the east end of Water street, and N. B. Griffith was licensed to run the same for the sum of two dollars per year. He was

"required to keep a good and sufficient flat or boat to convey conveniently over said river two horses and a wagon at one time." For such privileges he was allowed to charge as follows:

For each person.....	61 $\frac{1}{4}$	cents.
For a man and horse.....	121 $\frac{1}{2}$	"
For 1 one-horse wagon or carriage.....	25	"
For two horses and wagon.....	31 $\frac{1}{4}$	"
For each additional horse with a wagon as above.....	61 $\frac{1}{4}$	"
For oxen in wagons the same rates as horses.....		
Loose cattle per head.....	3	"
Hogs and sheep per head.....	2	"

In November, 1832, the Board ordered Mr. Griffith to have constructed a boat forty-five feet long and twelve feet wide for his ferry, and allowed him until the first day of the following January to have it completed ready for use. Mr. Griffith was further required to "keep two able-bodied men to attend to said ferry." Some change was made in the amount allowed for ferriage. "All persons traveling with or forming a part of the load shall pass over in wagons at said ferry free."

In September, 1834, the Board ordered that a ferry be established across St. Joseph river on the county road leading from South Bend to Niles, and that a boat should be placed thereon not less than forty-five feet long and twelve feet wide. Elisha Egbert was licensed to run the ferry on the payment of ten dollars. He was further required to give bond in the penal sum of five hundred dollars. The same rates were fixed as was allowed at South Bend.

At the January term, 1835, Alexis Coquillard was licensed to keep a ferry across the river from Market street, in South Bend, his boat to be not less than forty-five feet long by twelve wide. The same requirements were made of him as of those already engaged in the business. In 1840 the license was transferred to Robert Wade and William Graham.



## CHAPTER IX.

SOME OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY'S ILLUSTRIOUS DEAD.—ALEXIS COQUILLARD.  
—MARK WHINERY.—WILLIAM MILLER.—LOUIS HUMPHREYS.—JACOB HARRIS.—SOLOMON W. PALMER.—NORMAN EDDY.—MRS. HANNAH D. MATTHEWS.—FATHER LAWRENCE.—REV. AUGUSTON LEMONNIER.—REV. N. H. GILLESPIE.—BENJAMIN WILCOX.—C. WENZER.—POWERS GREENE.—JOHN STUDEBAKER.—JOHN MACK.—ARIEL E. DRAPIER.—GEORGE W. MATTHEWS.—ALFRED B. WADE.—HORATIO CHAPIN.—SAMUEL BYERLY.—ELISHA EGBERT.—DWIGHT DEMING.—JOHN A. HENRICKS.

† ALEXIS COQUILLARD.

“Honor to whom honor is due.” One deserving special mention in the History of St. Joseph County is the subject of this sketch, the first man to settle in the county with the intention of making it a permanent abiding place.

Alexis Coquillard was born in Detroit, Sept. 28, 1795. Detroit at this time was but a mere frontier settlement, and fortress life in garrison had much to do with the morals of its society. There were here no schools of importance for the training of its youth; and beyond the limits of the village and garrison the unbroken wilderness stretched miles away—its solitary paths known only to the savage and the trapper, no ax of the pioneer making civilizing music among the forest echoes; in short, Detroit of that day was not the grand emporium of commerce and refinement it is to-day, and so the early boyhood of young Coquillard was passed among scenes and events all too exciting and present to admit of that system of mental culture out of which the men of to-day are fashioned. He was emphatically a child of nature, and through her teachings, and his own God-endowed instincts, became what he was—a great and good man.

When about 17 years of age, the ardent spirit of Alexis longed for active and manly employment, and the fortunes of the period favored him. The army of occupation, under General Harrison, was in a state of defense at Fort Stephenson. Shut out from direct communication with their friends, in consequence of the vigilance of the English enemy, and the wily savage allies of Great Britain, with whom this country was at war, their messengers generally captured, their stronghold being menaced by the enemy, that degree of gloom that even infects the bravest when doomed for a time to inactivity, hung over the minds of all. At this crisis, young Coquillard arrived at the camp and proffered his services as mail carrier. His uncouth originality, his French accent and his youth



made him at first a butt for ridicule of the soldiers; but that earnest, impressive demeanor that so marked him as a boy and man soon won a more serious consideration of his proposition. He was employed, passed through all the privations and dangers of a formidable journey, and returned successful, bearing back information of great importance to the beleaguered. So valuable were his services considered, that the commander personally thanked and complimented him, and the officers made up a purse of \$50 and gave it to him in addition to the compensation promised. He continued in the employ of the Americans during the war, discharging his arduous duties in a satisfactory manner.

When about 20 years of age he made an application to Hunt, Brewster & Co., of Detroit, who were then extensive dealers in Indian goods, for so much of a stock as would enable him to traffic with the tribes of the peninsula and the country of St. Joseph river. He told the circumstances of the case with that clear, unvarnished, natural rhetoric that ever distinguished him conversationally, and so won upon the confidence of the merchants to whom he applied, that without a friend to recommend him, and personally unknown to the firm, they let him have the desired assortment of articles, and he started forth a trader. From the day he left Detroit his course was upward and onward. Fortune favored him in a special manner. With a herculean form, an open countenance with truth stamped indelibly upon it, always joyous and fearless in its every lineament, by his natural shrewdness and skilled by contact, he was enabled to properly appreciate character, whether of the French trapper and trader, or the aborigines. He mingled with all in a frank and cheerful manner more markedly conspicuous in Alexis Coquillard than in any other man who ever roughed it in the wilderness, or sought an exchange of notions for peltries in the lodges of the natives of our American forests.

His promptness in his dealings soon made him extensively known, and his name became a synonym with all for honesty, sagacity and truth. His reputation was such that he was, in a short time after beginning business for himself, appointed agent for the American Fur Company, established by John Jacob Astor, which connection necessarily extended the theater of his business territory, and multiplied his already ample resources.

In the year 1822, in connection with Francis Comparet, of Fort Wayne, he purchased the extensive agency of the American Fur Company for all the region of the upper lakes. Subsequently he and Mr. Comparet bought the exclusive control (including the property and debts due the post), for which they paid about one hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars. Mr. Coquillard established a post at South Bend which he operated alone, while Mr. Comparet remained in charge of the Fort Wayne post. The former was soon known as the Big St. Joseph station, and the latter as the Little St. Joseph. These posts were the grand rendezvous of all who traded with the Indians in Indiana and Michigan.

During all this time Alexis Coquillard was considered the pioneer introducer of civilized customs among the Indians in Northern Indiana. It is true that the missionary efforts of the French had effected something in "blazing the way" of the path of white settlement; but in such a man as the subject of this sketch, cause was only the lever to direct effect; his enthusiastic energy breasted and threw aside every obstacle as a boy lashes away a summer ripple, and immediately after constructing his cabin for trading purposes on the waters of the St. Joseph, his mark became perceptible upon the surrounding region. This building was the first one erected by a white man in this section of Indiana, and his nearest civilized neighbors were residents at Bertrand, or Cary's Mission. He next constructed a log residence, which remained for some time the only evidence of the abode of white men, and this where now stands the busy, thriving city of South Bend.

By a charter granted by the Legislature in the session of 1835-'36, opportunities were offered for the establishment of flouring mills, in and along the water courses of the north part of the State. In 1839 Mr. Coquillard, in connection with John A. Henricks and John Rush, built the first flouring mill in South Bend. It was known as the Kankakee Mill. He had previously constructed a saw-mill on the same water-power. In addition, he subsequently built a second large flouring mill, which was afterward removed and converted into a woolen factory. These were the first flouring mills (aside from those built for custom work) which were started in Northern Indiana. But this was not all. He built extensively in other parts of the town, both for residence and business, and it may be said, without doing discredit to the enterprise of others, that mainly to his efforts and to his inducements and material aid is South Bend indebted for its good start, which has resulted in such a satisfactory manner.

His regard for the advancement of his townsmen was one of the noblest of his many noble characteristics. To see South Bend prosper and enlarge was the prompting motive for which he toiled; so that buildings went up and a wholesome population gathered here, it mattered not to him materially whether his personal fortunes remained intact or depressed. He ever welcomed, and was ready to assist, the incomer who brought intelligence and industry wherewith to make himself a useful citizen. All the improvements of the place were the result of his counsel, for all knew that his advice was to be relied on, that he would counsel nothing that he did not think was for the best. To notice the advance made by his neighbor was as much a source of satisfaction to him as if he were the immediate gainer. If a general evil afflicted the business interests of his neighbors, no one felt it more acutely than he did. If his own affairs became embarrassed—and such proved to be the case at times, owing to the financial revolutions of the country—his stock of philosophy enabled him to bear his reverses unmoved.

His thorough knowledge of the Indian character, his perfect understanding of the several languages spoken by the different tribes, combined with the unlimited confidence in his honor and good faith, made him admirably fitted to discharge the duties of interpreter and Government agent in adjusting the difficulties and carrying into effect the various treaties made with the Pottawatomies, Ottowas, Chippewas, Miamis, Chicagos and Sandusks. He acted prominently in conducting the treaties at Tippecanoe, Chicago and other places subsequent to the peace of 1814, and was in high favor with Governor Cass, Agent for Indian Affairs, Commissioner McCoy and George Crawford, Secretary of the Indian Agency.

Having been appointed in 1840 to carry through a Pottawatomie emigration, he established a rendezvous at Potato creek, and succeeded in effecting his object at a very heavy outlay. He was to have received \$40,000, the drafts for which amount were forwarded by the Government, but these fell into the hands of one Alverson, who converted over \$40,000 to his own use, leaving Coquillard not only to suffer the consequence of the whole defalcation, but with heavy and crushing liabilities, crippling and jeopardizing his personal estate. This Alverson was with him when he effected the removal of the Indians to their reservation, which had been agreed upon, west of the Mississippi. The Government had received the required assurance of the completion of all the conditions by Mr. Coquillard, but Alverson pocketed the "promise to pay," and also retained certain sums held subject to the terms of former treaties. For a time these misfortunes and this breach of integrity weighed sorely on the spirits of the "Pottawatomie Chief," as Mr. Coquillard was frequently called,—but only for a limited season, when he was again at work repairing damages with his usual indomitable energy.

In the year 1824 Mr. Coquillard married Miss Frances C. Comporet, at Fort Wayne, Indiana. One child, Alexis Theodore, was born unto them, a sketch of whom will be found elsewhere in this work. The union of Mr. Coquillard and Miss Comporet, founded by strong mutual regard, was in all respects a happy one, lasting unchanged through all the vicissitudes of life, and growing more affectionately interblended as time told of the coming on of the autumn and winter of life. One of the most painfully effecting incidents connected with the death and burial of the departed was the ebullition of wild sorrow with which his aged consort clung to his form, strikingly manly in its last sleep,—“the sleep that knows no waking,”—and the heart cries that told her soul's deep agony, as that form was shut forever from the gaze of one who had so long shared in his confidence and confided in his unspeakable tenderness. Bitter, indeed, was the parting to the wife of his youth and age; for no man was ever better qualified, by the excellent traits of his heart, more truly to win, or more permanently to retain the love of woman.

On Monday afternoon, January 8, 1855, Mr. Coquillard was examining the ruins of his flouring-mill, which had burned the Saturday previous, and accidentally fell from a beam on which he was walking some 16 or 18 feet below, striking with his whole weight on the front part of his skull, crushing it in, so that he lived but about one hour. He did not speak after his fall, or give any evidence of being sensible. The funeral concourse which followed his remains to the chapel of Notre Dame showed how extensively he was respected when living, and how sincerely all mourned for him in death. All classes of citizens left all other duties to be in attendance on the sad occasion. The friends of his business life, the intimates of his conversational hours, the hundreds whom he had aided to commercial positions, the poor whose necessities he had ever unsparingly relieved, and to whom he was an almoner and father, all were in the throng that lined the roads leading to Notre Dame; and all hearts were touched with sentiments of woe, as the sacred melody filled the building from dome to architrave, wherein the servants of Christ pronounced over his bier the last solemn rites of the Holy Catholic Church, of which through all his life he had been a sincere and unwavering member—squaring his conduct in accordance with its purest and most charitable teachings. The funeral service was performed in a fervent manner by Rev. Father Shortess, and was in every way worthy the officiating clergyman and the marked virtues of the deceased. During the day the places of business in South Bend remained closed, and in all respects those tokens of mourning were exhibited that are bestowed when a good and great man dies.

As showing the estimation in which Mr. Coquillard was held by those who knew him best, the following is extracted from a series of reminiscences of the early times in South Bend, by one who was an active participant: "One of the leading men in South Bend in 1830 was Alexis Coquillard. At that time he had charge of an Indian store, which was successor to the American Fur Company. He was a very remarkable man—large in person, of a commanding presence, magnificent head and piercing eyes. Taking him altogether he impressed me as a man of very great natural endowments, both mental and physical. When he walked he moved as if he was impelled by some irresistible force. In his younger days he was known to have walked eighty miles in a day. The power and rapidity of his movement gave him the name of 'Old Steamboat.' He had no book education. He could not read or write except to sign his name, but his association with intelligent business men, and his very retentive memory and keen observation of every thing passing around him made him a very intelligent man in the every day practical affairs of life. When angry he made everything blue around him, and yet when unexcited he was as tender and sympathetic as a child. No man's heart would melt quicker in the presence of an object of sympathy, but while possessing these tender feelings of compassion he was a man of daring

and reckless bravery. He seemed to have no conception of personal danger. In his early life, while engaged in trade among the Indians, he passed through startling and thrilling adventures, such as men of common prudence would have avoided. One of these adventures was related to me by a man who was present and saw the affair take place. It was at an Indian payment more than fifty years ago. There were a great many Indians present, among the rest a noted Miami chief, who had been in debt to Coquillard for a good while. He was regarded as a vain, brutal and murderous savage—feared by both white people and Indians. On public occasions, to impress people with his dignity, he wore suspended from his neck down his breast a broad band of silver ornaments in the shape of quarter moons hung together. After having received his annuity and being fixed up in his best rig, Coquillard came across him and dunned him for his pay. His majesty was not in a paying humor at that time, and gave Coquillard an insulting reply, whereat he sprang at the chief and stripped him of his ornaments and finery in a minute, and strode off with them to his tent. This was done in the presence of hundreds of Indians and a few white men. It was a mortal insult; blood only could atone for it. The Indians were soon in an uproar. The white people present were greatly alarmed for their own safety. They thought Coquillard could not stay and live, but he refused to leave. While at dinner in a log cabin, he was notified that the chief with a party painted up in their war paint were approaching the cabin. Everybody trembled with fear but Coquillard. He got up, opened the door, and stepped behind it, and as the chief entered the room knocked him to the floor senseless, and the followers slunk back as if they had just escaped a stroke of lightning. After the chief came to his senses he went back to the camp and gave Coquillard no farther trouble. Coquillard's early life was full of such scenes of reckless bravery. As a business man, he was always enterprising and liberal, ready to do anything he could to advance the growth of the town."

Many anecdotes might be given illustrating his noble charities and the benevolence of all his impulses. When applied to for aid for some philanthropic enterprise, or to relieve individual distress, he paused not to inquire into the antecedents of the applicant. "I have nothing to do with your religion," he remarked on one occasion, "I only know that I have the means of assisting you, and of course it is my duty to do so." The golden rule ever governed his actions.

#### HON. MARK WHINERY.

Mark Whinery was born in Clinton county, Ohio, Sept. 1, 1812, and removed to this county in 1834. For several years he worked at his trade of carpentering in South Bend, after which he was employed as a salesman by the firm of E. S. Reynolds & Co. Mr. Whinery remained with this firm nearly ten years, and it was

in this capacity that he formed an acquaintance that included nearly every person in the county at that day. He became very popular with all classes. This popularity caused him to be nominated by the Whigs for the Legislature as the man best calculated to beat Lot Day, Sr., one of the most popular Democrats in the county. The canvass was an exciting one, and Mr. Whinery was elected by a large majority, and served with satisfaction to his constituency.

When G. W. and John Reynolds took contracts for building sections of the Lake Shore railroad, they employed Mr. Whinery, and he remained in their service until the road was completed to South Bend, when he was made the first agent of the road at that place. In 1856, on the completion of the original St. Joe block, a union store was organized, and when the stockholders met to elect some one to take charge of it, Mr. Whinery was unanimously chosen. When the war broke out he entered the pay department and remained there until the close, and then went into the cotton-raising business in the South. This venture proved very unprofitable and stripped him of a handsome competence. He returned to South Bend and was elected City Judge, and afterward Justice of the Peace. Mr. Whinery died in Indianapolis, Feb. 21, 1879. His body was taken to South Bend for burial, and was tenderly laid away by South Bend Lodge, No. 29, I. O. O. F., of which he was a charter member.

#### HON. WILLIAM MILLER.

William Miller was born in Franklin county April 1, 1809, and died at South Bend May 2, 1879. He was the son of Tobias and Sarah Miller, and the sixth of a family of 13 children. When a year and a half old Mr. Miller's parents moved from Virginia to Union county, Indiana. When 24 years of age he was married to Miss Mary Miller, daughter of John Miller, also a Virginian, and an officer in the war of 1812. Four years after this marriage, in May, 1833, he moved to this county and settled on Portage Prairie, in what is now German township, and engaged in farming. He was a practical and enthusiastic farmer, and probably did more to advance the agricultural interests of the county than any other single individual. His farm became noted as one of the most productive on the prairie, and was rich in fruits, trees and hedges, the best stock and agricultural implements.

In his enthusiasm for agriculture Mr. Miller did not forget the large family growing up around him. Of the nine children born to him six are yet living, and they were given the best educational advantages the times afforded. The oldest of these, John F., became an attorney in South Bend and served one term in the Senate. On the breaking out of the Rebellion he threw down his law books, raised the 29th Regiment, and entered the army as its colonel, serving through the entire war. He made a brilliant officer, possessing

all the dash and daring of a Sheridan, and for his bravery was made a Major-General. He participated in several of the most important engagements of the army of the Tennessee, had his left eye shot out, and was also shot in the neck. Added to his daring was a splendid administrative capacity, on account of which he was at different times placed in command of Nashville, and afterward Mobile. At the close of the war he was made Collector at the Port at San Francisco, and is now president of the Alaska Fur Company. Another son, Henry Clay, is also in California, cashier in the custom house, and one of its most valuable officials. Two others of the sons, William H. and H. G., are well-known business men of St. Louis. The remaining one, and second in order of age, I. N., follows his father's occupation of farming, in Olive township, this county. The only daughter, Martha, is the wife of M. Butterworth, of Kingsbury. Reference is thus briefly made to Miller's family to show, that laboring under the disadvantages of pioneer life, he always remembered that his first duty was the culture of his family, and that the result shows the correctness of his views.

Naturally so active and enterprising a man as Mr. Miller would soon have his merits recognized in the community. He had been in this county but a short time when he was called to serve as Justice of the Peace, which he did for many years, and with the same thoroughness that distinguished all his affairs. In 1844 he was elected to the Legislature, and made such an acceptable member that he was returned for a second and a third term. He made himself very active while in the Legislature in establishing asylums for the deaf and dumb, the blind and the insane.

In 1858 Mr. Miller, having a competency, moved into the city of South Bend, partly that his wife and himself might rest from the arduous duties imposed by active farm life, and partly to give his younger children the benefits of the city schools. He purchased a handsome residence on Lafayette street, where he resided to the time of his death. He was several times elected to the City Council, and took an active interest in city affairs. He labored incessantly to establish manufactories in the city, his judgment showing him that in them lay the future prosperity of the city.

Mr. Miller was all his life, and up to the death of that party, an uncompromising Whig. He was one of the organizers of the Republican party in this county, and was one of its most steadfast supporters.

William Miller was a powerfully built man, with a personal appearance that would command respect anywhere. He was over six feet in height, symmetrically built, a graceful carriage, a leonine face, with long, wavy, iron-gray beard, and a large forehead, set off by masses of crisp hair.

Mr. Miller had been gradually failing for six weeks, but it was not thought his end was near. On the morning of the second day of February, 1879, he was attacked with a sinking spell, his physician was sent for, but when he arrived he discovered his patient



was dying. He passed peacefully away without a struggle or a groan. He was buried by the Odd Fellows fraternity of South Bend, he being a member of that order.

#### DR. LOUIS HUMPHREYS

Was born in Springfield, Ohio, Sept. 21, 1816, and died in South Bend, Sunday evening, May 9, 1880, in his 64th year. He was of Irish descent on his father's side, and of Virginian on his mother's. His father came to this country from Ireland before the Revolutionary war and took part in that contest which gave this country its independence. Dr. Humphreys' education was received at an academy in Franklin, Ky., and at the high school in his native town of Springfield. At the age of 22, in 1838, he came to this city, where his older brother, Dr. Harvey Humphreys, was already established in a successful practice. He read medicine with this brother for a short time, then went to La Porte, where a medical department had been organized in the La Porte University, with Dr. Daniel Meeker at its head. Here young Humphreys pursued his medical studies until this department of the college suspended, and he then went to the college at Keokuk, Iowa, where he completed his studies and received his diploma in 1844. He returned to South Bend and entered into partnership with his brother in the practice of medicine, and this partnership was only dissolved by the death of his brother, whose remains rest in the city cemetery. On April 4, 1844, Dr. Humphreys married Miss Margaret Pier-son, a native of Cooperstown, New York. She survives him with their two daughters, Mary and Eva.

Dr. Humphreys was a close student and thoroughly in love with his profession. He soon became one of the leading physicians and surgeons of Northern Indiana and Southern Michigan, and his fame extended all over the State. He early saw that a medical association would be beneficial, not only to his brother physicians, but to the community, and in 1855 he organized the St. Joseph County Medical Society and was elected its president and held the office for three terms. At the same time he took a great interest in the literary, musical, social and religious affairs of South Bend. He was interested in organizing a literary society, and was one of its best contributors. In the Presbyterian Church he was a leading member, and did all in his power for its advancement and particularly for its Sunday-school. He was for many years its Superintendent, and conducted a large and very interesting Bible class. Much of the success of the school connected with the Church is due to his untiring and unselfish efforts. Dr. Cassady, a brother physician, reports that he has gone to Dr. Humphreys' office near the midnight hour, when he knew the doctor was nearly exhausted with the day's work, and found him preparing the lessons for his Bible class. In this work as in all other he used the same exactitude and promptness that he did in his profession.



Amid all the laborious duties of his profession Dr. Humphreys found time to devote to literature, and he was one of its most ardent students. To him the study of belles-lettres was a pleasant duty rather than the pastime that so many make of it, and he kept it up to the latest weeks of his life. There are few whose minds are laden with learning's richest store as his was; and with it, too, he had the knack of imparting his knowledge to others. Dr. Humphreys was also an accomplished musician. In his early days here he was a member of the band. Later he organized several musical societies, the last being the Philharmonic Club. His criticisms on books, music or pictures were rarely at variance with the best criticisms in the country, and as a writer he stood high, whether on matters connected with his profession, on literary subjects or on local affairs. The local papers of South Bend have published much that he has written, and in a war of words it can truly be said that his keen and cutting satire made any man who crossed pens with him regret afterward that he did so. Those who knew how much Dr. Humphreys' time was occupied in attending to the duties of his profession wondered when he acquired so many accomplishments, for with all the rest he was a brilliant and entertaining conversationalist, and in his demeanor toward all a Chesterfield could not have been more courteous or dignified, or placed one at greater ease.

When the war of the Rebellion broke out all the latent patriotism of Dr. Humphreys was aroused. He had the opportunity to take command, but his better judgment told him that he could do the cause more good in his profession, and when the 29th Indiana Regiment, under Col. John F. Miller, went into active service, Dr. Humphreys was made its Surgeon. This was in July, 1861. On the March following he was made Surgeon of a brigade, and served as such until June of the same year. At that time the medical department of the army had become so unwieldy that the rules laid down in the army regulations were insufficient to handle it. There were thousands of surgeons and their subordinates to look after, numerous quantities of medical stores at the different depots of supply, an interminable hospital service that all required looking after. There was needed a connecting link between the Surgeon-General of the army and his highest subordinates. A corps of eight Medical Inspectors was appointed and commissioned by President Lincoln. These men were selected through no powerful political influence, as too many of the army appointments were made. They were chosen rather for their eminent fitness for the responsible position, as shown by their record in the profession at home and in the army. One of the very first appointed was Dr. Humphreys. He was taken from his brigade in the army of the Cumberland and placed on duty in the army of the Potomac, with his headquarters at Washington. In less than six months he had brought order out of chaos, the incompetent were weeded out, and

he was then ordered to the West, with his headquarters at Louisville. His duties were very arduous, but he performed them faithfully and unflinchingly. They took him often with the advance of the army and he was in several battles. He remained in the army as Medical Inspector until June 1, 1866, when he was mustered out and returned home. His army duties were so hard that they undermined his health, and laid the foundation for the complication of diseases which eventually killed him.

On his return home he resumed the practice of medicine and his interest in the affairs of South Bend. From the time he set foot in it when a young man he believed South Bend had a brilliant future, and no man did more in his way to make a brilliant future for it. He bought property and laid out an addition to the city; he wrote in favor of and talked for every improvement which would benefit it. In 1868 he was elected Mayor to succeed the first Mayor, Hon. W. G. George, and in 1870 he was elected his own successor. He filled both terms with great credit to himself and benefit to the city, and retired with the good will of all parties. During these four years he was one of the commissioners of the Indiana hospital for the insane. He was one of the founders of the St. Joseph Valley District Medical Society, and its president for two terms. At the same time he was an officer of the Indiana State Medical Association and a member of the American Medical Association. When the St. Joseph County Savings Bank was organized he was made its president and continued in the position until his death. He was a charter member of the Odd Fellows and Knights of Pythias lodges in this city, and a member of the Grand Army of the Republic, and had held offices in all these societies. In the Presbyterian Church he filled the positions of trustee and elder, and was for several years superintendent of its Sunday-school, and for many years a teacher there. He was a man who never sought an office, and yet few men had more of them thrust upon them than he, and few were as competent to fill them.

Dr. Humphreys, or Col. Humphreys, as President Lincoln's commission titled him, was the youngest of a family of 14 children. His ancestry were noted for being long-lived. His father reached the age of ninety odd years and was a splendid specimen of manhood. Those who knew Dr. Humphreys can well believe that this physical trait of the father descended to his youngest son. Dr. Humphreys was a trifle above six feet in height, handsomely proportioned, and had an easy, graceful carriage and a courtly dignity that is rare to see. He had a military bearing that was "to the manner born," and many a time was he seen passing along the streets of Nashville in his uniform, and exciting the inquiry if he was Gen. Rousseau, who was to the soldiers of that army the embodiment of the ideal general in all that made up dignity of bearing, grace of manner, and the inbornness of a gentleman.

The immediate cause of Dr. Humphreys' death was paralysis of the respiratory nerves. He took cold some days previous, and

although the congestion of the lungs passed off it was followed by this paralysis. Three or four days ago he began failing rapidly and it was easy to see by those intimate friends who visited him every day that the end of a long and useful life was near. The final struggle came last evening. In the presence of his loved family, his pastor, Rev. Geo. T. Keller, his physician, Dr. Cassady, Hon. T. S. Stanfield and Mrs. Stanfield, Mr. and Mrs. E. S. Reynolds, Mr. and Mrs. Cushing, Dr. Dayton, W. A. Bugbee, and a few other near and dear friends, he passed away peacefully and to the acceptance of that reward which is in store for all who faithfully practice the teachings of Him who died upon the cross. His last moments were unconscious, but before they came he had recognized those about him, and fully realized that he was going out upon the long journey which all humanity must sooner or later take.

#### JACOB HARRIS.

Among the early settlers of St. Joseph county, few men were better known than Jacob Harris, the first settler of the prairie which bears his name. He was a native of Northumberland county, Pennsylvania, and in early life moved to Starke county, Ohio, and in the spring of 1829 came to this part to see the country. He immediately returned for his family, and the same season removed to the place on which he lived until the time of his death. Jacob Harris was a man of indomitable will, together with an iron constitution, and scarcely knew what sickness was until the latter part of his life. The early settlers of this county, as well as many others, will remember the first "stop" in this county at Mr. Harris,' where the stranger as well as relatives and friends, all found a home. There are few men who took more interest in that direction than he did. It seemed to him good to be a father to the fatherless and a friend to the friendless and the stranger. Mr. Harris had been sick several weeks previous to his death, but one prior to that time he was so much better he arose from his bed, walked out to the kitchen and had a favorite dish prepared, eating and relishing it very much. He was at the time very cheerful, and could hardly be prevailed upon to return to his room. When he did so he was suddenly taken worse, and in a remarkably short time passed away, as "one who wraps the drapery of his couch about him and lies down to pleasant dreams." Death called him home Monday, March 5, 1860, in the 76th year of his age.

#### SOLOMON W. PALMER.

Solomon William Palmer was born at Davenport, New York, Nov. 3, 1814. Both of his parents died before he was three years old. He lived at the place of his birth the greater portion of the time until shortly after he was of age, when he removed to Bruersburg, Ohio. About six months later he was married to Sarah

D. Allen, which event occurred Dec. 31, 1837. In 1843 they removed to Indiana, settling in Mishawaka, where Mr. Palmer engaged in the lumber trade. After a three years' residence in Mishawaka, the family removed to South Bend.

While living in Mishawaka, Mr. Palmer united with the Presbyterian Church, but finally ceased his attendance on that denomination in consequence of the pro-slavery sentiments among the members. In South Bend he was a constant attendant of the First Methodist Episcopal Church, of which the other members of the family were members, and in January, 1877, he, too, united with that body. For upward of twenty years he was a member of the Odd Fellows of South Bend. He loved the order and all its associations, and was a frequent attendant at its meetings. The temperance movement early attracted his attention, and his influence and labors were always at the service of the cause, and especially was this the case when the Temple of Honor, of which he was a member, was in a flourishing condition.

In politics Mr. Palmer was originally a Whig, but after his removal to South Bend he became a strong Abolitionist. He was one of the little band of nine men in South Bend, who, in those early days, braved public odium and reproach for conscience' sake, and maintained that human bondage was accursed of God, and a blot on the fair fame of the Republic. The old and middle-aged men that are now living well remember that the avowal of being an Abolitionist was to invite general ostracism even in the North.

Mr. Palmer was one of the number who in 1849 rescued a party of colored people, a mother and her three children, who had been kidnapped in Michigan, and were being taken to Kentucky. His participation in this act cost him nearly every dollar of his worldly possessions, suit being brought against him in company with several others, for the recovery of the value of the slaves together with the penalty attached to the rescue of slaves under the law of 1793. For years the case dragged along in the courts, and was finally decided against Mr. Palmer and his associates.

To illustrate the character of the man, and to show that dollars and cents would not influence him in an act against his conscience, it is related of him that when engaged in the lumber trade at Mishawaka, he assisted a man to load up some building material, when the person procuring it incidentally made known that it was to be used for a distillery. Immediately Mr. Palmer proceeded to unload the lumber, saying to the astonished customer, "You can't use my lumber for such a purpose." His convictions were always on the side of truth, justice, and the oppressed, and he was faithful to his convictions. Dignified, affable, gentle-mannered, firm in his beliefs but tolerant of the views of others, he lived a true man, and died universally respected.

On the organization of the Republican party in 1856, Mr. Palmer identified himself with it, and was elected by that party to the office of Sheriff of the county in 1864, and re-elected in 1866.



Phineas Colfax



The same party also elected him Justice of the Peace, and Councilman of the Fifth Ward, positions he was filling at the time of his death.

On Wednesday, March 12, 1879, he was on the street in his apparently usual health, and that night attended a meeting of the Odd Fellows lodge that he might witness the initiation of his son, Orlando H. Palmer, his only surviving child. Thursday morning he arose as usual, but not long after had a hard chill. Medical aid was summoned, and every aid rendered. During the day he kept his bed, taking the medicine left him, continuing the same during the night. At 7:45 A. M., on Friday morning, March 14, he breathed his last. The funeral services were held in the Methodist Episcopal church Sunday afternoon, and were largely attended. He was laid away to rest by the Odd Fellows, with which order he was so long identified.

#### COL. NORMAN EDDY.

Norman Eddy was born in Scipio, Cayuga county, New York. His father was one of the earliest settlers of that part of the State. In 1836, having studied medicine, he removed to Mishawaka, in this county, for the practice of his chosen profession. In 1847 he removed to South Bend, where he resided, except when temporarily absent in the discharge of public duties to which he was called, till the day of his death. In the practice of medicine he was very successful, but feeling a strong desire to become a lawyer, he accordingly prepared himself by a thorough course of study, and was regularly admitted to the Bar of this county on the first day of April, 1847. After he had practiced three years he was elected State Senator on the Democratic ticket. In 1852 he was elected to Congress, having Schuyler Colfax as a competitor, but in 1854, was himself defeated by the latter on the Nebraska issue. In 1855 he was appointed United States District Attorney for Minnesota, by President Pierce, and in 1856 Commissioner of Indiana Trust Lands in Kansas, which office he held until the fall of 1857. At this time he again commenced the practice of law, associating himself with the late Judge Egbert, but two years after was appointed by the Legislature on a commission to settle claims due the State.

When the war of the Rebellion broke out he zealously took his stand on the side of the Union, and in 1861 organized the 48th Indiana Regiment, of which he was appointed Colonel. He fought with great bravery in the battle of Iuka, where he was severely wounded; also at Corinth and Grand Gulf and the siege of Vicksburg, until its surrender, when he resigned, being disabled by his wounds from further serving his country as a soldier. Resuming the practice of his profession, he continued in it until 1865, when he was appointed Collector of Revenue for the Ninth District, by President Johnson.

In 1870 he was elected to the office of Secretary of State, which office he held at the time of his death, which took place Sunday morning, Jan. 28, 1872, in the city of Indianapolis, of enlargement of the heart, aged 62 years.

Commencing late in life as a lawyer, Colonel Eddy never achieved that success in his profession to which his legal accomplishments entitled him. The reason for this is obvious. His professional life was not continuous enough to build up a large and lucrative practice. The law, like the other professions, demands all of one's energies, and Colonel Eddy, who at various periods gave it up to accept office at the hands of the public, could not, with all his abilities, attain that success which his brother attorneys were devoting their lives to attain. He was not a custom-seeking lawyer, any more than he was an office-seeking politician. He was one of the most impressive speakers in the northern part of the State. His delivery was dignified and graceful. His voice was deep and full. He never seemed to have taken the infection common to young men of giving great importance to *mere* speech. He possessed that justness and beauty of diction, that happiness and grace of figures, and that facility of expression which never failed to attract and delight his hearers. Though a lawyer he never confined himself to that contentious style which breathes nothing but war and debate. Politically he was a Democrat of the old school, and while he earnestly advocated the doctrines that he espoused, he did it in such a manner as to gain the respect and good will of his opponents, even though he did not convince them of the justness of his cause. He was never an office-seeker. In his case the office sought the man, and not the man the office.

He was during the greater portion of his life the victim of ill health. He had the head to manage, but not the constitution to bear, the affairs of State. Had he possessed a strong and healthy body, coupled with higher aspirations, his splendid abilities might have earned him a much wider reputation. To know him was to love and respect him. It was in the sacred precincts of the domestic circle, or when surrounded by faithful and admiring friends, that the fine gold in his nature came out with its richest effects. To the friend who entered his residence or place of business, he gave a frank and cordial reception, stretching forth that pure hand which had never been soiled by a mean act. His conversation was rich in political and moral instruction; rich in anecdote and character of times that were past. His address, politeness and knowledge of the world qualified him to wield a powerful influence over the minds of others. It was to him a source of pleasure to impart to the young that best of wisdom which is learned from real life. Lord Bacon has somewhere written that "a good man is like the sun, passing through all corruption and still remaining pure." In no way can this be applied with greater justice than to the career of Colonel Eddy. During a quarter of a century, at various times, he



was called upon to fill offices of trust and responsibility, and while all around him were growing rich from the spoils of office, he was

Through all this tract of years  
Wearing the white flower of a blameless life.

His was the white page in the blotted volume of politics. Such is the example Norman Eddy has bequeathed to the young men of Indiana. He was a lover of his kind, a friend to the friendless, the outcast and forlorn. Right royally could he forgive an injury. A faithful public servant, a considerate patriot, a true man and friend, a loving husband and affectionate father, has gone to his reward. The Bar of this county held a meeting and passed a series of resolutions of respect, which resolutions were reported to the Circuit Court and Court of Common Pleas and transcribed upon their records.

MRS. HANNAH D. MATTHEWS.

Mrs. Matthews was born in the city of New York, March 21, 1805. Her maiden name was Stryker, and her grandfather, Samuel De Lamater, was one of the old Knickerbocker families of that city. At the early age of fifteen she married Schuyler Colfax, her first husband, who was a son of General William Colfax, of New Jersey, and whose mother was a Miss Schuyler, cousin of General Philip Schuyler. Mr. Colfax was teller of the Mechanics Bank of New York. Three years after his marriage to Miss Stryker, he died of consumption, leaving her a widow with one little daughter, who died the year following. Soon after his father's death, Schuyler, the second child of this marriage, was born. She remained a widow, living with her mother, Mrs. Stryker, and assisting her in keeping a boarding-house, until her son became 11 years of age.

During this time, and although in straitened circumstances pecuniarily, she strove to give her son the best education the common schools of New York afforded, and by example and precept to give him that best of all gifts, character. Often in his speeches he has casually remarked that such and such a rule in life he had learned in his youth from maternal instruction, and he has always in social conversation attributed his success in life to the impress of his mother's mind and teaching on his youthful years, when widowed, and fatherless, they were all in all to each other.

In 1834 she married George W. Matthews, then a commission merchant in New York. By this marriage she had 5 children, one of whom died in childhood, the others living to man's and woman's estate.

In 1836 she removed with her husband and little family to New Carlisle, this county, where Mr. Matthews opened a store and sold goods for several years, Schuyler serving as clerk and deputy postmaster.

Mrs. Matthews had always taken a great interest in Sunday-school work, and shortly after her arrival in New Carlisle, organized

a school which prospered greatly under her fostering care. She obtained a library for the school from New York, and her son was made librarian. Some of these books are yet found in that locality, treasured as mementoes of what one woman's energy did for the Christian cause in a new country.

In 1841 Mr. Matthews was elected Auditor of this county, and the family removed to South Bend, the county seat. Here Mrs. Matthews was largely instrumental in organizing the Reformed Church Sunday-school, and every member of her family was connected with it either as teacher or scholar. After Mr. Colfax's election to Congress, Mr. Matthews received an appointment at Washington, and during the sessions of Congress was there with his wife. For nine years they formed part of Mr. Colfax's family there, residing with him, and during five of the six years of his Speakership, Mrs. Matthews "received" with him, acting as the head of his family, he being a widower. Though 60 years old then, her vivacity, as well as her genial manners, was remarkable, and in a great measure served to make her son's receptions the most popular in Washington. Her popularity in social circles was universal. President Lincoln had a deep and abiding friendship for her, and a great respect for her judgment on important public questions which came up in his administration, and in which she took all the interest of a statesman. Frequently at her son's receptions, she was the recipient of the most flattering attentions from the martyred President.

Shortly after the war, that terrible disease, cancer, commenced its ravages upon her system. Five times extirpated, it returned each time with increased violence. Once it was thought the disease was mastered, and her family were quite hopeful; but while returning from California, in 1869, she was attacked with mountain fever, and came near dying at Cheyenne. From that time she failed, and although every effort was made to destroy the disease, it became evident, in time, that the cancer had obtained absolute mastery of the system, and that nothing could longer hold it in bay.

Her sufferings for several years were indescribably great, and but for her strong hold on life, and the most faithful, affectionate and devoted nursing by her husband, she must have sooner succumbed to the intense agony she often endured, in addition to the terrible drain upon her system. She bore it all, however, with Christian resignation, illustrating that profession in which for forty years she had never faltered, and with abiding faith that beyond this life she would be free from pain and anguish.

After her return from Washington, in the spring of 1872, she steadily grew worse. As long as she could keep up her husband took her riding daily, but daily these rides were made shorter, until at last her vital forces were so sapped and weakened she was compelled to keep her room and finally her bed. For two or three years previous to her death she scarcely saw any company, and her family had but little lest it might weary her.

On Sunday afternoon, Aug. 11, 1872, she peacefully died, and with but little suffering, recognizing her family most lovingly to the very last. Noble in all her traits of character, cheerful in her disposition, carrying sunshine and gladness wherever she went, it is seldom that death finds such a shining mark.

FATHER LAURENCE, C. S. C.

Brother Laurence, a well-known and popular steward of Notre Dame University, died in the infirmary attachment to that institution, Friday evening, April 4, 1873. Brother Laurence was named "in the world," Jean (John) Menage, and was born March 22, 1816, at St. De Gatines, in France. He was induced by Father Sorin, while giving a mission in that locality, to enter the Congregation of the Holy Cross, in the year 1840. He made his religious profession in 1841, at the Mans. His death, therefore, took place in the fifty-seventh year of his age, and in the thirty-second of his profession. He was one of the six original companions who came with Father Sorin to the United States, landing at New York on the 14th of September, 1841. The little colony settled first at St. Peter's, near Vincennes, in this State, but the year following they moved to Notre Dame, where they arrived on the 30th of November, 1842. From that time Brother Laurence was closely identified with the growth of the institution, and contributed not a trifle to its prosperity. He filled for many years the responsible office of steward, and was three times deputed to the General Chapters of the Congregation, where his voice was always listened to with marked attention.

Father Sorin, founder of the University, and Superior General of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, in a circular letter issued on the death of Brother Laurence, thus speaks of him: "Brother Laurence carries with him the deep and unfeigned sentiment of respect and esteem, not alone of his entire congregation, but of all with whom he came in contact, either as a "religious", or as the agent or steward of the institution. For more than thirty years he spent here, he was always, as every one knows, foremost among those who sought honestly and earnestly to promote the interests of the community; and if any one is to be named as having contributed more than others by earnest and persevering exertions, both of mind and body, to the development and prosperity of Notre Dame, if I did not do it here, the public voice would declare it, and name Brother Laurence. No religious in our family ever possessed and retained more constantly the confidence of his superiors and the community at large. In the death of Brother Laurence we sustain a serious loss, which none can better appreciate or more keenly feel than myself, however much his memory may be held in gratitude and love among those who knew him best, or whom he assisted most in advice or example, or in pecuniary transactions. It was myself who brought him to the community thirty-three

years ago; and although I have seen more than any other men of my age, religious of undoubted fidelity, of great zeal and admirable devotedness, I can remember none whom I would place above our departed one on these various points. He leaves behind him not only a long, but also a stainless record, such indeed as would honor the memory of the most ambitious among us. Not only will you not perceive in the *ensemble* of his religious life none of those blemishes that paralyze the effect of the best qualities; not only was he remarkable by a clean negative of serious defects, but he was really prominent by the strength of his mind, the freshness and often the originality of his inventions and resources in general, of which he always had some in reserve. Directly or indirectly he has benefitted persons and things here more than any one of us. May all whom he leaves in justice obligated to him, acknowledge it now by the fervor of their supplications in his behalf. The community loses in Brother Laurence one of its first pillars; but his spirit will not die away with him, or disappear; his virtues and examples shall live forever on the spot where his name is identified with every acre now cleared, and every building erected with his personal assistance. The neighborhood itself loses one of its hardiest pioneers, and one of its most efficient and honest citizens. As to myself, I lose a friend who never refused me any sacrifice, who for thirty-two long years kept himself, without a moment excepted, ever ready and willing for any call of obedience. Never can I forget his devotedness."

REV. AUGUSTUS LEMONNIER.

Augustus Lemonnier was born April, 1839, at Ahuille, France. His boyhood and early youth were passed amid the enjoyments of a happy home, and in preparing himself for college by the elementary studies pursued in the common schools. At the age of nineteen he entered the College of Precigne, in the diocese of Mans. Here he spent seven years, during which time he completed the full collegiate course of that institution. On his departure from college, he entered upon the study of law, not having any idea at the time of studying for the sacred ministry. For one year he prosecuted his study in the office of Monsieur Hontin, and the year following in the office of Monseieur Dubois, at Laval, France.

After two years' experience in a law office, he began to look upon the world in a far different light from that in which other young men in similar circumstances usually view it, and after a few months of serious reflection, and consultation with judicious friends, he abandoned the bright prospects of distinction which then smiled upon him, and rejoined his brother and college classmates, at the Theological Seminary at Mans, where he passed one year in the study of philosophy. The death of his mother, about this time, removed the only obstacle to the execution of a project which he had entertained from the time of his determination to study for the

ministry, namely, to enter the Seminary of Foreign Missions, at Paris. However, Father Sorin, his uncle, induced him to come to America, and, with this understanding, sent him to Rome, to study theology in the Roman College. While in Rome, he entered the Congregation of the Holy Cross, in October, 1860, being received by Father Dronelle, then Procurator General of the Congregation. In 1861 he was called to America, and arrived at Notre Dame in February of that year, where he completed his theological studies and after making his profession as a member of the Congregation, was ordained priest on the fourth of November, 1863.

Soon after his ordination, Father Lemonnier was appointed Prefect of Discipline, in which office he continued until May, 1865, when he was appointed by the Provincial Chapter, which met at that time, Prefect of Religion. In July, 1866, he was appointed Vice President and Director of Studies in the University, and afterward succeeded Rev. W. Corby as President, which position he occupied at the time of his death, which occurred at Notre Dame, Oct. 30, 1874.

Father Lemonnier displayed a great deal of natural energy in the discharge of his official duties, and gave evidence of considerable ability of a literary character. His almost complete mastery of the English language, within one year after his arrival at Notre Dame, showed a decided aptitude for languages, and several very fine dramatic productions, written amid the cares and annoyances of his office, gave evidence of literary talent of a high order. It is seldom that nature combines in one the polished gentleman, the scholarly professor, the religious teacher and correct business man as she did in him.

#### REV. N. H. GILLESPIE.

N. H. Gillespie was born at Brownsville, Pennsylvania. His early years passed without incident, beyond the usual catalogue of events common to youth whose chief occupation is to attend school and prepare themselves for usefulness in after-life. He was sent to Notre Dame to complete his studies, having accomplished which, he received the degree of A. B. in June, 1849, being the first graduate, in course, of the University. In 1851 he entered the Novitiate of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, and began his theological studies, fulfilling, at the same time, the duties of Professor of Mathematics in the college. In 1854, having made his religious profession in the preceding year, he was sent by his Superior to Rome, to complete his theological course in the celebrated schools of the Eternal City. This he did in the following years, and was ordained priest on the 29th of June, 1856.

Returning to Notre Dame, Father Gillespie was appointed Vice-President in 1856, which position he occupied till 1859, when he was appointed President of St. Mary's College, Chicago, Illinois. In 1860 he was recalled to Notre Dame, and again filled the post of Vice-President. In 1863 Father Gillespie was sent to Paris

where he remained a year, and then being summoned to the Mother House of the Congregation at Mans, remained till the summer of 1866, when he returned to Notre Dame. For several years after this, he performed the duties of Master of Novices, and was for some time editor of the *Ave Marie*, one of the leading Catholic magazines of the country.

Father Gillespie, after an illness of several months, died at Notre Dame on Thursday morning, Nov. 12, 1874. A peculiar interest centers around his death from the fact of his being the first graduate of the university, whose interests he afterward did so much to promote.

#### PROFESSOR BENJAMIN WILCOX.

Benjamin Wilcox was born in Connecticut in the year 1816. His early life was spent in an earnest attendance of the schools of his native place, and until the age of 16, in assisting his father in the duties of his farm. At that age his career as a teacher began. Later he entered Williams College, and graduated with high honors in 1841 at the age of 25 years. With a strong inclination for the study of medicine, a careful review of his qualifications convinced him that his widest and most natural field of usefulness lay in the onerous but noble duties of a teacher. He consequently adopted it as his life profession, entering it with his soul full of purpose and determination to succeed. His wide-spread fame, and the manifest good results of his life's labor, have demonstrated with striking force the wisdom of his choice. His life as a professional teacher began at Yates, New York, soon after his graduation; subsequently he taught at Wilson, New York, for 11 years, and then removed to Wisconsin, from where he was called to take charge of the high school at Valparaiso, in 1864. During his residence in Wisconsin misfortunes overtook him by an almost wholesale destruction of his property by fire, so that he came to Indiana in rather limited circumstances. He remained at Valparaiso until 1870, when a more advantageous offer from the School Board of South Bend induced him to come here and assume the preceptorship of the high school, a position he filled with great public satisfaction and personal gratification until his untimely and lamented death. In his professional life he was always thorough, earnest and energetic. He was a most perfect disciplinarian, and knew no higher ambition than that which prompted him to become one of the best and most distinguished instructors in the country. His schools were governed, not by the chafing power of an iron will, but by the unbounded love and respect which his treatment of pupils invariably commanded. Under his loving rule it was easy and pleasant to conform to the ever strict *regime* of the school, for love was the controlling power, and self-respect the guardian angel. In evidence of the high esteem in which he was held wherever he has lived, the family archives contain columns of notices of presentations of beautiful

and valuable gifts by his pupils and others. In life he kept a list of all persons who had received instruction from him during his professional career, and a correct record, as far as possible, of their whereabouts and condition. When it is known that this list contains between nine and ten thousand names, the magnitude of his life-work will be comprehended. This labor extended through a period of 42 years in all, and 34 as a professional teacher.

Professor Wilcox was twice married, his first wife being a sister of his bereaved widow. Five children were the issue of these marriages. His home was a happy, peaceful one; his private life pure, joyous and undisturbed. Nothing ruffled his even temper; offense was unknown to him. There was a quiet, impressive dignity upon his face, in his speech and daily walk which forbade offensive approach, and silenced importunity. He was a professed and earnest Christian, a Mason and an Odd Fellow, an elder in the First Presbyterian Church, and so zealous in his labors that a former pastor remarked on leaving that he was consoled with the thought that the Church could not go down so long as Professor Wilcox lived.

With health impaired by long continued labor, he left South Bend in the summer of 1875, to seek its restoration in the salubrious air of the Atlantic coast. But the continued wet weather and dense fogs during that season affected him so unfavorably that it was deemed best to return. While on the boat he was taken seriously ill, and while on the cars grew rapidly worse, necessitating a stop at Le Roy, New York, where his only sister lived, and where he breathed his last, on Monday afternoon, Aug. 16, 1875. His remains were brought to South Bend for interment. Rev. Mr. Morey preached his funeral discourse, taking for his text 2d Timothy, iv: 7, 8, 9: "For I am now ready to be offered and the time of my departure is at hand. I have fought a good fight; I have finished my course; I have kept the faith; henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but unto all them also who love His appearing." Mr. Morey spoke of the dead with great feeling. All might say of him that "he had fought a good fight." He had kept himself humble, steadfast and true in a world full of selfishness, deceit and trickery. His life had never been marred by a single underhanded blow. He was pre-eminently a man of faith, and had the utmost reverence for the Bible as the word of God, and implicit confidence in Jesus Christ as a divine Savior. His faith was absolutely royal, or rather it was the child-like faith that asks not sight. It colored the whole atmosphere of his life, and gave to his character manliness, purity and tenderness, making a perfect whole, commanding and receiving the homage of all. His appreciation of the true and beautiful in character, in thought or nature, was marvelously keen, and his power of expression was something wonderful.



Mr. Morey closed his address with an exhortation to the pupils of the dead professor, to cherish his memory and teachings, by quoting his parting words to the graduating class of 1875. "We hope that the moral precepts that you have received in connection with your daily lessons will not be altogether fruitless; but that you will ever be found identified with the friends of truth, morality and religion. We hope it will ever be yours to walk in the light of the wisdom that comes from God, and in the personal assurance of His approving grace. And now, commending you to God as your protector, and His word as your guide, I bid you an affectionate farewell."

Resolutions of respect and condolence were passed by the teachers and students of the high school.

#### ELDER C. WENGER.

One of the early settlers of this county was Elder Wenger, of Sumption Prairie. Mr. Wenger was born in Lebanon county, Pennsylvania, Dec. 10, 1814. In the spring of 1837 he emigrated to St. Joseph county, Indiana, stopping for awhile with the family of Samuel Studebaker. In the fall of 1838 he was joined in wedlock to Esther, eldest daughter of Samuel Studebaker, and for several years ran the little saw-mill that used to stand near the Wenger bridge, on the road from Mishawaka to South Bend. In 1843 he moved to a piece of land on the Turkey creek road. Here his wife died, leaving 4 children. In 1852 he married Esther Ullery, who survives him. From this marriage he had 2 children. On Thursday morning, Nov. 2, 1876, he died in the full assurance of faith. Elder Wenger was widely known through this section of country, and was a minister of the German Baptist Church for over thirty years, and an elder for over twenty years, and in the early days he had to travel long distances to fill appointments, and very often through the most inclement weather, but so zealous was he in the Master's cause that he did it cheerfully. In the death of Elder Wenger the community lost one of its most useful, honorable and energetic members; the Church, an honorable counselor, and an industrious, faithful, and able minister of the gospel; the bereaved family, an affectionate husband and kind father. In his sickness of twenty-five days of intense suffering, he never murmured, but patiently resigned his will to God, bid farewell to his family and friends, and died without a struggle or a groan.

#### JUDGE POWERS GREENE.

The subject of this sketch was born in Rensselaer county, New York, Jan 1, 1793. He moved with his parents, when a boy, to Oneida county, in the same State, and in 1837 came to St. Joseph county, settling first at Mishawaka, where he remained two years, engaged in hotel-keeping, and then moved to Portage Prairie, where he had



purchased a farm in German township, on which he set out a large orchard of nothing but Northern Spy apple-trees. He remained on this farm until 1865, when he removed to South Bend, where he resided until his death, which took place Monday evening, July 2, 1877. Judge Greene was twice married and twice bereaved. The first wife was buried in Oneida county, and the second in Herkimer county, New York. By his first wife he had one child, now Mrs. Harriet C. Hills, of Wankegan, Illinois. In early life, before coming to Indiana, he sold maps of various kinds in the South, principally in Tennessee, and in that way laid the foundation for the large fortune which he left to his daughter. He was a soldier in the war of 1812, a private in Captain William Hubbard's company of militia volunteers, and for several years previous to his death, drew an annual pension from the Government.

For several years Powers Greene was an associate judge with E. B. Chamberlain, of Goshen, who at one time occupied the Bench of the Circuit Court. He also served as County Commissioner, and in other ways has been identified with public life in St. Joseph county. He was a man of strong, positive mind and more than ordinary intellect; a wide and deep reader and thinker, and a fine conversationalist on almost any subject. Naturally enough, with so strong and positive a nature, considerable eccentricity was interwoven with it. Powerful in mind, his physical development was in fine proportion, presenting a rare and beautiful combination. A short time before his death he visited his old homes in Oneida and Rensselaer counties, New York, and spent a number of happy days in living over again a very happy period of his life. While visiting a cousin in Canada, he caught cold while sitting on the verandah, exposed to the evening air. He at once returned to his home in South Bend, and in forty-eight hours after his arrival his spirit returned to God who gave it. His remains were taken back to New York State and placed beside that of his first wife, who years before had preceded him to that "better land."

#### JOHN STUDEBAKER.

John Studebaker was born in York, Pennsylvania, Feb. 8, 1799. His father was a farmer, and until fifteen years of age he assisted in the farm work. At that age he was apprenticed to his brother-in-law, a wagon-maker and blacksmith, with whom he completed his trade, and made himself a skillful worker in wood and iron, being able to construct a wagon entire. On the 19th of October, 1820, he was married to Miss Rebecca Mohler, of Lancaster county, the same State. He soon afterward bought a farm in Adams county, Pennsylvania, and in connection with it conducted a wagon and blacksmith shop. In 1835 he sold his farm and shop, and, in wagons of his own construction, crossed the Alleghenies into Wayne county, Ohio, where he purchased a farm and engaged in the same business he had carried on so successfully on the eastern side of the

mountains, and in addition ran grist and saw mills. But here a reverse came to him, his first and hardest. Before leaving Pennsylvania he had endorsed for a friend, and being compelled to pay the amount for which he had become security, the whole of his little property was swept away. There was no exemption law in those days. At this time Mr. Studebaker had ten children living, five sons and five daughters, the oldest of the sons being Henry and Clement. His stringent circumstances called these two oldest from their country school-room to a little shop which their father had managed to fit up with tools. Here they learned their trades and laid the foundation for the great success which has rewarded their labors in later years, in the building up of the largest wagon factory in the world. The father and sons labored early and late, and in the course of a few years redeemed their fallen fortunes, and placed themselves once more in comfortable circumstances.

In 1848 Mr. Studebaker, seeing no prospect in the future for the advancement of his sons in the quiet precincts of Wayne county, set out on horseback to prospect the Western country. He traveled over a large portion of Indiana, but finally settled on South Bend as the most advantageous location, the excellent water-power being the main attraction. He returned to Ohio, and having arranged his business and disposed of his property, again fitted himself out with wagons, and in 1851 moved to that place, bringing with him two sets of tools, with which Henry and Clement went to work on the present site of the Studebaker Carriage Factory and formed the nucleus of the present extensive works. Mr. Studebaker engaged in no business, except to aid all in his power his two sons. He located his residence on the lot where he resided at the time of his death, though a new and handsome building has taken the place of the old one.

Mr. Studebaker and his wife, who survives him, had lived together fifty-seven years. Thirteen children had been born to them, nine of whom are living, five sons and four daughters. At the time of his death there were also forty-three grand-children, and eighteen great-grand-children, of this aged couple. They united with the German Baptist Church, 1829, and for nearly half a century had lived consistent Christian lives together, beloved by all who knew them. On leaving the home of his father, when a young man, his father gave him this injunction: "John, remember the poor." And he always obeyed it, remembering them often, even when it took that of which the need was felt by himself. He was public-spirited in his nature, the friend of the young man struggling for a place in life, the benefactor of the widow, the fatherless, and all in need. He leaves a name rich in the memory of good deeds, and an example the emulation of which by all would lead the world to better things.

#### JOHN MACK.

John Mack was born in Ontario county, New York, Nov. 15 1794. His great-grandfather was John Mack, who came from Lon

donderry, Ireland, in 1732, settling at Londonderry, New Hampshire. His father was born in Vermont, April 2, 1762, and in 1788, six years before the birth of the subject of this sketch, moved to Ontario county, New York. In 1804 his father moved to Hamburg, Erie county, but in 1806 removed to Hanover, Chautauqua county, in the same State, where there were but three white men at the time, and where his sister was the bride in the first marriage ever celebrated in that county. At this time there were but two houses on the site of the present great city of Buffalo. In 1844 he moved to La Porte county, Indiana, but being highly pleased with the location of South Bend on passing through, returned and settled here in the fall of that year. At an early day his father kept a tavern at Cattaraugus, New York, which was long and deservedly popular, and the subject of this sketch, inured to the privations and sacrifices of pioneer life, both by personal experience, as well as constant and intimate association with the moving multitudes, with whom he daily mingled, as he assisted them on their way, or provided for their comfort, his courteous and dignified manner, his genial and obliging disposition, made him a favorite with the traveling public during the years of his youth and early manhood. Many offices of trust and honor, both civil and military, were conferred upon him by his friends and neighbors, the duties of which were discharged with scrupulous fidelity and faithfulness. He held a commission in the war of 1812, and often related an incident of his experience in that war. Two English vessels chased a small transport into the mouth of a creek within a short distance of his father's house, and had sent a boat armed with a howitzer up the creek a short distance. A force of men was collected, however, and the boat retired after firing a few rounds, which compelled the removal of their family and goods. One of these vessels was the "Queen Charlotte," and both were afterward captured by Commodore Perry.

Mr. Mack spoke the language of the Seneca Indians quite fluently, and was frequently called upon by the Government to act as an interpreter and as an arbiter between the Indians themselves. He was Adjutant of the 162d Regiment and 43d Brigade of New York militia, and in 1824 was appointed Adjutant General of the militia detailed for the reception of the Marquis de Lafayette, on his visit to this country, and escorted that distinguished ally of our country from Fredonia to Dunkirk, where he took ship for Buffalo. In 1814 he was appointed postmaster at Cattaraugus. In 1838 he was engaged in filling a Government contract for timber for harbor improvements on Lake Erie. After that he was agent of the Erie railroad in the settlement of claims with property owners along the line, and the agent of Ogden & Fellows, part owners of the Holland purchase. He was made a Mason, at Buffalo, shortly after reaching his majority, and was consequently one of the oldest members of the order in the United States at the time of his death. He became a member of St. Joseph Lodge, No. 45, at South Bend, Dec.

20, 1844, and in 1862 demitted to become one of the charter members of South Bend Lodge, No. 294. He was twice married: First, in 1819, to Clarissa W. Hanford, who died in 1841, leaving four children. He was married the second time, in 1843, to Achsah M. Leland, who died April 6, 1875, leaving one child.

Having lost all his property in New York, he emigrated to South Bend at an early day, in the hope of recuperating his shattered fortune, and at first engaged in hard labor, doing whatever his hands found to do. By the second or third year, however, of his stay in that place, he entered the service of the pioneer Indian agent, Alexis Coquillard, acting as bookkeeper and general secretary. He accompanied Coquillard to the western reservation when he removed the Indians under authority of the general Government, in 1851, and during his life related many interesting incidents of the trip. He was with the Indians when the cholera broke out among them, and was unceasing in his efforts to relieve their sufferings. He was afterward engaged in the mail service on the Lake Shore railroad, and during his later years acted as bookkeeper and accountant for a number of persons and filled the office of Assessor. He erected the first house on the east side of the river, after the platting of Lowell, and aided materially in building up that part of the present city of South Bend. He joined the Baptist Church in 1846, and during the remainder of his life lived a consistent Christian.

#### ARIEL E. DRAPIER.

Ariel E. Drapier was born Aug. 31, 1808, in Sempronius, Cayuga county, New York. From the time he was 10 years of age he was a resident of this State, in the counties of Clarke, Perry, Posey and St. Joseph, his connection with the press sometimes carrying him out of the State for longer or shorter periods. In 1825-'6 he commenced a weekly paper, the *Western Compiler*, in Hardinsburgh, Breckinridge county, Kentucky, in the days when it was required in that State for a newspaper to be "authorized" by law. The two years following he occupied in law and general reading in the office of Hon. Willis Greene, in Hardinsburgh, and in the McClure School of Industry, New Harmony, Indiana, dividing his time in the latter place between reading and the general management of a semi-monthly scientific journal of that institution, *The Disseminator of Useful Knowledge*. This work preserves the letters and lucubrations of the Hon. William McClure, the liberal but eccentric patron of the McCluran Workingmen's Library Associations, in so many townships in Indiana. The succeeding year he was again a journeyman printer a second time in Natchez, Mississippi, and then a schoolmaster in Southeastern Louisiana, where some fishing and hunting was attended to by him in companionship with his early friend, Dr. John A. Veatch, since distinguished as a naturalist in California. In 1830-'31 he was "at the case" in Louisville, Kentucky, where, in September, 1831, he was married to Miss Martha

M. Spencer. By this marriage he had three children. In 1832 he served as foreman of the Boston *Daily Atlas*. In 1833 he typed the third and fourth volumes of Bowditch's Laplace's *Mecanique Celeste*. In 1834-'35 he published the Louisville *Notary* (weekly), and the Louisville *Daily Transcript*. In 1836 he published the St. Joseph *Herald*, in Southwestern Michigan, and the next year he essayed farming. Soon failing in means, and losing health in his family, he repaired again to the printing business, taking charge of the State printing in Indianapolis for the session of 1837-'38 of the General Assembly. In 1839-'40 he published the *Equator*, a literary weekly, at Bloomington, Indiana. In 1841-'42 he was again connected with the Louisville (Kentucky) press, publishing with the Popes and William H. Johnson, the last year of the daily Louisville *Public Advertiser*. He was afterward interested in a general job office in that city with John C. Noble. About this time, in his thirty-fourth year, he assumed reporting as a profession. Three sessions he served in the Kentucky Legislature for the Frankfort and Louisville press. In 1843-'44, with M. T. C. Gould, he reported the Campbell and Rice debate, in Lexington, 1,312 pages, 8vo. Before this time he had reported a theological debate in Bellville, Hendricks county, which was printed in Indianapolis. Afterward the Weinzophfleu Catholic priest case, in the Gibson Circuit Court, at Princeton, Indiana, with other court trials in Louisville and Frankfort, Kentucky, and in Knoxville, Tennessee.

In 1845 he compiled the "Elements of Swift Writing, after Taylor and Gould"—E. Morgan & Co., Cincinnati, Ohio; Morton & Griswold, Louisville, Kentucky, Publishers—adapting movable types to the short-hand symbols. In 1846-'7 he wrote for the *Ohio Statesman*, in that State Legislature. In 1847 he was engaged in the Tennessee Legislature. Then for two years he was in the first effort made by the Washington press to establish *verbatim* reports in Congress, which resulted in giving the contract to John C. Rives. In 1850-'51 he wrote in the Ohio and Indiana Constitutional Conventions. In 1852 he was again in the corps of reporters for the Daily and Congressional *Globe*. In 1853 he established the *St. Joseph County Forum*, a Democratic weekly newspaper, in South Bend. In 1855-'56 and in 1857-'58 he was engaged in the Tennessee Legislature, for the *Legislative Union and American*, two volumes of which were authorized as the authentic records of that body. He also reported the proceedings and debates in the Southern Methodist General Conference, at Nashville, in May of that year. He wrote in the Minnesota Constitutional Convention in 1857, and was official reporter to the Kansas Constitutional Convention in 1859. In 1858-'59 he instituted the first professional reporting for the Indiana Legislature, under the title of the "Brevier Legislative Reports."

As a citizen, Mr. Drapier was very modest and retiring. Had he pushed himself forward, a very prominent position in public life might have been his, but he was too pure a man to stoop to

the arts of a politician, and too dignified a man to be popular with the rabble. Twice he was the nominee, against his own wishes, of the Democratic party for the Legislature, but was defeated with his party, which was in a hopeless minority. He had a most commanding presence, being over six feet in height, and shapely as an Adonis. He was very frank and cordial in his greeting to friends, and courteous to all. He was grave and dignified in manner, and to some may have seemed stiff and cold, but his heart was always warm; it was the dignity of an old style gentleman. He was all his life a Christian, and was one of the founders of the Christian, or Disciple Church in South Bend, and at times, in its early days, officiated as a lay preacher. Editor or politician, preacher or citizen, he was always the same quiet, unostentatious man, whose real worth was not justly estimated by the stranger, but which had a warm appreciation by the many who knew him well. Death called him home Saturday, May 26, 1877. His remains were interred in the South Bend cemetery, there to await the resurrection morn. His last days were full of pain, for his affliction was one of the most painful the human system can bear; but under all he bore himself with courage and Christian resignation. He heard the summons and he answered the call:

—— sustained and soothed  
By an unfaltering trust——  
Like one who wraps the drapery of his couch  
About him, and lies down to pleasant dreams.

GEORGE W. MATTHEWS.

George W. Matthews was born in Baltimore, Maryland, Jan. 17, 1810. He was married to Mrs. Hannah D. Colfax, mother of Hon. Schuyler Colfax, in New York, November, 1834. Their children numbered five, four of whom are yet living. In October, 1836, he moved with his family to New Carlisle, this county, and remained there five years, engaged in the mercantile business, until he was elected County Auditor, when he removed to South Bend. He held this office two terms, Mr. Colfax serving part of the time as his deputy. Afterward Mr. Matthews was appointed Special Agent of the Postoffice Department, by President Taylor. For twelve years he served as printing clerk of the House of Representatives, with rare ability, resigning in the latter part of the year 1873. The long illness, and finally the painful death of his wife, with the unremitting care bestowed by him toward her, told upon his own health. In the spring and summer of 1873 he was thought to be in better health than he had been for years, but in August of that year, while superintending the erection of a building being built for himself, he was prostrated by a sunstroke, from which he never fully recovered. In November, 1873, he went to Buchanan, Michigan, to visit brothers residing there, hoping the change would be beneficial to his health, but he steadily failed so he could

not return to his home in South Bend. He died very easily and quietly on the 15th of January, 1874, aged 64 years. Mr. Matthews was held in great esteem by all who had the pleasure of his acquaintance, and in South Bend, where he was so well known, and in Washington, where he was so long in public life, he made many friendships, deep and lasting, and he will long be remembered by all for his many good qualities, which made his friendship desirable and his companionship valuable.

#### COLONEL ALFRED B. WADE.

Alfred Bryant Wade was the youngest son of Judge Robert Wade, and was born in South Bend, Indiana, on the 28th of December, 1839. His father died when he was quite young, and he was left to the charge of his mother, who reared him with all the care a fond, religious mother could bestow. He received his education in the "old seminary," in South Bend, and although he took great interest in athletic sports was noted for his close application to study. At 16 he was the readiest off-hand speaker and most forcible debater of his age in that city. His facility in drawing and lettering led him to learn the marble-cutting trade, but he followed it only a few years, as the dust affected his lungs. After abandoning it he went to Pike's Peak, but soon returned and began to read law under Judge Stanfield. When the war broke out, he enlisted in the 9th Regiment. When the 73d Regiment, Indiana Volunteers was rendezvoused at South Bend, he joined it as Adjutant, and was with it at Lexington, Chaplin Hills, in pursuit of Bragg to Wild Cat, and the fight at Gallatin, Tennessee.

In the terrible fight at Stone River, Adjutant Wade's regiment took a prominent part. It was the first of the whole army to cross Stone river under the enemy's fire on the event of the first day's battle. Its brigade there encountered Breckenridge's whole division and was obliged to recross. The next day it passed in skirmishing, and then on the 31st of December, 1862, it participated in the most terrific fighting that occurred during the whole war. When the right wing of our army was beaten back two miles, the 73d was double-quickened a mile and a half to reinforce it, and taking a position on the extreme right engaged two rebel brigades. In 20 minutes, fighting at close range, the regiment lost one-third of its entire number engaged, but checked the enemy's advance and saved the right wing of the army. After the fight Gen. Rosecrans complimented the regiment in person for its bravery. Through all this fighting Adjutant Wade was with the regiment as cool and collected as on dress parade. His horse was shot from under him and he fought on foot. In one of the attacks, when the storm of rebel bullets became so thick that no force could withstand them, and a retreat was ordered, Adjutant Wade tripped twice on his sword and fell. "The second time he fell," said an eye witness, "he got up, stopped, unbuckled his sword and walked after the



retreating regiment as collectedly as if he were going out to drill."

When Colonel Streight organized his Independent Provisional Brigade to penetrate the enemy's country and cut his communications, the 73d, which seemed to be doomed to do hard fighting, was assigned to it. Two days after it left Tuscumbia, Alabama, 1,500 strong, it was attacked by 4,000 rebel cavalry under Forrest and Roddy. The 73d was on the left flank, where it gallantly repulsed a fierce charge of the cavalry within 20 feet of its colors, and the enemy was eventually repulsed with the loss of two pieces of artillery. In another fight the same day the enemy fared no better. On the 2d of May the 73d bore the brunt of the fight at Blount's farm, and there lost its commander, Colonel Hathaway. On the next day, out of ammunition, exhausted by incessant traveling and fighting, and surrounded by superior forces, the brigade surrendered, and Adjutant Wade, with the rest of the officers, was taken to Libby prison, where he was confined for nearly two years, and received such injuries from close confinement that his naturally strong constitution never recovered from them. His exchange was finally secured through the influence of Schuyler Colfax, who had been his Sabbath-school teacher for many years, and who had always taken a great interest in him. He was promoted to Major and sent to take command of the 73d at Nashville, and with it picket a portion of the Tennessee river. As usual there was a great deal of fighting to do, and General Granger several times complimented Major Wade and his boys for their bravery and efficiency, and he was made Lieutenant-Colonel. In the latter part of 1864 the 73d was sent to Athens, Alabama, which Forrest had captured a few days before with 600 men, and then abandoned it. Colonel Wade's orders were to hold the place, and he did it most successfully. He constructed a bomb-proof of his own invention inside the fort. On the 1st of October Gen. Buford, with 4,000 cavalry and a few pieces of artillery, appeared before Athens, and a skirmish was kept up all that day, Col. Wade having but 500 men and two pieces of artillery. At six o'clock the next morning Gen. Buford opened a fire, but owing to the bomb-proof Col. Wade sustained no loss, though he managed to inflict a serious one on the enemy. After two hours' hard fighting Gen. Buford sent in a flag of truce and demanded a surrender, "to stop the effusion of blood," and wound up by saying that he would not be responsible for the action of his men if Wade did not surrender. Col. Wade replied that he had been ordered to hold the fort and intended to do it, and as to stopping the effusion of blood, there had been none among his men to stop. As soon as the bearer of the flag of truce reached Buford's lines, and before the rebel general had time to recover from his surprise at the audacity of a Yankee boy who was not afraid to fight 4,000 trained cavalry with a handful of men, Col. Wade opened a fierce fire among the enemy's ranks and Buford and his men precipitately retreated with great loss. The loss to Colonel Wade's men was so slight as to attract special mention. For his



gallantry at Athens Lieutenant-Col. Wade was promoted to the Colonelcy of the 73d, which was the only Indiana regiment which went through the war with but two Colonels. On his muster out with the regiment, he went to Ann Arbor and graduated; then returned to South Bend and opened a law office and practiced his profession until the accession of Grant to the Presidency, when he was appointed postmaster. He was re-appointed in 1873.

Colonel Wade was a member of the Presbyterian Church. His mother, who was a member of that Church from its organization, named him after its first minister, Rev. Alfred Bryant.

In the fall of the same year that he was mustered out of the service (1865) he was married to Miss Jennie Bond, of Niles, Michigan. The union was a very happy one, and was blessed by four children.

On Tuesday morning, Feb. 27, 1877, Colonel Wade left South Bend for Crum's Point, about ten miles distant, to hunt ducks. He went alone, taking with him his dog, gun, sachel, pail of provisions, and a light metal boat built in two sections. On arriving at the Point he left his horse and wagon in charge of Christian Haller, launched his boat and started on the hunt. About four or five o'clock the same afternoon the dog returned to Haller's, but nothing strange was thought of the matter. On Wednesday, while two men who were trapping along the river were examining their traps, they came across Col. Wade's boat, opposite the farm of Henry Burden. It had apparently drifted down stream until it lodged in the grass and bulrushes a short distance from the shore. They pulled it in, and also secured a buffalo robe a short distance below, floating on the water. On the seat of the boat lay the Colonel's gun case; close beside it was his breech-loading gun. The alarm was immediately given, and some fifteen or twenty men engaged in the search for the body and continued until compelled to abandon it on account of the darkness. Early the next morning the search was resumed, and the body of the Colonel was found about three-fourths of a mile above where the boat was found. The theory of the drowning was that he was sitting in the boat eating his dinner, when he was seized with one of his dizzy spells, which had been troubling him for some time, and falling to one side, careened the boat sufficiently to throw him out into the river; that the water revived him and he struck out for the shore, but failed to reach it, though an excellent swimmer, on account of the icy coldness of the water chilling him into a state of numbness. His body was at once taken to South Bend, where an inquest was held with the verdict of "accidental drowning." His funeral was conducted under the auspices of the South Bend Commandery, No. 13, K. T., and Crusade Lodge No. 14, K. of P.

#### HORATIO CHAPIN.

Horatio Chapin was born in Bernardstown, Mass., in 1803. In 1822 he moved to Detroit, Michigan, and in 1831 to South Bend,

Indiana, then consisting of about a dozen log cabins. In this same year he called on the different professors of religion in South Bend with reference to the necessity of establishing a Sabbath-school. A meeting was held and a union Sabbath-school organized. This school afterward, being suspended for a time, was by a similar effort re-organized in 1833. At both organizations Mr. Chapin was elected superintendent. By old settlers Mr. Chapin was termed the "Pioneer of Sabbath-schools in St. Joseph county." In 1835 separate Sabbath-schools were organized in connection with the Methodist Episcopal and Presbyterian Churches. On the organization of the Presbyterian Church in 1834, Mr. Chapin was one of the first members received, and was one of its officers from that time until his death. In 1838 the South Bend branch of the State Bank of Indiana was established and Mr. Chapin became its cashier, which office he filled for over twenty years. In 1862 he became connected with, and manager of, the private banking house of Chapin, Wheeler & Co., in Chicago. Two or three years after he retired from the business, and returned to South Bend.

Mr. Chapin was a man of considerable culture, being more or less thoroughly acquainted with several branches of knowledge, such as medicine, theology, finance, horticulture and natural science. He was a man of great strength and decision of character. With Puritan firmness he stood fast by his convictions and principles. In his character was illustrated the rugged strength of the oak. From the day he came to South Bend his influence was continuously exerted on behalf of morality, intelligence and religion. In his long career as a business man, those who knew him most thoroughly testify to his life-long integrity. During the last years of his life, he seemed to ripen fast for the kingdom of heaven. Unceasingly he gave his dying testimony as to the preciousness of the Lord Jesus Christ as his only and all-sufficient Savior, in whom alone he trusted for salvation, or acceptance with God. He was called to his final home on the thirteenth day of May, 1871.

#### SAMUEL BYERLY.

Samuel Byerly was born in Staffordshire, England, in 1796. His father was a partner and relative of Josiah Wedgwood, the great pottery manufacturer, and inventor of the "queensware" which is now used everywhere throughout the civilized world. But in the days of the Wedgwood-Byerly partnership this ware had not acquired much celebrity, and before the firm became wealthy Mr. Byerly died, leaving his family in limited circumstances. Samuel was then thirteen years old, and had received only a limited education, but Staffordshire sends no drones out into the world, and young Byerly left to his own resources did not long remain idle, but applied himself diligently to acquiring an education and securing a living. His aptitude for learning, untiring industry and strength of character soon attracted attention, his amenity of manners made him

very popular, and before he was of age he found himself on the highway to wealth, position and influence. He was a close student, and although self-educated, could speak seven different languages; was as conversant with the French, Italian, German, Spanish, Latin and Greek, as with his native tongue.

During the Napoleonic wars Mr. Byerly was chosen as dispatch carrier to Russia, a position of great importance, but surrounded with innumerable dangers. Once his route took him across one arm of the Baltic sea. He was obliged to make the crossing, some three or four hundred miles, in an open boat. It was in winter, and the sea was filled with floating ice. The trip was made, but nearly all his companions were frozen. At the close of the wars he traveled pretty much all over Europe, visiting among other places Norway, Sweden, Italy, France, Portugal, Germany, Greece, Turkey and Turkey in Asia. He finally settled in Trieste and became a partner in a large commercial house. While there he became acquainted with and married the lady who survived him. She is a native of Tyrol, a niece of Andrew Hofer, the Wallace of Tyrol, commander of the Tyrolese insurrection in 1809, during the war between France and Austria. Hofer, whom the Tyrolese fairly worshiped, was betrayed and shot, but his brave and chivalrous deeds are still the wonder and talk in the mountains and valleys of Tyrol.

In 1832 Mr. Byerly severed his connection with the firm in Trieste and came to the United States. His administrative and executive ability, his rare business qualifications and linguistic powers soon attracted the attention of Howell & Aspinwall, of New York, then one of the largest mercantile and shipping firms in the United States. He was admitted to the firm and soon took entire charge of the vast commercial and shipping interests. The firm had ships on every ocean; their trade extended to every quarter of the globe. Many New Yorkers yet remember Samuel Byerly as the business prodigy of that city, laboring unceasingly, for years, twenty hours out of the twenty-four, and dispatching business with a celerity and accuracy of which few men are capable. Ten years of such life had their effect on even as robust a life as Mr. Byerly possessed, and in 1843, then fifty years old, he retired from business and came West seeking a home where he might pass the rest of his time with his family, in quiet. Struck with the beauty of South Bend and its surroundings, he settled here, built him a country house and passed the remainder of his days in horticultural pursuits and with his books, for he was an unwearied, untiring student to the close of his life.

Mr. Byerly was noted for his kindness of heart and generosity of character. He scattered his bounties with an unstinted hand, hardly stopping to inquire if the objects of his beneficence were worthy or not; in short, he was generous to his own pecuniary injury. He was not less remarkable for his buoyancy and brightness and his delight to labor over whatever work he had in hand. This was also characteristic of his brothers, several of whom held

important civil or military positions in England, and of his sister, Mrs. Catherine Thompson, a well-known English historian and romancist.

Mr. Byerly was a member of the Catholic Church. His death occurred Saturday, March 10, 1870. His remains were deposited in the cemetery at Notre Dame.

#### ELISHA EGBERT.

Elisha Egbert was born in New Jersey in 1806. At an early day his father moved to Lebanon, Ohio, where his boyhood days were spent. He studied law with Hon. Thomas Corwin, then a rising young lawyer. He removed to South Bend in 1829, and soon after engaged in teaching school. He was among the first teachers in the county. He was present at the organization of the first courts in Elkhart, St. Joseph and La Porte counties, and at the time of his decease was the last of the first members of the Bar of Northern Indiana. He was said to be the first admitted to practice in the courts north of the Wabash river, and was plaintiff in the third suit on the records of St. Joseph county. In 1834 he was appointed probate judge. With the exception of one term, which time he spent in farming, he continued to hold that position until the office was abolished in 1852, when he was elected common pleas judge, which position he held for 18 years, up to the time of his death. Many were the changes in political parties in the course of his long, judicial career, but so fully did he have the confidence of his fellow citizens that his election seemed to follow as a matter of course. On the 4th day of November, 1870, he was called to his reward above. Judge Egbert was a member of the Masonic order and was buried by the members of the order in South Bend. The South Bend Commandery, in their resolutions of respect thus speaks of him. "In paying an appropriate tribute to the memory of our deceased Brother and Companion, it is eminently proper to state that during a long life, nearly all of which has been spent in our midst, he has been the one to whom the sorrowing of earth could go and have their grief assuaged; that for more than a quarter of a century he has been a faithful Mason, in early life having presided over St. Joseph lodge, of which he was so long an acceptable member; that he has filled highly honorable and responsible positions in the chapter in which he belonged, and feeling, as he often said, that he had a desire to travel the full length of the Masonic road, a few months since he presented his application for the orders of Knighthood, and but quite recently passed through these solemn ceremonies, exhibiting as he did his goodness of heart, when receiving the crowing glory of Masonry. He expressed a desire that he should be buried by the order. Judge Egbert was the courteous gentleman, the warm-hearted friend, devoted companion, affectionate parent and true Mason."

A local writer thus speaks of Judge Egbert: "He studied law in the office of Hon. Thomas Corwin, of Ohio. That generous old Roman took him into his family, boarded him, and treated him as one of their number. When the young student got through his studies, and was admitted to the Bar, he was, like most other Western students of law, without money and without clients. His old preceptor said to him: 'Now Lishe, you owe me three or four hundred dollars, and it does not make much difference whether you can pay it or not, but I advise you to strike out into some new country and begin for yourself.' He did so, and pitched his tent amongst us. In eight or ten years afterward, Corwin was broken up by endorsement for friends. The grateful student, though pushed with debts himself, did not forget his benefactor. As soon as he heard of his misfortune, he sent him six or seven hundred dollars. I saw Corwin's reply. It was a warm and sympathetic reply, characteristic of the great and good man. For the first year or so after Judge Egbert settled here there was very little litigation in the country. The people did not have time to dispute much. All were intent on getting a home, and honest, hard work was considered the most legitimate way of accomplishing that end. Our young lawyer had to look to some other avocation for a living, in connection with his profession. One of the first houses built in the new town was a log school-house. I think it was four logs high, and 16 by 20 feet square. The logs were hewed, and not less than two feet wide. This was the common meeting-house for all religious purposes for several years. Mr. Egbert opened a school in this house in the summer of 1831 and taught for several quarters, at the same time practicing law and speculating a little. In 1834 he was commissioned probate judge and held the office until 1838, when he was elected a member of the Legislature over Captain Anthony Defrees. Both candidates were Whigs. In that day nobody regarded the politics of a candidate for the Legislature on national questions. A Whig would vote for a Democrat for the Legislature as quick as he would for one of his own political faith, and Democrats would as soon vote for a Whig under the same circumstances. The party lines were never drawn until 1840.

"After the Judge had got fairly on his feet, and feeling confident of his strength, he began to launch out in trade and speculation. In July, 1834, he laid out the town of Portage, on the river about two miles below South Bend. It was just below a very sharp bend in the river, now cut off as an island. But this bend suggested another name for the town, by which it has always been known—'Pin Hook.' Under the Judge's fostering care, Portage began to thrive and grow. It soon had two taverns, two dry-goods stores, two physicians and a public ferry across the river, and quite a collection of new houses. In a year or so it became quite a snug, thriving little village. While the Judge's town was growing and everything looked prosperous, he branched out in a variety of enterprises, such as merchandising, milling and land speculations. When

the hard times of 1837-'8 struck the country, he found himself, like all the enterprising men, carrying a heavier load than he was able to bear, and finally did come out about where he started in, and his town of Portage did about the same thing. In 1852 Judge Egbert was elected judge of the Common Pleas Court, and held the office nearly 20 years, up to the time of his death, discharging all its duties as an impartial and upright judge."

#### DWIGHT DEMING.

Dwight Deming was one of the best known business men in Northern Indiana. He came to this county at an early day in its history from Castleton, Vermont, where he was born on the 16th of February, 1824. He settled with his parents, the late Judge John J. Deming and wife, at Mishawaka in 1834. His father was one of the leading spirits of Mishawaka at that time. With Col. John H. Orr, J. E. Hollister and Philo Hurd he organized the same year he settled there the St. Joseph Iron Company, for the manufacture of iron from bog ore, which existed in large quantities in the vicinity of Mishawaka. Later in life Judge Deming was elected probate judge, and continued to reside in Mishawaka until 1856, when he removed to California, where his son, Theodore, and his daughter, Mrs. Chas. Crocker, had preceded him, and he lived there until his death.

When 22 years old Dwight Deming was married to Miss Cornelia L. Nicar, daughter of the late Robert B. Nicar, who was treasurer of this county from 1851 to 1856. The ceremony took place June 10, 1846, and was one of the great social events of Mishawaka, where the young couple were well known and very popular. Mr. Deming taught school for awhile, and then removed to this place, and went into the drug business. He bought A. B. Merritt's drug store on Michigan street, about where the horse-shoe store now is. He added books to the stock and did a very successful business. Elated by his success he purchased a building lot on Lafayette street in rear of the old jail and there erected, in 1851-'2, the largest, as well as the most costly, house there was in the city at that time. It was built of brick and was elegantly furnished throughout. The house stands to-day almost as he built it. He failed in business partly on account of this expenditure, and A. G. Cushing became the owner of the drug and book store, while the residence became the property of Hon. William Miller, whose widow still occupies it.

After his failure, Mr. Deming went to Minnesota and staid nearly a year, but he had great faith in the future of South Bend, and in 1857 he returned here and engaged in the hardware business with his father-in-law, R. B. Nicar, the firm being R. B. Nicar & Co. The business was carried on in the corner now occupied by Peck's clothing store, and prospered finely. At the close of the war, on the return of Capt. Ed. Nicar, his father-in-law retired, disposing

of his interest to Capt. Nicar and his brother Virginus, and the business continued under the name of Nicar, Deming & Co. After a few years Virginus retired to go into the stove and tinware business, and the firm was changed to Deming & Nicar. In 1874 Mr. Deming retired from the firm, which then became E. Nicar & Co. When Capt. Nicar was elected County Clerk, he disposed of his interest to A. B. France.

While in the hardware business, Mr. Deming, who had by his untiring devotion to business acquired a competence, bought the "old Exchange" property, on the corner of Michigan and Water streets, and refitted it for a hotel. He expended large sums of money in adding to it, bought the property directly opposite and erected an immense stable, and opened the hotel as the Dwight House. He made these improvements in 1865-'6 and ran the hotel himself. Under his management it became the leading hotel in the city.

In 1871 he became owner, with David Warner, of the M. Stover lot on Michigan street, and in connection with Mr. Warner erected the most imposing business block on that street. It was 165 feet deep, about 60 feet wide and three stories high. It was christened "Lincoln Block." Mr. Deming owned the north half of it and built its lower story for the model hardware store of the State. The block cost an immense amount of money, and together with his Dwight House and other improvements and speculations involved him badly in debt; and when the panic of 1873 struck the country it found him in bad shape for such a blow, and with thousands of other good men he was obliged to succumb.

Such a blow would have crushed most men, yet while it touched Mr. Deming's pride it could not shake his energy. He went to California at the special request of his brother-in-law, Charles Crocker, the famous Pacific railroad millionaire, who made him the most inviting proposals to come to the Pacific slope and engage in business. But Mr. Deming liked no place so well as South Bend. He returned here and opened a coal and wood yard, a business which he had been engaged in along with his other ventures. He showed his great energy and business capacity by building up a large and profitable trade in coal, wood, lime, etc., with no capital but his energy and pluck to start on. At the time of his death his business was in a prosperous condition, and he was looking forward to buying and building a home for his family in which to spend the remainder of his days.

Mr. Deming was one of the most active politicians in the county. Originally a Whig, as his father was before him, he identified himself with the Republican party when it was organized, and was an active member of that party up to 1874, when he joined the Liberals and finally became a Democrat and was a member of that party when he died. He was first elected to office by the Republicans in 1872 as County Commissioner, and held the office continually up to the time of his death. His present term to which he was



elected by Democrats would not have expired until 1882. He also held the office of councilman from the fourth ward in our city government, and was once candidate for Mayor, but was defeated by Prof. Tong. On Sunday evening, Sept. 26, 1880, between six and seven o'clock, Mr. Deming brought his wife from their residence in the fourth ward to the home of her mother, Mrs. Nicar, on the corner of Lafayette and Market streets, promising to call for her with the carriage at nine o'clock, and then went to the office connected with his coal and wood yard, on Michigan street, near the iron bridge. As he did not return at nine o'clock, Mrs. Deming became uneasy, and her brother, Capt. E. Nicar, went to the office, where he found him lying on the floor in front of his desk. Dr. McGill was called in but life was extinct, he having died of valvular disease of the heart, or apoplexy. That his death was very sudden was indicated by the surroundings. He had fallen prone upon the floor from his chair, which stood in front of his desk. On the desk were his eye-glasses and a pamphlet he had been reading.

JOHN A. HENRICKS.

The subject of this sketch was born in Pendleton county, Kentucky, Aug. 10, 1811. While quite young his parents moved to Champaign county, Ohio, where he lived with them on a farm until he was sixteen, attending at intervals the common schools of that day. At the age of sixteen he left the farm and studied medicine, in Urbana, with Dr. Carter, and afterward graduated at the Cincinnati Medical College, and in 1832 removed to South Bend and entered upon the practice of medicine with Dr. Hardman. He was the second physician who settled in the place, Dr. Hardman being the first.

In 1836 Dr. Henricks was married to Miss Comparet, a half sister of Mrs. Alexis Coquillard, and abandoned the practice of medicine to accept the proposition of Mr. Coquillard to engage in the dry-goods trade. The store was opened in the old red brick on the corner of Michigan and Market streets, and conducted for three years, when failure followed. Afterward Dr. Henricks and John Rush formed a partnership and purchased a stock of goods of Mr. Coquillard and for a time did a very heavy business, when financial reverses again came and they went under. His wife and two children were taken from him by death, which, with his business reverses, was enough to have discouraged a less indomitable person.

A few years after he married Miss Sanger, and a third time entered the dry-goods business with one of the Sanger boys, and again in the old red brick. In connection with other business enterprises he built a mill, using it for a time for a warehouse from which to ship wheat. In 1849 he, in company with William Miller and others, went to California. After their return they engaged in the milling business together, and also in the contract for building the State Prison at Joliet, Illinois. In 1863 Dr.



Henricks disposed of his share in the mill to Mr. Miller, and gave his whole attention to the prison contract, from which he realized a handsome competence. When the First National Bank, of South Bend, was organized, he became the president, a position he held for many years.

In 1854 Dr. Henricks was married for the third time to Miss Julia Appleby (his second wife having died), who survives him.

Dr. Henricks always took a prominent part in politics, and his popularity always made him a desirable candidate for his party, he being almost invariably successful. During his first term in the Legislature, in which he served several terms, he was the means of having a branch of the State Bank located in South Bend. He was a fluent, pleasing, and argumentative speaker, quick at repartee, slow to anger, and with a personal magnetism that easily swayed his audience and made him a powerful opponent. His last appearance in political life was as the Liberal candidate for Congress.

Dr. Henricks was called to his reward Saturday, Feb. 19, 1876.

#### MRS. FRANCES C. COQUILLARD.

Mrs. Coquillard was the most remarkable person in the history of St. Joseph county, sharing as she did the duties, the privations and honors of her remarkable husband. Her maiden name was Frances C. Comparet, and she was born in Detroit, April 9, 1805. In 1824, at the age of nineteen, she was married in Fort Wayne to Alexis Coquillard and soon afterward came with him to the site of the present city of South Bend, where he had established a trading post. Being a woman of strong mind, active temperament, indomitable courage and shrewdness remarkable in a woman, she proved a strong aid to her husband in his dealings with the Indians. She accompanied him on his long, fatiguing journeys or remained to take charge of the post and cope single-handed with the Indian traders. The aid she was enabled to render her husband in his business was largely due to the strong influence she was not long in obtaining over the Indians, which was frequently manifested in councils, when a few words from her would restore good feeling and avert a threatened danger. She was to the poor, untutored Indians of that day a veritable Good Samaritan. She nursed them in their sickness, sympathized with them in their sorrows and troubles, and in every way made them feel that she was their true friend. That they learned to love her it is needless to state, and to the few Indians who remain, the announcement of her death will be sorrowful news. They frequently made visits to her during her life, and always looked up to her as a guiding genius.

The Indians were not alone, however, in being the recipients of her kind attentions and bounty. Like her noble husband she was of an open, frank, charitable and generous nature, and the sufferings and sorrows of others never appealed in vain to her sensitive heart. To the women who came after her and settled with their

husbands and families around her cabin she was frequently a friend in need, teaching how best to provide against the hardships of pioneer life and rendering them every assistance that could be suggested to a kind and charitable nature. Mrs. Coquillard was the first woman who dared the dangers and endured the privations of pioneer life when the spot on which the city is located was a howling wilderness, inhabited only by Indians and wild beasts; the first woman to bring among the savages of this section the refining influences of civilized and Christian life, and through whose exertions and services the germ of civilization was deposited here. Death called her away Monday, Oct. 11, 1880.

#### JOHN M. STOVER.

John M. Stover was born in Botetourt county, Virginia, in the year 1833, but while yet a boy his parents moved with him to this county. He received a fair education, and having a desire for the medical profession, shortly after attaining his majority he commenced the study of medicine with Dr. Van Tuyl, then a leading physician of South Bend. He afterward entered the Jefferson Medical College, at Philadelphia, and graduated in 1858 in the regular course. He then opened an office in South Bend, and built up a large practice, which he retained until failing health admonished him his time had come. Dr. Stover was possessed of a clear, vigorous mind, great energy of character, and entered upon the duties of his profession with a zeal that proved too much for his bodily strength. As a physician he stood high in the community, and by his geniality and pleasant manners, attached to himself many and warm friends. In politics he was steadfast in the teachings of his youth, upholding with firmness and pertinacity the doctrines of the Democratic party. He was a member of the Baptist Church, and died in the full assurance of hope, Nov. 15, 1869.

#### JOHN T. LINDSEY.

John T. Lindsey came to this county when a mere lad, and was partially raised in the family of T. W. Bray. In 1837 Mr. Bray was elected County Clerk, and young Lindsey showing great aptitude for business, was made his deputy. In 1844, Mr. Lindsey was a candidate for the same office, was elected, and served until 1851. In 1856 he was appointed teller in the South Bend branch of the State Bank of Indiana, and held the position until the organization of the First National Bank of South Bend, when he was tendered the position of cashier, which he accepted. Through the course of a long and useful life, it was the good fortune of Mr. Lindsey to secure the confidence of every one with whom he had relations. It is not too much to say of him that he never knew how to follow a devious or dishonest course, and his name became

to those having dealings with him the synonym of integrity. Mr. Lindsey was a member of the Presbyterian Church, and also of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows. He died, loved and respected by all, Tuesday, Nov. 16, 1869.

## ISAAC EATON.

Isaac Eaton was born in Loudon county, Va., in 1775, but was raised in Maryland, in the vicinity of Antietam and South Mountain, a locality made historic by the events of the late Rebellion. In the second war with Great Britain, Mr. Eaton enlisted and served to its close. In 1830 he moved to this county, then an almost unbroken wilderness. In his younger days he was a man of great strength, a lithe, wiry body, under medium size, and in the numerous personal encounters, quite common in that early day, became quite famous for never having "met his match." Many are the anecdotes related of him concerning these trials of strength. In the war of 1812, Eaton served with the Virginia Militia, under the command of Gen. Mason, a Virginian, born in the same county with Eaton, about twelve years his junior, and the most popular man in the army. It is more than probable that military discipline was very lax in those times, and one day at a general review, Mason rode up and down the lines proclaiming that he had a man in his command who could whip anything in the entire army. This challenge, several times repeated, was at last responded to by a perfect giant of a fellow from a Pennsylvania regiment, who came stalking down the lines and asked Gen. Mason to bring out his man. The General ordered Eaton out of the ranks. He was eyed by the Pennsylvanian with about as much scorn as Goliath was supposed to have looked upon David. Word was given to begin the battle, and there, before the whole American army, formed in a hollow square, the two men stripped to the waist and engaged in combat, but in less time than it takes to tell it, Eaton lifted his hereulean opponent from the ground, and twirling him over with apparently as much ease as a dandy would a cane, held him up before the whole army in this inverted position, until the giant Pennsylvanian begged for quarter. At another time, in Kentucky, Eaton was forced to accept a challenge to fight, and on the first encounter threw his opponent to the ground with such force as to break nearly all his ribs. Mr. Eaton died, in Clay township, Dec. 25, 1869, aged 95 years.

## JUDGE JOHNSON.

Peter Johnson was born in Pennsylvania in 1788. In early years he followed boating on the Monongahela, Ohio, Mississippi and Red rivers, making trips with keel boats from Pittsburg to New Orleans, and up the Red river, which frequently occupied an entire year. It was upon one of these trips that he saw the first steamer that ever

ran upon the Mississippi river. In 1812 he was married to Miss Chalfant. Two years after his marriage he moved to Ohio, and after living there four years, moved to Wayne county, in this State, where he resided until 1828, when he went to Logansport, and two years after he moved to South Bend.

Peter Johnson was just the man for a new place. Industrious, energetic, enterprising, he soon made his presence felt in that town, then struggling hard for an existence. In less than nine months after his arrival, with no saw-mills nearer than Elkhart, and laboring under the greatest disadvantages, he, with the assistance of his two sons, Evan and Lee, built "Michigan tavern," the first frame house erected in South Bend. It stood on the site where Coonley & Co.'s drug store now stands, and was known in later days as the "Old American." Transportation was then so difficult, and sawed lumber so hard to get, that the studding, rafters and joists were split from oak trees and afterward hewed into shape. The same year he built the keel boat "Fair Play," which made trips several years between South Bend and the mouth of the river. The next year, 1832, he built the "Comet," the "Hoosier" in 1841, and a fourth in 1842. He also built a steam saw-mill, and was at one time engaged in the mercantile business. He was one of the first County Commissioners, was a Justice of the Peace, and was also appointed associate judge, and served in that capacity several years.

Judge Johnson lived 57 years of married life and raised nine children. He was a member of the Masonic order for 51 years, and all his sons, five in number, are now members of the same order. Death called him home Thursday, March 10, 1870, aged 82 years.

#### CHARLES M. TUTT

Was born in Culpepper county, Virginia, Feb. 7, 1808, and died in South Bend, Indiana, Nov. 6, 1870. Mr. Tutt moved to the latter place in 1832, and was elected Sheriff of the county in 1838, and re-elected in 1840. In 1849 he went to California where he remained six years, and returned to South Bend. At the time of his death Mr. Tutt was Justice of the Peace, which office he had held for two years.

#### ARCHIBALD DEFREES

Was born in Rockbridge county, Virginia, October, 1792. He moved from Virginia to Shelby Co., Ohio, in 1810, and thence to this county in 1835. He purchased a farm about six miles west of South Bend and followed farming as an occupation until 1849, when he moved to the latter place, where he resided until his death, serving most of the time as Justice of the Peace. He also served as County Treasurer one year. Mr. Defrees was an upright, moral

and exemplary citizen, deeply respected by a large circle of acquaintances. He was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church for over 45 years. His death took place March 3, 1869.

#### J. G. BARTLETT

Was born in Newington, New Hampshire, July 2, 1815, and came to South Bend in 1837. Here he opened a bakery and grocery store in a building that stood on No. 68 Washington street. Subsequently he removed his business to Michigan street. Mr. Bartlett was twice married; was a member of the Presbyterian Church, and of the Odd Fellows. He was a most estimable citizen, scrupulously honest in all his dealings, and in matters involving principle was as unyielding as the granite hills of his native State.

#### JAMES A. IRELAND

Was born near New Paris, Preble county, Ohio, Jan. 1, 1812. He came to this county in 1829 and first settled in Pleasant Valley; then in 1830 went to South Bend, but afterward returned to Pleasant Valley, and lived there a few years, and again to South Bend, where he resided until his death, Aug. 21, 1873. His first business in South Bend was teaming, which he followed for ten years, when he opened a livery stable, which business he carried on for 20 consecutive years, disposing of it in the spring of 1873. He was twice married. Mr. Ireland's business gave him an extensive acquaintance throughout this and adjoining States, and he was noted among all who had transactions with him, for his honesty and fair dealing. Generous to a fault, a warm sympathizer with those in distress, he chose the part of a Good Samaritan in this life.

#### HENRY STULL.

In 1829, when there were but two houses where is now the thriving city of South Bend, Henry Stull came here and entered what has long been known as the Stull farm, about one mile south of the city limits. Returning to his old home in Jennings county, he gathered together his goods and chattels and moved here the following year, remaining upon the old farm until death called him away, which sad event occurred March 25, 1875. In his early days here, before his boys became old enough to help him, Mr. Stull worked hard clearing his farm, which was the first one opened south of the town. At that date the Michigan road had not been surveyed, or even thought of, and when it was located it ran directly through his farm and greatly increased its value. In early life Mr. Stull and his wife became earnest, faithful members of the Methodist Church, and remained so through life. Mr. Stull's religion was not of the Sunday kind, but carried itself into his every-day life.

Indeed, there never was a more upright and conscientious man, and his example had its effect on the community. One of his rules was never to go in debt, and it is said he never in his life bought an article, large or small, but he paid for it at the time. If he was unable to buy an article he desired, he was content to wait until he was able, and to that rule can be attributed his success in obtaining a competency. Mr. and Mrs. Stull were married over 60 years, and had 11 children, 8 of whom survived him.



## CHAPTER X.

### REMINISCENCES.

BY JUDGE STANFIELD.

My name is Thomas Stilwell Stanfield. I was born in Logan county, Ohio, on the 17th day of October, 1816. My father's name was William; my mother's, Mary Stilwell. He was born in Greene county, Tennessee; she in Grayson county, Virginia. They emigrated to Ohio in 1805, before they were married. At the time they settled in Logan county it was a wilderness; they were on the extreme frontier; it was almost an unbroken Indian country to Lake Erie. The Indians occupied it as their great hunting grounds.

Logan county settled up slowly; the emigration was almost entirely from the Southern and Southwestern States, many of them Quakers from Tennessee and North Carolina. All of the people were comparatively poor and uneducated; their highest hopes were to get a small piece of land and make a home for their families. The land in that country was generally heavily timbered, and the timber of no value. It required years of close economy and hard labor of the whole family to make a living. No time or opportunity was allowed for social improvement. They raised their food and made all their clothing; every house had its loom and spinning wheel; every woman was a weaver, tailor and milliner. This industry and skill afforded them enough to eat and to wear, and that was about all. There was no time for the cultivation of their minds or the education of their children. They lived in log cabins, generally eating and sleeping in the same room. Under such circumstances delicacy and refinement, so beautiful and lovely in the household, must be of slow growth. Good houses comfortably furnished are as necessary to the cultivation of gentlemanly manners and womanly graces amongst the children as a comfortable school-house for the cultivation of their intellects.

When I became old enough to go to school a faint attempt was made to start one. The house for our school was a little larger than usual. It was built for a Quaker meeting-house, and must have been about eighteen feet square, a low, one-story log cabin, the cracks filled up with clay, covered with a clapboard roof held down by weight poles, floored with puncheons split from an ash tree, lighted by greased-paper windows, a stick chimney and huge fireplace. This will give a general idea of the house. The only furniture was a writing desk made by driving four long pins slantingly up into a log in the wall, with a board laid on them and puncheon

benches. Many a weary hour the little children suffered humped up upon those benches without backs, or resting places for their feet. It never seemed to have occurred to the old Quakers that the children's legs were not as long as theirs. I only mention this to show how little was thought in those days of what we now consider so important to the physical and mental education of our children. Is it any wonder that it required a liberal use of the rod to make those children forget the tortures of such a seat and study their lessons? "*To read, write and cipher*" was generally thought to be all that it was necessary for common people to learn, and that any body possessed of so much learning was fit for a schoolmaster. In the fall some old fellow would come around who was too old or too lazy to work, and secure employment to teach the school for the coming winter. All the education I received under fourteen was in such schools.

We moved from Ohio to this county in November, 1830, first settling for the winter near Young's Prairie, Cass county, Michigan. That winter was remarkably severe, and during the first week in December the snow fell to the depth of two feet and was shortly increased to three, and so remained until the 1st of April. The cold weather was incessant, never let up till late in the spring. About the middle of the winter there was almost a total eclipse of the sun; many attributed the cold weather to that fact.

About the middle of April we moved down to Harris's Prairie with the intention of entering land there and becoming farmers, but my father being unable to raise money enough to enter 80 acres, and having a trade, he concluded to settle in South Bend. We did so in June, 1831, and it has been my home ever since. Young as I was, I was charmed with the natural beauty of this country. It was distinguished as oak openings, thick woods and prairie. At this time hardly a furrow had been turned upon the prairie; a few cabins were scattered around in the oak openings bordering the prairies. I remember well that in 1831, and I think in 1832, the route traveled from here to Terre Coupee Prairie was across Portage Prairie, entering it on the farm now owned by John Smith, then owned by Pleasant Harris, and thence across the Prairie by way of a little grove near the land then owned by Samuel Jones, then through the barrens to the old Detroit & Chicago road crossing the north end of Terre Coupee Prairie. I do not think there was a fence in the way before the spring of 1833. The country between the two prairies had but a few families living in it. You could then stand on the ridges in these barrens and see the country for a mile off on either side of you about as plainly as on the prairies. Where now the timber has grown up so thick that one can hardly get through it, was then almost as bare as the prairie, and covered with a most luxuriant growth of grass, making rich and magnificent pasture for cattle. This, indeed, was the character of all the oak openings. About the only timber that grew in these barrens was white oak, black oak, burr oak and black hickory. The burr oak and hickory



land was considered much the best, and I think experience has for all purposes proved it to be even better than the prairie. I remember that it was commonly considered at that early period that the white and black oak barrens of Clay and Harris townships were hardly worth buying from the Government; that three or four crops would exhaust the soil, and the land become worthless; and the first few years of cultivation did seem to have that effect, but the introduction and use of land plaster and cultivation of clover has not only restored these lands to their original fertility, but I think made them better; and it is now a question among good farmers, taking into consideration the difference in cost of tillage, whether these lands are not as profitable as the prairie lands.

There were fifteen or twenty families living here when we came; of them there are still remaining here: Peter Johnson, Sr., and his wife; their sons, Evan Lee, Pierce Johnson, and daughter Mary Taylor; Samuel L. Cothall and his wife; Henry Painter, Mrs. Alexis Coquillard, Alexis Coquillard, son of Benjamin Coquillard, Mrs. Matilda Shirland, Lathrop M. Taylor, Edmund P. Taylor, Riley Stilson.

At this time there had been hardly a tree cut upon the town plat except in places where houses were built. Shortly after this the Michigan road was laid out through town on Michigan and Water streets, and the streets cleared as a part of that road. Along Maine and Lafayette streets, and indeed on most of the original plat, grew beautiful burr-oak groves thirty or forty feet high. Most of them along the streets and on the public grounds might have been preserved and become the pride and ornament of this city. To my notion there are no more beautiful shade trees growing in this latitude than the burr oak. Its smooth, clean, bright, peculiar leaf was always very attractive to me. These trees are the most remarkable objects of attraction about Kalamazoo, Valparaiso and other towns where the people had the taste and good sense to preserve them, but unfortunately for us we were heedless vandals, without any appreciation of beauty or comfort, and regardless of the interests or taste of those to follow us. It was a wicked waste that I have never ceased to regret, and one that never can be repaired.

The openings around South Bend were like those I have already described, only not quite so free from trees, but still open enough to go anywhere with a wagon, and all covered with the same luxuriant growth of grass and scattered over with the same varieties of beautiful flowers. The grass grows so thick and high between here and the Kankakee marsh that it was cut and put up for hay. The undergrowth of brush and timber that has since sprung up has entirely destroyed this native growth of grass; it is now scarcely ever seen where it once grew so luxuriantly and afforded such nutritious pasture for cattle. I have often wondered why the early settlers did not keep down this undergrowth of brush and preserve their natural pasture.

The first school I attended in South Bend was taught by Judge Egbert, then a new beginner at the practice of the law; it was in the

summer and fall of 1831, in a log school-house with glass windows instead of greased-paper windows. I thought the house and teacher a little ahead of anything I had seen before. The old house has been demolished and forgotten, but not so with the teacher; he still survives, an honored friend and deserving citizen.

BY DR. JACOB HARDMAN.

It is written of me that I, Jacob Hardman, was born on Sunday morning, April 29, 1804, in Harrison county, West Virginia; moved thence with my father, Peter Hardman, and family to Greene county, Ohio, in October, 1808, where I was bred a practical farmer. By an unfortunate grapple with a young stallion, after matured years, was crippled in my right arm. Without any aid or assistance of money or friends, commenced and proceeded, as best I could, to educate myself for the study and practice of medicine, which preparatory education, some teaching, and a term of medical studies, consumed a term of seven years. My studies and instruction in medicine were accomplished with Messrs. Ambrose Blount and Harvey Humphreys.

At the end of three years' reading and study in Springfield, Ohio, overshadowed with debts, being thus hedged up, and without means to attend medical lectures, I went before the censors of the Second Medical District of Ohio, at the city of Dayton (a provision by statute law in said State, for the benefit of indigent pupils), was there examined, pronounced competent in all the branches of the profession, receiving a certificate to that effect, and a license to practice medicine in all its branches wheresoever I desired.

The next year thereafter I emigrated to South Bend, arriving Aug. 9, 1831. I was the first of my profession to locate in the county. Having arrived at three and a half o'clock in the afternoon with letters of introduction to two of the most prominent citizens of the place, with some vouchers, I made myself known and was given a warm welcome. After some hesitation I unfortunately decided to stay and grapple as with hooks of steel, with any and all of the vicissitudes and grim wants of coming life, which decision has made me next thing to a pauper, now in the days of my longevity. Thus, I continued in the practice of my profession with varied success, as did my competitors, up to a period of thirty years.

At the breaking out of the Rebellion in 1861, I was, by the Governor of the State, O. P. Morton, appointed Assistant Surgeon in the 9th Ind. Vol., which position in 45 days I resigned. In May, 1864, I presented myself before the Examining Medical Board of Surgeons, of the United States, at the city of Nashville, Tennessee; was received as a competent Surgeon and was assigned to duty at Hospital No. 2, at College Hill, where I continued with acceptability until by failing health, in March, 1865, I was compelled to resign my position and return home; from which time, owing to

continued debility, I never have opened an office and offered my professional services to the public, although compelled in the meantime to prescribe, advise, and to some extent visit among some of the old patrons and their descendants.

Now to return. April 26, 1832, I returned to Fairfield, and married Miss Sarah Woodward, a finely educated lady, of German and Scottish descent, born Dec. 10, 1806, at Williamsport, Pa. We have had four sons and three daughters, four of whom died in early life and one died in the army in the South. My wife died May 20, 1870. I am now keeping house with my only (and eldest) daughter, Julia Margaret.

In early life I joined the M. E. Church, and was long connected with the pioneer Sunday-school of South Bend.

The heads of families in South Bend when I arrived here were: Alexis Coquillard, Benjamin Coquillard, Peter Johnson, Frederick Bainter, Thomas B. Johnson, Samuel L. Cottrell, Benjamin Potter, Samuel Newman, Charles Ousterhouse, Peter Nido, Hannah Skinner (widow), Hiram Dayton, Solomon Parsons, Louis St. Comb, Calvin Lilley, Solomon Barkdoll, Andrew Mack, Sam'l Martin, Wm. Stanfield, David Gillum, Benjamin Cushman, Oliver Bennet, Joseph Nichols and John A. Cane.

The young and unmarried ladies of the village included in families were: Matilda Newell, Keziah Cartwright, Polly Holt, Maria Stilson, Maria Skinner, Eliza Stilson, Lydia Skinner and Mary Gillum, making eight. The young gentlemen over twenty-one years old were: Horatio Chapin, Elisha Egbert, John D. Lasley, Wm. Creviston, Levi F. Arnold, John B. Ozia, Horace Wood, Wm. Cartwright, John Becraft, Joseph Aljoe, Lowry Dayton, Lathrop M. Taylor, Edmund P. Taylor, James Thompson, Reuben Hildreth, Peter D. Shaw, James De Grote, Christian Wolf, Sineon Mason, Zina Skinner, John D. Defrees and myself, making in all a population of 163 in the village proper.

The first winter we formed a debating society, a mock legislative body, and had fun generally. In the meantime we formed a temperance society, and in one sense it was unfortunate for me that I was made president, which position I continued to occupy up to 1838-'9, I think.

In 1837 I was candidate for County Recorder, but was defeated by Wm. H. Patterson on account of my temperance principles. I was Coroner one year, however, and Justice of the Peace one term; was also appointed in 1834 Major of the 79th Ind. Militia.

[In the history of Dr. Hardman's ancestry are many interesting passages, especially in connection with their early settlement in Kentucky, their blood-curdling experiences with the savage Indians, etc., all of which we would gladly give space to if we possibly could.]

BY THOMAS P. BULLA.

To begin at this time of life to give even a concise outline biography of myself, it is not to be assumed that I can give dates entirely correct.

My father was of the early settlers of Pennsylvania. My grandfather, Thomas Bulla, emigrated from Nantucket about the year 1770, settled in Chester county of said State. My father was born in that county Feb. 10, 1777, lived there till 1791; then the family emigrated to Guilford county, N. C., where, as a farmer and inn-keeper, my grandfather lived and raised a family of eight boys and two girls. He owned two slaves (women); their work was in the kitchen; were treated as Quakers of that time generally treated servants of that grade. My mother's maiden name was Hoover, and was (as the name imports) of German nationality; my parents were married in Randolph county, of the last-named State, then, after a few years, emigrated to Montgomery county, O., near the site of the city of Dayton. At this time two daughters, Anna and Elizabeth, were the increase of this union. The writer of this was the next as additional; subsequently six other boys and two more girls were the make-up of the family circle. My eldest brother, Andrew, and myself were born on Twin creek, Montgomery county, O. All the younger children were natives of Wayne county, Ind., one mile north of the present city of Richmond, James, next younger, then William, David, Daniel, Esther, Sarah and John; of these Anna Chalfant, late of St. Joseph, Elizabeth Burgess and Andrew (who was an editor with Septimus Smith in Centreville; the paper published was the first issued there, and was called the *Western Times*) died in Wayne; James, a millwright, and William F., farmer, both of St. Joseph, died at their homes in said county. David died at Louisville, Kentucky. As to the origin of the name (Bulla) it is of Gallic origin and its orthography was Bonillon, pronounced Boolong, yet the paternal ancestry were of Irish nationality.

Now, in a detailed recital of the incidents of my life I find that the identity of circumstances are so blended with my existence that to relate that only which appertains to myself is not possible. My father was a farmer, but like many of the pioneers of 60 years ago, he made all the implements he needed for agricultural purposes, tanned leather, and made the shoes for the family, did his own coopering and masonry, and was somewhat of the Nimrod in the general make-up. The women of that period, besides presiding in the kitchen, made the fabric and the apparel for the family. All the material resources of the community in general were self-sustaining; nothing but salt and iron required the expenditure of money; coffee and tea were not then and there in general use. Sunday morning we had coffee, hence we knew when that day came round. There were no available educational resources then, and a school was gotten up by subscription. male teachers were employed, and their wages

per month about ten dollars; hickory oil was freely used in the schools then, and parents and teachers in general relied more on its use and proper application as an incentive to literary progress than anything else.

I made my second trip to the St. Joseph valley afoot as usual; helped to build a saw-mill for Elijah Lacey at the mouth of Waggiac; returned to Richmond and taught school another quarter, then made tracks for Niles, Mich.; was employed to attend the saw-mill aforesaid, at \$17.00 per month; returned to my old home; then I was employed for about nine months at millwright work, then for three months as carpenter. And now a final exodus from my primitive home, in company with Evan Chalfants' family; we started for South Bend, Oct. 1, 1832. Were I to detail all the incidents of this campaign (for campaign it was, since camping out was the order), it would add several pages more and would not, perhaps, interest but few, except those yet living, who were *en route* with us; suffice it to say that through thick and thin (thick and thin mud), we arrived at our destination the 1st of November, 1832. General Jackson was then President.

Having secured a quarter section of land I made such preparation to build a house as best I could, and helped E. Chalfant to rear a cabin on his land that winter, and having no means to have help I hewed logs and erected the first hewn log house, shingle roof and brick chimney in Clay township; my neighbors regarded it as a rather aristocratic structure.

In the winter of '33 and '34 I had a school in South Bend, which in number of students was rather more than one man could manage. So the services of a Mr. Cadmus Johnson was secured as assistant. The school now went on for some time; at length Christmas was reached; that morning when I came to the door I found a barricade of benches against it, and a number of stalwart, beardless boys had made a citadel of the house. I took in the situation at once and demanded admittance, which was denied; thereupon I assumed an indifference whether I was out or in, and started home. They now opened the door and called me back and to come in, which I did. No sooner in than half a dozen bipeds were using their muscles to control my locomotion, and to aid them in this cords and ligatures were fastened about my limbs. At this juncture my assistant came in, and seeing my condition he at once exclaimed, "I surrender." I, too, now surrendered at discretion, demanded what they wanted, to which they replied no school till the 26th, and that the teachers treat to one bushel of apples and three gallons of cider. To this we acceded; they now untied me and I gave them a lecture on their perfidy in calling me back. Order was now restored, the treat procured, and the day passed in relaxation. Next day I resumed my duties and the school went on; the behavior thereafter in general was good, and the term expired with no other incident of note. A short time before the termination the following notice was posted up in the most conspicuous places in South

Bend: "There will be an exhibition of live men and boys at the court-house in Southbrook, where will be recited speeches, dialogues and farcical representations." This passed off as per programme, and was the first of the kind here. By this time the missiles of Cupid had made some impression, and as a result a matrimonial alliance was concluded and consummated Jan. 15, 1835.

I was then a teacher in my own house on my farm in Clay township, near the now Notre Dame University, being now 30 years old. This connubial state and the State of Ind., have ever since been my home. On this farm by hard labor we made out to live, my now better half aiding me in all efforts, and having no resources only our labor we were impelled to economize in every way. Without a team and no cow the situation was not encouraging, but persevering industry and the little I made by surveying enabled us to use some groceries; yet we often had domestic coffee or sassafras tea minus the sugar and cream. Our first meal was roasted potatoes and salt. Our household goods were a table of rustic style, one poplar bedstead, one chair of the old style, a few stools, a crane in the fire-place for the dinner pot. By raising flax my wife was enabled to weave linen for shirts, etc., for our use, and to spin sewing thread, which at that time was sold to Mr. Brownfield, a merchant then and now of South Bend. The few acres then cleared were cultivated with a hired or borrowed team. A nursery was planted, but the prices were low, as that branch of industry was overdone here, and was not remunerative. After a few years I bought a horse; with this I did my plowing. My first crop of wheat (about four acres) brought 50 cents per bushel; harvest wages per day were 50 cents or one bushel of wheat. About this time some surveying brought me some lucre, and an occasional call from the County Board to locate a road gave some employment. Circuit Court gave now and then an appointment to make partition of real estate amongst heirs, but most of my time was devoted to enlarging my farm and making such improvements as I could. One year after our nuptials an addition to our family appeared in the person of Wm. D. Bulla.

I wrote the first total abstinence pledge in St. Joseph county; this was about the year 1839. It is in no vaunting mood that I make this record; and not to make any digression, my sympathies ever were against oppression of every kind, physical and mental. I have lived to witness the removal of one of the darkest stains on our character as a nation, and though a more degrading oppression, like a deadly sirocco, is destroying many thousands every year, a hope is yet indulged that this, too, may be removed before another centennial rolls around; if not, then as effects of a prevailing cause our once great republic will cease to be, as a like cause invariably is succeeded by a like consequence; so, to avert the consequence the cause must be removed. But to resume the intent of this writing. In the year 1838 I was appointed County Surveyor by the Commissioners' Court, which position I held till the year 1856. At this period we had increased in numbers in the family circle, four more—Milton

V., Mary E., Minerva A. and Thomas H. All these are as yet of irreproachable character, and their training was not compulsory but persuasive. The rod had no place as a moral motive power (nor should a resort to its use ever be general; although Solomon says, spare the rod and spoil the child, that adage was only adapted to that age, when brute force was deemed more available than moral suasion). At this period of my life a prevailing torpitude exists in our country, and to account for it, the late Rebellion is a prolific source; tho' out of this Rebellion a retribution is awarded to its instigators, yet from the means used to remove one great national evil another was produced, and to remove this a revolution in our jurisprudence must be produced; hence as means to an end, all the moral resources must be brought to bear. In the reformatory institutions of our land all are equally interested; hence none are exempt from duty where aid for the general good is demanded.

BY DR. E. W. H. ELLIS.

At the close of a hot summer's day, Aug. 7, 1836, after a weary ride in a lumber wagon from Edwardsburg, Michigan, through an oak-barren wilderness, without roads or inhabitants, guided only by the points of the compass, the writer arrived at the north bank of the St. Joseph river, opposite Mishawaka, and, with good exercise of lungs, succeeded in arousing the ferryman. He was safely conducted over the river, and made his way to the Mishawaka Hotel, kept by that prince of landlords and good fellows, Orlando Hurd.

A few days' residence enabled him to take in the general features of the place. He was one of a colony of emigrants from Brockport, New York, who numbered in all some 30 persons, embracing the families of Major H. Smith, Richmond Tuttle, Albert Hudson, Stephen H. Judkins, John Ham, Gilman and Samuel Towles, James Clark, George Bellinger and Albert Brinsmade, who had been induced hither by the somewhat extravagant stories of the St. Joseph region. The town had just shed the name of St. Joseph Iron Works, and was entering upon a high career of prosperity. The swift water at that point, it is said, gave it the Indian name of Mishawaka, and the stream was already utilized by the construction of a dam and mill race, upon which were erected the St. Joseph Iron Works, and a flouring mill known as Taylor's Mill, erected by a citizen then deceased. Besides the store of the Iron Company there was another near by owned by a citizen of Niles, Michigan, and the grocery store of Russ & Pomeroy, in the company's warehouse. To these were soon added the drug and grocery store of Smith & Clark, and in the eastern part of the town, known as Barbee-town, another store of the Meed brothers, from New York. The hotels were the Mishawaka Hotel, already mentioned, and Kellogg's Hotel, in Barbee-town. These were filled with the new settlers and passing immigrants. The village had an air of thrift and enterprise. Many of the dwellings were comfortable



structures, of creditable styles of architecture, some of which are still standing, mementoes of the early settlement. The population was possibly some 500.

Even at this early date the town had its contentions and neighborhood jealousies. The leading spirit on one hand was A. M. Hurd, President of the Iron Company, and on the other his namesake of the hotel. A. M. Hurd was a strenuous advocate of temperance and the moralities, while the views of the hotel proprietor and his friends had a strong leaning toward what was called liberality. Two Churches were already organized, the Presbyterian and the Methodist. Over the first presided Rev. A. Kellogg, a most excellent man, who for a score of years afterward worthily filled the position of pastor. The Methodist preacher in charge was Rev. H. B. Beers, a man of strong mind and the requisite essentials for a pioneer preacher, who has now gone to his reward. "Don't you think he preaches well, considering his being only six months from the Bench?" inquired my friend Hudson. A vision of judicial ermine, cast aside for the branches of palm and olive of the Gospel of Peace passed before my eyes, as I eagerly asked, "What bench?" "Why, the shoemaker's bench," was the earnest and truthful reply; and I really thought he preached well under the circumstances. Neat and commodious buildings were erected during the season for these denominations, and all took pride in assisting at their raising.

Among the citizens whose names I recall, in addition to those from Brockport, were John H. Orr, a member of the Iron Company, William Sisson, their estimable book-keeper, Dr. G. W. R. Fowler, whose widow afterward became the wife of the reverend poet, John Pierpont, Mr. Bancroft, Alonzo Delano, Nathan Russ, C. W. Pomeroy, J. E. Hollister, Judge Deming, Dr. J. A. Stiles, D. J. Cooley, Dr. Mallett, H. E. Hurlbut, A. M. Wing, Mr. Childs, Samuel B. Romaine, Philo Hurd, Monroe and John Sherman, E. A. Sherwood, a bright boy even then anticipating his future blindness, Frank Taylor, Nicar, Goldsmith and Wilson.

The election just terminated returned to the Legislature Jonathan H. Liston as Senator, and Thomas D. Baird as Representative, both prominent leaders of the Whig party. Conventions and party caucuses were then unknown. If a candidate had no friend to announce him for office, he did the next best thing, which was to nominate himself. Coming from a land of caucuses and conventions, the writer endeavored, through the columns of the *South Bend Free Press*, to persuade the native Hoosiers of the excellencies of the system, but for quite a period these efforts were unavailing. Party lines were not closely drawn, and, under the system in vogue, not unfrequently a dozen candidates ran for the same office, and a small minority of votes was sufficient to elect.

My first visit to South Bend was early in the fall of 1836, when curiosity attracted me to the court-house, a plain, square-built structure of brick, of the original value of \$4,000, said to be alike



as two peas to the court-house "in yonder, by Dayton." Court was in session, an important trial being on hand, in which His Honor, Judge Samuel C. Sample, was interested, and his place was therefore temporarily occupied by some disinterested member of the Bar. The court was in tumult, an important paper in the case having disappeared, which was more than suspected to be in possession of Hon. J. A. Liston, one of the attorneys. After much wrangling, Judge Sample ascended the bench, called the court to order, and addressing Mr. Liston very emphatically, told him he must produce the missing paper or be committed to jail for contempt. Whereupon Mr. Liston very promptly produced the document from his pocket, with a request to the opposing attorneys to hereafter take care of their own papers, and the case proceeded.

In the spring of 1837 the writer became a resident of South Bend, and entered into business in the practice of medicine with his father, Dr. W. R. Ellis. Other physicians in the town were Dr. Samuel Finley, a man of fine reputation and an elder in the Presbyterian Church, of the utmost rigidity; and Dr. Jacob Hardman, also an eminent physician of much worth and integrity. To these members of the faculty were added during the year Dr. Harvey Humphreys, a man of splendid abilities and acquirements, whose untimely death occurred 13 months after his arrival; and Dr. E. S. Sheffield and Dr. George Rex, who soon after returned to his home in the East. With Dr. Humphreys came his brother, Louis Humphreys, who soon afterward entered the profession, and whose ability as a physician, and whose worth as a citizen have done honor to the place of his adoption. Dr. Daniel Dayton resided at that time at Portage Point, or "Pin Hook," as it was popularly termed, as did also that popular and eccentric Presbyterian divine, Rev. Abner Morse.

South Bend at this time had a population of perhaps 800. The principal merchants were A. R. & J. H. Harper, whose first invoice of goods had been shipwrecked, but who were now doing a flourishing business; John Brownfield, a careful, methodical business man; Lathrop M. Taylor, a substantial citizen who had dealt largely with the Indian tribes; L. P. Sawyer, who occupied the old brick store erected by A. Coquillard; and Horatio Chapin, whose store-room was nearly opposite the Dwight House; Christopher Emrick had his bakery and beer house; Christian Wolf dispensed fire-water to the thirsty.

The town possessed two modest frame buildings known as the Presbyterian and Methodist churches. Mr. Bryant, an eloquent and able man, officiated in the former, having for his ruling elders Dr. Finley and Horatio Chapin; at the Methodist church about this period, preached the well and widely known Elder Hargrave.

BY JOHN D. DEFREES.

About the middle of an afternoon of a bright day in August, 1831, nearly fifty years ago, two young gentlemen might have been

seen riding up to the door of the only house of entertainment in the then village, now city, of South Bend. The gentleman who, at that early day, was the only landlord in the place, was Peter Johnson, Esq., who continued to reside here until a few years ago, when he died, much regretted by all who knew him. One of these young gentlemen referred to was Dr. Jacob Hardman, and the other was the writer. The Doctor had been a resident of Springfield, and I, of Piqua, Ohio. Each determining to settle in South Bend, we accidentally met on the route without having any previous acquaintance.

If in what I should say in this place there is a seeming egotism in a frequent reference to myself, I beg that it be overlooked, as I cannot see well how to avoid it.

On my arrival here I immediately set about getting subscribers for the *Northwestern Pioneer*, a weekly newspaper of super-royal size, proposed to be published by my brother Joseph (who now resides at Goshen) and myself. I had preceded him several weeks, he coming with the ox-team that brought the printing materials and a supply of paper, from Cincinnati, Ohio. At that time there was no newspaper published in this State or in Michigan, north of the Wabash river, or west of Detroit. We thus had a wide field, so far at least as territory was concerned, but it was sparsely populated.

The prairies were first selected for cultivation, and, when it was possible, the log cabins of the pioneers were erected in the adjoining woods.

The press and type arrived, and my brother and I got out the first number of our paper on the 16th day of November, 1831, doing all the work, mailing and delivering the paper to town subscribers. The office was in a small, one-story brick house, belonging to Mr. Coquillard, on Michigan street (now corner of Main and Water streets), near where the Exchange Hotel was afterward built, and was, I believe, the first brick house erected in this place. We afterward occupied the upper story of a log house on the corner of St. Joseph and Pearl streets.

Since then a wonderful improvement has been made in the printing press. At that time the ink was put on the type by means of two balls, made of buckskin and stuffed with wool. Two hundred sheets per hour were all that could be printed on a hand press, and there were no power presses in use. Now, 8,000 copies of a paper of the size of the *Pioneer* can be printed on a Bullock press in less than an hour.

To refresh my memory, I recently looked over a file of the *Pioneer*, and found it very interesting. It brought to my recollection many occurrences which I had forgotten.

That the present receipts and expenditures of St. Joseph county may be compared with what they were in that early day, I present the following table of receipts and expenditures from January 1, 1832, to November 1, 1832, as published in the *Pioneer*:

## RECEIPTS.

For balance in treasury.....	\$ 4 66
Received for license to sell merchandise.....	47 70
Grocery permits.....	1 00
Duplicate of taxes.....	287 12
Donations for county seat.....	973 00
Total.....	\$1,313 48

## EXPENDITURES.

By amount paid premiums on wolf-scalps.....	\$ 12 00
" " " associate judges.....	4 00
" " " Hiram Dayton for assessing.....	25 00
" " " J. D. & J. H. Defrees for advertising.....	13 00
Total.....	\$54 00

Dec. 5, 1831, a meeting was held at Lilley's Hotel (the second house of entertainment just opened), for the purpose of asking Congress to establish a land office at this place. Anthony Defrees was called to the chair, and Elisha Egbert was elected secretary. A committee, composed of Pleasant Harris, L. M. Taylor, H. Chapin, J. P. Antrim and John D. Defrees, was appointed to memorialize Congress on the subject. As a result of this effort, a bill passed the United States Senate, at the instance of Senator Tipton, establishing a land office here, but it failed in the House. Afterward the land office for the sale of lands in the northern part of the State was established at La Porte.

Col. Taylor was then the postmaster, and if he did not carry the letters in his hat he might have done so, as but few letters were received or sent. The following list of letters not taken from the postoffice was advertised in the *Pioneer* Dec. 31, 1832: Henry Augustine, Joseph Boel, Jacob Chord, Alexander Blain, Jacob Bowman, Joseph Brown, Daniel Bennett, John Bailey, Peter Kiffer, Jacob Ritter and Scott West. There may be some of these persons yet living, but I do not know it.

In the fall of 1831 a debating society was formed by a few gentlemen who had political aspirations, for the purpose of showing their speaking ability. It met in the second story of Mr. Lilley's Hotel.

May 23, 1832, an express rider from Chicago to Detroit passed through South Bend giving the information that the Indians, under Black Hawk, were committing murders on Rock river, Illinois. A few days afterward it was rumored that these Indians had determined to make their way to Canada. As South Bend would be on their direct route, many of our people became alarmed and immediately commenced building a fort for protection. The panic, however, subsided before any considerable amount of work had been done. Noah Noble, at that time Governor of Indiana, was applied to for aid against the supposed danger. In response to his call, a regiment of 300 men were raised in Marion and adjoining

counties. The regiment, under command of Col. Russell, of Indianapolis, marched to Chicago. When it arrived there, Gen. Atkinson was at Dixon's Ferry, on Rock river, awaiting reinforcements before attacking Black Hawk. Col. Whistler had a company of regulars at Chicago, and proposed to Col. Russell to join his command and march to the aid of Gen. Atkinson. A council of war was held, and as a majority of the officers under Col. Russell were candidates for Congress in the District, and as they wished to vaunt their patriotism, it was determined to decline the offer, and to return to Indianapolis by way of South Bend. This retrograde movement was criticised by the *Pioneer*, published on the morning of the arrival of the regiment here. The article gave great offense to a portion of the regiment, who had been indulging pretty freely in whisky. On going into the street I was surrounded by an excited mob, who threatened personal chastisement; but it was finally thought best to retire without putting the threat into execution. In the next number of the *Pioneer* the regiment was called the "bloody three hundred," in derision of their exploits, and they retained the appellation for many years. Black Hawk was soon afterward captured and the country became quiet.

During the excitement some amusement was occasioned by Esquire Haney, a German, who then resided here. At a meeting held to consider the condition of the county, some one remarked that an Indian chief by the name of Pokagon, who was known to be friendly to the settlers, and who lived opposite Niles, had determined to remain neutral. The 'Squire, not understanding the meaning of the word "neutral," thought it had reference to an Indian chief of that name, and remarked: "Damn old Neutral! I believe he is mit Black Hawk now!" The boys afterward had a good deal of fun with the 'Squire about his mistake.

No one apprehended any danger of the Pottawatomies of Indiana and Michigan, as they had, ever since the treaty of Greenville, been the friends of the white man. Many of them fought for us in the war of 1812. Among the number was John B. Chandonis, a half-breed (well-known to the early settlers of this town), who distinguished himself by killing his uncle, who was a British officer, during an engagement somewhere in Michigan.

Emigration, which had ceased in consequence of the alarm from the Indian war, again commenced; or, as announced in a grandiloquent article in a number of the *Pioneer* which read as follows:

"As a breaking forth of a mighty river which had long been pent-up, does the emigration now pour into the St. Joseph country. From present appearance, emigrants seem determined to make up for the time lost from having the fear of Black Hawk before their eyes. One day this week nine wagons and sixty persons passed through this place for Sumption's Prairie, six miles south; and not a day passes that does not bring emigrants with farming utensils and stock, wending their way to different parts of the beautiful St. Joseph country."

In May, 1832, we changed the name of our paper from the *Northwestern Pioneer* to the *St. Joseph Beacon*, considering it more appropriate, as better indicating the country in which it was published. Much space in the paper was devoted to giving information in relation to the advantage of this country, so as to induce emigrants. The richness of the soil and the facility with which farms could be made were weekly themes.

Feb. 13, 1833, a number of citizens met at the school-house to form a society under the 11th commandment, which reads: "Every one must attend to his own affairs and not interfere with the affairs of his neighbor." So read the call for the meeting. The society was called "The Anti-Tattling Society." Peter Johnson was president and Jonathan A. Liston, secretary. Mr. Liston delivered an address making several columns of the *Beacon*. The society did not long exist, having been gotten up more for amusement than anything else.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

*Rev. P. Dillon*, the second President of the University of Notre Dame, was born in the county of Galway, Ireland, Jan. 1, 1832. Immediately after his birth he was dedicated in a special manner, by his mother, to the service of God, and entered upon his studies for the sacred ministry, while yet a mere boy. After the removal of his family to America he continued his studies at St. Mary's College, Chicago, Illinois. He entered Notre Dame in 1856, completed his studies and was ordained priest in 1858. Even before his ordination he was appointed steward of the university, and gained the respect of all with whom he came in contact. He was subsequently appointed president of St. Mary's College, Chicago, and gave still further proof of his administrative talent. From St. Mary's he was recalled to Notre Dame, where he discharged the important duties of vice-president of the university and principal of the Commercial Department for nearly three years. In May, 1865, he was duly appointed President of the university and local superior at Notre Dame. During his presidency the college buildings were entirely remodeled and enlarged, and improvements made to the value of nearly \$100,000. In August, 1866, he was summoned to France to attend a General Chapter of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, and, as his fame had preceded him, he was appointed secretary and assistant to the Superior General, the best evidence that could have been given of the esteem in which he was held by his religious associates. In August, 1868, he returned with Very Rev. Father Sorin, who had just been appointed Superior General of the Congregation. Filial duty, which at first appeared to require but a temporary absence, eventually rendered it necessary for him to seek a dispensation from his obligations as a member of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, in order to attend more freely to the sacred duties which nature herself imposed upon him. The

dispensation was given, though with much reluctance, by the Very Rev. Superior General, and Father Dillon immediately assumed the responsibilities of pastor of St. Patrick's Church, Chicago. But a disease which had several times previously threatened his life, returned with renewed violence, and on Sunday evening, Nov. 15, 1868, he breathed his last, regretted by all who knew him, and sincerely mourned by a wide circle of personal friends.

*Rev. William Corby*, the third President, was born at Detroit, Mich., Oct. 2, 1833. Up to 1849 he received all the educational advantages afforded by the common schools of that time. From 1849 to 1853 he was occupied with his father in business, and during that time, under his father's experienced training, laid the foundation of that self-control and forbearance which have enabled him to fill the important positions he has since held. In 1853 he was sent by his father to Notre Dame, with two younger brothers, to continue their education. In 1854 he entered the Congregation of the Holy Cross and prosecuted his studies with vigor, under the direction of experienced teachers, till 1858, when he made his religious profession as a member of the congregation, and was appointed prefect of discipline in the university. In addition to the duties thus imposed upon him, he continued to study theology with persevering energy till 1860, when he was raised to the dignity of priesthood. He was then employed as a professor in the university till July of the following year, when he was appointed director of the Manual Labor School at Notre Dame, with the additional duty of attending the mission of South Bend, at that time too small to have a resident pastor. Was Chaplain of a New York regiment during the war, and returned to his little mission at South Bend; and finding the congregation in debt, contracted while building St. Patrick's church, he went vigorously to work, and in a few months collected money enough, not only to free the congregation from liabilities, but also to erect a neat pastoral residence close to the church. This done, he was about to take some rest, and enjoy, with his little congregation, some of the fruits of his zealous labors, when he was elected vice president and director of studies in the university. This new office he undertook with the same cheerfulness and determination that he had manifested on all previous occasions, and continued to discharge its duties until August, 1866, when he was raised to the position of president.

*Very Rev. Alexis Granger*, the first who occupied the position of vice president of the University of Notre Dame, was born at Daon, France, June 19, 1817. He received his primary education at home, and even had made some progress in the study of Latin before his 15th year, the age at which he entered the College of Chateau Goutier. Here he remained five years, during which time, by diligence and the aid of superior talent, he completed his collegiate course. He then entered the theological seminary at Maus, France, in his 20th year. After four years of earnest

application to the study of theology, he was admitted to the Holy Orders Dec. 19, 1840. The next two years he was pastor of a congregation in the diocese of Maus, and, if judged by the zeal which he has always manifested for the spiritual welfare of others since he has been at Notre Dame, his congregation lost a treasure, when in October, 1843, he entered the Congregation of the Holy Cross, at Maus, where the Mother House of the congregation was then located. After a short experience in the religious life, during which time he had proved himself worthy of the confidence of his Superiors, Father Granger, in 1844, was sent to Notre Dame, while this institution was yet in its infancy, where he was appointed assistant superior and vice president of the college. The latter office he occupied until 1851. The former he retained until Father Sorin became provincial, when he was also promoted to the office of vice provincial. From 1851 to 1861 Father Granger was, with one or two brief interruptions, director of the novitiate for the ecclesiastical portion of the congregation, and pastor of the Church at Notre Dame. In 1867 he was removed from the novitiate and appointed prefect of religion in the college, still retaining the pastorate of the Church. In August, 1868, after the election of Father Sorin to the office of superior general, Father Granger was elected provincial of the congregation in America.

*Rev. Francis Cointet*, the second who filled the office of vice president of the university, was born at La Roc, France, Feb. 26, 1816. At the age of about ten years he was sent by his parents to the College of Chateau Gontier, then the best educational institution in the diocese to which he belonged. Having completed his collegiate studies, he entered the theological seminary at Maus, in September, 1834. After five years of studious application to the great questions of theology, he was ordained priest in 1839, by Right Rev. Dr. Bouvier, Bishop of Maus, and was appointed assistant pastor in Chatillon, one of the most important parishes in the diocese. While at this place he accidentally saw the first letter written by his former intimate friend, and associate, Father Sorin, from Notre Dame, and the desire arose in his heart to emigrate to America and here labor for the spiritual welfare of his fellow-beings. Accordingly in 1843 he offered himself to Very Rev. Father Moreau, at that time superior general of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, as a candidate for the American mission, and in July of that same year arrived at Notre Dame. After one year spent at the novitiate, he made his religious profession as a member of the congregation, and from that moment gave himself up without reserve to the great work which he had undertaken. After five years of earnest labor as a missionary, Father Cointet in 1849, was sent to New Orleans as local superior of a branch establishment of the order in that city. During the two years which he spent in that capacity, the establishment flourished. In 1851 he was recalled by his superior to Notre Dame, and appointed vice president of the college. He occupied that position, however,



but for a short time; his heart yearned for the missions, and his Superior, yielding to his wishes, gave him charge of five different missions, at that time under the care of the congregation,—Goshen and La Porte, Ind., and Milan, Berrien and Bertrand, Mich. For three years more he gave himself up to this charitable labor, but at last his constitution gave way. In September, 1854, he returned one day from one of his missions, weary and sick; every care that love and affection could suggest was bestowed upon him, but to no purpose; and on the 19th he passed from the scenes of his self-sacrificing labors to the mansions of eternal happiness.

*Rev. Richard Shortis*, the third who filled the post of vice president, was born at St. Nicholas, Ireland, March 21, 1815. Of his early history little is known. In 1849, after passing a creditable examination, though not a student proper in the college, he received the degree of B. A. at Notre Dame in company with Rev. N. H. Gillespie. It may be interesting to note, that these were the first degrees conferred by the university, five years after having been granted its charter. Soon after graduation Mr. Shortis entered the novitiate of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, and while pursuing his theological studies, discharged the duties of professor of the English language and literature in the university. In 1850 he made his religious profession as a member of the Congregation, and was ordained priest. Immediately after his ordination, Father Shortis entered upon the laborious life of a missionary, and continued until 1852, when he was recalled and appointed vice president of the college. From 1853 to 1856, he discharged the duties of general secretary of the university and professor. In 1856 he was sent to take charge of the mission at La Porte, Ind., and continued until 1858. He was then recalled to Notre Dame, and subsequently, in 1860, was sent to New Orleans.

*Rev. N. H. Gillespie*, was the fourth vice president of the university. A sketch of him will be found under the heading of "Some of the Illustrious Dead of St. Joseph County," page 483.

*Rev. James Dillon*, the fifth vice president at Notre Dame, was born in the county of Galway, Ireland, Nov. 18, 1833. He began his studies for the sacred ministry in the land of his nativity, while yet very young, continued them in the city of Chicago, after the removal of his family to this country, and finally completed them at Notre Dame. He entered the novitiate of the Congregation of the Holy Cross in October, 1853, and after a full course of theology was ordained priest in 1858, on the same day with his brother, Rev. Patrick Dillon. In 1859, Father James, as he was familiarly called, was appointed to the office of vice president, in which position he gave evidence of that energy which was to the end one of his most striking characteristics. In 1860 he was appointed president of St. Mary's College, Chicago. In 1861 he was recalled to Notre Dame, and appointed one of a band of missionaries which the superior contemplated organizing that year, but the war at the South commenced, and he went as Chaplain; but



contracting consumption, he obtained a furlough, and was sent by his Superior to travel in Europe for his health. The trip seemed to have accomplished the end sought, and he returned to take his post amid the armed battalions but the disease only slept, and soon compelled him to retire. He was then sent to California by his Superior, with a view to revive his health. While there his zeal for the spiritual good of others made him forget his own weak condition, and instead of regaining health, he gradually sank under the influence of his disease. Finding that a longer stay from home would be useless, he returned to Notre Dame to await the final call of his Creator. When his brother, Father Patrick, retired from the Congregation of the Holy Cross, Father James would not remain inactive, but, with the requisite dispensation, accompanied him, to bear his part in the work to which duty called him. But the effort was too great, and the death of his brother, to whom he was almost passionately attached, gave the final blow to his already enfeebled constitution, and he calmly departed this life, Dec. 17, 1868, just one month and two days after his brother.

*Rev. Augustus Lemonnier*, the eighth vice president, was born in France, in 1839. (See sketch under heading of "Some of the Illustrious Dead of St. Joseph County, page 482.")

*Rev. Michael B. Brown* was born near Plattsburg, New York, Sept. 20, 1840, and up to the age of 12 lived in the happy freedom of childhood on his father's farm and not far from the shores of the celebrated Lake Champlain. At the age of 12 he removed with his parents to Sandusky, Ohio, where he remained for five years, attending school during the winter, and working with his father during the summer. In 1857 he entered St. Mary's Preparatory Seminary at Cleveland, Ohio, with a view to preparing himself for the sacred ministry, for which he had manifested a decided inclination, even while yet a child. He remained in Cleveland two years, applying himself earnestly to the study of Latin, English and mathematics. In 1859 he entered the University of Notre Dame; early in 1860 he was received into the novitiate of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, in March of the same year; continued to prosecute his studies with vigor, and also began his career as a teacher. In June, 1862, he received the degree of Bachelor of Arts, and in the following September began his theological studies, which he continued till June 10, 1867, when he was ordained priest. Before his ordination Father Brown taught different branches in the university, especially Greek, Latin and logic, continuing in this work until September, 1868, when he was appointed to the professorship of moral and mental philosophy.

*Prof. Joseph Aloysius Lyons* is the youngest of 13 children. He was born Nov. 7, 1838, in Utica, N. Y. In 1847 his parents moved West, and settled in the vicinity of Niles, Mich. Young Lyons now determined to enter the University of Notre Dame as a student, but his father dying about this time changed his prospects in this respect. Finding he could not then enter college, he

entered an office in Niles to learn the art of printing. Not liking the persons he had to deal with, he became dissatisfied with his position and applied to Father Sorin for admission into the Manual Labor School at Notre Dame. Father Sorin, seeing in the bright boy the future man of energy and usefulness, dispensed with the ordinary conditions of admission, and admitted him as an apprentice shoemaker. But the taste of the youth did not incline him to the last, yet he worked well and intelligently, and after a short time succeeded in making a fair pair of boots, which won the premium at the county fair, though many older workmen competed for it. Notwithstanding this devotedness to trade, the young man improved every opportunity of cultivating his mind and even began the study of Latin; went to St. Aloysius' Seminary, where he was soon appointed to take charge of the studies at the Manual Labor School and teach some of the classes there.

In 1858, having completed his classical studies and attended the class of philosophy for some time, he was appointed director of the junior and minim department of the university. For two years he had charge of the discipline of these two departments, taught various classes and established two societies—the Philomathean and Holy Angels' Societies. In 1860 he was sent with Father James Dillon to St. Mary's of the Lake, in Chicago, where he filled the office of prefect of discipline, and at the same time taught Latin with brilliant success, for one year. On his return to Notre Dame, in 1861, he was then engaged as a regular professor of the university. Beginning with the lower classes, he advanced by degrees to the head of the Latin department. In 1862, having studied some branches of the collegiate course to which he had not previously given special attention, Prof. Lyons received the degree of Bachelor of Arts, and two years later that of Master of Arts.

REV. D. J. SPILLARD.

Daniel J. Spillard, the eldest of 13 children, was born in the city of Cork, Ireland, Nov. 8, 1839. In 1843 his parents removed to the United States and resided for the subsequent ten years in Rochester, N. Y., where young Spillard attended first the public schools, and afterward the Catholic select school, opened at St. Mary's church. He also attended the Academy of the Sacred Heart. In 1853 he removed with his parents to Erie, Pa., where he remained about one year. In 1854 the family removed to Elgin, Ill., where the son attended both the public and private schools successively, and passed two years in the Elgin Academy. He entered the University of Notre Dame in February, 1862; two years completed the studies prescribed in the collegiate course, and in June, 1864, received the degree of Bachelor of Arts. On that occasion he was chosen to deliver the valedictory oration, which he did in an effective manner. He likewise bore away with him the premium of honor for that year. Some months after his graduation

he entered the novitiate of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, at Notre Dame, and, after the prescribed term of probation, made his profession as a member of the Congregation in September, 1866. He continued his theological studies until August, 1868, when he was ordained priest. Previous to his ordination, Father Spillard had been engaged in teaching Greek and Latin in the college, but after his ordination he was appointed prefect of discipline.

*Prof. Michael A. J. Baasen* was born in Luxembourg, Germany, June 2, 1844. When he reached the age of six years his father was appointed Consul to the United States, and accordingly removed to this country with his family. After being relieved from the duties of his office, he settled in Milwaukee, Wis. He entered college when quite young, and with occasional brief intermissions, continued to prosecute his studies in different institutions, and finally came to the University of Notre Dame, in 1862, where he completed his collegiate studies, in 1864, receiving, at the annual commencement of the year the degree of Bachelor of Arts. After graduating he commenced teaching ancient and modern languages at Notre Dame.

*Prof. Michael T. Corby* was born at Detroit, Mich., Feb. 20, 1844, and received his primary education in the schools of that place. However he entered the University of Notre Dame when quite young, but his studies were interrupted for a period of time. Subsequently he studied at two different colleges in Kentucky, whence returning in 1860, he entered Bryant & Stratton's Commercial College in Detroit, where he graduated in the commercial course July, 1862. In 1863 he returned to Notre Dame to complete his classical studies and pursue the study of music. He continued this course vigorously for two years, and at the commencement in June, 1865, received the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Returning the following year, Prof. Corby began his career as a teacher, and continued to apply himself assiduously to the theoretical and practical study of music. His progress was truly wonderful, and in 1868 he was requested to take charge of the vocal musical department in the university, which he did, his services being highly appreciated by both faculty and students.

*Prof. William Ivers* was born in New Haven, Conn., Nov. 13, 1839. While yet an infant he was taken by his parents to New Orleans, where his father soon after died. Three years subsequently his mother formed a second matrimonial alliance, and the family then removed to Iowa, and young Ivers received his first education at the school attached to the Cathedral at Dubuque. Afterward he attended the district school near where his mother resided. In 1851 his mother died and he was taken by an uncle to New Orleans, where he attended school till 1853. In 1853 he was placed by his uncle in Notre Dame. For three years he applied himself eagerly to study; then entered the Congregation of the Holy Cross. He soon began to doubt his vocation and left Notre Dame for New Orleans, but returned in 1859 and engaged in teaching.

After teaching at Notre Dame, Chicago and Philadelphia, in 1865 he made another trip to New Orleans, and in December returned to Notre Dame and engaged in teaching mathematics. He then read up on some studies in June, 1866, and received the degree of Bachelor of Arts.

*Rev. Joseph Celestine Carrier* was born July 14, 1833, at St. Joire, a small town in France, near the confines of Switzerland, and the beautiful city of Geneva. He was the youngest of ten children. His education was commenced at home, and conducted from his fourth to his ninth year under the care of a private tutor, who taught him the elements of Latin. He afterward spent six years in the College of Belley (Ain) and stood high in all his classes. The French Revolution in 1848 found him in rhetoric. Eighteen months later, at the age of 17, he accepted the professorship of physics (natural philosophy) in a small college near Geneva, at Ferney, a village well known in history as the residence of Voltaire. During the autumn vacation of 1850 he traveled through Italy and Switzerland. In 1855 he crossed the Atlantic to America; studied divinity; in 1860 he came to Notre Dame, and in the following year made his profession in the Order of the Holy Cross, and was ordained priest. Since then he has filled several functions,—perfect of religion, professor of Latin and Greek, pastor of South Bend, Chaplain of the Sixth Missouri Regiment, master of Josephite novices, and professor of natural sciences.

*Lucius G. Tong, LL. B.*, the eldest of a family of 5 children, was born in Carroll, Fairfield Co., Ohio, Aug. 1, 1842; was sent early to college, and to the age of 21 spent his time between school and assisting his father in business; he became a convert to the Catholic religion, and is now a zealous and devoted member of that Church. In 1863, after having engaged in business in Columbus, Ohio, for a short time, he began teaching at Notre Dame, which position soon terminated in a regular professorship, which has been held ever since.

In 1873 he was married in Lafayette, Ind., to Miss B. C. Ball, eldest daughter of James Ball, of that city. About this time he located permanently in South Bend, commencing the business of law and insurance.

In 1878 Prof. Tong received the Republican nomination for Mayor of the city of South Bend, and he was elected by a good majority. During his term he gave satisfaction to all parties, and so popular was his administration that the Democratic paper of that city proposed his renomination in very hearty terms. But party lines were drawn and Mayor Tong was defeated. Prof. Tong is a thorough Republican and a temperance advocate. He holds several important positions in the various associations with which he is connected. He is a smooth and ready writer, and has in manuscript, and is putting to a practical test in the school-room to perfect every detail, a new system of bookkeeping, which has met with the

approval and will probably be brought out by one of the largest book firms in the United States.

*Rev. J. A. Zahm* was born near New Lexington, Perry county, Ohio, June 14, 1851. Lived there until the fall of 1863, when he removed with his parents to Huntington, Ind. During his youth he spent most of his time at school, always having had a special taste for study. Entered Notre Dame University as a student, Dec. 2, 1867. Took up the studies of the classical and scientific courses, graduating in the former June, 1871, and in September entered the novitiate, and made his religious profession as a member of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, Nov. 1 of the following year. In the autumn of 1872 he was appointed assistant professor of physical science and curator of the museum, an appointment which he did not relish at first as his tastes were rather for language and philology than science. In the fall of 1874 he was appointed superior of the scholasticate and at the same time curator of the museum, and professor of physics and chemistry. June 4, 1875, he was raised to the priesthood, having been ordained deacon two days previously, and subdeacon the fall before. September, 1876, he was appointed vice-president and director of studies, still retaining his old position as curator of the museum and professor of physical science. His Superiors seeing he had more than he was able to attend to, relieved him at the end of the year of the vice-presidency, in order that he might devote his entire time to the development of the scientific department. In the summer of 1877 he visited the principal colleges of Canada and of the Eastern States with a view of studying the methods of teaching science adopted in those institutions, and in the following year went to Europe with the same end in view, visiting the chief universities. Here on his return home he was expecting to carry out a large programme, but his plans were soon frustrated by the burning of the college, and with it, of the large and valuable museum in which he was beginning to take some pride. He was among those who put their shoulder to the wheel in the rebuilding of the college, and still occupies his old position as curator of the museum and professor of the physical sciences. All his energies are now directed toward replacing the old museum and making it, as well as the laboratory and physical cabinet, of which also he has charge, more extensive and valuable than ever. With the assistance of kind friends he lives in hope of one day seeing a large and spacious building for the exclusive use of the scientific department, the development of which will in future engage his attention more than ever before.

*Mrs. Flora L. Stanfield*, writer and poetess, was born in Cleveland, O., in October, 1848, the daughter of T. G. and Laura O. Turner; exhibited the talents of an authoress at a very early age; when 13 years of age she indited a very fine poem; has contributed to the *N. Y. Independent*; many of her articles have appeared over the *nom de plume* of "Malcolm Dunear;" and she was chiefly

instrumental in founding both the Pleiades and the Women's Literary Clubs.

*Prof. T. E. Howard*, author, was born near Ann Arbor, Mich., Jan. 27, 1837, reared as a farmer; taught school; completed his education at Notre Dame University; served in the war, receiving a bullet wound in the neck, at the battle of Shiloh; was appointed professor of rhetoric and English literature in Notre Dame University; is author of "A Grammar of the English Language," for beginners; of "Excelsior, or Essays on Politeness and Education," and "Uncle Edward's Stories," a small volume of moral tales for the young. He has also written many excellent poems. Politically, Prof. Howard is a Democrat.

*Daniel Kotz*, painter, was born March 21, 1848, in Clay township, this county, and is the son of J. C. and Christina Kotz, natives of Wirtemberg, Germany, from which place they emigrated to America in 1840, settling in Mishawaka in 1846, and the next year in Clay township. At 16 years of age Mr. Kotz made his first attempt at painting; he was at work in the studio of H. F. Spread in Crosby's Opera House, Chicago, when the great fire of 1871 broke out; he then attended college two and a half years at Naperville, Ill.; in 1874 he opened a studio in South Bend; eight months subsequently he returned to Chicago, entering the studio of H. A. Elkins; at the end of 11 months he opened a studio for himself again at 108 Dearborn street; while there he painted the "Trapper's Last Camping Ground" and "October Woods," two excellent pictures. In 1878 he opened an art school in Grand Rapids, Mich., where he painted the "Wayside Spring," from a sketch he made near Mackinaw; but his best and largest painting is the "Monarch of the Meadows," now in possession of P. E. Studebaker. In the summer of 1879 Schuyler Colfax gave him a commission to paint a special scene,—the St. Joseph River and the Road to Mishawaka, which he had executed by the middle of November following. At present Mr. Kotz is a resident of Chicago.

*Prof. Luigi Gregori*, from Rome, Italy, spent about five years at Notre Dame, where he executed some of the finest paintings in the country, among which are portraits of Father Sorin and Judge Stanfield.

*Alfred Bryant Miller*, poet, was born in South Bend in February, 1845; educated principally in the old county seminary; served in the war, where he was promoted Lieutenant; afterward was editor-in-chief of the South Bend *Register*, and managing editor of the South Bend *Tribune*. Mr. Miller is a graceful writer, and he has been a regular correspondent of, or contributor to, several of the most prominent newspapers of the United States.

*E. Burke Fisher*, journalist, was born in Philadelphia; contributed to several periodicals before he was 15 years of age; clerked in the office of the *Saturday Evening Post*; associated with Horace Greeley on *The New Yorker*; edited and published the *Saturday Evening Visitor* at Pittsburg, and *The Literary*

*Examiner and Monthly Review*; practiced law in Cleveland, O.; in 1853 he located in South Bend, continuing the practice of law, and died in that city April 12, 1863.

Among other authors worthy of special mention is Prof. J. A. Lyon, author of the "Silver Jubilee," and "Lyon's Elocution;" T. G. Turner, author of "Gazeteer of the St. Joseph Valley" and other works; Rev. A. Y. Moore, author of the "Life of Schuyler Colfax," John D. Defrees, Rev. N. H. Gillespie, Rev. M. B. Brown, Rev. J. C. Carrier, Prof. A. J. Stace and Mrs. E. Kingsley.



## CHAPTER XI.

PUBLIC BUILDINGS.—NAVIGATION OF THE ST. JOSEPH RIVER.—  
MARRIAGE LICENSES.—A COUNTERFEITING REMINISCENCE.—STILL-  
BORN VILLAGES.—FLOOD.—GOLD HUNTERS.

### PUBLIC BUILDINGS.

*Court-house.*—This building is on the corner of Main and Washington streets. The following description is from the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, April 27, 1854:

"In size the new court-house is  $61\frac{1}{2} \times 91\frac{1}{2}$  feet, including the portico; two stories high, the lower one  $12\frac{1}{2}$  feet in height clear of the joists, and the upper one 20 feet; surmounted by a cupola 50 feet. The stone foundation extends 33 inches below the ground and is carried above three feet. The lower story contains all the offices. Entering by the portico, which is on the eastern front, and supported by six pillars, you pass into a spacious hall 14 feet wide and 81 feet long, on each side of which are situated the various offices. From the front of the hall stairs rise on both sides to the second story, meeting above in a lobby  $13 \times 27$  feet, from which a spacious court-room  $57 \times 50$  and 20 feet high is entered by a door in the center. About the middle of the court-room a semi-circular bar separates the officers, attorneys, suitors and witnesses from the audience. Inside of the bar are the lawyers' tables, pleading table, officers' desk and witness' stand. Still further back in the western extreme of the court-room is the judges' bench, with the grand and petit jury box on either side, in the shape of an L. In the rear of the court-room are three rooms, one immediately behind the judge's bench, for a witness' room,  $17 \times 12$ , and on each side a jury room  $20 \times 13$ , so that juries can retire, from a door opening from their seats, into their consultation room, without having to pass through the audience. The building is of brick and stone, the inner walls of the former material and the outer walls of the latter. The cupola is surmounted by a town clock."

In March, 1873, Judge Stanfield issued the following order, which was duly carried out:

It is ordered by the court that the court-room be re-arranged by moving the west partition east to the west side of the west windows; that the three westrooms be enlarged and finished up in a good workmanlike manner, with a door from the court-room entering into each one. That an additional room be added to the Clerk's office by taking away the south stairway, and enclose a room by extending a wall from the north wall of the Clerk's office across the space now used for the stairway; and that there also be a room of the same size constructed above the room last aforesaid, with a door into the court-room. That a stairway be made from the Judge's desk in the court-room, as re-arranged, down into the Clerk's office, and that the court-room be re-arranged so as to place the Judge's



bench on the south side of the court-room; and the Bar occupy the portion of the court-room south of the general entrance to said room, and the portion north of said entrance be prepared for the occupation of suitors, witnesses and spectators; and it is further ordered that the Clerk's office and court-room be heated by hot-air furnaces. All of said work to be completed, finished and painted in a good workmanlike manner; and George W. Matthews, Dwight Deming, and Thomas S. Stanfield are hereby appointed a committee with full authority to cause said work to be done, and also to furnish and carpet said court-room, and that said committee shall audit all accounts for said work and materials and certify the same to the County Auditors for allowance and payment. It is further ordered that a certified copy of this order be transmitted to the Board doing county business.

THOMAS S. STANFIELD,  
Circuit Judge.

The entire cost of the court-house as originally built was about \$35,000. A. B. Ellsworth superintended its construction, by order of the Board of County Commissioners.

*Jail.*—In 1860 the county built a large, handsome and substantial jail, including jailor's residence, at a cost of \$35,000.

#### NAVIGATION OF THE ST. JOSEPH RIVER.

The first attempt at navigation of the St. Joseph river was in 1830, by two men named Masters and Tipsorf, who made several successful trips from the mouth of the river to South Bend, with a keel boat. The first attempt to run a steamboat on the river was in 1831. It was the "Newburyport," built at Presque Isle. It was not adapted to the navigation of the river and was therefore unsuccessful. It made but one trip and only succeeded in reaching Berrien. In 1833 the "Matilda Barney" and "David Crocket," two stern-wheel boats of light draft, commenced running and were very successful. They made trips as far up as the Mishawaka rapids, but were not able to pass them on account of the swiftness of the current. From 1833 until after the completion of the Lake Shore railroad boats continued to ply the river. Many attempts were made to procure aid from the Government for making the river navigable for larger boats than were put upon it, but without avail.

The Legislature of the State, at its annual sessions of 1845 and 1846, passed resolutions urging upon Congress the claims of the St. Joseph river to appropriations for its improvement. To these appeals no response was made. To show the importance of the river a local writer in 1847 says: "We have here a river coursing through two States, and passing through, and in the vicinity of, an agricultural body of land without a superior in the West. For one hundred and seventy-five miles by the river distance, namely from Union City to St. Joseph, steamboats can navigate its waters and have done so—a length of steamboat navigation greater even than the Hudson. Four steamboats now ply upon it, and no one, we believe, has counted the numerous keel boats and arks which annually find busy employment in its commerce. In the spring and fall one can hardly look upon this beautiful stream without seeing a boat of some character, deeply laden, sailing toward its mouth.

The manufactories of iron, wool, oil, leather and other articles, which line its shores and the banks of its tributaries, and whose number is every year increasing with fast accelerating rapidity, together with the eighty run of stone for the grinding of flour, already at work or being put in operation the present season, throws upon its waters an amount of exports which would surprise those who have not closely scanned the statistics of this fertile valley."

A river and harbor convention was called at Chicago to be held July 5, 1847. A large number of delegates were appointed by the citizens of St. Joseph county to represent the interests of St. Joseph river; but no favorable result was ever reached so far as this river was concerned.

#### MARRIAGE LICENSES.

As illustrating the work of Cupid, the following table is appended showing the number of marriage licenses issued from 1830 to 1879, inclusive:

1830 .....	3	1843.....	70	1856.....	154	1868.....	233
1831.....	6	1844.....	85	1857.....	174	1869.....	181
1832.....	8	1845.....	64	1858.....	175	1870.....	216
1833.....	23	1846.....	85	1859.....	147	1871.....	247
1834.....	27	1847.....	66	1860.....	163	1872.....	265
1835.....	49	1848.....	98	1861.....	136	1873.....	289
1836.....	51	1849.....	72	1862.....	119	1874.....	247
1837.....	68	1850.....	77	1863.....	121	1875.....	235
1838.....	53	1851.....	103	1864.....	164	1876.....	212
1839.....	70	1852.....	103	1865.....	200	1877.....	191
1840.....	73	1853.....	120	1866.....	224	1878.....	222
1841.....	58	1854.....	123	1867.....	210	1879.....	232
1842.....	72	1855.....	123				

The effects of climate, hard times and the war will be observed by carefully observing the foregoing table. It will be noticed there was an annual increase up to the year 1838, the year of the great malarial epidemic, while the year following an increase was observable. This continued with the exception of one year, till the war, when there was a perceptible falling off of licenses issued. Again, in 1865, the year the war was brought to a close, an increase is seen, the number being almost double either the year 1862 or 1863, and nearly 60 per cent. more than 1861. From 1865 to 1873 there was a steady increase, with the exception of one year. In 1874, when the hard times began to be felt, there was a falling off, which continued until 1878 when there was a slight increase, which continued in 1879, and at a greater ratio for the first eight months in 1880.

#### A COUNTERFEITING REMINISCENCE.

About the year 1837 there lived south of this city, in Centre township, on the farm now occupied by James Dice, an old man

James Odle. He was apparently a harmless, simple old man, who did very little farming, and ostensibly made a living by selling "cakes and beer," as announced by a sign over the door. In those early days it was an out-of-the-way place, and M. Stover, now of South Bend, who owned a farm in that neighborhood, had his suspicions aroused by seeing so many well-dressed men hanging around old Odle's humble premises, that counterfeiting was carried on there. He communicated his suspicions to the authorities, and Odle, his son-in-law, Foskit, Van Amburgh, Cumnius, Dixon, Clark and others were arrested, brought to town and confined in the old log jail. Odle's premises were searched and the officers found the dies and press for making bogus dollars, a quantity of copper, and fifteen pounds of arsenic; also a few pieces of the base coin ready for the dies. These were brought to the old red court-house. Odle was told what was found, and an offer made to clear him if he would turn State's evidence. The old man accepted and told where they would find a quantity of the metal ready for stamping—some 250 pieces—buried under a tree. These were brought in, and with the press and dies taken into the presence of the grand jury, where old Odle showed how the milling and stamping was done, and explained the mystery of the arsenic. The metal in the dollar pieces he said was nothing but copper melted in the crucible and whitened with the arsenic. The grand jurors each took one of the pieces as a memento of the first counterfeiting in this county. After Odle's confession, the men, with the exception of Odle and Foskit, were remanded to jail for trial. They boasted that they would not stay there any longer than it suited them, and made their escape in broad daylight. The citizens turned out to hunt them, but they all escaped except Van Amburgh, who was too feeble to travel fast. He was not tried on account of some informality in the indictment.

About twelve pounds of the arsenic was sold to Dr. Rey, a druggist, and three or four pounds were carried to the garret of the court-house. Here, six or seven years afterward, it was found by some boy who was rummaging in the garret, and, supposing it to be chalk, he took it down where the Baptist church now stands, and where the carpenters were then hewing timber for that building. From there it was carried off by different boys, who still supposed it was chalk. The only harm that resulted from this promiscuous distribution of poison, was in a piece nearly as large as a hen's egg, which was taken home by Robert Miller. Two of Mrs. Eliza Owen's daughters, who were at the house playing, ate of it, believing it to be chalk; but they ate so much that with proper attention their lives were saved. Notice was publicly given that it was arsenic, and finally it was all got together and buried.

#### STILL-BORN VILLAGES.

*Portage.*—In July, 1834, Elisha Egbert laid off a town about two miles below South Bend, to which he gave the name of Portage.

It was just below a very sharp bend in the river, now cut off as an island; but this bend suggested another name for the town, by which it has always been known—"Pin Hook." It is needless to say the proprietor objected to the appellation. Under the fostering care of Mr. Egbert the town grew quite rapidly for awhile and its future seemed filled with promise. It soon had two taverns, two dry-goods stores, two physicians and other business suited to the wants of a young community. A public ferry was established and quite a collection of houses built. In a year or so it became quite a snug, thriving little village. Among the noted early settlers of Portage was Rev. Abner Morse, a man of learning and eloquence, but certain peculiarities. He proposed to build a college at the new town. A charter was procured. He was to be the president. A part of the professors had been selected and a college bell brought on the ground, but that was all that ever came of the prospective college. Dr. Dayton was one of the early settlers of the place, as was also Dr. Hunt. Both resided there several years; then Dr. Hunt moved into La Porte county, and after residing there a number of years, and representing that county several sessions in the Legislature, settled in Brooklyn, New York. Dr. Dayton moved to South Bend, and is well and favorably known. While the town was growing and everything looked prosperous, the proprietor branched out in a variety of enterprises, such as merchandising, milling and land speculations, and when the hard times of 1837-'8 struck the country he found himself with a load he was unable to carry. His reverses had its effect upon the town; the motive power that had been pushing and keeping every enterprise in motion that tended to build up and strengthen the new town was now withdrawn, and death followed. One by one the settlers retired to other and more inviting fields, and where once stood a thriving little village, the hand of the husbandman gathers the golden grain.

*St. Joseph.*—The original county seat of St. Joseph county. The plat of this town covered portions of sections 34, 35 and 27, in German township, two miles and a half from South Bend. The re-location of the county seat at South Bend was the death of this place.

*Palestine.*—This village was laid out on portions of sections 29, 30, 32 and 36, township 38 north, of range east, on Terre Coupee Prairie, Dec. 4, 1834.

*Williamsport.*—Laid out Dec. 13, 1834, on the southeast quarter of the northeast quarter of section 9, township 37 north, of range 4 east.

*Greensburg.*—On section 25, township 37 north, of range 4 east, was laid out a town by this name, Dec. 10, 1835.

*Canton* was laid out on section 6, township 37 north, of range 4 east, Dec. 14, 1835.

*Mount Pleasant* was laid out on sections 31 and 32, township 38 north, of range 2, Aug. 19, 1836.

## FLOOD.

On Friday, Jan. 15, 1847, there was a sudden and disastrous rise in the St. Joseph river. The ice daming up the river caused it to back water, and large quantities of ice coming down at the same time soon raised it to a fearful height. As soon as the danger was noticed nearly every citizen of South Bend was down on the semi-circular flat where centered all the interests of the manufacturing company, and all worked in right good earnest and with a hearty good will to avert the danger that was threatening. At one time, in about fifteen minutes, the water ran fully three feet, and then nearly all despaired of saving anything. It was then at least twelve feet above the usual water mark and flooded the second stories of several of the buildings. Everything portended a complete sweeping off of the banks of the race and the valuable buildings and factories built between it and the river. The ice ran so thickly and impetuously in the river and came booming with so much force against the bridge that it seemed almost impossible for it to be saved. Says a local writer: "At this moment it was a gloomy scene indeed, but yet the citizens labored through, 'hoping against hope.' Finally the ice choked up in the river, and at least the head gates of the race were strengthened; the force of the current seemed to be thrown more and more against the other side of the river, and the danger was materially lessened."

About the middle of June, 1855, there was a great fall of rain, which swelled the river with great rapidity, so much so that on Sunday night, the 17th of that month, the danger became so imminent that a number turned out, and worked all night on or about the dam at South Bend. The river still rose, reaching the highest mark it had ever attained, and still continued its upward course, increasing the danger at every hour. At about 9 A. M., Monday morning, when citizens of the town were still fighting the waters, which had risen to a point about two feet above its previous high-water mark, the head-gates of the race gave way, and the torrent poured through, with all the drift logs and other debris that it had accumulated. First it swept off the woolen factory's dye house, then spent its severest force on Mr. Matthews' oil mill and Rose & Kimball's veneering mill, until at last, having torn out the river bank of the race, it converted what was intended as the race into a portion of the river, leaving the mills and other buildings above and below the bridge as islands in the stream. After this work of destruction, the water did not rise any higher, but Monday night part of the bridge which crossed the river was washed away, cutting off communication with Lowell and the northeastern part of the county. Fortunately no lives were lost, though Silas De Camp had a narrow escape from being drowned. When the head-gates gave way, he was, with many others, at work on "the point," and was swallowed up, as the ground under him gave way, by the torrent, and swept under the tons of drift that were rushing along on its surface,

but fortunately came up below the drift, and coolly swam ashore. The damage done the manufacturing interests was immense and quite discouraging to those who had their all invested.

#### GOLD HUNTERS.

On the discovery of gold in California in 1849, a large number of citizens of this county determined to seek at once the new Eldorado. A joint-stock company was organized at South Bend, which on Tuesday, Feb. 20, 1849, set out for the gold region. The *Register* of the 24th of February had the following to say of this enterprise:

"Tuesday was an eventful day in the history of our town, long to be remembered—we hope happily, though our fears struggle with our hopes. For a time everything else was forgotten. Business was neglected, and with good reason, for we were all about to bid a long farewell to friends and brethren. The streets were filled with our population, all deeply interested in the success of the adventurers who were just ready to turn their faces westward. At last the line of wagons was formed in Washington street; the band discoursed some of its sweetest music; a brief farewell address was delivered in behalf of the citizens, at their call, by the writer (Schuyler Colfax); the notes of song were heard; the last farewell of those dearer than friends was over; the whips crack, the wheels rumble, the train moves on; the hundreds of spectators disperse; and our adventurous citizens, taking the last look for years upon the spires of our village and the homes where dwell their loved ones, are started in earnest upon their lengthy, but they hope, prosperous, journey.

"The joint-stock company goes out well fitted with everything they will need; perhaps better than any other of the many overland expeditions that are forming in the Northwest. They go in twelve wagons, all but one drawn by oxen. Their capital stock and outfit amounts to over \$8,000. The company consists of thirty members besides the physician who is to join them at Chicago, as is understood. The gold collected is to go into a general fund, and to be divided equally among the members, with this wise and excellent provision, that in case of the decease of any of them his share is not to cease, but his heirs are to receive his thirtieth of the whole profits of the expedition. Thus it organized strictly on the associative plan, almost bordering even on Fourierism. The Sabbath is to be strictly observed, and drinking intoxicating liquors as a beverage is prohibited under penalty of expulsion. The officers are as follows: Charles M. Tutt, President; G. W. Haines, Secretary; C. S. Fassett, Treasurer; E. C. Johnson, A. Allen, M. A. Kidwell, Directors; Dr. Lillibridge, Physician. The messes are distributed as follows: No. 1—J. E. Woodward, Tipton Lindsey, J. H. Miller, P. W. Kinsey, C. S. Fassett. No. 2—Evan C. Johnson, P. N. Johnson, John Day, A. G. Robinson, A. J. Ford. No. 3—Charles





ST. JOSEPH COUNTY JAIL





M. Tutt, David Gish, W. W. Stewart, C. W. Lewis, Charles Traver. No. 4—W. G. Whitman, C. Caldwell, Samuel Harris, Ezra G. Carpenter, F. Donighue. No. 5—William Norton, A. Allen, L. Breset, M. A. Kidwell, E. Belangee. No. 6—G. W. Haines, W. S. McCullough, S. Armstrong, G. De Graff, John Trainer."

In addition to this company, but not a part of them, about thirty others went about the same time, among whom were James I. Horrell, Joseph White, Jr., F. Lambing, Thomas Neal, Thomas Rockhill, David Leiper, William Good, William L. Earl, G. Fields, Mr. Tingler, Hiram Rush, Dr. M. Rush, D. McCoskry, Clinton Rush, John Kelley, W. C. Monson, T. McCartney, J. McCartney, B. McCartney.

On the 22d of March, 1849, another company, consisting of eleven persons, started from South Bend. They were William Miller, J. A. Henricks, D. W. C. Willoughby, E. S. Reynolds, W. L. Woodward, M. B. Miller, Cyrenius Johnson, W. J. Snavelly, William Maslin, George Pierson, John Linderman. Before leaving, the company adopted the name of the "Dowdle Family," divided themselves off into messes and painted their names and number upon their wagons, as follows: No. 1—Honest John; Ethan, the Daddy, No. 2—Black Bill, John, the Doctor, Cyrenius Dowdle. No. 3—George, the Lawyer, Little Bill, Big Bill. No. 4—Tall Bill, Matthew, the Upright, DeWitt Dowdle.

Among others who started about the same time were S. W. Hopkins, John Grant, Jr., and Adam Bair.

In the spring of 1850 others went, to the number of one hundred and seventy, a very large emigration from the county.

#### MAP AND ATLAS OF THE COUNTY.

The first and only map made of this county, and issued for sale, was by M. W. Stokes, in 1863. It is a large wall map showing townships and sections, with the name of the owner printed upon every tract. Around the borders of the map are views of some of the public buildings and private residences scattered throughout the county. These views add much to the general appearance of the map.

"An Illustrated Historical Atlas of St. Joseph County" was issued in 1875, by Higgins, Belden & Co., of Chicago. A well-executed sectional map of the county, township sectional maps, with names of owner upon every tract of land, historical sketches of the county, Notre Dame University, St. Mary's Academy, views of business, residence and farm houses, and portraits of the noted men in the county formed the leading features of the work.

## CHAPTER XII.

### POLITICAL HISTORY OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.—OFFICIAL ELECTION RETURNS.

#### POLITICAL.

In a free government the people are rulers and public officers are their servants. Every four years the people of the United States are called upon to select one who shall serve them in the highest office known to them, that of President of the United States. For the same length of time the people of Indiana select one who shall serve them as Governor. Annually one or more men are chosen to serve the people of St. Joseph county, by the qualified voters living within her borders, in the various positions required for good government. For several years after the organization of the county, party caucuses were unknown. If a man desired to run for office and had not friends who were interested enough in him to bring him out as a candidate, he did the next best thing, announced himself. For local offices it was men, not party. Even in general elections none of that party clap-trap now in vogue was used.

The first election held in the county was in August, 1830, for county officers—a purely local affair.

In 1834 Charles W. Cathcart issued the following address:

*"Fellow Citizens:—*After due consideration I have concluded to allow the use of my name as a candidate for the Legislature, and in conformity with the usual custom, and at the first opportunity which occurred (the meeting of the Circuit Court of La Porte county), I mounted the stump and informed my fellow citizens then assembled that they might consider my services at their disposal.

*"Thus, having appeared before the public, it is my duty as well as a pleasure, to express my views upon such prominent matters as may be subject to Legislative action, claiming for them only that consideration which the honest convictions of one individual may entitle him to; for our whole scheme of Government has been founded on the principle that all our power is inherent in the people, and as the representative agency is made use of merely on account of the difficulty, indeed, even the impossibility, of the affairs of the public being acted upon deliberately by the people en masse, it is evident that the representative should suit his course to the wishes of his constituents, according to their views of the manner in which they may see proper to have their interests attended to, and that as near as he does this, so near will he come*

to the fulfillment of the trust reposed in him. Having thus, fellow citizens, acknowledged the entire dependence of the representative upon the instructive power of his constituents, I will give you my views as frankly and briefly as possible.

"A bill, commonly called the 'ad valorem bill,' which passed during our last session, is, I conceive, unjust, and partial in its operation, bearing with peculiar hardship upon this part of the State, and is but a mocking of its title, which is made use of, apparently, to impose a disagreeable potion under a palatable name; but I am convinced that a system of taxation, based upon the principle that every man must pay to the Government that protects him and his in proportion to the value of his estate, is one which is entirely reasonable and just.

"Another bill, commonly called the 'mammoth bill,' making vast and indeed unlimited appropriations to works of internal improvement, only failed during the last session, after a warm and protracted debate, after which a bill 'to provide for the further prosecution of the Wabash & Erie canal,' and for other purposes, and an act supplemental, passed and received the signature of the Governor, which provides for the survey of a vast scheme of canals, railroads, etc., as well as for the prosecution of the Wabash & Erie canal to the navigable part of the Wabash river. The cost of these works, should they be completed, must over-go \$29,000,000; and of this sum not one cent is contemplated to be expended on this side of the Wabash river; and though it is more than probable that but a part of these works may be expected to be completed, still it must be evident that many of the routes which were ordered to be surveyed are of comparative insignificance, when compared with a route or routes which would have connected our Northern waters with a Southern thoroughfare, and that the neglect of the interests of the north part of this State, in the provisions of that bill, was a gross instance of partial Legislation.

"The experience of other States has demonstrated the advantages to be derived from a judiciously disposed system of internal improvements, and the policy that would dictate the abandonment of such a scheme would be as fallacious as the late act is partial and extravagant.

"The disposal of the 3 per cent. fund will continue to require the utmost attention on the part of the members from the new counties. It is no doubt known to all that the 3 per cent. fund originates from an agreement with the general Government, upon our entering the Union as a free and sovereign State, that the public lands shall not be subject to taxation, until the expiration of five years after they have been sold by the general Government, in consideration of which the United States make grants sundry to this State, among which are 5 per cent. upon the proceeds of the sales of the public lands within this State, which is to be applied to works of internal improvement, 3 per cent. being subject to the

control of our Legislature. Now, this being the case, what plan of distribution among the different counties so just as to appropriate to each the amount accruing upon the sale of land within that county?

"Thinking, fellow citizens, that we should all know at least enough of the law to keep clear of it, I am in hopes of seeing our common as well as statute law put into such a form that it may be more commonly diffused and known among us. Such a project has been in agitation before our Legislature, and, believing it would save half the litigation amongst us, it has my heartiest wishes for its success.

"The next apportionment will also be a matter requiring the deepest consideration and attentive care of your representative, as, with an increased representation, our claims will be placed in a more commanding position, and we who are of the North, while we unite with the South in all judicious schemes of internal improvement, will be in a situation to prevent such glaring instances of partial legislation as our last session presented.

"In regard to our roads, or rather want of them, it is needless to say much here, as so many monuments of our neglected condition, in that respect, present themselves, most loudly calling for legislative interference.

"There are many other subjects, fellow citizens, which are no doubt of importance, but believing I have touched, though slightly, those subjects most generally interesting to the citizens of this district, I shall detain you no longer with the enumeration of matters of less general interest.

"With feelings of peculiar delicacy, I must, fellow citizens, here remark that as regards national politics, I have ever been the unwavering friend of the leading principles of the present administration. I look upon them as the emanation of the purest patriotism; and while I disdain the low bickerings of party strife, still I must exercise the right of every freeman to avow his sentiments. This avowal, fellow citizens, I make, not with a view of enlisting the partiality of a single voter; I do it merely because if silent on this point, I may probably be charged with the want of frankness, —a charge I must be indulged in saying, to me, peculiarly painful.

"Fellow citizens, I have but to offer to your acceptance such common-place qualifications as a life of much vicissitude has engendered, and an assurance that the good of the district, the whole district, shall be my aim, should I be so fortunate as to gain your preference. But, fellow citizens, if in your better judgment you should prefer another, I must take this opportunity to assure you and him that he has my warmest wishes for his success in the furtherance of the welfare of this district.

CHARLES W. CATHCART."

In 1836 Martin Van Buren received the Democratic nomination for President, while William Henry Harrison was the candidate of the Whigs.

The year 1840 has a place in history as one in which the political excitement ran high. William Henry Harrison, of Ohio, was again pitted against Martin Van Buren, of New York. The Whigs determined to make a grand effort to elect "old Tippecanoe and Tyler too." Hard cider, log cabins, and the singing of the multitude created an excitement never before known. In St. Joseph county as well as elsewhere, both parties were filled with enthusiasm. Harrison received in this county 809 votes, and Martin Van Buren, 444.

"Fifty-four, forty, or fight" was the rallying cry of the Democrats in 1844, with James K. Polk as their presidential candidate. Henry Clay was the nominee of the Whigs, and James P. Birney, of the newly organized Free-Soil party. The latter polled in this county 33 votes, showing even at this early day a few who were not afraid of social ostracism on account of their opinions on slavery. Henry Clay had a majority in the county of 180 out of a total of 1,579.

In 1845 Joseph G. Marshall was the nominee of the Whig party for Governor, James Whitcomb, of the Democrats, and Mr. Stevens, of the Free-Soil or Abolitionists, as they were called. Marshall received a majority of 53 over Whitcomb, but Lot Day, Jr., Democrat, was elected Sheriff by a majority of 36, over John H. Harper, Whig.

In 1846 quite an exciting campaign was held, Whigs, Democrats and Abolitionists all having full State and county tickets in the field. The majority for the Whig ticket was quite small.

In 1847 Daniel D. Pratt was the Whig, and Charles W. Cathcart, the Democratic, candidate for Congress, the former receiving 167 majority in this county.

Zachary Taylor, Lewis Cass and Martin Van Buren were the respective candidates of the Whig, Democratic and Free-Soil parties. The contest was fought vigorously, each having State and county tickets in the field. A paper called the *Free Democrat* was started to advocate the election of Van Buren. Taylor received 817 votes, Cass 667, and Van Buren 332. The Whigs elected their entire county ticket, with the exception of Sheriff, Lot Day, the Democratic candidate, receiving a majority of 275.

In 1849 Thomas S. Stanfield, of this county, was nominated as the Whig candidate for Lieutenant-Governor, running ahead of his ticket and receiving a majority of 320, against 141 for the Whig candidate for Governor.

In 1850 the Whigs were again triumphant, electing their entire ticket, with the exception of Sheriff.

In 1851 local issues caused many split tickets to be voted, so that it is impossible to make a comparison of the political strength of the respective parties. For Congress Schuyler Colfax carried the

county by 330 majority; Thomas S. Stanfield, for Representative, was elected by 186 majority. Samuel McChord, Democrat, was elected Sheriff by 14 majority, while the Whig candidate for Treasurer, Robert B. Nicar, had a majority of 11. This was the year in which Schnyler Colfax was a candidate for Congress for the first time. The convention by which he was nominated was held at Plymouth on the 28th day of May. The Democrats of the district had met a few days previously at the same place, and nominated Graham N. Fitch for re-election to Congress. To show the position of parties on public questions at this time, here are presented the resolutions adopted by the two conventions. The Democratic convention adopted as its platform of principles the following resolutions:

*Resolved*, That the cardinal principles of the Democratic party are to be found in the resolutions of 1798, drawn by Jefferson and Madison, and re-affirmed by the National Conventions of 1836, 1840, 1844 and 1848; that we regard them as the touchstones of our political faith; that we will be governed by them in our political action, and that we place our nominee for Congress upon the broad platform thus enacted.

*Resolved*, That we abide by the letter and spirit of the Constitution, and that we will stand by each and all of its compromises, and therefore recognize the binding force of every clause (the delivery of fugitives from labor included), and we regard any action from any quarter, North or South, that tends to weaken or estrange our high allegiance to its solemn provisions, as equally faithless and treasonable.

The Whig Convention adopted a much longer platform of principles. Their resolutions were as follows:

*Resolved*, That the Whigs of the Ninth Congressional District, in Convention assembled, tender to each other their pledge of fidelity to the cause and devotion to the principles for which they have so long labored.

*Resolved*, That our position remains unchanged; no interference with the domestic policy or peculiar institutions of sister States; no extension of slave territory; no diffusion of an institution which it is believed tends to degrade labor and blight industry, over more of National soil than it now covers; no countenance of disunion sentiments, whether at the North or South; but devotion, unflinching and unconditional devotion, to our glorious Union, in any event, under all circumstances, despite all contingencies.

*Resolved*, That although we may not agree upon each and every one of the measures passed by the last Congress, known as the compromise measures, yet we regard them as designed to settle the questions specified in them, and that we are of the opinion that the good of the country requires that the settlement should remain undisturbed until time and experience shall show that change or modification of them is necessary to avoid evasion or abuse; and that we hold, in the language of Henry Clay, on making his report from the committee of thirteen, that Congress ought, while on the one hand securing to the owner the fair restoration of his property, effectually to guard on the other against any abuse in the application of the remedy, being satisfied that it is not unsafe for either individuals or nations to rectify wrong by the substitution of right, and that the crowning glory of law is its protection of the rights of the weak as well as its enforcement of the just claims of the strong.

*Resolved*, That the thanks of the Nation are due Millard Fillmore and his cabinet for the promptness and efficiency with which they have maintained the public faith, and for their determination to execute the laws at every hazard, and preserve unsullied the honor and integrity of the Nation, and that this administration deserves the confidence and support of the Whig party.

*Resolved*, That so far from the prosperity so confidently predicted by our opponents being realized by the working of the present tariff, we see, instead of the high prices for grain that were promised, a depression in rates almost unparalleled; instead of an increase in the rewards of labor, factories and mills all over the land stopping, and thus operatives ceasing to purchase of the farmer, compelled to resort to agriculture themselves, and becoming rivals in producing instead of being consumers, thereby tending still further to depress prices by the superabundance thus created; and balance of trade against us of \$50,000,000 in a single year, and the shipment of over \$3,000,000 per month of hard coin from but one port to Europe, saying nothing of the millions upon millions of bonds and loans negotiated abroad, all hereafter to be paid for in cash and nothing else, attest to every man willing to see, that all the avails of our hardy miners in California, with an amount equally large in addition, is taken from us for the benefit of foreign manufacturers, who rejoice and thrive over the prostration of our industrial enterprises.

*Resolved*, That Congress should, in arranging the details of a tariff, not only seek to raise sufficient revenue for the support of Government, but at the same time discriminate so judiciously in the duties upon foreign imports, as to promote all the industrial interests of our own country; that all legislation which tends to the development of our own resources, or the diversification of labor into different pursuits, or the building up of a home market for agricultural products on our own soil, or the carrying out of the emphatic declaration of Jefferson that to be independent for the comforts of life, we must fabricate them for ourselves; we must place the manufacturer by the side of the agriculturist, is eminently beneficial in its character and conduces to the prosperity, the progress, the wealth and the real independence of the Nation; and that the present tariff should be so modified, as recommended by President Fillmore and Secretary Corwin, as to make it conform to the above principles, and render it what the tariff of the United States should be—incidental protection to our own labor.

*Resolved*, That it is the duty of Congress to make liberal appropriations for the improvement of rivers and harbors of the West, as well as for those of the South and East; that our internal commerce floating on fresh water, should have equal benefits and equal protection with that extended so liberally to the external, or salt water commerce of the country; and that no false excuses about a bill including work of a local character will be any justification of the people of the West, for denying them that, which, though long and justly claimed, has been so often defeated by the vetoes of Democratic administrations, or the more recent willful factiousness of Democratic Senators; that this District has peculiar claims upon the National Legislature in this respect, being directly interested in the harbors at Michigan City and St. Joseph; and that it should send a member to represent their claims who can have personal influence with his colleagues sufficient to procure for them the vote of at least one other member of his own party from his own State.

*Resolved*, That we deprecate all those contrivances, whether under or without the cover of law, which wink at the pilfering of the Government treasury under the pretense of constructive mileage, long mileage, Ritchie claims, and other kindred absorbents; that constructive mileage should be abolished totally and forever; the present exorbitant rate of mileage, so greatly disproportioned to the expense of travel, reduced at least one-half, and computed, not by the easiest but by the nearest route; and public contractors compelled to live up to their obligations without importunate appeals to be allowed hundreds of thousand of dollars in addition.

*Resolved*, That we are in favor of reducing letter postage to a low rate, and the entire abolition of the franking privilege, leaving the Government and Congressmen to pay their own postage the same as private citizens.

*Resolved*, That as Whigs, we sympathize with the struggles of the masses now going forward in the old world, to throw off the shackles which have so long bound them, and to assert that equality and independence which we regard as man's birthright.

*Resolved*, Unanimously, that we recommend to the voters of this Congressional District Schuyler Colfax, the candidate this day nominated, with the assurance to all that he is honest, and would scorn to betray them, or violate pledges which he may make, capable, possessing talents and a zeal in their exercise which must be valuable to the District, and creditably to the councils of the Nation should he



be elected, and faithful to the constitution of the country, regarding its observance as the bond of our Union, the guarantee of our National welfare, and the means of promoting internal peace, and hushing the voice of faction and discord amongst our jarring members.

The resolutions of the two parties as given exhibit the issues which divided them this year and also in the Presidential campaign that was soon to follow.

In 1852 the State and county elections were held in October for the first time. The county went Democratic this year for the first time in its history. In October J. A. Wright, Democrat, had a majority over Nicholas McCarty, Whig, of 51, though the Whig candidate for Representative had 111 majority. Franklin Pierce, Winfield Scott and John P. Hale were the nominees for President of the Democratic, Whig and Free-Soil parties. Pierce carried the county by 54 majority.

No interest was manifested in the election in 1853, there being but 837 votes polled in the entire county, the polling place in Madison township not being even opened.

New questions now arose, growing out of the Know-Nothing excitement, and the agitation attending the passage of the Nebraska bill, and the repeal of the Missouri compromise. The interest in this county was high, and a full vote was polled at the October election, 1854. The opposition to the Democracy took the name of People's party, or Anti-Nebraska party. Schuyler Colfax was the nominee of this party for Congress, and Norman Eddy by the Democracy for the same position. Colfax's majority in the district was 1,765, and in this county, 616. Every nominee on the People's ticket in this county was elected by majorities ranging from 517 to 625.

In 1855 the Democrats were victorious, receiving large majorities for the various county offices to be filled, with the exception of Auditor. This was the first year in which the newly organized Republican party had a ticket in the field, and the campaign was run principally on the merits of the respective nominees or their personal popularity.

The Republican party was first organized in 1854, but its organization did not extend in all the various States where it was permitted an existence until 1856. In this year John C. Fremont, "the Pathfinder," was nominated for President against James Buchanan, Democrat, and Millard Fillmore, American. The anti-slavery sentiment of the country became consolidated in this new Republican party. The larger portion of the Whigs found themselves naturally in the new party, most of the Free-Soilers united with it, and also the large anti-slavery element of the Democratic party. Oliver P. Morton was the nominee of the Republicans for Governor, and Ashbel P. Willard, of the Democrats. W. Z. Stewart was the Democratic candidate for Congress, and Schuyler Colfax was nominated by the Republicans for re-election. Great interest was manifested in this election and the Republicans were victorious. The



vote in October was the largest ever cast in the county, the total number being 3,250. This was increased in November at the Presidential election to 3,327.

The election in 1857 was only for County Commissioner, and John Hammond was elected without opposition.

Political excitement became warm again in 1858. The terms that were heard most in the party language of the day were "Lecompton Constitution," "Kansas," "Border Ruffianism," "Freedom Shriekers," "Dred Scott Decision," "Freedom of the Territories," "Non-Extension of Slavery," "Squatter Sovereignty," "Nigger Sovereignty." All the State officers, except Governor, were to be elected, a member of Congress, and county officers. The vote of this year was an increase over 1856, being a total of 3,655. Schuyler Colfax and John C. Walker were the opposing candidates for Congress, and the former's majority in the county was 481. The Republicans elected every county officer by majorities ranging from 325 to 471.

The "off year" of 1859 failed to bring out the full vote of the county, though some interest was manifested in the election of county officers. The Republicans were again victorious, electing their entire ticket by majorities ranging from 249 to 485.

The country was now becoming deeply moved over questions which stirred the popular heart as none had ever done before. The storm had been gathering ever since the repeal of the Missouri compromise, the struggles in Kansas had deeply intensified the feeling of the people of the North, and John Brown's attempt upon Harper's Ferry had been skillfully managed so as to arouse and heat the people of the South. That the Territories of the United States should be forever consecrated to freedom was the solemn determination of a large majority of the people of the North, and that the boundaries of the institution of slavery should not be further enlarged. The South, seeking its perpetuation by means of enlarged political power, determined that it should not be restricted, but should have enlarged privileges. The questions dividing parties were thus chiefly sectional, and pointed directly to war. In this state of the public mind, the Republican party met in National Convention at Chicago, and nominated Abraham Lincoln for President and Hannibal Hamlin for Vice-President. The Democratic party met at Charleston, South Carolina, and the Southern element broke up the Convention. The party afterward met in the city of Baltimore, and there the same turbulent element divided the convention, and the result was the nomination of two Democratic tickets—Stephen A. Douglas and Herschel V. Johnson for President and Vice-President on the one side, and John C. Breckenridge and Joseph Lane on the other. Henry S. Lane stood at the head of the Republican State ticket, as candidate for Governor, and Thomas A. Hendricks, at the head of the Democratic ticket. In the Ninth District, Schuyler Colfax was again the Republican candidate for Congress, and the Democrats pitted against him Charles W. Cathcart. The position which the Republican party maintained on

slavery questions may be seen in the following resolutions, found in the State Republican platform of that year:

*Resolved*, That we are opposed to the new and dangerous doctrine advocated by the Democratic party, that the Federal constitution carries slavery into the public Territories, and that we believe slavery cannot exist anywhere in this Government, unless by positive local law, and that we will oppose its extension into the Territories of the Federal Government by all the power known to the constitution of the United States.

*Resolved*, That we are opposed to any interference with slavery where it exists under the sanction of State law, that the soil of every State should be protected from lawless invasion from every quarter, and that the citizens of every State should be secured from illegal arrests and search, as well as from mob violence.

*Resolved*, That we regard the preservation of the American Union as the highest object and duty of patriotism, and that it must and shall be preserved, and that all who advocate disunion are, and deserve the fate of, traitors.

Other questions formed issues between the parties, but the chief and most important by far, the overshadowing ones, were those growing out of the institution of slavery and the attitude of the South in respect to it, and also toward the Union. Threats of secession in case of the election of Mr. Lincoln were freely made, and the leaders in the violence which characterized the proceedings in the South, were more deeply in earnest than the people of the North generally supposed. The campaign was distinguished, besides the usual processions and speeches, by a Republican organization known as "Wide Awakes," which adopted a simple uniform, and were provided with torch lamps, fixed on poles, and thus added much to the interest of night meetings. Many of the companies of Wide-Awakes were drilled in the manner of handling their lamp sticks according to the manual of arms. In one year from that time many of the same persons were drilling with arms, preparatory to fighting the battles of the nation against a section of country which had wantonly risen in rebellion. The political pulse beat high in the Republican and Douglas wing of the Democratic party in this county; great political gatherings were frequent, and processions and enthusiasm filled up the days and the nights. At length the day of the October election came, and the Republicans were completely successful, the majorities on the various officers ranging from 679 to 892. But the great event was still to occur—the Presidential election in November. At this election there were four electoral tickets in the field, those headed by the candidates already named, and the Union party ticket, headed by John Bell and Edward Everett. Three thousand eight hundred and eighty votes were polled, Lincoln's majority over Douglas being 874.

No interest whatever was manifested in the election in 1861. The Democrats made no nominations. Only 584 votes were polled.

The election of 1862 was a more important one, and almost a full vote was polled. County and State officers were to be elected, except Governor and Lieutenant-Governor. The opposition to the Democracy assumed the name of Union party. During this year the Union arms had met with reverses, and a somewhat gloomy feeling pervaded the minds of the people. When the election came

each party stood firmly by its candidates, for the campaign had aroused party feeling intensely. Schuyler Colfax and David Turpie were the candidates for Congress. They were both fine speakers and made a thorough canvass of the district. The Republicans this year carried the county by majorities ranging from 222 to 469.

The year 1863 was an "off year," but in 1864 the campaign was one of much earnestness and feeling. Abraham Lincoln was the Republican candidate for re-election to the Presidency, and associated with him as candidate for Vice-President was Andrew Johnson, the distinguished Unionist of Tennessee. Oliver P. Morton, elected by the Republicans Lieutenant-Governor in 1860, had become Governor by the election of Henry S. Lane to the United States Senate, and was now the Republican candidate for the office which he had acceptably filled. George B. McClellan and George H. Pendleton were the Democratic candidates for President and Vice-President, and Joseph E. McDonald for Governor. Colfax and Turpie were again candidates of their respective parties for Congress. The Republicans were again successful, both in the October and November elections.

In 1866 the issues which divided parties arose from the work of reconstruction of the States lately in rebellion. The election was an important one, and party spirit once more ran high. Colfax and Turpie were for the third time pitted against each other by their respective parties as candidates for Congress, and they made a very thorough canvass of the district, part of the time in joint discussion. Colfax majority in this county was 850. The Republican county officers were all elected by majorities ranging from 766 to 805.

In 1867 only county officers were to be elected. The Democracy placed no ticket in the field and there was no interest felt in the result.

The year 1868 brought with it another Presidential campaign. The Republican National Convention met in Chicago and nominated Ulysses S. Grant, associating with him Schuyler Colfax, who had for so many years represented the ninth district in Congress. This necessitated the nomination of a man for Congress by that party in this district. The choice fell upon Jasper Packard, of La Porte county. The Democratic National Convention nominated Horatio Seymour and Francis P. Blair, Jr., for President and Vice-President, and the District Convention of that party nominated Melford K. Farrand as the candidate for Congress. Each party had in the field a full State ticket. Conrad Baker was the Republican candidate for Governor, and Thomas A. Hendricks the Democratic candidate. The campaign was one of great activity. Each party was well organized and both had great hopes of success. In the October election for State and county officers a total of 5,149 votes were polled, a large increase over any previous year. The Republicans were successful in this county, the least majority received by any candidate being 650, and the highest 709. In November Grant had a majority over Seymour of 826.

The next general election did not occur until 1870, when a full State ticket, except Governor and Lieutenant-Governor, candidates for Congress and for county officers were to be voted for. Jasper Packard was a candidate for Congress for re-election, and arrayed against him Samuel L. Anthony, Democrat. Thomas S. Stanfield, of South Bend, was the Republican candidate for Circuit Judge, and J. Bradley, the Democratic candidate. The Republican candidate for Representative was elected by a majority of 458 votes, the lowest number received, while the candidate for Sheriff had 1,105 majority, the highest.

In 1872, the movement known as the Liberal Republican had a large influence politically, having virtually dictated the Democratic nomination for the Presidency, and the platform of principles on which the campaign against the Republican party was conducted. The power of the Liberal Republicans was chiefly felt in the October election. At the November election, the defections among the Democrats were so numerous as to more than counterbalance the votes of the Liberal Republicans. The latter, in May, had nominated Horace Greeley and B. Gratz Brown as their candidates for President and Vice President, and when later, the Democracy met in National Convention, they adopted the nomination and platform of the Liberals. The Republicans re-nominated President Grant and associated with him Henry Wilson, of Massachusetts, as a candidate for Vice President. The disaffection among the Democracy was so great that a third ticket was nominated, at the head of which was Charles O'Connor, the distinguished lawyer of New York. This third ticket had very little strength in this county or the State, the disaffection among the Democrats taking the form, at the Presidential election, of refusing to vote at all. At the October election there were candidates for State and county officers, to be elected. The largest vote ever polled in this county was at this election, amounting to 6,091. The majority for the Republicans was materially reduced, ranging from 295 to 524. In November Grant carried the county by 1,023, out of a total vote of 5,849. Taking the candidate for Governor as showing the political strength of the two parties, the Republicans gained in November 131 votes, and the Democracy lost 373.

In 1873 a Prosecuting Attorney was to be elected, and George Ford, Democrat, was elected on local issues, or personal popularity.

The election in 1874 was for State and county officers, and the fight was between the Democratic and Republican parties. At the head of the State ticket were William Curry, Republican, and John E. Neff, Democrat, for Secretary of State. The candidates for Congress were William H. Calkins, Republican, and William S. Raymond, Democrat. The Democracy again made a gain of a large number of votes, taking the votes for State officers as a test of political strength, the Republicans only carrying the county from 55 to 144 majority. For county officers there was doubtless a great

deal of trading, as part of both tickets were elected by large majorities. Ford, Democrat, for Prosecuting Attorney, had a majority of 528; J. B. Greene, Republican, for Recorder, 701.

The next general election was for National, State and county officers. Rutherford B. Hayes and William A. Wheeler were the Republican candidates for President and Vice President, and Samuel J. Tilden and Thomas A. Hendricks received the nomination of the Democratic party for the same office. The vote of this county had increased in number about 1,200 in two years, there being in October 7,261 votes cast. Williams, Democrat, had a majority of three votes. This was the first time since 1852 in this county a Democratic candidate for Governor had received a majority of votes. For county officers, as in 1874, there were many split tickets, some of the candidates on each receiving a majority.

In 1878 there was a complete revolution in political affairs in this county, every candidate on the Democratic ticket receiving a large and overwhelming majority, with the exception of Surveyor. George Ford, for Prosecuting Attorney, had a majority of 960, and Dougherty, for Sheriff, 203.

Another Presidential campaign occurred in 1880, which was conducted with more zeal and energy than any since 1860. James A. Garfield was the Republican candidate for President, Winfield S. Hancock the Democratic, and James B. Weaver the Greenback. The State election occurred on the 12th of October, the canvass being opened in this county about the 20th of July and pushed with vigor by the Republicans and Democrats, the Greenbackers not making so strong an effort. The Republicans were uniformly successful, electing every man on their ticket.

The following is the official vote of every general election, records of which were accessible:

## ELECTION RETURNS.

*President—1832.*

Andrew Jackson, dem.....	121	
Henry Clay, whig.....	123	2

*President—1836.*

Martin Van Buren, dem....	
Wm. Henry Harrison, whig.	

*President—1840.*

Martin Van Buren, dem.....	444	
Wm. Henry Harrison, whig.	809	365

*President—1844.*

James K. Polk, dem.....	683	
Henry Clay, whig.....	863	180
James G. Birney, free soil..	33	

## ELECTION 1845.

*Governor.*

Joseph G. Marshall, whig...	755	53
James Whitcomb, dem.....	702	
—— Stevens, ab.....	76	

*Sheriff.*

John H. Harper, whig. ....	712	
Lot Day, Jr., dem.....	748	36
Wm. F. Bulla, ab.....	54	

*Probate Judge.*

Edward F. Dibble, whig....	925	670
John J. Deming, dem.....	245	

## ELECTION 1847.

*Congress.*

D. D. Pratt, whig.....	759	167
Charles W. Cathcart, dem...	592	
—— Stewart, ab.....	40	

*Representative.*

William Miller, whig.....	694	48
Norman Eddy, dem.....	646	
—— Harris, ab.....	42	

*Assessor.*

Stephen H. Judkins, whig..	706	110
John Rush, dem.....	596	
—— Green, ab.....	49	

<i>Treasurer.</i>					
Albert Monson, whig. ....	862	809			
Willis Bugbee, ab. ....	53				
<b>ELECTION 1848.</b>					
<i>President.</i>					
Zachary Taylor, whig. ....	817	150			
Lewis Cass, dem. ....	667				
Martin Van Buren, free soil.	332				
<i>Representative.</i>					
William Miller, whig. ....	834	32			
Abel A. Whitlock, dem. ....	752				
<i>Sheriff.</i>					
Eber Woolman, whig. ....	677				
Lot Day, Jr., dem. ....	952	275			
<i>Assessor.</i>					
S. I. H. Ireland, whig. ....	826	66			
Edmund Byrket, dem. ....	760				
<b>ELECTION 1849.</b>					
<i>Governor.</i>					
John A. Matson, whig. ....	908	141			
J. A. Wright, dem. ....	767				
James H. Cravens, free soil.	123				
<i>Lieutenant-Governor.</i>					
Thomas S Stanfield, whig. ....	1015	320			
James H. Lane, dem. ....	695				
J. W. Wright, free-soil. ....	68				
<i>Congress.</i>					
W. Wright, whig. ....	924	108			
Graham N. Fitch, dem. ....	816				
Norman Eddy, free-soil. ....	84				
<i>Representative.</i>					
Mark Whinery, whig. ....	972	157			
Lot Day, ....	815				
<b>ELECTION 1850.</b>					
<i>Representative.</i>					
John Reynolds, whig. ....	940	236			
Abner A. Whitlock, dem. ....	704				
—— Wilson, free soil. ....	73				
<i>Sheriff.</i>					
Nelson Ferris, whig. ....	828				
Ralph Staples, dem. ....	859	31			
William F. Bulla, free soil. ..	29				
<i>Auditor.</i>					
Aaron B. Ellsworth, whig. ..	871	37			
—— Wright, dem. ....	834				
<i>Treasurer.</i>					
Albert Monson, whig. ....	997	281			
—— Alden, dem. ....	716				
<i>Assessor.</i>					
Michael Hupp, whig. ....	853	45			
—— Eaton, dem. ....	808				
<b>ELECTION 1851.</b>					
<i>Congress.</i>					
Schuyler Colfax, whig. ....	1118	330			
Graham N. Fitch, dem. ....	788				
<i>Representative.</i>					
Thomas S. Stanfield, whig. ....	1033	186			
John Brownfield, dem. ....	847				
<i>Clerk.</i>					
John T. Lindsey, whig. ....	940				
Samuel Chord, dem. ....	954	14			
<i>Treasurer.</i>					
Robert B. Nicar, whig. ....	944	11			
Robert S. Alden, dem. ....	933				
<i>Recorder.</i>					
Thomas C. Hackney, whig. ..	861				
Lot Day, Jr., dem. ....	1039	168			
<i>County Commissioner.</i>					
Edwin Pickett, whig. ....	991	97			
John Green, dem. ....	894				
<b>ELECTION 1852.</b>					
<i>Governor.</i>					
Nicholas McCarty, whig. ....	928				
Joseph A. Wright, dem. ....	979	51			
John L. Robinson, free soil. ..	122				
<i>Congress.</i>					
Horace P. Biddle, whig. ....	953				
Norman Eddy, dem. ....	1053	100			
<i>Representative.</i>					
J. H. Service, whig. ....	1006	111			
David Stover, dem. ....	895				
<i>Sheriff.</i>					
Benjamin F. Miller, whig. ....	1022	23			
Ralph Staples, dem. ....	999				
<i>State Auditor.</i>					
Douglass Maguire, whig. ....	977				
John P. Dunn, dem. ....	979	2			
M. C. White, free soil. ....	78				
<i>President.</i>					
Franklin Pierce, dem. ....	1052	54			
Winfield Scott, whig. ....	998				
John P. Hale, free soil. ....	174				
<b>ELECTION 1853.</b>					
<i>County Commissioner.</i>					
John Hammond, whig. ....	486	194			
Elmer Rose, dem. ....	292				
William Bugbee, free soil. ....	59				
<i>Reporter of Supreme Court.</i>					
J. W. Gordon, whig. ....	443	71			
Albert G. Porter, dem. ....	372				
<b>ELECTION 1854.</b>					
<i>Secretary of State.</i>					
Erasmus B. Collins, people. ....	1469	567			
Nehemiah Hayden, dem. ....	902				
<i>Congress.</i>					
Schuyler Colfax, people. ....	1485	616			
Norman Eddy, dem. ....	869				
<i>Representative.</i>					
George C. Merrifield, people. ....	1454	575			
Reuben Pierce, dem. ....	879				

*Sheriff.*

Benjamin F. Miller, people...1481 593  
Barnett Byrket, dem... 888

*Treasurer.*

Robert B. Nicar, people....1492 625  
Henry Nunamaker, dem... 867

*Coroner.*

Aaron A. Webster, people...1463 569  
Allen Bassett, dem..... 894

*Surveyor.*

Thomas P. Bulla, people...1432 517  
John Hooper, dem..... 915

## ELECTION 1855.

*Clerk.*

Samuel M. Chord, dem.... 1312 303  
President Whitten rep.... 1009

*Recorder.*

Lot Day, Jr., dem..... 1306 292  
Elisha Sumption, rep.. .. 1014

*Auditor.*

Barnet Byrket, dem..... 819  
Aaron B. Ellsworth, rep... 1500 681

*Commissioner.*

John Druliner, dem ..... 1236 158  
John Grannis, rep.....1078

## ELECTION 1856.

*Governor.*

Oliver P. Morton, rep .....1789 329  
Ashbel P. Willard, dem....1460

*Congress.*

Schuyler Colfax, rep.....1816 382  
W. Z. Stuart, dem.....1434

*Representative.*

George C. Merrifield, rep...1740 266  
Albert G. Deavitt, dem....1474

*Sheriff.*

E. C. Johnson, rep.....1797 359  
John H. Dice, dem.....1438

*Treasurer.*

Solomon Miller, rep.....1813 387  
Joseph H. Massey, dem....1426

*Surveyor.*

M. W. Stokes, rep.....1804 372  
John Hooper, dem... ..1432

*President.*

James Buchanan, dem.....1509  
John C. Fremont, rep.....1812 303  
Millard Fillmore, Amer.... 6

## ELECTION 1857.

*County Commissioner.*

John Hammond, elected without opposition.

## ELECTION 1858.

*Secretary of State.*

William A. Pelle, rep .....2024 393  
Daniel McClure, dem.....1631

*Congress.*

Schuyler Colfax, rep.....2067 481  
John C. Walker, dem.....1586

*Representative.*

Thos. S. Stanfield, rep.. ..2055 467  
Samuel L. Cottrell, dem....1588

*Treasurer.*

Solomon Miller, rep.....1977 325  
Joseph H. Massey, dem....1652

*Sheriff.*

Evan C. Johnson, rep.....2054 471  
Henry C. Hartwick, dem....1583

*Coroner.*

A. H. Long, rep.....2023 395  
S. L. Rush, dem.....1628

## ELECTION 1859.

*Clerk.*

Elias V. Clark, rep.....1625 249  
William Mack, dem.....1376

*Recorder.*

Reese J. Chestnutwood, rep..1664 329  
John Groff, dem.....1335

*Auditor.*

Woolman J. Holloway, rep..1742 485  
Michael M. Shultz, dem....1257

*Commissioner.*

William F. Bulla, rep.....1657 341  
Harlow Dodge, dem.....1316

## ELECTION 1860.

*Governor.*

Henry S. Lane, rep.....2253 719  
Thomas A. Hendricks, dem..1534

*Congress.*

Schuyler Colfax, rep.....2300 818  
Charles W. Cathcart, dem...1482

*Sheriff.*

Nelson Ferris, rep.....2218 689  
John Treanor, dem.....1529

*Treasurer.*

John H. Harper, rep.....2326 892  
George Entzler, dem.....1434

*Representative.*

John A. Hendricks, rep....2265 755  
A. E. Drapier, dem.....1510

*Commissioner.*

Francis R. Tutt, rep.....2236 711  
John M. Studebaker, dem..1525

*Surveyor.*

M. W. Stokes, rep.....2247 723  
J. D. Barbour, dem.....1524



<i>Coroner.</i>					<i>Sheriff.</i>		
A. H. Long, rep.....	2220	679	Solomon W. Palmer, rep...	2711	766		
Allen Bassett, dem.....	1541		John Hay, dem.....	1945			
<i>President.</i>			<i>Treasurer.</i>				
Abraham Lincoln, rep....	2363	874	Ezekiel Greene, rep.....	2731	799		
Stephen A. Douglas, dem...	1489		Albert D. Jaquith, dem....	1932			
John C. Breckenridge, dem.	23		<i>Coroner.</i>				
John Bell, union.....	5		Andrew H. Long, rep.....	2733	805		
<b>ELECTION 1861.</b>			Charles C. Staples, dem....	1928			
<i>State Senator.</i>			<i>Representative.</i>				
John Reynolds, union rep..	563	542	Nelson Ferris, rep.....	2728	800		
Scattering .....	21		John Treanor, dem.....	1928			
<i>Commissioner.</i>			<i>Surveyor.</i>				
J. C. Williams, union rep...	563	546	William M. Whitten, rep...	2786	810		
Scattering.....	17		Matthias Stover, dem.....	1926			
<b>ELECTION 1862.</b>			<i>Commissioner</i>				
<i>Secretary of State.</i>			John C. Knoblock, rep.....	2731	806		
William A. Peelle, union....	1995	316	Robert Myler, dem.....	1925			
James S. Athon, dem.....	1679		<b>ELECTION 1867.</b>				
<i>Congress.</i>			<i>Auditor.</i>				
Schuyler Colfax, union....	2006	354	Alfred Wheeler, rep.....	905	861		
David Turpie, union.....	1652		Charles E. Drapier, dem....	36			
<i>Sheriff.</i>			<i>Clerk.</i>				
Nelson Ferris, union.....	2059	469	George W. Matthews.....	1014	946		
John Shank, dem.....	1590		Volney Bingham.....	68			
<i>Treasurer.</i>			<i>Recorder.</i>				
John H. Harper, union ...	2039	415	Alexander N. Thomas.....	868	804		
David Stover, dem.....	1624		John Mack.....	64			
<i>Representative.</i>			<i>Commissioner.</i>				
Andrew Anderson, union...	1935	222	Nathaniel Frame, rep.....	875	769		
Samuel M. Chord, dem....	1713		Wade, dem.....	106			
<i>Coroner.</i>			<b>ELECTION, 1868.</b>				
Andrew H. Long, union....	1982	307	<i>Governor.</i>				
John Treanor, dem.....	1675		Conrad Baker, rep.....	2920	691		
<b>ELECTION 1863.</b>			Thomas A. Hendricks, dem..	2229			
<i>Clerk.</i>			<i>Congress.</i>				
Elias V. Clark, union.....	2006	609	Jasper Packard, rep.....	2912	675		
Benjamin F. Dunn, dem....	1397		Milford K. Farrand, dem....	2237			
<i>Auditor.</i>			<i>Representative.</i>				
Woolman J. Holloway, union	2031	706	J. C. Williams, rep.....	2928	709		
Lot Day, Jr., dem.....	1325		John Rush, dem.....	2219			
<i>Recorder.</i>			<i>Sheriff.</i>				
Reese J. Chestnutwood, union	2024	649	George B. Glover, rep.....	2885	650		
Lewis Fink, dem.....	1375		Alexander Staples, dem....	2235			
<b>ELECTION 1864.</b>			<i>Treasurer.</i>				
<i>President.</i>			Hiram Miller, rep.....	2901	670		
Abraham Lincoln, rep....	2188	630	John Hooper, dem.....	2231			
George B. McClellan, dem..	1558		<i>Coroner.</i>				
<b>ELECTION 1866.</b>			Andrew H. Long, rep.....	2906	673		
<i>Congress.</i>			Stover, dem.....	2236			
Schuyler Colfax, rep....	2743	850	<i>Surveyor.</i>				
David Turpie, dem.....	1898		Milton V. Bulla, rep.....	2916	696		
			Matthias Stover, dem.....	2223			



*President.*

Ulysses S. Grant, rep. ....3075 826  
 Horatio Seymour, dem. ....2249

## ELECTION 1870.

*State Auditor.*

John D. Evans, rep. ....2721 760  
 John C. Shoemaker, dem. ....1961

*Congress.*

Jasper Packard, rep. ....2701 735  
 Samuel L. Anthony, dem. ....1966

*Judge Circuit Court.*

Thomas S. Stanfield, rep. ....2779 905  
 James Bradley, dem. ....1874

*State Senator.*

Lucius Hubbard, rep. ....2751 829  
 Jas. F. Van Valkenberg, dem. ....1922

*Representative.*

W. W. Butterworth, rep. ....2512 458  
 Aaron Jones, dem. ....2054

*Auditor.*

Alfred Wheeler, rep. ....2760 1010  
 Elias V. Clark, dem. ....1750

*Sheriff.*

George V. Glover, rep. ....2847 1105  
 Evan C. Johnson, dem. ....1742

*Treasurer.*

Hiram Miller, rep. ....2851 1092  
 John Ham, dem. ....1759

*Recorder.*

Alexander N. Thomas, rep. ....2753 862  
 John Hay, dem. ....1891

## ELECTION 1872.

*Governor.*

Thomas M. Browne, rep. ....3295 499  
 Thomas A. Hendricks, dem. ....2796

*Secretary of State.*

William W. Curry, rep. ....3284 483  
 Owen M. Eddy, dem. ....2801

*Congress.*

Jasper Packard, rep. ....3279 477  
 John A. Henricks, dem. ....2802

*Representative.*

William W. Butterworth, rep. ....3178 336  
 O. H. Brusie, dem. ....2842

*Sheriff.*

Joseph Turnock, rep. ....3224 396  
 Charles H. Hilton, dem. ....2828

*Treasurer.*

David B. Creviston, rep. ....3177 295  
 Eli Wade, dem. ....2882

*Coroner.*

Andrew H. Long, rep. ....3302 537  
 J. S. Sack dem. ....2765

*Surveyor.*

William M. Whitten, rep. ....3305 524  
 John Hooper, dem. ....2781

*President.*

U. S. Grant, rep. ....3426 1023  
 Horace Greeley, lib. ....2403  
 Charles O'Connor, dem. .... 20

## ELECTION 1874.

*Secretary of State.*

William W. Curry, rep. ....2951  
 John E. Neff, dem. ....3095 144

*Congress.*

William H. Calkins, rep. ....2990  
 ———— Haymond, dem. ....3045 55

*Prosecuting Attorney.*

James A. Crawley, rep. ....2756  
 George H. Ford, dem. ....3284 538

*Representative.*

Hiram E. Jackson, rep. ....2825  
 David R. Leeper, dem. ....3204 379

*Clerk.*

A. N. Deacon, rep. ....2878  
 Edwin Nicar, dem. ....3116 238

*Sheriff.*

Joseph Turnock, rep. ....3186 345  
 George H. Stover, dem. ....2841

*Auditor.*

Alfred Hall, rep. ....2819  
 William E. Smith, dem. ....3205 386

*Treasurer.*

David V. Creviston, rep. ....3137 275  
 Aaron N. Miller, dem. ....2862

*Recorder.*

J. B. Greene, rep. ....2556  
 John Groff, dem. ....3357 701

*Coroner.*

Andrew H. Long, rep. ....2839  
 Daniel Dayton, dem. ....3151 312

*Surveyor.*

William M. Whitten, rep. ....2909  
 Andrew J. Stace, dem. ....3125 216

## ELECTION 1876.

*President.*

Rutherford B. Hayes, rep. ....3540 72  
 Samuel J. Tilden, dem. ....3468

*Governor.*

Benjamin H. Harrison, rep. ....3521  
 James D. Williams, dem. ....3524 3

*Congress.*

William H. Calkins, rep. ....3543 9  
 ———— Haymond, dem. ....3534

*Sheriff.*

Robert Hardy, rep. ....3561 58  
 John H. Quigg, dem. ....3502

<i>Treasurer.</i>			<i>Auditor.</i>		
C. Henry Sheerer, rep.....	3657	78	David F. Spain, rep.....	2806	
John N. Lederer, dem.....	3479		William D. Smith, dem.....	3537	731
<i>Representative.</i>			Harlow Dodge, gr.....	417	
David R. Leeper, dem.....	3586	92	<i>Treasurer.</i>		
William H. Deacon, rep.....	3494		C. Henry Sheerer, rep.....	3041	
<i>Surveyor.</i>			John Hay, dem.....	3256	215
A. J. Stace, dem.....	3748	235	John F. Ullery, gr.....	483	
William M. Whitten, rep.....	3513		<i>Recorder.</i>		
<i>Coroner.</i>			J. Ham Greene, rep.....	2927	
Israel Underwood, rep.....	3570	106	Harrison G. Bemer, dem.....	3347	420
Daniel Dayton, dem.....	3464		Charles W. Moon, gr.....	472	
<b>ELECTION 1878.</b>			<i>Coroner.</i>		
<i>Secretary of State.</i>			Israel Underwood, rep.....	2817	
Isaac S. Moore, rep.....	2913		John C. Miller, dem.....	3355	538
John G. Shanklin, dem.....	3358	445	William Flory, gr.....	621	
—James, greenback ....	523		<i>Surveyor.</i>		
<i>Congress.</i>			A. J. Stace, dem.....	3324	17
W. H. Calkins, rep.....	2995		W. M. Whitten, rep.....	3307	
Morgan H. Weir, dem .....	3271	276	<b>ELECTION 1880.</b>		
John N. Skinner, gr.....	521		<i>Governor.</i>		
<i>Prosecuting Attorney.</i>			Albert G. Porter, rep.....	4031	210
G. H. Ford, dem.....	3679	960	Franklin Landers, dem.....	3821	
Elias M. Lowe, rep.....	2719		<i>Congress.</i>		
<i>Representative.</i>			William H. Calkins, rep.....	4117	343
Thomas S. Stanfield, rep....	2900		Daniel McDonald, dem.....	3774	
Henry Ginz, dem.....	3314	414	<i>Treasurer.</i>		
Israel C. Sweet, gr.....	573		Frederick Langs, rep.....	4014	171
<i>Clerk.</i>			John Hay, dem.....	3843	
Edwin Nicar, rep.....	2962		<i>Surveyor.</i>		
Timothy E. Howard, dem....	3326	364	William M. Whitten, rep....	4378	561
Edwin Curtis, gr.....	443		A. J. Stace, dem.....	387	
<i>Sheriff.</i>					
Robert Hardy, rep.....	3047				
James Dougherty, dem.....	3250	203			
Jeremiah Hildebrand, gr....	509				

## CHAPTER XIII.

AGRICULTURE IN ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.—AGRICULTURAL SOCIETIES.—  
RATE OF TAXATION AND TAXABLE VALUATION OF REAL AND PERSONAL PROPERTY FOR 1879-'80.—AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS OF 1880.—COUNTY EXPENDITURES.—OFFICIAL CENSUS.—AGED PERSONS.

### AGRICULTURE IN ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

St. Joseph county boasts, and truthfully too, of being one of the best agricultural counties in the State, and not only in the State, but in the entire Union. In the fifty years of its organized existence, there has not been a total failure of crops, and but one total failure of the wheat crop. In 1835, in the early part of June, when wheat was in full bloom, there came a heavy frost which totally destroyed the crop. All products of the earth that can be raised in this latitude thrive in St. Joseph county and the industrious farmer can each year make his calculations as to the amount of products he will raise. In 1879 there were threshed 841,037 bushels of wheat, 143,791 bushels of oats, and 829,554 bushels of corn.

### AGRICULTURAL SOCIETIES.

The value of a public display of the products of the county and the encouragement that should be offered to those engaged in agricultural and mechanical pursuits, were realized by the early settlers of this county. Agreeably to an act passed by the State Legislature, Feb. 19, 1838, a notice was published in the *South Bend Free Press* for three consecutive weeks for a public meeting to be held in the town of South Bend for the purpose of organizing an Agricultural and Mechanical Society. This meeting was held June 12, 1841, and there were present George Sumption, David Hoover, Israel DeCamp, Charles Sumption, Matthew B. Hammond, William S. Vail, Aaron M. Parker, Sr., John J. Deming, Evan Chalfant, Samuel Brooks, James Stuckey, Charles W. Pomeroy, Francis R. Tutt, T. P. Bulla, Tyra W. Bray, Hiram Doolittle, William Milliken, Samuel Witter, Thomas D. Baird, Charles M. Tutt, William H. Patteson, E. S. Sheffield, Joel Garst, Albert Monson, William Cosgrove, Samuel C. Sample, Elisha Egbert and John Gilmore. Of these there are still living William Cosgrove, F. R. Tutt, T. P. Bulla, William S. Vail, Joel Garst, William Milliken, Samuel Witter and William H. Patteson.

The meeting was opened by electing Samuel C. Sample President and F. R. Tutt Secretary. All those whose names are recorded above voted to incorporate under the State law, and taxed themselves one dollar each per year. They then proceeded to the elec-

tion of permanent officers of the society with the following result: John J. Deming, President; Thomas D. Baird, Vice President; Tyra W. Bray, Secretary, F. R. Tutt, Treasurer. T. P. Bulla, George Sumption, Hiran Doolittle, M. B. Hammond, Jonathan A. Liston, Samuel Brooks and Israel DeCamp were elected Directors for the year. Judge Deming was appointed to deliver an address at the autumnal meeting. The premium list for that year contained but twenty-three articles for which premiums were offered. Among these were premiums for the best ten yards of jeans; best ten yards of flannel; best ten yards linen; best sample of sewing silk; best cheese, not less than ten pounds; best specimen of beet sugar, not less than ten pounds; best half acre of ruta-bagas; best five acres of tame grass; and best cultivated farm of not less than thirty acres.

This society did not have but one annual exhibition, the county at that time being too thinly settled, and money too scarce to make such an institution profitable. The fair was held upon the second Monday in October, 1841.

A number of citizens friendly to the re-organization of the society met at the court-house on Saturday, April 19, 1851, when George C. Merrifield was elected Chairman, and Schuyler Colfax, Secretary. A constitution, framed in conformity with a legislative enactment upon the subject of agricultural societies, was reported by Schuyler Colfax, from a committee on that subject, and adopted. The meeting selected the following named officers: Powers Greene, President; R. Dunn and G. Towle, Vice-Presidents; Schuyler Colfax and George C. Merrifield, Secretaries; William Miller, Treasurer. George C. Merrifield was requested to deliver an address at the next meeting.

On the 17th of May the society met agreeable to adjournment. Mr. Merrifield delivered an address on the subject of agriculture, horticulture and floriculture. At this meeting the number of members were reported to be one hundred and thirty-two. J. L. Jernegan was selected a delegate to attend a meeting of the State Board of Agriculture.

On the 14th of June Mr. Jernegan made a verbal report to the society of the proceedings of the State Board. The Society then entered upon a conversational discussion of the best mode of cultivating corn, which was participated in by M. B. Hammond, William Miller, J. D. Robertson, A. E. Drapier, Thomas P. Bulla and others. A list of premiums was adopted to be awarded at the time of holding the annual fair.

On the 28th of June another meeting of the society was held, the subject of conversation being "Insects injurious to trees." An order of the society, adopted at this meeting, inviting Ariel E. Drapier to deliver an address on the interests of agriculture was fulfilled on the 16th of August.

On the 30th of August another election of officers was held with the following result: Powers Greene, President; John J. Deming,

Vice President; John M. Veasey, Secretary; William Miller, Treasurer. A director from each township was chosen, as follows: Olive, A. A. Whitlock; Warren, Reynolds Dunn; German, Samuel Witter; Greene, M. B. Hammond; Portage, Elmer Rose; Penn, George C. Merrifield; Centre, Alexander Foote; Clay, Thomas P. Bulla; Union, Edwin Pickets.

In order to work up a membership for the society, a committee of three was appointed in each township to solicit, and Elmer Rose, Daniel Hatch, M. Rupp and John Ham for the county at large. The township committees were:

Olive—Lot Vail, John Reynolds and J. Druliner.  
 Warren—R. Dunn, W. W. Brick and Isaac Frame.  
 German—S. Witter, William Miller and James Good.  
 Clay—E. Chalfant, S. R. Jennings and William F. Bulla.  
 Harris—E. M. Irvin, John Metzger and R. Kennedy.  
 Penn—G. Towle, J. J. Deming and H. Doolittle.  
 Portage—Schuyler Colfax, Lester Webster and Collins Adams.  
 Centre—N. Rose, J. Farneman and Alexis Foote.  
 Greene—D. Barrett, J. Rudduck and T. L. Holloway.  
 Union—A. Mills, H. Henderson and W. H. Robinson.  
 Liberty—S. G. Williams, J. Cole and John Rupel.  
 Madison—T. Longley, P. Bennett and J. Stuart.

At a meeting of the president and directors, Sept. 6, 1851, it was resolved that the first annual fair of this society be held in South Bend, on Thursday, the 16th day of October, 1851.

This very creditable exhibition was accordingly held in the court-house yard on that day. The following is an exhibit of business done: receipts, \$185.00; expenses, \$116.08; balance in treasury, \$68.92.

Jan. 3, 1852, a meeting of the society was held for general business. The following named are the officers elected for this year: Powers Greene, President; John J. Deming, Vice President; J. M. Veasey, Secretary; William Miller, Treasurer. One Director from each township, as follows: Penn, G. C. Merrifield; Portage, E. F. Dibble; Clay, Thomas P. Bulla; German, Samuel Witter; Centre, Alexis Foote; Union, E. Pickett; Greene, J. D. Robertson; Warren, Orson Marble; Olive, Lot Vail; Liberty, Franklin Pearce; Harris, E. Irvin; Madison, Philo Bennett.

At this meeting an order was adopted appropriating five dollars per year as salary for the secretary.

On the 5th of June it was decided to hold the fair for that year at Mishawaka, and a list of premiums was made out and ordered published.

The fair for the second year of the society was therefore held in Mishawaka, the good citizens of that place paying all the expenses thereof. The annual address was delivered by John B. Niles, of La Porte.

No account of the current receipts and expenditures of the society appears on the records for the years 1852, 1853 and 1854. The secretary was allowed ten dollars for his services for the year

1852. The Mishawaka Fair was a very satisfactory exhibition for that day, and the members of the society were well pleased with their efforts.

On the 8th of January, 1853, the annual election of officers of the society was held. John J. Deming was elected President; E. F. Dibble, Secretary; Thomas P. Bulla, Treasurer. Directors: S. C. Sample, Portage; William Miller, German; Reynolds Dunn, Warren; Harmel Reid, Olive; Franklin Pearce, Liberty; J. D. Robertson, Greene; William Robertson, Union; William Clugston, Madison; Evan Chalfant, Clay; Elias Smith, Penn; Alexis Foote, Centre; E. M. Irvin, Harris.

On the 16th of July, the list of premiums for 1853 was adopted, and it was agreed to hold the fair this year at South Bend.

The third annual fair was held at South Bend on the 4th and 5th days of October, 1853. Two acres of land on Washington street, three blocks west of the court-house, were leased and fitted up for that purpose. The same land afterward became the property of the society. The South Bend *Forum*, published at the time of the fair, had the following comment upon it:

"Those who can remember and compare things, affirm that this exhibition was inferior to that of last year at Mishawaka, in all respects, except the stock and pomological departments."

The amount distributed in premiums at this fair was \$198.50.

On the 7th of January the society held its annual meeting for the election of officers. J. D. Robertson was chosen President; E. F. Dibble, Secretary; John T. Lindsey, Treasurer.

Directors—Elmer Rose, Aaron Miller, John Druliner, Samuel Loring, Daniel Green, Christopher Hellinger, Thomas P. Bulla, Elias Smith, Alexis Foote, E. M. Irvin.

Executive Committee—John M. Veasey, Daniel Matthews, John H. Harper.

The society this year paid out in premiums \$228.50, awarded at the fair held on the 19th and 20th of October. A vote of thanks was tendered Mr. Dibble for the efficient manner in which he discharged the duties of secretary. E. Burke Fisher for a time was secretary *pro tem.* during this year, and by his suggestion a plan of voluntary donations was adopted of money to the society's treasury, which afforded material aid in time of need, and so its officers were enabled to report a steady annual increase of entries and specimens.

The society met Jan. 5, 1855, and elected the following officers: Elmer Rose, President; William G. George, Secretary (before the year expired Mr. George resigned and R. Burroughs was selected to fill the vacancy; Mr. Burroughs likewise resigning, Dwight Deming was chosen); D. Matthews, Treasurer. Directors—Minor T. Graham, E. M. Irvin, W. F. Bulla, M. W. Miller, M. Tibbitt, Thomas M. Holloway, Benjamin Rupel, Lot Vail, Stephen Fields, Alexis Foote, Squire Rush, Joel Garst. Executive Committee—W. G. Whitman, B. F. Price, T. S. Cowles.

This year was inaugurated the plan of connecting agricultural books with the premiums and diplomas. The number of articles entered for premiums was largely increased, amounting to 402. The total receipts was also largely increased, amounting to \$470.51, including memberships. Of this amount \$196.68 was paid out for premiums. Other expenses this year were in excess of any previous year, the register of orders paid, including premiums, was \$580.93, leaving a balance of only \$5.43. Elmer Rose was sent as a delegate from the society to the meeting of the State Board of Agriculture.

The sixth annual election for officers of the society was held Jan. 5, 1856. The following officers were elected: John H. Harper, President; Dwight Deming, Secretary; Daniel Matthews, Treasurer. Directors—E. Rose, H. Myers, D. D. Jewell, John H. Kingery, Frank Kinney, T. L. Holloway, Alexis Foote, Thomas R. Tutt, Samuel Witter, M. Hupp.

Samuel Witter, Thomas L. Holloway, William F. Bulla, under appointment of the society, submitted at this meeting the list of premiums for the year, which were awarded at the close of a very brilliant fair held the 7th, 8th and 9th of October. The pay of officers is recorded this year as follows: E. Rose, delegate to State Board, \$25; D. Deming, Secretary, \$25; D. Matthews, Treasurer, two years, \$30; N. T. Townsend, of the Ohio Agricultural College, Cleveland, for annual address, \$15. The amount paid the secretary and treasurer was that fixed for annual compensation. The total receipts this year were \$675.62; expenditures, \$655.15; leaving a balance in the treasury of \$20.53.

On the 6th day of January, the seventh annual election of the officers of the society was held, resulting as follows: Samuel Witter, President; John M. Veasey, Secretary; Daniel Matthews, Treasurer. Directors—H. Doolittle, George Milburn, Jacob Snyder, Joseph Miller, Jacob Shimp, T. L. Holloway, Isaiah Roseberry, Peter Stambaugh, John Metzger, Samuel R. Jennings, Powers Greene, W. H. Robertson.

Delegate to the State Board of Agriculture—John H. Robertson.

The treasurer's report this year gives the total receipts \$889.27; expenditures, \$654.59; balance in the treasury and subject to draft, \$344.68.

#### THIRD ORGANIZATION.

The society this year was reorganized, and lots number 19, 20, 21, 25 and 26, in the State Bank's first addition to the town of South Bend, were purchased and improved for a third organization under a new constitution, conformably to the amended statute for the encouragement of agriculture, approved Feb. 17, 1852, and the regulations of the State Board of Agriculture.

March 15, 1858, at a special meeting of the society held for that purpose, on motion of Elmer Rose it was resolved unanimously to reorganize the body and to adopt a constitution.

Under the new constitution the following were elected officers: John Druliner, President; William F. Bulla, Vice-President; William Miller, Treasurer; Milton W. Stokes, Secretary. Directors—Elmer Rose, G. C. Merrifield, Jacob Snyder, John Kingery, Jacob Rush, Jeremiah White, John Smith, P. S. Stambaugh, E. M. Irvin, Thomas R. Tutt, John F. Ullery and John Moore.

Subsequently, under formal and appropriate legal orders of the society, the old grounds were abandoned and sold, and new grounds purchased as already stated. The new fair grounds embraced seven and one-half acres, all within the corporate limits of South Bend. The whole was enclosed by a tight board fence, seven feet high. In the inclosure, the native trees were all left standing. An office building, 16x20 feet, was erected on the eastern extremity of the grounds; and on either side were gate-ways for the ingress or egress of persons on foot. Near the center of the ground was a building erected for a floral hall, 24x48 feet, enclosed; two large folding doors at each end, and four windows on each side.

The eighth annual exhibition was held in the new grounds September 28, 29 and 30, 1858, and was well attended.

The ninth exhibition was held three days of the last week in September, 1859. Bad weather interfered with the success, but there was a fine display of articles, and a very large attendance.

The society now seemed to be in a flourishing condition, and for several years it was quite prosperous, but misfortune finally overtook it, and suspension followed. The last annual fair was held September 16-20, 1872. The next year, in connection with the Northern Indiana Fair, an exhibition was held, since which time it has not had an organized existence.

#### AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY FOR 1880.

	Wheat.	Corn.	Oats.	Orchards.	Potatoes.	Grass.	Pro- ducts.
Olive .....	4878	1466	988	276	64	3887	115
Warren .....	3078	1617	301	238	112	3322	284
German .....	9409	1910	328	264	46	3008	295
Clay .....	2926	1509	319	265	126	2296	178
Harris .....	2490	1386	361	202	100	3329	162
Penn. ....	6777	3945	1570	786	254	5028	481
Portage .....	1893	1012	296	184	64	2244	216
Centre .....	2064	1220	364	230	46	1320	78
Greene .....	3406	1904	389	303	35	1807	35
Union .....	3839	2449	1205	407	183	1779	183
Liberty .....	4406	2814	1097	444	68	3522	110
Madison .....	3545	8778	1318	520	168	1546	175
Lincoln .....	2327	1205	277	159	80	1948	155
T. of New Carlisle							
T. of Mishawaka	3011	315	117	28	7	509	13
T. of Walkerton.	118	66		8	2	36	2
City of So. Bend.	190	45		7	1	89	1



**RATE OF TAXATION AND TAXABLE VALUATION OF REAL AND PERSONAL PROPERTY  
FOR 1879 AND 1880.**

Township, City or Town.	Rate Tax per \$100.	Real Estate		Personal Property		Taxable Polls.	
		1879	1880	1879	1880	1879	1880
Olive Township.....	1 04	778,630	814,850	249,920	250,320	204	218
Warren " .....	1 05	388,925	448,600	113,445	116,890	146	142
German " .....	1 06	44 2,680	458,465	119,100	158,245	117	128
Clay " .....	95	33 0,155	427,710	76,865	89,680	149	136
Harris " .....	83	29 7,480	318,920	80,010	88,440	81	84
Penn " .....	1 00	19 3,690	1,302,190	265,230	254,950	414	364
Portag " .....	86	56 1,560	601,890	92,600	111,630	118	105
Centre " .....	1 00	39 1,390	409,100	111,180	135,340	155	138
Greene " .....	1 07	39 7,570	402,850	158,770	157,080	180	150
Union " .....	1 04	46 7,635	555,310	153,565	180,660	358	294
Liberty " .....	1 04	44 5,615	417,835	137,775	159,875	371	379
Madison " .....	1 14	41 8,865	452,090	101,015	131,810	285	297
Lincoln " .....	1 35	17 5,710	249,940	48,840	55,460	125	117
New Carlisle.....	2 02	7 0,235	80,580	50,075	57,900	98	105
Mishawaka.....	1 4	64 5,765	525,415	246,735	254,515	374	387
Walkerton.....	1 66	6 9 400	88,000	51,610	59,720	130	131
South Bend*.....	61	3,15 725	2,180,960	721,554	1,822,700	2077	1944
Total		\$10,267,030	\$10,734,705	\$3,777,930	\$4,085,215	5382	5119

\*Special school levy and taxation for city purposes not included.

**COUNTY EXPENDITURES FOR THE YEAR ENDING MAY 31, 1880.**

Amount paid County Officers except County Superintendent.....	\$5041.82
" " Grand and Petit Jurors, bailiffs, and all Court allowances.....	2584.68
" " on account of Coroner's Inquests.....	167.95
" " on account of enumeration, appraising, assessing, etc....	1787.25
" " on account of roads, viewing, surveying and bridges.....	2717.61
" " on account of County Superintendents and Institutes.....	1292.76
" " on account of prisoners and criminals.....	798.20
" " (total) on account of poor, not including investments in poor farms or buildings or repair of same.....	9041.63
" " on account of benevolent or reformatory institutions.....	986.71
" " on account of repairs of public buildings and care of same	1243.52
" " on account of interest on County bonds.....	240.00
" " on account of books, stationery, printing and advertising..	1261.71
" " on account of redemption of County Bonds, proper.....	3000.00
" " on account of Commissioners' Court.....	439.20
" " on account of bounty on wolf and fox scalps.....	42.00
" " on account of County Asylum (poor-house farm).....	2893.37
" " on account of insane paupers.....	939.87
" " on account of fuel and lights.....	748.38
" " on account of ditches.....	9.00
" " on account of elections .....	45.89
Total.....	\$35,239.55

## OFFICIAL CENSUS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

TOWNSHIPS.	Popu'n in 1870.	Popu'n in 1880.	Gain in 10 years.	Loss in 10 years.	No. of Farms.
Olive.....	1560	1901	341		157
German.....	551	579	28		129
Clay.....	1442	1476	34		107
Harris.....	408	450	42		74
Mishawaka.....	2617	2640	23		
Penn.....	2365	2321		44	369
Portage.....	777	770		7	105
South Bend, 1st Ward.....	1363	2197	834		
“ 2d Ward.....	1743	3286	1543		
“ 3d Ward.....	2679	3236	557		
“ 4th Ward.....	1421	2280	859		
“ 5th Ward.....		2393	2393		
Warren.....	760	777	17		129
Greene.....	964	1000	36		161
Centre.....	717	768	51		130
Madison.....	1697	1906	209		330
Union.....	1801	2015	214		310
Liberty.....	1394	1939	545		264
Lincoln.....	1063	1389	326		158
	25322	33323	8052	51	2423

The net gain in the county in ten years was 8,001. The largest gain anywhere in the county was in the Third and Fifth wards. In 1870 these two wards constituted the Third ward, and the population was 2,679. The population now in the same territory is 5,629—an increase of 2,950, or more than 110 per cent.

The deaths in the county from May 31, 1879, to June 1, 1880, were 400, divided as follows: Olive township, 17; Clay, 16; Mishawaka and Penn townships, 84; Portage township and First ward of South Bend, 30; Third and Fifth wards, 93; Second and Fourth wards, 54; Warren, 3; Greene, 6; Centre, 8; Madison, 17; Union, 31; Liberty, 24, and Lincoln, 17.

## AGED PERSONS IN THE COUNTY.

The following list of persons over 75 is compiled from the census report as furnished by the different enumerators, now on file in the clerk's office at South Bend:

In the 1st ward of South Bend and Portage township E. W. Hoover reports 17 persons above 75 years. They are: John Boyes, 79; Madore Cratee, 77; Charity Cobb, 79; Sophia Coquillard, 76; Elizabeth Cleveland, 88; Dolly Caldwell, 86; John Degraff, 85; Benjamin Eckler, 76; Susannah Elbel, 80; Elizabeth Embick, 80; Jacob Hardman, 76; Henry Holtz, 83; John Kleindinst, Sr., 77; Lovina R. Pfleger, 79; Andrew Sherburg, 70; Rebecca Studebaker, 78; Lena Schidler, 79; L. Hain, 82; C. M. Heaton, 75; Thos. Fifield, 78; Mrs. Mary Kent, 76.

In the 2d and 4th wards Major Witherill reports 15, as follows: Joseph Bradt, 79; Frank Baner, Sr., 78; James G. Bentley, 86; Catharine Emerick, 83; Sarah Kindig, 84; Joseph Megler, 80; Jacob Miller, 85; Wm. G. Norris, 77; Samuel Perry, 78; Frances Perro, 75; Dr. S. Raff, 76; Thos. Rockhill, 79; Mary Shuman, 76; Eveline Tilden, 80; Christine Yeada, 77; Dr. Ham, 80; J. B. Arnold, 79.

In the 3d and 5th wards John M. Deffenbaugh reports 26 as follows: Adam Bernhard, 75; Catharine Bernhard 75; Agnes Butchcoski, 90; Barbara Fritzer, 76; Susannah Goodwin, 78; Hester Good, 79; Rosa Hantz, 80; James Huey, 75; Sarah Hall, 80; Anna Hack, 76; Henrietta Judia, 75; Joseph Keasey, 86; Max Konzen, 76; Elizabeth Konzen, 76; Martin Lasetski, Sr., 78; Charles Loring, 79; Catharine Ordt, 79; John D. Robinson, 89; Henry Slusser, 82; Ann B. Sample, 79; Doretta Schauhs, 80; Ephraim Trueblood, 79; Margaret Trueblood, 76; Samuel Waldorf, Sr., 77; Nancy A. Whitlock, 76; Charles Morgan, 80; T. J. Seixas, 77. Oldest man in the city, Judge Robertson; oldest lady, Mrs. Butchcoski; both in the 3d ward.

Union township, 17, reported by P. P. Ducomb: Ruth Brock, 78; Nathan Corderay, 80; Martha Corderay, 75; Sophia Conrad, 78; Christine Dowell, 77; Thomas Hughes, 80; Jane James, 80; Mary Knepp, 79; Nancy Kern, 80; Matilda Manuel, 79; Simon Paulus, 76; Joseph Penrod, 78; Jane Palmer, 75; Catharine Rupert, 76; Aaron Reynolds, 82; Elizabeth Reynolds, 80; Charles Smith, 83. Oldest gentleman, Charles Smith; oldest ladies, Mrs. Reynolds, Mrs. James and Mrs. Kern.

Madison township, 10, reported by John Wier: Andona Antenberg, 88; Sophia Cinsmer, 80; Isaac Culp, 76; John Docklook, 86; Jacob Getz, 84; Christian Heminger, 75; Philip Kline, 78; Balser Manges, 77; Mary Markes, 77; Thomas Fifield, 78. Oldest gentleman, Mr. Antenberg; oldest lady, Mrs. Cinsmer.

Liberty township, by J. C. Miller, 13, as follows: Samuel Betz, 79; Jacob Hildebrand, 83; Hannah Hildebrand, 77; Greenberry King, 79; Elizabeth Leitner, 75; Elizabeth Reinehart, 83; Anna Rupe, 78; Conrad Swank, 75; Dorcas Swank, 79; Mary Smick, 86; Samuel Williams, 77; Charles Williams, 79; Eleanor Williams, 76. Oldest gentleman, Jacob Hildebrand; oldest lady, Mary Smick.

Olive township, 23, reported by James Curry: Joseph Adams, 76; Nancy Adams, 77; Samuel Bates, 79; James Caterlin, 75; Jane Davis, 77; Barzella Drollinger, 79; Nancy Drollinger, 77; Isaac Faurote, 75; Mahala Faurote, 78; Mary Flannigan, 75; Margaret Frisby, 80; John Fredinberger, 75; Anna Goolbeck, 84; Christian Herpolshimer, 75; Anna Herpolshimer, 77; Maggie Harmon, 80; Andrew Kush, 90; Anna Kush, 80; Elizabeth Lane, 79; Nancy Nango, 90; John Nauok, 86; Benjamin Nickerson, 84; Gabriel Reed, 79. Oldest gentleman, Andrew Kush; oldest lady, Nancy Naugo.

Clay township, Mr. Molloy, enumerator; 8, as follows: Michael McRedmond, 76; Lewis Neyron, 86; John Pecan, 80; Harriet Redmond, 80; John Stutesman, 75; Eliza Stutesman, 75; Elizabeth Ullery, 76; H. C. Webster, 76. Oldest gentleman, Dr. Neyron of Notre Dame; oldest lady, Mrs. Redmond.

Penn township, including Mishawaka, 36, reported by Messrs. Judkins and Sumption: Harriet Beart, 78; Elizabeth Boltinghorn, 77; Moses Bascom, 83; Mary Crooks, 78; Mary Carreus, 78; Henry Delcamp, 80; Elizabeth Eberhart, 80; Julia Edwards, 76; Stephen Griffins, 84; David Griggs, 90; Ruth Griggs, 75; Abbie Halburd, 75; Sabrina Ham, 76; Sophia Hallenbeck, 75; Christian Hopricks, 84; George Jacobs, Sr. 90; Esther R. Kerr, 80; Andrew H. Long, 86; Mary Maut, 75; Elizabeth Matthews, 77; Margaret Ossia, 85; Alphona Pecher, 85; Hannah R. Pettit, 77; Mary A. Smith, 78; Sally Smith, 81; Hannah Faurell, 79; Ryan Van Pelt, 79; Lavina Doolittle 79; Polly Jones, 77; Mathias Klein, 87; Alvina Moon, 75; Mary Ocker, 79; Mary Pegg, 85; Nancy Patterson, 76; Israel Schmid, 80; Louisa Zager, 75; Gilman Towle, 76. Oldest gentlemen, David Griggs, and George Jacobs, Sr.; oldest ladies, Margaret Ossia and Mary Pegg.

Lincoln, W. J. Wolfe, enumerator, 5, as follows: Win. Bender, 76; Polly Haymaker, 83; Andrew T. Mitchell, 76; Truman Rose, 77; Ruth Wilcox, 77. Oldest gentleman, Truman Rose; oldest lady, Polly Haymaker.

Greene, James Carskaddon, enumerator, 7, as follows: Christina Haukey, 82; Elizabeth Jones, 81; Jacob Myers, 78; John Rupel, 82; Elizabeth Rambo, 85; Christina Swygert, 75; John Seward, 82. Oldest gentlemen, Messrs. Rupel and Seward; oldest lady, Mrs. Haukey.

Centre, Schnyler C. Carskaddon, enumerator, 3, as follows: Elizabeth Henson, 75; Susan Price, 77; Sophia Schaffer, 78. Oldest lady, Sophia Schaffer; no gentleman over 75 years.

Warren, Ashbury Lindley, enumerator, 3, as follows: Martin Nailin, 75; Elizabeth Reprogle, 75; Rustin Wright, 78. Oldest gentleman, R. Wright; oldest lady, Elizabeth Reprogle.

German, J. G. Keltner, enumerator, 6, as follows: Julia Chamberlain, 80; Mary House, 78; Samuel R. Keltner, 84; Mary Shade, 76; Abraham Smith, 77; Margaret Zigler, 75. Oldest gentleman, S. R. Keltner; oldest lady, Julia Chamberlain.

Harris, A. D. Manning, enumerator, reports 8, as follows: Geo. Young, 82; Catharine Young, 78; William Snyder, 83; John Rohrer, 78; John Kerfus, 75; Michael Griffith, 80; Arbagast Zaehnlé, 79; Horace Bonney, 78. Oldest gentleman, Wm. Snyder; oldest lady, Mrs. Young.

The oldest men in the county are David Griggs and George Jacobs, of Penn, and Andrew Kush, of Olive, each aged 90. The oldest women are Mrs. Butchoski, of this city, and Mrs. Nango, of Olive, each aged 90.

The total number above the age of 75 in the entire county is 197.

## CHAPTER XIV.

THE PRESS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.—NORTHWESTERN PIONEER.—SOUTH BEND FREE PRESS.—ST. JOSEPH VALLEY REGISTER.—MISHAWAKA TOG-SIN.—FREE DEMOCRAT.—ST. JOSEPH COUNTY FORUM.—NATIONAL UNION.—SOUTH BEND HERALD.—MISHAWAKA BEE.—THE INVESTIGATOR.—SOUTH BEND TRIBUNE.—INDUSTRIAL ERA.—SOUTH BEND ERA.—ST. JOSEPH COUNTY REPUBLICAN.—WALKERTON VISITOR.—SOUTH BEND COURIER.—TURNER'S SOUTH BEND ANNUAL.—NEW CARLISLE GAZETTE.—NOTRE DAME SCHOLASTIC.—AVE MARIA.

### THE PRESS OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

As has already been stated, St. Joseph county was organized in August, 1830. One year after, John D. Defrees made his appearance at South Bend, a village of some thirty houses, and proposed to its citizens the establishment here of a newspaper. At this time there was no paper north of the Wabash in this State, or in Southern Michigan. Chicago, also, was without representation. In November, 1831, the first number of the *Northwestern Pioneer* was issued, by John D. and Joseph H. Defrees. Politically, the paper was Whig. After the first six months the name of the paper was changed to the St. Joseph Beacon, and continued as such eighteen months longer when it was suspended, the country not being sufficiently populated to support a newspaper.

The South Bend *Free Press* was the next venture in the newspaper line, and was established in 1836 at South Bend, by William Millikan. It was continued nine years, the office then being sold to Albert W. West and Schuyler Colfax, in September, 1845. The *Free Press* was discontinued, but on its ruins was established the *St. Joseph Valley Register*.

*St. Joseph Valley Register*.—Volume 1, No. 1, was issued Sept. 12, 1845, at South Bend, with the names of Albert W. West and Schuyler Colfax as publishers—Schuyler Colfax, editor. In size it was 22x32, a six-column folio. In its salutatory, the editor says: "In politics we shall be inflexibly Whig, believing those principles the best and safest and wisest for the administration of our Government. With an abiding confidence that sooner or later those principles will gloriously and permanently triumph, we shall labor for them as zealously and faithfully when the prospect is dimmed by defeat or reverses, as when it is lit up by the sunshine of victory. Although we shall defend those principles sternly and earnestly, our arguments and language will be such as to offend no reasonable opponent. And if it should be our ill-fortune to be visited with

personal scurrility and abuse by any antagonist, we shall leave that part of the contest exclusively to him. We were not bred in that school; we know nothing about its arguments."

On the subject of slavery, the editor says: "We shall take the middle ground lying between the two dangerous extremes, which patriots should always aim to find. We shall be opposed both to Calhounism and Birneyism, viewing them both as ultraisms, and yet, like opposites, often meeting unconsciously. To the first we shall be hostile because it holds that outrageous doctrine that slavery is a national blessing and the corner stone of the republic; because it strives to enlarge the borders of that 'peculiar institution;' because it would, if it dared, rack the glorious fabric of our union till it tottered and fell. To the other we shall be opposed because its course, we think, tends to rivet the chains of the slave more firmly to prevent a calm and argumentative discussion of the whole question through the South, and because its political organization has only tended thus far, to assist the fanatics of the South in perpetrating slavery and enlarging the slave territory and slave power of the union. Without regard, therefore, to these two extremes, we shall be fixedly opposed to enlarging the borders of slavery even one inch, either so far as sailor power and weight in the national councils are concerned, and shall hail with happiness the day when the Southern States, after calm examination, shall in a constitutional and legal manner adopt a feasible plan of emancipation, either gradual or immediate."

Agriculture, education and news were to find a prominent place in the paper. The first number contained the advertisements of John Brownfield & Co., George S. Harris and John Gilman, Jr., dry-goods and groceries; A. Delano & Co., hardware; R. Burroughs, copper, tin and sheet-iron manufactory; James Snodgrass, E. F. Dibble and R. L. Farnsworth, attorneys; South Bend Academy, C. M. Wright, Principal; L. Humphreys and John Tatman, physicians; Henry Johnson, wool-carding; several book advertisements, legal advertisements and tracts of land.

Albert B. West retired after the expiration of seven months, Schnyler Colfax becoming sole proprietor of the establishment.

Volume 3, No. 1, commenced with an enlargement to a seven-column folio. This change the editor says caused a considerable outlay and added heavily to his weekly expenses for type-setting and paper. On the completion of the telegraph line, it began to receive telegraphic dispatches. On the 29th day of December, 1849, the Register boasted of a telegraphic feat. Dispatches were sent from New York at 4 o'clock P. M., and received at South Bend at 3:35 P. M.—apparently 25 minutes before being sent, the difference in longitude occasioning this strange fact. The editor said: "If Morse ever gets a line across the ocean, by way of Iceland, we shall expect him to furnish European news up to Thursday night every week for our Thursday morning's paper." The editor did not dream a line would ever be stretched across the ocean, and that not

by way of Iceland. In the same issue, in farther speaking of telegraphic work, the editor says: "Last Saturday, the atmosphere being dry, cool and pure, and everything else propitious, the proper communications were made, and the operator at Buffalo wrote through beautifully to Milwaukee, 800 miles, without re-writing at Detroit. We received our report of that afternoon direct from Buffalo. This is the first time that this has been done, and we believe 800 miles is as far as writing has ever been sent by any of the operators on any of the lines in the world." But he has lived to see this eclipsed.

In the spring of 1851, Mr. Colfax was nominated for Congress and retired temporarily from the editorial management of the paper, James Davis assuming editorial control. Unfortunately he was not elected, so at the close of the campaign he again took the editorial chair.

As an evidence of prosperity, the *Register* in July, 1853, placed in its office a Northrup power press, by which it was enabled to work the paper at a rate of 800 to 1,000 per hour. Few power presses were then in the country, and this was a great novelty.

In 1854 Mr. Colfax was again honored with a nomination for Congress, and while canvassing his district, Alfred Wheeler was placed in charge of the editorial department of the paper. Mr. Wheeler discharged his duties in a satisfactory manner, and did much to assist in the election of Mr. Colfax.

Just before the completion of the eighth volume the *Register* was enlarged to an eight-column folio, 26x40. In speaking of this enlargement the editor says: "Eight years ago this month we issued the first number of the St. Joseph Valley *Register*. The years since then have sped rapidly by, and to-day we issue the largest paper published in the State of Indiana; each page is twice the size of those to be found in the first and second volumes of the *Register*. This forward step has been an expensive one. No country paper in Indiana has ever risked as large an amount as we do now in the present enlargement. But we have coolly calculated the cost, and resolved upon the hazard; and the first fruits of the determination is now before our readers. The first year that we published the *Register*, we will not conceal the fact, it did *not* pay expenses. The second year it materially improved and left us a surplus. We resolved then, after considerable reflection, to enlarge its size, and in September, 1847, it first appeared as a seven-column paper, being the only one of that size in this section of the State, north of the Wabash counties. Many of our friends, and one or two of our cotemporaries, doubted whether a paper of the size of the *Indiana State Journal* would pay in this less populous and less profitable locality. The first year of that experience was as gloomy as the unprofitable volume of two years before; but the tide of patronage gradually swelled; the next year was better, and at last the margin was on the right side. To-day we invest the earnings of all our eight years of labor in the enlarged *Register*, and we shall labor



during the coming year to make its receipts, if possible, equal to its largely increased expenditures. That much achieved, we shall hopefully rely upon the past being a sure augury of our prospects in the future."

In April, 1857, Alfred Wheeler was admitted as a partner in the publication of the paper, the firm name being Colfax & Wheeler, both gentlemen occupying the position of editor as well as publisher. In April, 1859, a further enlargement was made from an eight-column folio to a nine-column folio. A new power press had been added a short time previous, which, together with much other material, made the office the most complete in Northern Indiana. Subsequently Mr. Wheeler became sole owner, afterward taking as a partner Mr. Hall. In November, 1865, Archibald Beal became the owner of the office, associating with him in the publication of the paper C. E. Fuller. This partnership continued for two years, when Mr. Fuller retired and A. B. Miller and E. Crockett became associated with Mr. Beal, under the firm name of Beal, Miller & Co. In January, 1872, Miller and Crockett disposed of their interest to Mr. Beal, who remained as sole editor and proprietor for another year, when Daniel S. Marsh was installed as associate editor. In February, 1874, D. J. Benner purchased one-half interest in the office, and became associated in the editorial labors, Mr. Marsh remaining but one month longer in an editorial capacity. In August, 1875, a joint-stock company was organized for the publication of the paper as well as general job printing, composed of Archibald Beal, President; E. W. Henricks, Secretary; N. F. Van Winkle Treasurer; O. H. Palmer, George H. Alward and A. N. Thomas. The name adopted by the company was the Register Company. On the 13th of October, 1878, the Register Printing Company was organized, composed of the following named stockholders: Daniel S. Marsh, President; Charles N. Fassett, Secretary; Herbert S. Fassett, Treasurer; E. M. Kerr and F. A. Marsh—the entire stock of the Register Company passing into their hands. Subsequently the stock of D. S. and F. A. Marsh was purchased by the company which is at present composed of Herbert S. Fassett, President; Charles N. Fassett, Secretary; E. M. Kerr, Treasurer. Charles N. Fassett is the editor of the paper, and Willis E. Beal, reporter.

In the various changes that have been made in the publication of the paper, no backward step has been taken, it keeping in the front rank in its general and political and in its local departments.

On Saturday, Sept. 18, 1875, the publication of the *Daily Register* was commenced. It is a seven-column folio, well edited in its various departments, and a credit to the place.

The *Mishawaka Tocsin* was established in 1841, by Wilbur F. Storey, the present editor of the *Chicago Times*. Subsequently George Merrifield became the publisher. In 1845 Thomas Jerne-gan became the owner and the office was removed from Mishawaka to South Bend, and the name of the paper changed to the *Indiana Tocsin*. The support in South Bend was not sufficient to warrant



its continuance, and the paper was suspended here and the office removed to La Porte.

The *Free Democrat* was started in 1848 by E. W. H. Ellis, to support the Free-Soil movement and in support of the candidacy of Martin Van Buren, who was the nominee of that party for President. It survived but a few months.

In 1853 A. E. Drapier & Son commenced the publication of the *St. Joseph County Forum*. The *Forum* was Democratic in politics and edited with more than ordinary ability. The senior proprietor was a man of great force of character, a close observer, and deep thinker, while the junior was a "chip off the old block." For several years Charles E. Drapier was the responsible editor, especially during the sessions of the Legislature, each of the proprietors being engaged as short-hand reporters in the legislative bodies. The experiment of a semi-weekly was tried in 1858, but abandoned after a few months' trial as being unprofitable. In 1863 the *Forum* was suspended by order of Brigadier-General Hascall, for what was regarded as disloyal utterances. After a suspension of a short time its publication was resumed. The proprietors subsequently sold the establishment to Edward Malloy, who changed the name to the *National Union* and again to the South Bend *Weekly Union*. In December, 1874, it passed into the hands of C. L. Murray, who placed his son, C. T. Murray in charge. About this time the latter formed a joint stock company known as the "Herald Printing and Publishing Company." The company started a morning daily which was continued one year. The *Herald* has at other times issued a daily, but only for political campaign purposes. On the 22d of May, 1876, the stock of the company was transferred to C. L. Murray, who came to South Bend and assumed control and management of the paper. It is now recognized as one of the leading Democratic papers of the State, and is edited with zeal and ability by Mr. Murray.

The *Mishawaka Bee* was started in 1846 by S. P. Hart, and discontinued after the expiration of two years.

The next venture was that of the *Free Press*, the publication of which was begun in 1853, by D. C. Ireland, and continued by him for two years, when he sold to L. A. Elliott who changed its name to *Mishawaka Enterprise*, and subsequently sold it to Archibald Beal. In 1865 the *Enterprise* passed into the hands of N. V. Brower, and in 1872 it was purchased by E. A. Jernegan, who enlarged and otherwise improved it, until it now is one of the largest papers in the county and fully up to the times in every particular. The office was destroyed by fire in 1872, but by increased patronage and faithful work it soon recovered from the calamity, and the *Enterprise* was made a complete success.

The *Investigator* was the name of a religious paper published by P. T. Russell for a short time. It advocated the doctrines of the Christian Church.

The *South Bend Weekly Tribune* was established in 1872, the first number bearing date March 9, of that year. The *Tribune* was published by the Tribune Printing Company, composed of Alfred B. Miller, Elmer Crockett, E. W. Hoover and J. H. Banning. Alfred B. Miller was placed in editorial charge and has remained in that connection to the present time. The paper has always fearlessly and consistently advocated the principles of the Republican party. In his salutatory the editor said: "As to the policy of the *Tribune* we have only a word to say. Our aim will be to make it the best family journal possible; a wide-awake and reliable newspaper; earnestly devoted to the great principles upon which the Republican party was founded, but independent in utterance and impartial in criticism. As an exponent of public opinion, it will aim at candid, impartial and enlightened discussion of every question of public interest. It will be in sympathy with every liberal tendency, progressive movement and live thought, which shall give promise of securing the prosperity and elevation of the people. Its best energies, however, will be employed to advance the interests of our city and county, and no effort will be spared to make it worthy of the generous patronage and hearty support we respectfully solicit." That the paper has been what is set forth in the foregoing statements an examination of its files will attest. When the paper was established, a book bindery was started in connection, and one year after a stock of books and stationery was added. The present officers of the company are Alfred B. Miller, President; Elmer Crockett, Vice President; John M. Diffenbaugh, Secretary; Alfred Wheeler, Treasurer.

In 1873, the company started the *Daily Tribune*, which at once met with public favor, and in a very short time was placed upon a paying basis.

*Industrial Era*, a seven-column folio sheet, established late in the fall of 1879, by Ralph E. Hoyt. The *Era* was an advocate of the principles of the National Greenback party. It only survived about three months.

*South Bend Era*.—The first number of the *Era* appeared March 27, 1880, with B. F. Shively, editor and proprietor. Like the *Industrial Era* it is a strong advocate of the National Greenback party, and strikes telling blows in advocacy of the right as understood by that party, and against what it conceives to be wrong. It is a seven-column folio, and is meeting with fair success.

*St. Joseph County Republican*.—The *Republican* was ushered into existence in the summer of 1879, at Walkerton, and is edited by James F. & W. A. Endley, father and son. As its name indicates, it is a consistent advocate of Republican principles, and labors faithfully and intelligently in behalf of the doctrines of that party. It is a six-column folio, printed all at home, and is meeting with encouraging success.

*Walkerton Visitor*.—This paper is published weekly at Walkerton, Indiana, and is a seven-column folio. It is edited and published by H. S. Mintle, and is now in its sixth volume. The

*Visitor* is a staunch advocate of Greenback principles, and being published in a region where it can draw on two or more counties for support, it has a large and increasing circulation.

*South Bend Courier*.—This paper was established in 1873 under the name of the *Indiana Courier*, by the publisher of the *Herald*. It was shortly afterward purchased by G. Fickentscher, who has since been both editor and publisher. When started it was folio in form, 28x40 in size. When the name was changed to the *South Bend Courier* its form was also changed to a six-column folio. The paper has a large circulation in St. Joseph and neighboring counties. In politics, the *Courier* has always been a strong advocate of the principles of the Democratic party.

*Turner's South Bend Annual*.—The *Annual* was started January, 1869, by T. G. Turner, and has since annually appeared about the first of January. It gives a complete and reliable review of the business of the city during the preceding year, and is a very valuable publication.

The *New Carlisle Gazette* was founded Feb. 6, 1880, by George H. Alward, of South Bend, and G. M. Fountain, of Mishawaka, under the firm name of Alward & Fountain. Under the management of these parties the paper was continued six months independent in politics; but finding it unprofitable to publish successfully a paper without pronounced political views, G. M. Fountain purchased the interest of his partner and brought out the paper as an advocate of the Republican party. The paper was first published as a six-column folio; in three months it was enlarged to a seven-column folio, and when purchased by the present proprietor it was made an eight-column paper, making it the largest paper in the State for \$1 per year.

*Notre Dame Scholastic*.—In the good old days of Notre Dame, the students of the college had a semi-monthly magazine called the *Progress*, which rarely passed beyond the manuscript edition. Its origin was due to John Collins, J. H. Fleming, B. B. Barron, and F. C. Bigelow. The first paper was called the *Notre Dame Literary Gazette*, and was passed around among the students. The very first number was destroyed in a summary manner, and this destruction inspired John Collins to start the *Progress*, and have it read publicly for all the students. Mr. Collins edited the first number, in the year 1858. Other numbers were edited by T. E. Howard, General Robert Healy, James B. Runnion, A. J. Stace, Philip Carroll, D. M. M. Collins, M. O'Reilly, J. M. Howard, L. G. Tong and others. All articles were copied for the paper by a committee of publishers, the most famous of whom were Chamberlain, Fleming, and Horatio Calvin. As these young men wrote similar hands, the "get up" of the *Progress* was very tasty, while the form of publication gave great satisfaction to all. The reading of the *Progress* was looked forward to as a sort of celebration, and everybody flocked to the large study hall to hear it read. Although the editors of the *Progress* were students, the paper was to a great extent

under the direction of the late Rev. N. H. Gillespie, and many of the editors of '61 and '62 remember with pleasure the kind assistance given them by him. Editors and contributors of those years still recall the social times they enjoyed over oysters and the like about once a month. When Father Gillespie went to France in 1863, the paper was suspended, after having lasted some four or five years, and the college literary talent found no other vent than in such surreptitious publications as the *Weekly Bee*, and others of like character. On Father Gillespie's return from France he found a printing office established at Notre Dame for the publication of the well-known Catholic periodical, the *Ave Maria*. Ever zealous for the literary welfare of the students, he easily found means of procuring the issue of another paper from the same office, devoted to their interests, and to which the title of *Scholastic Year* was, after mature deliberation, given. It was founded in 1867, under Father Gillespie's direction, and was issued semi-monthly. During the year, an editorial corps, composed of students, was formed, under whose charge the paper was conducted until the end of the second term. Experience, however, showed that the editors of one week could not be made responsible for the editors of the previous one—that the *Scholastic Year*, to preserve its unity and identity must be under one responsible editor, and the director of studies (an office then filled by Rev. Augustus Lemonnier), the following year assumed the editorship *ex officio*, assisted by a numerous corps of contributors. It was found, however, that the director of studies was too much occupied with the duties of his office to attend to the duties of editor, and in 1869 Rev. N. H. Gillespie again took charge of the paper, and the name was changed to the *Notre Dame Scholastic*. In 1871 it was issued weekly, instead of semi-monthly, and as such has been continued. In 1872 Rev. M. B. Brown, then director of studies, assumed charge of the paper, changing the name to the *Scholastic*. Before the end of the year, however, Father Brown found that his time was taken up by the duties of his office, and the paper was again placed in the hands of Rev. N. H. Gillespie, the editor of the *Ave Maria*. Father Gillespie remained in charge of the *Scholastic* until his death, which took place in 1874. In 1875 the old name of *Notre Dame Scholastic* was restored.

*Ave Maria*.—This is the name of a Catholic journal devoted to the honor of the Blessed Virgin, published every Saturday at Notre Dame. It contains essays on subjects referring to the Blessed Virgin, articles on the different festivals, edifying tales, historical and biographical sketches, choice poetry, items of Catholic news, a weekly letter from Rome, etc.; also a regular bulletin of the Association of Our Lady of the Sacred Heart, with a record of some of the most remarkable cures effected by the miraculous waters of Lourdes. There is also a children's department, which is made as entertaining as possible for younger readers.

The *Ave Maria* was begun in May, 1865, by Very Rev. E. Sorin, who, with assistants, acted as editor for about a year and a half

and was succeeded in 1867 by Rev. N. H. Gillespie, who remained editor until his death, in 1874. On the death of Father Gillespie a committee of four was appointed to conduct the paper. The magazine has a general circulation of about fifteen thousand copies, and some of the best Catholic writers at home and abroad contribute to its pages.



## CHAPTER XV.

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY BIBLE SOCIETY.—ST. JOSEPH COUNTY TOTAL ABSTINENCE SOCIETY.—WHAT A PINT OF WHISKY COST.—THE TEMPERANCE CRUSADE.—RED RIBBON MOVEMENT.

### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY BIBLE SOCIETY.

Pursuant to notice a large number of the friends of the Bible cause met at the Methodist Episcopal Church to take into consideration the organization of a County Bible Society which should be auxiliary to the American Bible Society. After some discussion it was resolved to organize, and the following named officers were elected: William H. Patterson, President; J. H. Orr, G. W. Matthews and Almond Bugbee, Vice Presidents; R. B. Curtis, Secretary; J. L. Jernegan, Treasurer; John Brownfield, Reuben Burroughs and Jeremiah Banning, Executive Committee.

A constitution was adopted which has since been somewhat amended. The society during its existence shows a clean record, and has accomplished much good in the furtherance of the object for which it was organized. It has endeavored at all times to be free from debt to the parent society, and always to have a surplus on hand. At times this surplus has amounted to \$1,200. It has now in store books amounting to \$363. The *Tribune* bookstore is the Depository. F. R. Tutt is the present President; J. E. Lewis, Secretary; Elmer Crockett, Treasurer.

### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY TOTAL ABSTINENCE SOCIETY.

The temperance workers of St. Joseph county very early began the work of advocating the cause of temperance, and in the fifty years of the organized existence of the county have not ceased to labor in behalf of those who have been addicted to the use of strong drink, as well as to prevent the young from forming habits that might eventually lead them to a drunkard's grave.

In 1841, when the Washingtonian movement began to be agitated throughout the land, the men and women in St. Joseph county who believed in the doctrines of total abstinence, at once formed themselves into a society under the name of "St. Joseph County Total Abstinence Society." Annual meetings were held on the 22d of February at South Bend, and reports were received from the auxiliary societies formed throughout the county. The society had pledges of total abstinence circulated extensively, and all had an opportunity of enrolling themselves upon the side of

temperance. It must not be thought their work was carried on without opposition. In that early day men loved their toddy as well as those of a later day, and as at present, those who advocated the doctrine of total abstinence were said to be fanatical upon the subject of temperance. "License" or "no license" was advocated by their respective champions, and the total abstinence societies were for many years successful in preventing the legalizing of the traffic in ardent spirits.

The sixth annual meeting was held in the Methodist Episcopal Church, South Bend, Feb. 22, 1847, Samuel C. Sample in the chair. Judge Sample delivered an address urging all to secure a "no license" vote in their respective townships. A. Delano was elected President for the year; S. C. Sample, A. A. Whitlock, I. De Camp, Vice Presidents; Schnyler Colfax, Recording Secretary; Charles M. Heaton, Corresponding Secretary; E. B. Crocker, John Ruddock, Charles N. Ryan, President Whitten and John Brownfield, Executive Committee. Reports of a cheering character were made by auxiliary societies of South Bend, Mishawaka, Sumption's Prairie, Clay township, Kankakee, Terre Coupee and Warren township. The total number of pledged total abstinence persons according to the reports made were 2,019.

The seventh anniversary was held at the Presbyterian church in South Bend, Feb. 22, 1848. John H. Orr was elected President; Jonathan Hubbard, Jackson Green and Eliakim Green, Vice-Presidents; George Pierson, Recording Secretary; John Brownfield, Corresponding Secretary.

A resolution was offered and carried by a close vote, asking the Legislature to pass an act changing the law as relating to this county, so that voters who wished to vote for license should have it expressed on their tickets, instead of counting all those who do not vote "no license," as being in favor of license.

Feb. 22 the annual meeting was again held in South Bend, and flattering reports were made, there being an addition of several hundred names added to the names of those taking the total abstinence pledge. James Davis was elected President; M. Stover, A. Wilson and G. Holloway, Vice-Presidents; John Brownfield, Recording Secretary; M. L. McClelland, Corresponding Secretary.

Feb. 21, 1852, James Davis was elected President; P. Whitten, A. Hudson and G. Holloway, Vice-Presidents; John Brownfield, Recording Secretary; M. L. McClelland, Corresponding Secretary.

The sixteenth annual meeting was held in South Bend, Feb. 22, 1856. George C. Merrifield was elected President; President Whitten, Richmond Tuttle, George Holloway, Vice-Presidents; John Brownfield, Secretary; Picketson Burroughs, Corresponding Secretary. A resolution was passed in which the society deprecated any effort to identify the temperance movement, or the question of prohibition, with either of the political parties of the State, with a view of arraigning the other party against it. The society also expressed itself in favor of the prohibitory law, and against

the elevation to the Supreme Bench of a man who was opposed to it.

The eighteenth annual meeting was held Feb. 22, 1859. R. Clark was called to the chair. Reports were received from several auxiliary societies of a not very encouraging character. Richmond Tuttle was elected President; H. E. Hurlbut, Ira Corwin and Matthias Stover, Vice-Presidents; A. Bugbee, Corresponding Secretary; John Brownfield, Recording Secretary.

The Presidential campaign of 1860 coming on, followed by the war in 1861, interest in the cause died out, and the society soon ceased to exist, though efforts did not cease in other directions to advance the temperance cause.

#### WHAT A PINT OF WHISKY COST.

The St. Joseph Valley Register, under date Jan. 3, 1867, has this to say under the caption as given:

"Some 31 years ago Jonathan Beckwith, a young lawyer of decided promise, bought a pint of whisky, and, getting drunk, wandered out on Terre Coupee Prairie on a cold winter night, and was so badly frozen that he lost his reason and the use of his limbs, and has been ever since, until his death two weeks ago, an inmate of the county poor house, an insane cripple, and his keeping has cost the county no less than \$8,000!

#### THE TEMPERANCE CRUSADE.

In the winter of 1873, a movement was begun in Ohio, which was denominated the "Woman's Temperance Crusade," from the fact that a few noble women, despairing of success for the cause of temperance as advocated and enforced by the professed temperance people, proceeded to try the efficacy of prayer. Bands of praying women visited the various saloons in their neighborhood, and by songs and prayer forced the rum-sellers to close their shops. Their very earnestness had its effect upon all classes of society, and men and women who were lukewarm in the cause became aroused and renewed their fight against the enemy. The citizens of St. Joseph county were not to be outdone by communities elsewhere. In South Bend, Monday, March 16, 1874, there was a great gathering of the friends of temperance. A meeting was announced for three o'clock in the afternoon, but long before that hour the sidewalks were lined with people, and in the streets were the carriages of those who had come from a distance to take part in the exercises. At a quarter before three the opera house was packed to the very limit. The stage was filled with speakers, a choir of singers, and representatives of the press, the auditorium was crowded, every aisle had its ranks of persons standing, the gallery was packed, and many went away not obtaining even a glance of the inside. There was that in the eyes and mien of



the people which showed that they knew they were there, and meant all they expressed in their manner. The speaking and singing were strictly in accordance with the attendance, and altogether it was a grand affair, and such a meeting as gives support and stability to any good cause and those engaged in it.

Promptly at three o'clock the assemblage was called to order, with Hon. Schuyler Colfax in the chair. The exercises were opened with an appropriate anthem by the choir. An earnest prayer was then offered by Rev. H. A. Gobin, which was followed by a second song.

Mr. Colfax inaugurated the speaking by a few pertinent and eloquent remarks. He called attention to the terrible ravages which the evils of intemperance had brought to the land, and the urgent need of the reform now in progress. The women's movement had been as startling in its character as a clap of thunder from a clear sky, and the cloud which had been at first no bigger than a man's hand, had suddenly overspread the whole heavens. The speaker believed that the mighty uprising now witnessed by the whole country would only subside when the curse of the traffic in liquor had been swept away. Like the institution of slavery, the demon of drink brought nothing but woe to mankind. They were alike obnoxious in the sight of God, and, as by His aid the first had been uprooted and cast out, so under His divine guidance would the women and men who had engaged in this noble crusade succeed in exterminating the second. The opponents to the reform all claimed to be friendly, but—they thought some other method of bringing it about preferable. Moral suasion was urged, and the liquor sellers wanted their opponents to be careful to keep within the bounds of the law. With regard to the first, moral suasion was just the weapon in use, if he rightly apprehended the term, and he thought that if saloon-keepers were treated to the medicine they prescribe, few would be able to hold a license. For his part he was willing to let the women choose their own course, and he wished it understood that whatever they should see fit to do, he stood by them.

Marvin Campbell was the next speaker. In view of the fact that whole communities would often make concerted and most energetic efforts for the eradication of minor evils, it seemed strange that apathy could anywhere exist with regard to the blighting effects of intemperance. He blamed men, with whom all legislative and judicial power is vested, for allowing it to remain unchecked. He appealed to mothers, fathers and sisters, to throw all their influence in favor of the good cause now so happily begun.

A letter was read from Rev. D. J. Spillard, pastor of St. Patrick's Church (Roman Catholic), in which he declined to take part in or approve of the movement inaugurated by the women, but pledged himself to do all he could to further the cause of temperance in other ways. He had but a few days before organized a total-abstinence society in his Church, and would labor faithfully to increase

its members. In concluding his letter the reverend gentleman said: "Let committees be appointed to watch and report every violation of the law, and then let legal proceedings be instituted, the guilty parties brought to justice and forced to forfeit their licenses. Let God be earnestly and piously supplicated to stay this terrible scourge which is devastating our fair land. Let every minor be made to bring to the bar of justice the man, if such he can be called, who would deal out his poisonous potions to innocent, unsuspecting, wayward youth; let every woman who suffers at the hands of the terrible demon have recorded the name of her tormentor; in a word, let all just and proper means be used to wage untiring warfare against intemperance. Count on me always as the friend of temperance and the unrelenting foe of drunkenness."

Charles Smith, A. N. Thomas, Lucius Hubbard and Miss Fanny Spain followed in short remarks, when Mrs. Emma Malloy made the closing speech. Mrs. Malloy said she had often been asked what she thought of this woman's movement, and hesitated to give a reply lest her answer should be less reverent than the subject seemed to demand. She could not doubt but the movement was a natural revulsion, an eruption of the smoldering fires that for centuries past was pent up in the heart of woman. She could not doubt but that the hand of God had shaken these internal fires, and could only gaze with awe and reverence at the mighty upheaving that thrilled the nation from center to circumference. She was convinced that women were not satisfied to sit with folded hands while the first-born of the nation was being slain,—while the fairest and purest in every household in the land were the victims of the fell destroyer. The heart of woman had thrilled with silent anguish; she had wept her night of sorrow through; and now had arisen the host of Israel. The foe was being routed. "The glad dawn whose early twilight" all had been gazing down the centuries of time to see, had come.

A temperance meeting was also held the same day at the Reformed church, and an association was formed under the name of the "Women's Protective Association of South Bend," its object being, "In the spirit of love and earnestness to try to protect the hearths and homes of the women of South Bend, and those of other places who have fathers, husbands, sons or brothers, from the evils and dangers of intemperance." Various committees were appointed—on canvassing, visitation, enforcement of law, license, finance, mass meetings, printing, music and legislation. In addition to the regular membership there were to be co-operative members, composed of the men who would sign a pledge wherein they pledged themselves to abstain from signing any petition for the license of the sale of intoxicating drinks, and to give cordial support and co-operation to the Women's Protective Association, in their efforts for the banishment of the traffic and use of intoxicating drinks.

In less than one week 778 men and 350 women had signed the pledge of fellowship and co-operation in the temperance movement.

On Sunday, March 22, another monster mass meeting was held and addressed by able speakers.

The movement was not confined alone to South Bend, but at other points in the county large meetings were held and good accomplished which is yet felt in every community.

#### RED-RIBBON MOVEMENT.

The next movement in behalf of temperance was that known as the "Red Ribbon Movement," which was the direct result of the women's crusade. An interest had been awakened throughout the land, but many not religiously inclined, and some who were conscientiously opposed to the work as performed by the women, were yet ready to embrace some other method that would lead to good results. At the opportune moment the red-ribbon movement was set on foot and rapidly spread throughout the land. In the winter of 1876-'77, eloquent speakers in advocacy of the claims of this new effort came into this county, and at South Bend and other points large meetings were held and many induced to sign the pledge and wear the ribbon. The first club organized was at South Bend, on the 7th of April, 1877. John Brownfield, Jr., was elected President; Richard Holmes, John Duey and Fred Barnhard, Vice Presidents; Otto M. Knoblock, Secretary; Z. M. Johnson, Treasurer; Mr. Perkins, Chaplain. On the Sunday following the club held a public meeting and was addressed by several young men who had been accustomed to the use of intoxicating drinks. Under the direction of Mrs. Emma Malloy a series of meetings was held, and the number of those signing the pledge was greatly increased. The movement was one of love to all men, the doctrine of hate being unknown.

After Mrs. Malloy ceased her labors in South Bend, there was a lull in the movement for a time, but it was again inaugurated in July following by John W. Custer and Major Plympton. Under their labors many who had not previously signed were induced to do so, and the cause of temperance received an impetus which could not be impeded by any slight obstacle in the way.

## CHAPTER XVI.

DARK DEEDS.—CHARLES EAGER.—ALEXANDER WILSON.—THOMAS BUCHER.—ORANGE G. STAGE.—JOHN SCHULKOSKI.—JONATHAN HICKMAN.—JOHN SULLIVAN.—MURDER OF EPHRAIM DICE.—ST. JOSEPH RIVER AND ITS VICTIMS.—FOUR YOUNG PEOPLE DROWNED.—MYSTERIOUS DISAPPEARANCE OF HENRY F. PORTER.—HENRY SHERMAN.—FOUND A WATERY GRAVE.—KATY FLECK'S TRAGIC DEATH.—MYSTERIOUS DISAPPEARANCE OF J. C. MARVIN.—DEATH IN THE RIVER.—DROWNING OF JACOB BAUER.—STRANGE DISAPPEARANCE.—JOHN SCHUMAN.—WHISKY DID IT.—ANOTHER VICTIM.

### DARK DEEDS.

Since the day that Cain slew his brother Abel, murder has been rife in the land, and it can hardly be expected that a county the size of St. Joseph could have an existence of fifty years without having its soil stained with the blood of a human being. Made up of representatives of nearly every nation, having inherited the prejudices and imbibed the hatred so common among different nationalities, and spurred on by the demon drink, it is a wonder the record is not darker and crime has not prevailed to a greater extent.

Thirty-eight years had passed from the time Pierre Navarre made here his home before the murderous hand was raised. The first case was that of

### CHARLES EAGER,

indicted October 7, 1858, for the murder of Charles Kelley, at Mishawaka. Kelley and several companions from South Bend went to Mishawaka, and while intoxicated got into a difficulty, which resulted in his being stabbed in the heart by Eager. On trial the evidence seemed conclusive that the murder was done in self-defense, and the accused was acquitted. W. G. George and John. F. Miller appeared for the defense. The same defendant was afterward convicted of manslaughter in Allen county and sentenced to eight years in the penitentiary.

### ALEXANDER WILSON.

On Friday, Aug. 3, 1860, Alexander Wilson murdered, in cold blood, Samuel Pierson, near the residence of Mr. Lamadee, in Greene township. They were both residents of that township. Some

years prior to this sad occurrence, Wilson married the daughter of Mr. Pierson, but owing to his almost habitual brutal treatment she had left him, and in the spring of 1860 she obtained a divorce from him. Wilson had since that time made repeated threats to kill both her and her father and other members of the family. On the day of the murder, with her father, she went to the residence of Mr. Lamadee in a wagon, Wilson following with a shot-gun. As Mr. Pierson got out of the wagon and was hitching his horses, Wilson came up and struck him repeatedly with the barrel of his rifle, breaking his arm, breaking and smashing his skull horribly, and knocking him senseless beneath his horse's feet. Before the alarm could be raised and assistance secured, Wilson made his escape into the woods. Mr. Pierson, all the time senseless and without motion, lingered until the next day, when he expired. Wilson was always considered a bad man and a reckless and dangerous character, and so excited and incensed were the citizens that if he had been caught at the time he would have been lynched. A reward of \$200 was offered for his capture by the Sheriff of the county, and he was afterward arrested and returned to Indiana for trial. A change of venue being taken to La Porte county, he was there tried, convicted and sentenced to six years' imprisonment in the penitentiary at Michigan City. He was, however, pardoned by the Governor long before the expiration of his term. Wilson was defended by W. G. George and A. Anderson.

#### THOMAS BOUCHER.

At the October term, 1865, of the Circuit Court, Thomas Boucher was indicted by the Grand Jury, for the murder of Alexander Laudemun. Thomas Boucher was a Virginian by birth, and at the time of the affair was a resident of Chicago, but temporarily working at Notre Dame. The killing occurred in the fourth ward of South Bend, and was claimed to have been accidental. He was brought to trial at the April term, 1866, of the Circuit Court, found guilty of manslaughter and sentenced to two years in the penitentiary. He was ably defended by W. G. George and A. Anderson. After the expiration of one year he was liberated by the Governor.

#### ORANGE G. STAGE.

This man was charged with the murder of Charles Tibbetts in a saloon, where the opera douse now stands, in the city of South Bend. The weapon used in taking life was a large dirk knife. Stage was indicted at the October term, 1870, of the Circuit Court. A change of venue was taken to Marshall county, where he was placed on trial, being defended by W. G. George, C. H. Reeves and James Davis. The plea of the defense was that Tibbetts was

killed by Stage in self-defense. The reputation of Tibbetts as a dangerous and quarrelsome man materially aided this defense, and Stage was acquitted.

#### JOHN SCHULKOSKI.

Frank Treanofski, Martin Sass, Max Strafe, Joseph Pinkowski and John Schulkoski were out hunting on the 27th of November, 1873, and returned about 5 o'clock in the afternoon, and at the invitation of one Kitkoski, went to his house to get some whisky, but when they arrived there they found there was none in the house, so they made up a purse of a dollar and sent for some alcohol, which they diluted with water. Under the influence of their potations they became merry and went to dancing, which they kept up until about 10 o'clock, when they commenced quarreling. Kitkoski attempted to put Treanofski out of his house, in which he was assisted by Schulkoski, who in the melee drew a knife and attempted to stab Treanofski, cutting through his vest and shirt, but not wounding him. They finally succeeded in getting them out of the door, but they did not immediately go away; they stood on the porch while Sass was putting on his gloves. While in the act of doing so Schulkoski shot at them out of the window, the lead passing in front of Treanofski's face and striking Sass in the left side of the face, destroying the left eye and carrying away nearly all the lower part of the nose, and killing him instantly. Schulkoski was arrested, and on the 26th of December was arraigned for trial. Conviction followed and he was sentenced to 21 years in the penitentiary.

#### JONATHAN HICKMAN.

On Tuesday morning, July 16, 1874, the people living about three miles north of New Carlisle were surprised to find the log cabin in which a Polander by the name of Thomas Cihanski, better known by the nickname of "Tommy Polander," lived with his wife, to be burned to the ground. On closer investigation they were horrified to find the remains of two human beings in the ashes, which proved to be those of the Polander and his wife. The sight was a most horrible one. The legs and arms were almost wholly consumed, the bodies with their shriveled intestines and the open skulls, showing the brains within baked to a cake, being the only parts which were not charred to cinders. At first it was thought they had been burned to death, but closer examination showed a foul double murder had been committed. The remains of the man were still recognizable, and on inspection it was revealed that the back part of his skull had been crushed in. The body of the woman was so badly charred, that whatever marks of violence may have been on her person were undiscoverable. Locks of hair and clotted blood were found on the grass near the ruins of

the house, seeming to indicate that a terrible struggle had taken place between her and her murderer outside of the house. A bloody nightcap was also picked up near by.

The remains of both parties were found close to where they were known to sleep, showing that the woman's body must have been carried in and thrown on or near the bed, to convey the impression that both came to their deaths while slumbering, by accidental burning of the house. The house was built of logs in a partial clearing made by Cihanski, on land belonging to James Swank.

The report that there was a considerable sum of money in the house, supposed to have been the motive of the killing, was positively confirmed by the evidence brought out at the inquest, the brother-in-law testifying that Cihanski had about \$600 in a belt which he carried around his waist. He had been repeatedly urged to put this in a bank, but would not.

Sheriff Turnock, who was present at the inquest, had his suspicions aroused by the actions of two young men, James Bennett and Jonathan Hickman. They were arrested, but no evidence being found against them, they were discharged. The Sheriff kept track of them, however, and becoming more and more convinced of their being implicated, organized a party, and going to the residence of their parents, a few days after the murder, arrested them and confined them in the county jail, where they remained until the December term of the Circuit Court, when they were placed on trial, Judge Stanfield presiding.

After hearing the evidence of a number of witnesses, James Bennett, one of the parties indicted, was placed on the stand and turned State's evidence, narrating every particular of the horrible deed. Upon his evidence as well as by circumstantial evidence by other witnesses, Hickman was found guilty and sentenced to the penitentiary for life.

The prosecution of the case was conducted by O. S. Witherill and Lucius Hubbard, the defense by Major Plympton and Judge Hagerty.

#### JOHN SULLIVAN.

On Saturday evening, March 18, 1876, a little after six o'clock, John Sullivan appeared at the county jail and asked to be locked in, stating as his reason that he had stabbed William Quinlan in front of a saloon on South street, opposite the Lake Shore depot. It would appear from evidence given in the case, Quinlan and a man named Harrington had been having some trouble about a woman. Harrington had cast some aspersions upon the character of a woman in whom Quinlan was interested, and the latter, when intoxicated, went to a house where Harrington was stopping and demanded satisfaction. It is said that Harrington and others took advantage of Quinlan's partial helpless condition and gave him a severe beating. Out of this grew the difficulty which ended in the

death of a human being. The parties met in the saloon of Thomas Krick, near the Lake Shore depot, and after partaking of a quantity of villainous whisky, the old difficulty was renewed and they proposed to fight it out. Some feeble protest was made against the fight, but the general voice of the crowd was in favor of it, fist-cuffs being recognized as the only true way of settling misunderstandings, particularly if it happened to be an old grudge. Krick objected to fighting in the saloon, and as the crowd wanted more elbow room, all moved outside, Quinlan and Harrington clinching and falling as they cleared the door. They then had two or three rounds, breathing a moment between each, when Sullivan, a cousin of Harrington, who had been standing with an open knife in his hand, gave Quinlan a slash in the bowels, driving the blade in its full length. Quinlan did not at first realize that he was cut, but continued fighting. The blood streamed from the wound, however, and he soon got faint. He leaned for support against a building, and with an exclamation that he was stabbed, staggered a few steps and fell. He was taken into the saloon and physicians summoned. Soon after he was removed to the residence of his parents, where about six o'clock the next morning he died.

On Wednesday, May 31, Sullivan was arraigned for trial, the evidence being substantially as narrated. After hearing the evidence and the counsels for the prosecution and defense, the jury retired, and in a few minutes returned with a verdict of eleven years in the penitentiary.

#### MURDER OF EPHRAIM DICE.

On Friday night, Aug. 20, 1880, Benjamin and Ephraim Dice, had some trouble with Charles Perkins and Maennerchor Wall, in South Bend. The parties met again on Monday afternoon following at J. K. Seltzer's saloon, No. 117 Michigan street, where the trouble was renewed. Ephraim and Ben Dice were sitting in the saloon when Perkins and Pfaffenbach entered. Perkins and Ben Dice renewed their quarrel and engaged in a sort of a wrestling fight, which Pfaffenbach interrupted by striking Dice. The latter then turned his attention to Pfaffenbach and knocked him down, when he gave up whipped. A short time afterward the two brothers met the other crowd in front of Hughes' saloon, where talk of a fight was entered into, Pfaffenbach making a demonstration toward Ben Dice. The Dice boys saw that they were greatly outnumbered and didn't care to fight. Meantime George Keck, who like most of the others was partially under the influence of liquor, was anxious to get at Ben Dice, and finally did break away from a couple of his friends who were holding him and struck Ben Dice. Ben was knocked down and partly stunned by two or three blows rained in upon him as he fell, and did not fully recover consciousness until informed that his brother was killed. When Ephraim Dice saw his brother beset by so many he naturally went to his aid,



and thus through his brother's troubles came to his own death. He was immediately engaged by two or three of the crowd and quickly knocked down with what is supposed to have been a pair of metal knuckles on a slung-shot. He fell head foremost against a box and then rolled down upon the sidewalk, from whence he was kicked into the gutter. As he struck in the gutter his hands went up like the last grasp of a man for receding life. The next moment he partially raised himself on his elbow and was picked up and carried into Snyder's drug store, close by, where within ten minutes he breathed his last, without having uttered a word or recognized a friend. A large crowd immediately gathered, and when the injured man was pronounced dead, people began to look around for his assailants, but during the excitement of the moment they had taken to their heels and made their escape. The police were scattered over the city, but were soon summoned, and as soon as they could get any information began to work, resulting in the arrest of Michael Lynch, Charles Kelley, Martin Pfaffenbach, Charles Perkins, Daniel Casey, Patrick Touhey, Geo. Briner, and a number of young men who witnessed the fight.

On being pronounced dead by the attending physicians, Drs. Partridge and Myers, the remains of the unfortunate young man were removed to Liphart's undertaking rooms on the opposite side of the street, where Coroner Miller viewed them, and assisted by Dr. Flory, made a *post-mortem* examination, which resulted in the discovery that in addition to a bruise and cut over the left eye, presenting the appearance of having been made with a hard, blunt instrument, his neck was dislocated close to the base of the skull. The physicians satisfied themselves of this fact by making an incision in the back of the neck, by which means the dislocation could be plainly felt. The dislocation was caused, the doctors say, by the fall into the gutter, but it might have resulted from one of several kicks that forced him from the sidewalk.

The parties arrested were taken before Justice Harbaugh, and after an examination lasting two days, Charles Kelley and Andrew Pfaffenbach were held to bail in the sum of \$2,000 each. The others arrested at the time were discharged.

A few days after the examination, Pfaffenbach was taken before Judge Noyes, on a writ of *habeus corpus*, for examination, with the intent of having bail reduced. After hearing the testimony, the Judge remanded him to jail without bail.

#### ST. JOSEPH RIVER AND ITS VICTIMS.

As one looks upon the St. Joseph river, with its clear, sparkling water hastening on toward the lake, it is with no dark, foreboding thoughts, but with heart-felt thanks to the Giver of all good and perfect gifts for placing at our feet another evidence of his wisdom and his power. Here in this beautiful stream is seen a power, which, if controlled by man, may be the means of giving life to

many by converting the golden grain into an article of food; mills and manufactories may flourish upon its banks; vessels may ride upon its water; but no thoughts of death obtrude upon the mind; the grim monster that waits upon all surely cannot be lurking here; and yet the pen of the historian is compelled to write of many sad endings of life in these pure waters. Here is witnessed a youth, playing in the water, with no thought of death before him; peace and joy reign in his heart; but as he playfully splashes the water upon his companion he gets beyond his depth, goes down, and a life is lost! A beautiful maiden, fair as the sunshine, outwardly giving no evidence of a clouded life, plunges into the river and is rescued a corpse. Here is one whose mind has been deranged by misfortunes that crowded thick and fast upon him; a small ray of light pierces his mind; he realizes that he is a burden to those he loves; he goes down to the river bank in the dark hours of the night, lays down in the water, where he imagines all trouble will end; his body is found and laid away to rest. None but an all-wise God can know the thoughts of those who have met death by their own hands. The veil of charity must be thrown over all by those who are living.

#### FOUR YOUNG PEOPLE DROWNED.

On Tuesday evening, June 2, 1868, at about half-past six o'clock, Eugene Seixas and Charles Walterhouse, accompanied by Miss Adele Seixas and Miss Molly C. Miller, started boat-riding, with the intention of going a short distance up the river from South Bend. Launching the boat near the headgates of the west race, very close to which runs the elbow of the dam, it is supposed that before the young men got hold of the oars or were conscious of the danger, the boat was drawn into the swift current and carried over the falls. Two men on the bank of the river saw the boat go, and stated that it went over sideways, all the parties being in it until it capsized just on the edge of the dam. There was nobody near enough to render them any assistance, the workmen having all left the shops, consequently all were lost. The body of Miss Miller was found the same evening, fifteen minutes after the accident happened, near the bridge. That of Charles Waterhouse was found the next morning at six o'clock; the body of Eugene Seixas about nine o'clock, and Adele about noon, near a large sycamore tree beyond the foot of the east race, and a quarter of a mile from where the disaster occurred. The young folks were well known in the city of South Bend, and their terrible death cast a gloom over the entire community.

#### MYSTERIOUS DISAPPEARANCE OF HENRY F. PORTER.

Henry F. Porter was the superintendent of the Carriage Works of Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company. Some time in

the month of January, 1878, he resigned his position for the purpose of accepting a position in Philadelphia: so he stated. A farewell supper was given him on the night of the 31st of January, on which occasion he was presented with a fine gold watch by the Studebaker Brothers, valued at \$300. Mr. Porter was a very talented man, and a writer of merit. He was at one time connected with the *Carriage Journal*, and a regular contributor to other trade journals. On the evening of the 5th of February, Mr. Porter suddenly disappeared from the city. Fears were entertained that he had committed suicide by drowning in the St. Joseph river, but the facts in the case were not fully known until the evening of March 8, when his body was accidentally discovered by a party of fishermen. They were drifting down stream with a torch-light in the bow of their boat, engaged in spearing fish, and had reached a point about a mile and a half below the city of South Bend, when a white object on the surface of the water, near the shore, attracted their attention. They immediately turned the boat into shore, and on reaching the object, discovered it to be the lifeless body of a human being, resting on its face, with the back protruding white and ghastly from the water, and the arms disposed close to the sides. Believing they had no authority to remove the body, the men secured it in the position it occupied when discovered, by thrusting their spears into the river bottom in such a way that the current could not carry it down stream and necessitate further search for it. The alarm was given the next morning, and the body taken from the water. Its condition was terrible to contemplate. It was stark naked with the exception of a stocking on the right foot, and a shoe and stocking with a piece of his red flannel drawers clinging about the left ankle and foot. The face was considerably disfigured, though but little swelled, and the thin hair of his head was full of the sweepings of the river and looked much darker than its natural color on that account. The body was not bloated in the least. The naked condition of the body was a general surprise, and created a new mystery in the premises, as when he disappeared he wore a full suit of clothes and an extra heavy overcoat. The whereabouts of these articles was a question. Whether they were taken off by the drowned man, or whether torn off by the hidden powers of the river will remain a secret until all mysteries are exposed. But the remains were fully identified as being those of the missing Henry F. Porter. They were placed in a metallic casket and forwarded to Philadelphia for interment.

## HENRY SHERMAN.

On Sunday afternoon, June 8, 1879, W. R. McCracken, of South Bend, was rowing up the river in a small boat, and when about half way between that place and Mishawaka he discovered an object in the water which at first sight resembled a valise, but upon closer examination proved to be the skirts of a coat floating

over the shoulders of a man's body. The body was lying upon its face and was lodged upon a snag. Mr. McCracken immediately turned his boat about and floated down stream a short distance where he found three men fishing. To them he disclosed his startling discovery, and the entire party repaired to the spot where the body was still held by the obstructions in the water. The men hauled it on the shore with some difficulty. The face was black, the limbs stiff, and it had the appearance of being in the water for some time. The coroner was notified and an inquest held over the remains, which were recognized as those of Henry Sherman, of Mishawaka. Mr. Sherman had been of unsound mind for about four years, and to end his troubles threw himself into the St. Joseph river, and added one more to its long list of victims.

#### FOUND A WATERY GRAVE.

Joseph S. Kenyon and Ellet W. St. John went in swimming in the river near South Bend, Sunday, Aug. 3, 1879, and their two sons, Johnny Kenyon, aged 13, and Henry St. John, aged 12, went in with them. The two men, after bathing awhile swam across the river, leaving the two boys to bathe where they then were. At this point the water was quite shallow some distance from the shore, then it deepened suddenly at a clayey bank. Henry St. John was the only one of the boys who could swim. While the fathers were across the river, the two boys were playing in the water, walking backward and splashing the water over each other. Suddenly Johnny slipped on the clayey bottom and into the water over his head. Henry, who was with him, made an attempt to save him, but was so much smaller that when he grappled Johnny both went down. John Marble was on the bank watching the swimmers, and although lame, he plunged in when he saw the danger, with his clothes on. He reached Henry first and started him toward the shore and he got safely on the bank. He then turned his attention to Johnny, but the moment he seized him, Johnny grabbed him by the throat with vice-like grip and choked Mr. Marble so that he was nearly drowning himself, and was obliged to throw him off and catch him by another part of his body. When he attempted to do this Johnny was out of reach, and Mr. Marble was himself so exhausted he could scarcely get to shore. The alarm was then raised, and the two fathers swam across as rapidly as they could and began the search for Johnny's body. As soon as they found it every effort was made to resuscitate the boy, but in vain, although they did not cease trying for over an hour.

#### KATY FLECK'S TRAGIC DEATH.

About the first of April, 1876, the wife of Charles Schaeffer, of South Bend, died, leaving an infant child about four months old.

A sister of the deceased, Miss Kate Fleck, then came to keep house for Mr. Schaeffer, and attend to the motherless one, receiving as compensation the sum of \$2 per week. On Wednesday, July 5, she demanded an increase of wages to \$2.50 per week. Mr. Schaeffer told her he could not afford it, and if she was not satisfied with what he was paying her, he would have to hire some one else. The following morning Schaeffer arose at an early hour, went down to his shop and returned to the house at his usual breakfast hour. Instead of finding the meal prepared, he found a note from Kate as follows: "Charley:—Hunt me and your baby on the other side of the railroad bridge in the river." Search was at once instituted, but no trace could be found of the bodies, and it was thought the letter was an idle threat, a mere blind, and that she had gone elsewhere, probably to her father's house, near Plymouth.

On Friday evening the dead body of Kate was seen going over the dam, the arms nearly encircling the head, and the hands above as if fighting the water—the position in which the arms of most people drowned are found. The river was high and the current swift, and the body floated rapidly down stream after emerging from the seething waters under the dam. It kept the middle of the river and passed the iron bridge before a boat could be secured to follow it. Two men finally brought the body to the shore about 20 rods below the Singer factory.

The action of the current in forcing the body against obstacles had bruised the face and head somewhat, and torn and displaced the clothing so that below the waist the body was bare. The face was discolored slightly from being so long in the water, but otherwise the body presented a very natural appearance.

On the Sunday following, the dead body of the baby was seen floating down the river, and was taken from the water by Theodore Chaudoni. The body was bloated and badly discolored. The legs were spread out and bent at the knees, with the knees drawn up toward the shoulders. Around the waist was tied a scarf, the ends of which had been made into a loop, which evidently Kate had put around her neck to keep the child by her that their bodies might be found together. Certain discolored marks around Katy's neck were thus accounted for.

#### MYSTERIOUS DISAPPEARANCE OF J. C. MARVIN.

On the 25th day of March, 1870, J. C. Marvin, engineer in the lower shops of Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company, disappeared. On the evening of the day mentioned, he parted with some of his associates on the street, telling them he must go to his room. He boarded at 167 Michigan street. Reaching there, he got out his old letters, and spent an hour or two looking over them; after which he burned them. He then placed his watch and keys upon the table and left the house. About ten o'clock he called at Rupp's drug store for chloroform, as he had often been in the

habit of doing, using it to relieve neuralgic pains from which he at times suffered so severely as to render him temporarily insane. After applying the chloroform, he conversed with the clerk a short time, and then started, as the clerk supposed, for his boarding house. This was the last seen of him by any of his acquaintances.

Not making his appearance next day, and his manner of leaving his boarding house exciting considerable surprise, search was made for him. He had been in the habit of visiting at a house near the bank of the river, in the north part of the city, and on examining the bank there, foot-prints, supposed to be his, were discovered near the water's edge. On Sunday, March 27, a large force turned out and dragged the river, but no traces of the missing man were found.

On Tuesday, the 29th, a gentleman from Niles, while driving across the river at Bertrand, discovered the dead body of a man floating in the river. Giving the alarm a boat was procured and the body secured, but not until it had floated some distance below the town. The body was dressed in a full suit of clothes, and had on, in addition, an overcoat. The right arm was fastened to the man's side by a rope passed around the wrist two or three times, and then tied around the waist. A letter was found in one of the pockets addressed to J. C. Marvin, and believing it to be the body of the missing engineer, a messenger was dispatched to South Bend, and from the description he gave of the clothing, no doubt whatever remained of its being any other than the body of Marvin. Sheriff Glover, Mr. Rupp and Mr. Marks went to Bertrand and brought the body to South Bend, where it was recognized by his associates. An inquest was held, the Coroner's jury holding that he came to his death by drowning in the St. Joseph river, and that the drowning was the result of his own act for the purpose of self-destruction.

Before the war, Mr. Marvin was a banker in New York. At the breaking out of the Rebellion, he enlisted and served in a three months' regiment, and afterward went to Iowa, where he assisted in raising a company and was made Captain. He received several promotions and was a Brevet Brigadier-General at the close of the war.

#### DEATH IN THE RIVER.

About six o'clock Tuesday morning, Dec. 13, 1870, two employes of the Union Cabinet Manufactory, while going to their work, were hailed near the Peninsular railway bridge by a man in his shirt sleeves and bare-headed, standing on the bridge, who requested them to take his coat and hat to Bartlett & Orvis' grocery, and he pointed to those articles, which were hanging on Mr. Huey's fence, just across the street from the bridge. The man acted rather strangely, and having suspicion that he was bent on

self-destruction, they started toward him with the intention of preventing him jumping in the river, but he motioned them back, saying he was bound to go down, and almost before they could realize it he leaped from the bridge into the river and immediately sunk. He struck the water at full length, and as the distance from the top of the bridge to the surface of the water is between 40 and 50 feet, the severe shock must have stunned him into insensibility. The men then took the clothes down and left them at the grocery store of Russ & Co., the only place then open, and gave the alarm. Shortly after a clerk of Bartlett & Orvis recognized the clothes as belonging to R. A. Orvis, the junior member of the firm. No cause could be assigned for the rash act by friends of the deceased except that he had become temporarily insane. He had for some time been suffering from dyspepsia, and arose that morning about half past four o'clock and told his brother Willard, with whom he slept, that he was going out and would return shortly, and that was the last any of his friends saw of him. He had but lately come to South Bend from Baraboo, Wisconsin. The body of the unfortunate man was found on Thursday afternoon following his self-destruction.

#### DROWNING OF JACOB BAUER.

About half past two o'clock, Tuesday afternoon, Aug. 20, 1872, Jacob Bauer was drowned in the river a few rods above the Peninsular railroad bridge. The drowned man, who was employed on the race, assisting in the construction of the water works, had been laboring in the forenoon as usual, but feeling rather poorly at noon concluded to rest the remainder of the day. Shortly after dinner John Miller and John Wanderlich invited him to join them in a ride on the river, to which he unfortunately consented. Near the spot where the casualty took place, Bauer arose to change his position in the boat, his balance was lost, and in a moment the craft was bottom upward, and the three men were struggling in the water, Miller, who could swim a little, reaching the shore by his own exertions. Wanderlich climbed upon the overturned boat; but Bauer, unable to swim, with not so much as a straw to meet his random dying clutches, again and again coming to the surface, finally sank almost within reach of the shore, in less than seven feet of water. His body was recovered soon after, a Coroner's inquest held and a verdict rendered in accordance with the foregoing facts.

#### STRANGE DISAPPEARANCE.

Johanna Sharinghausen, who had lived with the family of A. G. Cushing in the capacity of housemaid about three years, very unaccountably disappeared some time during the night of Aug. 15, 1872. She retired to her room at the customary hour, after making



some trifling inquiries of Mrs. Cushing regarding culinary matters. Her last words were comments on the beauty of the evening. Her absence was first noted about six o'clock the next morning. It is presumed she made her exit through the kitchen window, as that avenue was the only one in the house unfastened. Her mother and sisters were immediately notified of her absence, but they were utterly at a loss to account for her strange act. The presumption was strong that she must have been attacked with insanity, as nothing in reason could have actuated her to take such a course. She attended church and prayer-meeting with great regularity, and was exemplary in all her walks of life. The river, near both banks, was dragged between South Bend and Niles, and the west race also was searched. On Wednesday afternoon following her disappearance, some tanners who were at work at St. Mary's, discovered a body floating in the river near the bank. It was secured, and although distorted almost beyond the semblance of humanity, it was recognized as the body of the poor unfortunate girl.

#### JOHN SCHUMAN.

On Monday afternoon, June 8, 1874, John Schuman, a young German, attempted to cross the river by walking on the apron of the dam. When about mid way, where a small stream of water pours over the dam, by some means he lost his foothold on the slippery planks of the apron, and was immediately whirled into the boiling, seething, eddying waters below. He immediately sank out of sight and did not rise to the surface again. His disappearance was noticed by some persons, and in a few minutes several parties, good swimmers, commenced diving to recover his body. They continued their diving at intervals for two days, their efforts being rewarded on Wednesday afternoon by discovering the body at a depth of twenty-two feet, fast by the arm to some logs. They could not release the body from its imprisonment that evening, and, when preparing to make another effort the next morning, it had by some means become detached from its hold, and was floating on the surface. The necessary steps were immediately taken to rescue it, and by the time a boat went out, the body had floated further down the stream and was picked up opposite the Eagle Works. A legal inquest was held and a verdict rendered in accordance with the foregoing facts.

#### WHISKY DID IT.

Three Germans, working in the shops of the Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company, having been paid off a few days previously, took a holiday on Thursday, June 11, 1874, and celebrated the event by imbibing large quantities of whisky during the forenoon. About twelve o'clock they found themselves on the river bank, a short distance above the Jefferson street bridge, in South Bend. The subject of swimming was discussed, and one of the



party, Albert Neuman, declared his ability to swim across the river at that point. To make good his word, he plunged into the river with coat and boots on, and was making fine progress as far as the middle of the stream, where he struck the rapid current. This was too much for him, loaded down with clothing and alcohol as he was, and he commenced being carried down the stream, losing every moment more completely the control of his actions. He managed to grasp a piece of timber connected with the ice-breaker of one of the piers of the bridge, and here for a few moments he made a determined effort to support himself. His perilous position was observed from the shore, and he was called to hold on to the support until a boat could be brought to the rescue, but, being too weak, or losing control of his sense of self-preservation, long before assistance could reach him, he sank under the waters. His body was recovered in fifteen minutes after sinking, and although every means were taken to resuscitate him, yet they were unavailing; the spirit had left the mortal tenement and was then in the presence of its Maker.

#### ANOTHER VICTIM.

James H. Fleming, an employe of the *Register* office, in company with Samuel Carney, of South Bend, on Saturday, June 20, 1874, visited Lumley Lewis, Superintendent of the county poor-house and farm, with whose family he was acquainted. About seven o'clock the party went to the river, about midway between South Bend and Mishawaka,—Lewis, Fleming and a boy named VanAmburg, for the purpose of bathing, and Carney, of looking on. After being in the water some minutes, Lewis and Fleming swam out to a sand bar, about midway of the stream. Lewis warned his friend that if he was not a good swimmer he had better not follow him, but return to the shore by the way he came, as the water was much deeper and the passage more dangerous. Lewis began the passage, Fleming following, saying "I am coming, Jim." In a few moments Lewis noticed a peculiar sound in the direction of Fleming, and looking back, saw him showing signs of strangulation, and struggling in the water, evidently unable to support himself on its surface. He immediately returned, and before reaching the spot saw his friend sink. He saw him rising again some distance down stream and he dived toward the spot, but the drowning man had already been carried out of his reach by the current. He swam to the shore, and hastening along the bank opposite where he saw the bubbles rise, he plunged in again and swam to the spot, but Fleming never came to the surface again, being taken with sudden cramps, as is supposed, which deprived him of all power to help himself.

Very much exhausted by his exertions in the water, and darkness rapidly coming on, Lewis was unable to make any further search for the missing body. Intelligence of the sad affair was at once sent to South Bend, and the next morning the proprietor of the *Register*,

Mr. Lewis, Mr. Carney, Thomas Cottrell, John Beurva, William Gantz and Charles Brickel commenced the search. After nearly two hours diving and watching the river bottom, just as the search at that point was about being given up, and Cottrell was dressing, Gantz, rowing over the spot where the last signs of the sinking body had appeared on the water, discovered the body lying prone on the sand within a few feet of where it sank. Cottrell dived down and brought him to the surface, nearly meeting with an accident, which would have been unfortunate, had he not been a good swimmer, for as he came to the surface with the body in his arms, mistaking the depth of the water, he undertook to touch bottom, and, weighed down with the additional load, he sank under the water. With the assistance of Beurva in the boat, who caught Fleming by the hair, Cottrell came to the surface again, still maintaining his hold, and brought him to the shore. A coroner's inquest was held and a verdict rendered in accordance with the facts as given. The body of the unfortunate man was sent to his parents at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania.

Mr. Fleming's age was 26 years. He was born in Baltimore, Maryland, where he spent the earlier years of his life. For nearly two years he served his country in the Seventeenth Pennsylvania Cavalry, participating in a number of engagements and receiving an honorable discharge at the end of the war. Some years before coming to South Bend he connected himself with the Methodist Episcopal Church, and on arriving here, he was received by the First Church, of that denomination, in full membership. He was also a member in good standing of a Baltimore lodge of Odd Fellows, the Grand Army of the Republic, of Gettysburg, and Good Templars, of South Bend.



## CHAPTER XVII.

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY.—FIRST BRICK HOUSE IN SOUTH BEND.—PIONEER MEETINGS.—ADDRESS OF JUDGE STANFIELD.—ADDRESS OF DR. HUMPHREYS.

### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY HISTORICAL SOCIETY.

In the fall of 1867 a call was issued addressed to the old settlers, for a meeting to organize a county historical society. On the evening of October 26, those interested assembled in the City Council rooms, when Horatio Chapin was called to the chair, and W. J. Holloway appointed secretary. Dr. L. Humphreys then read the call, which was signed by George F. Layton, W. J. Holloway, Thomas S. Stanfield, L. M. Taylor, P. B. Boon, Charles Morgan, John Brownfield, L. Humphreys, A. Bugbee, J. G. Bartlett, William L. Barrett, John T. Lindsey, John Reynolds, Mark Whinery, Elisha Egbert, Charles M. Tutt, Benjamin Wall, E. S. Reynolds, Jacob Hardinan, B. F. Price, J. N. Massey, R. Burroughs, Elliot Tutt, Matthias Stover, J. A. Henricks, Daniel Green, D. Dayton, D. A. Veasey, C. W. Martin, Schuyler Colfax, Francis R. Tutt, William Miller, Horatio Chapin.

At this meeting Messrs. Stanfield, Humphreys, Egbert, Hardman and Miller were appointed a committee to draft a constitution and by-laws for the government of the society. A resolution was then adopted inviting all early settlers and all old citizens of St. Joseph county to transmit to the County Historical Society, when organized, in meeting or otherwise, so much of their personal history as would be of general interest, and such facts as they may be in possession of, in relation to the early settlement of their respective localities and neighborhoods, in order that such facts and incidents may be collected and placed upon the records of the society when properly organized.

On the second day of November an adjourned meeting was held, at which time the committee on constitution and by-laws reported. The following is the constitution adopted:

SEC. 1. This society shall be known by the name of the "St. Joseph County Historical Society." Its object is to collect the early and correct history of St. Joseph valley, and especially St. Joseph county, and to preserve the same in a durable form.

SEC. 2. The officers of the society shall consist of a president and vice-president, who shall be elected for the period of one year. The president shall preside at all meetings of the society, and in his absence one of the vice-presidents shall preside in his place. There shall be a secretary whose business it shall be to keep the minutes of the proceedings of this society. There shall also be a

corresponding secretary, whose duty it shall be to conduct the correspondence of the society, and receive all communications directed to the society, and lay the same before it at its next regular meeting thereafter, and discharge all other duties that the society may require. There shall also be a treasurer, whose duty it shall be to receive and pay out the funds of the society in pursuance of any resolution thereof; and a librarian, whose duty it will be to take care of and preserve the books, papers and manuscripts belonging to the society, and to discharge such other duties as may be required of him, provided that the secretary may discharge the duties of librarian. Said officers shall be elected by ballot, and hold their respective offices for the period of one year, and until their successors are elected and qualified. The following named persons are hereby declared to be the officers elect for the first year, to wit: Horatio Chapin, President; Elisha Egbert, Daniel Dayton, John A. Henricks, Vice-Presidents; William H. Drapier, Secretary and Librarian; Thomas S. Stanfield, Corresponding Secretary; John T. Lindsey, Treasurer. The subsequent annual elections shall be held in South Bend, on the first Saturday of November in each year.

SEC. 3. At the first meeting in each year there shall be appointed the following Standing Committees of three members each, to wit: on Collation, on Correspondence, on Revision, on Membership.

SEC. 4. Any person of adult age may become a member of this society, who shall unanimously be recommended by the Committee on Membership, and pay the admission fee required of members.

SEC. 5. To defray the expenses of the society, the admission fee for membership shall be one dollar, and each member shall pay the treasurer at the first annual meeting the sum of one dollar.

SEC. 6. The meetings of the society shall be on the first Saturday evening of each month, in the city of South Bend.

SEC. 7. Five members shall constitute a quorum to do business.

SEC. 8. The society shall have power to make all the by-laws, rules and regulations it may deem necessary for its government, not inconsistent with the constitution, and by a two-thirds' vote of those present at an adjourned meeting may alter or amend this constitution.

The second regular meeting of the society was held Saturday evening Jan. 4, 1868, when the following resolution and statement of points on which information was desired was adopted:

*Resolved*, That each member of this society, and each individual to whom this circular is addressed, be requested to furnish to our society a short historical sketch in answer to the following questions, in the order in which they stand, so far as he has any information on the subject matter of each question:

1. State the place and date of your birth, the nationality of your father and mother and names in full, and the maiden name of your mother.

2. When and how long did you attend school or college? What was the character or kind of school-houses, teachers (male or female) and books in use when you attended school? How far was the school-house from your place of residence? Give any information in regard to the schools attended by you that you may regard of interest.

3. At what date did you first settle in the St. Joseph valley? At what places have you resided since, and how long in each place; the number of inhabitants in any village in which you reside at any date you can give? Or if you settled in the country give the names of your neighbors, and the distance of their residence from yours. The distance to your nearest school-house or church, with a description of the buildings used for such purposes. What was the character of the land on which you settled or lived at any time? Was it thick timber, openings or prairie? How does the fertility of the soil when first cultivated compare with its present productiveness? What fertilizers have you used and what one do you prefer? What kind of crops have you considered the most profitable, and what kind have you raised principally? What kind of implements have you used for farming purposes in the St. Joseph valley at various dates? What ones do you now consider the most useful and profitable? What kind of fruits have you raised, and what is the result of your experience as to the adaptation of the soil and climate for the cultivation of the different fruits? What kinds can be profitably raised

here and how do you protect them in the winter? What kinds of live stock have you raised, and what kind do you consider the most profitable? Give any other information in any way connected with farming interests that you may think useful or important.

4. Merchants, lawyers, physicians, ministers, school-teachers, mechanics and artisans of all kinds are requested to give a short history of the introduction, progress, incidents and present condition of the various professions and acts carried on in St. Joseph valley,—the name of the first person who opened or commenced any business or profession; the fees and prices charged at various dates; the means and facilities of receiving and shipping of goods and produce, and all matters of interest, and your opinions arising upon such facts, in any way connected with the mercantile profession or mechanical business of the St. Joseph valley, from its earliest date to the present time.

5. Give an account of any and all important events within your knowledge, such as rain, hail, wind or snow storms, accidents, casualties of any kind, exciting election events, political meetings, camp-meetings, early military parades and operations, etc., etc., being particular as to names and dates.

6. You are also requested to give, in a separate paper the history of any of your friends and neighbors, who may have died in the St. Joseph valley, following as far as convenient the course indicated in the foregoing questions.

Your response to these questions will be read to the society and carefully preserved for future use.

All relics, such as old newspapers, magazines, printed or written documents, and all articles of curiosity found in the St. Joseph valley will be thankfully received and carefully preserved.

Interesting meetings were held from time to time by the society and some valuable information gathered. Occasionally a member was called upon to furnish a sketch upon a topic specified, and as a specimen, is given below from the pen of Dr. Humphrey's, an essay upon

#### THE FIRST BRICK HOUSE IN SOUTH BEND.

"The first brick house in South Bend is our subject for the present occasion, and might be termed in geological language *the primitive brick period or era*. The first *residence* of brick was built in the summer and fall of 1831, and still exists on Main street, one door south from the southeast corner of Main and Water streets, on the west half of lot No. 11, original plat of South Bend. It is now owned and occupied by our fellow citizen who bears the name of that distinguished philanthropist, Gerrit Smith, but does not claim relationship by consanguinity, as our Garret Smith descended from *Gallic* nationality, as he is said to have asserted, by virtue of his having resided for a number of years in that ancient French town, Vincennes, Indiana. It must be borne in mind that the locality of this house and its surroundings were commons at the time of its erection, a level plateau of land ornamented by a natural growth of oak trees, single or in groups, winding in and about which were 'Indian trails,' and chance road ways of the white settlers.

"Frederick Bainter, formerly from Montgomery county, Ohio, near Dayton, of German origin, projected, planned, erected and exercised ownership of the house, whose history we now attempt to write. Horace Wood, a bricklayer and plasterer of excellent

skill, and a rapid workman, was its builder. He is well remembered by the early inhabitants of South Bend and St. Joseph county as the builder of the old court-house. In after years he moved to Dormine Prairie, in La Porte county, Indiana; thence to Kankakee Rapids, thence to Minnesota; emigrated to California by way of the plains in 1849 or 1850; built a brick house at Marysville, California; subsequently returned to his home in Minnesota, and died there some years since. The bricks for the Bainter house, as near as can be ascertained, were made by Horace Wood, the clay for which was obtained from the mouth of a ravine upon the west bank of the St. Joseph river, near where the west abutment of the present river bridge is located, and carried by a flat boat up stream to a brick yard, then situated about where the South Bend Iron Works are now. The lime used in the construction of this house was burned from boulders obtained from the river. The lime kiln was in an embankment upon the lot where Mr. Lemen now resides, southwest corner Main and Water streets. It appears from this that the value of marl beds with which this country abounds was not then understood for the purpose of making lime as is now the case. The lumber was furnished from the saw-mill of Elijah Lacy, at the mouth of Dowagiac creek, on the east side of the St. Joseph river, in the vicinity of Niles, Michigan. It could not be ascertained by whom the carpenter work was done. It was unquestionably done by some 'old-style workman' as its order indicates.

"Nearly cotemporary, or soon after Bainter's house was built, were erected two small brick buildings for office purposes, one by Levi F. Arnold, then a justice of the peace, and located on the south side of Water, between Maine and Michigan streets; the other by Col. L. M. Taylor, then clerk of the court, and situated on Michigan street, where the saddle and harness shop of C. W. Martin now is. But these structures have long since been demolished, and shared the fate of the temples at Ephesus, Karnack and Baalbec; and the Bainter house proudly asserts its claims to the pioneer structure, from materials similar to that manufactured by the ancient Israelites under the despotic rule of their cruel Egyptian task-masters, and like unto that of which the tower of Babel was built. But unlike the Babylonish tower, this domicile of advanced civilization in its day, was reared without confusion of tongues, although the English, German, French, Pottawatomie and Hoosier dialects were daily heard in the community at that time.

"The style of architecture of the Bainter-Smith house next claims attention. It is not Doric, Ionic, Corinthian, Composite, nor is it Babylonish, after the style of the temple of Belna, Kasr, or the hanging gardens that Nebuchadnezzar built for his Lydian bride. It is not copied after Oriental architecture, or Chinese, where pagodas are only imitations of the design of the Nomadic tent. It is that style that Dr. Holland believes does not particularly please the Great Architect, though the Doctor will not venture an opinion

that the Creator of all things absolutely hates the style after which our pioneer brick house was fashioned, namely the quadrilateral or square style.

"Four walls, each 18 feet in length, two stories high, roofed with shingles, without cornice or projections at the eaves or gables, a wide chimney at one end and no front door, constitute the exterior of this venerable structure, located upon the interior line of the sidewalk. Each story contained but one room, the lower seven and the upper eight feet from floor to ceiling. A wide open fire-place in each story, for warmth and ventilation; two windows, each 12 lights, of 8x10 glass, in the upper story, and one of the same size in the lower story next the street; one window of the same size of those described and a door in the lower story, and two windows and a door of like dimensions in the upper story upon the east or rear side of the house, complete the interior. The *front* doors were in the *rear* of the house, the entrance being by the lower door only, and no means of access to the upper door by steps or stairs outside. Thus stands to-day this unpretending structure, once regarded as a comfortable, cozy family residence, a venerable witness of all that transpired in the thirty-eight eventful years of the past.

"From the fall of 1831 to Feb. 12, 1833, the elder Bainter and his family while ensconced within its walls were looked upon almost with envy by the passer-by, as the aristocratic dwellers in the first brick house in town; the head of the family was regarded by common consent as 'Frederick the Great,' in the community of this then embryo city. From February, 1833, to some time in the year 1835, this house was owned and occupied by Captain Samuel L. Cottrell, who was the first sheriff of the county. When Cottrell came in possession he found the house unplastered. He immediately erected the frame addition in the rear of the house as it now stands, thus adding two rooms, one above and one below, each 10x18, with two windows on the east above and below, same size as those described, and the house was then plastered throughout. Horace Wood did the plastering, and William Creviston, assisted by E. C. Johnson, did the carpenter and joiner work. Creviston is yet remembered by our early settlers; he usually bore the cognomen of 'Bill Creviston,' was a good workman, and a rollicking, jolly fellow. He subsequently moved to Wisconsin, thence to California, and returning from thence, is said to be now living in his Wisconsin home. In February, 1833, Frederick Bainter relinquished the ownership, as has been stated. He continued to reside in the town and vicinity until the year 1838, when he died at his home about one mile south of South Bend, at the junction of Michigan and La Porte roads. He was a quiet, respectable citizen, esteemed by his neighbors and friends.

"During the residence of Captain Cottrell in this house, amongst other pursuits engaged in by him was the keeping of a family grocery in a building one door south of his house, where Mr. Menssel now resides. James Burnett, a 'half breed' (French and



Indian), boarded in the family of Captain Cottrell while they lived in this house. In the year 1834 Burnett fell sick and died, and his remains were the first adult citizen interred in the present city cemetery. His grave is now unknown, and he was the first 'pioneer settler' in that now numerously populated 'City of the Silent Dead,' where lie buried the household treasures of so many of our people.

"The following constitute the list of owners of the Bainter-Smith house from February, 1835, to the present time: A. Coquillard, Sr., and Francis Comparet; 1838, John T. Smith; 1839, A. Coquillard, Sr.; 1841, John D. Defrees, and the same year Coquillard again; 1844, State Bank of Indiana; 1845, Farmers' & Mechanics' Bank of Michigan; also within that year John Totman, James Benham and Herman Ball, in the order named; 1847, Robert Hyslop, of New York city; in 1849 Hyslop conveyed to Garret and Isaac Smith; the former as has been stated, is its present owner and occupant.

"It was quite impossible to obtain a complete list of all the families who have occupied this house subsequent to Captain Cottrell's residence in it. In 1837, and for some time subsequent, John Rush and family resided in it. The writer of this took dinner with the Rush family here in July, 1837. John Rush, to distinguish him from others of that name, was generally known as 'Black John,' or 'John, the Dusky,' from his exceedingly dark complexion. He was for some years one of our most prominent merchants and business men, and was at one time associated in business with our fellow-citizen, Dr. John A. Henricks. About the year 1850 Rush, with his wife, moved to California, where both died of cholera soon after their arrival in that country. In 1838, known all over the West as the 'sickly season,' Norman Campbell and his family occupied the lower apartments of this house. During the fall of that year, a widowed relative of the writer with her family occupied the upper portion of the house. In October, 1838, the author of this paper had a bitter experience from an attack of remittent fever of about four weeks' duration. Amongst other mental vagaries incident to fever was that for some days *four* other adult persons occupied jointly with him his sick bed. The sense of crowding and want of room was almost unendurable, especially in so small a house. During this time, a young man, a school-teacher by profession, died of the prevailing disease, in the lower part of the house, while a boarder in the family of Norman Campbell; his name is not now remembered, and he doubtless fills a nameless and unknown grave. Norman Campbell's trade or occupation was the same as that of U. S. Grant, a tanner and currier. He worked as a journeyman for a number of years for Captain Day, and subsequently moved to Benton, Elkhart county, at which place he is probably yet living.



"About the years 1840-'42 Captain Lot Day occupied this house. He resided here when Sheriff of this county. After a long residence in this city and vicinity, engaging in various kinds of business, one of which was tanning, as has been stated, holding the offices of Sheriff, County Commissioner and State Senator, respectively, he, with most of his family, subsequently moved to California. There were other occupants of the house besides those mentioned, whose names could not be ascertained. From the long catalogue of owners and occupants of this house, it can be seen in what estimation it was held, embracing, as it does, merchants and business men, lawyers, banking institutions, office-holders and politicians—the last proprietor before the present owner and occupant of philanthropic name being no less than one of New York's merchant princes. And if any class of men can estimate the present and prospective value of real estate, where would they more likely be found than in the great commercial metropolis of this country, that boasts of its unapproachable Broadway and incomparable Fifth Avenue! The investment was doubtless made by Robert Hyslop as a profitable one, as his shrewd, keen, visual optics scanned the sky-line of South Bend's future, even at that early day.

"The several occupants of this house ought to have been an upright people, exemplary in their conduct and zealous of good works. Just across the street, and nearly opposite the Bainter-Smith house, once stood the old Methodist Episcopal Church, erected in 1836, and from whose tower first rang out the musical tones of the first 'church-going bell' to the inhabitants of this portion of the St. Joseph valley, reminding them of their dearly cherished native homes, now widely separated from them by leagues of distance, then traversed by no railroad or telegraph lines, and but few stage coaches. From the pulpit of this early sanctuary were poured forth in terms often of great eloquence, expositions of the 'glorious gospel of the great Teacher and Divine Redeemer of depraved and fallen humanity, wherewith believers are made free,' by a distinguished roll of Methodist divines, which, let us hope, benefited the denizens of the Bainter-Smith house, 'wayside hearers' though they may have often been, and that, too, by their own hearth and fireside.

"As Napoleon first said to his army in Egypt, when pointing to the pyramids: 'Forty centuries look down upon your achievements of to-day,' so we can say, forty years look down upon us from the walls of that venerable structure, upon which, if all the events of its years were inscribed, would cover them within and without, with records of the dead past. May its foundations never crumble, may no earthquake rend it, or tornado mar its modest proportions, or lightning scathe it, or devouring conflagration scorch it. Palsied be the hand that may ruthlessly despoil or remove this ancient land-mark of South Bend's early civilization."

## PIONEER MEETINGS.

The old settlers of St. Joseph county held one of their annual meetings at South Bend, Friday, Oct. 2, 1874. This meeting was very largely attended, owing to its being held at a time when many were in attendance at the various fairs then being held. Music was furnished by the South Bend Cornet Band. Dr. John A. Henricks was made chairman. After a few introductory remarks, the gathering sung a beautiful parody of "Auld Lang Syne," written by "Malcolm Duncan" (Mrs. Flora L. Stanfield), who presided over the organ on the occasion.

## "AULD LANG SYNE."

Should all our old friends be forgot,  
And never brought to mind?  
Should all our old friends be forgot  
And the days of auld lang syne?

## CHORUS:

For auld lang syne, my dear,  
For auld lang syne;  
Let us pledge anew each friend that's here,  
For the sake of auld lang syne.

We'll share again our early joys,  
Our early griefs resign,  
And be the happy girls and boys  
That we were in auld lang syne.

And in the crystal waters clear,  
Without a thought of wyne,  
We'll toast the old acquaintance here,  
And drink to auld lang syne.

And when upon our lowly graves  
The summer sun shall shine,  
May Heaven's grace not quite efface  
The thoughts of auld lang syne.

## CHORUS:

For auld lang syne, my dear,  
For auld lang syne;  
Let us pledge anew each friend that's here,  
For the sake of auld lang syne.

Judge Stanfield, as president of the society, was expected to deliver an address. Being unavoidably absent he prepared a written discourse, which was read by Dr. Humphreys. The latter gentleman delivered the address of the occasion the following September.

*Fellow Citizens:*—These reunions forcibly remind us that time is flying. I can hardly realize that I have lived here nearly forty-four years—almost half of the life of this great Republic. Forty-four years ago it had only thirteen millions of people, now over forty millions. Then the north half of this State and northwestern

Ohio, nearly all of Michigan, two-thirds of Illinois, all of Wisconsin, Minnesota, and the great West, now divided up into numerous and populous States, were almost an unbroken solitude, just in the wild condition it had been from the beginning. The time seems long in personal experience, but forty-four years is only a dot in human existence. Short as it is in the life of a people, it has abounded in wonderful work. We ought to feel thankful that we have been permitted to live in an age when all the activities of life have been so quickened by railroad, telegraph, and the thousands of other inventions, saving labor and cheapening productions, and at the same time increasing the price of labor.

"This 'St. Joseph country' as it was then called, was from a hundred to two hundred miles beyond the frontier settlement. At that time emigrants were coming in from the southeastern part of this State, and the central and southwestern parts of Ohio. The distance to be traveled was from two hundred to two hundred and fifty miles, most of it through a heavy timbered country, level and swampy, the road narrow, and without bridges, and almost impassable in wet weather. Many, like us, came late in the fall of 1830, and were delayed by the bad roads until nearly winter. We crossed the St. Joseph river just below the mouth of the Elkhart, in the latter part of November. The ford was deep and crooked, but we managed to get over safely, and made our way up the Christiana to Diamond lake. The creek was our only guide. There was no road, but the country was open and level. The reason for going to Diamond lake was because Young's Prairie lay close by, where there were abundant crops that could be relied on for the winter. We pitched our tent (made of the wagon cover) on the north side of the lake, and commenced building a cabin near that of another family who had preceded us a few months. Before we could get our cabin up and covered, heavy rains set in, winding up on the 5th of December with a fall of snow twenty-eight inches deep, which, with large accumulations, remained until the first of April. It was the coldest winter ever experienced in this country. This neighboring family that preceded us consisted of a husband and wife, with six or seven children, all living in a cabin not over twenty feet square, total strangers to us and as poor as we were; but when they saw us (a family about the same size) exposed in our little tent to the cold, pelting storms of approaching winter, their generous hearts were filled with sympathy for their destitute and suffering neighbors. At their urgent request the two families were united in one cabin until our own was ready for use, all eating at the same table without a thought as to who furnished the most provisions or did the most of the housework. I shall always remember and fondly cherish the disinterested goodness of this unpretentious family. The father and mother have long since departed, and the children scattered I know not where. This incident will no doubt awaken in the memories of the old settlers recollections of the heartiness of backwoods hospitalities. And while

looking back over the road we have traveled these forty odd years, faces and characters will spring up before us that we once loved and cherished, but now almost faded away from our memories. Still it is a pleasure to contemplate them in the deep, dark, misty past—their follies all forgotten, and only their virtues remembered.

“During that winter what little stock we had was fed on brouse, the tops of trees—a good substitute for hay when there is none. In the spring we moved down to Harris’s prairie, enjoying the hospitalities of Jacob Harris and his family, as kind and good-hearted people as ever lived. Mr. Harris was the first settler on the prairie, and I am glad the name of so good a man is perpetuated by it. This little prairie was nearly a mile in diameter, almost round, and surrounded by burr-oak and hickory bushes. It was a perfect gem in beauty and fertility. After putting in a crop of corn, we moved to South Bend in June, 1831, where my home has been ever since. There is no place on God’s footstool dearer to me than this town of South Bend and St. Joseph county. Its prosperity, and the good fortune of all in it, is mine. I rejoice in the success of every one of its citizens, and feel proud of the reputation given it by its successful business men, such as the Studebakers, Singers, James Oliver, Alexis Coquillard, the Birdsells, and other manufacturers of less notoriety, who command respect and confidence everywhere. The prosperity of such enterprising men, directly or indirectly, benefits us all. Envy and jealousy are the meanest passions of the human heart. Let no citizen of South Bend entertain such feeling toward any other citizen who by honest means excels him in the race for wealth and reputation. It is no disparagement to the good character of one, that he is outdone by another in one particular direction; perhaps in other avenues of life he is the superior. Our true policy is to help each other, and do all we can to help the whole as a community. When new men come in seeking a location for business, when their characters are all right, we should encourage and uphold them, though they may be engaged in a rival business, and if they get ‘hard up’ by spreading out too much, we should indulge them and help them out as far as we can. Always speak well of them and hope for their success. The municipal authorities should always be liberal and just in fostering our manufacturing interest, treating the old establishment with the same consideration they offer to new ones as an inducement to come in. Let us all unite in one common enterprise in behalf of the city. If we differ in opinion, the minority ought to yield without a trace of bitterness being left behind, and as soon as the object of the majority is accomplished, they too should obliterate all memory of the division. We have never been cursed with rings and cliques, and woe be to the man or set of men who shall dare to so divide our people.

“There was not a house between South Bend and Harris’s Prairie, not even a wagon road, in the spring of 1831. We came down along the north side of the big marsh, and forded the river a few

rods below St. Mary's, and then came along the edge of Portage, and then struck off into town—such as it was. The whole town plat was covered with oak and hickory trees. There was but one house on Michigan street, a story-and-a-half house, where Peter Johnson kept tavern. Alexis Coquillard had the frame of the house up where Joseph Miller now resides.

“On Pearl street, where E. P. Taylor now lives, was Lilley's tavern, a two-story, hewed-log house, the spaces between the logs in the upper story still open. On the south side of Pearl street, at its junction with Washington, Benjamin Coquillard also kept a tavern. A good many people were coming in looking up lands to enter, and it required a good many little taverns to accommodate them. Alexis Coquillard had several cabins on the bank of the river, on the lots now occupied by Worden, Pine and others, where he then resided and kept an Indian trading post. Hanna & Taylor had an Indian store on Pearl street, nearly opposite the present residence of E. P. Taylor. Simeon Mason had commenced a tannery on the Menssel property, near the standpipe. I am not sure, but think Solomon Barkdoll had a log house on the lot now owned by Franz Bauer. Thomas St. Comb lived on the bank of the river near where W. L. Barret now resides, and a man by the name of Nedean lived back between Michigan and Main streets, near Centre. Samuel Martin, the proprietor of Martin's addition, was the only person living on that addition. The houses I have named embraced all in the town of South Bend when I first saw it. A good many people soon after came in, and then 20 or 30 houses were built that summer. There were several other families living outside the town plat. Joseph Rohrer and his family were living under a shed on the lot now occupied by James Henry; Oliver Bennett was living on the Wadham place; Col. Hiram Dayton, near where Adam Baker's new house now stands; Major Larue, on the bank of the river, on the John Veasey place; Henry Stull, where David Bowman now lives; Samuel Leeper, on the Kankakee out-lot where it is crossed by the Michigan road. The south half of the county was an unbroken forest; so was all the country between here and the Wabash. Portage Prairie, Snmption's Prairie and Terre Coupee had a few settlers scattered around the edge of them. The first emigrants to the prairies selected their lands adjacent to the timber, and to protect themselves and cattle from the severe storms of winter, built in the woods near by.

“For several years the middle portion of the prairies were left open and unobstructed by fences. There were only here and there a few settlers between South Bend and the east line of Illinois. The whole of this territory was, at that time, attached to St. Joseph county for municipal purposes. It was really still a wild Indian country just beginning to attract emigration. Its beauty and fertility soon became widely known, and emigration poured in rapidly from all quarters. The county seemed to be flourishing until the panic of 1837, when every enterprise was flattened. Then came the

sickly season of 1838 which about laid us all out. It was a very different thing in settling a new country then from what it is now. There were no railroads to the frontiers. There was not fifty miles in the United States. Now there are over sixty thousand. It took us longer to pass over the Black Swamp, in Ohio, though only twelve miles wide, than it now takes to go by rail from here to Kansas. It is no wonder that Kansas and Nebraska have settled up more rapidly than Indiana and Illinois. The railroads have not only furnished a great deal quicker and cheaper transportation, but a ready market for the productions of the country. Without them the fertile lands of the Mississippi and Missouri, and back from these rivers, would still have been the hunting grounds of the Indians, unmolested by white men, and Chicago and St. Louis third-rate cities. Without them this county would have been twenty years behind its present condition. There are undoubtedly individual and local instances where railroad companies are unjust and oppressive, but the general results of railroads upon the country at large has been so strikingly beneficial, that I think the general complaint is a little unjust.

"For several years before the Michigan Southern & Northern Indiana railroad was built, twenty-five cents was considered a good price for corn, twenty cents for oats, forty to sixty cents for wheat, one and a half to two cents for pork and beef, three to five dollars a ton for hay, and butter and small fruits hardly worth anything. I bought the first wood used on the railroad in this county—four hundred cords—and paid eighty-seven and a half cents per cord for body wood, and seventy-five cents for second quality. That was the market price. Wood-haulers, what has the railroad done for you? But if they carried your wood to Chicago for the same rate as they bring lumber here, you would make us pay eight dollars instead of five dollars per cord. But there is nothing unjust to you in that. This you will admit when you consider that railroads are the largest consumers of wood in the country, and that the increased price would cost them more than all the freight they would receive for carrying it. You would do precisely the same thing if placed in similar circumstances. Powerful corporations may at times be oppressive, and extort, but the great regulator, competition, is the safest governor. When you come to regulate by law prices and values, you are treading on unsafe ground. Every man affected by it regards it as unjust and oppressive, and will do all in his power to evade it. Considering the great good railroads have done the country, let us deal with them as we do in other business.

"I have only time to talk of the settlers of 1831. The late Horatio Chapin was our first general dry-goods merchant. He commenced business in July or August in a small hewed-log house on St. Joseph street, where the widow of John Massey now resides. Massey and Samuel Eaton started a blacksmith shop on the same lot. Chapin's store, the blacksmith shop, Lilley's tavern and Taylor's Indian store made St. Joseph street then the business street of

the town. The late Elisha Egbert was our first lawyer and school-teacher. He taught me to 'read, write and cipher.' Rev. Nehemiah B. Griffith was our first Methodist preacher, a man of a good deal of native ability. Rev. S. T. Badeau, our first Catholic priest, a hale, hearty, genial old man, who had spent his life as a missionary among the Indians. I heard him say he was the first Catholic priest ordained in America.

"In the fall of this year South Bend was attracting a good deal of attention. A weekly newspaper, the *Northwestern Pioneer*, was started by John D. Defrees and his brother Joseph, the latter now an honored citizen of Elkhart county, but it was ahead of its time. It withered and died. It was in that office our respected townsman Lea P. Johnson learned to set type. Mr. Defrees now lives in Washington. Dr. Jacob Hardman was our first physician. He is, I am happy to say, still above ground, hale and hearty, and well known as one of the white-bearded patriarchs of the town. Nearly all the men of that day have departed. Many of them lived until within the last few years,—one by one gently dropping away, until now L. M. Taylor, E. P. Taylor, Benjamin Coquillard and Dr. Hardman are all that I now remember remaining here, and but few who then lived out in the country are surviving; but among the number Henry Stull, John Druliner, Jacob Rush, B. Druliner, George Holloway, John Rupel, Jacob Ritter and John Squires are all that occur to me now.

"If I had time I would like to say something of such good men as Reynolds Dunn, Dr. Harvey Humphreys, Dr. Leonard Rush, John Egbert, Elisha Egbert, Horatio Chapin, Alexis Coquillard, George Reynolds, Peter Johnson, John Massey, Samuel Good, Aaron and David Miller, John T. McClelland, Jacob Bowman, and many others of the departed. The mere mention of their names will be enough to call them up before you, and to freshen their portraits in your minds, and you will then in imagination see them again as you used to see them moving about amongst you, living, active men."

In September, 1875, another meeting was held, at which the President, Dr. Humphreys, delivered the following address:

"*Ladies and Gentlemen:*—To-day we halt briefly by the way, in our rush over life's rugged journey. From these days of railroads and telegraphs, of almost countless daily mails and daily newspapers; of the transit from New York to Chicago in 26 hours; from the dash and roar of multitudinous wheels in our manufactories; of water-works, sewers, fire brigades, and firemen's tournaments; of palatial residences and business houses; of furnaces, base-burning coal stoves, cooking ranges and cooking stoves; of gas-lighted and paved streets; of friction matches and steam threshing-machines, grain and clover separators; of mowers by horse-power, self-raking and binding reaping machines; of Oliver chilled and all other kinds of steel and iron plows; of Studebaker,



Chockelt and Coquillard wagons and carriages; of patent statesman and other grain drills and horse-power sulky rakes, and cultivators; of spinning jacks and jennies, and woolen and cotton factories; of paper by millions of miles in sheets, or by tons in weight; of sewing-machines of all kinds (except feminine); of household furniture, elegant, fanciful and varied in styles as the changes in the kaleidoscope; of large and numerous church edifices, school, educational and manufacturing structures; costly and fashionable wearing apparel; of extensive and well-cultivated farms, elegant farm houses and barns; of large orchards and small-fruit plantations; of the contemplation of individual and corporate wealth, banks and moneyed institutions; of fire and life insurance companies and agencies; of populous counties, towns, cities and cemeteries; of the careless selfishness of crowded populations and varied pursuits of life, and the thousand unnamed surroundings of the day; we turn away for a short time to contemplate the rapidly receding past, in our histories as individuals and communities.

"To-day memory will reproduce startling memories of by-gone years with startling vividness. To-day faces, figures and characters, long since faded from recollection, will take their places in our panoramic vision. Once again will come memories of the old-style prairie-schooner wagons, drawn by oxen, as moving vehicles, filled with household goods, women and children, live stock in train in slow-creeping pace, over roads not made with hands. To these will be added the camp-fires by night and the wayside haltings by day, for rest and refreshment for man and beast; the location and purchase of homes, for which, sometimes, a horseback ride at Gilpin speed to the land office was requisite; then again, the hastily built log cabin will appear, with rudely constructed furniture of rough boards or poles, lighted by night by the improvised broken saucer or tea-cup lamp, of lard or 'possum fat, or grease of the raccoon for illuminating substitutes. Near by will be seen the wood-curbed well with its old style sweep (no driven wells or pumps, propelled by patent wind engines then). Upon the plain, prairie or green slopes, the fresh furrow, by primitive plows drawn by several yoke of oxen, in dark lines will come again, or, perchance, the forest clearings, log-rollings or log heaps lighting up the midnight sky will be produced. The memory of the one or two days' journey to some far-off mill, with the family grist of corn or wheat (usually corn) to be ground, will pass before some of us. The staple articles of food—pork, wild game and fish, potatoes, dried apples, cranberry sauce, bread of Indian meal, rye for coffee, sometimes mixed with the 'boughten article,' with brown sugar or wild honey—will once more take their places on store-box tables.

"To-day visions will pass before some of us of the barshear plow, the wooden-toothed drag, the flail, or circus performance of horses on barn floor or ground, in tramping out the grain from the straw, the plain shovel plow, the three or four pound hoe, the grain sickles, with baby cradles of sugar troughs, the hand rake, the flax-break,



scutching board, the hackle, the little wheel and rack, or distaff, with its musical whir to the mother's nursery song morning and evening, and often heard at the midnight hour; the sheep-shearing, the hand-cards, the woolen rolls from the carding machine, the 'big wheel' with its spasmodic hum, the flitting forward or backward of the Jameses or Marys, traveling miles in a day as the soft rolls dwindled into threads of uniform size, counting the 'cnts' of yarn by dozens before each day's sunset; the domestic dying of yarn by the matron, whose hands showed the tints and colors for weeks; the hand loom, with its periodic knocks and interludes of rattling, squeaking treadles; the domestic flannels and home-made jeans and cloths to be fashioned by female skill into wearing apparel; the domestic millinery, sun-bonnets, calashes and flats for ladies; hats of straw braided and sewed by mother and the girls, for father and the boys; the home-made socks and stockings, knit as an amusement by the women during their gossiping hours of rest and repose; the slippers of cloth, soled with old saddle-skirts, or felt from old woolen hats, for the women; for the men, moccasins, or stoga boots or shoes, made in odd hours by some artisans, or by Sam Jones, who farmed when the sun was out, and made shoes when it rained. Once more the old-fashioned open fire-place will shine upon us with its cheery light and genial warmth; the evening domestic circle about it of from half to one dozen children sandwiched by visiting representatives of the nearest neighbors; topics for discussion by the elders and middle-aged, the lecturers of those times—crops, farming, breaking prairie, clearing forest, prices of land and their prospective value, wild game, hunting achievements, the latest news from former far-off native homes, preparations to move to this country by friends and relatives, anticipated joy on their arrival, politics and religion. Visions of old-style kitchens will come up to-day; of antiquated deep and shallow kettles, ovens and spiders, with hooks of wood and iron, or the swinging crane to hang them on over the open fire in the old deep chimney upon stones, andirons or fire-dogs. To these were added a frying pan (everything was fried; a gridiron was a novelty then), then the Johnny-cake board, and in families well-to-do, the door-yards had an oval, mound-like 'Dutch oven' upon a platform, like a sentinel or altar to Ceres, a guarantee of an abundance of the staff of life. The flushed faces will again revisit us of the cooks of those times, bearing witness of the torrid climate in the kitchens, protected in part by deep sun-bonnets and other devices of feminine ingenuity. Evening corn-huskings, pumpkin pies, roast spare-ribs and quiltings will again loom upon our vision, when the sounds of the fiddle, with musical airs familiar to all but Strauss and Wagner, will ring out in tones giving inspiration to young and old in Money Musk, contra dances and the Virginia Reel. To all these will be added the log school-house and log church, often both in one, with puncheon floor and seats without backs, except when occupied, paper windows, and the wide, deep fire-place, whose hearth was the

shrine of Lares, before whom all the children were taught to worship. Before these will rise the 'Knight of the birch,' enthroned for these winter months, instilling into the pupilistic subjects about him the principles of 'Webster's Speller,' the 'Columbian Orator,' the 'English Reader,' 'Pike' and 'Daboll,' 'Murray' and 'Kirkham.' The various scenes and events will once more pass before us to-day, of the profitable dealings of some of our enterprising pioneers in the trade of furs and peltries with the numerous family of 'Mr. and Mrs. Lo' who once resided here. Our beautiful river St. Joseph will again swarm with little steamers, keel-boats, arks and barges, that once comprised a commerce of no small magnitude, and the only facility for exportation of the surplus produce of St. Joseph valley and the importation by way of the lakes, Chicago and the village of St. Joseph, of necessary supplies of groceries, drygoods, hardware, and much of our wearing apparel. Again will come before us the representatives of the newspaper press—at home—the *Northwestern Pioneer*, the *South Bend Free Press*, the *Mishawaka Bee*, the *Mishawaka Tocsin*, the *Free Soil Democrat*, a written local, '*Tom Thunderbunker*,' by name, the *Valley Register*, and *South Bend Forum*. From abroad, the *National Intelligencer*, Amos Kendall's *Union*, the *Richmond Whig* and *Enquirer*, *New York Courier*, *New York Enquirer*, *New York Herald*, *Cincinnati Gazette*, *Louisville Journal*, and our own State papers, nearly all weekly publications, with these budgets of news from five to ten days old from the Atlantic cities, and twenty to thirty days from Europe.

"To-day will come the remembrance of the time when the early emigrants, who had not forgotten their religion and principles of Christianity, began to group themselves in embryo Church organizations, each seeking his or her affinity in denominational preferences; then the store lofts and rooms in private houses for public worship; then primitive church buildings, and then still a better class of religious edifices, with bells upon them. Away up the river of time to-day, will come to some of us the sweet music of the first church bells (small and unpretentious though they were), sounding out in dying cadences memories of distant native homes, and recalling the hallowed scenes of boyhood and youth. To-day the pioneer preachers of the different church organizations will pass in review before us; camp-meeting scenes and surroundings, the frequent practical and often eloquent sermons of those times, as though the inspiration of a new country as God had made it, gave new energy, power and impulse to the leaders of the advance guards of Christianity.

"To all who were here in 1838, known since as *the* sickly season, when four-fifths of the population were sick, the sad scenes and sufferings of that year will pass in review with no pleasant memories, when whole families were prostrate, without often even one of the entire household being able to assist the others to a drink of cold water; when the grass actually grew in the principal streets of South Bend

from non-use; when the supplies of medicine failed and no more could be obtained, so remote were we from points from which supplies could be had, and so slow and imperfect were the facilities for bringing them to this frontier region; when the few of our inhabitants that were able to leave their rooms and houses went slowly about our streets like stalking ghosts, supported by canes, and protected by umbrellas from a blazing sun that was not obscured by rain clouds for a period of four months; when all the physicians of the country were sick, some of whom sacrificed themselves, literally dying at their post with their professional harness on; when entire fields of wheat and other crops went to waste, and were unharvested for want of laborers. But this panoramic view of that year of suffering has never and can never return again, for the reason that such a combination of causes can never again exist.

"To-day will return to us that noble trait in the character of the early settlers of this country, which, like charity, was the greatest and best of all their virtues, and covered a vast multitude of minor faults and imperfections, and, like the patriarchs of old, leaves a halo of glory and admiration around their memories. I allude to the generous hospitality, sincere sympathy, self-sacrificing desire to help each other, characteristic of them all, traits of character seldom found and almost crushed out and extinguished by the selfish, pushing, jostling pursuits of a comparatively crowded population of the present day.

"Patriarch pioneers and old settlers, the long roll of departed ones show that a large number from your ranks have passed through the valley and over the Jordan that marks the end of time, and their memories only live with us to-day. Let us emulate and cherish their virtues and forget their imperfections. Others of you are well down the sunset slope of life's journey. Some of you are almost touching the river's brink. May it be yours to say, 'Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil; for Thou art with me; Thy rod and Thy staff they comfort me.'

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE SOUTH BEND FUGITIVE SLAVE CASE.

In 1847 John Norris resided on the south branch of the Ohio river, about one mile and a half below the town of Lawrenceburg, Indiana. He claimed to own as slaves a family consisting of David Powell, his wife Lucy, and their four children, Lewis, Samuel, George and James. He permitted the family to cultivate a piece of ground and sell the produce where they pleased, and David and the boys were often seen in Lawrenceburg selling their produce.

During the night of Saturday, Oct. 9, 1847, David and his family disappeared from Kentucky. The alarm was given next morning, Sunday, and about forty persons started in pursuit. Norris and a party in his employ hunted through Southern Indiana for about two months without success, though they found articles of clothing belonging to the fugitives at several different places. In September, 1849, Norris started with a party of eight men, and about midnight of the 27th of that month, they forcibly broke into a house about eight miles from Cassopolis, in Cass county, Michigan, occupied by Mr. Powell's family. The house was in the woods about half a mile from any other dwelling. Mr. Powell and his son Samuel were absent from home at the time. Norris and his party drew their pistols and bowie knives, and compelled the mother and her three children to rise from their beds and follow them. Some they bound with cords, and hurrying them off to their covered wagons, they started post haste for Kentucky, leaving a portion of their company at the house to prevent the other inmates from giving the alarm. Lewis, the oldest son, had but recently been married, and was forcibly separated from his wife by the brutal gang. After awhile the alarm was given, and pursuit commenced; a neighbor, Mr. Wright Maudlin, overtook them about noon, near South Bend, Indiana, about thirty miles from where they had started. This was on Friday, the 28th of September. Mr. Maudlin immediately applied to E. B. Crocker, an attorney in South Bend, stated what he knew of the circumstances, that he had no doubt the family were free, that he had known them for some time as quiet and industrious persons, and never heard any intimation that they were slaves. They had purchased a small tract of land, on

which they resided at the time of their abduction, and were laboring hard to pay for it.

A petition for a writ of *habeas corpus* was drawn up, and signed, and sworn to, by Mr. Mandlin, setting forth that Mrs. Powell and Lewis Powell (as Mr. Mandlin did not then know with certainty how many of the family had been taken) were deprived of their liberty by some person whose name was unknown, under pretense that they were fugitive slaves, averring that he verily believed they were free persons. On this petition the Hon. Elisha Egbert, Probate Judge of St. Joseph county, who was authorized by a special statute to issue and try writs of *habeas corpus*, ordered that writ to issue. It was issued accordingly by the clerk, and placed in the hands of Russell Day, Deputy-Sheriff, for service. Mr. Day, learning that the Kentuckians were armed, called upon several citizens to accompany him in serving the writ. In the meantime the report having spread about that a party of kidnappers with their captives were in the vicinity, the whole town was aroused, and the people, in a high state of excitement, were running about, anxiously inquiring into the matter. The deputy sheriff with his company overtook the Kentuckians about one mile south of the town, where they had stopped in the bushes to feed their horses. They were all well armed, making quite a display of their weapons, and evincing at first a disposition to resist all legal proceedings. The writ was served by reading, and after considerable parley, in which they were made to understand most distinctly that they could not proceed without a fair trial of their claims, they at last consented to go back to town and proceed to trial on the writ. By this time about thirty or forty persons had arrived from town, two of whom brought guns, but no attempt to use them was made. A Mr. Frazier, with a gun in his hand, was met by Mr. Crocker, and told by him to put up his weapon, as it was no place for such things. Some of the citizens carried walking canes, but no force was used toward the Kentuckians, though the people were in a high state of excitement. Norris and his party at last drove back to town with their captives, followed by the Sheriff and the people. In the meantime a new writ of *habeas corpus* had been procured, directed to Mr. Norris, whose name had been ascertained, for all four of the captives, which was served upon him as soon as he arrived in town, the first writ having been dismissed. At the request of Norris, the deputy sheriff placed the captives in jail, until he could procure counsel. In a short time he procured the services of Messrs. Liston and Stanfield, two of the ablest lawyers in Northern Indiana, to conduct his defense. Messrs. Deavitt and Crocker appeared on behalf of the captives. Norris and his counsel appeared before the judge, who held his court in the court-house, and asked for time to enable them to prepare their defense, which was readily granted. After about an hour or more they again appeared, and made a return to the last writ of *habeas corpus*, sworn to by Mr. Norris.

It appearing from the return of Norris that he had not procured the certificate required by the act of Congress, the counsel for the captives, therefore, "excepted to the sufficiency of the return," as provided by the statute, distinctly stating to the judge that if this exception should be overruled they should then take issue upon the facts alleged in the return, and require Norris to prove all the facts therein. It will be noticed that the act of Congress is imperative in requiring the claimant to take the fugitives before some judge or magistrate of the State or county, "wherein such seizure or arrest shall be made," to procure the certificate.

The exception was ably argued on both sides until night, the counsel for the captives insisting that the law of '93 was the only remedy provided by Congress to recover fugitives from labor; that a claimant must strictly pursue its provisions to enable him to enforce his rights; that although by this law he had the right to seize or arrest, in the first instance, in the State where he might find the fugitive, yet, to enable him to hold his captive in another State, he must first procure a certificate in the State where the arrest was made, as provided by the law. The statute was plain in its provisions, and there was no misunderstanding it. On the other hand, it was contended that a claimant had a right to arrest any person whom he might claim as his slave, wherever he could find him, take him wherever he pleased, without any proof, certificate, warrant or process whatever; and if any one interfered or questioned the claim, they did it at their peril. No authority whatever was introduced to sustain this position, and the judge, after a full and candid hearing, sustained the exception and ordered the captives to be discharged.

The court-house was crowded with an anxious audience, listening to the argument and decision. Everything had been conducted with order and propriety, and no one, we presume, anticipated the scene which followed the announcement of the decision. The judge spoke in a very low tone of voice, so that but few could hear him. As soon, however, as he concluded, Mr. Crocker announced the decision in a loud tone of voice, that all could hear. Norris, in the meantime, had gathered his men around the captives as they were seated within the bar; and the moment the decision was announced, they seized the captives with one hand, brandished their weapons with the other, threatening to shoot the first man that interfered. This was while the judge was still sitting on the bench, and before any adjournment had been announced. Everything had been perfectly quiet up to this moment, but upon this display of force, the people rose to their feet highly excited. Some ran out and spread the alarm through town, others crowded around the Kentuckians and their captives, calling upon them to put up their weapons; but they continued brandishing them, threatening to shoot all who dared to oppose them. Mr. Liston, one of their counsel, jumped upon a table and called upon the Kentuckians to shoot all who interfered, and they would be justified in so doing. His language

was most violent and abusive toward the citizens and did much to fan the excitement. The citizens were entirely unarmed, and notwithstanding the excitement, no attempt was made to rescue the captives by force. At length the Kentuckians put up their weapons, the excitement subsided, and, at the request of Norris, the Sheriff took the captives and locked them up in jail for safe keeping.

It was now discovered that while the trial was pending Norris had procured a writ under a law of the State of Indiana respecting fugitives from labor, under which he claimed to hold them, and he alleged that he was but serving this writ when he drew his weapons upon the people.

This was on Friday evening. During the evening and the next day several warrants were issued against the Kentuckians for assaults and batteries, and one for riot, predicated upon their violent proceedings in the court-house. The whole of Saturday was occupied in trying these cases, and in the riot case they voluntarily gave bail to appear at the Circuit Court, which commenced its session the next Monday. Two suits were also commenced by the Powells against Norris and his party for trespass and false imprisonment, and they were held to bail in the sum of \$1,000 in each suit. One of their counsel entered himself as bail for them. On Saturday evening, the captives having been all this time in custody of the sheriff in jail, where Norris had placed them, another writ of *habeas corpus* was procured, returnable before the same judge at 8 o'clock on Monday morning.

In the neighborhood from whence these captives were taken, there is a large settlement of colored people, numbering, it is supposed, from 1,200 to 1,500 persons, many of whom are fugitives. As soon as it was known that Mr. Powell's wife and children had been carried off, several large parties, many of whom were armed, started in pursuit, but it was not until Saturday that they learned the direction taken. During Saturday and Sunday, numbers of these colored persons, estimated at from 75 to 200 persons, arrived at South Bend, many of them in a highly exasperated state, though they conducted themselves with great coolness and propriety under the circumstances.

On Saturday, a citizen of Michigan made affidavit before a justice of the peace in South Bend, that Norris and his party had been guilty of kidnapping in Michigan, and had fled from that State to Indiana. On this affidavit, a writ for their arrest was issued under a law of Indiana, which provides that, upon sufficient proof, a fugitive from justice may be committed to jail for one month, to await a requisition from the Governor of the State from whence he fled. This writ was placed in the hands of a constable, but was never served.

On Sunday morning Norris had a consultation with his attorneys, at which it was concluded that it would be useless to attempt to take his captives out of the county, in the face of so many



armed negroes; that they would abandon all legal proceedings, and endeavor to make the friends of the captives liable in damages for their value. Mr. Crocker, having been most active in befriending the negroes, was to be entrapped into some violation of the law, if possible. To carry out this scheme, on Sunday morning, they sent for the sheriff, and formally demanded the negroes of him, though they well knew that he had been served with a writ of *habeas corpus*, and that he would render himself liable to a fine of \$1,000 should he fail to obey the writ. He, of course, declined. They then requested him to take witnesses and call upon Mr. Crocker, and get him to agree to become responsible for not delivering them. He accordingly did so, but Mr. C. replied that he was acting as attorney, should do his duty fearlessly as such attorney, and should assume no other responsibility; that if he, the sheriff, refused to obey the writ of *habeas corpus*, the law should be enforced against him. This did not suit the conspirators.

During Sunday Mr. Liston called several times upon the constable, who had the writ, to arrest Norris and his party as fugitives from justice, and requested him to serve it, but he replied, that his orders were not to serve it unless they attempted to leave the town. It would seem that their object was to have Norris and his party arrested, and then offer that as an excuse for not appearing at the trial of the *habeas corpus* on Monday morning; but in this they were foiled, as they were at perfect liberty from Saturday night until they left town, several days after, and could have appeared at the trial had they seen proper.

During Saturday and Sunday Mr. Norris seemed very anxious to persuade the people that he was a kind and indulgent master, in order to create a favorable public opinion. In several different conversations he stated that he gave his negroes ground to cultivate for themselves, and many other privileges, that he permitted them to go to Lawrenceburg, in Indiana, whenever they pleased, to sell their garden stuff, and that they had taken advantage of this liberty to run away.

Early Monday morning Mr. Liston stated to Mr. Crocker that Norris was very anxious to prove, on the coming trial, that the negroes were his property, to satisfy the citizens. As the case stood, he could not legally introduce such testimony, for he claimed to hold them by a writ issued under a State law, which the U. S. Supreme Court had decided to be unconstitutional and void. The sheriff would be compelled in his return, to set up this writ, as his authority for holding them in custody, and an exception to the sufficiency of the return would raise the question, under which no evidence could be offered. The object of the request seems to have been to obtain a refusal to admit the testimony before the issue was made up, and then adduce that as evidence of an unwillingness to grant a fair trial. But in this they were foiled, for the request was immediately acceded to, Mr. Crocker stating that he was willing to waive all technical matters and rest the case upon the question



of freedom or slavery. This, however, did not suit their designs; for, when the trial came on, Norris refused to appear, saying that he did not want the negroes, that he could make the citizens pay for them, which was all he wanted.

The sheriff, in his return to the writ of *habeas corpus*, stated that he held the captives in custody, as the agent of Norris, under the State writ, which was set forth in full. A replication to this return was filed, sworn to by Lewis Powell, excepting to the sufficiency of the return, and alleging that they were free persons and not slaves. One of Norris' attorneys and several of his party were present at the trial, but refused to appear for Norris. The case of *Prigg vs. Pennsylvania*, 16th Peters' Reports, in which the U. S. Supreme Court declare that all laws passed by the States in relation to fugitives from labor are unconstitutional and void, was read to the court, and several witnesses examined in relation to the facts of the case. The court, after a full and fair hearing of the case, again ordered the captives to be discharged. The colored friends and neighbors of the captives immediately came forward, conducted them out of the court-house to a wagon, and quietly rode off home with them. On the bridge adjacent the town they halted, and made the welkin ring with their cheers for liberty. They rode off, singing the songs of freedom, rejoicing over the fortunate escape of their friends from the horrible fate of slavery. Thus ended one of the most exciting scenes ever witnessed in Northern Indiana. The grand jury refused to find an indictment against the Kentuckians for a riot, and in a few days after they quietly departed for their homes, with new views of Northern feeling on the subject of slavery.

The citizens of South Bend generally, without distinction of party, evinced the strongest feeling of sympathy for the oppressed. The trials called forth crowds to hear the arguments. The presence of the poor, trembling captives in their weak and helpless condition, surrounded by a party of armed men in a court of justice, was a practical exhibition of slavery, which needed only to be seen to stir up the deepest fountain of feeling. The Kentuckians were looked upon almost universally with loathing and abhorrence. The sight of a family thus torn from a happy home, separated from those they held most dear, with nothing but slavery, hopeless, life-long bondage staring them in the face, made our citizens feel that nothing should be left undone to save them from such a horrid fate.

Mr. Crocker, in speaking of this event, says:

"Never shall I forget my feelings, as I stood among them in their dark cell in prison, when that mother, with streaming eyes and heaving breast, fell on her knees, and begged me to save them from slavery. Oh! what anguish filled those hearts! Who, possessing the heart of a man, could resist such an appeal? For one, I could not, and whatever cold, calculating conservatism might say, I felt then, that there is a 'higher law,' written by the finger of God

upon the hearts of men, speaking in resistless tones, 'Thus saith the Lord, execute ye judgment and righteousness, and deliver the spoiled out of the hand of the oppressor.'—Jer. xxii: 3. Never can I forget an interview I afterward had with the husband and father of this family, who came to express his feelings of gratitude for my efforts in their behalf. The best of his days had been spent toiling for others living in luxury. Said he, 'I once had a wife; she was taken from me and sold South; I have never seen her since; I know not whether she is dead or alive, and when the news came, that this, my second wife, was in the hands of the Kentuckians, I felt that I had nothing more to live for,' and he wept like a child."

Dec. 21, 1849, Norris commenced suit in the United States Circuit Court, for the District of Indiana, against Leander B. Newton, George W. Horton, Edwin B. Crocker, Solomon W. Palmer, David Jodon, William Willmington, Lot Day, Jr., Amable M. Lapiere, and Wright Maudlin, to recover the value of the negroes and other damages. Mr. Maudlin being a resident of Michigan, the suit was afterward dismissed as to him. The declaration filed charged the defendants with having knowingly harbored, and concealed, and aided the four negroes to escape from the plaintiff, stating them to be worth \$2,500. The court commenced its session on the 3d Monday in May, 1850. The plaintiff appeared by O. H. Smith and J. A. Liston, and the defendants by Joseph G. Marshall and J. L. Jernegan, their attorneys. The defendants demurred to the declaration on the ground that the suit was founded on the act of Congress of Feb. 12, 1793, and that no reference was made to the statute in the declaration, referring to the opinion of Judge McLean, in the case of *Jones vs. Vanzandt*, 2 McLean's Rep., 630, where the judge says: "An exception is taken to the fourth count, that it does not conclude against the form of the statute. If an action be founded exclusively upon the statute, and cannot be maintained at common law, a reference to the statute, as showing the right of the plaintiff, it seems to me is essential. The defendant is charged with harboring the slaves of the plaintiff, who had escaped from his service in Kentucky. But the wrong charged is no legal wrong, except as it is made so by statute; and the fourth count does not refer to the statute. The statute is a public one, but it is the foundation, and the only foundation, of the plaintiff's right. It seems to me that the declaration must refer to the statute, as an essential part of the plaintiff's right," citing 1 Chitty's Pleading, 246; 1 Gallison, 257 and 261; 1 Saunders, 135 n. This decision, made by one of the judges of the U. S. Supreme Court, was precisely in point to sustain the demurrers. If the demurrers had been sustained, the plaintiff would have been compelled to amend his declaration, which would have continued the case to the next term, at his costs, amounting to about \$1,000. The demurrers were most unceremoniously overruled by Judge Huntington, who was officiating at this time.

The defendants then filed their pleas, one the general issue, and six special pleas, in which the proceedings under the writs of *habeas*

*corpus* were set up as a defense to the action, thus raising the great question as to the right of alleged fugitives from labor to the writ of *habeas corpus*. The plaintiff moved to reject these special pleas, and as the question was an important one, the argument was deferred until Judge McLean should arrive from Washington City.

In arguing the motion the counsel for the plaintiff took the bold ground that a person arrested as a fugitive slave had no right to the writ of *habeas corpus*, even though the master had made no proof of his claim, or obtained a certificate under the act of Congress; and that all who assisted in procuring, with the officer that served, and the judge that tried the writ, were trespassers and liable to the plaintiff in damages. On the other hand it was contended that it was a sacred writ, secured by the express terms of the Constitution of the United States, and of the State of Indiana, and the laws of the land, and that all persons, without distinction, were entitled to its benefits. Judge McLean decided the motion, without expressing his opinion upon these points, upon a mere technical objection, that the pleas amounted to the general issue, and he therefore rejected them.

The case at last came to trial. The jury was duly empaneled. In the preceding pages is substantially set forth the evidence as it was given to the jury. The following is the amount claimed: Lucy, 40 years of age, \$500; Lewis, 20, \$800; George, 16, \$750; James, 14, \$700; plaintiff's expenses at South Bend, \$165.80.

The charge to the jury by Judge McLean favored the claim of the alleged owner of the slaves, and the jury brought in a verdict against the defendants and assessed the damages at \$2,856. March 29, 1855, the United States marshal sold a quantity of real estate owned by some of the parties in the suit to satisfy it.

Between the spring and fall terms of the Circuit Court, in 1850, the plaintiff commenced 12 suits, against 15 defendants, to recover in each suit the penalty of \$500 under the act of 1793. The counsel for the plaintiff gave it out that they intended to commence about 25 additional suits, for the penalty; and if successful in them all, they would have recovered judgments to the amount of about \$15,000 to \$20,000. On the 18th day of September, 1850, the new fugitive law was passed by Congress, punishing the same offenses by fine not exceeding \$1,000, and imprisonment not exceeding six months. At the November term, 1850, the defendants appeared and filed demurrers to the declarations.

Jernegan and Niles, for defendants, insisted on the following points in support of the demurrer. 1. The act respecting fugitives from labor, adopted Sept. 18, 1850, inflicts a greater punishment than the law of 1793, for the same offenses; 2. A new statute, imposing a new penalty, repeals the prior law by implication—citing 4 Burrows, 2026; 5 Pick., 168; 21 Pick., 373; 9 New Hampshire, 59; 2 Dana, 330, 344; 3. Such repeal puts an end to all suits, whether pending at the time, or commenced after the passage of the new law, unless there be a saving clause, which there is not in

the law of 1850—citing 3 Burrows, 1456; 5 Cranch, 280; 4 Yeates, 392; 5 Randolph, 657; 1 Wash. C. C., 85; 4 Alabama, 487; 3, Howard, 534; 16 Peters, 362; 18 Maine, 109; 26 Maine, 452; 1 New Hampshire, 61.

O. H. Smith for plaintiff insisted on the following in reply:

1. The act of 1850 applies only to offenses occurring after its passage. 2. The penalties of the latter act are cumulative. Adding new penalties by law will not operate as a repeal of a prior law, unless there is a repealing clause, which there is not in this case—citing 1 Cowper, 297; 9 Bacon's Abridgment, Bouvier's Edition, 226. 3. The plaintiff had a vested right to the penalty of \$500, which the act of Congress has not taken away. 4. The act of 1850 is an "amendment and supplementary" to the act of 1793, by its express terms.

J. A. Liston, for plaintiff, insisted that the two acts were not inconsistent with, or repugnant to each other; that they merely adopt different modes of recovering fugitives, imposing different penalties on those who violate the provisions of either; that a claimant can now pursue the remedy prescribed by the act of 1793, and if a person interfere with him in violation of that law, he can recover the penalty of \$500; but if he should elect to proceed under the law of 1850, a person violating that law would be punished by fine and imprisonment.

The question was fully argued, occupying two entire days, and the court took the matter under advisement, until the spring term; and at the May term, 1851, the court decided in favor of the defendants, but as the plaintiff was desirous of having the points decided by the United States Supreme Court, the court, *pro forma*, certified to a difference of opinion, which is the only way the question can be carried up to the Supreme Court. The Supreme Court affirmed the decision of the lower court.

More than a quarter of a century has passed since the exciting events narrated formed a topic of the day. The drama of 1849 has become history. Of the actors, several have passed away, while others remain to glory in the triumph of their cause, to see the last vestige of slavery swept away, and all men equal before the constitution and laws of their country.

## CHAPTER XIX.

UNIVERSITY OF NOTRE DAME.—ST. MARY'S ACADEMY.—NORTHERN INDIANA COLLEGE.

### UNIVERSITY OF NOTRE DAME.

Very Rev. Edward Sorin, the founder of the university, was born at Ahuille, near Laval, France, in the year 1814. In 1840, he attached himself to the Congregation of the Holy Cross, a religious society then recently formed at Maus, near Paris. The objects proposed to be accomplished by this young society were the instruction of youth and the preaching of missions to the people and to both of these ends Father Sorin at once devoted his life.

In furtherance of this object, and believing that in this country was a vast field for future usefulness, Father Sorin, with six other brothers of St. Joseph, sailed for New York in the summer of 1841, landing in that city on the 13th of September, the eve of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross. Father Sorin, the next day, in writing of this remarkable coincidence, says: "Our good God permitted me to land yesterday evening, the eve of the Exaltation of the Holy Cross. With what happiness did I salute and embrace this dear land of America, and what increase of consolation to land on the eve of so beautiful a day! \* \* \* What joy for a poor priest of the Holy Cross to be able to say his first mass in America on the feast of the Exaltation of that sacred symbol! What a delicious day it is here! how beautiful is the American sky! Ah, yes! my Father, here is the portion of my inheritance; here will I dwell all the days of my life."

Notre Dame du Lac was purchased in 1830 by Rev. Theodore Bodin, the first priest ever ordained in the United States. It was then known by the Indians and the few settlers around it as *Ste. Marie des Lacs*, and was made by Father Bodin the center of quite a range of missions, and the residence of the priest who attended the scattering population of Northern Indiana and Southern Michigan. Father Bodin having purchased the land and established the little log church as a central point, did not leave this part of the country without attending to the wants of the Indians who then dwelt in Northern Indiana, many of whom were Catholics, and the rest converted by himself and his successors.

On the 26th day of November, 1842, Father Sorin viewed for the first time the scene of his future labors—his life work. The ground was covered with snow; the branches of the trees drooped under the weight of the snow; the evergreens, even the rail fences,

and the stumps that thickly studded the ten-acre lot, were rendered fairy-like with snow; snow, cold, pure, beautifying snow lay thick and heavy all around, and as the rays of the setting sun, struggling through the winter clouds, cast their magic light over the wide expanse of snow-covered land, the young priest consecrated it anew to the Virgin Mother of God, to whom, in his great love for her, all his undertakings, great or small, were always lovingly submitted. With Father Sorin came seven Brothers of the Order—Francis Xavier, Gatien, Patrick, William, Basil, Pierre and Francis, all of whom have gone to their long rest except Brother Francis Xavier.

Notre Dame is on a farm originally of over 600 acres, lying on the right bank of the St. Joseph river, in St. Joseph county, Indiana, about two miles from the railroad station at South Bend, on the Michigan Southern & Lake Shore railroad, which connects Chicago with Toledo and Detroit; and also a branch of the Michigan Central & Grand Trunk railways. At the time Father Sorin arrived here only ten acres of the ground had been cleared, the rest being covered with forest trees and thick underbrush, except some hundred or more that were covered by the water of the lakelets from which the establishment took its name. The only house on the premises was one built of logs, in the old style of log-cabin—forty feet by twenty-four. The ground floor was the residence of the priest, while the upper story was the only church or chapel for the Catholics of South Bend and vicinity. A small frame house clinging to this sturdy log one, was occupied by the family of a man who acted as interpreter between the Indians and whites when occasion required.

To fulfill the terms of the contract with the bishop, entered into by Father Sorin, it was determined, notwithstanding an apparent lack of means, to proceed as soon as possible, to the erection of the college building. The name of the place was now changed from St. Mary's to Notre Dame du Lac, Our Lady of the Lake, a name which has been insensibly shortened to Notre Dame. On the 28th day of August, 1843, the corner stone of the first college edifice of Notre Dame was laid with appropriate ceremonies. Before winter the building was under roof, and during the next spring it was completed. In June the few students who were in attendance were removed from the farm house, and in August, 1844, the first commencement exercises took place. Previous to this a charter had been obtained from the State, through the instrumentality of Hon. John D. Defrees, then a member of the Legislature, with all the rights and privileges of a university.

During the year 1844 the Manual Labor School was also organized and received a charter from the State Legislature. Besides Father Sorin, the chief personages of this early time were Fathers Cointet and Granger, the latter of whom arrived in 1844. Father Sorin was the first president of the institution, continuing in office from 1844 to 1865. Father Granger was the first vice-president, and Father Cointet the second. To them, therefore, must be chiefly

ascribed the first shaping of the distinctive character which Notre Dame early began to assume. During the administration of Father Sorin the foundations of Notre Dame were deeply and solidly laid. Save the bare land, and the sympathy of the benevolent and charitable, the young community had in the beginning actually no means, except the blessing of heaven, their own feeble strength, and, after a time, the tuition of a few students, which for many years was a very small sum indeed. But faith and industry did not go unrewarded. Little by little every year was an improvement upon the last. Slowly, very slowly, the number of students crept up from one to one hundred. These spread over the country became the best advertisement. As if each took another by the hand, there were soon two hundred entrances; then three, four, five, even six hundred, until the halls were over-flowing. With this increase, every thing else increased. The faculty, which once consisted of Father Sorin, Father Granger and Father Cointet, advanced in numbers from year to year, until it now consists of nearly forty members. The courses of study at the same time widened in completeness and increased in number, until at Notre Dame, according to the saying of a well-known patron of learning, "Any one may learn anything," whether in science, in the arts, or in business, as well as in theology, law and medicine. Buildings have arisen on every hand, until their appearance is rather that of a town than of a college. The first college edifice, except the farm house, was the central part of the old college building, and was 36 feet deep by 80 front, and four stories high. This continued unchanged until 1853, when two wings, 40 by 60, were added. It was now thought there would be room enough for at least a generation. But the error of this anticipation was discovered in a very few years, and in 1865, under the energetic presidency of Father Dillon, the old college building was, in the course of two months, transformed into an imposing structure, 160 feet in length, 80 feet in width, and six stories in height, surmounted by a colossal statue of Notre Dame. May 31, 1866, the new building was dedicated, and the statue blessed by Archbishop Spalding, assisted by five bishops, and a very great number of priests, in presence of the largest concourse of people ever gathered at Notre Dame. April 23, 1879, the university was destroyed by fire. The main college building, the Infirmary, Music Hall, St. Francis' Home and the Minims' Play Hall were burned to the ground. The fire originated from a tinner's furnace which some workmen were using on the roof of the main building. They left the roof for a short time, and while they were absent the fire started. About one-fourth of the original cost of the buildings was destroyed. The insurance was \$45,000, and with this money and with the aid of the friends of Notre Dame throughout the country, the community went to work to clear away the rubbish and to lay the foundations of new buildings.

The style of architecture adopted for the main building is modern Gothic. It presents a frontage of 224 feet by 155 in depth,



somewhat cruciform in shape, or like the letter E with an extended center. A projection or wing on each side, directly connected with the main building, will make the total frontage 320 feet. The height of the main building is four stories with basement; the height of the east and west wings, each three stories with basement. From the ground to the pedestal of the statue above the dome is 170 feet. The dome is unusually lofty, extending 80 feet above the roof. A rotunda 30 feet in diameter at the base passes from the foundations up through the building, supporting the dome, and giving light, air and ventilation to the whole building. This rotunda, surmounted as it is by the glorious dome, and crowned by a statue over all, is entirely self-supporting, and constitutes perhaps the finest feature of its kind to be seen in any educational institution in this or any other country.

The study halls are located, as in the old building, in the east and west sides, on the principal floor. They are most spacious and beautiful rooms, 77 feet in length, 41 in width, and 15 feet clear in height, well lighted on three sides with large windows. The entrance to the study halls is from the south, as before, and also from a corridor 16 feet in width extending from each study hall to the rotunda in the center.

In nothing perhaps is the superiority of the new building to the old more manifest than in the class rooms, both as to location and size. Twelve of them are situated on the same floor as the study halls, thus ensuring convenience to students and professors, and doing away with much of the noise that attended the march of heavy classes up and down stairs. The average dimensions of the class rooms are 26 feet in length, 16 in width, and 15 feet clear in height. The commercial class-room adjoins the senior study hall, on the south side of the building, and is 44 feet in length by 20 feet in width. All class-rooms are lighted by two large windows, five south windows lighting the fine commercial class-room.

The floors above are divided in a similar manner to those below. The dormitories are directly over the study rooms, are of the same lofty height, and are lighted in like manner with large and numerous windows.

Particular attention has been given to the subject of ventilation, flues for this purpose running through every story from basement to roof, with openings from study halls, class-rooms, dormitories, etc., thus securing pure and health-giving air in every room.

The destruction of the old college has drawn special attention to the protection of the new building from all possible danger from fire. The walls are of solid brick and stone; the trimming and ornamentation of the exterior are of fine cut stone and galvanized iron, and all the roofs and cornices are covered with slate. Then, in addition to the ordinary stairways, there are fire escapes on every floor, so that should fire ever again occur, there will be the most ample means of escape from every story and every room of the whole building. As a still further protection from fire, and also



for convenience and beauty in lighting the building, gas has been introduced instead of coal oil.

The principal entrance to the college is from the south, facing the main avenue, as in the old college, by a large and handsome porch approached by an extra large and inviting flight of steps. At the right of entrance are the president's room and parlor and vice-president's room and parlor. On the left of the entrance, looking out in front, is the main parlor, 40 by 42 feet. In the rear of the main parlor is a smaller parlor, with octagonal front, connecting parlor with toilet room.

The projecting wings are in themselves no insignificant buildings, being each forty-two feet front, and but one story lower than the main building. The west wing is devoted exclusively to libraries and museums, the east wing to the laboratory and the sciences in general.

The Music Hall is the name given to a large and imposing structure on the east and front of the college building, three stories in height, with a total length of one hundred and seventy-five feet. In width it varies from a maximum of ninety feet to a minimum of forty-five.

The apparatus for heating, lighting and ventilating the buildings are all of the most approved character, and embrace the latest improvements; and these, together with the corresponding sanitary appointments, have engaged the special attention of the architect. The walls are heavy, and thus make the building not only strong, but also warm. The windows are large and numerous, and thus afford abundance of light, and also ventilation if needed. The building is heated by steam and lighted by gas.

In connection with the church and college, a word may be said of the bells for which Notre Dame is famous. The original bell of Notre Dame is that clear, sweet-toned one that now rings out so pleasantly from St. Mary's Academy. The second bell was one of 2,400 pounds, which, becoming cracked, was taken down and succeeded by the present great bell. This bell, with its rich musical tones, and its magnificent volume of sound, has a national reputation, being the largest in the United States, as it is one of the finest in the world. Its weight is 13,000 pounds, and it was manufactured in France. The names of all donors are cast upon the bell. The church also possesses a chime of 23 bells, the finest and largest but one in the country. They were solemnly blessed in 1856 by Archbishop Purcell, and Bishop Henni, of Milwaukee. With its bells, its noble organ, and its well-trained choir, it need not be said that nowhere in America are the solemn and beautiful services of the church celebrated with more splendor than at Notre Dame.

The growth of Notre Dame has been truly wonderful. From the small beginning already spoken of, it has grown to be one of the most noted educational institutions in the country. Year by year an addition was made, an improvement introduced, from the first English class organized by Father Shaw, to the present classes

of rhetoric and literature, from the first Latin class called by Father Cointet, to the present numerous classes of Latin, Greek, and ancient literature; from the first logic class assembled by Father Granger, to the present classes of philosophy and theology; from the first arithmetic class formed by Brother Gatien, to the present commercial department, and the various classes in the physical and natural sciences.

The war drew off great numbers from Notre Dame to the hospital and to the field. No less than seven priests went as chaplains in the army,—Fathers Corby, Cooney, Carrier, Gillen, James Dillon, Leveque and Bourget; of whom the last three, from exposure, contracted diseases which ended in death. The period since the war has been one of continual prosperity, even during the hard times between the years 1873 and 1879. It was ushered in by the building of a new college edifice, and by the establishment of the *Ave Maria*, a widely known religious journal. The *Ave Maria* was founded, and edited for the first two years by Father Sorin. It was afterward conducted by Father Gillespie until his untimely death in 1874. Father Gillespie also began the publication of the *Scholastic*, the college paper, conducted under his supervision by the students. To no one indeed is Notre Dame more indebted for the cultivation and encouragement of literary studies than to Father Gillespie, her first graduate.

The year 1851 was one of great importance to Notre Dame; it was the year that the railroad was completed to South Bend, and the postoffice was established at Notre Dame. The wings of the college were added to the main building in 1853, and the college steadily prospered until 1854. The cholera had ravaged many parts of the United States, and the danger passed away, when in the summer of 1854, many of the inmates of Notre Dame were attacked with a disease akin to it. Among the first attacked was Father Cointet; his health had been completely shattered by a residence in New Orleans, but had greatly improved since returning North, yet not sufficiently to resist the attack of the disease, and in the month of August he passed away. Many other deaths occurred, and the fate of the college seemed hung in the balance. Soon the clouds passed away and all was bright again.

The discipline of Notre Dame has justly met the approbation of all the friends of the institution. At the beginning the main features were the same as now, for as in regard to discipline, as in everything else connected with the institution, Father Sorin gave the impulse and direction. Yet some changes have been made, and they began in the first years. It was natural that the whole system of French college discipline should at first be introduced, but the founder of Notre Dame quickly seized the peculiarities of young America as distinguished from young France. The most powerful human cause of Father Sorin's remarkable success was his quick perception of the manners and ideas of his adopted country, and the happy facility with which he not only conformed

to them, but actually made them part and parcel of himself; and while he retained all the qualities of the Catholic priest and French gentleman, he laid aside the prejudices of the foreigner, and seemed to take possession of the spirit of the country with his oath on becoming a citizen.

If the presidency of Father Sorin was a time of struggle and of triumph, and that of Father Dillon one of great business activity, that of Father Corby was one of earnest devotion to learning, during which the standard of education was materially elevated at Notre Dame. During this time the societies of the college, in which so much of its life centers, showed a marked increase of activity. To Father Granger the religious societies owe everything; the literary and dramatic societies are almost equally indebted to Father Gillespie and Lemonnier and Prof. Lyons. During the first administration of Father Corby, the association of the Alumni was formed; and in 1869 Notre Dame celebrated, with much rejoicing, her silver jubilee.

In the summer of 1872 there convened at Notre Dame an assembly, which, from its unique character, merits special remark. There, for the first time since the discovery of America, a general chapter of a religious order was held in the New World. At this chapter were present not only representatives from the United States and the Dominion of Canada, but also from France, Algiers, the East Indies, and even from Rome itself, where these meetings are usually held, and which in this instance had given special permission to hold the chapter at Notre Dame, as a peculiar mark of favor to the United States, and perhaps also as a compliment to Father Sorin, the only American general of a religious order. It was at this chapter that the gifted Father Lemonnier was selected as president and local superior at Notre Dame. It would seem that his presidency came to add grace and beauty to what was already so laboriously and substantially constructed. There was hardly a science or an art in which he was not well versed; and as Johnson said of Goldsmith, there was nothing which he touched which he did not beautify. Under him all the sciences and the arts flourished, and Notre Dame became indeed a university.

Of the presidents of Notre Dame, Father Lemonnier has gone to a better world, as Father Dillon went before him; Father Corby, after laying the foundation of a new Notre Dame at Watertown, Wisconsin, has again assumed control of the institution; and Father Sorin himself, now Superior General of the Congregation of the Holy Cross, remains still blessed with health and strength, though venerable with years. Of the companions of his youth, who laid with him the foundation of Notre Dame, but three remain. Father Granger, now provincial of the Holy Cross in the United States, the venerable Brother Vincent, and Brother Francis, the sexton.

The present officers of the university are, Very Rev. William Corby, C. S. C., President; Rev. Thomas E. Walsh, C. S. C., Vice-President and Director of Studies; Rev. Patrick W. Condon, C. S.

C., Prefect of Discipline; Very Rev. Alexis Granger, C. S. C., Prefect of Religion; Rev. Timothy Maher, C. S. C., Secretary; Brother Celestine, C. S. C., Assistant Secretary. These officers are assisted by an able faculty of about forty professors and instructors.

General Faculty: Rev. William Corby, President; Rev. Thos. E. Walsh, Vice-President and Director of Studies; Rev. Patrick W. Condon, Prefect of Discipline.

Professors: Rev. William Corby, Evidences of Christianity; Rev. Thos. E. Walsh, Latin Language and Literature; Rev. John A. O'Connell, Moral Philosophy; Rev. John A. Zahm, Physical Sciences, and Curator of the Museum; Rev. Christopher Kelly, Logic and Mental Philosophy; Rev. Nicholas Stoffel, Greek Language and Literature; Rev. A. M. Kirsch, Natural Sciences, and Assistant Curator of Museum; Rev. J. Scherer, German; Rev. P. Kollop, French; Rev. Louis Neyron, Human Anatomy and Physiology; Joseph A. Lyons, Latin and English; Wm. Ivers, Mathematics; Timothy E. Howard, English Literature; Arthur J. Stace, Astronomy and Civil Engineering; Lucius G. Tong, Law and Bookkeeping; James F. Edwards, History, and Librarian of the Lemonnier Library; John Coleman, Latin and Mathematics.

With the above are a large corps of assistant professors and instructors, not only in the foregoing branches, but also in the fine arts. The general faculty is divided into five special faculties, namely, on arts, science, commerce, law and civil engineering. There are also numerous well-sustained literary, art, scientific and religious societies in the university.

#### SAINT MARY'S ACADEMY.

One of the most important objects of interest in the history of St. Joseph county, is Saint Mary's Academy, conducted by the Sisters of the Holy Cross. Although the order of the Holy Cross was founded at Notre Dame in 1842, and although the Sisters of the Holy Cross were established at Bertrand, Michigan, as early as 1845, yet Saint Mary's did not occupy its present charming site until 1855. Nature seems to have selected and laid out the spot for the religious and educational purposes to which it is now consecrated. A table-land of 110 acres on the high bank of the St. Joseph river, with sunny openings between the groves of native forest trees, presented itself to the eyes of those who had in view an institution of learning to which all coming generations would bring its daughters, and where they would not only find a home during the trying years of school life, but from which they would carry the germs of those noble womanly graces which must be the guerdon of the future glory of our republic. With that untiring energy which marks an earnest purpose the building at Bertrand was removed to the banks of the St. Joseph and made the nucleus of the wooden buildings which until 1859 were nestled among these groves. The present substantial brick academy, with its spacious and airy halls, its study

and recitation rooms, library and museum, music halls and studio, its well ventilated dormitories and refectories, is still only the beginning of good things to come. When the whole plan is carried out the present St. Mary's will be found to occupy only the third of the St. Mary's which stands in the far-seeing eyes of its founders.

But even as we now see it, after 20 years of industry, and conscientious labor, how richly has the efforts of the Sisters been rewarded. The stranger finds on his first visit to St. Mary's, an unexpected charm in this spot, so removed from all the busy turmoil of the day and age, and yet full to overflowing, with all the most sacred interests to humanity. Meeting here seclusion without solitude, simplicity without rusticity, he sees the very place suited to carry out his own ideas of education; while for those who have spent years among these scenes of peaceful beauty, no description of St. Mary's can ever convey an adequate idea of its charms for the eye, the heart and the imagination. The young girl coming from some secluded homestead of some Western town or territory, loses none of her simplicity under this open sky, among these quiet groves, or along the varied path which follows along the winding high bank which overlooks the river and the meadows and the distant town; while the young girl from the city becomes acquainted with nature without losing the wholesome restraints of society, and even finds gracefulness of manner considered a subject of just emulation. The innocent cheerfulness, the happy buoyancy of spirits, which it is so difficult to preserve for the young in the atmosphere of towns and cities, is the natural result of the out-door life at St. Mary's. Exercise comes as a matter of course, and brings pleasure, instead of its being an irksome necessity, as it is so often under less favorable conditions, since nature has done for St. Mary's what no industry or invention on the part of the Sisters could ever supply.

But as spring, summer and autumn must yield several months every year to winter, care has been taken to provide agreeable exercise for seniors, juniors and minors within doors, whenever the grounds or piazzas cannot be used. Lessons in dancing are given weekly, and the holidays and recreation days offer opportunities for "assemblies," at which the Superiors are always present.

Situated two miles from the pleasant city of South Bend, the young city and the college and academy have grown up together, and have proved mutual helps and encouragements. An exchange of courtesies have always marked the intercourse between these two institutions and the city of South Bend. Among her citizens are many whose names will always be remembered with pleasure and gratitude by the Sisters of the Holy Cross at St. Mary's, and the growth of each may well be a matter of just pride and congratulation to the other. Like South Bend, St. Mary's owes much of her material prosperity to the ready access given to the different parts of the country by the Michigan Southern & Lake Shore railroad. This road has been an old and long-tried friend to St. Mary's; while the Michigan Central now claims a place in her regard, on

account of the branch road lately built in such a way as to put St. Mary's in direct communication with its extensive line of travel.

One mile east of St. Mary's rise the beautiful dome and spires of Notre Dame, the first home of the Order of the Holy Cross in America, and still the fountain head as well as faithful coadjutor. The interest of the Very Rev. Superior General in the welfare of St. Mary's has never slackened since the academy was removed from Bertrand to its present site; and this personal interest of the Superior General, who has watched over its growth, is shared by the Very Rev. Provincial at Notre Dame, by the president and all the professors at the university. There is a community of interests between the two institutions which secures many privileges to the students of both. Professors from Notre Dame take pleasure in repeating their lectures for the benefit of the pupils of St. Mary's, and the *Scholastic*, published weekly at Notre Dame, is devoted to the educational interests of both institutions. These mutual advantages, and the short distance from the university to the academy (one mile), with a regular mode of conveyance to both places from South Bend, resolve many a family problem as to a place of education for sons and daughters. To the convenience of the parent, who can visit both at one time, is added the satisfaction of knowing that the youthful members of the family are near each other, especially when coming from great distances.

#### NORTHERN INDIANA COLLEGE.

The Northern Indiana College was founded in 1861, by an association of gentlemen residing at and in the vicinity of South Bend. They organized under an act of the General Assembly, entitled "An act for the incorporation of high schools, academies and colleges." The institution was for the accommodation of both male and female students. The first Board of Trustees was composed of the following named gentlemen: Schnyler Colfax, William Miller, John H. Harper, John Brownfield, Asbury Clark, George F. Layton, Francis R. Tutt, John W. Chess and Elisha Egbert. A college building was erected at the west end of Washington street, one mile from the court-house. It was easy of access, healthy, and afforded a fine view of the city and surrounding country. From its inception, it had many difficulties to contend with, principally of a financial character. On this account the edifice was not completed until the fall of 1866. The building was of brick 50x90 feet, and four stories high, including basement. The front was ornamented by a central and cylindrical tower, rising to an altitude of nearly one hundred feet, and connected with every floor in the building. The interior arrangement was well adapted to the purposes for which it was intended, and the whole edifice finished in a workmanlike manner.

On Thursday, Jan. 10, 1867, the dedication of the college to the cause of Christian education took place. The dedicatory sermon

was preached by Rev. T. M. Eddy, of Chicago, the sermon being founded upon Proverbs xxix:18, "Where there is no vision, the people perish."

The school was duly opened, lingered a few years, became involved, the school closed, the building passed into other hands, and the Northern Indiana College was of the past.



## CHAPTER XX.

### AUTHORS AND SELECTIONS.

Mrs. Flora L. Stanfield was born in Cleveland, Ohio, October, 1848. She is the daughter of T. G. and Laura O. Turner, both of whom were possessed of literary talents of no mean order, sketches of whom are given elsewhere. Mrs. Stanfield began to contribute to the local papers printed in the vicinity of her home when but twelve years of age, her contributions creating no little interest. Soon her articles found their way into the columns of the *New York Independent*, and other papers of that character. In 1870 she was married in South Bend, to Howard Stanfield, son of Judge Stanfield, of that place. Mrs. Stanfield has usually contributed under the *nom de plume* of "Malcolm Duncan," though some of her best contributions have appeared over her own signature. In all matters pertaining to literature and art, Mrs. Stanfield has taken great interest. She was chiefly instrumental in forming the "Pleiades Club," as well as the "Women's Literary Club," of South Bend. The following poem was written by Mrs. Stanfield when but thirteen years of age, and gave token of the more mature thoughts and genius of later years:

#### MY DREAM.

I dreamed a dream of my childhood's home,  
And I'd tell it to you again,  
If my voice would obey the tune of my heart,  
And my soul would chant the strain.  
I would tell of the words trilled by gay-crested birds,  
Welcoming me home once more;  
And the warbling notes that laughed in their throats,  
Sounded as sweet as of yore.

I thought as I stood in a beautiful wood,  
All alone the while,  
While the heaven-crowned hills and the murmuring rills,  
Seemed to be bathed in a smile.  
Then the scene was changed, it seemed so strange,  
And I saw my home once more,  
And my father and mother, my sister and brother,  
Stood at the cottage door.

And my father smiled to his wayward child,  
That left him so long ago;  
My sister's face had lost none of its grace,  
Its beauty, or brow of snow;  
My mother dear, that stood so near,  
I tried, but could hardly refrain  
To tell with a kiss, of the dreamlike bliss,  
That was mine to be with her again.



My brother was there, and his nut-brown hair,  
 Had grown to a deeper hue,  
 And as glossy and bright in that autumn light,  
 As if wet with the morning dew.  
 I heard a sweet sound, and my heart gave a bound:  
 'Twas the voice of my mother so dear;  
 And the blue of her eyes, a tint from the skies  
 Was dimmed with the mist of a tear.

A blessing she spoke, and the vision broke,  
 And I was myself once more;  
 But I asked from above for the kiss of love,  
 In that dream of just before.

On the death of Charles Dickens, Mrs. Stanfield contributed to the South Bend *Tribune* the following beautiful tribute:

## CHARLES DICKENS.

The gray old rocks are calling in the distance;  
 The English ivies twine;  
 Softly the chimes ring out with sweet persistence,  
 A carol most divine.

For in the joyous chorus of their glory,  
 Amid the tender tune,  
 We learn of one who tells the Christmas story  
 Where life is always June.

A strange forgetfulness is stealing o'er us:  
 Earth and its thousand cares,  
 Fade 'mid the rhythm of that clanging chorus,  
 And rest comes unawares.

We think of one—while wild the chimes are pealing—  
 Whose heart was always young;  
 Whose loving words brought life and joy and healing,  
 Pure as the songs he sung.

Who fought the fight alike of high and lowly,  
 For nothing was too small  
 For him to love; the humblest thing was holy;  
 Our Father made them all.

On English hills in dark and stormy weather,  
 On sunny days as well,  
 Amid the springing grass and budding heather,  
 We roam with little Nell.

And, sitting by the sea in bleak November,  
 Paul Dombey by our side,  
 The wild waves say to us: "Do you remember  
 The day that Dickens died?"

A shadow fell upon the earth that morning,  
 An angel wept unseen;  
 He went with scarce a look or word of warning:  
 Lord keep his memory green!

The following was written by Mrs. Stanfield in honor of the tenth wedding anniversary of Mr. and Mrs. Schuyler Colfax:

0—5—10—25—50.

#### THE BRIDAL.

What gifts have the powers of the whole world wide,  
To bring to the feet of the new made bride?  
The ocean is dragged for its pearls of white,  
The tropics send diamonds alive with light;  
But brighter than jewels that worldlings prize  
Are the glances of love from a hundred eyes;  
And dearer than ought on the earth beside  
Are the hearts of friends both true and tried,  
Who come from the ends of this world so wide  
And a blessing ask for the new-made bride.  
And Cupid sings till the skies resound,  
" 'Tis love that makes the world go 'round."  
True and tried! true and tried!  
Where can you find a gentler bride?

#### FIVE YEARS.

Wood! wood! wood! wood!  
Five happy years have the mountains stood,  
Five happy years have the seasons fled,  
And love is triumphant, and hate is dead;  
And blessings still follow the life so good,  
Who now wears the crown of motherhood,  
And a cradle of wood is the potent charm  
That keeps the heart of the household warm,  
And parries the thrust that would bring it harm.  
Wood! wood! wood! wood!  
Five more years have the mountains stood.

#### TEN YEARS.

Tin! tin! tin! tin!  
Beaten and molded and pounded thin,  
Tin that has heard the breakers roar  
Off the rugged coast of the Cornish shore.  
It comes to-night with a shining face  
The end of a long decade to grace;  
And though it is called but an humble ore  
It declares that it never will sorrow more,  
For it says, as it counts its blessings o'er,  
That the fates and the graces, though both combined,  
Could not give an honor more to its mind,  
Than the right to come, at the bride's request,  
To this happy home as an honored guest.  
'Tis dark without; 'tis bright within.  
Tin! tin! tin! tin!

## TWENTY-FIVE YEARS.

Twenty-five! Twenty-five!  
 May every one of us be alive  
 When the wedding of silver shall arrive.  
 'Tis silver that crosses the gypsy's palm,  
 'Tis silver that acts as the beggars balm,  
 'Tis a silver moon that lights the dark  
 When the sun goes down on the weary barque.  
 And there is fillet or gem as rare  
 To place on the brow of a matron fair  
 As a wonderful wreath of silver hair.  
 Twenty-five! Twenty-five!  
 May every one of us be alive!

## FIFTY YEARS.

Gold! gold! gold! gold!  
 A heart of gold can never grow cold,  
 A deed of gold can never grow old.  
 The wedding ring is growing thin,  
 And memories all that remain of tin,  
 And friends are fewer and far more dear,  
 And earth is fading and Heaven is near;  
 And the church bells waiting that they may toll  
 The breaking apart of the golden bowl.  
 And the golden gates are opening wide  
 For the happy steps of the groom and bride.  
 Oh! the happiest part of the voyage long  
 Will be when they hear the triumphant song  
 Of Jerusalem the golden!

The following illustrating a hopeful trust is all that can be given  
 of Mrs. Stanfield's poems:

## SOME TIME.

Oh, hard and thorny road,  
 Oh, great and heavy load,  
 Stay by me while you can;  
 For life is but a span,  
 And at the final mile  
 My soul will look and smile,  
 Some time.

Somewhere the waves are calm;  
 Somewhere there is a balm  
 For all the vague unrest  
 That trembles in my breast;  
 Somewhere the smile of God  
 Will help me kiss the rod,  
 Some time.

Oh, roses washed in dew,  
 Oh, violets so blue,  
 Sometime the flowers I wear  
 Will be so very fair  
 That you will turn as pale  
 As lilies of the vale,  
 Some time.

Oh, melodies so sweet,  
 And harmonies complete,  
 Of you I can but tire  
 When thinking of the choir,  
 That with celestial sound  
 Will compass me around,  
     Some time.

Oh, true and gentle friend,  
 Whose patience knows no end,  
 The tears are in my eyes  
 At thoughts of Paradise,  
 Where all the good of earth  
 Will have a heavenly birth,  
     Some time.

I do not ask to know  
 How long before the glow  
 Of promise and of rest  
 Will glorify the west;  
 To eyes upturned to heaven  
 The vision will be given,  
     Some time.

MISS ELEANOR J. WILSON.

The subject of this sketch was born in Ohio, and with her parents became a resident of South Bend in 1854. Quite early in life she manifested poetical talent which found expression in the local papers of South Bend and other places. Miss Wilson was for some years a teacher in the public schools of St. Joseph county, and subsequently followed her parents to California. As a specimen of her poetical genius the following poems are given:

“GO WORK TO-DAY IN MY VINEYARD.”

“Go work in my vineyard,”—’tis Jesus commanding—  
 For great is the harvest, the laborers few;  
 Then why all the day ye so idly are standing?  
 Go work, for there is something for each one to do.

Yes, truly, I see the white harvest is wasting,  
 But what shall I do in thy vineyard so great?  
 Yet others to labor are cheerfully hastening;  
 Shall I, then, in doubting, stand idle and wait?

Wherever we turn, there is labor before us,  
 There’s work for the hands, for the heart, and the mind.  
 Superstition and darkness hang lowering o’er us,  
 And error in blindness is leading the blind.

The world is o’erflowing with sorrow and anguish,  
 The air is o’er burdened with misery’s groans,  
 And thousands in ignorance grovel and languish  
 For the sunbeams of healing they never have known.

Nor look we to Greece, nor to Islands Ionian,  
 To find fellow-man in the darkness of night,  
 For lo! from the South comes the cry Macedonian,  
 "Come over and help us, we grope for the light!"

Yes, nearer at home there are minds to be lighted,  
 And night's gloomy darkness to turn into day;  
 There are chains to be broken and wrongs to be righted,  
 And the blind mists of error to scatter away.

Intemperance abroad through the nation is stalking,  
 Sowing death, woe, and ruin all over the land,  
 And many more evils our highways are walking,  
 Ah! who will dare fight with this numerous band!

So much to be done, and so few that are doing,  
 While Satan is busily sowing his tares,  
 And the hosts of his servants, all broadcast, are strewing  
 For the feet of the Christian, their pitfalls and snares.

Then let us to labor, no longer unheeding,  
 And carelessly slighting our Sovereign's call,  
 But with armor of toil, let us cheerfully speeding  
 Go work in the vineyard; there's labor for all.

#### "AND THEN?"

The following poem, the author remarks, is based upon an incident in which a youth was portraying in golden colors his future career through college and through life. He was interrupted after the close of each scene by his aged friend to whom he was talking, by the simple words, "And then?" After telling how he expected to spend his closing days—"And then?" inquired the old friend. "And then—and then?"—the youth hesitatingly replied, "why, then, I suppose I shall die." "And then?" solemnly inquired the old man.

"And then?—and then? Ah, who'll reply  
 To this momentous solemn thought?  
 What depths of meaning in it lie!  
 'Tis with eternal meaning fraught.  
 Ah! mortal tongue can never show,  
 And mortal eye can never see  
 Its depths of meaning, while below;  
 'Twill take a long eternity.

Its hidden mysteries to reveal,  
 Its awful weight of meaning show  
 Its glorious heights of heavenly weal,  
 Its everlasting depths of woe.  
 An angel's tongue could never say  
 What joy behind this question lies,  
 Nor devil's powers e'er portray  
 The fearful horror it implies.

Ah! thoughtless youth! with eager haste  
 Drink down each eup of worldly joy;  
 But, though at first they please thy taste,  
 Thou soon wilt find their pleasures cloy;  
 And lurking 'neath, within their depth,  
 Amid the dregs thou soon wilt find,  
 Are serpents sly, whose poisonous breath  
 Will leave a lasting sting behind.

But is this life of folly all?  
 These disappointed hopes, and vain?  
 This wormwood, bitterness and all?  
 This aching void and weary pain?  
 Is man's aspiring thinking mind  
 But as a ray of glimmering light,  
 A little while on earth to shine,  
 And then be quenched in endless night?

Ah, no! there's infinitely more  
 Beyond Time's everchanging scene;  
 Compared to that eternal shore,  
 This life is but a fleeting dream.  
 But what shall be the soul's employ  
 When we've forever waked at last?  
 Eternal songs of praise and joy?  
 Or sorrow's wail o'er mercies past?

O, very soon—we know not when—  
 We'll leave behind this earthly shore;  
 Well may we ask ourselves—And then,  
 Ah! whither shall our spirits soar?  
 In ever rising scale, shall we  
 Approach the glorious Lord of all?  
 Or through a vast eternity,  
 To lower depths forever fall?

Why should earth's fleeting gilded toys  
 Absorb the thoughts, and fill the mind  
 Of those who, made for nobler joys,  
 Must shortly leave them all behind?  
 They're falling 'round us here and there;  
 On every hand the warning's given  
 Which bids us, solemnly,—Prepare!—  
 Prepare to meet the God of Heaven.

Great God! 'tis Thou alone canst break  
 The bands of darkness and of night;  
 O, bid men's sleeping souls awake,  
 And seek the gospel's glorious light.  
 Let light dawn on them from above,  
 Unseal their eyes, and bid them know  
 They e're must rise to heights of love,  
 Or ever sink to depths of woe.

PROF. T. E. HOWARD.

Timothy E. Howard was born near Ann Arbor, Michigan, Jan. 27, 1837. His childhood and early youth were passed in the healthful exercises of farming, with but little facilities for education till his seventeenth year, when he attended school for two terms in Ypsilanti, Michigan. At the age of eighteen he entered the

University of Michigan as a student, where he remained till he had entered upon his sophomore year, but before its termination was obliged, in consequence of sickness in the family, to return home and assume the responsibilities of head of the family, a position which he had occupied since the death of his father some years previous. In the following year, having placed the family affairs on a firm footing, so as not to require his constant superintendence, he engaged as a teacher in the public schools, in which occupation he continued for two years. On reaching his majority he was elected School Inspector, which office he filled with credit to himself and advantage to all concerned for one year, after which he resigned, his aspiring mind urging him to seek a higher degree of culture than it had as yet attained. Accordingly, in the spring session of 1859, he entered Notre Dame University for the purpose of completing his collegiate studies, at the same time engaging as a teacher in the preparatory classes.

In 1862 Mr. Howard, prompted by that lofty sense of patriotism which never allows personal convenience or interest to interfere with duty, enlisted as a private in the 12th Regiment Michigan Volunteers. On the 6th of April, at the battle of Shiloh, he received a severe bullet wound in the neck, the bullet passing close to the jugular vein and severing some of the tendons of the left arm. He was taken to the hospital at Evansville, Indiana, where he lay until June, when he was honorably discharged, his wound rendering him incapable for further service in the field.

After his discharge Mr. Howard returned to Notre Dame, and, as he had completed the required studies before he entered the army, received his first degree of Bachelor of Arts, and was appointed professor of rhetoric and English literature in the University. Two years later he received his second degree of Master of Arts.

In July, 1864, Prof. Howard was married to Miss Julia Redmond, of Detroit, Michigan. They have eight children now living.

Prof. Howard has always been a staunch Democrat and an ardent supporter of the principles and nominees of that party. In 1876, he was appointed chairman of the Democratic Congressional Committee. In 1878 he was elected Clerk of the Circuit Court, and the same year was elected member of the City Council from the fourth ward, and re-elected in 1880. He is secretary of the St. Edward's Land and Emigration Society, and also of the Wisconsin Land and Emigration Society.

As a teacher, Prof. Howard is not only well qualified as respects knowledge, but he has the peculiar tact of gaining the affections of his classes. He possesses, moreover, in a high degree, those refined qualities which make the pleasing and instructive writer. He is the author of three works which have met with good sale—"A Grammar of the English Language," for the use of beginners, "Excelsior; or Essays on Politeness and Education," and a small volume of moral tales for the young, entitled "Uncle Edward's

Stories." He has also written many excellent poems, which appeared from time to time in various journals and periodicals. As illustrative of his prose writings, the following extract is taken from an essay on "True Education," by Prof. Howard:

"Education, in its broadest and best sense, signifies the harmonious development of all the powers of man. Man, by his nature, consists of body, soul and mind (the physical, the moral, and the intellectual), strength, love and wisdom. The mind forms, as it were, the link between the body and the soul, giving expression to the feelings, thoughts and aspirations of each, but partaking chiefly of the character of the soul, of which it is the intellectual manifestation—triune nature, whose true culture form the crown of the visible creation—a complete man. How important, therefore, that we should consider well by what means we may best promote the development of this wonderful organism given us by the all-wise Creator! Nor is it strange that good men in all ages have thought it their first duty and highest pleasure to provide for the education of their people.

"As man is composed of body, mind and soul, so his education should be physical, mental and moral. He who is trained in one of these respects to the exclusion of the others is, properly speaking, not educated. The extraordinary development of the physical powers, with little attention to the mind or soul, gives us the mere bully and prize fighter. The extraordinary development of the mind, with little regard to the body or soul, gives us the lean, lank infidel or the dreaming philosopher, turning the world upside down with their wickedness or nonsense, and leaving to sounder and better men the weary task of building it all over again. While the extraordinary development of the soul, with little care for mind or body, gives us the simple enthusiast, whose mind and body are too weak to hold the spirit, which becomes an angel because he disdained to remain a man. Educating our lower natures only, makes us lower than men—brutes; educating our intellectual nature only makes us worse than men—demons; educating our moral nature only, makes us better than men—angels. But if we wish to remain simply men, we must educate the whole nature of man. This education must be harmonious, moving together, all the powers receiving due attention in their turn. As the body acquires vigor, agility and grace, the mind must acquire strength, wisdom and knowledge, and the soul purity, truth and charity. Men thus educated are models of beauty, lords of wisdom, and friends of God. Such were Adam and Eve before the fall, perfect without education from the hand of their Maker—Adam, type of manly strength and proportion; Eve, fairest of women—whose minds were bright with intelligence, and whose souls were pure as the morning dews of Paradise.

Adam the goodliest man of men since born  
His sons; the fairest of her daughters, Eve.



"They walked the groves and valleys, mountains and flowery fields of Eden, vigorous as the noonday, lovely as the morning. Looking out on all nature, they read as in a book; the green earth and the starry heavens were the bright open pages on which the words formed into histories and poems more grand and beautiful than sage ever penned or poet dreamed. Day and night their hearts, not thinking evil, rose to God an endless hymn of praise. But they fell, and ever since their fall the world has been educating in the sublime endeavor to return to those model types fashioned by the hand of divinity."

The following poems are given as showing what Prof. Howard is capable of in that line:

## CHIMES OF NOTRE DAME.

Beauty's spirit lingers  
O'er the spot I love;  
Well I know that angel fingers  
Paint the blue above;  
Well I know they listen  
To the vesper song,  
When the silent planets glisten  
As they float along;  
Listen to the chiming  
Praises of the Lamb,  
As they tremble from the rhyming  
Bells of Notre Dame.

Swell, ye sounds caressing,  
On the midnight air,  
All this silence bathed in blessing  
Woke to God in prayer;  
Wearied man is sleeping  
From the toilsome day,  
Tune the soft dreams o'er him creeping,  
Music, watch and pray!  
Lo, the forest looming  
On the distant calm  
Echoes back your silvery booming,  
Bells of Notre Dame!

When the morning lightens  
On the eastern sky,  
And the spire-top glows and brightens  
As the sun rolls high,  
Shed your peals to duty  
O'er the earth impearled,  
Give the sparkling morning beauty  
Tongue to rouse the world.  
As your songs of gladness,  
Matin hymn and psalm,  
Wake our souls and cheer their sadness,  
Bells of Notre Dame!

## IN OCTOBER.

## I.

It comes again, that subtle force,  
Stealing in air and stream and grove,  
Purples the water's winding course,  
And paints the woods as poets love.

The liquid heaven in depths of blue,  
Broods over hills of mist and gold,  
O'er sleeping vales of crimson hue,  
Orange and green and tints untold.

## II.

'T is beauteous Death, so placid, grand,  
Hath sent before her flush of pride,  
Hath flung her banners o'er the land,  
Triumphing ere her lance is tried.

There gorgeous trappings deck the tomb,  
And hide its yawning from the eye;  
The victims crowned in flowers come,  
And move in pomp all stately by.

The splendor of the coming storm,  
The glory of the setting sun,  
The comeliness of age's form,—  
Such garniture hath Death put on!

## III.

And doth this shame our sable show,  
Our funeral cortege, plumes and weeds?  
World-conquering Rome did never know  
Triumph superb as Death here leads.

Endless processions, crimson-robed,  
All wailings hushed to breathless rapture,  
Hath none the god-like secret probed,  
And found this hidden joy of nature?

## IV.

O doubter, lift thy darkened brow  
To this fair Nature! Sweet her May,  
But as a bride she blushes now  
That seeks her rest at close of day.

Ah, she hath never sinned or sorrowed;  
She hath the primal purity;  
Her flush from the vernal sun is borrowed,  
And her Eden life shall ever be!

ALFRED BRYANT MILLER.

Alfred B. Miller was born in South Bend, February, 1845. He received his education principally in the old County Seminary. Mr. Miller was quite young when the war commenced, but enlisted in the 21st Indiana Battery, and before the close of his term of service was promoted Lieutenant. Before entering the army he evinced a taste for literary work, and contributed both prose and poetry to the columns of the *Register*, at South Bend, the *McGregor*, *Iowa Journal*, and the *Home Journal* of New York. While in the army he was the regular correspondent of the *Chicago Tribune* and *New York Herald*, and an occasional contributor to *Harper's Weekly* and *Frank Leslie's Newspaper*, several of his poems being illustrated in those papers. Of the three selections which are

taken from his writings, "Mist at Morn" was illustrated in *Frank Leslie* and "The Signal Light" in *Harper's Weekly*. When Lieutenant Miller returned from the army he became associated in the publication of the *Register* at South Bend, where he remained as editor in chief until 1872, when he sold his interest in that paper and in connection with others began the publication of the South Bend *Tribune*, after which he became managing editor. While Mr. Miller is an easy and graceful political writer, his tastes tend to general literature. The following poems are from his pen.

## A REMEMBRANCE.

O, boyhood days that come no more,—  
Long days in limpid sunshine drawn,  
When I lay in the cooling shade  
That flecked my father's lawn,

And let my wayward fancy float  
Out on imagination's sea,  
To seek the wonders of elf-land  
And bring them back to me.

Or, deep in books of childish lore,  
The stolen sweets of nursery shelf,  
I read until those fairy tales  
Became a part of self;—

I tripped along in childish glee  
Or wept with fear in darkened wood,  
And, trembling stood at grand'am's door,  
With little Red Riding Hood.

With Cinderella at the ball  
I pirouetted through the rooms,  
While elves and fairies 'round us danced  
Fantastic rigadoons.

With Jack the Giant Killer I  
Went forth to deeds of giant strength;  
On many a puissant field  
We laid our foes at length.

Sweeping along the course of time  
Until the years count in their teens,  
I threw the childish books away;  
Then came the boyish dreams.

I walked with Crusoe on his isle,  
I saw the footstep in the sand,  
And listened to the ocean waves  
That lapped the lonely strand.

Strange birds, strange beasts, strange forest trees,  
And fruits that had a foreign taste—  
Alone with him I walked the strand  
A monarch of the waste.

The legend of Arabian Nights,—  
 Enchanted, wandered I amid  
 The splendors of the palaces  
 Of Haroun-Al-Raschid.

I saw of fairest Persian maids,  
 All favorites of the great Sultan's,  
 Enrobed in richest draperies  
 Reclining on divans.

While from deep hidden galleries  
 Sweet music filled the palace walls,  
 And perfume that o'erpowered the sense,  
 Wing'd through the pillared halls.

And myriad maids, well-spoken, fair,  
 Trooped through the open palace doors,  
 And waltzed in graceful poses 'long  
 The tessellated floors.

With Ali Baba at the cave,  
 When magic "sesame" oped its door,  
 I stood, and feasted wondering eyes  
 On riches that it bore.

Or, mounting the Enchanted Horse,  
 With eagle swiftiness cleaved the air,  
 And through great banks of golden cloud  
 Mounted the purple stair

That winds up through the starry realms,  
 Unto Mahomet's paradise,  
 And saw there pass an endless train  
 Of darkest-eyed houris.

I rubbed the lamp of Aladdin,  
 I saw my every wish fulfilled;  
 The wildest whims of fancy took  
 A shape, if I but willed.

I saw my every wish fulfilled,  
 But ah! the lamp were rubbed in vain;  
 No genius hath the power to fetch  
 Those golden days again.

Sweet boyhood days! they come no more,—  
 Long days in limpid sunshine drawn,  
 When I lay in the cooling shade  
 That flecked my father's lawn,

And let my wayward fancy float  
 Upon Imagination's sea,  
 Seeking the wonders of elf-land,  
 And bringing them to me.

#### THE SIGNAL LIGHT.

On highest top of mountain range  
 Which rears its head in gloomy night,  
 Environed with mystery,  
 There gleams the Signal Light.

Far, far beneath, the angry tide  
Of battle surges to and fro;  
Its fierce waves beat the mountain side  
Whereon that Light doth glow.

And over all the battle ground  
The thick smoke rises like a pall,  
Yet naught disturbs its steady blaze;  
It shineth throughout all.

Like that famed star of Bethlehem  
Which showed the wise men where he lay,  
The distant Signal Light doth guide  
Our army on its way.

Thus when we cross the vale of death  
That borders on the Silent Land,  
Oh, may there be a Signal Light  
To guide us to his hand.

## MIST AT MORN.

Belts of woodland circling around  
Luxuriant masses of green;  
Zone after zone of rolling mist  
Wavering up between.

Zephyrs dancing down through its depths,  
While the sweep of their dresses whirl  
The rolling mist in a thousand  
Eddies of graceful curl.

Like him who dipped in the Lydian stream,  
The morning beams bathe in the mist;  
Like him, turns to molten gold  
The vapory amethyst.

Marshallled in many columns it rolls,  
Resists the attacks of the sun;  
Down he comes with his golden lances,  
Piercing them one by one.

Backward they roll, upward they glide,  
Dissolve in the ambient air;  
The sun is victor, holds the world;  
His beams are everywhere.

Only belts of woodland around  
Luxuriant masses of green;  
Gone are the zones of rolling mist  
That wavered up between.

## E. BURKE FISHER.

E. Burke Fisher was born in Philadelphia. At an early age he evinced a great taste for reading and an ardent love of literature, and never wearied in the acquisition of knowledge. Before he was 15 years of age he was contributor to several periodicals. He was carefully educated, commencing the study of the classics at nine

years of age. At 15 years of age he engaged as clerk in the office of the *Saturday Evening Post*, then published and edited by Samuel C. Atkinson, of Philadelphia, where he remained a few years, when he became associated with Horace Greeley in *The New Yorker*. This paper not proving a financial success, it became merged into the *New York Tribune*.

Mr. Fisher then located in Pittsburg, becoming publisher and editor of *The Saturday Evening Visitor* (afterward edited by Mrs. Swisshelm). Here he had control of a large steam printing-office, publishing several periodicals, among them *The Witness*, edited by Wm. H. Burleigh, of Abolition fame; also a magazine edited by himself, *The Literary Examiner and Monthly Review*. The publication of this heavy and expensive undertaking brought financial ruin.

He was soon after admitted to the Bar, and commenced practice in Cleveland, Ohio, at the same time being connected with several periodicals in that city and Columbus, Ohio.

In 1853 Mr. Fisher located in South Bend, Indiana, engaging in the practice of the law, devoting much of his time to literary pursuits.

Mr. F. was a man of rare abilities, his mind was widely comprehensive and his temperament highly poetic. He had no ambition for literary fame, and wrote more cheerfully for others than for himself. Many who have been distinguished in the literary world owe much of their fame to the productions of his pen.

His death occurred in South Bend April 12, 1863. The following selections evince rare poetic talent:

#### A PÆAN, AS ON THE HEART.

A pæan, as on the heart,  
 Hope pencils its magical beams  
 While Fancy's hand, with Promethean art;  
 The dead from their thrall redeems—  
 Clothes Ambition anew in the garments of youth,  
 And woos us again to believe in its truth.

A smile for the fondly lov'd,  
 And a hand for the tried and true;  
 The year that has pass'd, their friendship prov'd  
 And we greet with them the New;  
 They are with us now, and their presence throws  
 O'er the wild sea of life a serene repose.

A welcome as 'round us rise  
 The delusive beams of joy;  
 The present is ours,—its light let us prize,  
 For why should we destroy  
 The hues of Hope in seeming so fair?  
 Better slumber deceived than wake to despair.

A shout, a pæan, and a hymn  
 For the seasons and joys to come!  
 The past year's colors are misty and dim;  
 Let us over the Future roam,  
 And send out from the heart the joy-seeking dove  
 To search for the flowers of Friendship and Love.

*The New Yorker.*

## LUCUBRATIONS.

A wail for the passing year  
As its funeral train sweeps by,  
While the northern blast, with its sounds of fear,  
Howls along the darken'd sky,  
And Winter its peal of triumph rings  
'Mong the crashing boughs of the forest kings!

A dirge for the seasons dead.  
For Spring with its opening flowers,  
Fair Summer, whose verdant sheen was spread  
Over hill-side, vales and bowers,  
And Autumn, magnificent Autumn, too,  
With its waving fields of golden hue.

A sigh, as memory's hand  
From the Past its trophies tears  
And before us in solemn mockery stand  
The hopes of our earlier years;  
The "hopes that were angels at their birth,"  
But perished as perished the joys of earth.

A tear for the loved and dead—  
The young and the gentle hearted!  
They were with us, but now the year has sped,  
Alas! they have all departed!  
And the ruthless wind that 'round us raves  
Stirs the lifeless grass on their lonely graves.

A lament for pleasures gone,  
For the gladsome dreams of youth,  
When the heart was young, and around us was thrown  
The mantle, we thought, of truth,  
Till Time swept o'er the spot where we stood,  
And the mantle was borne on its restless flood.

A wail, a dirge, and a sigh,  
For the seasons and hopes that have flown!  
A lament for the pleasures of youth that lie  
On the bier of the old year strown!  
But the tear for the dead, the loved of yore,  
Let it freely gush! we shall see them no more.

A shout for the coming year,  
As the north wind fans its brow!  
Let the eye, lately dimmed with a tear,  
Wear a glad smile of triumph now;  
For the conqueror comes like a prince to his throne  
And the garlands of hope o'er his pathway are strown.

A hymn to the sister band!  
For Spring will resume its reign,  
And Summer re-clothe, with liberal hand,  
Her favorite haunts again;  
Mild Autumn, the season of fruits, will come  
And the reaper gather his harvest home.

During the war F. R. Tutt, of South Bend, was made Provost Marshal for St. Joseph county, and in the discharge of his duty arrested a deserter named Christy, and while taking him to Indianapolis, he escaped from the train at La Porte. Mr. Fisher,

whose sense of the ridiculous was keen, penned the following lines and had them mailed at Chicago addressed to Mr. Tutt:

TO THE RIGHT HON. F. R. TUTT, PROVOST MARSHAL.

"Hark! to the Marshal's question of despair:  
Where is Jack Christy? Echo answers, Where?"

Dear Provost Marshal, you may think  
In vamosing I was to blame,  
But bless your soul, if in my place,  
I rather think you'd do the same.

A soldier's life it suits me not,  
Whether on foot or in the saddle;  
Believing so, when at La Porte,  
I judged it wiser to skedaddle.

But, Frank, with you I will be frank;  
My bowels yearned when you did utter  
Words evidently aimed at me,  
"Ho! stop that man—he's a deserter!"

Your legs are not like Elliot's, Frank;  
You amble somewhat in your paces,  
Whilst I, as you must have perceived,  
Am quite 2:40 in tight races.

But now, alas! I bear no more  
Your voice narrating funny stories;  
No longer view your warrior phiz,  
Whence gleam your eyes like morning-glories.

Farewell! our routes are wide apart,  
You go—I *don't*—to Indianapolis;  
I wend my way to spread your praise  
In that Confederate metropolis.

When I see Jeff, and "smile" with him,  
I'll tell him how I dodged your notice,  
And beg him, when he bags the North,  
To give you—for my sake—an office.

Yea, if—such things have happ'd ere now —  
He ranks me Secretary of State,  
I'll choose you my right bower of hearts,  
With Lowell for your rich estate.

And when in time death stops his grog,  
And Satan claims his well-won price,  
I'll be King President myself,  
And you shall act the part of "Vice."

Lord! won't we have a jolly time?  
You'll bug the women, I the barrel,  
While as to greenbacks and State stocks,  
In sharing them we will not quarrel.

And when—it must be so, dear Frank!—  
Our bodies in grave-mold recline,  
Your soul will sink its chosen rest:  
I'm somewhat doubtful as to mine!



## MORAL.

A word in closing; lest some bite  
Against me in your duped mind rankles,  
When next with copperheads you train,  
Put iron ribbons round their ankles!

The scalawags are traitors all,  
And will not keep faith with their betters,  
The foresworn recreants when in thrall  
Should either hang or wear stout fetters.

Other residents of St. Joseph county have been distinguished as authors; as Prof. J. A. Lyon, author of the "Silver Jubilee," and "Lyon's Elocution;" T. G. Turner, author of the "Gazetteer of the St. Joseph Valley," and other works; Rev. A. Y. Moore, author of the "Life of Schuyler Colfax;" John D. Defrees, Rev. N. H. Gillespie, Rev. M. B. Brown, Rev. J. C. Carrier, Prof. A. J. Stace and Mrs. E. Kingsley.



## CHAPTER XXI.

PUBLIC SCHOOLS.—COUNTY SEMINARY.—STATE AND NATIONAL REPRESENTATION.—COUNTY OFFICERS.—A RETROSPECT.

### PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

The first school-houses in this county were but rude affairs, and the schools taught therein were but little better than the houses. "Subscription schools" were the custom, the teacher receiving a small sum per month and boarding around among the scholars, or receiving a certain amount per scholar, collecting the same from the parent or guardian of the child—if he could. The first school taught in the county was in South Bend in 1831, Elisha Egbert, a young attorney who had just settled in the place, being the teacher. The school-house, which had just been erected, was of logs, about eighteen feet square and seven feet high. Slab seats were provided for the scholars, with a board nailed against the wall for a writing desk. In this house, for some time, the various religious bodies met for public worship.

The cause of education in this county made but limited progress for some years, the common schools of the day, in which only the rudiments of an English education were taught, were thought by many to be all-sufficient. Still there were a few who aspired to something higher, and when the county seminary fund was thought to be sufficient for the erection of a building, there was quite a strife between the towns of South Bend and Mishawaka for its location. In order to secure its location private subscriptions were made for a large amount, and South Bend was selected by the authorities. This building was erected in 1845 on the site of the present high-school building on Washington street, its location then being described by the *Register* as "west of town." The spot is now the heart of the city. The building was torn down in 1872. A. B. Miller, editor of the *Tribune*, who received his education in that old building, thus speaks of it in the issue of his paper bearing date April 20, 1872:

"Nothing remains of the 'old seminary' building on Washington street but a pile of debris, and in a few days it will have no trace left. The South-Bender now absent will miss on his return the familiar structure which, homely though it was, has been identified with the history of our place from its earlier years. The building was erected in 1845, and the first term of school was taught by Prof. Wright, who we hear numbered among his pupils, A. S. Dunbar, Daniel Witter, Mark McClelland, D. R. Sample, R.

B. Miller, and others of their age we do not now call to mind. Prof. Wright was succeeded by Mr. Coggswell. Then followed Professors Smith, Sperbeck, McLafferty, Miss Barrett, Miss Bacon and Professor Wilcox, in chronological order. When first built, the seminary was surmounted by a tin-domed and pillared cupola, in which the boys used to take delight in lodging balls while playing 'ante-over,' that they might have some excuse for shinning up the lightning rod and playing havoc with the nests of pigeons that made their homes there. But the lightning knocked all the beauty and utility out of the cupola one afternoon in 1847, and in course of time it was taken down entirely, and since then the structure was familiar in outline to all our citizens as it is seen in the excellent photograph Mr. Bonney took just previous to its destruction. Although to be replaced by one of the handsomest school buildings in this part of the State there are many, particularly absent South-Benders who received their education in it, who will not hear of the destruction of that 'old seminary' without a pang of regret."

The present system of common schools, with some modifications, was adopted in 1852. The constitutional convention of that year had incorporated in the constitution the following provisions relative to common schools:

SECTION 1. Knowledge and learning generally diffused throughout a community being essential to the preservation of a free government, it shall be the duty of the General Assembly to encourage, by all suitable means, moral, intellectual, scientific, and agricultural improvement, and to provide by law, for a general and uniform system of common schools, wherein tuition shall be without charge and equally open to all.

SEC. 2. the common-school fund shall consist of the Congressional township fund, and the lands belonging thereto; the surplus revenue fund; the Saline fund, and the lands belonging thereto; the bank tax fund, and the fund arising from the 114th section of the charter of the State Bank of Indiana, the fund to be derived from the sale of county seminaries, and the moneys and property heretofore held for such seminaries; from the fines assessed for the breaches of the penal laws of the State, and from all forfeitures which may accrue; all lands and other estates which shall escheat to the State for want of heirs or kindred entitled to the inheritance; all lands which have been or may hereafter be granted to the State of Indiana by the act of Congress, of the 28th of Sept, 1850, after deducting the expenses of selecting and draining the same; taxes on the property of corporations that may be assessed by the General Assembly for common school purposes.

SEC. 3. The principal of the common-school fund shall remain a perpetual fund, which may be increased, but shall never be diminished; and the income thereof shall be inviolably appropriated to the support of common schools, and to no other purpose whatever.

SEC. 4. The General Assembly shall invest, in some safe and profitable manner, all such portions of the common-school fund as

have not heretofore been entrusted to the several counties, and shall make provision by law, for the distribution among the several counties of the interest thereof.

SEC. 5. If any county shall fail to demand its proportion of such interest for common-school purposes, the same shall be re-invested for the benefit of such county.

SEC. 6. The several counties shall be held liable for the preservation of so much of said funds as may be entrusted to them, and for the payment of the annual interest thereon.

SEC. 7. All trust funds held by the State shall remain inviolate and be faithfully and exclusively applied to the purposes for which the trust was created.

The Legislatures of the State have, from time to time, passed such laws as was thought necessary to carry out the provisions of the Constitution. The school fund in the State has accumulated until it now amounts to about \$5,000,000.

St. Joseph county has kept pace with the balance of the State with respect to her public schools. In 1853 there were 19 school houses in the entire county, the value of which could not have been more than \$6,000. In 1878 there were 115, valued at \$250,827. In 1880 the number was further increased to 120, the estimated value of which was \$252,560. In 1878 there were 6,921 pupils admitted into the public schools, necessitating the employment of 216 teachers, the average compensation of which was, for males, \$1.68 $\frac{1}{2}$ , for females \$1.48 per day. In 1880 there were 7,088 pupils in the public schools; teachers employed, 209; average compensation, per day, for males, \$2.91 $\frac{3}{8}$ ; for females, \$1.81 $\frac{1}{2}$ .

Since 1872 there has been a remarkable increase in the number of persons applying for license, and a more remarkable increase in the number of persons rejected by the County Superintendent. The large number of rejections is probably due to two facts: first, the standard of requirements has been raised; and second, under the free examination system, it is likely a larger number of young and inexperienced persons take the examinations as a matter of experiment, without much expectation of securing a license. The hard times of the past six or seven years may also have something to do with the number of applicants, and in consequence, the rejections.

#### COUNTY EXAMINERS AND SUPERINTENDENTS.

The following named are the County Examiners and Superintendents of Public Schools since 1860:

William T. Van Doren was appointed June 7, 1861, and served but a few months. Mr. Van Doren was a practical teacher, and is at present clerk in the Treasury Department, Washington.

Alvin S. Dunbar, appointed Nov. 2, 1861. Mr. Dunbar was, previous to his appointment, and is now, one of the leading attorneys of South Bend.

Charles A. Evans, a minister of the gospel, was appointed County Examiner, June 10, 1864, and served about eighteen months.

Jacob Merrifield received his appointment as County Examiner Jan. 30, 1866. He was previous to his appointment, and is now, a minister of the gospel and engaged in active work in that field of labor.

Elisha Sumption was appointed June 2, 1868, and was re-appointed June 6, 1871, and again June 7, 1873. Mr. Sumption is an old citizen of St. Joseph county, and was for some time Superintendent of Public Schools at Mishawaka, Indiana, and is at present a bookkeeper for the South Bend Iron Company. During the last month of Mr. Sumption's term he was the County Superintendent—the first to receive that appointment.

Andrew J. Foster was the successor of Mr. Sumption and was appointed July 1, 1873, and served about two years. Previous to his appointment he was the local agent at South Bend of the McCormick Reaper Company, and after his retirement he accepted the position of agent of the same company, and is at present located at St. Joseph, Missouri.

David A. Ewing received his appointment June 9, 1875, and served about thirteen months. He was subsequently principal of the high school at Virginia City, Montana, and died Feb. 11, 1880.

Frank A. Norton was appointed Aug. 12, 1876, and served eleven months. Mr. Norton is a teacher by profession, and has been Superintendent of Public Schools at Newton, Kansas, and is at present the president of a business college in that city.

Calvin Moon was appointed to succeed Mr. Norton, June 4, 1877, and was re-appointed June 2, 1879, and is the present occupant of the office. Mr. Moon has made a most efficient Superintendent, and has reduced the work of his office to a regular system. The present efficiency of the public schools of St. Joseph county is in a great measure due to him.

#### COUNTY SEMINARY.

The *St. Joseph Valley Register*, under date of Sept. 26, 1845, in speaking of this institution says: "This building, on the north side of Washington street, west of town, is rapidly approaching completion. It is of brick, two stories high, thirty feet wide by forty feet long, and is to be surmounted with a cupola. The expense of its erection is defrayed by the seminary fund (formed by the collection of fines for the breach of penal laws, thus making the penalties of vice contribute to the advancement of virtue and intelligence), aided by the subscriptions of private individuals. No portion of its cost is paid out of the county treasury. A. M. La Pierre, C. Caldwell and James M. Matthews are the builders; Gilman Towle, the superintendent. The seminary stands near the center of the acre-and-a-half lot which belongs to it, and which is

to be enclosed and improved. There will be two rooms in the building, one below and the other above. The one in the second story is to be the full size of the building, undivided at present by any partition; and the two rooms at present will comfortably contain all the pupils of the institution for many years to come. The location of the building spoken of as being west of town is now in the heart of the city.

The school was first opened Monday, Dec. 7, 1846, under the management of H. Wheeler, a graduate of the Indiana University, as principal, and Miss L. C. Merritt as instructress in the female department. Prof. Wright came next and was succeeded by Mr. Cogswell. Then followed Professors Smith, Sperbeck, McLafferty, Miss Barrett, Miss Bacon, and Prof. Wilcox, in chronological order. The old seminary building, so eloquently referred to on a preceding page, became associated in the minds of the neighbors with many pleasant experiences, so that after its removal in 1872, distance of time began to lend enchantment to the view. In April, 1872, the building itself was taken down and replaced by the present handsome structure known as the high-school building.

#### STATE AND NATIONAL REPRESENTATION.—CONGRESSIONAL.

The first election for Representative in Congress after the organization of St. Joseph county occurred in August, 1831, when Edward A. Hannegan, Democrat, was elected. Mr. Hannegan was re-elected in 1833 and 1835. In 1837 Albert S. White, Whig, was elected and served two years. He was succeeded in 1839 by Tillman A. Howard, Democrat. In 1841 Henry S. Lane, Whig, was the successful candidate.

The Legislature in 1842 re-districted the State, and St. Joseph county was made to form part of the Ninth Congressional district, composed of the following named counties: St. Joseph, Jasper, White, Cass, Miami, Fulton, Pulaski, Kosciusko, Marshall, Starke, Elkhart, La Porte, Porter, Lake, Wabash and Benton. Samuel C. Sample, Whig, of St. Joseph, was the first Representative of this district. In 1845 Charles W. Cathcart, Democrat, was elected and re-elected in 1847. Mr. Cathcart was succeeded in 1849 by Graham N. Fitch, Democrat, who was re-elected in 1851.

In 1851 the Legislature again re-districted the State, this county still forming a part of the Ninth District, which was now composed of the counties of St. Joseph, Miami, Cass, Fulton, Marshall, La Porte, Starke, Pulaski, Jasper, Porter, Lake, Benton and White. Norman Eddy, Whig, was the first Representative of this district. He was succeeded by Schuyler Colfax, Republican, who was elected in 1854, and re-elected in 1856, 1858, 1860, 1862, 1864 and 1866.

The Legislature in 1867 formed new districts, and St. Joseph

county then formed a part of the Eleventh district, composed of the counties of St. Joseph, White, Newton, Jasper, Pulaski, Fulton, Marshall, Starke, La Porte, Porter, and Lake. Jasper Packard, Republican, was elected in 1868, and re-elected in 1870 and 1872.

In 1872, by the Legislature of the State, a new district was formed composed of the counties of St. Joseph, La Porte, Porter, Lake, Newton, Jasper, Starke, Pulaski, White and Carroll, and named the Tenth district. William H. Calkins, Republican, was the first Representative, and was elected in 1874. He was re-elected in 1876 and 1878.

#### SENATORIAL.

On its organization St. Joseph county, together with Allen, Huntington, Elkhart, La Grange and La Porte, were made a Senatorial district. The district was represented from 1830 to 1836 by Samuel Hanna and David H. Colerick.

In 1836 Wabash county was attached to the district, and Jonathan A. Liston was elected Senator, and served one year, being succeeded by Thomas D. Baird. The Legislature this year changed the Senatorial districts, St. Joseph, Marshall, Kosciusko, and Starke forming one. In 1837 Thomas D. Baird was re-elected in 1839 and 1841. Before the expiration of his last term he was removed by death, and John D. Defrees was elected to fill the vacancy. Mr. Defrees was elected again in 1843 for the full term. He has been succeeded in order by William C. Pomeroy, Lot Day, Norman Eddy, A. P. Richardson, Hugh Miller, John Reynolds, John F. Miller, Horace Corbin, Lucius Hubbard, Joseph Henderson, David R. Leeper.

#### REPRESENTATIVE.

St. Joseph county was first placed in a Representative District composed of the counties of Allen, La Porte, Elkhart, LaGrange and Huntington, and was represented in 1833 by David H. Colerick, who was re-elected in 1834.

In 1834 the counties of St. Joseph and La Porte were made a joint Representative District which was continued for two years, being represented by Jonathan A. Liston and Thomas D. Baird.

In 1836 the county was alone made a Representative District which has continued to the present time. It has been represented from that time to the present by John A. Henricks, Elisha Egbert, Leonard Rush, John D. Defrees, ———, Hugh C. Flannegan, Harris E. Hurlbut, William Miller, Thomas S. Stanfield, Mark Whinery, John Reynolds, Jeremiah H. Service, George C. Merrifield, Andrew Anderson, Jr., Nelson Ferris, J. C. Williams, W. W. Butterworth, David R. Leeper, ——— Ging. Of the foregoing Representatives, Stanfield served four terms, Miller three, Merrifield, Henricks, Butterworth and Leeper two each.

## UNITED STATES SENATE.

Schnyler Colfax was elected Vice-President of the United States in 1868, and presided over the Senate from March 4, 1869, to March 4, 1873.

## COUNTY OFFICERS.—CIRCUIT COURT PRESIDING JUDGES.

John R. Porter,  
Gustavus A. Everts,  
Samuel C. Sample,  
Ebenezer M. Chamberlain,  
Thomas S. Stanfield,

Albert G. Deavitt,  
John B. Niles,  
Andrew S. Osborne,  
Daniel Noyes.

## ASSOCIATE JUDGES.

John Banker,  
Chapel W. Brown,  
William McCartney,  
John Ireland,

Reynolds Dunn,  
Powers Greene,  
Peter Johnson,  
John D. Robertson.

## PROBATE JUDGES.

James P. Antrim,  
John J. Deming.

Elisha Egbert,  
Edward F. Dibble.

## COMMON PLEAS.

Elisha Egbert,  
Edward J. Wood,

Daniel Noyes.

## CLERKS.

Lathrop M. Taylor.....1830 to 1837  
Tyra W. Bray.....1837 to 1844  
John F. Lindsay.....1844 to 1851  
Samuel M. Chord.....1851 to 1859

Elias V. Clark.....1859 to 1867  
George W. Matthews.....1867 to 1875  
Edwin Nicar.....1875 to 1879  
Timothy E. Howard.....1879

## SHERIFFS.

Benjamin McCarty.....1831  
Samuel L. Cottrell.....1831 to 1832  
Scott West.....1832  
Daniel A. Fullerton.....1832 to 1833  
Samuel L. Cottrell... ..1833 to 1838  
Charles M. Tutt.....1838 to 1842  
Lot Day, Sr.....1842 to 1846  
Lot Day, Jr.....1846 to 1850  
Ralph Staples.....1850 to 1852

Benjamin F. Miller.....1852 to 1856  
Evan C. Johnson.....1856 to 1860  
Nelson Ferris.....1860 to 1864  
Solomon W. Palmer.....1864 to 1868  
George V. Glover.....1868 to 1872  
Joseph Turnock.....1872 to 1876  
Robert Hardy.....1876 to 1878  
James Daugherty.....1878

## PROSECUTING ATTORNEYS—CIRCUIT COURT.

Andrew Ingram.....1832 to 1834  
Samuel C. Sample.....1834 to 1848

George Pierson.....1848 to —

## PROSECUTING ATTORNEYS—COMMON PLEAS COURT.

John L. Foster.....1854  
Joseph Henderson.....1854 to 1856

Andrew Anderson, Jr... .1856 to 1857  
Reuben L. Farnsworth....1857 to —



## CORONERS.

Samuel L. Cottrell.....1834 to 1835	Allen Bassett.....1852 to 1854
E. P. Taylor.....1835 to 1841	Aaron A. Webster.....1854 to 1856
Leonard B. Rush.....1841 to 1842	Andrew H. Long.....1856 to 1874
Jacob Hardman.....1842 to 1843	Daniel Layton.....1874 to 1876
Israel DeCamp.....1843 to 1845	Israel Underwood.....1876 to 1878
Truman Fox.....1845 to 1847	John C. Miller.....1878 to 1880
Richmond Tuttle.....1847 to 1852	

## RECORDERS.

L. M. Taylor.....1830 to 1837	Alexander N. Thomas.....1867 to 1875
William H. Patterson.....1837 to 1851	John Groff.....1875 to 1879
Lot Day, Jr.....1851 to 1858	Harrison G. Beemer.....1879
R. J. Chestnutwood.....1858 to 1867	

## AUDITORS.

L. M. Taylor.....1830 to 1837	Woodman J. Holloway....1859 to 1867
Tyra W. Bray.....1837 to 1844	Alfred Wheeler.....1867 to 1875
George W. Matthews.....1845 to 1849	William D. Smith.....1875
Aaron B. Ellsworth.....1849 to 1859	

## TREASURERS.

John D. Lasly.....1830 to 1831	John H. Harper.....1860 to 1864
Aaron Miller.....1831 to 1833	Ezekiel Green.....1864 to 1868
John T. McLelland.....1833 to 1840	Hiram Miller.....1868 to 1872
Albert Monson.....1841 to 1850	David B. Creviston.....1872 to 1876
John K. Wright.....1850 to 1851	C. Henry Sheerer.....1876 to 1878
Robert B. Nicar.....1851 to 1856	John Hay.....1878
Solomon Miller.....1856 to 1860	

## COUNTY SURVEYORS.

William Clark.....1831 to 1832	William M. Whitten.....1865 to 1866
Tyra W. Bray.....1832 to 1836	William D. Bulla.....1866 to 1868
Thomas P. Bulla.....1836 to 1856	Milton V. Bulla.....1868 to 1872
Milton W. Stokes.....1856 to 1864	William M. Whitten... ..1872 to 1874
William D. Bulla.....1864 to 1865	Arthur J. Stace.....1874

## COUNTY COMMISSIONERS.

- 1830—Adam Smith, Lambert McComb, Levi T. Arnold, (Acting Commissioners, old Justices' Court.)
- 1831—David Miller, Joseph Kohrer, Aaron Stanton.
- 1832—John Ireland, Benjamin Hardman, John Martindale.
- 1833—John Ireland, Lot Day, Reynolds Dunn.
- 1834—Same as for 1833.
- 1835—Lot Day, Reynolds Dunn, Orlando M. Hurd.
- 1836—Reynolds Dunn, Orlando M. Hurd, William H. Patteson.
- 1837—Lot Day, George Holloway, Orlando M. Hurd. (Mr. Hurd failed to qualify, and Alonzo Delano was appointed to fill vacancy).
- 1838—Same as for 1837.
- 1839—Same as for 1838.
- 1840—Lot Day, Alonzo Delano, Thomas D. Vail.
- 1841—Lot Day, Thomas D. Vail, Gilman Towle.
- 1842—Thomas D. Vail, Gilman Towle, M. B. Hammond.

- 1843—Thomas D. Vail, Gilman Towle, M. B. Hammond.
- 1844—Same as for 1843.
- 1845—Same as for 1844.
- 1846—Gilman Towle, M. B. Hammond, R. Hubbard.
- 1847—Same as for 1846.
- 1848—Gilman Towle, Ransom Hubbard, Samuel M. Chord
- 1849—Gilman Towle, John Druliner, Samuel M. Chord.
- 1850—Same as for 1849.
- 1851—John Druliner, Gilman Towle, Edwin Pickett.
- 1852—Same as for 1851.
- 1853—John Druliner, John Hammond, Gilman Towle.
- 1854—Same as for 1853.
- 1855—Same as for 1854.
- 1856—Same as for 1855.
- 1857—Same as for 1856.
- 1858—Gilman Towle, John Hammond, J. C. Williams.
- 1859—John Hammond, J. C. Williams, William F. Bulla.
- 1860—J. C. Williams, F. R. Tutt, W. F. Bulla.
- 1861—Same as for 1860.
- 1862—F. R. Tutt, Gilman Towle, J. C. Williams.
- 1863—J. C. Williams, C. Studebaker, Gilman Towle.
- 1864—C. Studebaker, Nathaniel Frame, Gilman Towle.
- 1865—Same as for 1864.
- 1866—Gilman Towle, J. C. Knoblock, Nathaniel Frame.
- 1867—Same as for 1866.
- 1868—Same as for 1867.
- 1869—Same as for 1868.
- 1870—Nathaniel Frame, Gilman Towle, Dwight Deming.
- 1871—Nathaniel Frame, Albert Cass, Dwight Deming.
- 1872—Same as for 1871.
- 1873—Same as for 1872.
- 1874—John Emsperger, Nathaniel Frame, Dwight Deming.
- 1875—Same as for 1874.
- 1876—Dwight Deming, William D. Rockbill, John Emsperger.
- 1877—Same as for 1876.
- 1878—Same as for 1877.
- 1879—Same as for 1878.

#### A RETROSPECT.

More than two centuries have passed since the first white man trod the soil of St. Joseph county. After Father Marquette and La Salle, what other "pale faces" were within its borders until Pierre Navarre came in 1820, history is silent. It is possible, and quite probable, that the county was visited by many French traders and Catholic priests, but of this nothing is known. When Navarre came, and even for some years after Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor established their trading posts on the banks of the beautiful St. Joseph river, there was nothing to break the solemn stillness of nature save the growl of the wild beast, the whoop of the savage, or the rush and roar of winds as they passed over the prairie and woodland. The soil was unweary by the plow, and the woodman's ax had never been heard previous to this time. Nature had done her best to make the county a beautiful one, fit indeed for those who were destined to possess it. The various prairies were in the summer decked in beautiful green, while the prairie flowers exhibited colors that only the hand of the Creator could

form, so that it could well be said that even "Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these."

These the gardens of the desert—these  
 The unshorn fields, boundless and beautiful,  
 And fresh as the young earth ere man had sinned.  
     Lo! they stretch  
 In airy undulations far away,  
 As if the ocean in the gentlest swell  
 Stood still, with all his rounded billows fixed,  
 And motionless forever.

The forests, too, were grand. The giant oak, the stately elm, and the useful hickory seemingly pierced the very heavens, and stood as faithful sentinels over the entire surroundings. No fallen timber or undergrowth of any kind obstructed the passage, the annual prairie fire making a clean path for all. A prairie fire! The sight is a magnificent one indeed. An early writer who was looking at the country and enjoying the unfamiliar sight, was startled by a flash of light, and thus sketched a prairie on fire:

"Whilst enjoying the sublimity of the scene, night threw her mantle o'er the earth, and the sentinel stars set their watch in the skies, when suddenly the scene was lighted by a blaze of light illuminating every object around. It was the prairie on fire. Language cannot convey, words cannot express to you the faintest idea of the grandeur and splendor of that mighty conflagration. We thought that the pale Queen of night, disdaining to take her accustomed place in the heavens, had dispatched ten thousand messengers to light their torches at the altar of the setting sun, and that now they were speeding on the wings of the wind to their appointed stations. As I gazed on that mighty conflagration, my thoughts recurred to those immured in the walls of a city, and I exclaimed in the fullness of my heart:

Oh, fly to the prairie in wonder, and gaze,  
 As o'er the grass sweeps the magnificent blaze!  
 The world cannot boast so romantic a sight,  
 A continent flaming, 'mid oceans of light."

How changed the scene now! The timber in many places has been cleared away, and beautiful farms appear in its stead. The broad prairies have been shorn of their native beauty, and the hand of man has endeavored to excel in their decoration. The iron horse now courses over the prairie and through the timber where once only the trail of the red man was known. Villages, towns and cities appear where the wigwam was once seen. All this change has taken place in one-half century. What will the next fifty years bring forth? Who can tell?

Every old settler now living—those that were here prior to 1832—can realize fully the picture drawn; and as they sit by their fire-sides in old age, their minds wander back to the scenes of the long ago. They see that grand old man, with a heart tender and sympathizing as a child, one always ready and willing to relieve the eryl

of distress—Alexis Coquillard; they see the quiet, unobtrusive Lathrop M. Taylor as he was when not bowed down by the weight of years; they again take by the hand that bluff old Samuel Cottrell; quickly pass in imagination Elisha Egbert, Dr. Henricke, Horatio Chapin, and a host of others, who have passed on to the other shore. All this seems to them a reality; and when they gaze out upon the living, active throng that is continually moving to and fro, they rub their eyes and imagine it all a dream. But the old days have passed away, never to be recalled.

#### ST. JOSEPH COUNTY OF TO-DAY.

As it is impossible for the pen of the historian to do justice to the past, even so will he fail to properly present the St. Joseph of to-day. No county in Northern Indiana or Southern Michigan has made greater progress in the same length of time. In its churches, its schools, its manufacturing interests, its public and private buildings, in fact every thing that goes to show a progressive people, it has taken a leading position. It has to-day an incorporated city, two incorporated towns, and several villages numbering from one hundred and fifty to eight hundred inhabitants. It has a total population of upward of 33,000, and increasing rapidly. The great power of the St. Joseph river has been developed and utilized, and scores of manufacturing institutions profit by what has been done.

In the early day citizens of St. Joseph county met for worship in school-houses, barns or private dwelling-houses,—anywhere they could find a place, and glad were they of the opportunity; to-day churches are upon every hand, from the plain, unpretending frame, where a few zealous men and women gather together “in the name of Jesus,” to the imposing brick or stone, with bells pealing forth a joyful welcome to one and all to come “drink of the waters of life.”

The old log school-house has long since been displaced, and to-day are found, especially in the larger towns and cities, school buildings of handsome architectural appearance, costing many thousands of dollars each, and equipped with every appliance that can promote the cause of education. The comfort of pupils has been secured by the introduction of suitable seats and desks, maps, globes, philosophical apparatus, music, libraries, commodious play grounds, well ventilated apartments, beautiful plants and flowers, are all used as accessories, and the result is a humanizing influence. A large revenue derived from taxation is annually raised sufficient to maintain a scholarly corps of teachers. In addition to the public schools there are in the county two institutions of learning that have a world-wide fame, Notre Dame University and St. Mary's Academy, the one for males, the other for females. Under the most patient, persistent efforts they have been made what they are, a credit to the county and State, no less than to the religious body whose zeal has taken such practical shape.

St. Joseph county of to-day boasts of another civilizing influence in her newspapers, twelve weekly and two daily; all of which are well and ably edited.

In manufactures St. Joseph county of to-day leads every other county in the north part of the State. Three thousand men are at present engaged in the various manufactories.

In agriculture nowhere in the Union are more sure crops than here annually raised, and little vacant land is to be found in any part of the county; many acres which a few years ago were thought to be valueless on account of swamps, are to-day the most productive farms in the State.

The St. Joseph river, though not to-day used for purposes of navigation, is doing better in affording power for the manufactories already mentioned.

Railroads traverse almost every part of the county to-day, carrying away the productions of the soil and of the skillful mechanics variously employed. The telegraphic wire takes a message and carries it hundreds, nay thousands, of miles, in a moment's time; while the telephone wire is placed in the private houses of many, enabling them to converse with ease with those who are miles away.

Peace and plenty are enjoyed by every inhabitant of St. Joseph county to-day. Labor is in demand at remunerative wages; every manufactory is run to its full capacity, many of them finding difficulty in filling their orders.

The assessed value of real and personal property to-day is about \$15,000,000, about one-third the real value. The county owes neither bonded, floating, nor any other kind of debt whatever. Gentlemanly and accommodating men fill the public offices. In fact, everything goes to prove that St. Joseph of to-day is a model county in every respect.

## TOWNSHIP HISTORIES.

### CENTRE TOWNSHIP.

As we look over this beautiful part of St. Joseph county, we can hardly realize that so few years have elapsed since it was a howling wilderness, inhabited only by the wild beasts of the forests, and a race of people almost equally wild.

Centre township is bounded on the north by Portage, on the east by Penn and Madison, on the south by Union, and on the west by Greene. It is four miles from east to west, and five from north to south, and contains 20 square miles. It was laid out Sept. 7, 1831, at which time there were only two or three settlers in what is now Centre township. The following spring a few more adventurers settled in different parts of the township, and of the six men then living here but one remains, Col. Smith. Nathan Rose was the first to contract for land. He first came here in the summer of 1829, and purchased his land of the Pottawatomie Indians. He then returned and worked in a saw-mill on the Tippecanoe river near Rochester, Ind., to pay for the land. It was located in section 36, and is now owned by I. Roseberry, J. K. Dice, and Jon. Forneman. Mr. Rose moved his family in the fall of 1830 on the place now owned by J. K. Dice. Here he lived, enduring all the privations of pioneer life, until 1852, when he removed his family to St. Joseph, Missouri. He lived but a few years after this; he and his wife both died on the same day, and were buried in the same grave. Their children are now scattered over different parts of the West. James and Ashur Palmer came in the summer of 1830 and settled on Palmer's Prairie, thus giving it the name. They and their families have all left the township, removing to Lake county, where they died a few years ago. Andrew Milling came about the same time and located on section 35, where Mr. Hilderbrand now lives. He seems to have been a man of energy and intelligence, but has long since passed away. The family have all gone, and the name once so familiar in this community, will perhaps in another generation be almost forgotten.

In September, 1830, Henry Stull bought this land in the north part of the township. The land office at this time was at Fort Wayne. He came here by the way of Elkhart and Goshen. It must be remembered that at this time the city of Elkhart had not made its appearance, and Goshen contained but one house. There were no wagon roads north of Logansport. Mr. Stull was a native of Virginia, but becoming dissatisfied with his native State, and being of a daring, yet careful disposition he loaded a boat with what he

called skillets and pots, and started down the Ohio river, landing in the southern part of this State. This was while Indiana was yet a Territory. For a number of years afterward Mr. Stull was engaged in buying stock in Kentucky, and driving them to Eastern Pennsylvania for market. After he came to this county he engaged in farming. He was a man of good business talent, very careful and accurate in all his transactions, and respected and honored by all that knew him. It is said that he never had his name on any man's books, his motto being "Pay as you go." Being a man of temperate habits he lived to be a very old man, and died but a few years ago, in this township.

John Rose settled the same year, on section 36. His son William is still living in this township. It was about this time that the Rupels came to the county. They came from Pennsylvania, and stopped at Elkhart in 1830. While there, Peter Rupel secured his patent for his land in section 26. His son, E. H. Rupel, still has the original deeds made at the land office in Fort Wayne, and signed by Andrew Jackson. He lives on the old home farm. They removed from Elkhart to this township in 1831. They had a family of 7 children, most of whom are still living near the old farm.

After the year 1831 settlers began to come to the township very fast. In the year 1832-'3 the Smiths came; Isaac Lamb, Abiel Hungerford, Tyra N. Bray in 1833; James and Richard Inwood came in 1835 and settled in the southwestern part of the township. William Phillips came about the same time; Wm. H. Roerston settled on section 2, in October, 1836. It was about this time that the Odells, Ulerys and Rushes came; and it was not long after this time till the giant forests began to disappear very fast from the hills and vales of Centre tp., and in their place came well cultivated fields, bringing forth their bounteous harvests to reward the hardy woodman for his long and patient toiling. The narrow, winding wood road gradually disappeared; and in its place came the beautiful broad highway which now traverses the township in every direction.

The first child that was born in the township was Elizabeth Rose, daughter of Nathan Rose, and was born where J. K. Dice now lives, on section 36.

The first election was held in Smith's school-house on section 2. The elections are still held at the same place. The first Justice of the Peace was Mathias Stover.

The people of this township are very quiet and social,—so much so that they have not needed a Justice of the Peace or Constable for the past 20 years, although they comply with the requirements of the law and elect them. They do not qualify them: so they do not serve.

## EDUCATION.

The people at an early day saw the need of education, for we see the little band of pioneers as early as 1835 joining together and erecting a school-house on section 36, between the section line and the Michigan road, on Nathan Rose's farm. This building, although it may have been rude in appearance, showed the progressive character of the minds that these few hardy pioneers possessed. The building was built of round logs, with cabin roof; was small, and had a puncheon floor. The seats were rough benches made of slabs. For desks they had pins around the walls with boards on them. Blackboards, now considered so indispensable to a school-room, were not dreamed of. Stove it had none, but in its stead at the end of the room was a large fire-place; and on the outside could be seen the chimney towering above the roof, built of sticks and mortar. No doubt that many of these pioneer children who have grown to manhood often think of the merry faces and the laughing jokes that passed around the merry party as they stood about that fire-place on a frosty winter morning warming their fingers and toes. This building was used for six or seven years, when the country, becoming more densely settled, demanded something better and larger; and a frame was erected on J. Smith's land in section 2. This stood till the brick house was built some years ago. The first teacher in the log school-house was Mary Mellings. After her came Benjamin Gibbons and Daniel Robertson, now living in Greene township.

The second district was organized in about 1840 or 1842, and the house was built on section 36, on the farm now owned by I. Roseberry. It was of logs but soon gave way to a frame, and this to a beautiful brick structure which now occupies the old site.

The township now has five school-houses; and the education of the young receives a great deal of attention.

## CHURCHES.

At present the township contains but one church organization,—the *German Baptist*. They built their church house in the summer of 1859, on section 2. It is known as the Palmer Prairie church, in the South Bend district. The elders at the time the church was built were David Miller and Christian Winger. At that time they had about 70 members: now they have 120.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

The personal history of Centre tp. is both interesting and instructive, and we will not fail to record it. It would give us pleasure to speak even at greater length than we do, but the large number and limited space forbid.

*Francis Donaghue* was born in Ireland, April 4, 1828; came to America some time in 1844; lived in Brooklyn about a year, then removed to Cincinnati, where he clerked in a grocery for another year. The next year he spent in Southern Michigan. He came to



this tp. in 1847, and married Miss Rosann, daughter of John and Elizabeth Henson, of this tp., both natives of Virginia. They had 10 children, 5 of whom are living: John, Bridget, Mahala, Louisa and Rhoda. Mr. Donaghue was with the first company that went to the Golden State to seek their fortunes. He was also at Pike's Peak in 1860. When Mr. D. was a young man in his native country, he had made preparations to go to Van Diemen's Land, but on account of the wishes of his mother he changed his plans and came to America. He used to tell his family that he could not be too thankful that he did so. Mr. D. was a member of the Catholic Church in South Bend. He died in April, 1876. Mrs. Donaghue still lives on the farm on which they first settled when they came to this tp. She is a lady respected by all.

*Abraham B. Frick*, son of Henry and Mary (Colder) Frick, of Westmoreland county, Pa., was born July 5, 1820, and was married Sept. 2, 1841, to Sarah Cring, daughter of Frederick and Elizabeth Cring, both natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. Frick came with his parents to Stark county, O., in 1826, where his father died in 1849, and his mother in 1860. He came to this tp. in 1854. They have 10 children: Samuel, Polly, Joseph, Manuel, Alfred, Mary E., Frederick, Willard, Emma E. and Harvey. Mr. Frick is a Democrat and served three years in the 21st Ind. Battery in our late war; has been Justice of the Peace several terms; owns a well improved farm of 236 acres.

*Michael Himebaugh*, son of George and Christina Himebaugh, of Pennsylvania, was born in the same State Sept. 16, 1818. His great-grandfather came from Germany and settled in the Keystone State. The subject of this sketch came with his parents to Stark county, O., when a boy nine years old, where he was married in 1842 to Margaret Fouse, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Fouse, of the same county. Mrs. H. was born in 1817. This marriage was blessed with 6 children, viz.: Mary, William, Jacob, Catharine, Simon and Benjamin. Of these all are now dead except Catharine. Mr. Himebaugh was married a second time, to Mary Weaver, daughter of Michael and Catharine (Coleman) Weaver; she was born in Pennsylvania, April 21, 1823. Mr. Himebaugh's son, Jacob, was in the 73d Regiment in the late civil war. He went from South Bend and was under Colonel Wade, of La Porte. He died in the house of a rebel near Glasgow, Ky. Mr. H. has now been a resident of St. Joseph county for 24 years, and is a man respected by all that know him. In his religious belief he is a firm Presbyterian, and is now living a contented and happy life on his pleasant farm of 46 acres in sec. 35. P. O., South Bend.

*William Inwood*, son of Richard and Katy A. (Rush) Inwood, was born Oct. 1, 1847, on the farm on which he now resides, in Centre tp., and has ever since made this his home. Sept. 7, 1875, he was married to Maggie Byers, daughter of John and Anna Eliza Byers, of Greene tp., the former a native of Ohio, and the latter of New Jersey. They have 2 children: John R., born Oct. 28, 1876,

and Nellie, born May 27, 1880. Mr. Inwood's father came from England and was one of the first settlers in the tp. (See page 669.) Mr. Inwood received his education in the common school, and has, at different times, traveled over the greater part of our country, thus gaining a practical education which distinguishes him in his business. At the time of the war he was a member of the Union League, and also of the Home Guard. In politics he is a Republican. Both Mr. and Mrs. Inwood are members, in high standing, of the M. E. Church at Maple Grove. Live on sec. 10.

*Frederic Wm. Klinkner* was born Aug. 26, 1827, in Kaisersesch, Prussia. His parents were John and Sophia (Stull) Klinkner. He was married Feb. 17, 1852, to Katherine Schmits, of the same place, who was born June 16, 1827. In the spring following their marriage they came to New York, and subsequently to Detroit, and finally to Centre tp., in November, 1854. This couple have 3 children: Jacob, born in April, 1856, Pauline, born in June, 1861, and Willie, born April 9, 1864. His vocation is farming. He kept a grocery on his farm for several years, and had a very good business. Sept. 8, 1874, his son Jacob, while out in the woods hunting with some of his companions a mile or two from his home, accidentally discharged his gun, the shot taking effect in his side, from which he did not recover for several years. Mr. Klinkner being the seventh son born in his family, he received \$100 in gold from his king, according to the custom of the country. Mr. K. owns 119 acres in sec. 18.

*Samuel Kreisher* was born in Lebanon county, Pa., in April, 1859. His parents, William and Elizabeth Kreisher, removed to this county in 1862. They were married in 1840, and have 6 children, William, Samuel, Amelia, Susan, Elizabeth and Emma. All are living in the county except Emma, who lives in Napoleon, O. Mr. K. died in February, 1879. They own several hundred acres of fine farming land. Samuel, the subject of this sketch, is living on the old farm with his mother, and follows farming. P. O., South Bend.

*William Kreisher*, brother of the preceding, was born Jan. 2, 1851; was married Jan. 5, 1875, to Lydia Warner, daughter of George and Elizabeth (Hartman) Warner, of this county. She was born Jan. 10, 1855. They have 3 children, Frank, born July 15, 1877; Charley, born March 18, 1876; and Bertha, Aug. 9, 1879. Mr. K. is a Republican, and owns 204 acres in sec. 34, Union tp.

*Catharine Miller* was born in Hanover tp., Lebanon county, Pa., Dec. 18, 1812, a daughter of Martin and Elizabeth Wanger. She was married Sept. 15, 1831, to John Miller, in Lancaster county, Pa., who was born April 18, 1807, a son of William C. and Mary M. Miller. They removed to Ohio in 1831, and in May, 1847, came to this county and settled on the farm, which she still owns, in sec. 30, consisting of 160 acres, valued at \$100 an acre. Mrs. Miller still lives in the same house into which they moved

when they first came to the county 33 years ago, but they have added many improvements. They have 10 children, Sarah, Mary M., Martin, Elizabeth, William C., John H., Susan A., Ellen and Sylvania C. Mrs. Miller is a member of the German Baptist Church, as was also her husband. P. O., South Bend.

*Sarah Ann Robbins* was born June 18, 1819, in Washington county, Ind.; came to Morgan county in 1829, and married Thomas Robbins in 1842, of the same county; he was born June 5, 1818. They came to this county in 1849 and settled near South Bend on the farm now owned by Henry Studebaker; came to the place on which she now lives in 1850. Mr. Robbins was a member of the 48th Regiment in the late war. He died in 1863. They have 4 children living, Harrison B., Martha J., Isabel and Francis M. Mrs. R. has a farm of 80 acres in sec. 3. For many years she has been a good and respected member of the Christian Church.

*Mrs. Charlotte T. Rohrer*, daughter of David and Martha (Cowen) Picket, who came from near Rochester, N. Y., and settled in the township about 1843, and now reside in Minnesota, was married to John Rohrer, Dec. 29, 1840, who was born Jan. 27, 1816, the son of John and Mary Rohrer, early settlers of this county. They have one child, Laura (now Mrs. W. H. Stull), born Dec. 13, 1843. Mrs. Rohrer has a farm of 101 acres, worth \$100 per acre, in sec. 25.

*William Rose*. Among the first settlers of this county were the parents of the subject of this notice, John M. and Evaline Rose, the former a native of Woodstown, N. J., and the latter of Butler county, Ohio. They were married in March 1831, and removed to this county in September, 1832. They had eight children, of which only two lived to attain the age of manhood, Richard and William. Both Mr. and Mrs. Rose died very suddenly, the former on May 4, 1866, aged 67 years, and the latter Sept. 9, 1862, aged 51 years. Richard is now living in Cass county, Mich. William, the subject of this sketch, was born Sept. 9, 1832, and was married Nov. 30, 1854, to Mary A. Barnes, daughter of John E. and Harriet (Trit) Barnes, natives of Maryland. Their children are: Frank A., born July 15, 1855; Schuyler C., born Feb. 22, 1860; Lillian B., born Oct., 5, 1866. Frank A. was married to Mary Bond, May 23, 1878. They have one child. They are living on his father's farm. Mr. Rose obtained his education in the common schools of the county. Has traveled through the West a great deal, and visited numerous tribes of Indians. His politics are Republican; he was formerly a Whig. He has 73 acres of land on sec. 35, valued at \$80 per acre; P. O., South Bend.

*Isaiah Roseberry* was born in Clermont county, Pa., Aug. 5, 1809. His parents, William and Sophia (Rease) Roseberry, came from New Jersey and settled in Pennsylvania about 1800. He was married in October, 1836, to Sarah Ann Cribbling, daughter of William Cribbling, of Pennsylvania; she was born Dec. 11, 1813, and they

had nine children, five of whom are living: Sophia, Mary E., William H., Melvina and Sarah A. Lemmel, born Jan. 3, 1841, was a member of Co. B, 48th Ind. Vol. Inf., and was killed at Dallas, Georgia, while working on an entrenchment. Mr. R. came to Ohio in 1837, moved to this township in April, 1850; owns a well improved farm of 137½ acres in sec. 36, valued at \$100 per acre; P. O., South Bend.

*Bazel Rupel*, son of Peter and Christina Rupel, of this county, was born Jan. 29, 1833. He was married May 25, 1854, to Sarah J. Bronson, of this tp. Her parents are George W. and Mary (Corcons) Bronson. They have 3 children, James T., born Oct. 20, 1855; M. L., born Oct. 3, 1857; and N. I., born Oct. 15, 1864. Mrs. Rupel was born Dec. 6, 1838. They are worthy members of Pleasant Grove Grange, No. 1550. Mr. R. is a Democrat. He received his education in the common schools of the county. Was at Pike's Peak in 1860. Owns 50 acres of land. Mrs. Rupel's mother, *nee* Mary Calkins, was born in Jamestown, N. Y., June 21, 1818, and her father, Caleb Calkins, was born in Vermont, Aug. 27, 1790, and her mother, *nee* Susan Beardsley, was born in Rhode Island, Nov. 27, 1790; they were married in 1812. Geo. W. Bronson was born in Wayne county, O., Aug. 25, 1814, and was married in 1835, in Cass county, Mich. Mr. Bronson's mother, *nee* Nancy Cathcart, was born in New Jersey March 6, 1786, and his father, Reuben Bronson, was born in Vermont Sept. 7, 1781; the two latter were married in 1804. Mr. R's P. O. is South Bend.

*Elisha H. Rupel*, son of Peter and Christina Rupel, formerly of Pennsylvania, but later of this county, was born Oct. 29, 1827, in Somerset county, Pa.; moved to this tp. in 1830; was married in 1853 to Jane Vanderhoof, daughter of Jules and Catherine Vanderhoof, of this tp. They have 2 children, Clarissa, born in 1855, and Harrietta, born in 1860. Mr. R. is a Democrat; his first vote was cast for Andrew Jackson. He owns 187 acres of fine land, worth about \$100 an acre, in sec. 26.

*Hiram Rupel*, living on sec. 26, was born in Elkhart county, in September, 1830; his parents, Peter and Christina (Shuinal) Rupel, were natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. Rupel was married in 1854 to Laura Creedvell, formerly of New York State. They have 3 children, Dicintha, Oscar William and Lonis Edyker. Mr. Rupel is a farmer and has a beautiful and well tilled farm of 26½ acres, valued at \$100 per acre; P. O., South Bend.

*Martin Slough*, son of Martin and Barbara Slough, who emigrated to America from Wirtemberg, Germany, in 1832, and settled in Portage county, Ohio. Here, Sept. 28, 1832, the subject of this sketch was born. He came to Woodland, this county, in 1850. In 1853 he removed to Union tp., where he ran a saw-mill till 1868, when he removed to his farm in sec. 18, this tp., where he still resides. His father died at the age of 75 years, in the spring of 1877; his mother died in July, 1869, aged 63, both in this tp. Mr. Slough was married in October, 1868, to Jane Gibbens, daughter

of William and Ann Gibbens, of this county. They have 5 children: Alvira C., Melvina A., John W., Charles H. and Etta M. Mr. Slough is a Republican. His business is farming, and he owns 80 acres in this tp., on sec. 18, and 80 acres in Madison tp; P. O., South Bend.

*John S. Stull*, son of Henry and Rebecca Stull, late of this county, was born in Jennings county, this State, Nov. 21, 1821; was married in 1857 to Margaret Lock, daughter of George W. and Mary Lock, who came to the county in 1842, the former a native of Virginia and the latter of North Carolina. They have 2 children, Mary R. and Edward C. Mr. Stull came with his folks to this county in 1830, and has witnessed it change from a dreary wilderness to as beautiful a county as America can boast of. He owns a good farm, on sec. 26, and has it well improved. P. O., South Bend.

*W. H. Stull* was born in Jennings county, Ind., in 1826. He came with his parents, Henry and Rebecca Stull, to the county in 1830. His father entered the farm he now lives on in 1830, the land office at that time being at Fort Wayne. Mr. Stull was married in November, 1850, to Sophronia Day. She died, and left 2 children, Josephine and Mary. Mr. S. was married again, in 1865, to Louisa Rohrer, daughter of John and Charlottiz Rohrer, of this tp. They have 2 children, John and Agnes L. Mr. S. is a farmer, a Granger and a Democrat. Has several fine farms. Residence, sec. 26. P. O., South Bend.

*David Whitman*, son of Abraham and Elizabeth Whitman, the former of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Germany, but now of this county, was born in Ohio, Oct. 3, 1852; was married Oct. 3, 1876, to Christina Loring, of this tp. Her parents, Fred and Mary Loring, were among the early settlers of the county. They have one child, Edna, born Jan. 13, 1879. Mr. W. is a farmer, and received his education in the common schools of the county. P. O., South Bend.

## CLAY TOWNSHIP.

For three manifest reasons, the history of Clay township must necessarily be short. First, the township itself is small, and unless something remarkable be connected with it, it could not have a lengthy and elaborate history. Secondly, it was not organized as a township until 1840, and therefore everything concerning its early history, particularly concerning the names of early settlers of the township up to that year, will be included in the history of German township. And thirdly, the most important thing in connection with Clay township, and indeed, in all probability, in connection with St. Joseph county, namely its educational interests, including Notre Dame University and St. Mary's Academy, has been included in the State and county history of this work.

At the June session of the Board of County Commissioners in 1840, an order was passed constituting Clay a separate township, and it was named after Henry Clay, who was just in the prime of his political glory. The first election in the township was held in "Brooks' barn," now burned down, then on section 30. The first justices of the peace of Clay township were Jonathan Hardy and Samuel Brooks.

During the early settlement of German township, that part of it lying east of the St. Joseph river, which is now Clay township, did not settle very rapidly until about 1837-'8. The first settlement was along the eastern bank of the St. Joseph river, where John Eyler, Lambert McCombs and John Weaver, a German Baptist preacher, together with a few other families, located. From that time to the present the population has gradually increased, and at the last census it was 1,476? At present the citizens are mostly Germans.

Clay township is 38 north, range 3 east, is situated in the northern part of St. Joseph county, and is bounded on the north by the State of Michigan, on the east by Harris and Penn townships, on the south by Penn and Portage, and on the west by the St. Joseph river, beyond which lies German township. Nearly all of the land is broken, or marsh, or timbered land, and across the south-western part flows a small stream branching off from the St. Joseph river on the west. Across the western part runs a branch of the Michigan Central railroad, connecting South Bend and Niles, Mich. The sections of the township are somewhat irregular, a part of the northern road being in Michigan; and on the west the line is very irregular, owing to the fact that when the township was organized, the St. Joseph river was made the western boundary. At present a large and substantial wooden bridge is in process of erection

across the river, from section 23, connecting Clay and German townships.

There is a grist-mill on section 23, on the river, owned by John F. Curly, of South Bend. At present the mill is not running; it was built several years ago by Jonas Harris. Prior to the erection of the grist-mill by Mr. Harris, Mr. Weaver had built a saw-mill on the same location; Mr. Weaver also had a carding-machine and fulling-mill, and for a time did quite an extensive business; but these were afterward removed, and their place supplied by the present grist-mill. There was also at one time a fulling-mill near where St. Mary's college now stands, run by a man named Graham. And at one time in the history of the township, S. Ulery ran a carding-machine. But these have all long since been dispensed with, and to-day there is very little or nothing to add to the business interests of the township by way of mills or villages, there being but one of the former, and none of the latter. But villages in Clay township are not necessary, as it is conveniently and closely situated to South Bend. Politically, the township is Democratic.

#### CHURCHES AND CEMETERIES.

There is only one church in Clay township besides the Catholic, a history of which is given in connection with its college. It is a German Baptist organization, and the church building is located on section 24. It was erected in 1868 by means of individual donations. The first pastors of the church were Jacob Cripe and Christian Wenger. The present pastor is John B. Wrightsman. The congregation at first was quite small, but is now respectable in number, and is increasing, including many of the highly respected citizens of Clay township.

There are three public cemeteries in the township; one on section 25 near the German Baptist church; one on section 30, known as the Township Cemetery, and another in connection with Notre Dame University, situated near it and on the land owned by that institution.

#### EDUCATIONAL INTERESTS.

The first school ever taught in the township was on section 23, in Mr. Eyler's house. Charles Murray, a married man from "Dutch Island," in Harris township, whom the patrons of the immediate neighborhood hired, was the first teacher. The first school-house in the township was built on section 28, and Daniel A. Veasey was probably the first teacher. However, the scarcity of school-houses and school funds did not long continue in Clay township; and to-day its citizens can say without hesitation, and without any fear of contradiction, that they have better school-houses than any township in the county, and indeed as good as any in the State. In the



township there are six excellent school buildings, all brick, with stone foundations. They are conveniently located throughout the entire township, and are known by number and by name. In them are furnished to the children nine months of school annually. Although a great part of the farming land of the township is rather poor, yet this one distinctive characteristic of it will suffice to place Clay township among the foremost ones in the county, and the inhabitants may justly attribute this to the unceasing labors of their last two school trustees, namely, Thomas Eaton, who held that office for a number of years, and George Stover, the present incumbent.

But here, in the progress of this subject, let the reader stop and reflect. Were he unacquainted with the educational interests of the township, he would doubtless think that what had already been said concerning them, was in part flattery, but not so. What would be his surprise upon learning that not one tithe has yet been mentioned; for here in the southwestern part of this township are located two mighty literary institutions, St. Mary's and Notre Dame, two powerful dispensaries of charity and intelligence, whose names are household words throughout all the neighboring States.

But here we forbear from making further mention and giving a more elaborate history of those institutions, as it is given complete in the State and county history of this volume. And then, including these institutions under the head of schools, we can now safely say that the educational interests of Clay township are second to none in the State of Indiana.

#### BIOGRAPHIES.

We find personal sketches of those who have made the history of the town and township, and are to-day thus engaged, to be quite interesting, and fully as good history as we can give. We will therefore speak briefly of some of the old settlers and prominent persons of the township:

*Thomas B. Chalfant*, a prominent farmer on sec. 31; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Evan and Anna (Bulla) Chalfant, and was born in Wayne county, Ind., Feb. 18, 1820, and is of English-Irish-Welsh Dutch descent. He came to this county with his parents Nov. 1, 1832, and settled on the farm on which he still resides; here his father and mother both died, the former, who was a native of Pennsylvania, in 1870, the latter, a native of North Carolina, in 1849. In 1848 Mr. C. was united in marriage to Jane Melling, a native of Ohio, born in 1825 and died in 1861; she was the mother of 4 children, of whom 2 are now living: Nancy J. and Evan P. Mr. C. was married the second time in 1864, to Eleanor C. Alford, a native of Indiana, who was born in 1841; from this union they have been blessed with 2 children: Anna L. and Mary L. Mr. C. has held the office of Tp. Trustee; he is a member of the Grange, of which organization he is Treasurer. Politically, he is a Republican. His wife is a member of the Presbyterian Church.



His education was limited, but he reads a great deal now, and takes nine or ten papers. He owns 236 acres of land, 175 of which are under cultivation; he values it at \$75 per acre. Mr. C. is a successful farmer, and an industrious man.

*J. H. Chirhart*, a farmer on sec. 30; P. O., Notre Dame; son of Apollinaris and Mary (Meyer) Chirhart, was born in Ohio in 1836, and is of German descent. He came to this county in 1845, with his mother, and first located in Harris tp., where they lived till 1865. During that year he was married to Mary M. Palley, a native of Connecticut, who was born in 1834; they have the 6 following named children: Mary M., Alfred M., Edward S., Cecelia J., Anna C. and Joseph. Mr. C. and wife are members of the Catholic Church. Politically, he is a Democrat. He owns 276 acres of land, worth about \$80 per acre.

*Peter Cripe*, the subject of this sketch, is a very old settler and farmer in sec. 26; P. O., South Bend. He is the son of John and Eva (Roof) Cripe, both of whom are now deceased, and were natives of Pennsylvania; and was born in Ohio in 1824, of German descent. He was brought by his parents to this county in the fall of 1830, and they first located in German tp., where they died and are buried. Peter, the subject of this sketch, came to this tp. in 1852, and was married in 1855 to Philistia A. Skiles, a native of Indiana, who was born in 1836; she is now the mother of 9 children, all of whom are living: Jane, the wife of Aaron Ulery, a farmer of Clay tp.; Fannie, the wife of John Wrightsman, a minister and teacher of the same tp.; John, Edward, David, Jacob, Eveline, Elsie and Mary. Politically, Mr. C. is a Republican. He and his wife are members of the German Baptist Church. Mr. C.'s education, in early life, was limited to subscription schools, in log houses. He owns 137 acres of land on sec. 26, which he values at about \$80 per acre. He has been a hard-working, industrious man all his life, and is a highly respected citizen of his community.

*Jacob Eaton*, a farmer on sec. 13; P. O., South Bend; is a son of Isaac and Margaret (Metzger) Eaton, both of whom died in this tp.,—the former Dec. 25, 1869, at the age of 94 years, and the latter, April 23, 1863, at the age of 81 years; his father was a native of Virginia, and his mother of Maryland. Mr. E. was born in Maryland, May 1, 1819. His parents came to this county in September, 1831, and first settled in this tp., afterward entering land on sec. 17, where they resided for a number of years. He was married in 1846 to Elizabeth Barnes, a native of Maryland, born Oct. 27, 1820; she is the mother of 7 children, of whom 6 are now living: Emma F., Clarissa M., the wife of Charles Jennings, a farmer of this tp.; Edwin D., Joanna W., Norman E. and Mark B. Mr. E. is a Democrat; he held the office of Tp. Trustee for 17 years. His education, when young, was limited, attending subscription schools, in log houses. He owns 225 acres of land, worth \$50 per acre, all of which he has earned by hard work and judicious management. He is the oldest permanent living settler in the tp. at present; he fished and swam in the lakes of this tp. with ex-Judge

Stanfield, and helped to clear the ground on which St. Mary's Academy now stands.

*Theobald Guli*, son of Theobold and Barbara Guli, was born in France in 1821 and came to this country about 1831. He was married in 1847 to Mary Chokar, a native of Germany, who died in 1853, leaving 4 children. He was married the second time in 1855 to Terrace (Theresa) Emily, a native of Germany, who is now the mother of 4 children, all of whom are living: Edmond, Michael, Lora and William. Mr. G. and wife are members of the Catholic Church. He owns on sec. 20, 250 acres of land, worth about \$70 per acre, and 100 acres of land in Penn tp. He is an industrious man and respectable citizen.

*Samuel Jennings*, a farmer on sec. 30; P. O., South Bend; is a son of Samnel and Matilda (Bargdoll) Jennings, and was born in this tp. in 1845; he is of English-German descent. His father, who died in 1874, was a native of New York; his mother, a native of Virginia, died in 1864. Mr. J. was married in 1870 to Mary Milton, a native of Missouri, born in 1856; she is the mother of 3 children: Lillian M., Harry S. and Asher M. He owns on sec. 30, 80 acres of land, worth about \$60 per acre. His wife is a member of the Catholic Church. Politically, he is a Democrat. His educational advantages were good, attended college at Notre Dame for several years. Mr. J. is now Assessor of the tp. In 1863 he enlisted in the army at South Bend, as a private, under the command of Capt. W. W. Andrews, in the 21st Indiana Battery; he was in the service until the close of the war, when he was discharged, June 27, 1865.

*John G. Kotz*, a farmer on sec. 29; P. O., South Bend; Mr. K. is a son of Jacob and Anna (App) Kotz, both now deceased, and was born in Germany in 1822. He came to this country Aug. 11, 1840, and first settled in Ohio, where he lived about five years, and in the spring of 1846 came to this county; he became a resident of Clay tp. in 1847. In 1844 he was married to Christina Blind, a native of Germany, who was born in 1823; from this marriage they have 10 children, all of whom are living. Jacob, a wagon-maker in South Bend; George, a blacksmith in the same place; William, a farmer in this tp.; Daniel, an artist in Chicago; the following are still at home: John, Charles, David, Mary, Elizabeth and Matilda. Mr. K. and his wife are devoted members of the Evangelical Church. Politically, he is a Republican. His educational advantages in Germany were good; he now reads fluently both the English and the German languages. He owns 160 acres of land, on sec. 29, worth about \$75 per acre. Mr. K. is an enterprising, successful farmer. He built a large, two-story frame house in 1879, at a cost of \$1,500.

*Wm. McCombs*, son of Lambert and Hannah (Hague) McCombs, was born in Wayne county, O., in 1818 and is of Irish-English descent. His father died in 1849, and his mother is now living in California, 92 years of age; they were natives of Pennsylvania and came to this county July 5, 1829. They first settled in German tp.,

where they lived for a short time and then came to this tp. In 1839 Mr. McCombs was married to Eva Cripe, a native of Ohio, born Nov. 2, 1816; she is the mother of 9 children, of whom all are living: Betsy, John, Lambert, Maria, Samuel, Ellen, Hannah, Amanda and William. His wife is a member of the Dunkard Church. Politically he is a Democrat. He owns 247 acres of land, which he values at \$60 per acre. Mr. McCombs was a very early settler of this tp., and is an honest, industrious man.

*Thomas J. Sossomen*, son of David and Elizabeth (Savidge) Sossomen, was born in this county in 1846, and is of Dutch descent. His parents, now living in Mishawaka, are natives of Pennsylvania, and came to this county about 1840. In 1874 Mr. S. was married to Salinda Shearer, a native of Indiana, and is now the mother of 2 children, Harvey and Harlow. He and his wife are members of the Dunkard Church. Politically, he is a Republican.

*George H. Stover*, School Trustee and farmer on sec. 28; P. O., South Bend; was born in Virginia in 1839, and is of German descent. His father, Jacob, a native of Virginia, was born in 1807, and is now living with him; his mother, also a native of Virginia, whose maiden name was Sarah Nofsinger, died in 1871. Mr. S. came with his parents to this county in 1850 and settled in this tp., where he has lived ever since, and where his mother died. He was united in marriage in 1862 to Sophia Meyers, a native of Indiana, who was born in 1837, and they have 2 children, both living, William C. and Ella V. Mr. S. is a member of the Masonic lodge at South Bend, No. 45. Politically, he is a Democrat. His educational advantages were fair; he taught several terms of school and attended college at Franklin, Ind. He owns 40 acres of land, which he considers worth about \$75 per acre. Mr. S. is now School Trustee, and the high esteem in which he is held as a citizen of the tp. is manifested by the fact that he has held every other office in the tp. He is an industrious, enterprising man.

*John B. Wrightsman*, a minister and teacher, located on sec. 26; P. O., South Bend; he is a son of Samuel and Mary (Redpath) Wrightsman, natives of Virginia, and was born in Pulaski county, Virginia, in 1853; he is of German descent. His father is living in Botetourt county, Virginia, and his mother died when he was only an infant. He came to this county in 1875, and first stopped in South Bend, where he remained about two years, in the mean time, attending high school at that place; he also attended college at Huntingdon, Penn. He afterward moved into Clay tp., where he was united in marriage in 1879 to Miss Fannie Cripe, a native of this tp., born in 1850; she is the mother of one child, John Earl Cripe. Politically, Mr. W. is a Republican; his educational advantages were poor, being compelled to depend upon his own resources for his education. He has been a minister of the gospel ever since he was 15 years old, having united with the Church at the age of 14. He is now pastor of the German Baptist Church in Clay tp., and is a zealous Christian and an upright man.

## GERMAN TOWNSHIP.

There is a peculiar, instinctive characteristic of man which seems to lead him, as it were unconsciously and imperceptibly, in the footsteps of progress and direct him to locate in that part of an unsettled country which is destined to become in the near future a country the most highly civilized, the most beautiful and fertile. It is probably to be attributed to this innate feature of finite man that German was among the earliest settled townships in St. Joseph county. Taken as a whole, there can surely be no more desirable locality in the county in which to live than German township. Here everything exists in abundance, and the country is richly embellished with all the beauties of nature; and, all in all, it seems to be one grand and lovely combination of nature and art in which the former largely predominates; for, civilize the country all you may, improve it all you can, and then bring to bear upon it the inventions wrought out by all the skill and ingenuity of man; then compare its condition with what it was in its early, pristine state, when the timbered land was inhabited by the red man, and the prairies were covered with tall and waving grass, interspersed here and there with wild flowers which sent forth their sweet perfume as a presentiment of the coming future,—yes, do all this, strain your imagination to conceive and comprehend all these, and you will find the two conditions almost incomparable, with the present one gradually fading away like the rays of the setting sun. But no commendatory prelude can do justice to the history of German township; plain facts must be presented.

Nov. 25, 1830, at a special session of the Board of Justices, the following order was passed: "Ordered by the Board aforesaid that from the second principal meridian of the State until the center of range 2 east, shall form and constitute a township in said county, to be known by the name of German township; and that the sheriff is hereby ordered to give public notice to the citizens of said township, according to law, for the qualified voters to meet at the house of David Miller in said township, to elect one Justice of the Peace in and for said township, on the 18th day of December next."

On the appointed day the citizens of said township met at the house of David Miller, and at that meeting elected Lambert McCombs the first Justice of the Peace of German township.

We have been unable to ascertain definitely why the name "German" was proposed for this township; but all supposition in regard to the subject is based upon the fact that at the time of the

organization of the township nearly all the inhabitants of it were Germans or of German descent.

From the order passed by the Board of Justices it would be difficult for one to imagine the size of the township. Suffice it to say that it is quite small, being little more than half of a full township. It is township 33 north, range 2 east; is bounded on the north by the State of Michigan, on the east by the St. Joseph river (and beyond it lies Clay township), on the south by Portage, and on the west by Warren township. About one-third of the northern tier of sections of this township lies in Michigan, and on the east the line is quite irregular, owing to the indentations made by the St. Joseph river which marks the eastern boundary.

In noticing early settlements the greatest care must necessarily be exercised, for it is of the greatest difficulty to avoid all mistakes. Upon a few of the pioneer settlers of this township, who have long survived their contemporaries, we are dependent for the authenticity of this part of the history. Their statements differ; hence we kindly ask all those interested to overlook all unavoidable errors. Judging from the best authorities, Lambert McCombs, John Hague and William Brookfield were the earliest permanent settlers of the township; the former two came from Wayne county, Ohio, and settled in this township as early as 1829 or '30; the latter, who was at that time the surveyor of all the Government land throughout this community, chose a situation in the township about 1829, bought land on sections 34 and 35, and laid out a town, mention of which will be made hereafter.

About 1831 Brookfield's family went down the Kankakee river in a boat, and probably went to Texas. John Hague and wife died in Warren township, this county, and are probably buried in German township. Lambert McCombs went to Oregon and died there. Such has been the fate of the three pioneer settlers of German township.

In 1830 a great many made German township their home, of whom the following are a few: John Smith, who settled on section 32; David Miller, also on section 32; Christian Holler, on section 7; Joshua and Benjamin Hardinan, who came either in 1830 or in 1831. However, as much as two decades prior to the earliest settlement of the township, in the year 1810, a man passed through the territory, not then known as German township, coming from Detroit, Mich., who declared at that time that if ever this country was settled by white men he would be one of them; sure enough, in comparatively a short time the country, once wild and uncultivated, *was* settled by white men, and the Indians were thereafter soon removed; and true to his firm resolve, that man *did* come in 1831, and settle on section 27, where he remained two years and then went to La Porte county, and finally died in Wills township; that man was John Cissne, father of Robert G. Cissne, now a very old settler of the township, and to whom we are indebted for a great deal of its early history.

During the same year came Aaron Miller, brother of David, before mentioned, and settled on section 23; in the same year came also J. D. Miller, son of Aaron Miller; Samuel Witter, who settled on section 16, and Samuel Good, on section 28; in the year 1832 came Jesse K. Platts, who settled on section 21, John Witter on section 20, Daniel Wagner on section 16, Jacob and Samuel Ritter. In 1833 came Jacob Miller, a nephew of Aaron Miller, who settled on section 18. Simultaneous with him, and even before, came numbers of others whose names it is not easy to obtain; suffice it to say, that from this date onward the township settled very rapidly, and a country soon began to don the robes of improvement, civilization and progress. Of the old settlers not yet mentioned, the following may be named as having come prior to the year 1836: Jesse Frame, Prosper Nichols, James Nixon, Jacob Ritter, John and James Huston, Henry Denslow, James Good, David Hoover, Michael Smith, William Roe, Charles Roe, John Martindale, Eli Roe, Henry Brown, James R. McGee, Christian Smith, Mr. Overacker, Scott West and John Cripe. Henceforward the township became rapidly settled by an honest, intelligent, industrious class of people who loved the "sons of toil," and who, like them, earned their daily pittance by the "sweat of their face," and many of whose posterity still survive, well-situated citizens, reaping the reward of their ancestors.

It is altogether probable that Henry Smith, son of John and Nancy (Miller) Smith, was the first white child born in the township and, indeed, even in the county; he was born Sept. 15, 1829, and is now a farmer in the township on sec. 16; P. O., South Bend. The first marriage in the township was probably that of John Harris and Lavina Eiler; they were married, however, in Michigan, but were residents of this township. The first frame house in the township was built by Christian Holler, and is now standing on section 7, on the farm now owned by Jacob M. Whitmer. John Hague is said to have plowed the first furrow in the township.

In the winter of 1832, quite a remarkable little episode occurred, which for a time greatly frightened the few scattering inhabitants of German township: Jacob M. Whitmer, now a resident on section 7, then only a little child three and one half years old, went out one morning in pursuit of his father and accidentally became lost. Search for him was immediately instituted by his parents and the neighbors; but all seemed in vain, and for three long days and two nights the lost child still wandered, enduring the bleak winds of winter. His sorrowful parents and 200 anxious friends who were in search of him, had given him up as lost forever and supposed him to have been captured by the Indians. But about this time, when despondency and gloom had settled upon many anxious hearts of that community, Judge McCartney, now deceased, continued the search on horseback, when lo! by him the child was found and returned to its anxious, awaiting parents; and where before had been the shadow of gloom and sorrow, was now the sunshine of gladness.

Some time prior to 1836 a grist-mill was built on the St. Joseph river, on section 27, by Shank & Downs, two millwrights; the mill was owned and controlled by William McCartney, who ran it for a while, doing a good business; but the mill did not long stand, on account of difficulty in securing water-power.

A very sad accident happened a short time prior to 1844. Jesse K. Platts, who has been already mentioned as a very early settler of the township, was killed by runaway horses. Upon a certain appointed day all his children were coming home to have a re-union; the day previous Mr. Platts went out into the timber to get some wood; his horses becoming frightened ran away. His cries of anguish were heard by Mr. Good's family, residing near by, who started immediately for his rescue, but only to find the man dead. No one was able to ascertain definitely how he met his sad fate, but they supposed him to have been killed by being crushed between the sled and a log. The following day all his children *did* come, but oh, what a spectacle met their view! oh, what a change! for in lieu of a happy re-union of parents and children there was a sad and sorrowful funeral of a man bemoaned by weeping children and hosts of sympathizing friends.

#### VILLAGES AND BUSINESS INTERESTS.

There is very little within the limits of German township which adds in any way to its business interests. By a careful examination of statistical records and the removal of the dust from the pages of history of the days of by-gone years, it is found that there were at one time in German township three places which deserved the name of a town. An elaborate history of these towns it is impossible to give, as nothing can be obtained from the records, and very little from the old settlers now living.

Aug. 19, 1836, the town of Mount Pleasant was laid out, on what is called the Michigan road, on sections 31 and 32. At this place, during the same year, the first and only postoffice that ever existed in the township was established, with Levi Wills as postmaster. There was once a dry-goods and grocery store kept by a man named Mar; there was also in the place at one time another small store; also two blacksmith shops, the first one of which was run by Joseph Barker. At one time in the history of the town John Tipton opened a boot and shoe store; and two hotels, the proprietors of which were Christopher Lentz and James R. McGee, once graced the little country village. But all these were of short duration, for the town was soon after vacated, and to-day not even a trace of its ruins remain to mark its former existence.

July 12, 1834, the town of Portage was laid out along the St. Joseph river on section 26. This place never became noted as a town. At one time in its history there were two stores in the place, one of which was run by Elisha Egbert; and there was also once a tavern in the place,—an institution very common in those days.



And still another place is yet to be mentioned; though last and least in size, it is by no means least in reputation; this place was St. Joseph, at one time the county-seat. In May, 1830, the Board of Justices located the county-seat of St. Joseph county at this place. Sept. 14, 1830, the town was laid out on the St. Joseph river, about two and a half or three miles northwest of South Bend, either on section 27, or on sections 34 and 35. The land on which the town was located was then owned by William Brookfield, the Government surveyor. Nov. 25, 1830, an order was passed by the Board aforesaid for William Brookfield to sell lots in the town of St. Joseph; and one would naturally suppose, upon reading that order, that sales of real estate would be rife for a season; but how different must have been their expectations when not a single house was ever erected in the place. And at the meeting of the Board of County Commissioners, on the second Monday of May, 1831, an order was passed to have the county-seat re-located, the County Commissioners testifying that they were "of the opinion that public interest requires a removal of said seat of justice;" and after careful examination and due deliberation, the place selected was South Bend, then a mere village, now a prosperous city.

"A petition had been circulated among the settlers, and over 125 names were secured in favor of South Bend. The friends were very active and finally triumphed. Bonds were given by L. M. Taylor, Alexis Coquillard, Joseph Rohrer, Samuel Studebaker, Samuel Hanna and David H. Coldrick, in which they obligated themselves to pay the sum of \$3,000, if the county-seat be permanently located at South Bend. Fifteen lots were donated by Taylor and Coquillard for the use of the county, and lots No. 341, on said town plat, for the use of the United Brethren to build a church thereon, and lot No. 403 to the German Baptist denomination, and lot No. 234 for the Presbyterians, and four acres of land for a public graveyard."

These liberal offers carried the day, and South Bend became the capital of St. Joseph county permanently, and the town of St. Joseph was vacated, to be remembered only as a thing of the past, bearing the lamentable motto, "It might have been." To-day nothing remains to mark the former existence of any of these towns.

There is a steam saw-mill in the northwestern part of this township, on section 18. There are two dairies in the township: one on section 34, run by John Beyrer, established in 1879. Mr. B. keeps 18 cows, runs one wagon, and sells milk at South Bend; this is known as the "Portage" dairy. The other one is on section 26, on the St. Joseph river, and is conducted by Francis Johnson. He keeps 75 cows, sells milk at South Bend, and runs two wagons, making two trips daily each way; this is known as the "Riverside" dairy. Both are doing a good business.

No railroads cross the township; no lakes of sparkling water dot the prairies; no creeks water the low and timbered land save



one; this is a small branch of the river which cuts off a very small portion of the southeastern part of the township. But the surface throughout is beautifully diversified, and the tilled land responds richly and bountifully to the labor of the industrious husbandman. There is just timber enough in the township adequately to supply the wants of the inhabitants and make it one of the best townships in the county. Along its eastern line flows gently and ever onward the beautiful little St. Joseph river, which drains the St. Joseph valley and washes the shore on the eastern boundary of German township.

#### SCHOOLS AND CHURCHES.

As regards the first school taught in the township, there are some conflicting statements. Some say it was held in an old log house on section 27, and was taught by Dwight Dennings; others say it was on section 21, in the house of John Martindale, who was the teacher in the winter of 1831. The first school-house in the township was a log structure, erected on section 19 by the people of the immediate neighborhood; this was about 1832, and Judge Farren was probably the first teacher in this house. But the "days of small things" in the direction of log houses in German township have long since passed away, and to-day they have five good, substantial buildings, conveniently located throughout the township, where the children of the citizens are afforded eight months' school annually. The present school trustee is W. H. H. Ritter, also a farmer on section 29.

The first minsters of the township were Aaron and David Miller, who settled here very early and were members of the German Baptist Church. John Martindale, a Christian minister, and Robert Martindale, his brother, a Baptist minister, were early settlers and preachers of the gospel. Here in this small township, in its early history, these four good men preached the gospel in school-houses and in private houses where their hearers were wont to go and worship God "according to the dictates of their own conscience."

The first church built in the township was the German Baptist, which is a brick building, situated on section 18, and was built in 1851. The first pastor was Elder David Miller, who had organized the congregation about the year 1831. The following are a few of the charter members: David Miller and wife, Benjamin Hardman and wife, Christian Holler and wife, John Ritter and wife, Samuel Jones and wife, Joshua Hardman and wife and Samuel McMullen and wife. The present pastor is James H. Miller, who holds regular services in the church every two weeks. At present the congregation numbers about 100.

*Baptist Church.*—There was a man by the name of Zigler, a Methodist, who built the church about 1854. The building was put up by the Methodists, but there being some incumbrance upon it the Baptists took it off their hands and now control it. The

Baptist congregation in this township is quite small, and is only a part of the general congregation at South Bend. J. G. Keltner is now trustee of the Church. There is a Sunday-school in the church, of which Mrs. Caldwell and Mr. Sweet are Superintendents. Rev. Mr. Egbert, of South Bend, is the regular pastor and holds services there every two weeks. Elder Campbell was probably the first Baptist minister who ever held regular meetings in the church.

*Universalist Church.*—An elaborate and complete history of the Universalist Church it is impossible to give, on account of the want of records; suffice it to say that it is located on section 32. The first pastor of the Church was Rev. Jacob Maryfield, from Mishawaka. The Church proper was organized about 1858. At present they have no regular pastor and no regular services.

#### TOWNSHIP OFFICERS.

Politically, German township is Republican. J. G. Keltner was appointed census enumerator for the year 1880, and the population of the township was 579. The present justice of the peace is Mr. Wallace, but he has never qualified, as the business to be transacted does not justify it. The present assessor of the township is William Dietrich, and the office of school trustee, the highest in the township, is held by W. H. H. Ritter.

#### CEMETERIES.

Although the farming land of German township, most of which is included under the name of Portage Prairie, in the shape of a horse shoe, is most salubrious, yet the cold and icy hand of death, the common leveler of time, the reprover of all humanity, has left its trace, and three graveyards, with tombstones and slabs of marble pointing upward to heaven, which mark the final resting place of many of the pioneer settlers, are found in the township. One, known as Portage Cemetery, is on section 18; in it lie buried the following of the early settlers of the township: Jacob Miller and J. D. Miller and wife. The Witter Cemetery, on section 22, was named after W. Witter, already mentioned as an old settler, who donated the ground. The last remains of four old settlers, Samuel Witter and Aaron Miller, Daniel Wagner and wife, lie buried in it. Mount Pleasant Cemetery is located on section 32, near the Universalist church and near where the town bearing the same name was once laid out. Within its limits lie the last remains of the following pioneers of German township: David Miller and wife, John Smith and wife, John Witter and wife. The above named are only a few, many more sleep here too, but the final resting place of many is unmarked by man; yet somewhere they sleep, and let them sleep on; for disturb them, we cannot; but cherish their memory forever we will.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

As a very important portion of the history of the township we give personal sketches of the following representative citizens:

*Godfrey Bestle*, a farmer on sec. 16; P. O., South Bend; is the son of David and Elizabeth (Slagel) Bestle, and was born in Germany in 1826; coming to this country in 1852, he first settled in Michigan, near the Indiana State line, where he lived until 1864, when he came to this tp. He was married in 1855 to Dora Beyrer, a native of Germany, born in 1835; they have 9 children, all living: Mary, John, William, David, Henry, Charles, Emma, Adolphus and Frederick. Mr. B. and wife are members of the German Lutheran Church. His school advantages in Germany where he received his education, were good; he now reads both German and English. He owns in this tp. 140 acres of land and 115 acres in Michigan. Mr. B. has been a hard-working, industrious man all his life.

*Thomas Calvert*, farmer, sec. 27; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Isaac and Isabella (Bird) Calvert, and was born in England in 1815; was brought by his parents to America when only four years old; his father first settled in Pennsylvania, where they remained till 1834, when they came to this county. He was married in this county to Sarah Curry, a native of Ohio. They have 4 children living: Isaac, Daniel, Mary J. and Sarah E. Mr. C.'s educational advantages were limited. Politically, he is a Democrat. He owns here 183 acres of good land worth about \$100 per acre. He had no start in life, and has succeeded remarkably well.

*Eli Chamberlain*, a farmer on sec. 19, was born in Ohio in 1832; his parents were William and Julia A. (Rush) Chamberlain; came to this county Aug. 6, 1848. His educational advantages in youth were quite limited. He is a Democrat, owns 183 acres of land on sec. 19, which he values at \$85 per acre, and is a man who is faithful to the demands of industry and frugality.

*Robert G. Cissne*, a very old settler and prominent man, is a farmer on sec. 32; P. O., South Bend; is the son of John and Jane (Glass) Cissne, both of whom died in La Porte county; the former was a native of Pennsylvania, and the latter of New Jersey; he was born Oct. 23, 1811, and is of French descent on his father's side and Welsh-Irish on his mother's side. He came to this county with his parents in 1831, and located in this tp. Here they stopped two years and then moved to La Porte county, where they remained until 1839, when they returned to this tp. In 1836 Mr. C. was married to Anna Miller, a native of Ohio, born in 1817; they have had 11 children, of whom 8 are now living: Sarah J., Mary, Adelia, John, Joseph, Oliver, Orrilla and George. Mr. C. has held the office of Justice of the Peace and Constable in this tp.; he is a Republican. He and his estimable wife are devoted members of the German Baptist Church. His educational advantages were somewhat inferior to those of to-day, being compelled to attend

subscription schools in log houses with paper for windows. He owns 160 acres of land, which he values at \$85 per acre. He is an industrious man, trying now to take life easy; and the greatest of all, he has enjoyed Nature's best blessing, good health, not having been sick over half a day at a time since he was 16 years old.

*Wm. B. Dietrich*, a farmer, on sec. 28; P. O., South Bend; was born in Pennsylvania in 1838, and is of Dutch descent. His parents, Gideon and Bontch (Royel) Dietrich, were natives of Pennsylvania. He came to this State in 1867 and settled in this county. He was married in 1859 to Amelia Meyers, a native of Pennsylvania, born in 1837, and is now the mother of 6 children, 3 of whom are living: Edward C., Katie and Charles W. He owns 170 acres of well-improved land, worth \$80 per acre. He has held the office of Assessor in this tp. He and his wife are members of the Evangelical Church. Politically, he is a Republican. Mr. D. has been a laboring, industrious man all his life.

*Chas. B. Farnam* is a successful farmer on sec. 31; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Lyman and Ruth (Dean) Farnam, and was born in New York in 1836, of Welsh descent. His father died in 1840, and his mother is living with her son, the subject of this sketch. Mr. F. came to this county in 1854, with an older brother. In 1865 he was married to Miss Sarah Cissne, who is now 42 years old, a native of this tp. and the mother of 6 children; of these 4 are living: Anna, Mary, Fred and Lyman. Mr. B. has been a resident of this township about 10 years, and has held the office of Assessor. Politically, he is a Republican. Having been left upon his own resources at an early age, his education was necessarily somewhat neglected. He owns, on sec. 31, 74 acres of land, worth about \$100 per acre. He has worked hard all his life and has been a careful manager, a liberal and successful farmer.

*John Gillis*, a farmer on sec. 22, was born in Ohio in 1822, and is of Dutch-Irish descent; his parents were Arthur and Elizabeth Gillis, now both deceased, who were natives of Virginia. Coming to this county in 1865, he settled in this tp. He was married in 1843 to Margaret Pool, a native of O., who was born in 1820, and is the mother of 8 children; 7 of these are living: George A., Martha, Robert, Lewis, John, Manda and Ella. Mr. G. and wife are members of the Baptist Church. Politically, he is a Democrat. He owns 150 acres of land in this tp., worth about \$60 per acre. He had no start in life, and has earned all he has by honest diligence.

*John Huston*, a farmer on sec. 15; P. O., South Bend. Mr. H. is the son of Jacob and Catharine (Kinery) Huston, and was born in Indiana, Feb. 7, 1814, of Dutch-English descent; came to this county with his parents in 1833; was married in 1835 to Rhoda Johnson, a native of Ohio, who died at the age of 27 years; she was the mother of 10 children, of whom 6 are now living: Harriet, Harrison, Susanna, Caroline, Sarah and Abram. He was married the second time in 1863, to Harriet Johnson, a sister to his former

wife; she is the mother of 7 children, of whom only one is now living, Luke. Mr. H. is a member of the Dunkard Church, and his wife is a Methodist. He is a Republican. His education at an early age was neglected. He owns 88 acres of land, all of which is under cultivation, except 18 acres of timber. The only start in life which Mr. H. had when he began for himself was \$50 in money and a yoke of cattle which his father gave him.

*Amos N. Irvin*, a farmer on sec. 16; P. O., South Bend; was born in Ohio in 1831, the son of Amos and Minerva (Munger) Irvin, both of whom are now deceased. Mr. I. came to this county in 1855. In 1858 he was united in marriage to Nancy Whitsle, a native of Indiana, born in 1841. Politically, Mr. I. is a Republican. His educational advantages were ordinary; reads a good deal now. He owns 84½ acres of land, on sec. 15, nearly all of which is under cultivation, worth about \$80 per acre.

*George Keller*, farmer, sec. 20; P. O., South Bend; was born in Ohio, in 1841; is the son of Jacob and Rosina (Beyrer) Keller. He came to this county about 22 years ago; he was married in 1868 to Rica E. Currly, who is the mother of 4 children: Clara, Fred, Hettie and Dora. He owns here 330 acres of good land, worth about \$75 per acre. Politically, he is a Democrat; wife is a member of the Methodist Church.

*Jacob Keller*, brother of the preceding, is a farmer on sec. 20; was born in Ohio in 1835, and came to this county in 1856. He was married in 1872 to Mary Snyder, a native of Pennsylvania, who is now the mother of 3 children: Daniel, Frank and Fiola. His wife is a member of the Methodist Church. Mr. K. is a Democrat. He owns 180 acres of land, which he values at \$75 per acre, and all of which is under cultivation except 20 acres of timber.

*J. G. Kollar*, a farmer; P. O., South Bend; was born in Ohio in 1824; is the son of Adam and Hester (Snihart) Kollar, both now deceased. He came to this county in 1852. In 1851 he was married to Elizabeth R. Leach, who is now the mother of 7 children, all living: Melissa, Adam, Charles, William, Harvey, Clara and Laura. Mr. K. and wife are members of the Dunkard Church. He owns 220 acres of land, which he values at \$100 per acre, all of which is under cultivation except 10 acres of timber.

*James R. Miller*, a farmer on sec. 27; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Jacob and Sarah (Backus) Miller, and was born in this tp. in 1834, of German descent. His father, a native of Ohio, died in 1871; his mother, who is a native of Massachusetts, is now living in this tp. They came to this tp. in May, 1833. In 1854 James, the subject of this sketch, was married to Amanda E. Ritter, also a native of this tp., who was born in 1837. She is the daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth (Miller) Ritter, and is the mother of 5 children, of whom 4 are living: Flora E., the wife of Jno. Beyrer, a resident of this tp.; Dora B., Homer J. and Byron B. Mr. Miller and wife are members of the Universalist Church. Politically, he is a Republican. His educational advantages were somewhat inferior

to those of modern times, being limited to a few months during the winter. He owns here 157 acres of excellent farming land, as good a farm as there is in the county, which he values at \$125 per acre. His land is well improved, having a beautiful residence which he built in 1870 at a cost of \$4,000, situated but a short distance from St. Joseph river. The latter is a most beautiful little stream, carrying onward its bright, pure, sparkling water.

*Madison Miller* is the son of James H. and Mary (Huston) Miller, both of whom are now living in this tp., and was born in this tp. in 1847; he has been a resident here all his life. In 1868 he was married to Miss Addie Broadhurst, a native of Michigan, who is now 29 years old and the mother of one child, Edith. Mr. M. owns on sec. 18, 100 acres of land, all under an excellent state of cultivation, worth about \$100 per acre. He and wife are members of the Christian Church. Politically, he is a Republican. His educational advantages were fair; he has been a hard-working, successful farmer all his life.

*Elwood Peak*, a gardener on sec. 34; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Samuel and Margaret (Cox) Peak, both of whom are now living in New Jersey, and was born in New York in 1820; he is of Scotch-English descent. He came to this county in 1852. Married the first time Adaline King, a native of New Jersey, who died in 1865; during the same year he was married the second time to Sarah J. Crane, a native of Ohio, who is now 44 years old. Politically, Mr. P. is a Republican. He owns, on sec. 34, 20 acres of land, worth about \$100 per acre. He has been industrious all his life; was formerly a carpenter. He is now a gardener, raising all kinds of fruit and vegetables.

*George Rinehart*, a farmer on sec. 10; P. O., South Bend; is the son of George and Julia A. Rinehart, and was born in Ohio in 1818. He came to this county about 21 years ago. He was married to Sarah A. Ruth, who died in 1877. He owns 135 acres of good land, some being timber, which is worth about \$60 per acre. Mr. R. is a member of the Baptist Church; his wife was also a member of the same. Politically, he is a Democrat. His early education was limited, but he reads considerable now.

*John P. Ritter*, farmer, sec. 31; P. O., South Bend; was born in this tp. in 1833, and is of German descent. He is the son of Michael and Rachel (Parsons) Ritter, both of whom are now living in Greene county, Mo.; his father is a native of Ohio, and mother of New Jersey. They came to this tp. in 1831. In 1861 Mr. R. was married to Roxana (Depew) Sweet, a native of New York, born in 1834 and died April 3, 1875; she was the mother of one child, Clara J. Sweet. He was married the second time in 1877, to Mabel Brown, a native of Ohio, born in 1855; she is a Methodist. Politically, Mr. R. is a Republican. His education was limited to about three months' winter school annually. He owns 59½ acres of land in this tp., and 70 acres in Portage, worth about \$100 per acre.

*W. H. H. Ritter*, School Trustee, and farmer on sec. 29; P. O., South Bend. Mr. Ritter was born in this tp. in 1840, and is of German descent; he is the seventh in a family of 14 children, of whom 10 are now living. Their parents are Jacob and Elizabeth (Miller) Ritter. They came to this tp. at a very early day. Here they made their home until 14 years ago, when they retired from farming and removed to South Bend, where his mother died shortly after their location there. In 1865 Mr. R. was united in marriage to Helen M. Suenplion, a native of Indiana, born in 1844; she is now the mother of 2 children: Gertrude and Bessie. Mr. R. is now living on his father's place, but owns 100 acres in Portage tp., which he values at about \$60 per acre. He is a Republican, a member of the Odd Fellows lodge, and he and wife are members of the Universalist Church. In 1862 he enlisted in the army at South Bend, under the command of W. W. Andrews, of La Porte. He enlisted as a volunteer in the 21st Battery of Indiana, and was in the service until 1865, when he was discharged. He engaged in the battles of Chickamunga, Chattanooga, Nashville and several others.

*W. S. Robertson*, son of James W. and Mary A. Cord, was born in this county in 1850, and is of Scotch descent. His father, who is now living in South Bend, is a native of Ohio; his mother, who died in 1858, was a native of Indiana. In 1876 Mr. R. was united in marriage to Josephine Sweet, a native of New York, and is now 25 years old. He owns 100 acres of good land, worth about \$100 per acre.

*Henry Smith*, a farmer on sec. 16; P. O., South Bend; was born in this tp. Sept. 15, 1829, and is said to be the first white child born in the county. He is a son of John and Nancy (Miller) Smith, both of whom are now deceased; they were natives of Pennsylvania and were of Dutch descent. Mr. S. was married in 1855 to Mary J. Roof, a native of Pennsylvania, who died in 1877 leaving 5 living children to mourn her loss; Alice and Awilda (twins), Clara, James W. and Anna. His wife was a devoted member of the Baptist Church, and all her children are also members of the same. Politically, Mr. S. is a Republican. His early educational advantages were quite limited. He owns 120 acres of good land on sec. 16, which he values at about \$80 per acre. He had no start in life, but has earned all he now possesses by hard work and careful and industrious management. Since he was 20 years of age, he has crossed the Western plains five times.

*Jonathan Smith* was born in Ohio in 1817, and is of Dutch descent; he is the 6th in a family of 14 children, whose parents were John and Nancy (Miller) Smith. Mr. S. came with his father's family to this county in 1833; his father had come the year previous and put in a crop. He was married in 1838 to Susan J. Runion, a native of Virginia, who is now 61 years old and the mother of 9 children; 6 of these are living: David, Mary, Henry, William, Harriet and Jane. He and his wife are members of the Dunkard Church, and Mr. S. is a Democrat. He owns 410 acres



of land, worth about \$90 per acre; he also owns 46 acres in Portage tp., worth about \$100 per acre.

*Oliver H. Smith*, son of Abram and Mary A. (Hoover) Smith, now living in this tp., was born here in 1853, and is of Dutch descent. In 1871 he was married to Mary M. Williams, a native of Michigan, who is now 27 years old and the mother of 2 children: Frank and Bird. Mr. S. is a Republican. His education when young was limited. He is a hard-working, industrious man.

*John F. Ulery*, an old settler, a prominent and successful farmer on sec. 30; P. O., South Bend; was born in Germany in 1820. His parents, Adam and Mary M. (Wittig) Ulery, now both dead, were natives of Prussia. Mr. U. came to this country when quite young; his parents first settled in Pennsylvania, and after a few years moved into Ohio, where they died. He came to this county in 1851, and settled in this tp. In 1840 he was married to Mary D. Stinchcomb, a native of Ohio, who is now 58 years old and the mother of 12 children, and 10 of these are living: John C., George A., David T., William H., Joseph F., Schuyler C., Horace G., Mary, wife of Abram Miller, of Michigan; Martha, wife of J. A. Cissne, a farmer of this tp.; Laura, wife of John Dunn, Superintendent of County Poor Farm. Mr. U. has been Tp. Trustee. He and his wife are members of the Methodist Church. His education when young was limited, but he has acquired a great deal since by reading and general observation. He has been an industrious man all his life, and a careful manager; he now owns 505 acres of excellent land, worth about \$75 per acre. He had no start in life; at the time of his marriage, after paying his expenses he had only \$1.50. Politically, he is a prominent Greenbacker, and was one of the first in the county. He takes an active part in politics and manifests an interest in the Government.

*John Wertz* was born in Ohio in 1831; his parents are George and Catharine (Raff) Wertz. He came to this county in 1853 and settled in Centre tp.; he came to this tp. in 1872. In 1855 he was married to Belinda Kollar, a native of Ohio; she is the mother of 6 children, 5 boys and one girl. Politically, Mr. W. is a Republican; his wife is a member of the Baptist Church. His educational advantages were limited. He owns 80 acres of good land, worth about \$65 per acre. He is an industrious man, upright and honest.

*Jacob M. Whitmer*, a farmer on sec. 1; P. O., South Bend; is the son of Abram and Catharine (Bowman) Whitmer; was born Oct. 20, 1828, and is of German descent. His father, who was a native of Pennsylvania, died in 1873; his mother, who is a native of Ohio, is now living in this county. Mr. W. was brought to this county by his parents when only three years old; they first settled near South Bend, and came to this tp. about 22 years ago. He was married in 1857 to Miss Nancy Miller, a native of Indiana. They have had 4 children, of whom 2 are now living: Elmer J. and Martha E. Mr. W. and wife are earnest members of the German Baptist Church. His early education was somewhat limited, on



account of being compelled to attend subscription schools in log houses. Mr. W. owns 193½ acres of well-improved, excellent farming land, nearly all of which is under cultivation; he values it at \$125 per acre; he has worked hard all his life, having had very little start when he began life for himself. He and his excellent wife are highly respected citizens of their community, who live a life consistent with their Christian profession.



## GREENE TOWNSHIP.

This township consists of various kinds of soil, the marsh, prairie, barrens, and the thick woodland soil. The eastern part is somewhat broken and hilly. The soil here is a sand and clay mixed, and is very productive for any of the cereals. In the southern part the surface is about the same as in the eastern. As the Kankakee river forms the western and northern boundaries of the tp., that part of it for about two miles of the margin is known as marsh land. It consists of a black loam or peat, which has been formed by the decaying of the rich and luxuriant vegetation of the marsh for ages in the past. The land, it is said, is becoming more dry and solid every year, and there is no doubt that in the future this almost worthless tract of land will become one of the richest in the county. At present it is worth nothing, but for the pasture, hay and huckleberries which it produces. South of this and in the central part of the township is Sumption's Prairie. This is a beautiful rolling prairie, several miles in extent, and around it is the land which is known as the barrens. The soil here appears to be a black sand, mixed with gravel. In this part of the township is located some of the best farms in the county, or, we might say without boasting, in the State.

## EARLY SETTLEMENT.

The first settler in this township was George Sumption, after whom the prairie took its name. He lived here for many years. The family have all left now, but some are still living in the county. Mr. Sumption came here in April, 1830, and settled on section 32. The second to come into the township was John Rupel, who came from Pennsylvania to Elkhart county in 1830, and while living there he bought his present farm in sections 30 and 31 of this township, at the land office, then located in Fort Wayne, paying \$1.25 per acre. In March, 1831, Mr. Rupel brought his family and all his property to this point. There was no house on the place, but he soon procured some clapboards and constructed what he called a little shanty. Rude as it may have been, it served as a shelter from the spring storms, and made a home for him and his family. His property consisted of two yoke of oxen, four cows, some young cattle, one horse, a few hogs, a few chickens, two dogs and about \$2 in money. This, together with a large and strong body, plenty of muscle, a firm and resolute will to conquer and put aside all obstacles, which he had acquired in the mountain air of Pennsylvania, was the capital he had. A week or two after he came, it began to snow, and continued for a week. The snow lay a week and was

about sixteen inches deep. The only food he had for his stock at this time was the timber that he cut for them to browse upon. At night the numerous wolves would venture up to the door. His two dogs would chase them off a little way, when they in turn would turn and chase the dogs. Thus many a night would be spent and nothing to be heard but the howlings of the wolves and the barking of the dogs.

The same year that Mr. Rupel came (1831), John Birt settled on section 31, William Antrim on section 14, Abraham Whitmer on section 36, George Holway on section 1, and Stacy Garwood on section 7.

In 1832 came Jacob Rupe, the father of Henry, Samuel, Martin, Daniel and Jacob, and settled on section 7, Jonathan Wharton and Mr. Barton on section 8, and George Baker on section 5. In 1833, Mr. E. Hammond settled on section 6, John McCullough on section 6, George Fender on section 6, Samuel Pearson on section 8, and David Barrett on section 31. From this time on settlers came in fast. The country soon began to change for the better as the farms were improved.

#### CHURCHES.

We often judge of the character of the people of a city or country by its churches, schools and other public institutions. If we are allowed this rule to judge the people of Greene township, we can but speak highly of their moral and social character. In talking with the people we discover in every family an inherent love for their church and schools; and but little wonder when we think that it was almost the first thought that came to the minds of their fathers, when they first began the settlement of the township, after they had erected their log shanty and put a crop into the ground for their future subsistence. The first Church organization was effected in 1832, by the Episcopal Methodists, under the superintendence of Rev. N. B. Griffith, of the Indiana conference. There were 15 members of this first class, of whom Geo. Baker was appointed class-leader; he served until 1838, and from that time to 1879—over 40 years!—John Rudduck served as class-leader. The society held their meetings in a log school-house and in cabins until 1841, when a church building was dedicated by the presiding elder of South Bend district. That building served until 15 years ago, when the present one was erected. Very few are now living who remember the labors of Revs. James Armstrong, R. T. Robinson, G. M. Beswick, Richard Hargrave, Warren Griffith and several others. For the last 30 years the preachers have been: Elias Cook, 1852-'3; Mr. Moore and E. Cook, 1853-'4; J. S. Donelson, 1854-'6; Hiram Ball, 1856-'7; Thomas Hackney, 1857-'8; Albion Fellows, 1858-'9; P. H. Bradley, 1859-'60; John Mahon, 1860-'1; George Gnion, 1861-'2; A. Byers, 1862-'3; A. Hayes, 1863-'4; Jesse Hill 1864-'5; J. H. Clypool, 1865-'7; John E. Newhouse, 1867-'9; E

W. Lowhouse, 1867-'71; J. J. Hines, 1871-'3; J. Robertson and E. Cook, 1873-'4; B. H. Bradberry, 1874-'5; Reuben Saunders, 1875-'8; Francis Cox, 1878-'9; and O. H. Beebe, 1879-'81.

In 1865 the society felt the need of a new church building. By the urgent solicitation of their presiding elder, S. G. Cooper, a subscription was taken up to the amount of \$2,500, and they decided to build a church 36 by 55 feet, with a basement, the upper story for an audience room. The basement is in three departments, one for the Sabbath-school, one for a class room and the third for the minister's study. The church when finished cost about \$4,000. Mr. Holway had the general superintendency of the building, and the paying out of all money. The society at present is in a flourishing condition.

The second religious organization was effected by the Presbyterians in 1836, Rev. Alfred Bryant, of South Bend, being the minister. They had seven members, viz.: John McCullough, his wife and three daughters, Mr. and Mrs. Hammond. They met in an old school-house on the site now occupied by their church, on the farm of Mr. McCullough. Soon after they organized, Nathan Green and Mr. Hammond were made elders. Their church was built in 1838 or '39. Mr. Bryant, the minister, did a great deal of the carpenter work himself. He would walk out from the Bend where he lived, and work on the building for a week at a time. The highest membership the church has ever attained has been about 65. It now has but about 12. Among the ministers who have officiated here were Revs. Tombley and Reeves. Mr. Brown was here when the war broke out, and left for a chaplaincy in the army.

The Baptist Church was first organized on the prairie in a school-house about a mile from where their church now stands, on the 22d day of February, 1846, under Elders Samuel Miller and Peter Hummer, with 10 members. They were Peter and Sarah Hummer, Obadiah and Susan Reeves, William and Sarah White, William and Elizabeth Ogle, Mary Hildreth and Rhoda Crannise. Their elders have been Hummer, McDonald, Hasting, Hitchcock, Miller and Craft. Mr. Vaughn was ordained here in November, 1865. March 4, 1873, H. J. Finch was ordained minister of the Sumption's Prairie Church, J. P. Ash acting as moderator. April 24, 1852, three trustees were appointed to hold a meeting relative to building a church. They were P. Hummer, S. Huggard and C. Curtis. The church was completed in 1855. The society at one time numbered 60 members. It now has about 17.

On section 19, the Dunkards or the German Baptists built a church at an early day, which is generally known as the Oak Grove church. Mr. Whitmer was one of the first ministers.

The next Church organization in the township was the Adventist, under the Rev. James Ferris, about the year 1868. They built their church about the same time. It is a beautiful brick structure,

costing about \$1,800. The society at that time consisted of about 30. It is now in quite a flourishing condition.

The next church built in the township was the Maple Grove Church. The society here was first organized a mile or two north and west of where the church stands at the Hummer school-house. After a course of years it grew small and the society was removed to Olive Branch, in Union township. In the spring of 1878 they built their church. It cost about \$1,200, and for neatness, taste and design is excelled by none. The society is in a flourishing condition, and sustains a splendid Sunday-school. The same minister officiates at this society as at the M. E. Church on Sumption's Prairie.

The Evangelical Church has a society also in the township, making in all seven societies and six church buildings.

These hardy pioneers, although in a new country and compelled to toil from morning till night for a subsistence, never thought of giving up their educational privileges. As early as 1832 or 1833, we find them joining together and erecting a school-house on the prairie, near where the Advent church now stands. These settlers met, bringing with them their axes and other implements needed for such work which they possessed, and with an ardor that meant business went to work building a house for school purposes. We can but look with admiration on the zeal which they displayed in this way when we consider that there was as yet no saw-mills in the country. Mr. Rupel says that those of them that had a spare board took it along. Thus we can easily imagine where the lumber came from to build the first school-house in Greene township. The floor was what is known as a puncheon floor, and the roof was of clapboards. About the time that this structure was done, the grass on the prairie being dry, as it was in the fall of the year, caught fire; as there were many chips and shavings lying around and under the building they also caught, and the new structure was soon in ashes.

But these men had met with too many misfortunes in a new country to be daunted at this. We soon see them erecting another at the crossing of the roads on the site now occupied by the Presbyterian church. Here were held the first schools in the township. At this time there was no public money for a school fund. After they had built their school-house they had nothing but a subscription school for many years. Soon after this another building was erected in sec. 11, near where Mr. Knott resides. There are still many persons living in the township who well remember the wooden benches, puncheon floor, the creaking door with its wooden hinges, and string latch, and the board supported by pins that extended along the wall around the room. When they had a couple of books, a goose-quill and a few sheets of paper, they thought that they were well equipped for school. Mrs. Hammond speaks of an old log house near where her son Seth's barn now stands, which was

used for a school-house for a number of years after they came to the country.

Among the pioneer teachers of the township were W. J. Holway, Matthias Rohn, Miss Green and Mr. Dwindle. At present, instead of log buildings we find beautiful brick structures, with all the modern improvements, while the teachers are among the best in the State.

The first saw-mill in the township was on Potato creek, built by John Green, Jr. The first birth was Andrew Bird, June 24, 1832. The first death was that of Isaac Rudduck, Jan. 13, 1833. He was the first buried in Sumption's Prairie grave-yard. The first couples married were John Rudduck and Elizabeth Rupe, and Abijah Sumption and Rachel Rupe.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL.

Personal mention of the leading and representative citizens of the township, of those who made and are making its history, we regard as a most important feature of local history and therefore give the following sketches.

*M. A. Aldrich* was born July 9, 1834, in Sandusky county, Ohio. His parents were David and Elizabeth (Bixler) Aldrich, the former of New York and the latter of Lancaster county, Pennsylvania. They moved from New York about 1825, to Sandusky county, Ohio, and in 1854 they came from that place to this county, settling in Penn tp. The subject of this sketch was married Aug. 1, 1858, to Mary Antrim, daughter of William and Sarah Antrim, of this county. They have 4 children: Henry, Matthew, William and Mary. Mrs. Aldrich died in May, 1874. Mr. A. was again married in July, 1875, to Mary E. Garwood, daughter of Jonathan and Martha Garwood, who were among the first settlers in this county. Mrs. Garwood is still living. Her father was among the first settlers of Indiana. Mr. Aldrich is a member of the Baptist Church, has a farm well cultivated; P. O. South Bend.

*William Bassett*, sec. 9, is the son of Thomas and Nancy (Hicks) Bassett, of Lorain county, Ohio, formerly of New York, but natives of Massachusetts. Mr. Bassett's grandmother on his father's side was a descendant of Miles Standish, about the fourth generation from the old Captain. Mr. B. was born in Genesee county, N. Y., May 16, 1828; removed with his parents to Lorain county, Ohio, in 1835. He came to this county when 19 years of age, and has made it his home ever since. He was married in the spring of 1849, to Amie Ann Auten, daughter of William and Sarah (Wharton) Auten, of this county, who came here in 1835. They have 9 children: Charles H., Cordelia, Mary (dec.), Arminda, Martha, William, Miles S. and Willis Edward. Mr. and Mrs. Bassett are worthy members of the M. E. Church at Maple Grove; P. O., South Bend.

*L. E. Coder*, farmer, sec. 15; P. O., Sumption Prairie; was born in Ashland county, Ohio, June 5, 1839. His parents, Peter and Catharine Coder, were natives of Westmoreland county, Pennsylvania. They came to Elkhart county, Indiana, in 1854. His father died in Marshall county in 1866, and his mother is now living in Hanover, county, Ohio. Mr. C. came to this tp. from Elkhart county in 1859; married Oct. 22, 1866, Martha A. Rizer, daughter of William and Sarah Antrim, of this county, but natives of Ohio. They have 5 children: Ernest, Cora C., John, Asa and Sylvester. Mr. Coder was Corporal in our late civil war, in Co. B, 9th Mich. He has a farm of 130 acres.

*A. J. Crocker*, son of Ezra and Julia Crocker, the former a native of Virginia and the latter of Massachusetts, was born in Summit county, Ohio, Dec. 4, 1832. He came to St. Joseph county and settled in Penn tp. in 1843; in 1860 he removed to Union tp., and in 1873 came to the farm on which he now resides; was married in 1860 to Miss Christina Slick, of Starke Co., Ohio. Her parents, Samuel and Mary Slick, are now living in South Bend. They have 3 children: Ernest, aged 19; Grace, aged 17; and Charles, aged 9. Mrs. Crocker is a member of the M. E. Church. Mr. C. is a farmer, owning 102½ acres; P. O., South Bend.

*Joseph E. Davis* was born in Montgomery county, Pa., in 1811. His parents were Mordecai and Eleanor (Brodson) Davis, natives of the same county. Mr. Davis left the paternal roof when 16 years of age, going to Roxbury, now a part of Philadelphia, to learn the blacksmith trade. He served five years' apprenticeship, worked at journeyman work one year, and ran a shop of his own for the next 2 years. He was married April 7, 1835, in Germantown, to Mary Hogland, who was born Nov. 9, 1814. She is the daughter of Elias and Elizabeth (Evermore) Hogland, natives of Philadelphia county, Pa. Mrs. Davis' family met in Philadelphia in 1876. She had five uncles and aunts assembled, the youngest of whom was 71, and the eldest (her mother) 83 years. They are all living yet, except one. Mr. and Mrs. Davis have 5 children: Elizabeth, born in 1836; Martha J., born in 1839; Sarah, born Dec. 8, 1841; Lucinda, born Aug. 20, 1844; George, born May 25, 1848. They arrived in this county in June, 1835, coming all the way from Pennsylvania in a one-horse wagon. He set up a shop on his farm on the site now occupied by the school-house; has been working at his trade and farming ever since. Is a member of the M. E. Church. P. O., South Bend.

*Elisha D. Fair*, son of Jacob and Eve Fair, natives of Somerset county, Pa., was born in December, 1827; came to Holmes county, Ohio, in the fall of 1837, from there to this county in fall of 1858, and to his present farm on sec. 17 in spring of 1863. He was married in March, 1851, to Susan Barnett, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Barnett, also of Somerset county, Pa., but later of Ohio. She was born Aug. 24, 1831. This couple have 8 children: Harvey, Elizabeth, Leander, Alvilda A., Thomas M., John B., Rosa A.

and Cora M. Mr. Fair has been a carpenter, teacher and farmer; now has 320 acres of well-improved land. P. O., North Liberty.

*Clarissa Garwood* was born May 1, 1821; she is the daughter of William and Sarah Throckmorton, of this tp. In 1840 she was married to Stacy Garwood, who was born in Ohio in 1816. His parents were Stacy and Joice (Wharton) Garwood, natives of New Jersey, who came to this tp. in 1831, and settled on sec. 7, the farm which Mrs. Garwood still owns. They have 7 children, 6 living: Matthew, born in 1843; Mary J., born in 1845; Sarah, born in 1850 and died May, 1880; Margaret M., born in 1852; Lydia Ann, born in 1854; Ezekiel, born in 1857, and Stacy M., born in 1859. Mr. G. was a farmer. He and all of his family are members of the M. E. Church. He had been a member for over 30 years, at the time of his death, which occurred in May, 1877.

*Mathew B. Hammond* was born March 8, 1791; his parents were James and Mary (Brown) Hammond. He was married Jan. 7, 1823, to Susan McCormac, of Lycoming county, Pa., daughter of Seth and Margaret (Simons) McCormac, formerly of Lancaster county, Pa. Their children are as follows: William, born Feb. 25, 1824; Sarah M., Dec. 6, 1826; Margaret A., March 28, 1828, died Jan. 11, 1834; Angeline, Jan. 6, 1830, died, Feb. 11, 1840; Samuel M., Jan. 9, 1832, died, Aug. 16, 1852; Eliza E., Feb. 26, 1834; Seth, Jan. 5, 1836; Cynthia A., Jan. 25, 1838, died in October, 1839; and Caroline, Oct. 20, 1833. Mr. Hammond came to this county in October, 1833, stopping in the Bend that winter, and came on their farm in this tp. the following spring, where he died Oct. 16, 1867. Mrs. Hammond and two of her daughters still live on the old farm. She and her husband united with the Presbyterian Church while young, and she as well as the children are still strong pillars in the Church. Mrs. H. has seen much of the hardships of pioneer life; has seen her country change from a howling wilderness to a beautiful and fertile land that calls forth the praise and admiration from all that behold it.

*William Hoke* was born in Richland county, Ohio, July 19, 1833. His parents, Emanuel and Magdelina Hoke, were from Pennsylvania, and of Dutch descent. They left Ohio about 1840, going near Union City in the southern part of this State. He was married to Margaret Gnard, daughter of Samuel and Priscilla Gnard, of this county, May 12, 1856. She was born December, 1835. They have 2 children: J. I., born July 4, 1857; and Ida P., born Dec. 7, 1861. J. I. Hoke was married to Nellie Rush, of this tp., in April, 1877. They are now living in South Bend. Mr. Hoke is engaged in farming. He followed lumbering for a number of years while young. Mr. Hoke and family are all worthy members of the M. E. Church. Ida received her education in Valparaiso Normal, and Fort Wayne Musical Conservatory. John I. was educated in North Liberty and South Bend. Mr. H. has a farm of 160 acres, well improved, in sec. 1; P. O., South Bend.





A. T. Loguillard



*T. L. Holloway* was born in February, 1816, in Clarke county, Ohio. His parents, William and Phebe (Crispin) Holloway, the former a native of Virginia, and the latter of New Jersey, came about 1796 to Ross county, Ohio. In 1816 they removed to Clarke county, in that State, where they died, his mother in October, 1839, and his father in April, 1840. Mr. Holloway came to this county, and in 1842 married Miss Ducilla McCullough, daughter of John and Eleanor McCullough, residents of this tp. They removed to Clarke county, Ohio, but returned in 1845 and settled on the farm which Mr. Holloway still occupies. They had 5 children, 4 of whom are yet living: Edward B., born in August, 1843; John H., March, 1845; Alice, September, 1848; Helen, September, 1851. Mrs. Holloway died in March, 1856. Edward is now a dentist in Sturgis, Mich.; John H. is in Buchanan, Mich., dealing in live-stock; Alice married Wm. Reese, who is farming near Vermillion, Ill.; Helen married Willis Warner who has a grocery in South Bend. Mr. Holloway was again married in June, 1858, to Ann (Heaton) Rush, and they have 2 children: Kittie, born March, 1861, and Lizzie, February, 1864. Edward served three years in the 21st Ind. Battery, and took part in battle of Lookout Mountain. Mr. H. united with the M. E. Church when 18 years of age, and has been a member ever since. Business, farming; P. O., South Bend.

*Peter J. Howell*, farmer, sec. 8; P. O., South Bend. Among the industrious and intelligent farmers of this county, we find Mr. Howell. He was born in Ohio in 1851, removed with his parents, Peter and Rebecca Howell, to this tp. in 1855; was married in the spring of 1873 to Helen Woofter, daughter of James Woofter, late of this tp., and they have 2 children: James Peter, aged three years, and George D., aged four months. Mr. Howell is a Catholic.

*William Hummer*, son of Washington and Mary Hummer, formerly of this township, but now living in Walkerton, was born in March, 1843. He was married in April, 1869, to Miss A. Rupe, daughter of Samuel Rupe of this tp. They have 2 children: Arthur, born Jan. 10, 1870, and Delbert, born Feb. 15, 1873. Mr. H. is a farmer, and received his education in the common schools of the tp.; is a member of the Methodist Church at Maple Grove. Has 80 acres of land in sec. 17; P. O., South Bend.

*Asa Knott* was brought by his father to this section when he was but four years old, and he has seen the country change from a wilderness populated with wolves, panthers and Indians, to the blooming country that delights the traveler's eyes to-day as he rides over it. Mr. Knott was born in Greene county, Ohio, May 27, 1834; his father came to Marshall county in 1838, and to this tp. in 1839. He followed lumbering in Marshall county. Mr. Knott removed his family back in 1842 or '43, but staid for a few years only, when he again removed to the old farm, on which

Mr. Knott still resides. Jan. 7, 1868, he was married to Caroline E. Dooffield, daughter of John and Sarah Dooffield, of South Bend, who was born in 1844. They have 4 children: Willie, born Aug. 25, 1870; Charlie, Jan. 16, 1869; Asa Guy, July 13, 1873; and Nellie, Nov. 19, 1878. Mr. Knott is engaged extensively in farming and stock-raising; has 890 acres of land, 700 of which is under good cultivation. He resides on sec. 10. He was First Lieutenant in Co. B, 48th Indiana, in our late war. At present is one of the five directors and the treasurer of the Farmers' Mutual Insurance Company of St. Joseph county. Is a Granger and Republican. P. O., South Bend.

*John H. Mack*, son of the late John Mack, of South Bend, came to La Porte in April, 1844. The next winter he engaged in teaching school. For a number of years he taught during the winter, and worked at his trade in the summer. In the fall of 1855 he bought an interest in a saw-mill in Green tp., and has been engaged in lumbering till about seven years ago, when he went to farming; has 160 acres in sec. 4. The record of their family is given here. John Mack, Sr., was born April 2, 1762, and died March 6, 1818; Silence Enos, born Oct. 14, 1771, died Oct. 30, 1799; Elizabeth, born June 4, 1790, died April 25, 1873; married Richard Smith; Mary Polly, born Nov. 3, 1792; she married Samuel G. Barr, who died Jan. 24, 1876, aged 84; she died April 6, 1835; John Mack, Jr., born Nov. 15, 1794, died April 8, 1878; James E., born Dec. 6, 1797, died March 20, 1832; Experience Joyner, second wife of John Mack, Sr., was born in August, 1775, and died in 1857. Their children are: Pauline E., born Feb. 6, 1801, married Mr. Hall, and died May 4, 1861; Charlotte, born May 11, 1803, married Mr. Gillett, and died Dec. 29, 1873; William J., born Sept. 30, 1805, and resides in Buffalo; Hiram, born May 19, 1808, left Buffalo May 16, 1834, starting for St. Louis, and was never heard of afterward; James Huggins, second husband of Experience Joyner, was born July 4, 1766, and died Oct. 31, 1842; Joseph Hanford, father of Clarissa W. Hanford, was born in 1739, and died May 2, 1826; Clarissa W. Hanford was born Feb. 8, 1793, and died Sept. 6, 1841; John H. was born Oct. 26, 1820; an infant was born Aug. 17, 1822, which died the next day; Helen, born April 10, 1824; Elizabeth M., born Oct. 26, 1825, and died July 30, 1826; Walter B., born May 6, 1827, residence Cedar Rapids, Iowa; William, born Oct. 9, 1828, and resides in this county; Achsah M. Leland, second wife of John Mack, Jr., born Feb. 22, 1805, and died April 6, 1875; a female infant was born March 6, 1846, which died the same day; James L., born June 28, 1849.

John Mack, Sr., married Silence Enos Sept. 16, 1788; and for his second wife, Experience Joyner, Nov. 2, 1799. Children of John Mack, Sr.: Elizabeth, married Richard Smith Jan. 18, 1808; John Mack, Jr., married Clarissa W. Hanford March 7, 1819, and for his second wife, Achsah M. Leland, March 27, 1842; Pauline E.

Mack, married Asa Hall, Dec. 26, 1820; Mary Polly, married Samuel T. Barr Feb. 19, 1821; James E., married Marcia White Jan. 14, 1822; Charlotte, married Reynolds Gillett Dec. 2, 1827; William J., married Ann Holbrook Nov. 28, 1833. Experience Mack, former wife of J. Mack, Sr., married James Higgins Dec. 11, 1825; Samnel T. Barr, former husband of Mary Mack, married Marcia Mack, former wife of James E. Mack.

Children of John Mack, Jr.: William, married Lauretta Thurber Feb. 4, 1852; Walter B., married Rebecca Southerland June 28, 1853; John H. Mack, married Sarah S. Wharton Feb. 7, 1866; James L. Mack, married Ella Funk March 30, 1871.

Family of John H. Mack: Sarah L. Wharton Mack was born in 1845, and their children are: John W., born Feb. 9, 1867; Franklin H., born Aug. 14, 1870; Walter J., born March 1, 1875; Reuben S., born July 20, 1877; and Clarissa W., born Oct. 30, 1879.

*John B. Moffitt* was born in Stark county, Ohio, May, 1840. His parents were Patrick and Susan (Galliger) Moffitt, the former a native of Sligo, Ireland, and the latter of Pennsylvania; his parents came to Ohio in 1812; his father died in Stark county, O., in 1863; he came to this tp. in 1865, and settled on this farm in the fall of 1874; attended the high school at Louisville, O., and afterward took a select course at the Francisca College at Luretta, Pa.; he is a member of the Catholic Church at South Bend, and follows farming and teaching; residence, sec. 12; P. O., South Bend.

*Peter Oberly*, son of Peter and Juliet (Sofer) Oberly, of New Chatel, Switzerland, was born March 17, 1831. In 1838 he came to Pennsylvania, and in the year 1839, to Canton, Ohio, where he married Catharine Walder, who was born in 1832, daughter of George Walder, of Wurtemberg, Germany. They have 3 children, Peter, born Nov. 17, 1855, married Mary Stein; Louisa B., born March 12, 1857, married John D. Hummer, and lives in Walkerton; and Annie B., born Nov. 5, 1859, married James Skiles. Mr. Oberly came to this county in November, 1854, and settled in South Bend, and lived there till he came to his farm in Green tp. When the war broke out in 1861 he was among the first to go, and remained until it closed in 1865; was in 48th Reg., Co. H; he took part in a great many battles, among which are Corinth, Black River, Champion Hill, the siege at Vicksburg and Huntsville, Alabama, was with Sherman on his march to the sea; from there he went to Washington, and from there to Louisville, Ky. He is now cultivating his farm of 42 acres in this tp. He received his education in Switzerland, but afterward attended the English schools in Canton, Ohio. P. O., South Bend.

*W. I. Oliver*, son of George and Bessie (Irvin) Oliver, was born in Roxboroughshire, Scotland, June 1, 1821; in the fall of 1834 he came to Genoa, N. Y., landing at Mishawaka in the fall of 1836; this has been his home until a few years since, when he moved on the farm on which he now lives. His father died in 1837, at the age of 74 or 75 years, and his mother died in Lagrange county,

this State, at the age of 85, in June, 1867. Mr. Oliver was married in October, 1842, to Lucinda D. Ford, daughter of John and Lois (Hammond) Ford, natives of New York, and they have 5 children, namely: Jennie, born in September, 1844, now living in Mishawaka; Henry B., now in Kansas, was born in 1847; Bessie, born in 1857; Hattie, born in 1864, and Mollie in 1867. Mr. Oliver is a blacksmith by trade and swung his sledge hammer for many years in his shop at Mishawaka; he is now tilling one of the beautiful farms of Sunnption's Prairie, on sec. 32. He received his education in Scotland. P. O., South Bend.

*Mahlon Pearson* was born Aug. 16, 1828, and came to this tp. when but five years old, with his parents, Samuel and Mary (Wharton) Pearson, the former a native of North Carolina, and the latter of Virginia; they settled on the farm now owned by C. Schang in 1833. Mahlon was married in 1849 to Sitha Jenkins, who was born in North Carolina; their children are as follows: Charles, now in the regular army; Lucetta, married to Mr. Hay and living in Franklin county, Neb.; Ida, married Frank Hagerman, and living in Michigan. Mrs. Pearson died in 1867, and in 1869 he married Betsey A. (Innan) Hummer, who by her former marriage had 4 children: Lawrence, Louise E., Ada and Henrietta.

Mr. and Mrs. Pearson have 2 children, William and Cora. Mrs. P. was born in this tp. Nov., 1836. Mr. P. was in the 12th Mich. Inf., Co. I, in our late war; is a member of the M. E. Church; was educated in the common school; is a carpenter and farmer, sec. 16. P. O., South Bend.

*John Phillips* was born in Floyd county, Va., in 1832; came to this county with his parents, William and Jane Phillips, in 1834; moved on his farm in this tp. in January, 1855. In December, 1854, he married Mary Shibily, daughter of John and Margaret Shibily, of Union tp., who was born Aug. 4, 1836; their children are: Francis A., born Oct. 7, 1855; John W., June 17, 1859; Theodore A., Dec. 21, 1861; Mary V., July 1, 1864; Daniel M., June 1, 1867. Mr. Phillips is a farmer and mason; owns 80 acres in sec. 16. P. O., South Bend.

*Daniel Rupe*, son of Jacob and Susanna (Long) Rupe, natives of North Carolina, was born in December, 1816, in Wayne county, Indiana; he came with his parents to Wayne county, Indiana, and from there to Pleasant Plain, in Elkhart county, in 1829; came to this tp. in the spring of 1831, and settled in sec. 1. His mother died in 1854, and the father in 1868. Mr. Rupe was married in December, 1840, to Martha Stull, who was born in Jennings county, Indiana, in 1820, and they have 5 children: William, Henry, Margaret, Melissa and George. Margaret married James Cook; Melissa married Linus Foot, Jr., Jan. 22, 1870, who was born in 1850; his parents are William and Maria Foot, of Centre tp., who came to this county in 1851; they were natives of Connecticut. Mr. Foot lived in South Bend several years after his marriage, where he followed teaming; he is now engaged in farming on sec. 7; they have one child, born in 1874. P. O., South Bend.

*John M. Rupe*, son of Henry and Martha (Garwood) Rupe, natives of Ohio, was born in this tp. August, 1837. He was married April 16, 1857, to Miss Hannah M. Ball, daughter of Rev. H. B. Ball, of this conference of the M. E. Church, who was born in 1838, and they have 3 children: Henry F., born Feb. 3, 1858; Edward H., born Oct. 19, 1867; Mary M., born Jan. 10, 1878. Mr. Ball removed to Wayne county Ind., in 1871, but returned again to this tp. in 1879; he has 80 acres of land in sec. 13; was educated in the public schools of the county, and is a Republican. P. O., South Bend.

*Samuel Rupe* was born in North Carolina, in the year 1808; his parents, Jacob and Susanna Rupe, came to Indiana about the year 1812, and settled at Pleasant Plain, in Elkhart county, in 1826. Mr. Rupe came to this tp. about 1832. Like most of the early settlers he came here poor, but by diligence and perseverance he has made, for his old age, a pleasant home. His farm consists of 158 acres of choice farming land, on sec. 8. He was married at the age of 21 to Rachel Whitmer, of Wayne county, Ind., and they had 5 children: Lovina, John B., Elizabeth, Franklin and Mary. Mrs. Rupe died about 1840, and Mr. Rupe married Sally Ann Owen, widow of the late Rev. T. Owen, and they have 6 children: Susan, Martha Jane, Allie, Lucinda, William H. and Albert. Mr. Rupe has been a member of the M. E. Church for 54 years; was licensed to exhort about 47 years ago, and to preach about 25 years ago. He has been one of the pioneer Methodists of this country. P. O., South Bend.

*John J. Rupel* was born in Virginia, Sept. 16, 1818, the son of John and Elizabeth Rupel, who came to Elkhart county in 1832. Dec. 27, 1849, he married Lydia Chord, daughter of Jacob and Susanna Chord, both of whom were natives of Montgomery county, Ohio. They settled in this county in 1831. Mrs. R. was born Jan. 11, 1827. They have 3 children, namely: Mary A., born March 3, 1851, married Jacob Wolverson and lives in South Bend; Nora M., born Nov. 18, 1853, married Arthur Invy, of South Bend; and Chord S., born Feb. 18, 1858, is married and living at home. Mr. Rupel worked at carpentering when young, but has been a farmer for the last 30 years. He left Elkhart county in 1839, and settled on his present farm in 1851. He owns 335 acres in this tp. He also has a fine residence in South Bend. When Mr. Rupel came to this farm there was but little improvement on the place, but by hard work and careful management he has made it one of the finest farms in the county. Mr. and Mrs. Rupel are members of the Advent Church. P. O., South Bend.

*Christopher Schang* was born in France Sept. 14, 1816. He came to Stark county, Ohio, in 1847. In 1865 he removed to South Bend. He was married in Ohio to Margaret Fultz, who was born March 25, 1823. Their children are as follows: George, born Aug. 9, 1852; Mary A., June 8, 1854; Jacob F., Sept. 14, 1856; Clara J., Oct. 25, 1862; and Ella M., Sept. 12, 1865. Mary A.

married Richard B. Moffitt, of this county. Mr. Schang, when young, learnt the blacksmith trade and that has been his business through life. He carried on a shop in South Bend for nine or ten years, when he removed to his farm in this tp., where he has been working on his farm and at his trade since. In the spring of 1878 George went to Texas, but soon grew tired of the "land which flows with milk and honey," and concluded that St. Joseph county was not so bad a place after all; so procuring a pony and saddle he left the "Lone Star" State, came through Arkansas and Missouri, and made the trip home in about two months. During the gold fever in California Mr. Schang went thither, by way of the Gulf and crossing Central America, and thence on the Pacific to the land of gold. He returned in about 18 months by way of the Isthmus and New York, to South Bend. Mr. Schang was educated in France, and belongs to the Catholic Church. P. O., South Bend; residence, sec. 8.

*J. M. Swaim* was born in Randolph county, N. C., Jan. 26, 1822, where he worked on his father's farm until he reached his 23d year, when he removed with his family to Indiana in the autumn of 1844. The first four years of his life in Indiana were spent in teaching school and the study of medicine. In the spring of 1847 he was married to a daughter of Dr. Way, of Richmond. The next spring, with a number of his wife's relatives, he removed to the northern part of Illinois, then a comparatively new country, remaining, however, only one year, when he returned to Indiana, to the vicinity of South Bend, where he has since resided. Ancestry: Anthony Swaim came from Holland in 1700, and settled on Staten Island. Anthony had 3 sons: Michael, Mathias and William. The latter with his 3 sons, John, Moses and Michael, went southward and settled in North Carolina, then a British colony. John married Elizabeth Vickroy, by whom he had 8 sons and 3 daughters. The sons were Ashley, Christopher, William, Joshua, John, Marmaduke, Moses and Michael. Moses married Adda Swindell, by whom he had 7 sons and 4 daughters. Four of the sons are still living, one, the subject of this sketch, in Indiana, one in Illinois, one in Missouri, and one in North Carolina. Two of the daughters are still living in Indiana. The family is numerous and widely scattered over the United States. In some localities the name has degenerated into Swain, sometimes spelt Swayne; but they are all of the same family, and trace their ancestry back to Anthony, the Dutchman.

*Charity Wharton* was born in Warren county, Ohio, Oct. 3, 1825, the daughter of William and Sarah Throckmorton, who were early settlers in this county. The former was a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Pennsylvania, and came to this tp. from Warren county, O., in 1836. They settled on the farm now owned by W. A. Aldrich, where they both died in 1864. The subject of this sketch was married to William Wharton Feb. 6, 1844. He was born in Warren county, O., June 23, 1815, and came to this tp. in



1842. They have 4 children living: Sarah L., born Oct. 2, 1845; David F., Feb. 4, 1848; James G., Nov. 9, 1853; Henrietta, born Jan. 11, 1859. Mrs. Wharton has lived on her present farm for 31 years. Mr. Wharton died May 11, 1877. He was a man honored and loved by all that knew him, and left a large circle of friends to mourn his departure.

*Margaret Whitman* was born in Seneca county, O., Aug. 14, 1844. She is the daughter of Nicholas and Elizabeth Jones, of that place. She was married there May 26, 1856, to Daniel Whitman, son of Samuel and Rachel Whitman, of the same county. He was born in Pennsylvania, Feb. 5, 1821. They came to this county and settled on their farm in this tp. in March, 1861. This couple have 5 children: Samuel N., born in August, 1857; Ellen, born Sept. 9, 1861; Clara A., born Nov. 12, 1863; Frank, born Nov. 30, 1865. Margaret, died in 1876, aged 19. By a former marriage Mr. Whitman had several children, one of whom is living: Newton J., born in August, 1851. Jesse W. was born Oct. 10, 1844, and died Oct. 23, 1863, at Chattanooga; was a member of the 21st Ind. Battery; went out in September, 1861. Samantha J., married George Cobb, and died Jan. 6, 1876. Mr. Whitman was a farmer. He died April 2, 1874. For many long years before his death his health had been very poor, but he bore all his affliction with a Christian fortitude, waiting for his Master to call him to that blest home where sickness never comes.

*J. J. Whitman*, son of Joel and Artemisia Whitman, was born in Lake county, Ohio, in September, 1834; was married in the fall of 1867, to Druzilla Bennett, daughter of Stephen Bennett, of this county, formerly of Morrow county, Ohio, but a native of Virginia. Their 9 children are: Lester J. (deceased), Eva May, Amelia E., Martin E., Alvia A., John M., Mary E., Carrie E. and Gertrude. Mr. Whitman is a carpenter and also attends to his farm of 65 acres in sec. 13. He served nine months in our late war in Co. E., 23d Ind. Inf. P. O., South Bend.

*Joel Whitman*, son of Jesse and Catharine (Vanderhoot) Whitman, was born in New York Jan. 1, 1811. They left New York in 1830 and went to Erie county, Penn. There he married Artemisia Hewitt, daughter of Daniel Hewitt, of that county. She was born here in 1813. They had 10 children, 7 of whom are living: John J., Marcia (now Mrs. George Philips), Adelia (now Mrs. W. Inman, of Liberty tp.), Sylvia M. (now Mrs. Bownbork, of Centre tp.) James E., of Arkansas, Francis A. and Joseph A. Mrs. W. died in '52, and Mr. Whitman was again married in 1857, to Charity Cortril, daughter of John and Phebe Cortril, of this county. They have 3 children: Nettie, Ada M. and Belle. Mrs. Whitman died May 25, 1879. Mr. Whitman left Erie county, Pa., in '23 and moved to Ohio; in '26 he came to St. Joseph county. He is a farmer, and owns 20 acres in sec. 18. By trade he is a carpenter and joiner. Is a member of the Protestant Episcopal Church in North Liberty. Was land Assessor

for the year 1880 and had been Town Trustee for a number of terms. P. O., South Bend.

*Michael Woollet* was born in Allen county, Ohio, April 7, 1840. His parents, Michael and Catharine Woollet, were natives of Pennsylvania. He was married in May, 1863, to Mary E. Oyler, daughter of William and Elizabeth Oyler, of Green tp., but formerly of Shelby county, Ohio. They have 8 children: Lewis, Charles, Ellen, Alice, Marion, Clara, Melvin and Rosa. Mr. Woollet came to the county in 1853. He is a farmer. P. O., South Bend.



## HARRIS TOWNSHIP.

This township lies in the extreme northeastern part of the county. It is bounded upon the north by Cass county, Mich., on the east by Elkhart county, Ind., on the south by Penn township, and on the west by Clay. There is much marsh land in the township, being in the middle and southeastern part, and running a southwest course into and through the northwest corner of Penn township.

This land is unfit for agricultural purposes, except for grazing and haying. The State cut a ditch commencing at the south edge of J. Balwin's farm on section 17, and running a south course about 160 rods, then turning southwest, which course it pursues through sections 20, 19, 30, 25, 26 and along the south line of the last named section, and also about 50 rods on the south line of section 27, where it takes a southwest course into and through Penn township. Great good has been accomplished, as this marsh was entirely covered with one continuous sheet of water, that lay upon the ground until late in the summer months, even after the abatement of the water, great portions of which was so boggy that it was inaccessible by man or beast; but this ditch has so drained this vast area that it has become solid footing, and hundreds of acres are mowed. Notre Dame University owns the largest farm in this township, most of which is marsh land, where they raise their beef and their milk supply for the University, of which further mention is made elsewhere.

This township took its name from Jacob Harris, of Ohio, who came in 1830 and settled on Harris Prairie, where he raised the first wheat that was cut in the township, it being harvested in 1831. His neighbor, Jacob Meyer, who came the spring of 1831 and still resides in this township, on section 15, helped cut Mr. Harris' crop. Samuel Bell, a son-in-law of Mr. Harris, came with him in 1830. Adam Miller, a Baptist preacher, came in 1830 or '31, also Adam Ringle, and settled on section 15. Mr. Ringle died several years ago, and Miller either died or moved away. The first settlers erected cabins on this prairie.

David and Josephus Baldwin and family were probably the first settlers in this township, though other historians speak of Mr. Harris being the first. Mr. Baldwin stated that he was here when Mr. Harris came, and said he and his brother David came in 1828 or '29. Joseph Buel came in 1831 and settled on section 15. Arbogast Zaehle came in 1834, and settled on section 22, where he still resides. Henry Augustine put in his appearance on section 15 in 1831; also Hartzel, the same year, on the same section. Robert Kennedy arrived in 1833 and built his cabin on section 14. David

Ringle and his sons Samuel and Levi came in 1833 or '34 and pitched their cabins on section 14.

The first school-house was a log structure built on section 10, on the north edge of Harris Prairie. Though struggling through the pressure of poverty and privations, the settlers planted among them the school-house at the earliest practical period. An object so important as the education of their children they did not defer until they could build more comely and convenient houses; they were for a time content with such as corresponded with their rude dwellings; but soon better buildings were erected. As may readily be supposed, the accommodations of the earliest schools were not good. Stoves and the latest improved heating apparatuses were unknown. The house was built of round logs, 14x16 feet; cracks chinked and daubed with mud; door in the south end and a mud and stick chimney in the other; with earthen earth and fire-place wide enough to take in a log nearly as long as the width of the house, and smaller wood was used to ignite the larger; logs better known by the old pioneers as "back logs." This rudely constructed chimney and fire-place served for warming purposes in winter and a kind of conservatory in summer. For windows part of a log was cut out in either side and a few lights of eight by ten glass set in. Their writing benches were made of wide split pieces of timber puncheons, resting on pins or arins driven into two-inch-anger holes bored into the logs beneath the windows. The seats were made out of the same material; also the floor. The ceiling was of round poles or logs, and covered or plastered with mud on top. Everything was rude and plain, but many of America's greatest men have gone out from just such school-houses to grapple with the world, and make names for themselves, and have come to be an honor to their country.

Robert Kennedy taught the first school in the township, that being in such a house as just described. The first church built was the Presbyterian, which stands in the woods near Mr. Kennedy's residence. There is but one other church, and that is owned by the Evangelical people. It is situated on the east side of section 21. The Christian Church was organized Jan. 7, 1863, by Elder Green, consisting of 31 members. The Church has been prosperous. Many of its members have moved to the West, and in consequence its membership is but a few more than when it was first organized. Its present minister is Charles Hendershot, who holds service once in two weeks. Present deacons are Robert Savage and James Lowry. They occupy the Presbyterian building. They contemplate erecting a house of worship as soon as they can secure a suitable site. This portion is not affected by the marsh, is in fair state of cultivation, and at no distant day the marsh will become tillable and settled by an enterprising people, at which time it will compare favorably with other townships that are settled with more wealthy citizens to-day.

The Grand Trunk railroad passes through this township, running a northeast course. There is no town upon this line in this township,—nothing but a station, where there are a depot and postoffice, called Granger; no business of any kind is done.

The Indian trail leading from La Porte, or rather from Chicago to Detroit, passes through the southeast corner. Mr. W. and E. M. Irvin and Jas. Lowry, extensive farmers, settled here in an early day.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL.

Following is a brief mention of several prominent residents and pioneers of Harris township. It will be of equal interest with the foregoing items, especially to the citizens of that community.

*Geo. Hassig*, a native of Strasburg, France, born Nov. 17, 1808; was a son of John and Barbara Hassig; he was reared on the farm, and came to America in 1832; stayed three days in New York city; then came to Stark county, O., and in 1837, to this county. He returned to Ohio in 1839, and came back the same year. He married Mary Keiffer in 1840; 5 of their 7 children are living, to wit: Napoleon, Franklin, Emanuel, Israel and Mary. Mr. H. owns 212 acres of land; is a farmer and stock-raiser in Harris tp., sec. 16. P. O., Edwards.

*John Koker*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 22; was born in Switzerland January, 1802, and is the son of Benedict and Mary Koker; he came to America in 1824, and located in Ohio, where he resided until 1846, then came to this county, settling in Clay tp., thence to this tp. in 1847. He married in 1825, Mary Becher, a native of Switzerland; 3 of their 5 children are living. He has had good success, having 80 acres of land that he has been offered \$5,200 for. Mrs. Koker died Dec. 31, 1879. Mr. K. is a member of the Presbyterian Church. P. O., South Bend.

*Joseph L. Krupp* was born in Germany Jan. 1, 1817, and is a son of Charles and Catharine Krupp, who removed to Seneca county, O., in 1833. He came to this county in 1839, and worked for several years at the blacksmith trade here and in Michigan. He was married in 1842 to Miss Sophia Smith; they have had 4 children: Eliza A., John, Mary and Louisa. Mrs. K. died October, 1851, and in 1853 Mr. K. married Miss Susan Long, by whom he had 5 children; 4 are living: William, Perry, Clayton and Philo. He is engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 9, Harris tp., and owns 440 acres of land.

*Jacob Meyer* was born in France July 17, 1807; son of Jacob and Mary Meyer, also natives of France, who came to America in 1828, and to this county soon after. Jacob came to this county in 1831, and settled on the present farm. He married Miss Catharine Bueb in 1829, who was born in September, 1807; they have had 11 children, 9 of whom are living, to-wit: Francis, Mary, Gracie, Jacob, Caroline, Joseph, Josephine, Clara and Sophia. Mr. Meyer

commenced in life by working on the canal; his first purchase of land was 160 acres, and at present owns 460 acres of beautiful land. He has held the office of Trustee and is a member of the Masonic order. His son Joseph was born July 26, 1843, in this county; he married Miss Minerva Smith January, 1870, and they have 3 children, to-wit: Pliny E., Thomas A. and Henry E. Mrs. M. died April 26, 1873. He married Miss Helen Smith Sept. 15, 1874, who was born Sept. 30, 1853; their 2 children are Harry and Arthur. Mr. M. owns 21 acres of land, and is superintending his father's farm of 460 acres in Harris tp., sec. 15. P. O., South Bend.

*Christ. Schneck* was born July 10, 1825, in Germany, and is the son of Adam and Margaret Schneck, now deceased. He left his native land in 1853; took passage in one of the New York steamships, and had a pleasant trip to New York, where he remained a short time, and then took up his march westward, stopping at Toledo; he located in Berrien county, Mich., in 1854, where he resided six years, then came to this tp., where he has been engaged in farming and stock-raising. In 1856 he married Miss Dora Streveal, a native of Germany, born in 1833, and came to America in 1851. Their 9 children are Caroline, Christine, Mary, Lydia, David, Emma, Mattie, Elizabeth and Ida. Mr. S. has been successful thus far through life, now owning 93 acres of good farming land on sec. 9; he and his wife are members of the Lutheran Church. P. O., Edwards.

*John M. Shimp* was born Jan. 18, 1848, in this county, and is a son of Jacob and Hannah Shimp, the former a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Ohio, who came to this county in an early day. John was reared on the farm, and received a good education, attending college two terms. He married Miss Sarah J. Longley March 16, 1870; she was born in Elkhart county, this State, April 15, 1849; 2 of their 3 children are living, to-wit: Delbert and Andrew. Mr. S. owns 60 acres of land, worth \$65 an acre, in Harris tp., sec. 11. P. O., South Bend.

*Michael Smith*, a native of Germany, born Aug. 24, 1824, is a son of Frederick and Elizabeth Smith, who came to New York in 1826, staid there six months, then went to Buffalo and remained one year, thence to Canada, near Black Rock, where he resided three years, thence to Stark county, O., where he died. Michael was reared on the farm, received a common-school education and came to this county in 1842. He married, July, 1853, Mary E. Anderson, daughter of Samuel Anderson, who came to this county in 1836, and died in 1852. She was born Nov. 20, 1827, in Columbia county, Pa. Mr. S. owns 380 acres of valuable land in sec. 17; he also raises stock. Himself and wife are members of the Presbyterian Church. P. O., Granger.

*John A. Zaehle* was born in this county Jan. 7, 1843; his parents were Abogast and Rosa (Binder) Zaehle, natives of Germany; his father came to this country in 1830, locating in Ohio, and his

mother in 1832, also locating in Ohio. They were married in 1834, moved to this county the same year, and have since had 8 children, 3 of whom are living: Rosa, Samuel and John A. Mr. Z. first entered 80 acres of land, and has since added 120 acres; April 29, 1874, John A. married Theresa Schirk, who was born in Germany Sept. 18, 1849; their 4 children are Emma, Clara, Edward L. and Otto A. Mr. Z. has been Assessor ten years, and is now holding the office of Trustee the second term; he was Paymaster's Clerk in the army, and has been clerk in a wholesale house in Louisville, Ky.; he is now working on his farm of 40 acres in Harris tp., sec. 22; also works his father's farm. In 1874 he went to Germany, and when he returned, brought an aunt and the young lady whom he afterward married. After leaving the district school he entered the University of Notre Dame, where he continued three years, graduating in the commercial course. He then went to Louisville, Ky., and was Paymaster's Clerk under Major Camp, who was stationed there. Afterward he went to Bowling Green and Nashville, acting in the same capacity, under Major Fell. He then was clerk in the sutler store of C. Henry Fink, where he remained until near the close of the war, then returned to his home in this county. P. O., South Bend.



## LIBERTY TOWNSHIP.

Liberty township formerly embraced the territory included in Lincoln township, but being inconvenient for the settlers that resided in (now) Lincoln township to attend elections, in June, 1866, according to petitions of Lincoln settlers, it was detached and made an independent township. Liberty is generally known as being among the first settled townships in St. Joseph county. The first settlements were made in 1833 near North Liberty, by John Kane, John and Jacob Earhart and Isaac Townsend. But few other settlers came into the township till 1836. John Rupel came in January, this year, soon followed by David Rupel, Jas. Cole, Jacob Rupel and Joseph Liggett.

In May, 1837, the township was organized by the following persons: Daniel and James Antrim, John and David Rupel, Samuel Loring, James Cole, Jacob Rupel and Joseph Liggett. The first election was held the same spring, in North Liberty, at the house of Jas. P. Antrim, who was elected Justice of the Peace. In 1838 Mr. Waldsmith, father of Geo. Waldsmith, a present resident of Liberty township, settled on section 30.

Then the early settlers met with hardships the present settlers know nothing of. They had to go to Elkhart in order to get wheat or corn ground for bread, and sometimes would have to wait nearly a whole week before their turn would come, all the while their families at home subsisting on nothing but what we call "hard tack" and wild meat. The wives of the settlers shared their trying lot with great patience and boldness of spirit. Their husbands were compelled to go away from home and work, leaving home just as soon as the morn of Monday would break; go to a place ten or twelve miles distant, where he would labor all the week and not return home till the stars had lit the sky on Saturday evening; and as he would plod his weary way along the Indian trail bearing a piece of fresh beef, which was a part of the fruits of his week's labors, frequently the hungry wolves would get scent of the precious meat he had, and he could hear their howling in the distance, then a little nearer and a little nearer till their incessant howls only told that they were persistently too near. Then he would be compelled to drop his meat to be devoured by the angry wolves and would have to go home at last without meat for his family. At this time the Pottawatomie Indians strolled in bands through the forests of this vicinity in search of "Big Injun's deer," which roamed in great herds through St. Joseph county. The Indians at this time were peaceable, but by their savage and warlike actions would frequently frighten the settlers' wives. At



one time in mid-winter about a dozen of these red skins called at the house of Mr. Waldsmith, and he not being at home, Mrs. W. was greatly terrified. They (the Indians) would stand around the fire, and, scraping the snow off their "leggings," would stop and point their huge bowie knives at Mrs. Waldsmith's children and say, "See, dat is de white man's pappoose; de white man's pappoose." This frightened Mrs. W. almost to death and she treated them with great hospitality,—with a great deal more than human nature would do under any other circumstances. She gave them food and almost everything in that line, and finally they departed, much to the joy of their benefactor. But it was only a few years before the Indians were removed westward.

In 1837 a grist mill was built in North Liberty, much to the convenience and accommodation of the settlers. In 1839 Hiram Bean and Alonzo Hill built a saw-mill not far from where the present grist-mill stands.

The land of this township, as already stated, was very thickly and heavily timbered, and it was not till about 1850 that the work of grubbing and clearing began to be faithfully prosecuted; but since that a great portion of it has been cleared up, thereby redueing to cultivation a body of land unexcelled in fertility and productiveness of all kinds of grain. The leading industrial pursuits of the settlers are farming and lumbering. Five saw-mills are actively running in the township. Live-stock rearing is fast becoming a leading feature of the industry of Liberty township.

Among the leading farmers of this township we find the names of D. W. Reece, V. S. Bulla, Henry Reamer, Jacob D. Row, A. H. Price, Ort Cook, Samuel Williams, L. Decoutres, Geo. Waldsmith, C. Schroeder, Franklin Pearce and his two sons L. S. and N. W., who are stock-raisers; N. S. Miller is a merchant and farmer; Isaac R. Cole, Jacob Geiger and Levi J. Knepp, farmers and mill sawyers.

The inhabitants of Liberty township are mostly of German ancestry, or what are called Pennsylvania Dutch, but they are a very enterprising class of people.

The only village that Liberty township contains is

#### NORTH LIBERTY.

It is situated at the conjunction of sections 28, 29, 32 and 33, and contains a population of nearly 400. It was laid out in 1837 by Daniel and James P. Antrim, and was surveyed by T. W. Bray. No houses had yet been built on the site, but the "distant future lent enchantments," and soon after its location James Downey built a house; the same year four other houses were built. The first store in the place was opened by Daniel Antrim in 1837. He did business one year, then sold his stock to E. S. Reynolds, and in 1840 he sold to A. P. Richardson, who kept the store till about 1845, when James Harvey purchased the stock and started a general

store. Mr. Harvey continued in business till 1867. In 1875 the Houser Brothers opened a general store. They still continue in business. In 1865 Mr. Norman S. Miller opened a large dry-goods establishment, which he continues. In 1866 Cole Brothers built a large planing mill and manufacturing establishment, which was burnt the winter of 1871. Jan. 1, 1873, a company was formed named Cole, Ragon & Co., consisting of Cole brothers, Houser and Knepp, and they built the North Liberty manufacturing establishment. They continued in business till 1875, when Houser & Knepp purchased Cole Bros.' interest in the establishment and have kept it in operation.

The home manufacturing company started in business in the fall of 1873, but has since discontinued, and the machinery was purchased by Schwartz & Tischer and moved to Walkerton, where they erected a planing-mill.

The present business of North Liberty consists of two large dry-goods establishments, two boot and shoe stores, one drug and hardware store, one grocery and hardware store, one planing-mill and manufacturing establishment, one grist-mill, one millinery store, one butcher shop, one barber and four practicing physicians. There are also three churches and one school-house.

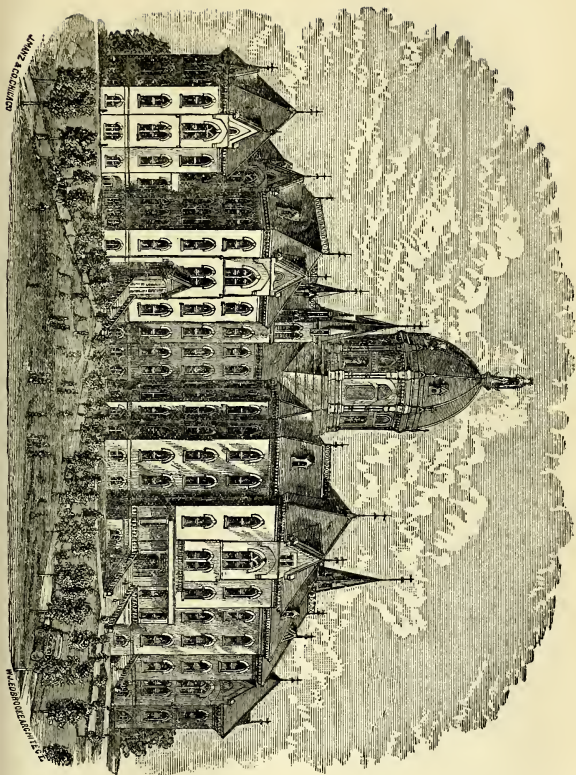
The first church in Liberty tp., was erected by the Methodists in North Liberty, in 1851, during the pastorate of Rev. A. Badley. This was used till 1878, when, during the administration of Rev. R. H. Sanders, a new and commodious structure was erected. The persons that aided principally in the founding of the Church at North Liberty in 1851, were: John Rupel (since deceased), Jas. Cole, John Quigley, Henry Reamer, Samuel Williams, Sumner G. Williams and D. W. Reece. The class-leaders of the North Liberty M. E. Church are Henry Reamer, Isaac R. Cole and Thos. Faulkner. Perhaps no other quarterly conference in Northern Indiana can boast of having sent more men from the private ranks to the active duties of the ministry, nor of men who under God have more faithfully wielded the weapons of Christian warfare, which in their hands have been mighty to "the pulling down" of "strongholds," among whom are Revs. Samuel T. Cooper, H. B. Ball, Nelson Green, James Green, Samuel Godfrey, J. C. Metsker, S. Lamb and C. W. Miller, of the North Indiana conference, and John C. Baker, of the Illinois Conference.

The second church in the township was the Seventh-Day Advent church at North Liberty, which was built in 1868 by donations from James Harvey, Elias Styles, Jacob Styles, Anson Worster, Adam Rupert and Russel Hoag, since deceased.

The Episcopalians also built a church a few years ago.

There are also five other churches outside of North Liberty,—two Dunkard churches, one Evangelical, one German Lutheran, and one United Brethren church.

The first school-house in Liberty township was erected near the site of the Dunkard church, one-half mile south of the village, in





1838. It was built of logs, and had a huge fire-place in one end of the room. The windows were one sash with three lights. One was in each side of the room. In 1840 a school-house was built in North Liberty, and in 1868 a high-school building was erected. A graded school has since been kept. Mr. J. N. Reece is the principal and George Sands is the teacher in the lower department.

North Liberty is a very pleasant little town and is surrounded with wealthy men. All the disadvantage that this place meets with is the lack of railroad facilities; but should a railroad be constructed through this place it would become one of the most flourishing towns in the county.

#### BIOGRAPHIES.

The history of Liberty township is substantially continued in the brief personal sketches which follow, of leading pioneers and residents.

*Rev. Orlando R. Beebe*, son of Samuel C. and Currence B. Beebe, was born near Salem, Porter county, Ind., Sept. 25, 1843. At the tender age of three years, his father died, and thenceforward his support and training devolved upon the widowed mother. Care was taken to secure for him the benefits of a common-school education. When about 16 years of age he began the struggle for larger advantages than the common school afforded. He accordingly became a student in the Valparaiso Collegiate Institute, where he was still at work with his books, when, in Aug., 1862, he enlisted in the Marine Artillery, and was soon with his command in North Carolina, where he obtained a transfer to the 3rd N. Y. Artillery. Shortly after this transfer the troops in North Carolina were removed in large part to South Carolina, to engage in the siege of Charleston. One year from his enlistment he was discharged, and, returning home, again enlisted in an Indiana Regiment, the 138th, where he served for a little more than one hundred days and was again discharged. This was followed by a third enlistment in the 151st Ind. Infantry. Here he remained until the close of the war. After the war was over and following a year's residence in Chicago, he began business for himself in Hebron, Ind. Here he became acquainted with and married Miss Laura G. Cain, daughter of Wesley and Elizabeth Cain. As the fruit of this marriage they have 1 daughter, born Nov. 15, 1875. On the 11th of May, 1872, having already been licensed by the Hebron Quarterly Conference as a local preacher, and having closed up his business affairs at Hebron, he began work in the Methodist ministry on Marmont Circuit, Northwest Indiana Conference. At the conference held in the following September, he was re-appointed to the same work. In the following year he was appointed to the Winamac charge. After a year of labor at Winamac he became pastor at Argus, in Marshall county. From thence he removed to Wheeler in Porter county. After a three years' term at Wheeler, Union Mills, in Laporte county,

became his field of labor. His next appointment brought him into this county, to North Liberty circuit, where he now lives and labors.

*V. S. Bulla* was born in this county Feb. 14, 1847. His parents, W. F. and Mary Bulla, were natives of Indiana. His father was one of the first settlers in St. Joseph county. (The biography of this early pioneer appears in another place.) V. S. was reared on a farm in Clay tp., north of South Bend. He was educated in the Notre Dame schools; was married Jan. 8, 1874, to Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel and Adaline McKenzie; to them were born 2 children, viz.: Mary A. and Lore. Mr. B. owns 240 acres of land in secs. 31 and 32.

*Alex. S. Campbell*, M. D., physician, North Liberty, was born in Baltimore county, Md., May 3, 1828. His parents were James H. and Elizabeth (Hattan) Campbell; he was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools of the country; in 1831 he, with his parents, moved to Zanesville, O., and in 1834, to McConnellsville, O.; remained there till 1845, then moved to Mt. Vernon, Ohio; in 1846 he went to Chesterville, O., and in 1852 went to Johnsville, and in 1855 to Iberia; in 1853 he commenced studying medicine under Drs. Henry H. Duff and T. White, of Iberia; he commenced practicing in 1857 at Iberia; and in 1860 he went to Zanesfield, where he practiced till 1870; then came to North Judson, Ind.; in 1871 he came to North Liberty, where he still resides, engaged in the practice of his profession. Mr. Campbell has been a member of the Cincinnati Eclectic Medical Association since 1869. He was married in 1848 to Miss Elizabeth Wilson, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Ferris) Wilson, and they have had 9 children, viz.: James M., a physician at Burlington, Iowa; Harriet L., now Mrs. Albert Liggett; Anna, now Mrs. Elias Styles; Thos. W., Emma A., now Mrs. Joseph Lucado; Wm. and Alice, twins, the latter now Mrs. Cyrus D. Houser; Amanda and Ada. Mrs. Campbell departed this life Sept. 9, 1877. Mr. Campbell was again married May 9, 1880, to Miss Sarah Gordon, daughter of John W. and Elizabeth Gordon, natives of Virginia.

*Isaac R. Cole* was born in Darke county, O., June 13, 1833; his parents were James and Sarah Cole, the former a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Pennsylvania; he came with his parents to this county in 1836, and they settled two and a half miles south of North Liberty. His father's family were among the first settlers of Liberty tp. Here on this frontier Isaac R. was reared to manhood and educated in the pioneer or frontier school, as it may be called. He was married Sept. 16, 1856, to Eliza J. Rush, daughter of Isaiah and Rebecca Rush, natives of Ohio. To this marriage was born one child, viz.: James Arthur. Mrs. Cole departed this life March 3, 1859. Mr. Cole was again married Oct. 21, 1861, to Mary E. Reamer, daughter of George and Rebecca Reamer, natives of Pennsylvania; their 3 living children are Alma A., Benj. F. and Mable B. Mr. C., in connection with his brother, owns 160 acres

of land, also two saw-mills, one in Liberty tp. and the other at Crum's Point. Mr. C. also owns 102 acres more near North Liberty.

*Ort Cook* was born in this county Aug. 8, 1847, and is a son of the Rev. Elias and Sophia (Eberhart) Cook. He was reared on a farm, and educated in the South Bend College. His father came to this county in the early part of 1847, and was a minister of the M. E. Church. Mr. Cook was married Oct. 5, 1874, to Miss Arvilla Rupel, daughter of John Wesley and Elzada Rupel. Her father was a native of Ohio, and her mother of Indiana. Two children were born to this union, one living, viz.: Adolphus and Tutt. Mr. C.'s grandfather Cook was a soldier in the Revolution.

*Isaac Early* was born in Rockingham county, Va., March 7, 1838; his parents, Jacob and Mary (Summons) Early, were natives of Virginia; he went to Allen county, O., when two years old, was educated in a common school, in a log house with slab seats, stick chimney, etc. In 1865 he came to this county where he still resides, engaged in farming and stock-raising; he followed school-teaching for awhile in Ohio. He was married April 18, 1861, to Mary E. Irvin, a native of Rockingham county, Va. To them were born 8 children, viz.: Sarah M., Hattie E., Mary E., Charles E. and Ella M. (twins), Mattie A., William I. and John J. Mr. E. owns a farm of 240 acres, worth \$50 per acre.

*Martin Finch* was born in Michigan June 19, 1836, son of Zimri and Hannah (Wright) Finch; he came to this county in 1844, and, with his parents, settled near Mishawaka; his father was a forgerman by trade and worked in the Mishawaka iron works. Martin was married Dec. 12, 1869, to Elizabeth Rupel, by whom he has had 5 children, viz.: Samuel N., Henry N., Ettie E., Ira A. and Ruth A. Mr. F. owns 91 acres of land in secs. 31 and 36.

*Geo. R. Flood*, harness-maker, keeps on hand a full stock of harness, whips, etc.; was born in Fairfield, Ind., Oct. 8, 1851, and is a son of James and Rachel E. Flood; he learned harness-making when 14 years of age, in Westville, his parents having moved there when he was young; his father was a merchant there for several years, and in 1872 Geo. R. went to Iowa, returning in 1874. In 1875 he worked at Lafayette, and in 1876 he came to North Liberty. He was married Dec. 4, of the same year, to Miss Mary E. McKenzie, daughter of D. R. and E. A. McKenzie, and they have had 2 children, viz.: Daniel R. and Mabel M. Mr. Flood's grandfather on his father's side was born near Dublin, Ireland, and during the Irish insurrection he was compelled to flee to another "seaport," and came to the free American soil; his grandfather Best was the first white child born in Cincinnati, O.

*Jacob Geiger* was born in Seneca county, O., Jan. 27, 1840. His parents, Henry and Christina (Zenderfau) Geiger, were natives of Baden, Germany; they came to this county in 1825. Mr. Geiger is the 3d child and 2d son of a family of 8 children; he was reared on a farm and educated in school-houses built of slabs, and



furnished with slab seats and writing desks. He left Ohio in 1863, and went to Jasper county, Ind.; and in 1865 came to this county, and has since followed farming and lumbering. In 1877 he purchased an interest in a saw-mill which he has since kept in operation. He was married Oct. 28, 1862, to Maria Shaffner, daughter of Martin and Susanna Shaffner, natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. and Mrs. G. have had 9 children 7 of whom are living, viz.: Theodosia, Vesta, Christiana, Madison F., Gertrude, Susanna and Ethel. Mrs. Geiger was born Feb. 8, 1843. Mr. G. owns 195 acres of land in sec. 36, also 200 acres in Marshall county.

*Henry Geyer* was born in Dearborn county, Ind., Feb. 14, 1849. His parents, John G. and Anna H. Geyer, were natives of Germany, and emigrated to America in the year 1840, and settled in Dearborn county where they resided till 1850, when they came to this county. Mr. G. was married Sept. 11, 1874, to Margaret A. Morrow, daughter of Andrew and Sarah Morrow, natives of Ohio. Mrs. Geyer died July 7, 1877, leaving one child. The 11th day of December following, Mr. G. married Sophia Stumble, daughter of Abram S. and Lydia Stumble; they have had one child, Chas. A. Mr. G. owns a farm of 230 acres in secs. 26 and 35, valued at \$50 per acre.

*John Hawblitzel* was born in Stark county, O., in the year 1833; his parents, John G. and Ann C. Hawblitzel, were natives of Germany. He came to this county in 1863; was married in 1858 to Anna C. Geiger, by whom he has had 4 children, of whom 3 are living, viz.: Nelson M., Henry G. and Anna C. Mr. H's father was a soldier in the war of 1812, and his grandfather on his father's side was in the Revolutionary war. He owns a farm of 144 acres.

*Russel Hoag* was born in New York State, Feb. 17, 1836. His parents were Russel and Mary Hoag, the former a native of New York and the latter of Rhode Island. He was reared in the town of Coalsville, N. Y., and educated in the schools of that place; he went to Michigan in 1857, and in 1868 came to this county; he was married April 2, the same year, to Miss Emma Carpenter, daughter of William and Nancy Carpenter, natives of Rhode Island. To this marriage were born 3 children, viz.: William R., Joseph H. and Myrtie Bell. Mr. Hoag was one of the founders of the Seventh-Day Advent Church at North Liberty; he owns 35 acres of land near North Liberty, worth \$100 per acre, and also a house and lot in the town.

*C. D. Houser*, of the firm of Houser Bros., dealers in general merchandise, North Liberty, Ind.; was born Feb. 18, 1850, son of George and Lucy (Long) Houser, natives of Pennsylvania; he was reared on a farm, and educated in the Roanoke schools; followed farming till 1873, when he and his brother opened the store. He was married Sept. 22, 1878, to Alice Campbell, daughter of Dr. A. S. and Elizabeth Campbell, natives of Ohio; they have had 1 child Grace.



*Daniel W. Houser*, of the firm of Houser Bros., dry-goods dealers, and also of the North Liberty Manufacturing Company, is a brother of the preceding, and was born in Coshocton county, O., Dec. 7, 1842; he was reared on a farm, and educated in the common schools; he left Ohio in 1858, and came to this county, where he followed farming till he was of age, then purchased an interest in a saw-mill; he followed milling until 1868. In 1872 he with his brother opened a manufacturing establishment. Mr. H. was married Mar. 1, 1877, to Miss Ella Briggs, daughter of William and Charlotte Briggs; to them were born 2 children, Gail E. and Eva M.

*William Inman* was born Feb. 7, 1832, in Clarke county, Ohio. His parents, John and Hannah Inman, were natives of England, and came to this country about the year 1815, settling in Ohio. His educational advantages were limited to the common schools of the country; in 1838 he came with his parents to this county when all was wild and unbroken, almost equal to his native place. His father purchased 235 acres of land at the Government price (\$1.25 per acre); they then moved on the land and began improving it. Our subject was married Jan. 3, 1848, to Miss Adelia Whitman, daughter of Joel and Artemisia (Hewitt) Whitman, and their 8 children are: William C., Alma V., Ann M., Frances E., John A., George M., Martha M. and Artemisia. Mr. I. owns 158 acres of land, worth \$45 per acre, and is a Republican.

*Levi J. Knepp* was born in Ohio Jan. 7, 1835, and is a son of John and Mary (Price) Knepp; he was reared on a farm, and educated in the common schools of the country. In 1857, he came to this county, and soon after went to La Porte; here he followed his trade, carpentering, for about two years; in 1859 he returned to St. Joseph county and pursued his former vocation till 1865, when he purchased a saw-mill, which was burned in about two months; he rebuilt and ran it for about four years, when it was again destroyed by fire; he replaced this with another, and has since followed milling in connection with farming. He was married Oct. 2, 1859, to Sarah Houser, daughter of George and Lucy Houser. To this marriage were born 4 children, of whom 3 are living, viz.: Jonathan D., Geo. F., Laura C. and Schuyler W. (dec.).

*Elijah T. Lee*, blacksmith and wagon-maker, North Liberty; was born in Wythe county, Va., Dec. 5, 1829; his parents, Martin and Mary Lee, were natives of Virginia; he lived on a farm till he was seventeen, then learned the blacksmith trade. In 1842 he went to Noble county, and worked at his trade till 1854, when he went to La Porte; he followed his trade there till the war broke out; he enlisted in the military service Aug. 9, 1862, in Co. E, 4th Ind. Cavalry, and served in that capacity till the close of the war; he participated in the battle at Mt. Washington, Ky., and at Atlanta; he employed most of his time at General Wilson's headquarters, working at his trade. He was mustered out at Edgefield, Tenn., and immediately returned to La Porte. In 1865 he came to North

Liberty, where he still resides, working at his trade. He was married in 1854, to Helen Nevins, daughter of Oscar Nevins; they have had 5 children, 4 of whom are living; viz.: Francis M., Ida Estella, Anna Laura and Mary Lizzie. Mr. L's father was in the war of 1812.

*John A. Long*, deceased,—was born in Tennessee, Nov. 14, 1813; was reared on a farm, and in November, 1841, he came to this county, and settled in Liberty tp. He was married Jan. 3, 1839, to Miss Elizabeth Troxell, daughter of Jacob and Catharine Troxell; 9 of their children are living; viz.: Jacob, Sarah C. (now Mrs. Jacob Jemison), Lucinda (now Mrs. Adam Longacre), George M., William, Francis M., Mary A. (now Mrs. Milton White), Margaret E., Benjamin A., Jonathan (dec.) and Thomas G. (dec.). Mr. Long followed the life of the honest farmer up to the time of his death, which occurred June 27, 1874. He had been a member of the German Baptist Church for fifteen years, and during this time he led a life of fidelity and uprightness, and left the earth respected by all and at enmity with none.

*Norman S. Miller*, merchant, North Liberty, was born in Darke county, O., Feb. 25, 1832; his parents were Josiah and Martha Miller, natives of Somerset county, Penn.; he was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools of the country; he came to this county in the spring of 1855, with only \$75 in money. He taught school three months the following winter, for which he received \$105. The same year he purchased a farm of 95 acres, near North Liberty, for which he paid \$1,000, a part cash and the remainder "on tick." The spring of 1859, he sold the same farm for \$1,687.50, realizing a gain of \$687.50. In the spring of 1860 he bought 100 acres lying in sec. 8, for which he paid \$1,100, and sold the same farm in 1863 for \$1,800. He then purchased 160 acres in sec. 5, paying \$2,100, and in 1867 sold it for \$4,100. In 1865 he entered into the mercantile business, with a stock of general merchandise invoiced at \$9,000. In 1872 he purchased another farm of 160 acres, paying \$3,300. Mr. Miller has held many prominent township offices. In 1857 he was elected Justice of the Peace, and served three successive terms with general acceptability. In 1869 he was elected Township Trustee, which office he filled seven years. He was married in 1855 to Miss Mary Rupel, daughter of John and Anna (Loring) Rupel. To this union were born 6 children, of whom 4 are living, viz., John H., Norman E., Anna M. and Lorene. Mr. M. is Postmaster, was appointed by President Lincoln, and strongly adheres to the noblest truths of the Republican party.

*Gottlieb Prell* was born in Gerinany Oct. 10, 1827, son of Godfrey and Maria Prell; he came to this country in 1855, and settled in this county, where he has since resided engaged in farming. Mr. Prell received an excellent education in the classics in the Universities of Germany, before he emigrated to America.

*A. H. Price* was born in Tuscarawas county, O., Sept. 2, 1831; his parents, Jonathan and Margaret (Deetz) Price, were natives of

Pennsylvania. In 1864 he came to this county, where he has since resided, engaged in farming and stockraising. He also taught school for a term of years. Sept. 30, 1852, he married Miss Lydia A. Cordray, daughter of Nathan and Mary A. Cordray; to them were born 10 children, viz.: Mary, now wife of A. R. Freeman; Margaret E., wife of Daniel Krigger; Ella, Angeline, Lorenzo D., John F., Albert, Emma, Minerva A. and Laura. Mr. Price owns a farm of 144 acres, valued at \$45 per acre. He is a Democrat.

*D. W. Reece* was born in Granger county, Tenn., Dec. 22, 1811, son of Charles and Mary (Glasgow) Reece; he was reared on a farm, and his educational facilities were limited, having to attend school in a log school-house without floor, furnished with slab seats, greased paper for window-lights, and a huge fire-place in one end of the room. In 1832 he went to Fayette county, Ind., where he lived till 1842; about 1835 he came to this tp. and purchased a farm; he made occasional visits to his farm, remaining only for a short time, and in 1842, as already stated, he moved upon it. Apr. 26, 1838, he married Nancy M. Wilson, daughter of Jeremiah A. and Rebecca (Stubblefield) Wilson. Mr. Wilson was a very early settler in Fayette county, having moved there prior to the war of 1812, when that region was but a howling wilderness. Mr. and Mrs. R. have had 8 children; of these, 6 are living, viz.: Mary R. (now Mrs. Hugh Heaton), Sarah C. (wife of Louis De Cou-dres,) William, Thomas J., Martha A. (wife of John Whiting), and James N. Mr. Reece has held various tp. offices, among which is Trustee. He and his wife are members of the M. E. Church.

*Jacob D. Row* was born in Tuscarawas county, O., Oct. 18, 1835. His parents, David and Sarah (Allehouse) Row, were natives of Pennsylvania. He went with his parents to Coshocton county, O., where he grew to manhood. His educational advantages were limited to the common schools; he came to this county in May, 1861, and settled on sec. 36, in Liberty tp. This was then but a howling wilderness; the land was very heavily wooded. There were but about 4 acres cleared on the farm he purchased; he labored on in the wood with unceasing energy till Sept., 1864, when he was drafted into the army; he had not been in the military service long till he was taken sick, and was confined in the Cumberland hospital for about four months; he served about one year, and was honorably discharged; he then returned home and resumed his former occupation, clearing the land and farming. He was married June 30, 1860, to Miss Hannah Knepp, by whom he has had 6 children, 5 of whom are living, viz.: Wm. C., Mary J., Martin A., Albert O. and Clara A. Mrs. Row is a daughter of John and Mary (Price) Knepp, natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. Row is a veterinary surgeon and horse doctor.

*David Rupel*, second permanent settler in Liberty tp., was born in Somerset county, Pennsylvania, July 31, 1811; his parents, Jacob and Ann Rupel, were natives of Germany, and came to America at a very early day. In 1830 he came to Elkhart county,

and remained during the winter. The following spring he came to this county and located near South Bend; at that time there were but two houses in the place, and they were occupied by Taylor and Coquillard, or Cuttean, as he was known, who had a trading post with the Indians at that place. In the summer of 1832 the settlers built the court-house; the material consisted chiefly of brick; in May, 1836, he moved to Liberty tp. He was married Jan. 10, 1836, to Sarah Meller, daughter of Andrew and Margaret Meller, natives of Ohio. This union was blest with 6 children, 5 of whom are living, viz.: Dennis W., Andrew M., Margaret J., (now wife of J. W. Jones), Melinda C. (wife of David H. Weaver) and Mary E. (wife of Jonathan M. Cripe). Mrs. Rupel died Feb. 21, 1875, aged 58 years.

*John N. Rupel* was born in this county Mar. 17, 1837, son of John and Anna Rupel, the former a native of Ohio, and the latter of Kentucky; he was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He dealt in live stock for about 20 years; also followed farming. He owns a farm of 144 acres in sec. 36, valued at \$50 per acre. He was married Feb. 28, 1865, to Miss Isadore Waxham, daughter of Zachariah and Elizabeth Waxham; they have 1 child, John F. Mr. R.'s father was the first settler in Liberty tp.

*Charles Schroeder* was born in Germany in the year 1833. His parents, Henry and Henrietta Schroeder, were also natives of Germany; he came to this country in 1857, and settled in St. Joseph county, where he still resides, engaged in farming and stock-raising. He was married in April, 1857, to Miss Mary Stieme, a native of Germany. Of their 9 children 8 are living, viz.: Frederick, Mary (Mrs. Rute Sellers), Anna, Charley, Henry, Sarah, Harmon and Ettie. Mr. S. owns 160 acres of land, worth \$60 per acre.

*John W. Shuppert* was born in Elkhart county, Ind., April 14, 1845; his parents, Joseph and Susanna Shuppert, were natives of Ohio. He was reared on a farm and educated in the Otterbein University, at Westerville, O., and followed school-teaching for 10 years. He was married Nov. 29, 1871, to Mary E. Weatherington, by whom he has had 5 children, viz.: Arvilla S., Archie E., Leroy, Perlina B. and Dasie A. Mrs. Shuppert is a daughter of John and Elizabeth Weatherington, natives of Connecticut. Her father was a very early settler in Franklin county, O.

*Adam Smick* was born in Stark county, O., April 17, 1828. His parents, Solomon and Mary A. Smick, were natives of Pennsylvania; he was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools of the country. He came to this county in the spring of 1854, and settled in Liberty tp., where he still resides. He was married in 1853 to Elizabeth A. Blake, by whom he has had 5 children; of these, 3 are living, viz.: Mary J. (wife of Joseph Ollery), Sarah E. wife of Geo. Bennett, and Elizabeth E. In 1856 Mr. S. married Miss Rebecca Steel, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Steel.

*Jeremiah Steel* was born in Holmes county, O., Sept. 6, 1834. His parents, Elias and Elizabeth Steel, were natives of Pennsylvania; he was reared on a farm and educated in the Ohio Berlin

Academy; came to this county in 1864, and followed farming until the year 1872, when he purchased an interest in his father's saw-mill; he continued in that business till 1877, when his father died, and by the division of the property the mill fell into his possession; he still keeps it in operation. In 1867 he married Miss Catharine A. Gearhart, daughter of Henry and Kasia Gearhart, and they have had 7 children, of whom 4 are now living, viz.: Franklin E., Henry E., Joseph and Elmira. Mr. S. owns a farm of 380 acres.

*J. A. Varier, M. D.*, physician and surgeon, North Liberty; born in this county Nov. 2, 1852; his parents were Joseph and Mary (Dongherty) Varier, the former a native of Ohio, and the latter of Pennsylvania; he lived on a farm till he was 12 years of age, when his father sold his farm and moved to Marshall county; he attended the Salem College from 1864 to 1868; he taught school until 1871, then commenced reading medicine under the instructions of Dr. T. T. Linn, at Bourbon, a very eminent surgeon in that place; he studied with him for about five years, and in the meantime attended the Indiana Medical College at Indianapolis; in 1876 he attended the Cincinnati regular Medical College, at which he graduated; he then returned home and commenced practicing in North Liberty. Mr. V. has distinguished himself in his profession in that town and vicinity: has been a member of the St. Joseph County Medical Society since 1876. He was married Oct. 15, 1878, to Miss Ella Vasburgh, daughter of Nelson and Eliza Vasburgh. Mr. V. is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

*George Waldsmith* was born in this county June 11, 1838; his parents, Peter and Susan Waldsmith, were natives of Ohio; he was reared on a farm in the wilds of St. Joseph county, and while others had access to common schools, he was deprived of them, having to stay at home and work for his mother, while his father was away laboring for their support. He was married Sept. 28, 1869, to Miss Maggie Lower, and their 2 children are Rosanna and Grant. Mrs. Waldsmith is a daughter of Peter and Rosanna Lower, natives of Ohio. She was educated in the Academy at Millersburg, O., and followed school-teaching for about 16 years. Mr. W.'s father was a settler in this county at the early period of 1832.

*Geo. W. Williams* was born Nov. 1, 1837, in the State of Illinois; his parents were James and Mary Williams, the former a native of Indiana, and the latter of Virginia. In early childhood he was taken by his parents to La Porte county, where he grew to manhood. Aug. 15, 1862, he enlisted in the army in 21st Ind. Battery, and participated in the battles of Chickamanga, Hoover's Gap and other skirmishes. He served till the close of the war, was honorably discharged, and returned home and resumed farming. Feb. 19, 1869, he was married to Ann E. Auten, daughter of William and Sarah Auten, and their 2 children are Maretta M. and Charlie O. Mr. W. owns a farm of 80 acres on sec. 36.

*Samuel Williams*, a prominent farmer in Liberty tp., was born in Cumberland county, Me., Dec. 18, 1802; his parents were George

and Mable (Lichfield) Williams, the former a native of Maine and the latter of Massachusetts. Mr. W. came West with his family in 1838, by lake from Buffalo to Detroit, and arrived in this county Nov. 3, at which time he had \$300 in money. He bought 80 acres of land, and commenced improving it, and by perseverance and economy accumulated enough to enable him to live in retirement the rest of his days. He was married in 1835 to Eliza F. Thomas and they have 9 children, of whom 6 are living, viz.: Henry S., Frances M., wife of Joseph Cole, Harriet R., wife of A. Cunningham, Charles H., Paris A. and Eugene. Mr. W's father was a Captain in the war of 1812, and his grandfather Lichfield fought through the Revolutionary war. He is a member of the M. E. Church.

*Jonathan Witwer* was born Feb. 10, 1822, in Lancaster county, Penn. His parents, Abraham and Elizabeth Witwer, were also natives of Pennsylvania. He spent his early days on a farm, and his educational advantages were limited to the common schools. In 1843 he moved to Summit county, Ohio, and in 1861 to this county; in 1864 he moved to Elkhart county, and in 1868 returned to this county, where he still resides, following farming. He was married May 21, 1844, to Christina Henney, daughter of David and Margaret Henney, and of their 15 children 9 are living; viz.: Anna, now Mrs. Silas Fisber; Elizabeth, now Mrs. Samuel Thornton; Simon S., Margaret, now Mrs. Henry Ross; Joseph, John B., Lucy F., Charles L. and Maty. Mr. Witwer owns a fine farm of 100 acres in sec. 9, worth \$5,000. Mr. and Mrs. W. are members of the Christian Church.



## LINCOLN TOWNSHIP.

The territory now included in Lincoln township was formerly a part of the territory that constituted Liberty township, and owing to the great inconveniences to which the settlers in what is now Lincoln township were subjected in attending elections, they in June, 1866, presented to the Board petitions for the territory now included in the limits of Lincoln township to be detached and made an independent township, and that Walkerton should be the place of holding their elections, and that the township be given the name of Lincoln. Their petitions were granted by the Board, and the township was detached, and Wm. A. Howe was appointed Trustee.

The first election in this township was held in April, 1867, at the Walkerton Hotel, Mr. Wm. A. Haven acting as Inspector, Robert A. Wilson and J. O. Akin as Judges, and Paul Straub, Clerk. At this election 166 votes were cast. The following persons were elected to office, viz.: Neely Frame, Justice of the Peace; A. O. Hamilton, Trustee; and Zebedee James and Samuel Hudelmyer, Constables. At the next election Wm. J. Wolfe and John Calman were elected Justices of the Peace, and H. J. Kinney, Trustee, which office he held till 1876. The present Justices are S. J. Nichols and Amos H. Stevison; the Trustee is Silas George.

A considerable portion of the land of Lincoln township is marshy and wet, but is fast being reclaimed by draining. The leading industry of this township is farming in connection with stock-raising.

The first settlement in this township was made in the fall of 1835 by Christian Fulmer and family. The next spring Thomas H. Wiley came in, it then forming a part of Liberty township; it was slow in being settled, but about the year 1850 settlers came in more rapidly and it was not long till it was mostly occupied and owned by the residents.

## WALKERTON.

The only town in Lincoln township is Walkerton. This town was laid out in March, 1857, by one Mr. Allen. "West Troy," as it was formerly called, and which now forms a part of the town of Walkerton, was a village of only a few houses situated at the junction of the L. P. & C. with the B. & O. railroad. This village was laid out in 1855. The postoffice was designated as West York, and was situated one-half mile south of Walkerton. It was kept by Mr. C. W. N. Stephens, who had established it in 1851, and was the first appointee. He also had a grocery store, and still holds the position of Postmaster. The mail at that time was being conveyed



by the hack from La Porte to Plymouth, there being no railroads here. In 1854 Mr. Stephens built the first house in Walkerton, and also erected a store-building, and soon after opened a store, which was the first in the place. The site of Walkerton was then covered with a dense thicket. No roads had yet been laid out. The settlers there who had stores would go out before breakfast, as they had leisure no other time of day, and chop and slash down the underbrush to make roads through which teams might pass.

In 1856 the wishes of the people were much gratified at the construction of the L., P. & C. railroad. Then the business prospects of Walkerton began to brighten. It continued to grow, and in 1873 the Baltimore & Ohio railroad was built, crossing the L., P. & C. railroad at West Troy, which now forms the western part of Walkerton. In 1876 Walkerton was incorporated. The petitions were presented in 1874, but by some mistake were not received until 1876.

The present business of Walkerton consists of four dry-goods establishments, one clothing store, two hardware and implement stores, three drug stores, one large furniture store, two hotels, one a very fine house, of which Mr. J. M. B. Giberson is proprietor, also groceries and restaurants, and two railroad depots, one grain depot, two millinery stores, two printing-offices; at one the *St. Joseph County Republican* is published, and edited by J. F. & W. C. Endly, and at the other the *Walkerton Visitor* is published and edited by Henry S. Mintle. There are also two meat shops, two saloons, one town hall, owned by Jacob Bender, one school-house and three churches. In all there are about 50 business men engaged here.

The first church in the township was the Methodist Episcopal at Walkerton, and was erected in 1859, during the pastorate of Rev. J. E. Newhouse and the administration of Presiding Elder James Johnson. The following named persons were the establishers of this church: H. Haskins, exhorter and leader; Emery Otwell, exhorter and steward; J. A. Lambert, exhorter and leader, and several others whose names could not be obtained. This society was long known as the West York Mission Church, but some years since was changed to the name of Walkerton Church. Rev. R. H. Sanders is the present pastor.

In 1870 the Baptist church was erected, and in 1876 the Roman Catholics put up a church building.

The first school building in Lincoln tp. was erected in 1858 in Walkerton, and in 1876 it was removed to the present situation. The same year an additional apartment was added for the purpose of holding a graded school. They now have three grades of schools, a high school, of which Prof. J. A. Jones is principal; the intermediate, taught by Mrs. O. M. Poffenberger; and the primary, by Miss A. Millard.

Walkerton is a little town of much business, and being situated at the junction of two very prominent railroads, commands a



wonderful amount of trade, especially grain. During the season of 1880 about 200,000 bushels of wheat were purchased at this point. Thus the outlook for the prosperity of Walkerton is good, and the place will, perhaps, in time become a populous town.

#### PERSONAL HISTORY.

The personal history of any community is the most important and valuable portion. We realize this, and in detailing the history of Lincoln township, speak very generally of those brave and sturdy pioneers who have converted the forests into fruitful fields, and who are to-day producing from the earth vast wealth.

*Abraham Barkley*, dealer in drugs, groceries, etc., Walkerton, Ind. The subject of this sketch is a native of Ohio, and was born April 22, 1850. His parents, Samuel and Elizabeth Barkley, were also natives of Ohio. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common country schools. In 1872 he came to Walkerton and opened a drug store. In 1870 he studied dentistry under the instructions of Dr. Cooper, of Plymouth, and afterward under Dr. Jackson, of Walkerton. Mr. B. was married Oct. 27, 1873, to Frances A. Akes, by whom he has had 3 children.

*Allen Beall* was born in Franklin county, Ohio, June 6, 1820. His parents, Joseph and Catharine (Blout) Beall, were natives of old Virginia's shore. He was reared on a farm; his educational advantages were limited to the common schools of the country, which were held in rude log cabins, where sometimes the ground served as the floor, and slab-seats, greased paper window lights, a large fire-place, almost the full width of the cabin, and a stick chimney were employed. Columbus at that time was but a small town of about 600 inhabitants. In 1832 his parents moved with him to Noble county, Ind., where he spent years of toil on the frontier. In 1866 they moved to Missouri, where they lived about two years, following milling. He then came to this county, where he has since resided, engaged in farming. He was married Feb. 2, 1844, to Angelina Lee, daughter of Martin and ——— (Kelly) Lee. She was a cousin of Gen. Robert E. Lee, so eminent in the Southern army in the last war. Five children were born to them, of whom 4 are living, viz.: Rayon, B. H., next mentioned, D. W. and Helen L., now wife of P. Byers. Mr. Beall's grandfathers, Beall and Blout, were both soldiers in the Revolutionary war. Mr. B. owns a farm of 240 acres.

*B. H. Beall*, attorney at law and notary public, Walkerton, Ind., was born in Noble county, Ind., Aug. 16, 1848, son of the above mentioned. He was reared on a farm, and educated in the Wolf Lake Seminary and Bloomington University, at Fillmore, Missonri. He graduated at the last named place and received the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Soon after his graduation he commenced preaching in the Northwest Indiana Conference. In 1874 he was transferred to the Nebraska Conference. He continued traveling and

preaching in different States till 1876, when he commenced reading law, and was admitted to the Bar the same year. He has since been engaged in that business, preaching occasionally. Mr. Beall was married Dec. 23, 1867, to Miss Lois M. Gorsline, daughter of M. R. and Julia A. Gorsline, and their 4 children are: Ellen M., Thos. E., Jesse and Ray. Mr. B's father is still living, at the ripe age of 67. As far back as we can trace Mr. B's ancestors we find that they took a very active part in military affairs; some of them were in the Revolution and others were on the frontier to protect the white settlers.

*William Bellinger*, farmer, sec. 17; P. O., Walkerton, Ind.; was born in Oneida county, N. Y., June 18, 1827; his parents, David and Olive (Martin) Bellinger, were natives of Massachusetts. In 1834 he went to Allen county, Ohio, and in 1863 came to St. Joseph county. Mr. B's father and mother both died while he was young, and he was bound out to a stranger. At the age of 21 his assumed father gave him \$100 in money and a fine suit of clothes. Thus he started in life, and by his good judgment and continued industry he has become possessor of a farm of 120 acres, valued at \$75 per acre. Jan. 6, 1850, he was married to Miss Catharine Riggle, by whom he has had 8 children; of these, 7 are living, viz.: Geo. D., Sarah E. (now Mrs. Joseph Gahart), Olive A., Wm. M., Samuel M., John J. and Mary A.

*Jacob Bender* was born in Pennsylvania Jan. 22, 1804. His parents were John and Barbara (Cook) Bender. He was reared on a farm till he was 16 years of age; then he worked at the undertaker's business till about 1825; then for the next 20 years he followed milling. He came to Starke county in 1844, and in 1846 to North Liberty, this county; in 1848 went back to Starke county, and in 1855 returned to this county. He followed farming about 20 years. In 1863 he moved to Plymouth, and in 1864 came to Walkerton, where he has since resided. Mr. Bender was married Feb. 27, 1826, to Jane Dobbs, daughter of James and Harriet (Miller) Dobbs, and they have had 10 children, 5 of whom are living, viz.: John S., a lawyer in Plymouth, who also traveled extensively in Europe, and wrote after his return to America a book entitled, "A Hoosier's Experience in Western Europe;" he is also author of a book on the money question; Robert H., Auditor of Starke county, who was for several years civil engineer of that county. Susanna J., now Mrs. Edward Tibbetts, in Marion, Ind; Adalaide, now Mrs. Dr. L. D. Glazebrook, of San Pierre; and John G., a dry-goods merchant in Fort Wayne. Mr. Bender owns a fine brick store building, the upper story of which is the noted Bender's Hall; it also contains an Odd Fellows Hall. Mr. and Mrs. B. are members of the M. E. Church.

*Jas. Blain* was born in Pennsylvania Dec. 5, 1826, son of George and Eliza Blain; the former was a native of Ireland, and the latter of Pennsylvania. In 1863 he came to this county, where he has since resided, following farming. He was married June 8, 1854,

to Elizabeth Emans, and of their 12 children 8 are living, viz.: Anna E., Emma M., Clara, Ella J., Hannah M., George W., Jas. H. and Andrew S. Mr. B. owns 160 acres of land, 8 of which lies in La Porte county.

*John Cotton* was born on the island of Prince Edwards, Dec. 14, 1822; his parents, Joseph and Elizabeth Cotton, were natives of Cornwall, England. They emigrated to America in 1822 and located in Upper Canada. Our subject lived in his native place till 1839, when he went to Trumbull county, Ohio; there he worked at the wagon and carriage-making trade for some years, then went to Akron; worked there at the same trade for two years; he then went to Ravenna and worked one year. In July, 1843, he came to Elkhart, and in 1849 went to South Bend. While at that place he worked at his trade, or till 1863, when he commenced working in a sash and blind factory. He followed that for about 12 years. In 1868 he moved out into this tp., where he still resides, engaged in farming. He was married in 1845 to Miss Rebecca Dever, by whom he had 6 children; of these, one is living: J. Willis. Mrs. C. died Sept. 30, 1876, and Mr. C. was again married Dec. 20, 1877, to Sarah A. Quigley, *nee* Lambert, daughter of John A. and Mary Lambert, who were natives of Virginia. Mrs. C. was the wife of John B. Quigley, who was an exhorter in the M. E. Church. Mr. Q. was a soldier in the late war, and while he was out he took sick and soon after died, at Harrodsburg, Ky. Mr. and Mrs. Quigley had three children, 2 of whom are living: Margaret M. and John J. H.

*John Cripe* was born in Fort Wayne, Oct. 11, 1826, a son of Rinehart and Elizabeth Cripe. His father was a native of Pennsylvania and his mother of Ohio. In early childhood he was taken by his parents to Goshen, and in 1835 to South Bend. In the spring of 1836 they moved out into Lincoln tp., where his father purchased a large tract of land, of about 1,000 acres. In the spring of 1847 they started for Oregon, wintered at St. Joseph, Missouri, and in the spring of 1848 they resumed traveling and arrived at their destination Sept. 5. In 1850 they went to California, and located about 60 miles from Sacramento. In 1852 our subject, with his family, returned to their former home in St. Joseph county, where he invested in lands. His father bought a steam saw-mill; in this business he utterly failed. He then disposed of the remnant of his property, and in the fall of 1862 he and family started for California. They spent the winter in Iowa, and in the spring John and his family started for California, and met his father and family at Council Bluffs, Iowa, where a large train was starting across the plains. They arrived in California Aug. 5. They returned home in 1865, on the Union Pacific railroad. Sept. 16, 1870, his mother died, and the 30th day of the following October his father died, at the ripe age of 80 years. Our subject was married May 20, 1847, to Ann E. Petrie, daughter of Wm. and Mary Petrie, natives of Canada, and they had 11 children, of whom 6 are living; viz.: William, Mary E., now wife of Jacob Rinehart; Joseph A., John C.

W., Anna E., now wife of Marion Murray, and Ada J. July 23, 1880, the happiness of Mr. Cripe was marred by the death of his wife. In the death of this aimable woman a loss was suffered in that family that can never, never be repaired. She did all in her power to harmonize the feelings of this little family and to promote their earthly happiness. She was always cheerful and sociable, and by thus doing she won the love and esteem of all who knew her. Even the stranger, however depraved he appeared to be, was cared for and treated with the greatest hospitality. In this sad affair a family circle is broken, and the neighborhood has lost a friend whose equal is seldom found. She was a member of the German Baptist Church for 18 years, and during that time led a life of perfect consistency.

*Tobias Cripe*, brother of the preceding, was born in this county in 1837; lived on a farm in St. Joseph county till 1848, when he and his parents went to Oregon Territory. They lived 'mid the wilds of that uncivilized Territory till 1850, when they went to California, and in 1852 they returned to St. Joseph county. He followed farming here till the spring of 1863, when he went back to California; he lived there till 1870, when he returned to this county, where he has since resided, following farming and stock-raising. His father was one of the earliest settlers in St. Joseph county; he broke the land of the first lot in South Bend. In 1862 Mr. Tobias Cripe was married to Ann R. Hullinger, by whom he has had 4 children, viz.: Sarah F., David S., Oliver and Edward. Mr. Cripe owns a farm of 115 acres, valued at \$70 per acre.

*William Cripe* was born in 1849 in St. Joseph county; his parents were John and Eliza Cripe, both natives of Indiana; he was reared on a farm and has since followed that occupation. He was married in 1868 to Miss Jane Jones, and to them have been born one child, Ralph W.

*Benjamin Eager* was born Oct. 25, 1816, in Pennsylvania; his parents, John and Hester Eager, were also natives of Pennsylvania. In 1828 he and his parents went to Holmes county, Ohio, and in 1835 to Seneca county. He was married Aug. 22, 1844, to Elizabeth Bolin, daughter of James and Mary Bolin. This union was blest with 7 children, 5 of whom are living, viz.: James M., John M., Benjamin F., Lee and Lottie, wife of Eleazer Smith. Mr. E. owns a farm of 156 acres.

*Dr. James F. Endly*, editor and publisher of the *St. Joseph Republican*, Walkerton, Ind., was born in Wayne county, Ohio, Aug. 22, 1839; his parents were Samuel and Rosanna Endly; when in early childhood, he was taken by his parents to La Grange, where he was reared and educated in the common school. He began the study of medicine when 18 years of age, and in one year quit it for a time; then resumed it and studied two years, and commenced practicing in De Kalb county, Ind. In 1866 he went to Brimfield, Noble county, and in 1868 he attended the Bennett Medical College at Chicago. At the close of the term he returned



A. Coguillard



to Brimfield and resumed practice. In 1875 he came to Walkerton and opened a drug store, also continuing practice till July, 1879, when he and Dr. Richmond established a paper called *The Van Guard*; after publishing this paper about three months, Dr. E. and his son Willie A. purchased the printing office and started the *St. Joseph County Republican*. Dr. E. was married June 22, 1851, to Miss Cora A. Coomer, a native of La Grange county, and they have one child, Willie A. Dr. E. still owns a drug store in Walkerton, besides other property.

*Neely Frame* was among the earliest settlers in St. Joseph county. He was born in Ohio Oct. 29, 1809; his parents were Jesse and Nancy Frame. In 1821 he came with his parents to Wayne county, Ind., where he spent the first half of his life; and in 1830 he came to this county, the southern part of which was then still an Indian territory. The county was organized the fall prior to his coming here. He saw the first boat that ever passed up the St. Joseph river; it was in the spring of 1831. Mr. Frame moved into Lincoln tp., where he was elected the first Justice of the Peace. He was married in June, 1845, to Catharine Leach, daughter of Daniel and Nancy Leach, natives of Pennsylvania; of their 11 children 10 are living, viz.: Nancy, now Mrs. Wm. Long; Almira, now Mrs. Andrew; Eliza A., now Mrs. Lewis VanPelt; Daniel W., Horace G., Anson B., Schuyler C. and John N. He owns 140 acres in sec. 13.

*Jacob C. Fulmer* was born in New York Dec. 1, 1827. His parents, Jacob and Polly Fulmer, were natives of New York. He was reared on a farm and educated in a common country school. He came to this county in October, 1853. In 1857 he was married to Miss Rosanna Hayes, by whom he has had 2 children, viz.: Schuyler C. and Maria E., both school teachers. Mr. F.'s great-grandfather, Christian Fulmer, served seven years in the Revolutionary war; first entered as a drummer boy.

*Oliver R. Fulmer* is the 4th child in a family of 6 children, the others being Mary J., Evart, Alfred, William and Henry, all of whom are now deceased. Oliver was born in Cuyahoga county, N. Y., son of Christian Fulmer. He came with his parents to this county in 1835, and settled in Lincoln tp., being the first family that had settled here. Here on the frontier the subject of this sketch was reared to manhood. He was married July 16, 1854, to Elizabeth Dewitt, by whom he had 2 children, both dead. Mr. Fulmer again married Dec. 6, 1865, to Catharine Miller, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Miller, natives of Ohio. They have had 3 children; Martha A., Dora M. and Mamie Pearl. Mr. F. followed farming till the spring of 1860, when he went to California, via the overland route. He returned in 1862 via Panama. In December, 1863, he enlisted in the army in Co. H, 12th Cavalry. He participated in the battles of Stone River, Huntsville, Alabama, and siege of Mobile, where he was taken sick, which resulted in his being

confined for six months in the Columbus hospital; after he recovered he returned home and resumed farming, which he followed till he moved to Walkerton. Mr. Fulmer is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

Mr. Fulmer's father, Christian Fulmer, was born Oct. 4, 1799, and when the war of 1812 opened he, nothing but a boy of 13 summers, procured a drum and enlisted for the position of drummer. He passed through that war, and when the Mexican war broke out he went as Drum Major there, and in the late war he was Drum Major. Thus he had a military life in three wars. He died Dec. 6, 1878, at the ripe age of nearly 80 years. He had been a member of the Baptist Church for a half a century, and fully that long a member of the Masonic fraternity.

*J. M. B. Giberson*, proprietor of the Florence House, Walkerton, Ind., was born in Wayne county, N. Y., Dec. 25, 1833; his parents were Jacob M. and Anna Giberson; he was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools; when young he learned the harness-maker's trade, at which he worked in after years. In 1849 he went to Lafayette, Ohio, and in 1850 to Liverpool, O., where he staid till 1852, when he went to Randolph, Stark county, O. In 1853 he came to Walkerton, where he resided till 1855, when he returned to his native place and remained till Aug. 22, 1862, when he enlisted in the army. He served one year in Co. D, 162d Reg. N. Y. Inf. While in the military service he participated in the following engagements: Fort Patterson, Algiers and the skirmish from Brazier City to Fort Patterson, which lasted seven days. He was discharged Aug. 3, 1863, at New Orleans. He then returned to Walkerton and opened the Walkerton Hotel, which house he kept till 1875, when he built the Florence House. Mr. G. was married May 2, 1853, to Miss Lizzie Smallman, daughter of Francis and Elizabeth Smallman, and they have one child, Florence, now wife of George H. Leslie. To them have been born 2 children, viz.: Ada Lizzie and Francis Morris.

*W. C. Hale*, of the firm of Reece & Hale, meat merchants, was born June 26, 1845. He is a son of William and Clarinda Hale, both natives of Virginia. His father died when he was but two years old. His mother is still living, at the age of 60 years.

*Wm. W. Hamilton*, of the firm of Hamilton & Thompson, proprietors of the Walkerton Livery Stable, was born in Noble county, Ind., March 31, 1840; his parents, William and Nancy Hamilton, were also natives of Ohio; he was reared on a farm, and educated in the common schools. In July, 1867, he came to Walkerton and opened a grocery store. He continued in this business a few years only. He followed buggy and carriage painting about five years. In September, 1861, he enlisted in the military service in Co. C, 30th Regt. Ind. Vol., and participated in the battle of Pittsburg Landing; was wounded and was afterward discharged, having served nearly one year. He was married July 12, 1871, to Miss Jennie Whitticar, daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah Whitticar.



*John W. Kirtsinger*, proprietor of the Empire House, was born April 4, 1848, in the "Boone State." His parents were Harrison and Sarah Kirtsinger. He lived in Kentucky till 1859, when he went to Johnson county, Ind. During the years 1862-'63 he was in the employ of the Government, driving a stage-coach from Louisville to Bardstown in Kentucky; he returned to Johnson county in the early part of 1864, and in 1865 went to Marshall county, in 1870 to La Porte, the same year he came to Walkerton, where he still resides. He was married Jan. 8, 1870, to Eliza Martin, by whom he had 4 children; of these one is living, L. Ettie.

*C. B. Libbey*, jeweler and dealer in all kinds of American watches, clocks, jewelry, silver-plated ware, musical instruments and sewing machines, Walkerton, Ind.; is a native of Ohio, where he was born Feb. 14, 1841, and is a son of William and Lucinda Libbey, the former a native of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Ohio. He lived on a farm until 1858, when he went to La Grange; in 1859 he went to La Porte city; Nov. 3, 1861, he enlisted in the army, in Co. B, 48th Regt. Ind. Inf., and participated in the following battles: Iuka, Corinth, siege of Vicksburg, Raymond, Fort Gibson, Chattanooga, Savannah, Raleigh, and with Sherman on his march to the sea. When he was discharged he returned to Rochester and worked at watch-making till 1871, when he came to Walkerton and opened a jewelry store in this place. He carries a stock of goods amounting to \$1,500, his annual sales exceeding his stock. Mr. L. was married Sept. 2, 1859, to Miss Marinda A. Richardson, by whom he had one child, Roscoe C.

*Rev. H. N. Macomber* was born in Maine June 22, 1814. His parents were Elijah and Elizabeth Macomber. He was reared on a farm and educated in Percus' Academy at Middleborough, Mass.; was for ten years an itinerant minister of the M. E. Church of Maine. He still preaches. In 1845 he learned dentistry in Lynn, Mass., and first practiced at Saco, Me. In 1853 he went to Lynn, Mass., in 1867 to Elkhart county, Ind., in 1879 he came to Walkerton, where he still resides, engaged in the practice of his profession. Mr. Macomber was married in 1836 to Miss Mary Wingate, by whom he has had 4 children; of these one is living, Horatio E. Mrs. M. departed this life Jan. 2, 1876, and Mr. M. again married Feb. 8, 1880, to Mrs. Elizabeth Henderson (*nee* Lambert). Mrs. Macomber has taught school in this county for 20 years. Mr. Macomber's grandfather on his father's side was a commissioned officer in the Revolutionary war; also some of his earlier ancestors were officers in that war.

*John J. Miller*, proprietor of the stage line from Walkerton to South Bend, was born in Noble county July 29, 1840, and is a son of John and Rachel (Bailey) Miller; he was a farmer boy, and his educational advantages were limited to the common schools of the country. His father was one of the early pioneers of St. Joseph

county. In 1866 our subject left Noble county and came to Walkerton, and engaged in the mercantile business, in which he continued until 1871. He was also Constable and Deputy Sheriff for four years. He also traveled for some time for Higgins & Belden Atlas Company; June 7, 1878, he made his first trip with the stage from Walkerton to South Bend, and has since been proprietor of that line. He makes three trips per week, viz.: Tuesdays, Thursdays and Saturdays, leaving Walkerton each day at six A. M., arriving at South Bend at 11 A. M., returning the same day, arriving at Walkerton at 6 P. M. Aug. 18, 1864, Mr. Miller was married to Miss Rhoda A. Wolfe, by whom he has had 3 children: 2 of these are living, viz.: Jay Fred and Maggie Viola.

*Henry S. Mintle*, editor and publisher of the Walkerton *Visitor*, was born Oct. 22, 1827, in Warren county, Ohio; his parents were Philip and Mary Mintle, both natives of New York. He lived on a farm till he was 16 years old, then went to Port William, Clinton county, Ohio; there he clerked in a dry-goods store till 1847, then returned home and followed farming till December, 1848, then he entered the dry-goods store of Jesse Rider at West Point; he clerked in this establishment till 1861, when he enlisted in the war in Co. G, 40th Regt. Ind. Inf., but soon afterward was appointed 1st Sergeant. He served in this capacity till 1863, when he was discharged on account of his disability. He then returned home and had charge of the grocery establishment of Wileburg & Co., North Judson, for three years. Then he clerked in the store of Keller & Co., 1873-'4. In May, 1875, he came to Walkerton, where he established the Greenback paper, the Walkerton *Visitor*. He issued the first number May 5, 1875; 900 copies of this paper are in circulation. Mr. Mintle was married Dec. 12, 1848, to Harriet J. Nash, by whom he has had 5 children; of these, 2 are living; viz.: Flora B., now Mrs. Fiddler, in Logan county, Ohio, and Ida A.

*Isaiah Poffenberger* physician and surgeon, Walkerton, Ind., was born in Ohio, Oct. 31, 1836; was educated at the Seven-Mile Academy and Quaker Institute in Ohio; after finishing his scientific course he followed school-teaching for ten years; in 1856 he commenced reading medicine, and from 1859 to 1862 he attended the Cincinnati Medical College, at which he graduated with the honors of his class. He commenced practicing medicine in Seven-Mile, Ohio, and after a short time he came to South Bend. In 1863 he enlisted in the army, was an assistant of Prof. Blackman, General Surgeon of the U. S. army, and was with him at the battle of Chickamauga, Shiloh and Stone River. In March, 1865, he was commissioned by Gov. O. P. Morton as Surgeon, and he served in this capacity till the close of the war. He was married Oct. 16, 1861, to Mattie J. Edwards, by whom he had 2 children, viz.: Jennie V. and Addie R. Mrs. P. died Nov. 23, 1869, and Mr. P. again married April 5, 1871, to Cynthia McMunn.

*J. N. Reece* was born Dec. 25, 1855. His parents, David W. and Nancy M. Reece, are old residents of the county. He was reared on a farm and educated at Asbury University; has taught school about six years. He was principal of the North Liberty schools for two years; he is at present a meat merchant in Walkerton. He was married May 11, 1879, to Miss Luella Cole, daughter of D. C. and Harriet (Waggoner) Cole, natives of Ohio. They have had one child; namely, Charles Howard. Mr. R's grandfather, Jeremiah Wilson, was a Colonel in the war of 1812.

*Benjamin F. Rinehart* is a son of Jacob and Elizabeth Rinehart, and the youngest of a family of 11 children. He was born in Coshocton county, Ohio, Dec. 13, 1838. His parents were natives of Pennsylvania. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. Mr. Rinehart followed school-teaching eight years, in connection with farming. April 19, 1861, he enlisted in the army in Co. A, 21st Reg. Ohio Vol. Militia, under Capt. James Wilson. He served in that division about four months. He then returned home and resumed his occupation, farming and school-teaching. In 1863 he moved to Holmes county, O., and in 1864 he came to St. Joseph county, where he still resides, engaged in the independent business of farming. He has 220 acres. Mr. Rinehart was joined in marriage to Catharine Steele, Nov. 27, 1862, and they have had 8 children, of whom 6 are living, viz.: Robert E., Louisa E., Emma L., Seward C., Willard F. and Lawrence F.

*John Rudduck* was born Feb. 16, 1809, in Guilford county, N. C. Tradition is that his great-grandfather came from Ireland about one century prior to the Revolution, and settled in North Carolina. He married and had a son, William, who married and had 2 children, Jane and John. John, the father of the subject of this notice, was left an orphan at a very early age, and was bound out to learn the hatter's trade; after attaining his maturity, he married Ursula Crews; and some years afterward emigrated to Tennessee, where he stopped on the Clinch river, and thence moved to Kentucky, and thence to Clinton county, Ohio. Their children are William, David, John, Sarah, Nancy, Isaac, Jonathan A. and Moses M. Mr. R.'s father died in Warren county, Ind., and his mother in St. Joseph. Mr. Rudduck served an apprenticeship with his father at the hatter's trade till he was 21 years of age, and then shouldered his rifle and knapsack and started for Michigan, where he arrived in May, 1832; while there Mr. Rudduck was a member of the military company under Gen. Butler; and while in that State he attended an Indian "war dance," at Edwardsburg, Cass county. He remarks that it was the most hideous sight and warlike he ever witnessed. In 1832 he came to St. Joseph county, at which time the country was a perfect wilderness. He followed the Indian trail from Logansport to the St. Joseph river, where Mr. Coquillard kept a trading-post with the Indians. He visited the few families that had settled in the great forest. At first he engaged in breaking

prairie and made himself generally useful among the settlers. Aug. 1, 1833, he was married to Elizabeth, daughter of Jacob and Susanna Rupel, who were old settlers in this county. To them were born 8 children, 3 living, viz.: Nancy E., wife of Jackson Gard; Maria A., wife of Michael Loy, and Martha C., wife of Geo. W. Garwood. Mrs. R. died Jan. 30, 1874, and Mr. R. again married in October, 1878, Mrs. Sophia Cook, formerly the wife of Rev. Elias Cook, deceased. Mr. R. is a member of the M. E. Church.

*Philo E. Ruggles* was born Oct. 19, 1815, in New York, son of Jehiah and Sybil Ruggles, natives of Connecticut. In 1829 he went to Ohio, and in 1838 came to St. Joseph county. In 1843 he went to Marshall county, and in 1848 he returned to this county. He was married in 1848 to Anna E. Leach, by whom he has had 4 children; of these, 2 are living, viz.: Wm. H. H. and Jane, now Mrs. Arnold.

*A. B. Rupel*, harness-maker, etc., Walkerton, Ind., was born in this county July 7, 1859, son of Jacob and Sarah Rupel, natives of Ohio. He was reared on a farm, and educated in the Walkerton schools. He was married April 12, 1880, to Anna Zahrt, daughter of Wm. Zahrt, who was a native of La Porte county. Mr. Rupel opened his harness shop in Walkerton in 1878, and has since continued in the business.

*Jacob Rupel* was born in Preble county, Ohio, Nov. 28, 1806; his parents were Martin and Nancy Rupel, the former a native of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Delaware. At the age of 12 he went to Darke county, where he lived till 1835, when he came to this county, which was at that time a wilderness, with but a few settlers who had just ventured in. He was one of the organizers of Liberty tp., and assisted in building its first churches and school-houses. The wild deer roamed in great herds through the forests and over the swamps and marshes of the Kankakee. Mr. Rupel, in company with the noble red man, went on many a hunting expedition over this territory, and by continued practice with the Indian boys became expert as a marksman, and was generally known there as the renowned "deer-hunter." Sometimes he would go out and kill two or three before breakfast, so very numerous were they. Nov. 20, 1827, Mr. R. was married to Miss Leah Miller, daughter of Christopher and Susanna Miller, who were natives of Pennsylvania. To this union were born 7 children, of whom 6 are living, viz.: Sarah, now Mrs. Benj. Ross; Nancy, now Mrs. Mark Smith; John W.; Mary, now Mrs. Lewis Paul; Susanna, now Mrs. C. W. N. Stephens; Lydia, now Mrs. Nathaniel Canada. Mrs. Rupel died Sept. 10, 1852, and Mr. Rupel again married Mar. 17, 1854, Sarah Henry, by whom he had one child, Arvard B. Mrs. Rupel died Aug. 17, 1872, and Mr. R. again married Jan. 1, 1873, Caroline Gill, who died June 13, 1880.

*Rev. R. H. Sanders* was born in Greensburg, Pa., Oct. 12, 1833, son of James S. and Mary A. Sanders. In early life he with

his parents moved to Richland county, Ohio, and in 1846 came to Lake county, Ind., and located near Crown Point. Mr. Sanders was educated in a common school, and followed teaching for seven years, studying during spare time, and thus attained a fair education in the languages and theology, all without the instructions of any person. Thus Mr. Sanders well understands the process of self-acquired education. He was licensed to preach in 1861, and he immediately entered on his mission. He united with the Northwest Indiana Conference in 1863. The following are the circuits which he has traveled: San Pierre, 1863; Winamac and Star City, 1864-'5; Hebron, Porter county, 1866-'7; Valparaiso, 1868-'9; Argus, Marshall county, 1870; Westville, 1871; Door Village, 1872-'4; at North Liberty, 1875-'7; at Lowell, Lake county, 1878, and Walkerton, 1879. Mr. Sanders has been unusually successful in his ministerial labors. He has averaged 100 accessions annually to the Church since he commenced preaching. He has also built several churches, one at Union Mills, one at Winamac, one at North Liberty, and one at Maple Grove. May 15, 1852, Mr. Sanders was joined in the bond of holy matrimony to Miss Mary A. Sutton. This union was blest with one child, Mellie J., wife of John C. Gordon, a grain dealer at Argus City.

*John Schwartz*, of the firm of Schwartz & Tischer, proprietors of the Walkerton Planing Mills, was born Nov. 1, 1838, in Richmond county, O. His parents were Henry H. and Elva Schwartz. He was reared on a farm. When 18 years of age he learned the carpenter trade. Jan. 11, 1861, he married Jemima Brackney, by whom he has had 2 children, viz.: Anna E. and Lucia.

*John Smith* was born in Montgomery county, Ohio, Oct. 22, 1828. He is a son of Samuel and Catharine Smith. He was brought to this county by his parents in 1830. They first settled near Rum Village, about three miles south of South Bend. In 1835 they moved to La Porte county. In 1848 they returned to St. Joseph county and in 1852 settled in Lincoln tp., where he still resides. When they first settled in this county the Indians were as numerous as the whites at the present day. South Bend was but a small village, and was a rendezvous for the red-skins, as it was a noted trading point between them and the whites. Mr. Smith, when a boy, attended school in a log hut. Thus we see his advantages to secure an education were very limited. Mr. S. was married Sept. 30, 1853, to Miss Ellen Usher, by whom he had 4 children; 2 are living, viz.: Louisa J., now Mrs. Benj. Pratt, and Frank. Mrs. Smith died Feb. 11, 1878. Mr. Smith's grandfathers, Henry Smith and Samuel Harmison, were both soldiers in the war of 1812. They fought till the war closed, and were here also when Tecumseh fell.

*U. F. Townsend* was born in Penn Yan, N. Y., in 1820. He is a son of John F. and Celestia Townsend, natives also of New York. His grandfather was an early settler in Pennsylvania, on the Susquehanna, some time during the French and Indian war, and was

driven by the savage natives to Harrisburg. They escaped their hands by floating down the river in skiffs and on rafts. U. F. learned the shoemaker trade when he was 11 years old, and has since followed that occupation. He came to Walkerton in 1870. He was married in 1844 to Diantha Tuttle, by whom he has had 13 children. Of these, 5 are living, viz.: Charles M., Cortez O., Ella M., now Mrs. Decker, Otto F. and Julia A. Many of Mr. and Mrs. Townsend's early ancestors were soldiers in the Revolutionary war. Mrs. T.'s grandfather, Capt. Holdridge, served from its beginning to the end.

*J. B. Turner*, the renowned theatrical proprietor and performer, is a native of Utica, N. Y., and was born April 6, 1828. His parents, Patrick and Nancy (Dunn) Turner, were natives of Ireland. Mr. Turner was educated at the Hamilton (New York) University. In 1848 he traveled with a troop as an actor; in 1849-'50, with a theatrical troop in Cincinnati; in 1851, in Detroit; from 1852 to 1855 he was in New York city; from 1855 to 1860, in Chicago; 1861-'2, in Detroit; 1863 in New York city again with Bowey's Theater troop; 1864, in Chicago; 1865-'6, in Columbus, Ohio, Fort Wayne and Leavenworth. In 1867 he started with a troop of his own, and since that time has traveled over Pennsylvania, Ohio, Kentucky, Indiana, Illinois, Iowa, Kansas and Nebraska. The year 1880 he was proprietor of the Emma Leland combination troop. Mr. Turner was married in 1868 to Miss Emma Leland. He owns a pleasant residence in Walkerton, where he can retire during the hot summer days and from the exciting scenes of theatrical life.

*E. J. Vincent*, of the firm of B. H. & E. J. Vincent, was born Aug. 19, 1846, in this county; his parents are B. H. and Betsey Vincent, the former a native of England and the latter of Ohio; was reared on a farm and educated in the common country schools. The year 1868 he followed railroading, and about seven months of 1869 he clerked in C. Behrn's store at Walkerton. There he was packer in a flouring mill for a time. He then followed his trade, carpenter and joiner, till the fall of 1876, when he in connection with his father opened a furniture store at Walkerton, and were also undertakers. They carry a stock of goods, consisting of house furniture, easkets, etc., to the amount of \$3,000. Their annual sales amount to \$4,000. Mr. V. was married Aug. 23, 1869, to Rebecca Woodard, daughter of Samuel Woodard, and 3 children were born to them, of whom 2 are living, viz.: Edward R., Clyde B. and Cora E., deceased.

*Thos. H. Wiley*. Among the earliest pioneers in (now) Lincoln tp. was Thos. H. Wiley, who was born in Monroe county, Ky., Dec. 27, 1810, a son of John and Mary (Sims) Wiley. In 1815 he was taken by his parents to Ohio; in 1817 they went to Tennessee, and in 1827 returned to Darke county, Ohio. Thus he spent the days of childhood and early manhood amid the wilds of Kentucky and Tennessee, and the vast, unbroken forests of Ohio, which then

was inhabited only by the "noble" red man, and the wild animals roamed in almost countless herds through that vast wilderness. Mr. Wiley lived in Ohio till 1834, when he and his family, which consisted of his wife and 2 children, started for the "Hoosier State" on horseback. After six days of tiresome traveling they arrived in St. Joseph county, where they set stakes and spread their blankets. There were at that time but four other settlers in this (Lincoln) tp., and they were living some distance from him; all his near neighbors were Indians and wild animals. When Mr. Wiley arrived here he had but little property, and it consisted of two horses and another worthless "old plug." Thus he started in life.

Mr. Wiley's educational advantages were very limited. He attended school held in log school-houses, with greased-paper window lights, slab floor and seats, and stick chimney. What a hardship this would be to the children of the present day! In 1828 he was married to Miss Elizabeth Loring, by whom he has had 8 children; of these, 5 are living, viz.: Samuel, Augusta, Mary, now Mrs. John Dare, Geo. W. and John. Mr. Wiley's grandfathers, Wiley and Sims, were very early settlers in Kentucky. They were immediate successors of Daniel Boone, and one of them was an Indian spy. One day, in company with one Mr. Molky, a preacher, he struck an Indian trail. They followed it till it came to a large cavern in a hill, where they supposed an Indian had secreted himself. They began to explore the cavern in search of "big Injun," but had not proceeded far when by accident Mr. Molky's gun was discharged. This frightened Mr. W. almost out of his wits, and he seized Mr. M. by the arm and almost instantly emerged from the cave and sought refuge behind a large tree, thinking that it was from the Indian's rifle and expecting the next shot would be aimed at him; but was much surprised when Mr. M. recovered from the shock, to learn that it was from his gun.

*Leonard Wolf*, deceased, was born in Hocking county, Ohio, in March, 1812. His parents were George and Mary Wolf. He was reared on a farm. His father was among the first settlers in Hocking county, which was then an immense forest of very large trees, among which wild animals roamed undisturbed. Mr. Wolf came to Noble county, Ind., at a very early day. In 1834 he married Lutetia Martin, a native of Fairfield county, O., a daughter of Ellison and Jane Martin, who were natives of Pennsylvania. While they lived in Noble county Mrs. Wolf shared the severe lot of an early pioneer. She frequently was alone for the full week in the little log cabin, as Mr. Wolf was absent laboring for their support. The wild animals then were very numerous. Very frequently when Mrs. Wolf was alone and in the darkness of night, the vicious wolves, enraged by hunger, would come prowling around the pig-pen, and Mrs. Wolf would throw fire-brands at them and frighten them away. The wild Indian was also to be seen. At one time a band of 30 of these red savages camped on the farm near Mr. Wolf's, while she was alone. What moral courage was



exhibited in these trying times! What heroic spirits these early pioneers possessed! They knew not but they might at almost any time fall into the hands of the merciless savages and all be massacred, as such has been the case.

Mr. and Mrs. Wolf lived in Noble county till his death, which occurred about 1870, when Mrs. W. came to Walkerton. She has had 10 children, 6 sons and 4 daughters, viz.: Wm. J., Ellison M., Theron, T. J., a clothier in Walkerton; Jane, now Mrs. Henry Hastetter; Rhoda A., now Mrs. John J. Miller; Martha, now Mrs. Calvin Gilbert; Geo. W., Chas. S. and Maggie B., a milliner in Walkerton.





## MADISON TOWNSHIP.

Madison township is situated in the southwestern part of St. Joseph county, and is bounded on the north by Penn township, on the east by Elkhart county, on the south by Marshall county, and on the west by Union and Centre townships.

This was one of the latest settled townships of St. Joseph county, the settlement of which did not begin until about 1840; and it is probable that to-day there are fewer old settlers living in the township from whom a complete history of its early settlement ought to be obtained than in any other township in the county. And it is likewise probable that at the time of its early settlement it was the poorest township of farming land in the county; and this accounts for the fact that it was not settled simultaneously with the surrounding townships.

To-day the greater part of the land is marsh and covered with heavy timber; however, by means of ditches, and clearing off the timbered land and making use of the logs at the numerous saw-mills, great improvements and progress have been made within the last 20 years by the industrious class of citizens who are now residents. And one would naturally suppose from first glance, did he not take cognizance of the fact that he was in Northern Indiana, surrounded by the oldest settled and most beautiful tract of country in the whole State, that he was in the midst of some Western country where the process of "clearing up" had just begun, or that he had been transported back a half century when the work of settlement had just commenced by our forefathers of old. As indicative of this fact, numerous saw-mills which maintain many families are found here and there in the midst of the tall timber throughout this township and county.

Probably the earliest settlers of this township were Mr. Cline, who settled on section 19, and Mr. Bennett, who settled on section 18. About the same time, during the year 1840, came Christian Helminger; in the year 1841 came Godfried Enders; in 1842 came Mr. Palmer; Peter Kline, in 1846; Adam Kieffer, in 1847; William Border, Thomas Crakes and Jonathan Gilman, in 1848; in 1850 the following, besides many others, made this township their home: Christian Grose, John Schaffer, Philip Berger, Adam Rader, and Michael Kettring. From this time on the township settled very rapidly. In 1852 came Amos and D. B. Jewell; in 1853 came Hiram Locker, Jacob Hetzel, John Kelley and Jacob Marker. During the year 1854 a number of others settled here; the following are a few: Jacob Conrad, David Newcomer, A. J. Strope, Daniel Homes, Adam Mochel, John and Charles Kelley, Henry Flory, Harrison

Pentecost and John Hawkins. In 1855 Samuel Shearer removed to this township; in 1856 the following: Jacob Loncks, A. C. Hiner and John Shenefield; John Barkey, in 1858; George Friedman, in 1859; Jacob Birk, Jacob Futler and Henry Fox, in 1860.

A considerable portion of the southern part of the township is known as the "Yellow river country," from the fact that the Yellow river flows through it. Some of the early settlers of this region, whose names have not yet been mentioned, are the following: George Zimmer, Jacob Helminger, Nicholas Hammel, John Zigler, Joseph Zeiger, Christian Eslinger, Philip Manges, Michael Smith, Jacob, George and Philip Kline, John Meyers, Philip Berger, Michael Fagler and Mr. Sweisberger. And besides the many already mentioned, there are still a few more who came some time prior to 1851: Hugh McLoughlin, James Belford, Joseph Jewell, Amos Wilson, J. Pittman, Edward and Jonathan Buck, Philip Fries, T. Longley, Henry Allwood, Mr. Clugston and Mr. Crow.

It is said that during the early settlement of this township men came and made it their home and set out fruit trees, making some improvements; but afterward becoming sick, gave up their land, abandoned their scanty improvements and left the township; and what was the most remarkable, in the course of a few years fruit trees were found growing in the midst of the forest trees and weeds.

The first justices of the peace were Allen Mead and Mr. Bennett; the first law-suit in the township, was before 'Squire Mead, at his house on section 15; the suit was between John Zeigler and John Newberry, concerning the shooting of a deer; however, the case was settled before entering into litigation.

In 1871 a fire broke out in some parts of the township, starting from fires which men had built and then gone away and left them to do the work of destruction. These fires did immense damage to some residents of the township, especially in the eastern part, by way of burning their timber and fences.

There are two cemeteries in the township; one on section 18 near the Evangelical Church, and one on section 22, near the German Lutheran Church.

#### CHURCHES AND SCHOOLS.

Madison township is well supplied with churehes, there being five in it; a full and extended history of some of them it has been impossible to obtain.

*German Lutheran.*—This church, situated at Woodland, on section 15, was built in 1868. The first regular pastor was Rev. Conrad Schuster, of Bremen. Some of the first members of the Church were these: Adam Rader and wife, Adam Kieffer and wife, Leonard Jordan and wife, Joseph Meyer and wife, John Kelley and wife, Martin Slough and wife, John G. Kling and wife, Martin Saner and wife, George Kelley and wife, Mr. Wahl and wife, Michael Andrew and wife, and Mrs. Mary Fulmer. The present pastor is

Rev. George Rosenwinkle, of Mishawaka, who holds services every Sunday. The congregation at present is ordinarily large, and includes some of the best citizens of the township.

*Evangelical Churches.*—There are two Evangelical churches in the township, one situated on section 15, at Woodland, built by the Methodists, who held services there for a number of years, after which it was purchased by Fred Weber, Christopher Weigel and Fred Fasnacht, then members of the Evangelical Church. Since then that denomination has held services in it. Prior to the erection of the present church edifice, there was a log house on the same site, which was used for religious purposes. This building was the first church built in the township. The present pastor is Rev. F. Bolz, who is a resident of the township, and holds services there every other Sabbath. The congregation is small, numbering only about 16 members.

The other Evangelical church, situated on section 19, was built in 1868, and supplied the place of an old log house which stood just across the road on section 18. Some of the charter members of the Church were: Philip Marker and wife, Matthew Klein and wife, Peter and Philip Bollenbacher and their wives, Nicholas, Philip and Jacob Schlarb and their wives, and Peter Bechler. The congregation now numbers about 45 members. The first pastor was Philip Wagner; the second was Nicholas Barghart; the third, Charles Ritzman; and the fourth, Fredrich Bolz, who is the present incumbent.

*Evangelical Association.*—The church known by this name, is situated on section 10, and was built in 1864. A few of the first members of the Church were: Jacob Zimmer and wife, Philip Berger and wife, Michael Zimmer and wife, Michael Smith and wife, Christian Eslinger and wife, George Wise, Sr., and wife, George Frei and wife. The first pastor of the Church was Rev. George Platz; the present one is Rev. E. Treyer. The congregation is quite respectable in number, being about 55 or 60, and including many of the best citizens of Madison township.

*United Brethren.*—This church is located on section 17, and was built in 1878. The congregation is small. The Kidders and A. Hummel were among the earliest members of the Church. The first minister of the Church was Rev. Mr. Simons, who helped to put up the church building. The present pastor of the denomination is Rev. Mr. Beghtel, of Elkhart county.

#### SCHOOLS.

The present School Trustee is Amos Snyder, who was elected to that office in the fall of 1877, and was re-elected in the spring of 1880. There are 12 school buildings in the township, conveniently located, in which about seven months' school are kept annually. The educational interests of the township are well attended to by the citizens in every particular.

## WOODLAND.

There is a small collection of houses in Madison township on secs. 15, 16, 21 and 22, which is called Woodland. This little rural place was never laid out as a town, but a store was started here about 25 years ago by Martin Fink and Wm. Shenefield, who continued running a small grocery store and keeping a little whisky—which was very common in those days—for about two years. At the end of that time they abandoned the business and a store was never opened until 1877, by Mr. Maining; this was run by Dr. Bishop, a practicing physician at the place. After a short time the store went into the hands of Adam Mochel and Fred Weber, who still have the place. A short time after the first store was opened, Conrad Kelley started a saloon, but continued only about three years; the same institution was then conducted by Michael Kettring for three or four years, until about the close of the war.

In 1872 Philip Buhler started a blacksmith shop, and still continues; about the same time, or a little prior to this, Fred Weber started a wagon shop; he also still continues in the situation.

Dr. Fisher, who located there in May, 1880, is a practicing physician.

There is a good school-house in the place, built in 1874 or '75, which does honor to the citizens of the immediate neighborhood. The first and only postoffice ever established in the township, is at this place, and Fred Weber is now postmaster; however the office at first was a short distance south of Woodland.

So that at present the place consists of a small grocery store, which does a small business, a postoffice, wagon-shop, blacksmith shop, one doctor, a school-house and two churches. But just half a mile south of Woodland is a large saw-mill, which tends to add somewhat to the business interests of the township. This mill is situated on section 22, and was built in 1864 by Lang, Smith & Co. It next passed into the hands of Lang, Frank & Co.; at present the firm name is Lang & Frank, but the mill is run by Charles Frank. They are doing a good business, employing from four to twenty hands. In 1875 they put in machinery for making staves, which they continue to manufacture.

There is also another large saw-mill on section 27, run by Scott Shenefield and his cousin. The mill was built in 1864 or '65, by the following men, as a kind of joint-stock company: F. Shearer, Lewis Wedling, Peter Coler and another man. The present proprietors purchased it in February, 1879, and are doing a good business, hauling considerable lumber to Mishawaka. They run the mill four or five days in the week. And there is still another large saw-mill on section 13, owned and run by Thomas and L. W. Crakes. The first mill on this site was built several years ago, but two or three have been burned down on the same location. Mr. Crakes and son, the present proprietors, have owned it but a

short time. They are doing a good business, and sell lumber at Mishawaka and South Bend.

But even this one does not complete the number of saw-mills, for they seem to be more numerous in Madison township than anything else. There is one on section 24, owned and run by Adam and Peter Buhler. This mill was built about four years ago. The one on section 33 is owned by William Uline; the one on section eight, by Mr. Huntberger; and the one on section ten, by Mr. Miller; and just across the road from the saw-mill, on section eight, is a small grocery store, owned by Jacob Pittman.

Madison township has not the advantages of a railroad town. At one time the Canada Southern was proposed through the southern part, but the track was never laid: neither are the watering facilities of the township numerous. There is a branch of a stream in the northeastern part, which waters that portion; and in the southern part the Yellow river passes; but this is a small stream, being of little or no benefit to the township, as it is almost entirely dry.

But everything in connection with Madison township seems to presage that its day of rank in the county has not yet come, for there is certainly something better in store for the citizens here; and we venture to say that Madison township will some day be one of the finest townships of farming land in St. Joseph county.

#### PERSONAL.

The following sketches are short biographies of many of the pioneers and leading citizens of Madison township, which will be found equally interesting to the residents of the community.

*John Barkey*, farmer, sec. 8; P. O., Mishawaka; son of John and Susan (Buzzert) Barkey, was born in Holmes county, O., in 1828, and is of German descent. His parents, who are now deceased, were natives of Pennsylvania. He came to this county in 1858, and settled in this tp., where he still resides, as a successful farmer; politically, he is a Democrat. When commencing in life he was limited both as to his education and finance; but he has been an industrious tiller of the soil, a prudent manager and an upright man; he now owns 240 acres of land in Madison and 20 acres in Penn tps., all of which is worth about \$60 per acre. In 1855 he was married to Elizabeth Weldy, who was born in Ohio in 1828, and they have had 3 children, of whom only one, Levi, still survives, Susan and an infant child being dead. Mrs. B. is a member of the Mennonite Church.

*Peter Behler*, son of George and Catharine (Shearer) Behler, both of whom died in New York, was born in Germany in 1817, came to America in 1848, and to this tp. in 1854; he was married during the same year to Mary Webla, a native of Germany, and they have had 9 children, of whom 8 are living: Philip, Peter, Sarah, Fredrick, Adam, Charles, Jacob and Joseph. Mr. B. and

wife are members of the Evangelical Church. He owns 300 acres of land in this tp., although he commenced with nothing.

*Philip Berger*, son of Michael and Fredrica (Matz) Berger, deceased, was born in Germany in 1821, and came to this country with his parents in 1832, and to this State in 1838, settling in Marshall county, where he resided until 1850, when he came to this tp. He was married during the same year to Elizabeth Walmer, who was born in Germany in 1826; they have 10 children: Peter, Mary, Michael, Elizabeth, William, Katie, Edward, Caroline, Sarah and Ellen. Mr. B. and his wife are members of the Evangelical Association; politically, he is a believer in the doctrines of the Republican party. His educational advantages were rather limited; he has worked hard all his life, being poor when he began for himself; he now owns 280 acres of land, which he values at about \$30 per acre; he is a successful tiller of the soil on sec. 15. P. O., Bremen.

*Jacob Birk*, farmer, sec. 30; P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Germany in 1836, and came to this country in 1852, and to this county in 1860. He is a son of George and Elizabeth (Feerer) Birk, now deceased, and were natives of Germany. In 1857 Mr. B. was married to Regue Hoss, who was born in Germany in 1833; they have 6 children, all of whom are living: Christina, Henry, Elizabeth, Catharine, Susan and Lewis. They are members of the Evangelical Church. He owns 140 acres of land, worth about \$35 per acre.

*Peter Bollenbacher*, son of Michael and Elizabeth Bollenbacher, was born in Prussia in 1823, and came to this country in about 1848, and to this tp. in 1855. He had nothing when he first began in life and has worked hard during the whole time. He now owns 80 acres of land, worth about \$45 per acre. He was educated in Germany; is a Democrat, and he and his wife are members of the Evangelical Church. In 1849 he married Miss Margaret Schlarb, who was born in Germany in 1821; they have had 6 children, of whom only 2 are now living: Margaret, who is the wife of Jacob Topper, a farmer in this tp., and William, who is still at home.

*Jacob Conrad*, son of Jacob and Mary (Stilengerbouer) Conrad, was born in Prussia in 1847, and came to this tp. in 1854. He was married in 1873 to Mary E. Marker, who was born in this tp. in 1856, and they have 2 children: John P. and Charles J. Mr. C. and wife are members of the Evangelical Church. Politically, he is a Democrat; his educational advantages were only ordinary. He owns 40 acres of land; has worked hard all his life.

*Thomas Crakes*, son of Francis and Martha (Marshall) Crakes, was born in England in 1827, and was brought to America by his parents when quite young. They first settled in New York, and are now deceased. Mr. C. came to this tp. in 1848; he was married in 1849 to the widow Hollingshed, whose maiden name was Mary Moon; she was a native of New York, and died in 1868, leaving 6 children: Francis M., Lawrence W., Martha A., Mary J., George



L. J. Ham

100



O. and Hattie H. In 1868 he was married to Elizabeth (Moon) Pickerd, a sister to his former wife, who had 3 children: Catholine, Alonzo and Martha. Politically, Mr. C. is a believer in the principles of the Republican party; he and his wife are members of the M. E. Church. Mr. C. owns 125 acres of land, worth about \$6,000; also a saw-mill and eight acres on which it is located, worth about \$1,400. Mention of this mill has already been made elsewhere. He has always been an industrious farmer, and is now on sec. 7. In 1861 he enlisted in the army, in company F., 48th Ind. Inf. Vol., at Mishawaka, under the command of Captain Burket; was in the service until Jan. 16, 1865, when he was honorably discharged. He engaged in the battles of Iuka, Corinth, Vicksburg, Jackson and Champion Hills, together with a number of other battles, entering as a private, but was soon promoted to Corporal, and afterward to Sergeant, which position he occupied during the whole war. P. O., Mishawaka.

*Traugott Enders*, farmer, sec. 3; P. O., Bremen; son of Gotfred and Fredrica Enders, natives of Germany; was born in this tp. in 1842; he came with his parents to this county about 1841. In 1864 he was married to Catharine Rader, who was born in 1836, and they have 6 children, 2 boys and 4 girls. Politically, Mr. E. is a Republican. He and wife are members of the Albright Church. He owns 80 acres of land, worth about \$50 per acre.

*Henry Fox*, son of John and Mary (Shier) Fox, was born in Ashland county, O., in 1842, and came to this county in 1860. His father and mother were natives of Germany; the former is living in this tp., and the latter died in 1875. Mr. F. was married in 1872 to Philbena Schlarb, a native of Indiana; they have had 4 children, of whom 2 are now living: George and Frida. He and wife are members of the Evangelical Church; politically, he is a Democrat; he owns 120 acres of land worth about \$4,000.

*Charles Frank*, son of George F. and Catharine (Roup) Frank, natives of Germany, was born in Pennsylvania in 1842, and came to this county in 1864. His mother is now living in Pennsylvania, and his father died there in 1872. Mr. F. is prominently connected with the history of Madison tp., and is one of its most enterprising citizens; he is now Justice of the Peace; is a member of the Odd Fellows lodge at Bremen, number 427, and a Republican. In 1868 he was married to Mary A. Buhheit, who was born in Pennsylvania in 1844, and their 3 children are: George F., Norman J. and Estella M.

Mr. F's educational advantages when young were good; he reads a good deal, both in German and English. At present he is in partnership with Fred F. Lang, of Mishawaka, and is running a steam saw-mill on sec. 22, mention of which has already been made. He is an equal partner in the mill, which he values at about \$6,000, and also in 160 acres of land, worth about \$4,000.

*George Friedman*, farmer, sec. 9; P. O., Woodland; son of John and Mary (Bower) Friedman, dec., natives of Germany, was born

in Germany in 1822; he came to America in 1851, and to this county in 1859; he was married in Ohio in 1851, to Margaret Bols, who was born in Germany in 1825, and they have 5 children living, 3 boys and 2 girls. Mr. F. and family are members of the Catholic Church; his educational advantages in Germany were good. He owns 90 acres of good land on sec. 9, worth about \$60 per acre, and is a hard-working man.

*Isaac H. Gilman*, farmer, sec. 9; P. O., Mishawaka; son of Jonathan and Berintha (Ferris) Gilman, natives of New York; was born in Indiana in 1840, and is of English descent. His parents emigrated to this county in 1848, and settled in this tp. In 1866 he was married to Lizzie A. Bartlett, who was born in New Hampshire in 1844, daughter of Josiah and Hannah (Clark) Bartlett; her great grandfather signed the Declaration of Independence. They have had 4 children, of whom 3 are now living: Mary L., Abbie F. and Charles E. Mr. G. and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church; politically, he is a Republican. They own 180 acres of good land, which they value at \$75 per acre. In 1861 Mr. G. enlisted in the army at Goshen, under Col. Eddy, of South Bend; he was in the service three years, and eight months; was in the battles at Inka, Florence, the siege of Vicksburg, and was discharged at the close of the war.

*Christian Grose*, farmer, sec. 21; P. O., Woodland; is a son of Jacob and Elizabeth (Helming) Grose, and was born in France in 1822; he came to this country with his parents in 1827, and to this county in 1850. He was married in 1848 to Sophia Shearer, who was born in France in 1829; they have had 12 children, of whom 9 are living, namely: William, Margaret, Sadie, Katie, Abram, Christian, Philip, Ellen and George. Mr. G. and wife are members of the German Baptist Church. He owns 200 acres of land on secs. 21 and 22, and is a careful, industrious farmer.

*John Huhn*, farmer, sec. 20; P. O., Mishawaka; son of Henry and Barbara Hahn; was born in Germany in 1822, and came to America in 1831. He was married in 1844, and has 5 children, all living. Politically, Mr. H. is a Democrat. He and his wife are members of the Evangelical Church; he owns 80 acres of land and is an industrious farmer.

*Jacob Hetzel*, son of Gottlieb and Katie (Rinehart) Hetzel, was born in Wittenburg, Germany, in 1827, and came to America in 1851. His parents were also natives of Germany and are both deceased. He came to this county Nov. 1, 1853, and settled in this tp. He was married in Germany in 1849, to Fredrica Wagner, who was born in Germany in 1827, and they have had 11 children, of whom 9 are now living: John, Fredrica, Katie, Mary, Caroline, Sarah, Paulina, Ernest and Matilda. He owns 96 acres of land; he and his wife are members of the Evangelical Association.

*D. B. Jewell*, a prominent farmer, sec. 23; P. O., Mishawaka; is the son of Amos and Lorinda (Brown) Jewell, and is the oldest of a family of 6 children, of whom 4 are now living. His parents

were natives of New York; they came to this tp. in 1852, and settled on sec. 24, where they both died. D. B. was born in Portage county, O., in 1822, and is of English descent. He was married, first, in 1848 to Nancy Crocker, a native of Connecticut, who died in 1852 at the age of 26 years; and, secondly, in 1853, to Eleanor Galor, a native of Indiana, who died in 1862, leaving 3 children: Cynthia D., Lusetta L. and William M.; two others died when quite young. He was married again in 1863 to Mary (Avery) Allen, who had 2 children, George B. and Milan W. Mr. and Mrs. J. have one child, May F.

Mr. J. has been Trustee of the tp. and was Enrolling Commissioner for the tp. during the war; he is a Republican, and a member of the Baptist Church; his wife is a Methodist. His educational advantages were quite limited, being compelled to attend subscription schools in log houses. He owns 150 acres of good land, worth about \$45 per acre.

*Charles Kelley*, son of John and Anna (Fulmer) Kelley, deceased, was born in Germany in 1829, and was brought to America by his parents when only two years old and to this county about 1854. In 1855 he was married to Fredrica Lang, a native of Germany, and they have 5 children: Peter, Fredrick, Emily, Bertha and Ida. Mr. K. owns 140 acres of land which he values at \$40 per acre. He is a hard-working man, and a good citizen; has been a farmer all his life, and is now on sec. 21; P. O., Woodland.

*Z. T. Longenecker*, farmer on sec. 18; P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Ohio in 1849, and is the son of Levi and Elizabeth (Welty) Longenecker, the former a native of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Ohio. They came to this county in 1864, where they both died. Mr. L. and his two maiden sisters own 186 acres of land, worth about \$60 per acre. Politically, he is a Republican; his education, when young, was only such as was afforded by common schools.

*Adam Mochel*, farmer, sec. 22; P. O., Woodland; was born in Germany in 1822, and came to this country in 1850. His parents, John and Margaret (Mornawick), natives of Germany, are deceased. Mr. M. came to this tp. in 1854, and was married in 1853, to Agnes Kelley, who was born in Germany in 1825; and their 8 living children are: Rosa, John, Mary, Katie, Ernest, Martin, Charles and Edward. Mr. M. and wife are members of the Evangelical Church. He owns 80 acres of land, worth about \$3,000, and is a partner in the store at Woodland, of which mention has been made.

*Harrison Pentecost*, farmer, sec. 15; P. O., Woodland; was born in Ohio, in 1812. His parents, Joseph and Mary (Worrell) Pentecost, now deceased, were natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. P. came to this county in August, 1854, and settled in this tp., where he has been a resident and successful farmer ever since. He was married in 1840 to Susanna Bolinger, who was born in Ohio in 1819, and they have 2 children: Adaline, wife of Jacob Kelley, a farmer of this tp., and Lavina, wife of Jonas Williams, a resident of Michigan. Politically, Mr. P. is a Democrat; his education was limited,

but he reads a great deal. He owns 220 acres of land, which he values at \$40 per acre. He had no start in life when he began for himself, and has worked hard all his life, being a careful manager, an industrious citizen, and an obliging neighbor. Mrs. Pentecost, who is still living, has been quite unfortunate in suffering from insanity.

*John Schaffer*, farmer, sec. 8; P. O., Mishawaka; son of Adam and Margaret Schaffer, deceased; was born in Germany in 1822; he came to America in 1850, and was married in 1855 and has 8 children: John, Jacob, Peter, Tadnah, Philip, Frederick, Maggie and Mary. Mr. S. owns 160 acres of land which is worth about \$40 per acre; he is a Democrat. His wife is a member of the Evangelical Church.

*Jacob Schlarb* was born in Germany in 1829, and came to America in 1848. He is a son of Philip and Margaret Schlarb. In Ohio, in 1857, he was married to Mary Kleinschroth, who was born in Germany in 1839; they have 6 children, all of whom are living: William, Mary, Sophia, Katie, Charles and George. Mr. S. owns 90 acres of land, which he values at about \$50 per acre; he is a Democrat, and he and his wife are members of the Evangelical Church. Mr. S. has been an industrious farmer all his life and is now situated on sec. 13; P. O., Woodland.

*Nicholas Schlarb*, farmer, sec. 13; P. O., Mishawaka; son of Philip and Margaret Schlarb; was born in Germany in 1827, and came to this country in 1847, and settled in Ohio, where he remained until 1855, then came to this tp. He was married in 1854, to Margaret Bicker, who was born in Germany in 1832, and they have 5 children: Bena, Philip, Catharine, Margaret and Jacob. Mr. S. owns 80 acres of good land. He and his wife are members of the Evangelical Church; Mr. S. is a Democrat.

*Eli Shearer*, farmer, sec. 34; P. O., Woodland; was born in Carroll county, O., in 1853, and is of Pennsylvania Dutch descent. His father, Samuel Shearer, was born in Pennsylvania in 1807, and died in this tp. in 1877; his mother, whose maiden name was Mary E. Fleck, was born in Pennsylvania in 1810, and is now living in this tp. Mr. S. came to this tp. with his parents in 1855. Politically, he is a Republican; his educational advantages were not the best, but he is a great reader.

*Scott Shenefield*, farmer, sec. 34; P. O., Woodland; son of Daniel and Mary (Slough) Shenefield; was born in Ohio in 1844, and is of Pennsylvania Dutch descent; his parents, natives of Pennsylvania, are now dead. Mr. S. came to this tp. in 1863; he was married in 1867 to Elizabeth Mornawiek, who was born in Ohio in 1847, and they have 3 children: Cora, Minerva and Berton. Politically, Mr. S. is a Democrat. He owns 70 acres of land, worth about \$50 per acre. He and his cousin also own and run a saw-mill on sec. 27.

*Amos Snyder*, farmer, sec. 28, and School Trustee of the tp., was born in Lancaster county, Penn., in 1837, and is of German descent. His parents, Samuel and Sarah (Birch) Snyder, natives of

Pennsylvania, are now living in Ohio. Mr. S. came to this county in 1862, and settled in Penn tp. in 1865, where he lived until 1870, when he came to this tp. He was married in 1865 to Catharine Kettring, who was born in Ohio in 1848; they have 6 children, all living: Sarah E., Emery, Franklin, Matilda, Norman and Cilia. In 1877 Mr. S. was appointed School Trustee; in 1878 he was elected to that office, and in 1880, as an appreciation of his services, he was re-elected; he has also held the office of Assessor two terms. Politically, he is a Democrat; his education was quite limited, being confined to a few months school in the winter time. He owns 40 acres of land, and is an honest and industrious man. In 1864 he enlisted in the army at Appleton, Wisconsin, in the 40th Wis. Regt., under the command of Captain J. H. Hauser. He enlisted for one hundred days, and at the expiration of his term, was discharged. P. O., Woodland.

*Frederick Stuber*, son of Frederick and Catharine (Collinbarger) Stuber, was born in Wittenberg, Germany, in 1847, and came with his parents to America in 1868; he was married in 1878 to Mary Mochel, who was born in this tp. in 1854; and their children are William and Catharine. Mr. S. and wife are members of the Evangelical Church. He owns 100 acres of land, on sec. 9, which he values at about \$50 per acre; he had very little start when he commenced life for himself, and has secured all he has by hard work.



## OLIVE TOWNSHIP.

Scarcely any township in Northern Indiana presents a fairer domain or more fertile soil than Olive township; but not until 1830 was it occupied by enterprising members of the white race. At the date mentioned there were about half as many Indians in this section of the county as there are whites at the present day.

Among the oldest settlers of Olive township we may mention that man of great memory, Mr. Barvilla Druliner, of New Carlisle, who was born July 7, 1807; Joseph Adams and wife, of section 31, the oldest couple now living in the township. Mr. A. made his start in the West by splitting rails, at 50 cents per 100, while boarding himself. He has made as many as 500 rails in one day. The young men of to-day would as soon try Dr. Tanner's experiment of fasting 40 days as to make 500 rails in one day. Jacob Rush, who was born in Ohio in 1806, is now living on section 36, one of our oldest pioneers. He held the plow for the first furrow ever turned in this township, and he also helped to raise the first cabin here, which belonged to his brother Israel Rush, who was afterward the first Justice of the Peace, and died in 1837. Jacob is still a lively and energetic man. Asher White was a boy of only 16 years of age when he came here in 1830. His biography is given more in full on a subsequent page.

Among the oldest settlers now deceased we mention Samuel and Jesse Goward, Jeremiah Williamson, John Balkar, James Shingleton, Nathan Haines, Isaac Phillips, Jacob Egbert. There are others whose names we did not fully obtain.

What is now known as Olive township was once called the Indian reserve. In 1830 the northern line of the State was removed 10 miles farther north, in order that Indiana might have greater access to the lake.

At this time it was thought that it would be no great task to civilize and Christianize the untutored savage, and soon to have him wash off his paint, lay aside his tomahawk, change his wigwam to a permanent house, his habits of idleness to those of industry, from reading the tracks of wild animals to the tracts of Christianity, etc., and consequently the whites established the "Carey Mission" one and one-fourth miles below Niles, at a point now called the Big Springs. It had at one time 200 Indian pupils. By a law of the general Government each pupil at this mission was to have 160 acres of land, to be selected for him by the Indian agent from the ten-mile strip mentioned above. Hence a large portion of this township was selected for these pupils; and hence also the Indians in this community were more quiet and friendly than elsewhere,

and the whites felt safe among them. It is true that they suffered an alarm in this vicinity at the commencement of the Black Hawk war in the Northwest. It was reported that an Indian had killed a white man in the wild country where Chicago now stands, and ten men went from this settlement to examine the situation, but they returned the next day, having found no cause of alarm. A fort was built at Plainfield.

This part of Indiana was surveyed in 1830 by William and Noah Brock, the latter running the base lines, and the former dividing the land into sections; and this township received its name in honor of the wife of Charles Vail. She is still living in New Carlisle. Mr. V., who settled here in 1830, was afterward elected County Judge. After the survey of the township, the first Justice of the Peace acted as County Commissioner until the regular annual election.

The first death in this township was that of Jonathan Garwood; another of the earliest deaths was that of Mrs. Garoutte, by freezing. She lived, however, just outside of the present limits of the township. See sketch, a little further on, of Hon. T. J. Garoutte, her son.

The first couple married in this township, according to the Atlas of the county, were Charles Vail and Olive Stanton, but this is not correct.

By the year 1836, about all the Government land was taken up. The land office was at Crawfordsville, and there were residents enough to justify the holding of public religious services. The first church was built at Hamilton in 1838, by the Methodists, who still hold meetings in it. At that time Hamilton was the great business center for this part of St. Joseph county. Since the railroad has been built through the county and made a station at New Carlisle, Hamilton has run down. This place is frequently called Terre Coupee, from a postoffice of that name near there. There are also at Hamilton a neat school-house, a grocery and several residences. This village is situated near the center of section 24, in Terre Coupee Prairie. This prairie was very marshy before it was drained and cultivated; it is now one of the most fertile spots in the State of Indiana. It is over four miles in diameter and contains 3,000 or 4,000 acres, which is worth \$80 to \$120 an acre. It is almost as level as a barn floor, and just sandy enough for agricultural purposes.

New Carlisle is beautifully situated on a hill at the southeastern extremity of this prairie, and it therefore overlooks this fertile plain. Most of the village is on section 34. It was founded by Richard R. Carlisle, a sportsman and traveler of early day, who finally died in Philadelphia. The land at this point was first owned by Bursaw (?), a Frenchman, whose wife was an Indian; after his death the property descended to his children, and it was from them that it was bought by Mr. Carlisle.



Olive township is wealthy, as we see that while 18 sections are yet untilled and even unpastured, it pays a large tax. Most of the untilled lands are marsh or timber, and the timber and underbrush are so heavy that it seems as if it would take a man a life-time to clear an acre; but the Polanders are clearing it up fast. Fred G. Miller imported the first company of Polanders into Indiana in 1865, most of them settling in this township, in what is called the marsh timber. At the present time there are 35 families living in this timber, where in a short time they have succeeded in clearing and subduing to cultivation 20 to 80 acres apiece, with plenty more land to clear; one strip of timber in the southern part of the township surrounded by marsh, is called Long Island; and another piece of timber similarly situated is called Hog Island, on account of the great number of wild hogs which fattened themselves here in early day on the plentiful mast. Mr. Kinney relates that he and Mr. H. H. Clark once passed through this island and found two large piles of skeletons of hogs, which had piled themselves up in this manner to keep warm during a spell of severely cold weather, but froze to death.

Politically, Olive township is pretty evenly divided; but during the last war it did its duty toward putting down the Rebellion. The draft was executed here, and the township voted to raise money by taxation to fill her quota. A few men thought to resist this tax, particularly George W. Woods, who was quite obstinate. Some roughs thought they would try something else than moral suasion upon him, and they put him under a pump spout and pumped water upon him to a damaging extent. Since that time they say he has never "rebelled."

Among the prominent and wealthy citizens of this township are John Reynolds, said to be the richest man in St. Joseph county; James Reynolds, Henry H. Clark and H. B. Ranstead, who, with Mr. John Reynolds, are the largest land-holders in the township; J. H. Service and R. Hubbard, wealthy pioneers. The Messrs. Reynolds, Clark and Ranstead all together own 7,433 acres of land, a great deal of which is on the Terre Coupee Prairie. This, as before shown, is very valuable.

#### CHURCHES.

*Methodist Episcopal.*—James Armstrong was the Evangelist of Methodism in this county, influencing many persons to move from older parts of the State. He remained here as an enterprising missionary till his death, in the fall of 1834. The first Methodist society in St. Joseph county was organized at the house of Paul Egbert, on Terre Coupee Prairie. It consisted of eight individuals, and John Egbert was appointed class-leader. According to tradition among this people, the class was formed by Rev. E. Felton, of the Ohio Conference, in 1830. This class was supplied with pastors somewhat irregularly until 1834, when the work was thoroughly



re-organized by Mr. Armstrong, the Presiding Elder; since that time this society has been regularly supplied.

The first Methodist house of worship in the county was erected at Hamilton, and was dedicated in May, 1841, by Rev. Aaron Wood, D. D. The first Methodist preaching at New Carlisle was by Rev. Abram Saulsberry, in 1849, then on "Byron Circuit." The first class in New Carlisle was formed in 1853, of the following members: Mr. and Mrs. A. H. Pidge, Josiah Pidge, Jacob Hopkins, James and Delilah Egbert, Mr. and Mrs. James S. White and Eliza White. Rev. A. H. Pidge was the class-leader. This year the parsonage was built, and ever since then it has been the home of the circuit preacher. The church building at this place was erected in 1858.

Since those early dates of organization, etc., many changes have, of course, taken place.

*Christian Church.*—Early in 1868, Elder Ira J. Chase, of Mishawaka, Ind., at the request of two or three resident disciples, began in New Carlisle a series of sermons on primitive Christianity, assisted at the first by W. M. Roe, pastor of the Christian Church at Rolling Prairie. The result was an accession of several converts to this Church, and March 29 the Church was regularly organized in the chapel hall of the New Carlisle Collegiate Institute. Arrangements for erecting a house of worship were immediately made; a very desirable location was secured, and during the winter of 1869-'70, the building was finished, a neat and tasteful structure with a seating capacity of about 260, and costing \$2,500. March 13, 1870, the dedication sermon was delivered by Elder Chase. Since the organization the Church has had the following pastors: W. M. Gleason, Jesse Roe, Joseph Wickard, J. P. Lucas, M. L. Blaney and M. J. Thompson. The society has been growing in numbers and influence until now it has a membership of about a hundred. It also has a well-sustained Sunday-school.

*Olive Chapel*, on section 11, is a house of worship occupied by the "Church of God," "New-Lights," "Campbellites," or "Christians," as they are variously called; they prefer the last-mentioned title. This society was organized in an early day, and they have had many trials. The chapel is a neat and substantial building, 34 by 48 feet, with ceiling 16 feet high, and cost \$1,900. It was dedicated Oct. 10, 1869, by Elder Summerbell, of Cincinnati, Ohio. The membership at the time of organization, Jan 1, 1841, consisted of James S. Parnell, at whose house the society was formed, J. S. Hooton, Esther Hooton, Polly Parnell, William Hooton and Jackson Hale and wife. Elder John Spray was the first preacher; William Hooton was the first elder, and he has been elder ever since. The membership at the present time numbers over 150. In 1877 Rev. S. C. V. Cunningham held a series of meetings here, which resulted in a greater accession to the membership than has ever been enjoyed at any other time. The Church is now without a minister.

## SCHOOLS.

The old saying that it is better to be born lucky than rich may be applied to New Carlisle. The citizens here built their water-works in 1879, when everything was cheap. If they had waited until next year, this public improvement would have cost twice as much as it did. Likewise, they bought an \$8,000 school-house for \$1,500, happening to select a lucky time for the purchase. It is a two-story brick structure, 44 by 75 feet, neatly finished, and was first erected by the Methodist Episcopal Church in 1859, which failed to pay its indebtedness on the building, which was \$1,500. And as another element of good fortune to the people of this municipality, a large number of people in the adjoining country added themselves to New Carlisle for school purposes, on account of this very purchase that had been made. It turned out that this building cost some of the M. E. Church members more than it would had it been built by regular taxation. For example, J. H. Service gave \$500 to start it as a Methodist college, and afterward was taxed to buy it for the town. Every dollar, he says, was a good investment.

At the present time the school is in a flourishing condition, under Prof. A. E. Rowell, an old and experienced teacher; he has three assistants.

## LODGES.

*Masonic.*—Terre Coupee Lodge, Number 204, was organized in 1856, with the following members: E. Whitlock, Abraham Pyle, A. A. Whitlock, James L. Perkins, J. H. Service, T. L. Borden, E. Bacon, J. C. Williams, E. H. Keen and R. Pierce. Mr. Pyle was chairman at the organization, and the following officers were elected: Abraham Pyle, W. M.; A. A. Whitlock, S. W.; J. L. Perkins, J. W.; E. Bacon, S. D.; J. C. Williams, J. D.; J. H. Service, Treas.; T. L. Borden, Sec.; and E. H. Keen, Tyler. This meeting was held over T. L. Borden's store, July 24, 1856, where they continued to meet until 1862, when they changed the place of meeting to a room over the store of J. H. Service; here they met until 1876, when the new brick block was erected, one-third the expense of which was defrayed by the lodge, and this society has exclusive control of the upper story, all of which, except two rooms, they lease.

The lodge is in a flourishing condition, having a membership of 69, and comprising most of the leading men of the community. Eight members are Sir Knights. George Bissell is the present Master. The lodge is strict in the execution of the laws and regulations of Masonry.

*Good Templars.*—Olive Branch Lodge, Number 149, I. O. of G. T., was organized Jan. 4, 1875, by G. W. C. T. J. J. Talbott, with the following persons as its first officers: A. T. Evans, W. C. T.; Mary Hoyt, W. V. T.; Josie Service, W. S.; Eli Miller, W. A. S.; Martha Lyda,

W. Treas.; E. H. Harris, W. Fin. Sec.; John Grigg, W. M.; Hattie Flanagin, W. D. M.; Libbie Albright, W. I. G.; Thos. M. Grigg, W. O. G.; Emma Miller, W. R. H. S.; Charlotte Harris, W. T. H. S.; and Joel Harris, P. W. C. T. There were also 30 other members.

From Nov. 1, 1878, to Aug. 1, 1880, the membership increased from 95 to 143, and the lodge is now the second in size in the State.

#### ANTI-HORSE-THIEF ASSOCIATION.

The Terre Coupee Anti-Horse-Thief Association was organized in 1853 or 1854, for the purpose of protecting the property of its members against the depredations of thieves, and for detecting and apprehending parties guilty of horse-stealing. The association agrees to recover stolen property or indemnify the owner of the same, if he is a member of the society. The charter of this association expired at the end of 20 years, according to law, and it was reorganized, with the same objects and purposes, but on the plan of a mutual insurance company. They pay for stolen horses 30 days after they fail to find them, at the rate of two-thirds the value of the property. If, after the payment has been made, the horse is found and recovered, it is optional with the owner whether he returns the horse or returns the money, for the horse might be damaged.

This society has been a great protection, not only to its own members, but also to every horse-owner in the community. During the 25 years of its existence, not as many as 30 horses have been stolen within their jurisdiction, and all have been recovered but two, and one of these was a two-year-old colt, not gone 30 days yet at this writing. The membership is 120 strong, each "rider" being authorized to act as constable for the purposes of the association by a State law; and they seldom fail to capture every thief that dares to steal a horse in this neighborhood. At first the territory of this association was unlimited, but now it is confined to Olive and Wills townships, in this county, and Hudson township in La Porte county. H. Reid was the first President, T. L. Borden, Secretary, and T. J. Garoutte, Treasurer; the latter has acted in that capacity ever since. The present officers are I. N. Miller, President; S. C. Lancaster, Secretary; T. G. Garoutte, Treasurer; Managing Committee—Granville Woolman, Eli Wade, Wm. P. White, H. B. Knight and Charles Ivins. Committee on Communications—J. H. Service, Joel Harris and T. G. Garoutte. Riders—T. B. Fawcette, J. G. Druliner, Wm. H. Deacon, Joseph Burden, Wm. P. Lane, L. H. Rush, H. V. Compton, Charles Ivins, D. M. Cury, Milton Thompson, John Ackerman, T. L. Borden, Eli Wade, W. W. France and James Nickerson.

#### WATER-WORKS.

New Carlisle has a successful system of water-works just established. When the project was first proposed in 1879, there was

considerable opposition; and as it required a two-thirds vote of the property holders to carry the measure through, it required skillful engineering to insure success. As the expense was the principal objection, Mr. George H. Service offered to insure the sale of bonds at par, and thus the people were encouraged to vote for the issue of \$7,000 bonds, which were negotiated at par, at seven per cent., with a savings bank in Vermont, to run 15 years; and now the village has a perfect system of water-works.

#### NEW CARLISLE GAZETTE.

This was established as an independent newspaper, by G. H. Alward, of South Bend, and G. M. Fountain, of Mishawaka. The first number was issued Feb. 6, 1880; in size it was a six-column folio, and was enlarged to a seven-column folio on its reaching the 11th number. Aug. 20, 1880, Mr. Fountain purchased the interest of his partner and enlarged the paper still farther to an eight-column sheet, and made it a Republican paper. Its growth, though rapid, has been warranted by the liberal patronage bestowed upon it by the people, especially the merchants of the place, who, with few exceptions, have done all in their power to make the paper a success. A biographical notice of Mr. Fountain will be found on page 777.

#### PERSONAL SKETCHES.

We now complete the history of this township by giving biographical sketches of old settlers and leading citizens. These sketches are not only interesting to the parties themselves and their friends, but they constitute a vital portion of the real history of the community.

*John Anderson*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 25; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in Sweden Sept. 26, 1832, son of Andrew Johnson; received his education in the common schools of his native country; came to America in 1869, landing at Chicago, when he did not have a dollar; in a few weeks he came to this county, went to work, and he now owns 255 acres of land; is Supervisor and is doing well. In politics he is a Republican. He was married in 1853 to Kate Abrison, and they have had 8 children, 7 of whom are living, 4 boys and 3 girls. Mr. A. brought his family to this country two years after his arrival. He and his wife are members of the Lutheran Church.

*Martin Bate*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 31; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in Green county, O., in 1831, the son of Samuel and Harmony (Allen) Bate, subjects of the next paragraph. In 1857 he married Margaret Kinney, and they have had 4 sons and one daughter, who are all yet living. Mr. Bate owns 163 acres of land, and has enjoyed fair success in his vocation. Although not a very old man, he can be counted an early settler, as he was very

young when brought by his parents to this county. Politically, he is a Democrat. His wife is a member of the M. E. Church.

*Samuel Bate*, a pioneer school-teacher, was born in 1801, and is the son of Joseph and Priscilla (Ayers) Bate, natives of New Jersey, the former of Welsh and the latter of English descent. He received his education in subscription schools of New Jersey, Ohio and Indiana; at the age of 18 he commenced teaching school in the neighborhood where he was reared; the undertaking was rather contrary to his wishes, and to govern the unruly boys he sent slips of paper to their parents informing upon them, who would thereupon give them a flogging. Only three cases of this kind, however, sufficed to put an end to their misdemeanors. Mr. B. had the native abilities of a successful teacher. In 1830 he married Miss Harmony Allen, a native of Virginia, a Quaker, who died in 1860; 4 of their children are still living. Mr. Bate cast his first vote for Jackson and is still a Democrat. He arrived in this county Sept. 31, 1834, at which time the Indians were numerous, but friendly. He taught school three terms after coming here, and since then has followed farming; he owns two farms, and began at the age of 75 to feel that the cares and toils of his business wore upon him.

*Theodore L. Borden* was born Sept. 22, 1822, in the State of New York, the son of Isaac L. and Mary Annette Borden, the former a native of New York, and the latter of Ireland. He emigrated from New York to Michigan in 1838, and from the latter State to Indiana in 1845. He received his education in New York, Michigan and Indiana, attending the high school at South Bend. His early life was spent on a farm; at 24 years of age he entered the dry-goods and grocery business, which he followed 16 years in New Carlisle; since that time he has been farming. In 1850 he married Eliza Whitlock, and they have 3 sons and 3 daughters. Mr. Borden is a Republican, a Unitarian in belief, and his wife is a member of the M. E. Church. He has been remarkably successful in business, and is now the owner of 700 acres of valuable land. He emigrated from New York to Michigan in 1838, and from the latter State to Indiana in 1845.

*F. Brown* was born in this State Jan. 7, 1819, the son of William and Eva (Kinery) Brown, natives of Virginia, father of Irish and mother of German descent; was educated in a common school and by his own perseverance at home; taught school five years of his early life; followed merchandising and milling in Franklin county, this State, for 20 years; followed farming for five years; in 1876 started the mill in New Carlisle, which has three run of stone, where he is succeeding well at both custom and merchant work. In 1841 he married Lydia Hughes and they have one child living, Eva B., born in 1853 and married in 1876 to J. B. Shera, a farmer living in Ohio. Mr. Brown has been a Republican ever since the

organization of his party; he has been Steward and Class-Leader in the M. E. Church at New Carlisle, of which society his wife is also a member.

*Andrew J. Bryant*, farmer, sec. 15; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in 1841, and is the son of David and Ruth (Antrum) Bryant, natives of Ohio, and of English descent; educated in the common schools of Ohio; came to this county in 1861; in 1864 married Gertrude McDaniel, and they are both members of the United Brethren Church; he is a Republican. In 1862 he enlisted in Co. F, 94th Ohio Infantry, and was discharged at the close of the war; he was in the battle of Murfreesborough. Mr. B. has the reputation of being an honest and industrious citizen.

*Andrew J. Campbell*, farmer and stock-raiser on sec. 10, was born in this State in 1830, the son of William and Sarah (Bagley) Campbell; father of North Carolina and mother of Lower Canada; she came to America when a girl. Mr. C. spent his early life at the wagon-maker's trade; received his education in the common schools of Indiana and Ohio. He was brought to this tp. in 1835 by his father. In 1855 he married Hanna J. Graves, a native of Ohio, and they have had 11 children, only 5 of whom are living. Mr. C. is a Democrat, and both himself and wife are members of the Christian Church. In 1864 he was drafted and placed in the 23d Ind. Vol. Inf., and discharged at the close of the war. He now owns 220 acres of land, is somewhat in debt, but is getting along well.

*James Catterlin*, one of the early settlers of La Porte county, was born March 9, 1805, the son of Joseph and Mary (Messer) Catterlin, father a native of Scotland, and mother of Pennsylvania, and of English descent; the former was a Revolutionary soldier seven years under the command of Gen. Washington; he died in 1823 at the age of 83, and his second wife died in 1831, in her 59th year. Mr. James Catterlin, the subject of this notice, moved from Ohio to Indiana March 15, 1835, settling in Galena tp., La Porte county, where he lived on the same farm 44 years; at present he is living in New Carlisle. He has been twice married, first in 1828, to Agnes Johnston, who, 14 years afterward, died without having any children. Mr. C.'s second wife was Margaret Kyger, born in 1822, in Virginia; they were married in 1844, and have had 11 children; 3 sons and 3 daughters are living. Mr. C. has been a member of the Presbyterian Church 48 years, and all his family are members of the same Church. He was formerly a Whig and is now a Republican.

*Henry H. Clark*, farmer and land speculator, sec. 31; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in Warren county, Ohio, in 1816. He is the son of Thomas and Rachel (Martindale) Clark; received his education in the common schools in Warren county, Ohio, and also St. Joseph county, Ind. He has been farming most of his life and has been remarkably successful; at the present time is the owner of 1,500 acres of land. He has dealt in lands, sold and bought and traded for a great many years. He was married in 1847, to Matilda

Olds, and they have had 5 children, 2 boys and 3 girls. Mrs Clark is a member of the M. E. Church. In politics Mr. C. is a Republican; never wanted any office; he refused to serve as Justice of the Peace after he was elected; but this year he has been Supervisor of this tp. He came to St. Joseph county in 1834, and has seen many changes in this country. He can relate many amusing anecdotes of his hunting with the Indians. He was able to talk their language. He tells of a narrow escape that he had, which happened in this wise: he had two friends, young men, to stop with him for a short time; they had never seen an Indian; he consented to take them into the Indian settlement near here. They arrived in due time, found the Indian man away, and he entered into conversation with the squaw. The boys laughed to hear him talk Indian; all at once the squaw disappeared, and in a short time they saw her man pass the window with a knife in his hand. Mr. C. heard him say that he would kill the pale-faces. Mr. C. at this time began to think of his safety, and being familiar with the Indian's habits, looked over the door, and, as he expected, saw the Indian's gun loaded and capped, ready for business; and when Mr. Indian thrust in his burly form and painted cheek at the door, he was seen to halt and remove his knife from the threatening position it had assumed. There he stood, looking down the muzzle of his own gun, and the pale-faced man, Mr. Clark, at the other end. They soon settled the little affair, and were contented to let by-gones be by-gones. The boys were fully satisfied that they had met an Indian, but did not seem to like his personal appearance any too well. Mr. C. tells also of catching prairie chickens here in the prairie grass when it was wet. He would rouse them up and they would light soon; then he would pull the high grass down over them, take out the chicken, drop it into the sack, and lead for the next.

*H. V. Compton*, liveryman, New Carlisle, was born in Butler county, Ohio, Sept. 18, 1829, the son of Josiah and Jane (Marise) Compton, of German descent, father a native of Ohio and mother of New York; received his education in this State, whither his parents had emigrated when he was one year old; and when he was six years of age they moved to this county, where the subject of this sketch has ever since resided,—45 years. He has passed the most of his life on a farm, but now keeps a first-class livery stable, which he owns, besides a farm of 150 acres of good land.

*James Davis*, deceased, was a successful farmer. He was among the early settlers of Olive tp. He was born in Butler county, Ohio, in 1802, the son of Daniel Davis, and of Welsh descent. He received his education in the common schools in Ohio. He was married in 1824 to Jane Hull. They were the parents of 3 children, all boys, only one of whom is living at the present time. The eldest was married, and at his death, which occurred in 1877, left a wife and 7 children, 4 girls and 3 boys; the eldest girl is living with her grandmother, who is still living on sec. 8, the old



homestead. The subject of this sketch died in 1873. His wife, Jane, *nee* Davis, is still living. She used to be a good horseback rider; when 15 years of age she rode on horseback from Florida to Ohio, and says she enjoyed the trip very much. She was born in 1807, in Hamilton county, Ohio; came to this county in 1835, in company with her husband, James Davis, who died here in 1873. They were married in Hamilton county, O. She now owns 184 acres of land in two farms, one in Indiana, the other in Michigan. Mr. D. was a Republican in politics. Samuel, the only child living of the family, spent 20 years of his life as a telegraph operator; at the present time he is a photographer in Michigan.

*James N. Davison*, farmer, sec. 15, was born in Otis, Berkshire county, Mass., April 30, 1818, and is the son of John and Anna (Gile) Davison, natives of Massachusetts, and of English ancestry; educated in the common schools of his native State; in 1842, in Pennsylvania, he married Miss Harriet Clark; of their 5 children, 2 are living; she died in 1852, and in 1855 Mr. D. married Mrs. Redding, *nee* Alvira Bishop, a native of Ohio. Mr. D. had but very little when he first came here, has been successful in business, and now owns 160 acres of choice land. He is a Republican, and has been Supervisor of the tp.

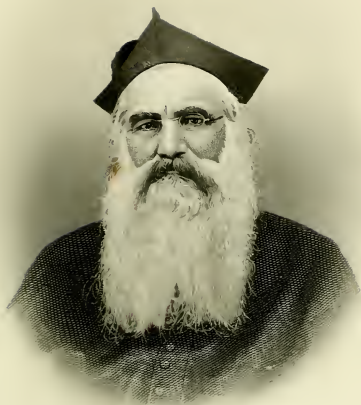
*L. G. Davison*, born in Tennessee Dec. 8, 1844, is the son of the preceding. He received his education in the common schools in Indiana and Ohio. He was married in 1869 to Martha E. Hall, and they have 3 children living. They are both members of the Dunkard Church. He is a Republican; he came to Olive tp. in 1851, to the place where he now is living, 11 years ago; has been successful since he commenced business for himself. He is the owner of 80 acres of land on sec 15.

*R. D. Egbert* was born in this county in 1852, and is the son of Asher and Elizabeth (Dunn) Egbert, natives of the State of New York, who were among the pioneers of this county; of their 4 children only 2 are living, both boys; the youngest, S. F., is living in Colorado; R. D. is living on his farm in this tp., the owner of 180 acres of land; has attended the high school at South Bend. He is not married. P. O., Terre Conpee.

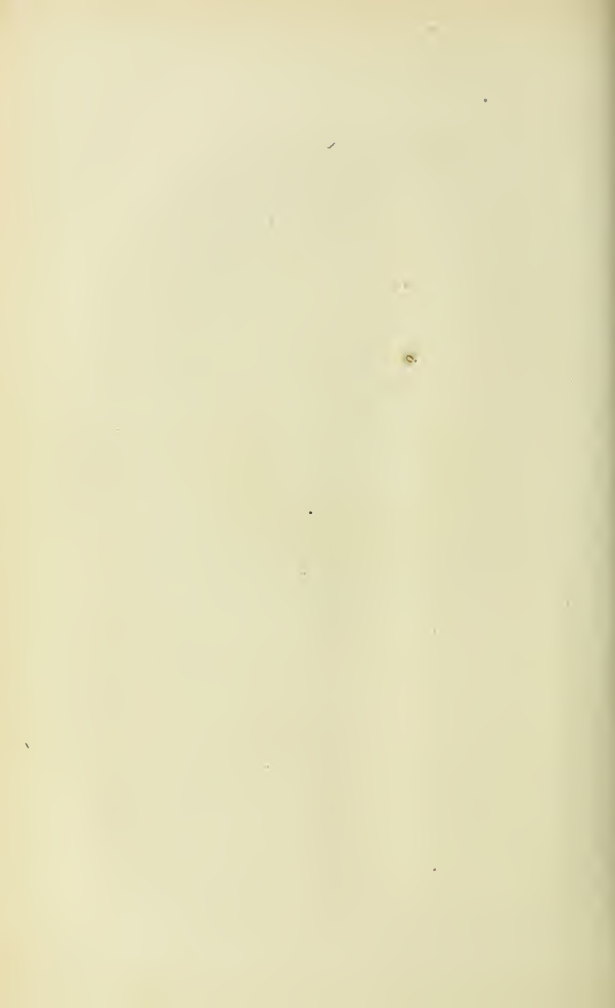
*Zachariah Emrick* was born in Ohio Oct. 4, 1846, the son of George and Frances (Arnold) Emrick, of German ancestry; educated in the common schools; was married in 1867 to Catharine Sayring, and they have 2 sons and 2 daughters; they are living at the residence of her father, who was born in Pennsylvania March 23, 1815, and is a farmer; he owns 190 acres of land; had but one dollar when he commenced keeping house. In religious belief he is a Friend, and in general character he is very charitable. Mr. Emrick is a young man of industrious habits, is a successful farmer, and in politics a Republican.

*Thomas B. Fawcett*, born in Benton county, Ohio, in 1834, is the son of David and Jane (Walker) Fawcett, father a native of Ohio and of Scotch descent, and mother of Virginia and of English





*Esimase*



descent. He received his education in the common schools in Ohio; was married in June, 1858, to Evaline Baldwin, and they have 5 children, all now living. He is a Democrat in politics. In farming, Mr. Fawcett has been successful. He started without anything, and he now owns 160 acres of land. He settled on sec. 31 in 1856. He went to Colorado in 1860; in 1875 was in Nevada, and in 1860 was in California. To the latter State he took his wife and child with him. He is a very enterprising and intelligent man.

*G. W. Fountain*, publisher of the *New Carlisle Gazette*, was born in South Bend March 20, 1857. His parents died while he was quite young, his father being killed in one of the last battles of the late war. His mother with the family of 6 children moved to Mishawaka in 1865, where she soon after died; the family have resided in the latter place until the spring of 1880, when Mr. Fountain removed to New Carlisle and established the paper which he is now publishing. A sketch of his paper is given in the chapter on the Press of St. Joseph County, and mention is also made on page 773.

*T. J. Garoutte*, merchant, New Carlisle, was born in Ohio Dec. 19, 1823, and is the son of James S. and Mary (Babington) Garoutte, natives of the United States, the former of Irish descent and the latter of English. The subject of this notice was educated in the common and high schools of this county. His father emigrated with his family from Ohio to this State in 1830, and in 1831 to this county, where T. J. has passed nearly all his life. His mother was frozen to death in 1831, an event which cast a gloom over all the young and scattering community of that early day. She was a mid-wife, and was sent for on a day so cold that even men were afraid to travel alone. Mr. Goward and his hired man came together after her; she went, and after two days the weather seemed to moderate a little, when she talked of starting home. Mr. Goward offered to accompany her, but she started alone, and sure enough, she never reached home alive! She stopped at the only house on Rolling Prairie and warmed herself, which was the last time she was seen until she was accidentally found by the mail carrier the next day. It could be seen where she had made three trials to reach the summit of the hill, all in vain. She had dismounted from her horse, started for the timber, walked about 100 yards and crawled about as much farther.

Mr. Garoutte has been a farmer the most of his life, successful, and still owns 250 acres of land, 80 acres of which he worked at \$8 a month to pay for. In politics he is a Democrat; has been Tp. Trustee 20 years, and represented St. Joseph in the State Legislature in 1878. His father was a man of more than ordinary physical ability, and lived to be 84 years of age. His grandfather was educated for a Catholic priest.

*Joel Harris*, a prominent physician of St. Joseph county, was born in North Carolina, Mar. 30, 1811, and is the son of Howell and Mary (Graham) Harris, of English and Scotch descent; received

his education in the select schools of Tennessee and Kentucky, and in high schools, and has also obtained a thorough medical education; he has practiced medicine in Ohio and Indiana ever since 1837,—21 years in this county. In 1835 he married Miss Charlotte Compton, and they have 6 children living, 5 sons and 1 daughter. Both professionally and financially the Doctor has been successful. He owns 200 acres of land in this State but not in this county; he owns his residence in New Carlisle. He is a Deacon in the Christian Church, of which denomination his wife is also a member. Politically, he is a Republican. He has served two terms as School Trustee in this tp.

*Jacob Hooton* was born in Indiana March 3, 1830; is a son of Thomas and Esther (Montgomery) Hooton, natives of the South, and of English descent. Both of his grandfathers were in the war of the Revolution. He received his education in the common schools in this tp. When he was brought here he was only five years old, and he has never been out of the tp. one week since that time in his life. He is among the leading farmers and owns 370 acres of land. He was married Jan. 24, 1825, to Emily Jane Taylor, and they have had 7 children, 5 of whom are now living. He and wife are members of the Christian Church. He is a Trustee and a Republican. He has a neat and substantial residence, and has made what he has by honest toil.

*Henry Hostotler* was born in Canada in 1841, and is the son of Joseph and Mary (Miller) Hostotler, natives of Pennsylvania, and of German descent. He received his education in the common schools of this county. He came to America in 1843 with his parents, who settled in La Porte county, Indiana. His father died in 1859, and his mother lived till 1871. He was married July 3, 1865, to Nancy McClury, and they have 7 children. In politics Mr. H. is a Democrat. He and his wife are members of the Dunkard Church. The subject of this sketch has been successful as a farmer, when we consider that he started almost without anything. He is the owner of 126 acres of good land, on some of which he paid \$40 per acre. He owns five head of work horses, two colts, four hogs and 50 head of cattle. His farm is well stocked.

*Rosa Linda Howland* was born Dec. 3, 1820, in Huron county, Ohio. She was the daughter of George and Abigail (Harrington) Ferguson, her father a native of Virginia, and her mother of New York; mother of Scotch and English descent, and father of English. She was happily married in 1844 to Benjamin Wilson, and this marriage was blessed with 5 children, only 2 of whom are now living, both married. Mr. Wilson came to this county about 1832, and therefore was one of the pioneers. He was a farmer and was very successful at the time of his death, which occurred in 1860. He was respected by all who knew him. He was the owner of 480 acres of land. Mrs. Wilson, who is now Mrs. Howland, is a member of the M. E. Church. She has been a widow the second time for several years. During this time she has raised a family of

4 girls, 2 of her own and 2 of her second husband's. It seems strange to read that a lonely woman could raise 4 little girls, but Mrs. Howland's business qualifications are good and her first husband had left her with means, so she got along quite well. She and her youngest daughter, and her daughter's husband are living on one of her farms on sec. 8, at this writing. P. O., Dayton, Mich.

*R. Hubbard*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 20; P. O., Terre Coupee; was born in Oneida county, N. Y., March 12, 1816, and is the son of Jonathan and Rebecca (Haven) Hubbard; his father was one of the pioneers of this county. Mr. H. came west in 1836, settling in this tp. He was married the first time to Marietta Whitlock, and they had 2 children. After her death Mr. H. married in 1875, Mrs. Mary E. Sheppard, *nee* Johnson, who is a member of the M. E. Church, while Mr. H. is not a strict church-goer. He is a Republican, and has been County Commissioner three terms. He owns 700 acres of land, pays taxes on \$100,000, and as a farmer he has been very successful.

*Andrew Kinney*, farmer, sec. 35; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in Greene county, O., March 9, 1824, and is the son of Matthias and Lucilla (McClone) Kinney, natives of Pennsylvania, and of English descent. He received his education in his native county, and in this county. He has been married three times, and has 3 children living, all by his second wife. For his present wife he married Nancy Devitt, *nee* McClure, March 30, 1869, a daughter of a pioneer. Mr. Kinney came to this county in 1833, with his parents; commenced life for himself with but limited means, but he now owns 80 acres of good land, and is a successful farmer. His father died here in 1872, and his mother in 1874; they first settled on sec. 32 of this tp.

*John S. Massey* was born in Indiana in 1843, the son of A. W. and Elizabeth (Smith) Massey, mother a native of Pennsylvania, and father of Indiana, and both of Scotch descent. He received his education in the common schools in this county; was married Dec. 19, 1855, to Mary Ann Hatfield, and they have had 4 children, all of whom are living. Mrs. M. is a native of Michigan. Mr. M. has been a successful farmer. We have an example of his farming in his wheat crop of 1879. He had 15 acres of wheat that yielded 50 bushels per acre. He owns 70 acres of land for which he paid at the rate of \$100 per acre, and his neighbor has offered him \$120 per acre. In politics Mr. M. is a Republican. P. O., New Carlisle.

*James McCollum*, grocer and Postmaster, Terre Coupee, was born in New York Nov. 17, 1806, and is the son of James and Lucy (Print) McCollum, father of Scotch descent, and mother a native of Connecticut; early education only in the subscription schools of New York; was on a farm until 20 years of age; worked at the tailor's trade 20 years, then became a partner in a grocery at Terre Coupee, which he is still conducting; came to this county in 1840; in 1832 he married Mary Minerva Badger, and they have no children. Mrs. McC. is a member of the P. E. Church. Politically

Mr. McCollum is a Democrat, and cast his first vote for Gen. Jackson; has been Postmaster 10 years, and Justice of the Peace.

*Perry McDonald*, farmer, sec. 3, was born in the State of New York in 1841, the son of Michael and Mary (O'Daniel) McDonald, natives of Ireland, father a pioneer in this county and killed in 1864 in the war. Perry's education was limited to the pioneer schools of this county. In 1865 he married Mary Myler, and they have one son and 2 daughters. He and his wife are members of the Christian Church, and he is a Republican. He has occupied his present residence about 10 years, and has a well-improved farm.

*Dr. Thomas T. McDonald* was born Nov. 5, 1832, in Clark county, Ohio, and is the son of J. B. and Sarah McDonald, the former a native of Maryland, and the latter of Kentucky. He came with his parents to La Porte county in 1836, and was principally raised on the farm and received his education in the common schools, and began teaching at the age of 22, which vocation he followed for ten years; during this time he began the study of medicine under Mr. J. M. Hunt, who died after a few months. Young McDonald pursued his studies unaided until the winters of 1863-'4 and 1864-'5, at which time he attended the Rush Medical College in Chicago. He began the practice of medicine in 1864, however, in what is now Lincoln tp., and in 1866 he came to New Carlisle, where he has been located ever since, and where he has steadily followed his profession, thus far, with reasonable success. The Dr. married Miss Hattie A. Higgins Nov. 6, 1866, a native of Ottawa county, Ill., born March 31, 1840; 5 of their 6 children are living, to-wit: Ella G., Harry H., Edith M., L. G. and Annie Lois. Dr. McDonald served as School Trustee and was elected to the office of Tp. Trustee, which office he is holding at present. Mrs. McDonald is a member of the Presbyterian Church. P. O., New Carlisle.

*Rev. W. P. McKinsey* was born in Rockbridge county, Va., Aug. 17, 1837; moved to this State with his father and family in 1849; joined the M. E. Church at Thorntown, Ind., Nov. 19, 1858; Educated at the common schools of Virginia and Indiana, and at the Thorntown Academy, then under the presidency of Rev. C. N. Sims, D. D.; served nearly four years in the 40th Reg. Ind. Vol. Inf., in suppressing the Rebellion, first for eight months as First Surgeon of Co. A, and then for 18 months as First Lieutenant of the same Co., the most of the time in command; then for 20 months as Quartermaster of the Regiment; licensed to preach at Stockwell, Ind., in August, 1868, and the following October was sent by Rev. S. D. Cooper, P. E., as preacher in charge of Star City Circuit; has served the following Churches: Star City, one year, Fulton, one year; Hebron, two years; State Line, one year; Jamestown, one year; Westville, three years; and New Carlisle, three years. Mr. McK. was married Oct. 3, 1865, Miss Anna Cones, of Thorntown, Ind.

*Fred G. Miller*, farmer, sec. 4, was born in Germany in 1835, son of Samuel Miller; received his education in the high schools of Germany; came to La Porte county, Ind., in 1854, since which time he has been farmer and contractor. In 1857 he married Amelia G. Gulback, and of their 9 children 7 are living, 4 boys and 3 girls. Mr. M. has been successful in business; at the present time he owns a saw-mill and 264 acres of land; has owned 1,000 acres, and been more extensively engaged in the land business than now; has sold his timber mostly to railroad companies; in 1865 he brought a number of Polanders into this section of the country, and is still importing them; there are now about 35 families of them in this tp., industriously clearing the marsh timber, and having farms of 20 to 80 acres each. Mr. M. is a Democrat, and he and his wife are members of the German Reform Church.

*Isaac Newton Miller*, farmer, sec. 3, was born in this county in German tp., Nov. 3, 1835, and is the son of William and Mary Miller, the former a native of Virginia, and the latter of Indiana, who started the "Miller Settlement" in German tp. in 1830; Mr. M. became a wealthy and influential man, and served two terms in the Legislature of this State. Mr. I. N. Miller received his education in the common schools and Wabash College; is a remarkably successful farmer, as was his father, and has the best peach orchard in this tp.; he is a cheerful, free-hearted and obliging gentleman, and his neighbors say that he makes more money than any of them. He is a brother of Maj.-Gen. Miller, of California. He ran a mill in South Bend two years, and did not succeed well; he then doubled his diligence, went to farming, and at present owns 240 acres of land; for the last five years he has raised 120 acres of wheat, which has averaged 20 bushels per acre. March 25, 1858, he married Miss Ritter, a daughter of Jacob Ritter, who also settled here in 1830. They have 3 sons and one daughter. Mr. M. is a thorough Republican, and was president of the Garfield and Arthur club in New Carlisle.

*Jens Morton*, born in Denmark in 1836, is the son of Jenson Morton; parents natives of Denmark; commenced to learn the blacksmith's trade while in Denmark; emigrated to America when 17 years old, and completed his trade at La Porte, Indiana. His education is limited to the common schools in Denmark. He was married in 1863 to Sarah Findley, a native of Indiana. Her mother was one of the pioneers of this county, settled as early as 1836. They have only one child, Freddie Morton, born in 1865. Mr. and Mrs. M. are members of the Christian Church at New Carlisle. In politics, Mr. M. is a Republican. He came to this county in 1875; was in Colorado three years. He owns 80 acres of good land, which he has himself earned.

*H. M. Nickerson*, farmer and stock raiser on sec. 15, was born in Warren county, Ohio, in 1833. He is the son of Benjamin and Maria (Williams) Nickerson, of English descent; received his education in the common schools in St. Joseph county, Ind.; emigrated

with his parents to this county in 1837, and has lived here ever since. From the age of about 16 to 18 he worked at blacksmithing. He was married in 1855 to Rebecca Compton, and of their 12 children, 9 are living. He and his wife are both consistent members of the Christian Church. He has been a Trustee; in politics he is a Democrat; has held the office of Supervisor for six years. He has been a successful farmer, and is the owner of 175 acres of land.

*Hurtain Proud*, farmer, sec. 27, was born in Ohio Nov. 7, 1831, the son of the next mentioned; was brought to this county when four or five years old, by his parents; educated in the common schools of this county; married the first time to Julia Haines, June 16, 1861, and they had 3 sons and one daughter; she died in February, 1877, and Mr. P. subsequently married the widow of Frazy Carr. Mr. P. is a Democrat, and is now School Director in his district.

*Joseph Proud*, farmer, sec. 22, was born in Ohio April 19, 1808, and is the son of Peter and Abigail (Turner) Proud, natives of New Jersey, and of German descent; educated in the subscription schools of Warren county, Ohio; moved to this vicinity in 1835, where he has lived ever since. June 5, 1829, he married Harriet Woolsey in Warren county, Ohio, and of their 12 children, 8 are living, 4 boys and 4 girls, all married except the 4th son, Joseph, who is living on his father's farm and does most of the business; his father is a little deaf. All the children are living in this State except Jesse, who is married and lives in Michigan. Mr. P. is a Democrat.

*Henry B. Runstead*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 13; P. O., Terre Coupee; was born in this State in 1829, the son of Henry A. and Anna (Bell) Raustead, father a native of Massachusetts, and mother of New York; the latter is still living, at the age of 84. The subject of this sketch was brought to this county in 1834 by his parents; was educated in the common schools of this State; has followed farming all his life. In 1850 he married Jane Fox, and they have had 5 children, 3 of whom are living. Mr. R. owns 1,000 acres of land in this county, 700 of which is good farming land; he has also a fine residence, good out-buildings, etc. He is a Freemason and a Republican.

*Prof. Albert E. Rowell*, principal of the New Carlisle public school, was born in the State of New York July 22, 1823, and is the son of Asahel and Phœbe (Lunt) Rowell; received his education in the common schools and Monroe (N. Y.) Academy; he was endeavoring to obtain a regular collegiate education, when the death of his father, just before he was ready to enter college, compelled him to take the responsibility of the family; his father was a farmer and teacher; commenced teaching at 17 years of age and followed the profession until he was 30. Prof. R. has been a diligent student all his life; five of his brothers and sisters are living and have all been teachers; he has taught regularly every year since he was 32,



namely, in New York, Michigan, Illinois and this State. He taught at Battle Creek, Mich., nine years in one building; indeed, his experience and qualifications are so great that many parties propose him for State Superintendent of Public Instruction; in New York he was a Superintendent of schools, and in Michigan, School Inspector.

He was married the first time to Celinda Eckler, and they have had 2 children; one is married and resides in the State of New York. Mrs. R. died, and subsequently, Prof. R. married Harriet L. Beman; they are members of the Congregational Church, in which denomination the professor has acted as Deacon. Mrs. R. is also teaching in the same building where her husband is engaged.

*George H. Service*, banker, merchant and grain-dealer, New Carlisle, was born in this county in 1848, and is the son of J. H. and Sarah (Flanegan) Service; received his education in the high schools of this county; was married in 1846 to Mary J. Hews, a native of this State, and they have 2 daughters: Clara Lucille and Anna L. Mr. S. is a very prominent business man; last year, 1879, he bought and shipped a million bushels of wheat, besides attending to his mercantile and banking business, buying other grain, etc. He was recently very active in establishing the water-works of New Carlisle, and many of his opponents have since seen the wisdom of his course. See page 770. Mr. S. is a Republican, a prominent Freemason, and a member of the Baptist Church.

*J. H. Service*, banker, New Carlisle, was born in the State of New York Nov. 15, 1812, and is the son of Philip and Clara (Hall) Service, natives also of New York, father of German and mother of English ancestry; received his education in the common schools of his native State, followed the farm with his parents until 22 years of age, and then settled in New Carlisle, where he has accumulated a handsome fortune. He started in life as a poor boy, worked at brick-making two years, kept store in New Carlisle 30 years, except 1843-'6 he was in Buchanan; the last four years he has followed banking. He is one of the most influential men of the community, and has represented this county one term in the Legislature, but he usually declines public offices, preferring the energies of a business life. In 1847 he married Sarah A. Flanegan, and they have 2 sons and 2 daughters, all married except the younger son, who is still at home.

*Peleg Slocum*, deceased, was a prominent farmer in this tp.; he was born July 28, 1807, in New York, of German ancestry; he had good mechanical abilities, and worked at the carpenter's and shoemaker's trades and at farming, in the latter of which he was very successful; he owned 400 acres of good land here at one time, and even more. Aug. 29, 1840, he married Mary Egbert, daughter of Cornelius and Rachel Egbert, pioneers of this county, and of their 8 children 5 are living and married. Mr. S. was politically a Democrat, and a faithful man; died June 24, 1862. Mrs. S. is living on the home place with her youngest daughter.

*David Smith*, farmer, sec. 8; P. O., Dayton, Mich.; was born in Ohio in 1821, the son of Jonathan and Nancy (Miller) Smith, natives of Pennsylvania, of German descent, and members of the Dunkard Church; father a successful farmer, worth at one time \$30,000. David was educated in Portage tp., and in 1869 he settled in this tp.; has been a farmer all his life, with success, as he has raised his fortune from nothing to 315 acres of land, 200 of which is the very finest. In 1843 he married *Permelia Jane Massey*, and of their 5 children 3 are living; she died in 1857, and in 1859 Mr. Smith married *Mary Jane Gates*, and they have 4 children living. Mrs. G. is a member of the Dunkard Church, and Mr. G. in politics is a Republican.

*Henry Smith*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 20; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in this county in 1850, the son of Jonathan and *Susannah J. (Runion) Smith*, of German ancestry; educated in the common schools; was married in 1872 to *Susannah Gogley*. Mr. Smith owns 226 acres of land, and in politics is a Democrat. His father, a pioneer in this county, is still living, a wealthy farmer, having owned at one time as much as 800 acres of land. He is a liberal man.

*Job Smith*, born in New Jersey in 1813; he is the son of Job and Rachel (Rodgers) Smith, father of English and mother of German and English descent. They were natives of New Jersey. He never attended school a day in his life, but can read, and says he could have made himself a good scholar after he was grown up. His mother died in 1815. When he was 14 years old he started out to make his own way through the world, but was to give his father all he made except what it took to clothe him till he was 21 years old, which was about one half of what he could make. He came to Indiana when he was 19 years old, and worked in the country the first year; the next year he worked for John Rush; the next summer came to Terre Coupee Prairie, where he has lived ever since. He was married in 1834, to *Elizabeth Lancaster*; they commenced to keep house with \$12 worth of household furniture, and slept on a one-legged bedstead made by building in the corner of the house. They have one child, a girl, married and living in Missouri at present. Mrs. S. died in 1844. He was again married in 1851, to Mrs. Little, whose maiden name was *Martha Ann Green*, and they have 9 children, 5 of whom are married. Mr. S. is a farmer, and owns 255 acres of good land. He was here when all the wheat was cut by hand, all grass cut with a scythe, single-shovel plows, all the houses made of logs, clapboard roof and puncheon floors; if a man was more than two days building, he would be called lazy or very slow. He was formerly a Whig, but is now a Republican in politics, has been Supervisor; never wore any clothing except home-made till he was 17 years old. It was 25 years after he came to this county before he saw any of his relatives, then he went back among them. He is a liberal and kind-hearted man, and is much respected by his neighbors.

*James Swank*, born in the State of Ohio, in 1844, is the son of Peter and Elizabeth (Cramer) Swank, mother native of New Jersey, and father of Pennsylvania. He came to this county in 1850, and lived here until his death, which occurred in 1880. Mr. S. received his education in the common schools in this county, is a farmer on sec. 15, where he owns a farm of 40 acres of land. He was married in 1868 to Martha Fisk, a member of the United Brethren Church. They have 2 children. Mr. S. is a Democrat. P. O., New Carlisle.

*E. C. Taylor* was born Dec. 9, 1832, in Champaign county, Ohio, and is the son of Levi and Sarah Taylor, the former a native of Virginia, and latter of New York. His grandfather was one of Ohio's first settlers. Mr. T. was reared on the farm to the age of 16 or 18, at which time he began clerking and continued this business until he became of age, when he and a Mr. Parker formed a partnership in the dry-goods business at North Louisburg, Ohio, and after a short time they moved their stock of goods to Kingston, where they took a third partner, H. B. Evans, and followed merchandising business for about one year, when they removed their store to Allen county, where Mr. Taylor sold his interest and began farming, which he followed in summer and clerked in winter; this he followed from 1854 to 1858, at which time he migrated to Berrien county, Mich., where he resided until Nov., 1864, at which time he located in this place and opened a store consisting of groceries, provisions, flour, salt, queen's-ware, glassware, stone-ware, wooden-ware, notions, confectioneries, school books and stationery. Mr. Taylor married Miss Sarah C. Harris Dec. 16, 1856, who was born March, 1839, in Green county, Ohio, and they had 6 children, to wit: Charles L., Emma C., Annie B., Edward W., Daisy D. and Harris E. Mrs. T. is a member of the Christian Church. Mr. Taylor has held the office of Town Treasurer for 14 years, and is a member of the Masonic fraternity. He owns 123 acres of land, besides his town property. P. O., New Carlisle.

*Eli Terrill* was born April 11, 1844, on sec. 30, this tp., where he is living at the present time. He is the son of Nathaniel B. and Sarah Ann (Garrett) Terrill, natives of Ohio, mother of German descent, father of English. He received his education in the common schools in the district where he now lives, and has chosen the vocation of his father, that of farming. He was married in 1871 to Sarah E. Lamb, a native of this county. This union has been blessed with 4 children, 2 of whom are living, one boy and one girl. He is a Republican in politics; is a successful farmer, owning 223½ acres of land.

*Eli Wade*, farmer and stockman, sec. 28; P. O., New Carlisle; was born in Ohio Oct. 12, 1830, and is the son of John and Mary (Jennings) Wade, natives of England. The subject of this sketch is a self-made man, having never attended school more than 20 days in his life. In 1850 he married Rebecca Shreader, and they have a family of 10 children, 4 sons and 6 daughters. In 1855 he emigrated

from Ohio to Indiana, and in 1859 to this county, where he has done well, financially. He and his wife are members of the M. E. Church, in which denomination he has been steward. In politics he is a Democrat. He has followed farming all his life, in which occupation he has been successful; he now owns 180 acres of land.

*D. G. Warren* was born in Ohio Nov. 3, 1833, the son of D. H. and Sarah (Graham) Warren, mother a native of Ohio and of Irish descent, and father of Maryland and of English descent. He received his education in the common schools of Indiana. He was married Jan. 2, 1867, to Eliza A. White, whose parents were among the early settlers of this county. In politics Mr. Warren is a Democrat, and he is a Freemason. Mr. and Mrs. Warren have also spent five or six years of their married life in Iowa, where they worked hard and were financially successful, but moved back for the sake of being near her parents. Their farm is on sec. 22, and consists of 80 acres, mostly under a high state of cultivation.

*Samuel Wenger* was born in Darke Co., O., in 1841; is the son of Joseph and Lydia (Isenhonser) Wenger, of German descent. He received his education in the common schools of Ohio; is not married; in company with his mother and sister he owns a farm of 135 acres, on sec. 2. He enlisted in the army twice during the Rebellion, the first time in the 152d Ohio National Guards, and the second time, for one year, in the 187th Ohio Vol. Inf., and served till the close of the war. He is a Republican. He came to St. Joseph county in 1866.

*Asher White* was born in New Jersey Dec. 7, 1814, and is the son of Asher and Mary (Lippincott) White, natives also of New Jersey, and of English descent; has attended school but six weeks in his life, but obtained a fair education from his mother. He has been married three times, and is also his present wife's third husband. For his first wife he married Barbara Ketrang; for his second, Jemima Druliner, by whom he had one son and one daughter; the son is keeping hotel in New Carlisle; and for his third wife Mr. White married Adaline Huntington. At present they live on sec. 23. Mr. White is a farmer, and owns 300 acres of land here and 320 near Kankakee, all good land. Coming here in 1830, he must be counted one of the earliest pioneers, and has been a steady resident here ever since. Politically, he is a Republican, and he has held the office of Trustee several terms.

*David White* was born March 17, 1812, in Monmouth county, N. J., son of Asher and Mary White, natives of New Jersey; was reared on the farm; went to Ohio, where he drove a stage five years, and settled in this tp. about 1838; in 1840 he married Miss Minta A. Copper, who was born in Warren county, Ohio, in 1823, and they have had 5 children: John, Sarah, Marshall F., Martha Ann and George W. Mr. and Mrs. W. are members of the Christian Church. P. O., New Carlisle.

*John D. White*, hotel-keeper in New Carlisle, was born in La Porte county, this State, June 15, 1841, and is the son of Asher

and Jemima (Druliner) White, the former a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Ohio, and of German descent; was educated in the common schools of La Porte county; has followed farming mostly during life, and principally upon his father's farm. In 1873 he married Catharine Gaul, and they have 2 sons, John M., born Feb. 26, 1875, and Henry M., Oct. 31, 1877. Aug. 19, 1864, Mr. White enlisted in the 11th Minnesota Infantry, and was discharged June 26, 1865, at Gallatin, Tenn.

*Granville Woolman*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 23; P. O., New Carlisle; is a son of Joseph and Rebecca (Allen) Woolman, the former a native of New Jersey, and the latter of Virginia, and both of English ancestry. The subject of this sketch received his education in the common schools of Ohio and Indiana; came to this county in 1834; was married in 1847 to Mary Whitaker, and they had 7 children. Mrs. W. died, and Mr. W., in 1877, married Sarah Jane Zigler, a member of the M. E. Church. In politics Mr. W. is a Republican. In stock-farming he makes sheep-raising a specialty; for the last five years he has clipped on an average 500 sheep, and has received good prices.



## PENN TOWNSHIP.

Much doubt and uncertainty envelope many of the events which go to make up the early history of a new country. The solitary wilds of an unexplored region afford few opportunities for making those notes and records which as time advances become valuable to the seeker after historical truths; and as a general thing the explorers and settlers of our great West have been men little accustomed to literary pursuits, and less desirous of literary honors. Besides, the arduous labors and engrossing duties of pioneer life leave little room or opportunity for that quiet and leisure indispensable to scholarly habits. Thus it is that a large portion of interesting events and reminiscences of our first settlements have faded from the memory of man, or are only handed down as traditions distorted by this uncertain medium, or mystified by the lapse of time. So it is with the pioneer history of Penn township; for we have found conflicting statements in some particulars regarding pioneer days and events; but by interviewing the most reliable authorities, the pioneers themselves, we are enabled to give a sketch which we hope will meet the approbation of all.

Penn township is a timbered country, and in the pioneer days when there were no railroads, telegraph wires, or even wagon roads, it was difficult for the settlers to go from one cabin to another without becoming lost. On one occasion a gentleman had gone some distance from home to a near neighbor's on an errand, and night overtaking him on his return he got lost, and wandered in the dense forest all night, while the wild lightnings flashed around him in a threatening manner. He was not found until late the following day. If the thick timber had been the only barrier to a rapid growth of settlement and improvement in this township, the obstacle would have soon been overcome; but there was a large amount of marsh land in the township, and it was almost impossible to traverse the marshes with a team; and the traveling was done by circuitous routes to avoid these marshy tracts of land. Many of these marshes have been drained, and now constitute a portion of the most fertile land in Penn township. The same land that now yields abundant crops was then a quagmire and a pit for explorers to fall into. It would be in keeping here to remark that there is a large marsh extending from the St. Joseph river near South Bend toward the southeast, almost the entire length of the township, or to within a half mile of the eastern line of the township. This marsh varies from three-fourths of a mile to two miles in width. Near its center is an elevated, oblong tract of land consisting of 200 to 300 acres, which is under cultivation and known

as the "Island." This peculiarly shaped marsh is regarded by the citizens of this township as once forming an arm of Lake Michigan. This is perhaps true, as the indications are such as to lead any thinking person to such conclusions.

During the first settlement of the township the pioneers got their mail at Edwardsville, Cass Co., Mich., which was carried on horseback from Fort Wayne to that point. It here intersected the mail route between Detroit and Chicago. The residences of the pioneers consisted of log huts, and some were so poor that they made bedsteads of round poles. They did their cooking by the fireplace. A stick was fastened across the chimney at some distance above the fire, and the kettles were suspended from this by means of iron hooks or chains. The bread was baked in a "Dutch oven."

Although these sturdy pioneers of the forest had to undergo many privations, they were a jovial class of people, and had their amusements and enjoyments, though in a rustic way, as do the people of the present day. The mill at which they first got their wheat ground was located below Niles, Mich.

#### INDIANS.

In those days there were ten Indians to one "pale-face," yet they were not troublesome, save to beg and steal a little when an opportunity presented itself, which is a characteristic of the "noble red man of the forest."

The noted chief "Raccoon" was buried near the house of Mr. James Curtis, in the eastern part of the township, and for weeks his tribe would bring their provisions to his grave, and sing and dance around the grave for some time, and then eat their dinners and return to camp. Raccoon's skeleton was exhumed a short time since by the Curtis boys, who took the jaw bone to Mishawaka, where it can now be found in the *Enterprise* office.

At the beginning of the Black Hawk war the settlers of Penn township, knowing the great chief Pokagon and his warriors to be very powerful, sent a delegation to confer with him, and to learn what his plan of action should be for the coming campaign. He sent the glad news back to the half frightened settlers that he would remain neutral during the contest. A German who could not understand all the English vocabulary readily, was standing by and heard Pokagon's reply announced, when he became very much excited and insisted that "that damt neutral is now not 20 miles from here."

#### BANCROFT'S MILL.

While some were busily engaged in making farms, others erected mills, and thus aided in improving the new country. In 1831 or '32 a saw-mill was built on Bawbawgo creek, near where the village of Oceola now stands. Several years after this, another mill



was built a little lower down; and by extending the same race, the one dam answered for both mills. This last mill was erected by Zelotes Bancroft; but the date is not certainly known.

In 1856, this mill having been discontinued, Mr. Bancroft and his brother William erected a saw and grist-mill on the same site. It is now owned and conducted by a nephew of the preceding. Its capacity is 25 barrels per day. Mr. Bancroft is a life-long miller, and makes the best of flour. The saw-mill attachment is also run in connection with the flouring mill.

Penn township formerly contained Harris and Madison, and a portion of Centre and Portage townships. The first settlers were William and Timothy Moat, who located here about 1828, on section 17. Soon afterward came William Holt, Jesse Skinner, S. L. Cottrell, James Curtis, the Byrkits, Irelands and others. The first church edifice was built in Mishawaka. The first election was held in 1832, and Alpheus Ireland was one of the first justices of the peace. Nathan W. Young was also among the first settlers. He pre-empted land when the surveyors were at work here, and also carried chain for the Government surveyors. The beautiful prairie in Michigan known as Young's Prairie was named for him. Mr. Young is a natural genius, and is the author of several useful inventions, but not being financially able to have them patented, other parties are reaping the fruits of his labors. He now resides in Mishawaka.

#### MISHAWAKA.

In July, 1833, A. M. Hurd laid out and platted the village of "St. Joseph Iron Works," about four miles above South Bend, on the south bank of the St. Joseph river. Jan. 1, 1835, an election was held, and James White, John J. Deming, Samuel Stancliff, Henry De Camp and Alexander Sanderlands were elected village trustees. This was the first village organization in the county. During the same year William Barbee, of Ohio, laid out an addition to the east side of the village, and on the west side another addition was made, known as Taylor's Addition. In 1836 Joseph Bartell, James R. Lawrence and Grove Lawrence laid out the town of Indiana City, on the north side of the river, opposite St. Joseph Iron Works. This land (being school land), where Mishawaka now stands, upon petition of the settlers to the School Commissioner, was purchased Jan. 1, 1833, by Mr. Hurd, who had promised to erect a blast furnace upon the site. The following spring, he, in company with William L. Earl, proceeded to erect the furnace. At the end of the year houses and shanties enough were erected to accommodate 100 persons. In the spring of 1834 a postoffice was established, and the Indian name "Mishawaka" was given it at the suggestion of Mr. Yerrington, who was appointed postmaster. The term "Mishawaka" was the name of an Indian village that once occupied Taylor's Addition to the village of St. Joseph Iron



Works, and it signifies "Swift water," or as some render it, "Thick-woods rapids." Either interpretation would be descriptive of the location, as the water at this point in the river was very swift, and also the land on either side was covered with a dense growth of heavy timber. The Indians had a small tract of land cleared where their village of Mishawaka stood, and the large corn hills, which were of a conical shape, and about two feet high, remained there for several years after this country was settled.

While houses were being erected, and settlers and prospecting parties flocking in, the work upon the furnace was fast approaching completion, and was finished in 1834. The dam was built by the St. Joseph Iron Company in 1835, which was the first dam on the St. Joseph river, and is still standing. This company was incorporated Jan. 22, 1835. Prior to this the river was navigable, and both tow and steam boats plied the limpid waters of this crystal stream for several years, as far up as Three Rivers, Mich.

The first flouring mill was erected in 1835 by Mr. Taylor. In 1834 a hotel was erected and run by Orlando Hard. The first bridge across the St. Joseph river was built at Mishawaka in 1837.

In 1839 St. Joseph Iron Works with its two additions, and Indiana City were incorporated as one town, and named Mishawaka. The town is situated on both banks of the St. Joseph, within about a mile of the most southern point of that river. The site is one of very great natural beauty, and art and taste have added largely to its original loveliness. On the south side there is a gentle upward slope from the river bank, far off beyond the limits of the town. Here, embowered beneath a profusion of natural and cultivated trees, shrubbery and flowers, is built the main portion of Mishawaka. On the opposite side the banks are more precipitous, forming a high table land, seemingly designed by Nature for its present uses. To the lover of the beautiful and the sublime, a visit to the Riverside Park is one not only to be enjoyed, but a visit to be remembered. Standing among the beautiful oaks and cedars that nature has planted upon that elevated plain, his eyes are greeted by many beautiful sights at almost the same instant. Looking directly south he sees the original Milburn Wagon Works, that tower several stories above the basement, whose walls are made bright by the reflection of the sun from the crystal waters of the beautiful St. Joseph. Then a little beyond he observes many church spires pointing toward the skies, seeming to say, "Behold the Lamb of God." And as he turns his eye to the southeast he is again impressed with the wonderful advancement in art, for here his eye falls upon a neatly constructed iron bridge, with hundreds of pedestrians, equestrians and teamsters passing over it daily. When he has completed his stroll in Riverside Park on the north side, as the sun gradually sinks toward the western horizon, and as he wends his way back to the Milburn House, he is struck with wonder and delight while crossing the bridge, for, looking into the swift-running water beneath, he sees hundreds of fish swimming in all directions.

whose golden sides almost dazzle his eyes when turned to such an angle as to throw the reflection of the sun's rays to his view.

The St. Joseph Iron Company continued to operate their blast furnaces until 1856, when the supply of ore failed. They also established a foundry, and put in operation other machinery which has been of great benefit to the place. After the exhaustion of the ore they began the manufacture of plows, cultivators, etc., and machinery. Capital stock, \$200,000. Albert Hudson is president, and J. H. Whitson general superintendent. In 1868 the name was changed to St. Joseph Manufacturing Company. The hydraulic power at this place is unsurpassed at any point on the river, and the facilities for erecting mills are most excellent. The town is situated upon the Michigan Southern and Grand Trunk Railroads, and is easily accessible from East or West. The surrounding country is one of extraordinary fertility, and the healthfulness of the place is undisputed.

In early times there was great rivalry between Mishawaka and South Bend. They were less than four miles apart, and the advantages they offered differed very slightly, except that the latter had the honor of being the county-seat. The bitterness of those days has, however, subsided, and it is now seen that the interests of the two places are identical.

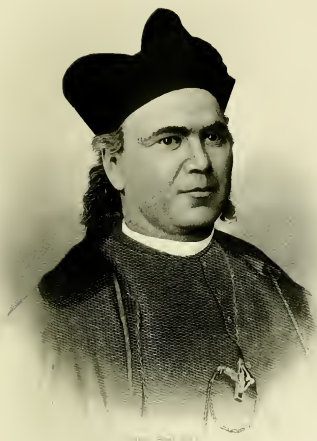
Before many years the borders of the thriving towns will meet, and it is not at all improbable that in the course of time they will be joined in one municipality.

Many years ago the steamboat Diamond was wrecked by running against a pier of the old Mishawaka bridge, and one life was lost.

The river at Mishawaka is about 100 yards wide, and the fall over the dam is eight feet. The natural fall at these rapids, in a distance of but a few rods, has been ascertained by actual measurement to be two feet and nine inches. The race on the south side is about 400 yards in length, and the one on the north side over 200 yards. On either side there is room for further extension, and there is at all times an abundance of water for all conceivable purposes. Indeed, but a very small portion of this valuable power has, as yet, been utilized. The manufactories are, however, gradually and successfully increasing, of each of which we shall speak a little further on.

The population of Mishawaka in 1860 was 1,486; by the last census (1880) it was 2,640.

In 1872 the great fire destroyed 32 buildings in the business part of town, valued, together with their contents, at over \$80,000. New brick buildings immediately arose upon the ruins, and about 24 new stores were opened in the brick blocks thus erected. Scarcely had the citizens of Mishawaka recovered from the terrible effects of the fire, when the great and noted Milburn Wagon Works were removed from their town to Toledo. This was another severe shock upon the growth and prosperity of Mishawaka. But her citizens are not



W. Corby, C.S.C.  
Frost  
Notre Dame Ind.



to be discouraged, for they have pressed forward until everything is life and bustle again. New manufactories occupy the old Milburn stand, and every enterprise seems to prosper.

#### ENTERPRISES.

*Mishawaka Mills.*—This mill was erected in 1836, and is now owned and operated by Joseph and William Miller, who purchased it in 1876. They have recently refitted and painted it, and it presents a striking appearance. They run five sets of burrs, making about 225 barrels of flour daily. The flour is of excellent quality, standing at the head of the market, both in the East and West.

*St. Joseph Mill.*—This structure was erected in 1861 by George and Casper Kuhn, and August Kellner. It is now owned and operated by Mr. George Kuhn, who is doing a good business. He does mostly a jobbing business. Capacity of mill, 150 barrels in 24 hours. He makes patent flour, as also do the other mills in Mishawaka.

*Perkins Windmill and Ax Company.*—This establishment manufactures edge tools, pumps, and water tanks; but its principal business is the manufacture of the Perkins windmill, which was invented and patented by P. C. Perkins in 1869. In 1873 there was a joint company formed for its manufacture. They are doing a large business.

*Dodge Manufacturing Company.*—The Dodge Manufactory was established in 1878, and incorporated in 1880. They manufacture school furniture, wooden ware, etc. From Jan. 1, 1880, until Aug. 1 of the same year, they took 2,000,000 feet of lumber from the stump, and sawed and worked it into goods. The company is now behind with their orders, and business constantly increasing.

*St. Joseph Valley Furniture Company.*—The business of this firm was established in a wing of the Milburn Wagon Manufactory in 1878, with a capital stock of \$50,000. They make drawer work a specialty. This firm is shipping their chamber-suits and bedsteads mostly to Ohio and the East, and they are behind with their orders, which are accumulating upon their hands. J. A. Roper is president.

*Telegraph Insulator Manufactory.*—This is of recent advent into Mishawaka. It was removed from Hudson, Mich., to this place in the summer of 1880, by Robert Gilliland. The business is a thriving one, and adds material wealth to Mishawaka.

*School Furniture Manufactory.*—A. H. Andrews & Co., of Chicago, established a branch manufactory in Mishawaka in 1871, and are doing a good business in the manufacture of school furniture.

*Bostwick Refrigerator Company.*—This enterprising company is engaged in the manufacture of refrigerators of all kinds, safes,

monse-traps and furniture, and is doing an extensive business under the direction of Joseph Bostwick, the principal stockholder.

*Ripple Mills.*—The Ripple Mills were erected by A. Cass & Co., who owned them for several years, but recently passed into the hands of J. H. and A. Eberhart, who are doing a large business. They have five run of stones, with a capacity of 225 barrels in 24 hours. They make the best of flour, and have a large trade in the East.

There is also in Mishawaka a stove factory, a wood-pulp mill, a woolen factory, a wagon manufactory, a barrel factory, and several smaller cooper shops and minor manufactories of various kinds. All departments of trade and business are represented in Mishawaka, the most prominent and leading representatives of which we will mention in the biographical department of the history of Mishawaka and Penn township.

#### RIVERSIDE PARK.

This beautiful table land, which we have already referred to, is situated on the north bank of the St. Joseph river, opposite the Milburn Wagon Works. As yet there has been nothing done to beautify the grounds, save what nature alone has done. In 1879 one Mr. Robbins Battell, of Hartford, Conn., sent Thomas McClunie, an experienced architect, here, who surveyed and platted the proposed park. Battell proposes to donate it to the town if the citizens will make of the land a park, after the prescribed improvements or specifications in the plat. This gentleman anticipates erecting a female seminary directly west of the park.

The first couple married in Mishawaka were Hiram Rush and Miss Inwood, by Rev. N. M. Wells. Indiana Yerrington was the first child born, receiving his name in honor of the State. The first death was that of a Mr. Moore.

Mishawaka has a fine cornet band, which discourses strains of that which "hath charms to soothe the savage ear." It is ably led and conducted by Mr. Jacob Eckstein, a first-class musician of Mishawaka, and, by the way, a subscriber for this work, whose sketch appears in the biographical department.

#### SECRET SOCIETIES.

The Freemasons and Odd Fellows have a fine, well-furnished hall in the third story of the Phoenix Block.

The *Masonic* lodge was organized May 26, 1852, A. L. 5,852. The names of the officers at the organization were as follows: R. S. Alden, W. M.; D. H. Smith, S. W.; J. Holdridge, J. W.; J. E. Hollister, Treasurer; T. S. Cowles, Secretary; A. C. Foot, S. D.; W. M. Wood, J. D., and A. L. Brimsmaid, Tyler. The society is in a flourishing condition, and adds materially to the sociability and refinement of the community.

*Odd Fellows.*—St. Joseph Lodge No. 27, I. O. O. F., was organized about 1843. Among its members were Dr. Eddy and John Niles, deceased, Albert Cass, H. E. Hurlbut, A. H. Long and James Easton, still members of the order. This lodge ceased to work, and Monitor Lodge, No. 286, was instituted Aug. 13, 1867. The charter members were A. H. Long, James Easton, Washington Gibson, Philip McElvain and Thomas S. Long, the latter being the first Noble Grand. The Lodge hall was destroyed by the fire of 1872, with all the furniture; since then the lodge has furnished a new hall in the Phoenix block, as above stated, which is an honor, not only to the lodge, but also to the order generally. The lodge has over a hundred members and is in a prosperous condition.

There is also a lodge of the *Knights of Pythias*, of recent organization in Mishawaka.

#### EDUCATIONAL.

We shall now revert to the pioneer days of Mishawaka and Penn township.

There soon came a time amid the rush of business, the foundation of homes, and making of farms, when the enterprising settlers of this locality turned their attention to the all-important duty of educating their children. There seemed now to be something else for the little prattlers to do besides gathering nuts and acorns from under the lofty trees of the dense forests of Penn township. The pioneer school-house was soon erected. It was a small, round-log cabin, with a puncheon door hung upon wooden hinges. The floor was also made of puncheons, as were the writing desks, which were supported by pins in the wall. The seats consisted of split logs, supported upon pin legs. They sat upon these with their backs resting against the edge of the desks; and when they wished to write they just "flopped around, right about face." But the smaller ones sat upon these rustic seats with their feet dangling a foot above the floor, and with nothing against which to rest their little bowed-up backs.

The room was warmed by a huge fire-place, which occupied the entire end of the house, and was filled with logs that the boys drew into the room upon a sled. The roof consisted of clapboards, which were fastened or secured by means of poles laid lengthwise with the roof, about three feet apart, separated by chunks or knees. The chimney was made of "cat and clay" (mud and straw) and sticks. The windows of the pioneer school-house consisted of a log removed nearly the entire length of the building, and greased paper pasted over the aperture for lights. The text-books consisted principally of a speller, Testament and an arithmetic. In those days the children did not need to dress in fine clothes, in order to rival some classmate in that direction, but all alike wore garments to school, spun and woven by their mothers.

The schools were first taught entirely by subscription, and the teachers were principally of the "ox-gad persuasion," using force rather than affection as a means of obtaining and preserving good order. The first school-house in the township was erected in 1832. The schools, as well as all branches of industry, have greatly changed since then.

In Mishawaka there had been more interest taken in the public schools than in any other part of the county, and with good success. The first school-house was built here in 1834, which was a small frame building; and the first teacher was a Miss Sheldon, of White Pigeon. The schools of Mishawaka have reached a high degree of excellence, under the wise management of Prof. Elisha Sumption, who has had charge of them for seven years, but has lately resigned on account of failing health. Mishawaka has a fine high-school building, that cost about \$50,000, containing 12 rooms and offices. This is one of the finest school buildings in Northern Indiana, and speaks well for the enterprise of the flourishing town of Mishawaka.

There are 14 school districts in Penn township. There were formerly 15, but No. 7 was, in 1880, discontinued and attached to district No. 9 and to Mishawaka.

The County Superintendent of Public Instruction, Mr. Moon held his annual county teachers' institute in the high-school building at Mishawaka, in August, 1880, and teachers were favorably impressed with the very able instructions there given to them by professors from Indianapolis, Terre Haute, Valparaiso and New York. The educational interests are thus being promoted, not only in Mishawaka and Penn township, but throughout the entire county.

#### RELIGIOUS.

*Mishawaka Baptist Church.*—There was an organization of this Church in Mishawaka prior to 1840, but it has since become extinct. The present Church was organized May 14, 1867, by Elders T. P. Campbell, of South Bend, and B. P. Russell, of Niles, Mich., and brethren from the Churches of South Bend, Niles and Penn township. There were 18 charter members; Rev. M. T. Lamb was the first pastor, P. C. Perkins first clerk, and J. C. Snyder the first treasurer. The first deacons were John Merriman, A. J. Ames and J. C. Snyder. Rev. F. Moro was pastor of the Church from December, 1870, to November, 1871. Rev. B. P. Russell became pastor in 1874. In 1868 this society erected a house of worship, valued at \$5,000. Sabbath-school each Sabbath at 12 m.; and services each alternate Sabbath morning and each Sabbath evening, by Rev. H. J. Finch, pastor. Present number of communicants, 101.

*First Baptist Church of Penn Township.*—Feb. 11, 1837, a meeting was held in the house of Eli B. Mead, for the purpose of constituting a Baptist Church in Penn township. Rev. Price, of



Edwardsburg, Elan S. Colby, of Lockport, and Mr. Alger of Mishawaka, were present. Rev. Price was chosen moderator, and Mr. Colby made clerk of the meeting. The following persons presented letters of commendation, and expressed a desire to unite in Church fellowship: Isaiah Ferris, Jacob M. Galor, Jonathan Buck, John Barton, Lucinda Ferris, Sr., Elizabeth Ferris, Azubah Galor, Anna Buck, Delinda Barton and Parmelia Ferris. Elder Price examined them, extended to them the right-hand of fellowship, and pronounced them a Church, to be known as "The First Baptist Church of Penn Township." John Barton was the first clerk and B. J. Ferris the first treasurer.

Messrs. Galor and Buck were elected trustees, to attend to selecting ground and erecting a house of worship. In 1838 the society erected a small log house in which to worship. Rev. Adam Miller was the first pastor, they having worshiped for some time without a minister in charge. The present house was erected in 1849, a large frame building, about  $4\frac{1}{2}$  miles south of Mishawaka. The Church grew weaker by deaths, emigration and removals to Mishawaka, until it is now extinct. It was the first Baptist Church organized in the county, and now it is numbered with the things that were. Its only survivors are Jacob M. and Azubah Galor, of Mishawaka; Parmelia Ferris, now Mrs. Moore, of Pleasant Valley; and Delinda Barton, of Kansas.

*Pleasant Valley Baptist Church* was organized about 1852. They have a neat little frame house of worship in the northeastern part of Penn township; Elder H. J. Finch is the pastor. Number of communicants, 20.

*Christian Church.*—The Christian Church at Mishawaka was organized about 1843. The first elders were H. E. Hurlbut, A. Alden and Morris Hartwick. The first deacons were S. B. Hutchinson, A. L. Wright and C. Hartman. The pioneer ministers of this denomination, who occasionally held services in Mishawaka, were R. Wilson, C. Martin, J. Martindale, P. T. Russell, H. E. Hurlbut and William T. Horner. The latter began in 1854, and preached nearly regularly for two years. During the next twelve years Elders Lane, New, Beggs, Green, Shepard and Hurlbut, respectively, preached to the Church. In 1867 I. J. Chase became pastor, remaining for two years, when Elder William B. Hendrin took his place and remained for the same length of time. Elders R. Fanret, Suttan and S. K. Sweetman also officiated as pastors. This Church owes much to Dr. O'Connor and S. I. H. Ireland for its prosperity. The house is valued at \$5,000. The society sustains weekly prayer-meetings and Sabbath-school, besides services each Sabbath by the pastor, Elder C. P. Hendershot. Communicants, 120.

*St. Joseph's Catholic Church*, at Mishawaka. The first organization of this society dates back to 1848, although services had been previously held here by that denomination. A house had been erected on the north side of the river, and was that year dedicated to the Most High. Revs. W. Zegers, J. F. Gouesset, W. Masters

and the Father Superior of Notre Dame, Very Rev. R. E. Sorin, and others were instrumental in establishing this Church. The society had no pastor until 1857, when Rev. John Mayer was appointed to this charge; but in 1859 he accepted the pastorate of St. Peter's Church in Chicago. In December, 1859, Bishop Right Rev. John H. Luers, of Fort Wayne, appointed Rev. H. Koenig to the pastorate of this Church. In March, 1860, the house was destroyed by fire, which was a severe blow upon the young Church. By the united efforts of priest, the Church, and some of the wealthy citizens of Mishawaka, another house was erected on the south side, which is the present commodious structure. Special mention should be made of George Milburn, who gave liberally to this enterprise. The house is 92 by 41 feet, and 25 feet high. Many improvements were made during the administration of Rev. Koenig, including a parsonage, and a building for a parochial school. In May, 1867, Rev. A. B. Oechtering entered upon the duties of pastor of this Church. In 1871 two fine bells were purchased, and in 1872 another was added, which make the town resound with their melody as they call the good people together. In 1872 the walls were frescoed, and still further improvements made. The pulpit and altar in this Church are unsurpassed for beauty and grandeur in the United States. On this are represented the 14 principal scenes of the passion and death of our blessed Lord.

Catholics do not worship these pictures and images, as many suppose; but as they look upon them they meditate upon the suffering Master and his love for poor mankind.

The Church now supports two schools, and owns a library of 600 volumes. It still continues to prosper under the fatherly care of Rev. A. B. Oechtering, who has been tendered a more remunerative situation, but preferred to remain here. The communicants now number over 200 families.

*Evangelical Association*, at Mishawaka, was organized in 1846 by Rev. G. G. Platz, with 15 charter members. The first presiding elder was Rev. G. G. Platz, and the first pastor was Rev. William Kolb. They erected a house of worship in 1857. The Church grew and prospered for a time, but by death and emigration it became very much weakened. There are now but 34 members. They sustain weekly prayer-meetings and Sabbath-school; services each Sabbath by the pastor, Rev. Henry Arlen. This society erected a new church edifice in 1872.

*Coal Bush Evangelical Association*, three and a half miles south of Mishawaka. This society, of which there is one in Mishawaka, is not known in their records by the name of "Church," any more than the term Odd Fellows, or Good Templars is known by that name; but nevertheless it is a Church as much as any other Christian organization. It was organized in 1847, by Rev. G. G. Platz. The house was erected in 1856. At one time this society was one of the strongest in the North Indiana Conference; but by death and emigration it has been weakened until the membership numbers

but nine. Services each alternate Sunday, by Rev. Henry Arlen, pastor. The rules and regulations of this Church are much the same as that of the Methodists. In fact, many persons call them German Methodists, thinking them to be indentical with that denomination.

*St. Andrew's Evangelical Church*, of Mishawaka.—This organization differs materially from the "Evangelical Association." It was organized in 1864 with 25 members, by Rev. Philip Wagoner. They erected a house the same year. Services each alternate Sunday, by the pastor, Rev. Philip Wagoner. Communicants about 25.

*Lutheran Church*, at Mishawaka, was organized prior to 1848 by Rev. Philip Bernreuther, with about 12 members. This society sustains services each Sabbath in summer, and each alternate Sabbath in the winter seasons. In the winter they also have a Sunday or catechism school, for children, and sustain also a denominational day-school four days each week during winter. Communicants about 20. Rev. Gustavus Rosenwinkel, pastor.

*Mishawaka Methodist Episcopal Church* was organized in 1835. The charter members were Richmond Tuttle and wife, Joseph Skerritt and wife, Susan Hurd, and a brother whose name is lost. They at first worshiped in an empty store building, which was also used by the Presbyterians. The first house of worship was erected in 1836, another in 1844, which is now occupied by the Mishawaka furniture store. The last and present structure was erected in 1872, which is a credit, not only to the Methodist Church, but also to the town of Mishawaka. Sabbath-school each Sabbath, and services each Sunday morning and evening, by the pastor, Rev. Mr. Cone. They also sustain a weekly prayer-meeting and class-meeting.

*Tamarack Methodist Church*, seven miles southeast of Mishawaka.—This class was organized in a log school-house, Dec. 19, 1855, by Rev. E. P. Church, with 11 charter members, viz.: A. B. Lamport, A. M. Lamport, Roxy Lamport, Willard Rockwell, Deborah Rockwell, Elam Crouch, Benjamin Pickard, Isaac Ghrist, Esther S. Ghrist, Edwin Sawyer and Phoebe Sawyer. They worshiped in the Tamarack school-house until the fall of 1880, when they erected a substantial house 34 x 50 feet. There are now 56 communicants. Sabbath-school each Sabbath, and services each alternate Sunday by the pastor, Rev. J. H. Jackson.

*Free Methodists*, of Mishawaka. This peculiar sect was organized in Mishawaka in 1877. They are a branch of the M. E. Church, or rather have separated themselves from that Church. There are about 16 or 18 members, and they worship in an old dwelling-house, fitted up for their purpose.

*Presbyterian Church*, at Mishawaka. This Church was organized July 25, 1834, by Rev. N. M. Wells, who died in Detroit in 1879. The organization took place in the house of Philo Hurd. The following is a list of the charter members: Rev. N. M. Wells, Elias

Smith, Alna Smith, Levi Dean, Polly Dean, Philo Hurd, Martha Hurd, Alanson M. Hurd, Sarah L. Hurd, Willis S. Garrison. Philo Hurd and Elias Smith were the first elders, and Philo Hurd the first deacon. Jan. 29, 1835, John J. Deming was received into the Church as an elder, and elected clerk. There is now in the church a chandelier presented to the society by Judge Deming's daughter, Mrs. Charles Crocker, of California. The first house of worship was erected in 1837, and another one in 1845, which was destroyed by the fire of 1872. The present structure was erected in the fall of 1872. Services each Sabbath morning and alternate Sabbath evenings by the pastor, Rev. S. V. McKee. Sabbath-school each Sabbath. Communicants, 90.

#### PERSONAL SKETCHES.

As a country grows older the more interesting and valuable is its biographical history, and not only so, but the best writers of the country are advocating the more general reading of this class of literature by the young, believing it to exert a better influence upon them than any other class of the literature of the day. With these thoughts in view, and in justice to the veterans who have made this township and city what it is, we append brief personal sketches of many of them. Nor do we forget those who to-day are actively engaged in life's labors.

*Zelotes Bancroft* was born in the town of Castile, N. Y., Oct. 23, 1831. At a very early age he was placed at work in a flouring-mill, which vocation he has followed for the most part during life. He came with his parents to this county in 1837. He was married June 1, 1865, to Miss Sarah Masten, by whom he has had 4 children, one living, viz.: Zelia. He is proprietor of Bancroft's flouring-mill at Osceola, of which we have given a history. William Bancroft, deceased, the father of Zelotes, was born in Granville, Mass., was a carriage and wagon-maker by trade; he removed to New York in 1826, where he engaged in lumbering as well as the prosecution of his trade. He was married Dec. 24, 1828, to Miss Emeline Belden, by whom he had 6 children; 5 of these are living: Zelotes, Alma, Ruth, Emeline and Louisa.

*Stephen J. Batchelder, M. D.*, was born in Clinton county, N. Y., Nov. 21, 1833, and is a son of Stephen and Polly Batchelder, natives of New Hampshire. The former was a shoemaker. The subject of this notice was reared on a farm and received a common-school education. He came with his parents to Noble county, Ind., in 1850, and removed to Jasper county, Iowa, in 1853. He labored as an assistant in a saw-mill in Iowa, where he had one hand crippled by the saw. He afterward read medicine under Dr. Hiram Parker, of Greencastle, Iowa. He graduated at the Keokuk College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1856. He began to practice in Greencastle, Iowa, in 1869, and in March of the same year he came to Osceola, Ind., where he remained ten years, except one year, which

he spent in California. In April, 1879, he came to Mishawaka, where he has a good practice. He and wife own 142½ acres of land in Penn tp. He was married in 1856 to Rothilda Cole, by whom he has 3 children: Squire J., John H. and Rosey E. He again married in 1876 Mrs. Eliza Griffiths. Mrs. B. had 2 children by her first husband, namely, Frank and Carrie.

*Harrison G. Beemer* was born in Sussex county, N. J., June 11, 1838, and is a son of Moses and Susan (Ayers) Beemer, natives also of New Jersey. He was brought up on a farm and educated at Holmesdale and University of Bethany, Pa.; taught school three years in Pennsylvania; clerked for Lloyd & Taylor, New York city, for four years. He then went to Marion, Ohio, and was employed as clerk for Johnson, Uhler & Co. for three years. He served in the late war in Co. G, 136th O. Vol. Inf., in 1864-'5. He afterward went to Lima and engaged in the dry-goods business in company with Mr. Holmes. In 1868 he bought Holmes' interest. He was married Sept. 22, 1865, to Miss Malinda Garvin, and they have had 3 children, 2 of whom are living: Nellie Estella and Georgianna May. Mr. Beemer came to Mishawaka in 1869, and engaged in the dry-goods business with his brother-in-law, Mr. Garvin, until 1875, when he bought Garvin's interest and took Mr. J. Quigg as a partner in October, 1879. At the fall election in 1879 he was elected to the office of County Recorder.

*E. V. Bingham*, Justice of the Peace, Mishawaka, was born in this tp. Aug. 1, 1844, and is a son of Alfred and Ann (Miller) Bingham, the former a native of New York, and the latter of Pennsylvania. Mr. B. was brought up and educated in this place. He was admitted to the Bar in November, 1876, and began the practice of law soon after. He was elected to the office of Justice of the Peace in 1872, and is now re-elected for the third term. He was married Dec. 7, 1872, to Miss Harriet E., second daughter of Dr. Grimes, of Mishawaka. They have one child, Katie. He entered the late war in Co. G., 48th Ind. Vol. Inf., and was afterward promoted to Sergeant Major; was with Sherman on his noted march to the sea; was in the battle of Bentonville, and at Raleigh at the time of the Sherman and Johnston agreement.

*John Boles*, P. O., Oceola; was born in Wayne county, Ohio, Nov. 22, 1826, and is a son of James and Jane (Lawrence) Boles, the former a native of Ireland, and the latter of Pennsylvania. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He came to this county in 1844, and worked at the carpenter trade for 18 years. He was married in 1867 to Miss Mary Smith, by whom he has 3 children: Elmer, Lizzie and Johnnie. In 1859 he drove an ox team to California, and returned in 1860, and engaged in farming. He resides on sec. 17, Penn tp., and owns 140 acres of valuable land. He cast his first vote for Polk, and has ever since voted the Democratic ticket.

*Lewis T. Booth* was born in Seneca county, N. Y., Sept. 16, 1821; his parents were David and Ann (Darrow) Booth, natives of Connecticut. Mr. Booth was reared on a farm and educated at Waterloo, N. Y. He worked at the coopering business in New York, but has since been a carpenter and manufacturer of furniture. He was married in 1853 to Miss Sarah Boys, by whom he has 5 children, viz.: John, George, Mary, Mattie and Hattie. He came to Mishawaka in 1841, and returned to New York in 1846. He again came to Mishawaka in 1852, where he subsequently engaged in making coffin sets for the Eastern markets until 1859, when he became a member of the Mishawaka Furniture Company. He now deals in furniture and lumber, and has a good business. He also owns a saw-mill here, by which he is doing well.

*John Borough, M. D.*, was born in Wyandot, Ohio, March 17, 1843, and is a son of Henry and Sarah (Critz) Borough, the former a native near Martinsburg, Virginia, and the latter of Stark county, Ohio. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common school and in Findlay, Ohio. He served one and one-half years in the U. S. A. Signal Service during the late war. He taught school seven years, during the last two of which he read medicine. He then clerked 18 months in a drug store. He graduated at the Cleveland Homeopathic College in February, 1874. He came to Mishawaka in July, 1874, and has built up a good practice. He was married Feb. 3, 1876, to Miss Helen E. Close.

*Joseph Bostwick*, proprietor of the Bostwick Refrigerator Manufactory, which we mention in the history of this tp.

*Henry Burket*, farmer on sec. 32; P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Elkhart county, March 19, 1833, and is a son of John and Susannah Burket, natives of Ohio. Mr. B. was brought up on a farm and received a common-school education. He was married Jan. 8, 1858, to Miss Phoebe A. Heckman, by whom he has 6 children, viz.: Milton A., Levi, Sarah A., William H., John W. and Benjamin T. Mr. Burket owns 90 acres of valuable land and is engaged in farming and stock-raising. In politics he is a Republican. Mr. and Mrs. Burket are members of the German Baptist (or Dunkard) Church.

*James A. Burt* is a native of England, and was born May 12, 1832. His parents, John and Harriet (Parsons) Burt, emigrated to Lake county, Ohio, in 1836. He was a hard-working boy and had no educational advantages. His education he has obtained by his own exertions. He began to work at the butcher's trade when 16 years old, at which he still is engaged. He came to Mishawaka in 1857, and in 1858 married Miss Edith Crofoot, by whom he has had 2 children; one of these, Milroy, is living. He owns a large first-class meat market and is doing a good business.

*William W. Butterworth, M. D.*, located in Mishawaka in June, 1847, for the purpose of practicing his profession. He came an entire stranger in the beginning of his manhood. "The town

then was in the height of its prosperity," with a larger manufacturing interest than any other place in all Northern Indiana. The medical field was then occupied by a strong corps of educated and popular physicians, as well as by a number of "root-and-herb," and "steam" doctors. Fresh from his pupilage and medical lectures, Dr. Butterworth "flung out his sign," and with great self-reliance, ambition and industry sought the confidence and patronage of the people. He had come to stay, and was a success, almost from the beginning, in getting a fair share of business and good patronage. The prominent physicians of Mishawaka then were Drs. Styles, Vaughn, Badger and Eddy, all now deceased. They were well advanced in medical science. The latter named gentleman afterward became distinguished in State and national politics. Until 1861 and during the war, Dr. Butterworth always maintained a first-class rank in his profession in Northern Indiana. In 1862 he, with a few other medical men from different parts of the State, was commissioned by Gov. Morton, by authority of the War Department, to visit Indiana troops in the field and hospital, then suffering so terribly from typhoid disease, and in that capacity rendered efficient aid at the battle-field and camp of Pittsburg Landing. In the summer of 1862 he accepted a commission as Surgeon of the 99th Reg. Ind. Vol., and served as such to the close of the war. The last year of his service he was detailed for hospital work, principally at Marietta, Ga., and Alexandria, Va. Dr. Butterworth is now President of the St. Joseph Medical Society, and President of the St. Joseph Valley District Medical Society, composed of doctors from the counties of Elkhart, St. Joseph and La Porte, Ind., and Cass and Berrien counties, Mich. The Doctor's papers read before medical societies were always among the best, some of which were published in the *Peninsular* (Mich.) *Medical Journal*, and the *Lancet*, of Cincinnati, Ohio. He is a terse, expressive writer and public speaker, though never with much ambition or self-confidence in the latter capacity. In his writing and speaking, he is very sure to leave a "web" for hostile or friendly criticism.

In 1872 Dr. Butterworth's name was favorably mentioned in several papers as a candidate for Congress; but he felt unable to afford the expense necessary for the uncertain race, and he therefore declined the proposed honor. He is a Republican, and represented his county in the Legislature of Indiana from 1870 to 1874 with distinction. At the present time he is measurably indifferent to professional work, and devotes much time to the management of his farming interests.

He was born in Warren county, Ohio, in 1824, and comes of a sturdy family of Virginia. When a boy the family emigrated to La Porte county, Ind., where he learned much business, common sense and economy by farm work. He received a good common-school education, and was fitted for college and entered the Asbury



University, where one year was spent, after which he studied medicine and graduated at the Indiana Medical College. He subsequently took a partial course of lectures at the University Medical College, of New York.

The Doctor has been twice married, and his present wife, formerly Mrs. S. E. Kennedy, late of Mississippi, is a daughter of the Hon. Milo Smith. He has two sons and a daughter, a nice home, and a fair share of earth's treasures, and now, in excellent health, is taking, so far as possible, his comforts "as he goes along."

*Geo. V. Byrkit* was born in Penn tp. Feb. 20, 1837, and is a son of Edmund and Catharine (Bumgardner) Byrkit, natives of North Carolina. The former emigrated to Ohio with his parents when quite small, and the latter came first to Kentucky, then to Ohio. Mr. Byrkit was reared on a farm, and received his education in a cabin made of round logs, covered with clapboards, with slab benches for seats, a puncheon floor, and the light was admitted through a window, one light in height and extending the entire length of the room. His first teachers were of the "ox-gad persuasion," and wielded a large hickory withe. He was married in May, 1860, to Miss Jane Boles, by whom he had one child, Jane, now a graduate of the Mishawaka high school. Mrs. Byrkit died June 30, 1862. Mr. B. again married in 1863, this time Mrs. Susan Curtis, and they have one child, Edmund B. Mr. B. owns 216 acres of valuable land, and resides on sec. 14, where he is engaged in farming and stock-raising. Mr. Byrkit's father came to this county in 1830, when there were numerous Indians in the county. He then selected his location, planted some apple seeds, and returned and brought his family the following year. The first trip he made on horseback. He was born in the year 1800, and died in 1873.

*Albert Cass* was born in Providence, Quebec, Jan. 22, 1815. His parents were Thomas and Anna (Sherborn) Cass, natives of New Hampshire, who settled in Quebec about 1809. He was reared on a farm, and received a limited education in the common schools, attending school three months in the winter and working the rest of the year. In 1836 he came to Steuben county, Ind., and in 1837 to this county. He was the first one to start a wagon manufactory in Mishawaka. He continued in this business with William Wood for 11 years. He was married in 1841 to Miss Jane Pelling, of Ontario county, N. Y. They had 3 children, Nancy M., Sarah A. and Carrie M. He engaged in farming for the most part since he quit wagon-making. He is interested in a drug-store in Mishawaka. In politics he is a thorough Republican.

*William M. Clark* was born in Colbourn county, Canada, Feb. 11, 1835, and is a son of Seth and Caroline (Merriman) Clark, natives of Connecticut, who moved to Canada in 1838. Seth Clark was a chair-maker and painter. He made the first chair in Mishawaka. He located on a farm near Elkhart, and died March 21, 1878. William M. was educated in Mishawaka; was employed at



the age of 15 as clerk for Mr. Judson, a merchant, for several years; engaged in business for himself in Mishawaka in 1863, forming a partnership with A. M. Wing. Mr. Whitson bought Wing's interest in 1864, and in 1869 the firm of Clark & Whitson sold out their store, and are now engaged in banking.

*Henry Crofoot* was born in Lake county, Ohio, July 8, 1830, and is a son of Vernon and Diantha (Fuller) Crofoot, the former a native of New York, and the latter of Pennsylvania. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He came to this county with his parents about 1840; engaged in burning charcoal for some time; in 1853 he went by ship to California, and returned the same year. He then went to Southern Indiana to burn charcoal on a salary of \$40 a month, when ordinary wages for that kind of labor was from \$12 to \$15 per month. He returned in the fall, bought 160 acres of timber and proceeded at once to clear 125 acres of it, utilizing the timber for saw-logs, wood, etc. He was married Sept. 18, 1856, to Miss Nancy Pruner, by whom he had 11 children; 10 are living, namely, Schuyler, Hester, Clara, Viola, Willard, Linnie, Olive, Lona, Vernon and A. C. Mr. Crofoot is now engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 4, owning 240 acres of valuable land. In politics he is a Greenbacker.

*Robert H. Crooks*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 28; was born in Holmes county, Ohio, Nov. 15, 1834, and is a son of James and Mary Crooks, natives of Pennsylvania. He came with his parents to Noble county, Ind., in 1841, where he remained seven years. They then removed to La Porte county and remained until 1855, when they came to this county. Robert H. went to Illinois in 1857 and worked on a farm. He was married in April, 1860, to Miss Emily Vesey, daughter of George Vesey, of this tp. They have 4 children: Olive A., Lucius M., Mary E. and Gracie M. Mr. Crooks has been very successful in business, and now owns 200 acres of valuable land, which is well improved. His barn, 42½x64 feet, cost him \$1,200, and his house was erected at an expense of \$2,000.

*Alex. Curtis* was born in this county Nov. 25, 1834, and is a son of James and Nancy Curtis. He was reared on a farm and received an education in the common schools of this county. In 1857 he married Miss Catharine Eggins, and they have had 5 children: Flora E., Martha J. (deceased), James D., William W. and Alex. B. Mr. Curtis removed to Fulton county, Ind., where he resided one and a half years. He is engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 29, and owns 90 acres of valuable land. Mr. and Mrs. Curtis and their daughter Flora are worthy members of the Baptist Church. In politics he votes as his father did, who was a Jacksonian Democrat.

*Edwin Curtis* was born in Elkhart county, Ind., Dec. 6, 1836, but has always resided in this county. He labored hard and endured many privations, as all pioneer boys do. He went to California in 1859, and returned in 1860, and the same year went to Pike's Peak; in 1877 he went to the Black Hills, and returned. He

was married in 1866, to Miss Lucetta Mason, a native of Painesville, Ohio. They have had 3 children: Charlie, Edna, and Hattie (deceased). Mr. Curtis is engaged in farming and stock-raising, on sec. 21, and owns 120 acres of land. His father, James Curtis (deceased), was born in Miami county, Ohio, Jan. 17, 1807. He had no educational advantages, but was always a hard worker. He came to this county in 1831, when the Indians were numerous, and the timber thick and heavy. The noted chief Raccoon was a frequent caller at his residence, and was buried on the farm of Mr. Curtis, near his house. A son of Mr. Curtis, knowing the exact locality, many years afterward exhumed the skeleton and procured the jawbone of that noted chief, which is now in Mishawaka. Mr. Curtis was married Sept. 11, 1829, to Miss Nancy Byrkit, by whom he had 11 children, 10 sons and one daughter. He was a highly respected citizen; and there was one thing connected with his life of which but few can boast,—*i. e.*, he never had a lawsuit. He died Jan. 12, 1878.

*John L. Dayhuff* was born in Sandusky county, O., Nov. 27, 1836, and his parents were Moses and Hannah Dayhuff, natives of Maryland and of German descent. Mr. Dayhuff was brought up on a farm, and received a common-school education. He was but seven years old when his father died. He came to this county in 1848, and was married in March, 1859, to Miss Mary Varney, by whom he has had 8 children; of these, 5 are living, viz.: Emma J., Minnie B., William A., John B. and Charles E. Mr. D. has engaged largely in putting in wells and cisterns, and in 1864 he was employed in the sale of pumps. He began poor and now has a good home, with all the necessary comforts of life. He now has his second wife, whom he married in June, 1875. They have one child, Lulu.

*Harlow Dodge*, deceased, was born in Oneida county, N. Y., in 1815. The early part of his boyhood was spent upon a farm. He began as an apprentice at the trade of millwright when he was 14 years of age. He came to Michigan in 1836, and to this county in 1840. He was a contractor on the L. S. & M. S. R. R., having built all the depots for this road between Bristol and La Porte, and between Elkhart and Toledo. He was married Jan. 23, 1845, to Miss Elizabeth Luce, by whom he has had 5 children; of these, 4 are living, viz.: Mary, Wallace H., Nellie A. and William W. Mrs. Dodge's father was Sprowel Luce. For some years prior to his death, Mr. Dodge was engaged in manufacturing in Mishawaka.

*Wallace W. Dodge*, son of the preceding, was born in Mishawaka, July 10, 1849; he was educated at Notre Dame, Ind. He engaged in the hardware business in Mishawaka for 13 years. July 13, 1870, he was married to Miss Hattie Vessey, daughter of J. M. Vessey. He is manager and proprietor of the Dodge Manufactory already mentioned.

*A. Eberhart* was born in Wayne county, Feb. 4, 1821. His parents were Frederick and Elizabeth (Weltner) Eberhart, natives of

Pennsylvania. The former was a glass-blower, as was his father and all of his uncles, who lived to a very old age. Mr. E.'s grandmother died at the age of 99 years, after living 30 days without food or drink. She was not sick, but simply lost her desire for food and drink, and to live any longer in the world. Mr. Eberhart was married April 21, 1847, to Miss Sarah A. Boyd, by whom he had 9 children; of these, 4 are living, viz.: Flora, James, Frederick and Everett G. Mr. E. came to this county with his parents in 1836, where he has since resided. He owns an interest in the Ripple Mills at Mishawaka, already described. His mother still lives, at the advanced age of 80 years, and is very spry.

*John H. Eberhart*, brother of the preceding, was born in Yates county, N. Y., Oct. 8, 1825. His educational advantages were very limited, there being but three months' school in the winter seasons. He came with his parents to this county in 1836; they had started for Illinois; John took sick, which caused them to stop here for a season. They were well pleased with the country, and remained. He was married in August, 1850, to Miss Mary A. Pembroke, and they have had 2 children, both deceased. Mrs. Eberhart died in October, 1857, and he again married in December, 1859, this time Mrs. Mary McCan, by whom he has 2 children: Hattie L. and Nellie M. He is one of the principal stockholders in Ripple Mills, at Mishawaka.

*Jacob Eby*, farmer, sec. 4; P. O., Elkhart; was born in Waterloo county, Province of Ontario, Oct. 18, 1816, and is a son of David and Elizabeth (Bechtal) Eby, natives of Lancaster county, Pa., who went to Ontario about 1800. He was brought up in a new country, and hence his educational advantages were very limited. He wore boots made of untanned leather, or raw hide and buckskin pants, in his boyhood days. He then could see 100 times as many Indians as whites. He chopped logs from 100 acres of heavy-timbered land himself, and helped clear 300 acres ready for the plow. He was married April 7, 1840, to Miss Polly Bingeman, by whom he has had 8 children; 7 are living, viz.: Enoch, Seth, Saruch (same as Abraham's grandfather), Jacob, John, Joseph and Noah. The name of the deceased was Simon. Mr. Eby came to this county in 1861, where he is engaged in farming and stock-raising, at which he has been very successful. He owns 282 acres of valuable land.

*Jacob Eckstein* was born in Baden, Germany, Feb. 12, 1837. His parents were John and Eva Eckstein; the former was a cabinet-maker, and the subject of this sketch early learned the use of tools. He received a common-school education, completed his trade, and emigrated to America in 1854. He came to Randolph, Portage county, Ohio, first, where he remained four years. He then came to Woodland, this county, remaining there one year, and moved from there to South Bend, where he resided 18 months. He spent nine months in Cass county, Mich., when, in 1861, he removed to Mishawaka, where he still resides, engaged in the manufacture of

furniture. He was married May 10, 1864, to Miss Mary A. Haubert, by whom he has had 8 children; of these, 7 are living, namely: Jacob, Francis X., Gertrude, Peter, Nicholas, Wilhelmina and Helena. The name of the deceased child was William. Mr. Eckstein is leader of the Mishawaka Cornet Band, and a worthy member of the Catholic Church.

*Elom Eller*, farmer, sec. 29; was born in Miami county, Ohio, Sept. 14, 1826, and is a son of Jacob and Elizabeth Eller, natives of North Carolina. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He came with his parents to this tp. in 1831, where he endured the privations that pioneer boys are heir to; was married in 1849, to Miss Sobrina Patterson, by whom he has had 2 children, one now living, Warren A. The deceased's name was Charles R. Mr. Eller owns 250 acres of land, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising. In politics he is a Republican.

*James S. Ellis*, undertaker, Mishawaka, was born in the town of Starkey, Yates county, N. Y., Dec. 20, 1843, and is a son of Stephen and Mary (Schenck) Ellis, natives also of the Empire State. He was educated in Penn Yan Seminary, and at early manhood engaged with his father in the undertaker's and furniture business in Dundee, N. Y.; came to Mishawaka in 1870; followed cabinet-making until 1877, when he embarked again as undertaker and furniture dealer, repairer, etc. He was married in 1873.

*John Ernst*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 27; was born on St. Valentine's day, 1835, and is a son of Martin and Christina Ernst, natives of Baden-Baden, Germany. He was reared on a farm, and educated in a common school. He went to Canada in 1840, where he engaged in farming until 1862, when he came to this county. He married Miss Magdalene Buchheit, in February, 1864. They have had 7 children, of whom 6 are living, viz.: Mary, Christina, Leo A., Rosa, Matilda and Frank. Mr. and Mrs. Ernst are worthy members of the Catholic Church.

*George Entzler*, sec. 26. This enterprising farmer was born in Jackson county, Ohio, June 18, 1829, and is a son of George and Elizabeth (Holmeshead) Entzler, who removed with their family to this county in 1831. Mr. Entzler was brought up on a farm, and received a common-school education. He was married April 6, 1853, to Miss Anna Vesev; they have had 3 children, 2 living, viz.: Elizabeth and Enos. The deceased's name was Erastus. Mr. Entzler has a fine farm of 560 acres, and as a raiser of small grain, has been eminently successful. He is an honored member of the order of Freemasons at Mishawaka. His father died Jan. 1, 1861, and his mother lived until Nov. 5, 1876.

*John Feiten* was born in Germany Feb. 4, 1840, where, when he was an infant, his father died; he was reared on a farm and educated in the village of Demerath, Prussia. He came to Mishawaka in 1853, and without attending an English school, he has obtained a fair English education, and writes a very legible hand. At the age of 17 years he learned the business of chair-maker; this he



W. D. Longley



pursued for eight years, and in 1865 he engaged in the furniture and undertaking business in Mishawaka, in which he is still engaged, and is doing a good business. He manufactures a splendid rocking-chair of his own invention. In 1872 his property and stock was burned, but he still prospers. He was married in 1866 to Miss Isabella Black, by whom he had 4 children, viz.: Nellie, Gertrude, Eugene A. and Mary B. In 1873 Mr. Feiten built a new house, valued at \$1,400.

*Rev. H. J. Finch* was born in Essex county, N. Y., April 26, 1836, and is a son of Hiram and Eliza Finch, the former a native of New Hampshire, and the latter of Massachusetts. Mr. Finch was reared on a farm and received but a common-school education, save that which he obtained through self-culture and hard study. He came to this county with his parents in 1846; was married Oct. 8, 1857, to Miss Jane Antrim, by whom he had one child, Olive; Mrs. Finch died June 28, 1860, and he again married Oct. 19, 1861, this time Miss Sarah Fuson, by whom he has had 7 children; 6 are living, viz.: Isaac B., Norman E., Lucinda J., Eliza V., L. Landora and John W. At different times Mr. Finch felt called to the work of the gospel ministry, and accordingly, in 1868, he began preparing himself for the work. He began by supplying the pulpit at Sumption Prairie, before either having license or being ordained. He held a series of meetings at Sumption Prairie the following winter, and many souls were converted and added to the Church. His second series of meetings was held at Jamestown, near Elkhart, Ind., and with like results. He then became convinced that God had a work for him to do, and he more thoroughly prepared himself, and in 1872 received license to preach, and was ordained in 1873. He took the pastorate of the Mishawaka Baptist Church in 1876, which position he still holds besides having charge of three other Churches. His labors are very great, preaching three times each Sabbath.

*M. M. Fisher* was born in Williams county, Ohio, August, 1848, and is a son of P. C. and Lydia Fisher, the former a native of Ohio, and the latter of Virginia. Mr. Fisher was reared on a farm and educated in the common school and the normal high school of Bryan, Ohio. At the age of 16 he entered the army, Co. A, 189th O. V. I., and served until the close of the war. He came to Mishawaka in 1870, and the following year, Dec. 25, married Miss Libbie A. Miller, by whom he has one child, Irabelle. When Mr. Fisher came here he engaged as a laborer for the Perkins Windmill and Ax Company until 1873, when he became one of the joint-stock company that was incorporated at that time, and is now General Superintendent of the manufactory. He is a zealous worker in the cause of temperance. Mr. and Mrs. Fisher are worthy members of the Presbyterian Church.

*Jacob Fulmer*, farmer, sec. 3, was born in Stark county, Ohio, Dec. 12, 1843, and is a son of Martin and Mary Fulmer, deceased, natives of Germany; he was but eight years old when his father

died; was reared on a farm and received a common-school education; came with his parents to this county in 1850; worked very hard in clearing away the brush and logs to make the farm. He was married March 27, 1866, to Miss Louisa E. Beiger, by whom he has 5 children, viz.: Ledean, Clarence W., John H., Martin D. and Jacob H. Mr. Fulmer is engaged in farming and owns 135 acres of valuable land. Mr. and Mrs. F. are members of the Evangelical Association.

*J. M. Galor* was born in Rensselaer county, N. Y., Aug. 5, 1809; he was but two years old when his father died; came with his mother and step-father to Rising Sun, Ohio county, Ind., in 1815, and to Dearborn county, Ind., in 1816; in 1835 he came to this county, and drove the first wagon south of Mishawaka into the heavy timber, where he labored hard and long in clearing up a farm, thinking, as others did in those days, that the prairie land was worthless. He also engaged in the collier business for some time; as there was a blast furnace at Mishawaka, he found ready market for all his timber that he turned into charcoal. He was married Nov. 18, 1830, to Miss Cynthia Crouch, by whom he had one child, Eleanor, who became the wife of Daniel B. Jewell, and afterward died, leaving one daughter, Luzetta. Mrs. Galor died Sept. 9, 1832, and Mr. Galor again married Sept. 26, 1833, Azubah Ferris. They have had 3 children, 2 living: Albert and Sarah A. Mr. Galor is now living a quiet, retired life in Mishawaka.

*F. X. Ganser* is a native of Baltimore, Md., and was born June 14, 1850. His parents were Joseph and Anna Ganser, natives of Germany, who removed with their family from Maryland to Pennsylvania in 1851, and to Mishawaka in 1861. Mr. G. worked in the cabinet shops in Mishawaka for 12 years. He then engaged for a time as a dry-goods clerk for Bingham & Hudson. He was married in 1872 to Miss Catharine Zuber, by whom he has had 3 children, 2 living: Lawrence and Otto. Mr. Ganser runs a first-class saloon and billiard hall, and does a large business. No drunkenness is allowed around his establishment.

*Joseph Ganser, Jr.* This enterprising young druggist was born at St. Mary's, Pa., Nov. 13, 1848. He received his education at St. Mary's and at Philadelphia. He came to Mishawaka in 1861, where he engaged as a dry-goods clerk for Whitson. He bought Dick's drug-store in 1873, which he still runs, and carries a stock of \$3,500 in drugs, paints, oils, wall-paper, notions, books, etc., and is doing a large business. He speaks the German language, and being a Catholic he gets the trade from the German and Irish citizens. He was married July 27, 1871, to Miss Christina Henrichs, by whom he has had 6 children, 5 living: August, Leo, Cecelia, Edith and Anna. Mr. G. is a musician and sings in the choir.

*Albert Gaylor* was born in this tp. May 9, 1841. His father is Jacob M. Galor, who, it will be observed, omits the *y* in spelling



his name. Mr. Gaylor was reared on a farm and received his education in the common-schools and at Carlisle College, of New Carlisle, this county. He early learned to labor on the farm, which occupation he pursued until 1874. Was married Oct. 31, 1865, to Miss Mary A. Keiffer, by whom he has 4 children, Vickie, John L., Ralph and Mabel E. In 1874 Mr. Gaylor removed to Mishawaka, where he engaged in the grocery business, and the manufacture of wood pulp. The former he discontinued in the spring of 1880, but continues the latter. He is superintendent of the pulp manufactory in South Bend, and also president of the one located at Mishawaka. He has held several offices of trust at the hands of the people; has been City Trustee for Mishawaka for the past three years, and is the present Trustee for Penn tp.

*Albert J. Gernhart* was born in Worcester, Mass., June 17, 1855, and is a son of Matthias and Catharine Gernhart, of this tp., who removed with their family to this county in December, 1855. The subject of this notice was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools of this county. In 1879 he engaged in butchering in company with his brother, and they do a large business and furnish the people of Mishawaka and vicinity with the best of meats.

*Robert Gilliland* was born in Seneca, Ontario county, N. Y., Aug. 1, 1822. His parents were Thomas and Jane (Carson) Gilliland. He was brought up on a farm, and was early employed in lumbering, as this was a part of his father's vocation. He came to Hndson, Mich., in 1863, where he worked in a spoke factory for six and one-half years. He was married Oct. 10, 1844, to Miss Caroline Torrance, by whom he has had 8 children; of these, 7 are living: Ezra T., James F., Wm. T., Maria A., Agnes O., Emma J. and Donna B. The first three are connected with the telephone manufactory at Indianapolis, and Ezra T. was a co-laborer with Edison for two and one-half years, rendering him valuable aid. Mr. Gilliland owns an interest in Edison's electric pen.

*James B. Greene, M. D.*, was born in the town of Fremont (then Lower Sandusky), Ohio, May 29, 1846, and is a son of Judge John L. Greene, deceased, formerly Judge of the Northwestern Ohio Circuit for many years, and who fell dead on his way to the court-room, Nov. 8, 1879. His mother was Marie Du Combe, of French birth. Dr. Greene is the 7th of 12 children, all living, and "scattered from the Atlantic to the Pacific." At 13 years of age the Doctor went to learn the watch-maker's trade, but remained only two years. At 15 years of age he was appointed Deputy County Recorder of his native county, with the sole charge of the office. While in that capacity he began the study of medicine. In the fall of 1863 he entered the army in the 3d Ohio Cavalry, as a private, and in one month he was transferred to the pay department of the Army of the Mississippi. In January, 1864, he was promoted Hospital Steward, and in July, 1865, he was commissioned Assistant Surgeon of the 137th U. S. Colored Infantry. He graduated from the Cleveland Medical College in 1867. When he began

practice in Mishawaka he had no money or horse. His proceeds for the first year's practice were \$56. His practice now amounts to over \$2,000 annually. In 1874 he was nominated by the Republican party for Recorder of this county. The Doctor has paid security debts to the amount of nearly \$3,000. In 1876 he published a work on "Diseases of the Rectum," which reached an issue of 5,000 copies. He is a member of the St. Joseph Valley District Medical Association, and also of the Elkhart Medical Association. He was twice elected delegate to the meeting of the American Association, and twice to that of the State Association. He was married Jan. 9, 1868, to Miss Mary E. Hagey, and they have had 4 children, 3 of whom are living: Philip, Rosetta and Grace. The Doctor has acquired the German language himself, save 20 lessons which he took in 1879, and has thus gained large practice among the Germans.

*James F. Grimes, M. D.*, is a native of Frederick county, Md., and was born April 13, 1825. His father, James Grimes, was a miller in Maryland, but abandoned his occupation on account of failing health, and engaged in farming. The subject of this notice was brought by his parents to Seneca county, Ohio, in 1833; was reared on a farm and educated in Tiffin, Ohio. In 1852 he graduated from the Eclectic Medical College at Cincinnati, Ohio. He came to Mishawaka in 1853 and began the practice of medicine. He then had \$9 in money and no horse, and was obliged to attend to practice on foot. He has won a large patronage, and now has considerable property. He was married in 1851 to Miss Caroline E. Harris, by whom he has had 6 children; of these, 4 are living, viz.: Rebecca E., Harriet E., John H. and Mary.

*Silvanus Hall*, farmer and stock-raiser, sec. 5, was born in Maine July 16, 1815, son of John and Data (Knox) Hall, natives of Massachusetts. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools of Dearborn county, Ind., where his parents removed in 1822. They, however, left Maine in 1818, residing in Cincinnati, Ohio, for four years. Mr. Hall was married in 1835 to Miss Eliza Matthews, a native of Maine, who was brought to this State by her parents in infancy. This union has been blessed with 9 children, of whom 8 are living, viz.: Salathiel, Rhoda A., Jonas, Sarah, Thaddens, Effa J., Susan M. and Ezra D. In his younger days Mr. Hall worked at the blacksmith's trade for three years; he also followed boating on the Ohio and Mississippi rivers for three years. In 1843 he had visited every town between Pittsburg and New Orleans. In 1845 he removed with his family to this tp., where he still resides.

*Wm. Harris* was born in Yates county, N. Y., Dec. 12, 1815, and is a son of Steven and Susan Harris, also natives of New York, in which State the former died; the latter died here. Mr. Harris came to this county in 1854, and settled on the Mishawaka and Elkhart road, where he kept travelers for several years. He was married Dec. 5, 1839, to Miss Loretta Hall, by whom he had 2

children, George (deceased) and John E. His first wife died and he again married, this time Miss Priscilla Hall, sister of his first wife. By her he has 4 children: Libbie, Steven, Robert and Henry. He buried his second wife, and married a third time in 1875, Mrs. Flutilla Rogers, who is a worthy member of the Baptist Church. Mr. H. is a member of the M. E. Church.

*Peter Haubert* was born in Brooklyn, N. Y., Nov. 6, 1844, and is a son of Nicholas and Catharine (Blaiser) Haubert, natives of Germany, who removed with their family to Illinois in 1854; they afterward returned to Mishawaka. Mr. Haubert clerked for business men here until 1871, when he opened a grocery upon his own responsibility. He sold his grocery store in January, 1872, and the following December he established a restaurant, which he now runs, and does a good business. He also has a soda fountain in connection with the restaurant. He was married in 1871 to Miss Mary C. Black.

*Peter Hendershott*, deceased, was born in Pennsylvania June 11, 1813. His parents removed to Harrison county, Ohio, when he was quite small. He was reared on a farm, and as the country was new he had no educational advantages, but learned to read and write, etc., by his own efforts. When a young man he learned the carpenter's trade, which vocation he pursued for the most part during the remainder of his life. He was married in June, 1834, to Miss Mary B. Merriman, by whom he had 9 children; 7 of these are living, viz.: William M., Mary E., Patience M., James T., John H., Almira F. and David B. He came to this county in 1852, resided in South Bend 18 months, when he removed into the country. After residing in various localities he purchased a farm in this tp. in '57, and settled upon it the same year, where he died in July, 1874. He was a member of the United Brethren Church prior to his removal to this county. His son, William M., who is a subscriber for this work, is taking care of his mother and farming the home place. He was born in Wayne county, Ohio, March 20, 1836. He early learned the use of carpenter's tools and worked at that trade about 20 years; for the last 10 years he has been farming. July 9, 1879, he married Miss Rachel, daughter of Widow Hulderman.

*Henry D. Higgins* was born in Onondaga county, N. Y., March 15, 1832, and is a son of William and Hannah (Avery) Higgins. The former was once a wagon-maker, at which Henry D. worked some in his younger days, but was a carpenter and painter by trade. He married in April, 1846, Miss Nancy Barnes, by whom he has had 4 children; of these, 2 are living, viz.: Sarah and Susie. He came to this county in 1846; engaged in painting four years, and in 1850 he went to California, but returned in 1851. In 1864 he engaged in dentistry in Mishawaka, in company with his son Charles, who was accidentally shot by an employee June 19, 1873. Mr. Higgins owns and carries on the jewelry store in Mishawaka, and is doing a good business. He also has a large sum of money at interest.

*Aaron Hoover* was born in Ohio Jan. 21, 1810. His parents were James and Elizabeth (Knee) Hoover, with whom he came to Wayne county, Ind., about 1819. As he had to work hard, and his parents were poor, he had no educational advantages. He came to this county in 1834, where he has since resided. He was married in 1829, to Miss Charity Harris, by whom he had 9 children; of these but 4 are living, viz.: Phœbe A., Henry, William and Charity. Mrs. H. died April 7, 1852. Mr. Hoover has since buried two other wives, and now has his fourth wife, who was Mrs. Fannie Keasey. He is a farmer and stock-raiser, but since January, 1869, has been retired, and resides in Mishawaka. Mr. and Mrs. Hoover are both worthy members of the M. E. Church.

*Albert Hudson* was born in West Hartford, Conn., Dec. 1, 1815, and is a son of Benjamin and Harriet (Dickinson) Hudson, the former a native of Massachusetts, and the latter of Connecticut. The early part of his boyhood was spent on a farm. He went to Western New York in 1825 or '26, where he learned the shoemaker's trade; came to this county in 1835; engaged in shoe-making in Mishawaka for nearly 40 years; built Hudson's block, which was destroyed in 1872 by the fire; he rebuilt soon after. He is now president of the St. Joseph Manufacturing Co. He was associated with Mr. Perkins, of this place, in the manufacture of windmills for five years. He was married in Brockport, N. Y., Jan. 1, 1835, to Miss Louisa Tuttle, and they had 8 children, 4 living: George R., now treasurer of the Milburn Wagon Company, at Toledo, Ohio; Hattie L., Carrie L. and Emma, now Mrs. Col. Bingham. Mr. Hudson began with little or no capital, and has made all his wealth by his own exertions.

*Harris E. Hurlbut.* Being an old settler in this county, Mr. Hurlbut is entitled to more than a passing notice in our county history. He was born Dec. 11, 1810, in Hartford, Conn., and is a son of Ebenezer and Fannie (Brewster) Hurlbut. The latter was a descendant of Mr. Brewster, of Mayflower renown. Mr. H. was educated at Hartford. He went to Buffalo, N. Y., in 1826, and clerked for Mr. Flagg, a cousin of his, for three years. In 1829 he went to Rochester, N. Y., and to Onondaga county, N. Y., in 1831; learned the tinner's trade; came to this county and purchased 160 acres of timber land; worked at the tinner's trade for ten years; served as Justice of the Peace from 1840 to 1861; was elected by the Republican party to the Indiana Legislature from this county in 1843-'44; was Postmaster from 1849 to 1853; practiced law in Mishawaka for 24 years; in 1874 retired from active business, having accumulated a large fortune, and is now living in comfort.

*David C. Hutchinson* was born in Willoughby, Ohio, Sept. 4, 1819. His parents were William and Sally (Bond) Hutchinson; he was reared and educated in Willoughby, and there married Miss Harriet Woodard, by whom he has 2 children: John and Hale. He engaged in farming for a time in Ohio, but is also a painter by trade. He went to Fond du Lac, Wisconsin, in 1850, where he

engaged in painting, and a portion of the time he was employed in a picture gallery. He came to Mishawaka in 1866, and has executed large contracts of painting, to the entire satisfaction of his employers, at times employing from seven to ten hands to assist him. He made graining a specialty. Is now retired, having accumulated a handsome amount of this world's goods.

*S. I. H. Ireland.* This old and respected citizen of Mishawaka was born in Bourbon county, Kentucky, June 28, 1807. His parents were Andrew and Elizabeth Ireland. His early educational advantages were very limited, there being none but subscription schools in the locality where he spent his boyhood days. He removed with his parents in 1816, to the heavy timber of Preble county, Ohio, where his father died in 1822, which threw a great responsibility upon him. He was married in 1828 to Miss Sally Ireland, by whom he has had 5 children; but 2 are living: Mary and Clarissa. He came to this county in 1831, and has witnessed many changes, and noted many reminiscences of the past, some of which he has related to us for insertion in this work; and for this he has our hearty thanks. He worked hard in clearing away the brush and logs on his land, and followed farming until 1851. He has since engaged in various avocations. At one time, in the early days of Mishawaka, he was salesman for the St. Joseph Iron Company (now St. Joseph Manufacturing Company), located at this place. He was also auctioneer for some years. Mr. and Mrs. Ireland and their two daughters are members of the Christian Church at Mishawaka.

*Ed. A. Jernegan*, editor and proprietor of the *Mishawaka Enterprise*, was born in La Porte, Ind., Jan. 27, 1846, and is a son of Thomas Jernegan, editor of the *Michigan City Enterprise*. His mother is a native of Nantucket Island, and his father of Martha's Vineyard. They came to South Bend about 1840. Mr. Storey, now of the *Chicago Times*, was then editor and proprietor of the *Mishawaka Tocsin*, which press Mr. Jernegan purchased and removed to La Porte, where he published the *Tocsin* for about two years. During this time, at La Porte, Mr. Ed. A. Jernegan was born. He then removed it to Michigan City and began to publish the *Enterprise*, which he continues to do. The subject of this notice there learned the printing business. He served 11 months in the late war, in Co. K, 73d Ind. Vol. Inf., where he was transferred to the navy department, on steamer *Commodore Varney*, where he acted as Paymaster's Clerk. He returned home and entered Co. D, 138th Ind. Vol. Inf., in which he served but five months. He became assistant editor of the *Michigan City Enterprise*, which position he held for four years. He was married Sept. 6, 1869, to Miss Nannie C. Sherman, by whom he has had 4 children; of these, 3 are living, viz.: Sherman, May and Ralph. He purchased the *Mishawaka Enterprise* press in 1872, and although beginning under very unfavorable circumstances he has

made a valuable paper, and has a handsome support from the people of St. Joseph county. His press was destroyed by fire the same year he began, but he has succeeded in procuring another. He does all kinds of job work in the best of style.

*Aaron Jones* was born in German tp., this county, Sept. 9, 1838, and is a son of Samuel Jones, a native of North Carolina, who came to this county in the spring of 1830, and settled in German tp., and who, after he labored hard for several years, died in 1850. Aaron, our subject, was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools and at Franklin College, Franklin county, Ind. He also attended Antioch College at Yellow Springs, Ohio, for some time. He was married in 1860 to Miss Maggie W. Wiley, by whom he has had 5 children; 2 living, Aaron and Mary. He owns over 400 acres of land in this county, and about 100 acres in Iowa. He has been very successful as a farmer and stock-raiser, and resides on sec. 32, Penn tp. He is master of the State Grange, of the order of Patrons of Husbandry, and is a very prominent man in the locality in which he resides.

*Daniel Judie*, son of Samuel and Catharine Judie, deceased, was born in this tp. March 22, 1842. His parents were natives of Pennsylvania, and came to this county in a very early day. Mr. Judie was brought up on a farm, and educated in the common schools; was married in 1867 to Miss Margaret, daughter of John W. May. She is a native of Germany, and a member of the Lutheran Church. He owns 90 and she owns 44 acres of valuable land. Mr. Judie has made his start in the world all by his own exertions. For several years in his early life he operated a threshing-machine. He served three years in the late war, in Co. F, 29th Reg't Ind. Vol. Inf., and participated in many of the most bloody battles. His cap was shot from his head in the battle of Shiloh.

*Samuel Judie* was born in this tp. Dec. 17, 1836, and is a son of Samuel and Catharine Judie (dec.), who came to this county in 1831, and labored hard in preparing the way for the prosperity of future generations. The subject of this sketch was reared on a farm and educated at Dutch island in this county, a school usually taught by inferior teachers in those days, and which was mostly taught by subscription. In the early part of his manhood Mr. Judie engaged in farming and operating a threshing-machine. He was married in 1860 to Miss Martha, daughter of Daniel Vroman, of this tp. They have had 6 children, of whom 3 are living, Hattie, Emma and Pardon. Mr. J. is engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 12, and owns 130 acres of valuable land.

*Stephen H. Judkins* was born in Sullivan county, N. H., Aug. 26, 1808, and is a son of Stephen and Anna Judkins (dec.), also natives of New Hampshire. He was raised to work in the wagon-maker's shop. As soon as he was able to handle a hatchet and saw he was put to work. He followed this business for the most part until 1850. He came to Mishawaka in 1837. He was married Oct. 8, 1834, to Miss Phoebe A. Simons, by whom he has had 4

children; of these, 2 are living: William H. and Malvina (now Mrs. L. F. Cole, of Neenah, Wisconsin). In 1859 he engaged in the grocery business, which he still carries on. He lost \$2,700 in the fire of 1872. He carries a stock of \$3,500 in groceries, provisions, etc., and is doing a good business.

*A. F. Kizer* was born in Wayne county, Ohio, Oct. 6, 1825, and is a son of Peter and Catharine Kizer, natives of Pennsylvania, who emigrated to Ohio about 1818. Mr. Kizer was reared on a farm and received most of his education in a subscription school. He was married in 1849 to Miss Caroline Hoffheine, daughter of John Hoffheine. They have had 6 children, but one of whom is living, Ellhanan W. He came to this county in 1852, since which time he has resided here save two years that he resided in Michigan. He owns 90 acres on sec. 28, and is engaged in farming. In politics Mr. Kizer is a Greenbacker. Mr. and Mrs. Kizer are worthy members of the M. E. Church.

*John Klein Jr.*, Mishawaka. This enterprising young dealer in and manufacturer of boots and shoes was born in Mishawaka June 2, 1850, and is a son of John and Mary Klein, also of Mishawaka. He is of German descent; he early learned the shoemaker's trade, which he now follows, and also carries a fine stock of ready-made boots and shoes, and gents' furnishing goods. He is doing a good business, which is on the increase.

*Michael Klein* was born in Prussia Sept. 29, 1818; reared on a farm and educated in German in his native country; came to America in 1836; remained in New Orleans five years, working in a restaurant; came to Stark county, Ohio, in 1840, where he remained until the fall of 1841, when he came to this county, locating in this tp., in the heavy timber. He has worked very hard, and made for himself and family a comfortable home. He was married in 1850 to Miss Mary Rieff, who has borne him 8 children, namely: Henry, Caroline, Jacob, Josephine, Mary, Albert, George and Laura. Mr. and Mrs. Klein are members of the Catholic Church.

*George Kuhn* was born in Erie county, N. Y., June 18, 1837, and is a son of Bonafanter Kuhn, a native of Switzerland. He "was raised in the woods," and therefore had no educational advantages; what education he has he obtained by hard study, without a teacher. He came to Mishawaka in 1859, and in 1861 built the St. Joseph flouring-mill, mentioned in the history of Penn tp., on a preceding page. He was married Sept. 18, 1862, to Miss Margaret Michels, by whom he has had 7 children; 6 are living: John, George, Peter, Joseph, Edward and August.

*Wolfgang Kuntzman*, deceased. This prominent and useful man was born in Byron, Germany, June 9, 1828, and was a son of John Kuntzman. At the age of 14 years he was apprenticed to a lock-maker; he became master of this art and exhibited great skill in his work. He came to Mishawaka in 1853, where he acted as foreman in the St. Joseph Iron Works, rendering valuable services for several years. He was married in 1854 to Miss Sophia Shafer,



daughter of Conrad Shafer. She was born in Germany also, and came to America with her parents at 11 years of age. They had 7 children, namely: Katie, Julia, Ferdinand (dec.), Philip, Sophia, Lizzie and George. In 1868 Mr. Kunftman removed to his farm on sec. 7, where he engaged in farming and stock-raising, and was eminently successful. He died Nov. 7, 1877, loved and respected by all. He was a very benevolent man, always ready to assist in the promotion of charitable institutions. The family lost a kind husband and father, and the community a valuable member of society, in the death of Mr. Kunftman. He was a consistent Christian, and a worthy member of the Lutheran Church for many years prior to his death.

*William Kuss* was born in Russia Feb. 27, 1846, and is a son of John Kuss, deceased. He was brought up on a farm, and educated in the village of Ruhden. He came to Mishawaka in 1868, where he began in the bakery business in 1873, in company with Mr. Rhoder. This firm dissolved in 1879, and Mr. Kuss continues it alone. He carries a capital stock of \$2,600 in groceries and provisions, queen's-ware, etc., in addition to the bakery, and is doing a large business. He was married March 26, 1874, to Miss Mary Wies, by whom he has 3 children: Charley, Edward and Anna.

*Alexander Laidlaw.* Being a native of this county Mr. Laidlaw is identified with its history, and therefore is entitled to more than a passing notice in a work like this. He was born in this tp. April 15, 1846, and is a son of John Laidlaw, of Mishawaka, whom we mention elsewhere. Alexander was reared on a farm and educated in the common-schools of this county. He was married March 10, 1868, to Miss Elizabeth Burrus, daughter of George Burrus, of Elkhart. This union has been blessed with 5 children, of whom 4 are living, viz.: Ada, George, John and an infant son. Mr. Laidlaw resides on sec. 29, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising, owning 110 acres of valuable land.

*John Laidlaw* is a native of Blainsley, Scotland, and was born Jan. 5, 1812. His parents, John and Susan Laidlaw, removed with their family to St. Lawrence county, N. Y., in 1818. He was brought up on a farm and educated in the common schools; came to this county in 1836; during the first winter he worked for the St. Joseph Iron Company, and worked afterward as a common laborer, for a time, at various avocations. When he arrived here he had \$175 capital. He bought a small piece of timbered land, and by hard work and wise management has accumulated a fortune. He was married in 1837 to Miss Sally Shaw, by whom he has had 13 children; of these, 10 are living, viz.: Susan, Lydia, Edwin, Alexander, Caroline, Jane, Mary, Ella, Emma and John. Mr. L. owns 610 acres of land besides a large amount of town property. He now resides in Mishawaka, in his beautiful residence.

*Chauncy W. Lamport* was born in Genesee (then Orleans) county, N. Y., April 1, 1814, and is a son of William and Belinda Lamport, natives of New England. He was reared on a farm and



educated in a common school in Ohio, where his parents removed about 1823. He was married in 1846 to Miss Adaline D. Barber, daughter of Chauncy and Persis (Whiting) Barber, natives of Connecticut. Mrs. Lamport was born in Marcellus, N. Y. In one week after marriage they started for this county, and arrived in due season. They have 4 children: Belinda P., now Mrs. Henry Boles, of this tp.; Hortensius M., pastor of the M. E. Church at Bristol, Ind; A. Lamar, principal of the high school, Waterloo, Ind; and Emma R., at home. Mr. Lamport knows all about the hardest of labor, of which he has done a great deal. He is now retired, and resides in Oceola. Mr. and Mrs. Lamport are worthy members of the M. E. Church.

*Frederick Lang* is a native of Germany, and was born May 9, 1834. His father was Frank Lang, also a native of Germany. His education was received in the village of Vaihingen, Germany. He came to America in 1850, stopping at Pittsburg, Pa., for about three years, when he came to this county with his father, and located on a farm. He married Miss Ernestina Frank in 1857. They have 4 children: Otto E., Emma C., Minnie and Otilie L. In 1864 Mr. Lang erected a saw-mill, which he still owns and operates. He, in company with his brother-in-law, Charles Frank, established a lumber yard in Mishawaka, with a capital stock of \$15,000, including the saw-mill, and are doing a good business.

*John Lerner*.—This enterprising farmer is entitled to more than a passing notice in our county history, as he has been instrumental in bringing into cultivation a large tract of land, heretofore thought to be useless. About the year 1868 he purchased some land in the marsh north of Mishawaka and found a place large enough on which to erect a house; this he did, and moved his family into it; but he made nothing the first year. He then took his family back to Mishawaka, and as fast as he could obtain the means, he ditched his land. He spent hundreds of dollars in ditching, and otherwise improving the marsh, and has made an excellent farm, which produces abundant crops of all kinds. Few men would succeed as did Mr. Lerner, under such discouraging circumstances. He was born in Germany April 7, 1830; first learned to roof houses with slate; came to America in 1852, remaining in New York city three years, and working at the carpenter's trade; in 1855 he came to Mishawaka, where he worked in the woolen mills for 13 years. He was married in 1854 to Miss Dora D. Windel, by whom he has had 7 children; of these, 6 are living, viz.: Wilhelm, Christopher, Henry, Jonic, Mary and George. Mr. and Mrs. Lerner are worthy members of the Lutheran Church.

*Albert R. Leslie* was born in Columbiana county, Ohio, July 28, 1831, and is a son of Eli and Mary Leslie, the former a native of Ohio and the latter of Harper's Ferry, Va. Mr. Leslie was reared on a farm, and received a common-school education, in Portage county, Ohio, whither his parents had removed when he was but two years old. He was married in 1854 to Miss Jeannette Hudson,

by whom he had one child, Amanda, since deceased. Mr. Leslie came to this county in 1853, and has since, for the most part, been engaged in farming. He served nearly three years in the war of the Rebellion, in Co. K, 87th Ind. Vol. Inf., and participated in the battles of Perrysville, Hoover's Gap, Chattanooga, Mission Ridge, Chickamauga, Ringgold, Atlanta, Nashville, Resaca, and others. He was present at the surrender of Johnston to Sherman. At one time he, in company with a detachment of others to guard a wagon train going for supplies from Chattanooga, up the Tennessee river, subsisted for 14 days upon parched corn and one day's rations, save a very little that they could pick up along the road on their hurried march.

*Nathan Lighthall* was born in Yates county, N. Y., Dec. 17, 1820, and is a son of Julius and Amelia (Jenny) Lighthall, deceased, also natives of New York; he is the youngest of a family of 11 children. He was reared on a farm, and received a common-school education; came to this county in 1837; has been a wagon-maker, but is at present, pattern-maker for the St. Joseph Manufacturing Company, at Mishawaka, which position he has held for the past 18 years. He helped erect the first permanent dam across the St. Joseph river at Mishawaka in 1837. He has been married twice, and is the father of 4 children, of whom but one is living, Ellen D., now Mrs. Dr. N. D. Miles, of Elkhart, Ind. Mr. Lighthall is owner of valuable property in Elkhart.

*Levi W. Lott* was born in Adams county, Pa., Sept. 22, 1831, and is a son of William H. and Esther H. (Wilson) Lott, also natives of Pennsylvania. He was reared on a farm, and educated in the common and select schools. He taught school for three winters in his native State, and in 1857 came to this county on a visit. He remained but one week, when he proceeded to the vicinity of Niles, Mich., where he engaged in farming for one season. He has taught almost constantly in the winter seasons since 1854. He taught seven terms in the Willow Creek school-house in this county, and four terms in No. 9. Mr. Lott is also a miller by trade, at which he has worked for several summers. He also worked at carding wool in Mishawaka, for four summers. He was married in 1862, to Elizabeth A. Van Buskirk, by whom he has had 5 children; 4 are living, viz.: William T., Charles W., Walter J. and Bertha E.

*Thomas B. Loughman* was born in Licking county, O., near Brownsville, March 26, 1839, and is a son of David and Elizabeth Loughman, natives of Pennsylvania. He began breaking on the Muskingum Valley railroad in 1857, and in 1858 came to this county. He worked at the cooper's trade for two years, and also labored on the farm for some time. He was engaged by the L. S. & M. S. R. R. Company in 1863, having charge of the warehouse for four years; and since that time he has been freight and ticket agent at Mishawaka, making 17 years in the employ of the same company, and at the same place. He was married in July, 1860,

to Miss Mary Skinner, by whom he has 2 children: Emma and Ella. Mr. and Mrs. L. are members of the M. E. Church.

*Philip Manchester*, sec. 4; was born in Washington county, Penn., Sept. 28, 1808, and is a son of Benjamin and Agnes (Doddrige) Manchester, the former a native of Rhode Island, and the latter of Pennsylvania. Mrs. M's brothers and sisters were captured by the Indians during the troubles early in this century. Philip was reared on a farm, and received a limited education in a subscription school. His parents were poor, and there being a large amount of labor for the boys, he attended school "week about" with his brother. He was married in 1833, to Miss Hannah Ilgenfritz, by whom he has had 11 children; but 2 are living, namely: Love and Elizabeth. The former is now Mrs. W. Manchester, and the latter, Mrs. A. M. Smith. Mr. Manchester owns 201 acres of valuable land, which is attended by his son-in-law, Mr. Smith. Mr. and Mrs. Manchester are Old-Side Baptists in their religious belief, but are not connected with any Church.

*J. W. Martling* was born in New York city Oct. 14, 1816, and is a son of John and Martha (Lockwood) Martling; the former a native of Greensburg, N. Y., and the latter of New York city. J. W. removed (with his parents) to Buffalo, N. Y., in 1831, came to this county in 1837, and returned to Buffalo in 1838. His occupation through life has been that of a mason. He was in the employ of the L. S. & M. S. R. R. Company for some time. He met with an accident upon a steamboat while in New York, which disabled him for two years. He was married in 1838, and is the father of 9 children, of whom 6 are living, namely: Elizabeth A., George H., John W., Isabella M., Sarah E. and Harvey A. In 1844 Mr. Martling returned to Mishawaka, and during the gold excitement in 1851, he went overland to California, returning the following year by the Panama route. He also went to Pike's Peak during the rush there. He is now doing a good business in grain, lime, cement, hair, marble-dust and salt, in Mishawaka.

*Archa Mason* was born in Lake county, Ohio, March 5, 1853, and is a son of William Mason of Mishawaka. His mother (deceased) was Harriet (Graham) Mason. Archa was brought up on a farm, and educated in the common schools of this tp., where his parents brought him in 1857. He was married in 1874, to Miss Ella Laidlaw, daughter of John Laidlaw, of Mishawaka, of whom we have made further mention elsewhere in this work. They have one child, Eddie. Mr. Mason is engaged in farming and stock-raising, on sec. 31, and owns 90 acres of valuable land.

*Ewin G. McCollum*, attorney at law, Mishawaka, was born in La Porte county, Ind., Aug. 10, 1836, and is a son of S. and Achsa B. (Wing) McCollum, natives of Otsego and Rensselaer counties, N. Y., respectively, who emigrated to La Porte county in 1835; he was reared on a farm, and educated in Asbury University at Greencastle, Ind., graduating in 1861. In 1862 he began the study of law in La Porte under Bradley and Woodward, admitted to the Bar

in 1862, began practice in La Porte in 1864, and in 1874 removed to Mishawaka, where he has built up a good practice. He was married in 1862 to Miss Fannie A. Hurlbut, daughter of Esquire Hurlbut, of Mishawaka. They have one child, Clarence E. Mr. McC. is Democratic, in politics.

*Rev. Samuel V. McKee*, pastor of the Christian Church, Mishawaka, was born in Knox county, Ind., and brought up on a farm. In his childhood days he seemed impressed with the duty of entering the ministry when he should become a man. This impression seemed never to leave him for a moment, for he early began to prepare himself for the work. He attended Hanover College in this State for some time, and graduated at Jefferson College, at Cannelburg, Pa. He also graduated at the Western Theological Seminary, at Allegheny, Pa., in 1861, and entered the ministry the same year, in the Indiana Church in Knox county, which was the first Presbyterian Church organized in the State. He remained there two years. He was a delegate from Indiana for the U. S. Christian Commission, and was with the army for seven weeks. In 1863 he visited the convalescent camp at Nashville, Tenn., and the hospital at Chattanooga. He has a cane made from the wood of the first Presbyterian church that was built in America (1808). After acting as pastor for the Churches at Kendallville, Waynesville, Ill., Gilman, Ill. and Buckley, Ill., he came to this charge in 1878. He was married June 28, 1858, to Miss Susannah C. Vannatta, by whom he has had 8 children, 6 living, viz.: Mattie M., Carrie B., William N., Julia B., John A. and Flora B. The deceased's names were Ella G. and Jennie R.

*James McKnight*, sec. 11; P. O., Mishawaka; is a son of John and Sarah (Tilfer) McKnight, who came to Indiana about the year 1814. He was born June 16, 1824, in Franklin county, Ind., and received his education in a log house, with slab seats, puncheon floor and a huge fire-place in one end of the room. He came with his parents to this county in 1834, where he has since resided. He married Miss Eliza McCreary in 1847, and they have had 4 children, viz.: Sarah, deceased; John T., Ida A. and Mollie. Mr. McKnight has not confined himself to any one particular business; for several years he butchered during the fall. In general he is a farmer, but is now engaged more or less in lending money and buying notes. He owns 267 acres of land, which is managed by his son. Mrs. McKnight is a worthy member of the M. E. Church, and he is a Republican straight.

*Milton McKnight*, P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Franklin county, Ind., May 3, 1833, and is a son of John and Sarah McKnight, the former a native of Rockbridge county, Va., and the latter of Indiana county, Pennsylvania. They settled in Southern Indiana, which was then a Territory, in 1814, and came to this county in 1834. Mr. McKnight died in 1840, and Mrs. McKnight in 1866. Milton was reared on a farm and attended district school three months each year when a boy. His father

entered about 600 acres of land, and moved first with his family of 8 children into a small log cabin, containing but one room. Mr. McKnight was married in April, 1860, to Miss Lucinda Finch, by whom he had 2 children, Robert and Anthony D. He resides on the homestead on sec. 11, engaged in farming. Mr. and Mrs. Knight are members of the Valley M. E. Church.

*S. B. McQuillen* was born in Tecumseh, Mich., July 4, 1851, and is a son of John and Mary McQuillen, of Mishawaka. They removed to Lima, Ind., in 1853, then to Wisconsin, where they remained over eight years. S. B., the subject of this sketch, was educated in Mishawaka; clerked for Clark & Whitson, dry-goods merchants of Mishawaka, for two years, and two years for V. Beige in this place; he began business for himself in December, 1875; he carries a stock of \$1,800, consisting of groceries, queen's-ware, glassware, notions, etc., and also runs a bakery. He does a good business. He was married Dec. 31, 1879, to Miss Lillie M. Towle.

*Lawrence Meixell*, sec. 35; P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Cumberland county, Pa., Dec. 28, 1847; was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. His parents came with their family to this county in 1848, where they still reside. June 12, 1867, he married Miss Jane Smyser, daughter of Cornelius Smyser, of whom we make further mention in this work. They have had 6 children, 3 of whom are living, viz.: William, Lizzie and Belle. He is engaged in farming and owns 80 acres of land. Mrs. Meixell is a member of the M. E. Church. Jacob Meixell, the father of the above, was born in Cumberland county, Pa., May 12, 1816, and is a son of John and Mary Meixell, deceased. His boyhood days were spent on a farm, and his educational advantages were such as were furnished by the common schools. He was married April 13, 1843, to Miss Evaline Westfall, by whom he had 10 children, 7 now living, viz.: Mary, Lawrence H., George, John, Jake, Leroy and Ann. Mr. M. came to this county in 1848, where he still resides. In his younger days he followed threshing to some extent. He now has 150 acres of land, and has given farms to his children. Mr. and Mrs. Meixell are worthy members of the Christian Church. In politics he was a Whig, and now, of course, is a Republican.

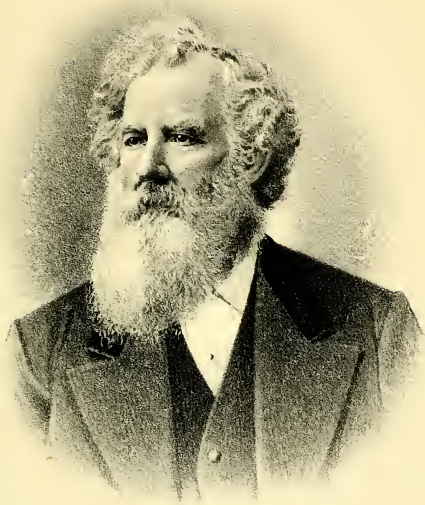
*Adam Miller*, sec. 25; was born near Zanesville, O., Jan. 8, 1819, and is a son of Adam and Sarah (Prior) Miller, who removed with their family to this county in 1830. He was reared to hard work and received a limited education in a subscription school taught in a log house, with slab seats, and a board supported on pins in the wall for writing desks. His teachers were of the "ox-gad persuasion." He was married in December, 1838, to Miss Mercy A. Mead, by whom he has had 8 children. Those living, are Eli, Leo, Anna and Julius. He is engaged in farming and stock-raising, and owns 30 acres of land. Mr. and Mrs. Miller and all their children are members of the Christian Church.

*Joseph Miller* was born in Lebanon county, Pa., Feb. 27, 1823, and is a son of Henry and Catharine (Harper) Miller, also natives of Pennsylvania. Their ancestors came to America with William Penn, and Mr. Miller is of the fifth generation from the Pennites; his early educational advantages were very limited; his school education was obtained on a slab bench in a little log cabin, whose windows were about 12 inches high and about six or seven feet long. He came to this county in 1837, and resided where South Bend now stands; he also resided awhile in Michigan. Oct. 4, 1844, he married Miss Martha A. Scott, by whom he has had 2 children, Elizabeth A. and Mary C. The latter is deceased. She was drowned with a party of three others when boat-riding at South Bend, the boat being drawn through the broken dam by the current. Mr. Miller is a miller by trade; for an account of the mill, see page 795.

*Jacob Minnick*, farmer, sec. 33; was born in Pennsylvania Nov. 6, 1816, and is a son of Jacob and Susan (Hanie) Minnick; he was reared on a farm, and received a limited education in a subscription school in Stark county, Ohio, where his parents removed when he was but six weeks old. The country there was new and he was obliged to work hard and undergo many hardships and privations which pioneer boys are heir to. His father died when he was quite small and he began working by the month as soon as large enough to make a hand, at \$7 a month; worked many a day in the harvest field from sunrise until the gathering darkness, for 50 cents. In 1845 he married Miss Mary Becker, by whom he has 6 children, viz.: Louisa, George, Amanda, Ruhama, Ellen and Laura. Mrs. Minnick is a worthy member of the Catholic Church. They removed to this county in 1849, settling in Penn tp., where they still reside. Mr. Minnick owns 170 acres of land, and has given his son 60 acres; he began in life poor, but has been very successful, making all by his own exertions.

*John Monroe* was born in New York city Jan. 16, 1817; his parents were Abraham and Sarah (Butters) Monroe, also natives of New York; he was reared on a farm and had no educational advantages until he was married; he came to Columbiana county, Ohio, in 1837, where, in 1842, he married Miss Mary Topper, and they have had 6 children,—5 living: William, Elizabeth, Margaret, James and Lucinda. He came to this county in October, 1850, where he still resides, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising on his farm of 180 acres, sec. 6, Penn tp. Mr. Monroe has worked hard in improving this country. In politics he is Democratic.

*Calvin Moon* was born in this county May 16, 1849, and is a son of James Moon, who came to this county in 1834. He was reared on a farm and educated at Valparaiso College; was a member of the engineer corps in the employ of the C. & C. So. R. R., for three years; was married in December, 1876, to Miss Cynthia Stonehill, by whom he has one child, Sewell. In June, 1877, Mr. Moon was elected County Superintendent of Public Instruction,



*William Miller*





for St. Joseph county, and in June, 1879, he was unanimously re-elected to the same office by acclamation.

*Nelson Moon*, farmer, sec. 6; P. O., Mishawaka; was born in Yates county, N. Y., Jan. 1, 1816, and is a son of Reynolds and Nancy (Briggs) Moon, deceased, natives of Rhode Island; the former was a soldier in the war of 1812. Mr. Moon was brought up on a farm, and educated in a common school; for many years he was a contractor for furnishing wood to the Lake Shore and other railroad companies. He was married Aug. 31, 1837, to Miss Betsey Hoard, daughter of James Hoard, dec., a soldier in the war of 1812. They have had 9 children; 6 are living, viz.: William, Caroline, Sarah, Alice, Emma and Nelson. Mr. Moon came to this county in the year 1839, and settled in Penn tp., where he still resides, and owns 175 acres of valuable land. This part of the county was covered with a heavy growth of timber at that time, and the pioneers had an immense amount of very hard labor to perform in preparing their lands for the plow, and in improving the country, of which Mr. Moon has done his share. Few men have performed the amount of labor that he has, and remain active as he, at the advanced age of 65 years. He has been a member of the Masonic order for over 30 years.

*Solomon Moon*, deceased, was born in New York, March 25, 1825, and was a son of Wanton and Barbara Moon; he was reared on a farm and received a common-school education; came to this county about the year 1855, where he engaged in farming; settled in the timber in Penn tp., and labored hard in making a home for himself and family. He was married June 26, 1861, to Miss Charlotte Hollingshead, by whom he had 9 children; of these, but 4 are living, viz.: Annie, George, Ira and Laura. During the last few years of his life, Mr. Moon was afflicted with the consumption, and traveled through the West and South to find relief, but, Dec. 25, 1872, death called him to a land of rest. He was a consistent Christian and worthy member of the M. E. Church for several years. He was a very generous man, always giving as he was prospered in life, to the support of the gospel, to missionary causes and other benevolent enterprises. It can truly be said that the country is better for his having lived in it.

*Eli O. Newman* was born in Tuscarawas county, Ohio, Aug. 19, 1839, and is a son of Thomas and Fannie (Weeks) Newman; his father died when Eli was but 3 years old, and he then went to live with his uncle, John Low; most of his early life was spent on a farm. His uncle was a miller, and he was early placed in the mill to work, and consequently enjoyed limited educational advantages. He engaged in furnishing wood, by contract, to the railroad company for over four years; he served in the late war in Co. I, 9th Ind. V. I., and participated in the battles of Stone River, Chickamauga, Lookout Mountain, Mission Ridge, Atlanta campaign, Franklin, Nashville, and others, twenty-eight in all. He was married in 1862, while on a furlough from the army, to Miss Caroline

Moon, daughter of Nelson Moon, and they have had 6 children, of whom 4 are living, viz.: Clara A., Howard W., Anna E. and Julius A. Mr. Newman is engaged in farming and stock-raising, on sec. 1, Penn tp.; he and Mrs. Newman are worthy members of the M. E. Church.

*Charles C. Niles* was born in Maysville, Wisconsin, May 1, 1852, and is a son of John and Ellen D. (Bennett) Niles, the former a native of Vermont, and the latter of New York. Mr. Niles was reared in Mishawaka, as his parents located here several years ago; he was educated at Racine College, Wisconsin. September 10, 1875, he married Miss Annie M. Stoner, by whom he has one child, Rushton D. Mr. Niles is a member of the Episcopal Church, and Mrs. Niles of the Baptist Church. Mr. N. is a prominent citizen, and a stockholder in the St. Joseph Manufacturing Company.

*Thomas Norman* was born in Clinton county, N. Y., April 7, 1833, and is a son of Thomas Norman, deceased. He was reared on a farm, and received a common-school education; is an engineer by profession, but at present is engaged in teaming in Mishawaka; came to Mishawaka in 1855, and for 12 years thereafter he run a threshing-machine. He was married July 5, 1857, to Miss Anna E. Crooks, daughter of James Crooks; she is a worthy member of the M. E. Church.

*Dr. Byron R. O'Connor*, physician and surgeon, Mishawaka; is a native of Cleveland, Ohio, born Aug. 12, 1838. His parents were Washington and Elizabeth (Delle) O'Connor; the former a native of Dutchess county, N. Y., and the latter of Virginia; he came to Grand Rapids, Michigan, in 1848, and to Mishawaka in 1855; he received his literary education in Mishawaka, and graduated from the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania, at Philadelphia, in 1867; he began practice in 1865 in Mishawaka, having attended two courses of lectures prior to this; he married Miss Fannie Stiles, daughter of Dr. John M. Stiles, deceased, so well-known in the early history of this county; they have had 3 children, 2 living: Eugenia M. and Armon S. The Doctor began poor, and in 15 years he has laid by \$20,000, besides paying security of \$3,000.

*August Bernard Oechtering*, the youngest son of Gerhard H. and Therese Benning (Maiar) Oechtering, at Rheine, Province of Westphalia, Prussia, Sept. 8, 1837. He completed his studies at the college of the Rheine in 1858, and in July of the same year came to America to prepare himself for the extensive mission of the Catholic Church, for which he always felt a great desire. For this purpose the newly appointed Bishop Luers, of Fort Wayne, Ind., to whom he had applied for admission into his diocese, sent him to the seminary of "Mount St. Mary's of the West," near Cincinnati, where he completed his theological studies in May, 1861. On the 17th of the same month he was ordained priest in the Cathedral at Fort Wayne by Bishop Luers. Soon after his ordination he was appointed Rector of the much neglected mission of St. Joseph's

Church at Delphi, Carroll county, Ind., where, from May 26, 1861, until Dec. 22, 1865, he labored with good success in building up a good congregation and school. At the same time he also attended several small missions in the surrounding country eight to twenty-five miles distant. In 1864 he accompanied his kind friend, Bishop Luers, to Europe, where, after an absence of six years, he visited his aged parents, who at that time celebrated their golden wedding, on which occasion the family held a reunion of all the 8 children and their families. In 1865 Mr. Oechtering was appointed Rector of St. Mary's Church at Avilla, Noble county, Ind. While there he labored for 18 months with 11 different congregations, scattered over four counties. In Waterloo, DeKalb county, Ind., a new church was erected, and in Kendallville, Noble county, a house was purchased of the Baptists and fitted up for Catholic worship. He also labored at several other places at the same time. During his short stay in Avilla he delivered many lectures upon Catholic doctrines, such as Confessions, Popery, the True Church, etc., in the different missions, thus clearing away many prejudices that many people held concerning the Catholic doctrines and Catholic customs, and silencing many false accusers. In 1867, at the request of the Bishop, he took charge of the St. Joseph's Church at Mishawaka, where he has since labored with good success. In December, 1879, the Bishop at Fort Wayne, Dr. Dwenger, tendered him a much larger and more remunerative field of labor; but he declined it, as he had formed an attachment to his people in Mishawaka and preferred remaining with them. In 1875 Rev. Oechtering again went to Europe. While there he visited Rome and had an audience with the venerable and saintly Pius IX. He also traveled through France, England and Ireland. This last journey he refers to frequently as one of much benefit to himself.

*P. J. Perkins* was born in the mountains of Warren county, N. Y., near Lake George, April 13, 1824. His parents were Newman and Elizabeth (Tanner) Perkins, natives of Rhode Island, who came to Lenawee county, Mich., in 1815. P. J. was reared on a farm in New York; he worked in an ax manufactory in the village of Cohoes, near Troy, for five years; there he was married, in 1848, to Miss Elizabeth Skiff, by whom he has 2 children, Charley and Edward; he removed to Kane county, Ill. in 1854, and to this county in 1871; he became interested with his brother, P. C. Perkins, in the manufacture of axes in Mishawaka, in 1869, and in 1871 they began the manufacture of the Perkins windmills in the same place. Mr. and Mrs. Perkins are members of the Presbyterian Church. There are eight brothers in the Perkins family, all of whom united with the Church before arriving at the age of 16 years.

*Abner J. Pettit* was born in Miami county, Ohio, June 18, 1830, and is a son of David and Elizabeth (Blue) Pettit, also natives of Ohio; he was brought up on a farm and received a common-school education; he came with his parents to Mishawaka in 1835; he engaged in cabinet-making for eighteen months, then worked at the

carpenter's and joiner's trade for a time; he clerked in a store two years, when he bought and moved "onto" a farm; in 1871 he engaged as ticket and freight agent with the Grand Trunk R. R. Co., taking charge of the Mishawaka station, which position he still holds. He was married in 1860 to Miss Ann E. Smith, by whom he has 2 children: Hattie L., deceased, and Carrie Alberta. Mr. and Mrs. Pettit are worthy members of the Presbyterian Church, and he is clerk of the session.

*Melvin R. Phillips* was born in Essex county, N. Y., Aug. 17, 1826, and is a son of Reuben and Lydia (Cole) Phillips, also natives of New York. Mr. Phillips was brought up on a farm and educated in the common schools; when a boy, just prior to merging into manhood, he went upon the lakes and sailed for several years; he also pursued various other avocations. He came to this county in 1846, and engaged in farming; in 1852 he married Ruth A. Cook, and they had one child, Jay; he again married in 1859, this time Louisa Headley, by whom he had 2 children: Frank and Myron. Mr. Phillips is a prominent stone-mason, and generally has charge of all the masonry in improving the mill-race at Mishawaka, and for the different manufacturing companies here; also did the mason work on both of the new iron bridges at Mishawaka. He resides on sec. 1, range 3 east, and is engaged in farming.

*Henry S. Plumb*, merchant, Oceola, was born in Delaware county, Ohio, Aug. 23, 1827, and is a son of George and Abbie Plumb, natives of Massachusetts and Ohio, respectively; he was reared on a farm and educated in Elyria, Ohio. In 1848 he left his parental roof, spending three years in Iowa, three years in Illinois and three years in the late war, in Co. A, 17th Ill. V. I.; he participated in the battles of Fort Donelson, Shiloh, siege of Corinth, siege of Vicksburg and others; he came to this county in 1864, and married Miss Alma A. Bancroft, the next day after arriving here; he had previously become acquainted with her when visiting in this locality; they have had 3 children, but one of whom is alive, Abbie E. In 1870 Mr. P. engaged in the mercantile business in Oceola; he carries a general stock of \$2,000, and is doing a good business.

*Charles K. Pulling* was born in Monmouth county, N. J., May 15, 1811, son of Samuel and Charlotte Pulling, natives of New Jersey. He was reared on a farm and received a common-school education; was in the railroad company's employ for some time, and in 1853 came to this county. He was married in Philadelphia in 1836 to Miss Mary A. Nailer, by whom he had 12 children, 6 living, viz.: George, Emeline, Annie, Henrietta, John and Ellen. He owns 235 acres of valuable land, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 8. His sons, George and John, were soldiers in the late war. Mr. and Mrs. Pulling are worthy members of the Baptist Church at Mishawaka.

*John H. Quigg*, of the firm of Quigg & Beemer, was born in Wayne county, Ind., Nov. 25, 1830, son of Henry and Amanda

(Ireland) Quigg, who came to this county in 1833 and to Mishawaka about 1835. He was educated in Mishawaka; labored as a common laborer for some time; attempted to work at the tailor's trade but failed in health; he ran on the St. Joseph river for ten years upon different boats; he was married in 1857 to Miss Ida Julian, daughter of John Julian, deceased. He served in the late war in Co. H, 138th Ind. V. I., for six months; was Deputy Provost Marshal in Mishawaka up to the time of his enlistment; clerked in a store in Mishawaka for fifteen years. He formed a partnership with Mr. Beemer of this place in 1879, and engaged in the sale of dry-goods, staple and fancy notions, carrying a stock of \$4,500, and is doing a good business.

*Geo. W. Redding* was born in Benton county, N. Y., July 4, 1824, and is a son of James I. and Rhoda (Ketchum) Redding. He came to this county with his parents in 1836, settling on a farm, and receiving a common-school education. Being somewhat of a lover of music, Mr. Redding improved his talent in this direction by taking lessons under Professors I. B. Woodbury, Foote, Baker, Tuttle and other leading vocalists. For the last 35 years he has successfully taught vocal music in St. Joseph county, and is also agent for some of the most popular organs and pianos. He was married in 1845, to Miss Mary Eller, daughter of J. Eller, deceased. The professor is also engaged in farming and stock-raising on his beautiful farm, on sec. 18. He teaches in the winter, and attends to his farm during the summer seasons. Mrs. Redding is a worthy member of the M. E. Church.

*Jacob Rhoads*, sec. 8; P. O., South Bend; was born in Hunting-ton county, Pa., Feb. 27, 1825, and is a son of John and Margaret Rhoads, also natives of Pennsylvania. Mr. Rhoads was brought up on a farm, and educated in the common schools. His parents removed with their family to Ohio in 1835. About 1849 or '50 Mr. Rhoads came to this county on a visit, and being favorably impressed with the country he removed to Madison tp. in 1851. In 1857 he married Miss Rosetta Watkins, and removed to this tp. They have had 8 children, of whom 7 are living, viz.: Ida A., Lillie B., Minnie L., Mark W., Keturah, Margaretta and Lucy. Mr. Rhoads has resided in this county since 1851, except five years, which time he resided in Elkhart county. He owns 80 acres of land, and is engaged in general farming. Mr. and Mrs. Rhoads are worthy members of the M. E. Church.

*Samuel Ritter* was born in Butler county, Ohio. His parents were Jacob and Sarah (Writter) Ritter, the former of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Virginia. Mr. Ritter was brought to this county in May, 1832, when about nine years of age; in 1844 he married Sally Jones, daughter of Samnel and Polly (Terson) Jones, of this county; her father died in 1850, and her mother is now living with her. She was born in 1802 in North Carolina and came to this county in 1830. Mr. and Mrs. Ritter have 6 children living, and 5 deceased. The former are members of the Penn Township Grange,

which now meets in South Bend. Mr. R. owns 116 acres of fine farm land, worth \$100 an acre. He is a Republican.

*John Robbins* was born in Ohio April 18, 1813, and is a son of William and Mary (Nichols) Robbins, natives of Pennsylvania; he was brought up on a farm and educated in the common schools. He came to this county in 1835, having married Miss Precious Jenkins the year previous. They had 3 children: Delila, Samuel and Mary A. Mrs. Robbins died Jan. 6, 1845. Mr. Robbins married a second wife, Miss Rachel Jackson, by whom he has had 4 children, 3 living, viz.: Calvin C., Sarah and John W. Mr. Robbins began poor, worked hard, and managed well, and now has a good farm of 160 acres.

*Aaron Rogers*, deceased, was a native of Ireland. He came to America about 1840, and located in Mishawaka, where he worked on the new mill-dam, which is still standing. He was married to Miss Catharine Loomans, by whom he had 7 children; 4 living viz.: John, William, David and Oliver. He died in March, 1874, and Mrs. Rogers died in September, 1879. John, who is a subscriber for this work, resides on the old home place, sec. 5, and conducts the farm. He married Miss Mary Kizer in April, 1880.

*Frederick A. Rohleder* was born in Germany Jan. 6, 1846; was reared and educated in the village of Vollmershain, Germany. He came to this place (Mishawaka) in 1860, where he followed carpentering for 13 years. In 1873 he erected a brick block in Mishawaka, and kept a bakery and grocery with Mr. Kuss for 6 years. In 1869 he engaged in the dry-goods trade here, and is doing a good business, with a capital stock of \$5,500. He married Miss Sarah Wees in 1873; they have 3 children, Emma, Walter and Emma.

*James A. Roper* was born in St. Joseph county, Mich., Dec. 15, 1846. His parents were John and Cornelia Roper, the former a native of England, and the latter of Onondaga Co., N. Y. They came to this county when he was but three months old, where he has since resided. He was educated in Asbury University, at Greencastle, Ind.; was married in 1868, to Miss Ella M. Dowling, by whom he had 4 children: Henry C., Clarence A., Harry D. and Eugene. Mr. R. served three years and eight months in the late war in Co. F, 48th Ind. Vol. Inf., and participated in the battles of Iuka, Corinth, Raymond, Jackson, siege of Vicksburg, Tunnel Hill and others, and accompanied Sherman's army in his noted march to the sea.

*Gustavus Rosenwinkel*, Pastor of the Lutheran Church, Mishawaka, was born Feb. 10, 1850, at Hesse Cassel, Prussia. His parents were Henry J. and Anna (Hoff) John, who died on ship-board while on their way to America in 1854. He was then but four years old and was taken and adopted into the family of Henry Rosenwinkel; was reared on a farm in Du Page county, Ill., until 15 years of age, when he entered Concordia College at Fort Wayne, Ind. Here he remained at hard study for six years; he then took

a three-years' course in the Concordia Theological Seminary at St. Louis, Mo. He began his ministerial labors in 1874, in the town of Warsaw, Wis., where he labored for two years and three months with success, having four congregations under his jurisdiction. In November, 1876, he began his labors with the Mishawaka Church. He also has charge of the Church at Woodland, in Madison tp. He was married in April, 1875, to Miss Catharine Katt, by whom he has 3 children, viz.: Gustavus, Hugo and John.

*John J. Schindler* was born in Buffalo, N. Y. Feb. 11, 1851; his parents were Andrew and Rosa Schindler, natives of Germany; he was educated in St. Joseph Academy; came to Mishawaka in 1864, and engaged in the flouring mills of Mishawaka for eight years; then, in 1872, established a hotel and saloon in company with his brother, the real estate being owned by their mother; they also carry a stock of groceries, and do a good business. Mr. S. is, besides, an insurance agent, and agent for ocean steamship lines. He was married, May 4, 1879, to Miss Christina Fierstos, by whom he has one child, Ollie; they are members of the Catholic Church.

*Charles F. Shinn* was born in Mahoning county, Ohio, May 23, 1837, and is a son of Abram and Margaret (Wilkins) Shinn, natives of New Jersey; he was reared on a farm until thirteen years old; at this time he began in life for himself, working by the month for different parties; in 1870 he brought a portable saw-mill to this county and located with it upon sec. 31, Penn tp., where he operated it until 1879, and sold it. It is now owned and run by W. Cook. Mr. Shinn was married Feb. 16, 1860, to Miss Mary Boner, daughter of Andrew Boner. He is now engaged in farming on the original place (sec. 31), and owns 60 acres of valuable land.

*John W. Smith* was born in France May 1, 1814; his parents were George and Margaret Smith, who came to America with their family in 1828. They remained in Canada three months, when they removed to Stark county, Ohio. In 1835 they removed to this county, where they found plenty of hard work to do in clearing away the logs and brush and preparing the way for the prosperity of future generations. Mr. Smith was married in 1833 to Miss Lucy Ann Weaver, by whom he has had 10 children; 9 are living, viz.: Susannah, Catharine, Mary A., Lucy A. and Eliza, Adam, Geo. W., John M. and Helen. Mr. Smith is engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 32, and owns 120 acres of valuable land. Mr. and Mrs. Smith are members of the Lutheran Church.

*William C. Smith* was born in Clinton county, Ind., June 27, 1838; is a son of John and Margaret (Logan) Smith, the latter a daughter of John Logan, one of the pioneers of Clinton county. The first ten years of his life was spent on a farm; he went to Champaign county, Ill., in 1857, but soon returned; he peddled cook-stoves throughout Northern Indiana for two years, and in 1863 came to Oceola, where he engaged with the L. S. & M. S. R. R. Co. as watchman; he soon afterward became the agent at this



place, and except five years, has held that position; was married in 1861 to Miss Adelia James, by whom he has had 5 children; Chas. A., William J., Marion W., Minnie M. and Cora Bell, who was scalded to death when two years old. In 1863 Mr. Smith lost his right arm when in the act of coupling cars.

*Cornelius Smyser* was born in Adams county, Pa., ten miles east of Gettysburg, Dec. 20, 1820; his parents were Michael and Rebecca (Terree) Smyser; he attended school with the Studebaker Bros.; was brought up on a farm until 17 years old, when he learned the carpenter's trade; but this not agreeing with his health and taste, he abandoned it at the age of 20. He went to Wayne county, Ohio, with his parents in 1838, and in 1841 he went to Cincinnati, Ohio, and engaged in gardening. This he afterward abandoned and worked in a lumber yard awhile. He was married in 1845 to Miss Ann Eliza Wilson, by whom he had 8 children; 7 living, viz.: Alonzo W., Melissa J., Eliza, Ida, Josephine, Emma and Albert. He came to this county in 1852, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising. Mr. S. resided 11 months in Pike county, Ill. Mr. and Mrs. Smyser are members of the M. E. Church.

*Jacob C. Snyder*, mechanic and farmer, Mishawaka, was born in Marion county, Ohio, Sept. 17, 1825. The first eleven years of Mr. Snyder's life was spent on a farm; at that early age he manifested such a desire to use edge tools that he was apprenticed to a carpenter. At the age of 18 years he had so mastered his trade that he superintended the erection of a large barn for his father, who, in consideration of that work, gave him his time. He followed his profession until 1850, when he married Miss Catharine E. Arthur, and removed to Madison tp., this county. Here he engaged in farming until 1865, when he removed to Mishawaka to educate his children, of whom there were 6; there are 5 now living, viz.: John W., Arthur B., Henry J., Schuyler H. and Sarah M. Mr. Snyder pursued his profession in Mishawaka until 1879. He is this year (1880) attending to his farm adjoining Mishawaka. His sons are all mechanics also. Mr. and Mrs. Snyder and their children, Henry J. and Sarah M., are worthy members of the Baptist Church at Mishawaka.

*John Squires* was born in Butler county, Ohio, June 12, 1810, and is a son of Burges and Sophia (Case) Squires, natives of Vermont. He was brought up on a farm and educated in a subscription school, which was taught in a round-log cabin; the seats in this pioneer school-house consisted of split logs, as also did the writing desks and the floor; the fire-place was very large and in one end of the room; the chimney was made of sticks and mortar on the outside of the house; the base of the chimney was in a triangular shape, built up for five or six feet with split logs or puncheons, inside of which were placed dirt and stone. In 1828 Mr. S. removed to Elkhart county, Ind., settling on Pleasant Plain, near where Elkhart now stands. He states that there was then an Indian burying ground on the present site of the town of Elkhart. In



1830 he visited McCoy's mission in Michigan, near where Niles now stands; while there he helped husk corn; he came to this county in 1831. He was married in September, 1837, to Miss Frances Furrow, by whom he has 9 children, viz.: Mary, Sarah A., A. Helen, Benjamin D., Norman N., Charles E., John S., Frances A. and Ida E. For 20 years Mr. S. engaged in the lumber business, but is now engaged in farming and stock-raising on sec. 6. Another historical fact in connection with the history of Mr. Squires should have a prominent place in this biography. He was in Fort Stevenson with General Harrison when that place was attacked by the British, and states that Harrison would not attempt to hold the fort, and was on the point of evacuating it, when one Col. Croghan asked for 100 volunteers to help him defend the fort. This number he readily obtained and successfully held fort, while Harrison and the remainder of his army retired into the woods some distance away to await the result. He says that the honor of defeating the British at that time rightly belongs to Col. Croghan and his 100 brave volunteers, instead of to Gen. Harrison, as history gives it.

*N. L. Strong* was born in St. Joseph county, Mich., Aug. 23, 1847, and is a son of Elisha and Maria (Stevens) Strong, the former a native of the State of New York and the latter of Ohio. Elisha Strong emigrated to Michigan in 1834, and now resides in Oregon. N. L., the subject of this sketch, was reared on a farm a part of the time. He received his education in Michigan and in Salem, Oregon. He came to Mishawaka in 1870, where, in July, 1878, he married Miss Mary Chandler, by whom he has one child, George. He engaged in the livery business for some time in Salem, Oregon; he is now in the same business in Mishawaka, and is doing well, with a capital stock of \$3,000.

*John C. Strunk* was born in Bedford county, Pa., Dec. 16, 1837, and is a son of Joseph and Catharine Strunk, natives also of Pennsylvania. Mr. Strunk was reared and educated in Greensburg, Ohio, receiving a portion of his education in Greensburg Seminary. For 13 years he taught during the winter seasons, working at the milling business during the summer seasons. He removed to Elkhart in 1860, where he kept grocery for three years. He was married in 1862 to Miss Mary J. Johnson, daughter of Henry Johnson. He came to Mishawaka in 1864, and is the present City Marshal for this place, serving his second term. In 1878 he made a trip to York county, Nebraska, bought some land and returned. He is a member of the I. O. O. F.

*James L. Thorp* was born in Cass county, Mich., May 18, 1836, and is a son of James M. and Prudence Thorp, natives of Delaware, who emigrated to Michigan in 1834, and returned to Delaware in 1837, where James L. was reared on a farm until 12 years old, when his father died. He then lived with his uncle, William Tharp, then Governor of Delaware. He received his education at the Milford (Del.) high school. He came to Cass county, Mich.,

in 1854, and in 1858 to Milwaukee, Wis. He there was in the employ of the omnibus company until 1865, when he located in Mishawaka. He was married in 1868 to Miss Julia A. Young, and they have 5 children: George, James, Emma, Frank and Ida. He runs a respectable saloon in Mishawaka, and has a large custom.

*R. T. VanPelt, M. D.*, was born in La Porte, Ind., May 4, 1850; was reared in La Porte and Kankakee county, Ill., where he received his education; his parents are Ryan and Catharine Van Pelt, of Walkerton, this county. He read medicine under Dr. Smith and Prof. Gunn, of Chicago, and graduated at the Rush Medical College, of Chicago, in 1876; he then practiced one year in the hospital at Chicago, also one year in Kokomo, Ind., and in 1878 located in Mishawaka, where, by close attention to business he is building up a good practice.

*Daniel Vrooman*, sec. 17, was born in Schoharie county, N. Y., March 11, 1811, and is a son of Bartholomew and Hannah Vrooman, natives also of New York. He was reared on a farm, but early learned the molder's trade in Ohio, where his parents had moved when he was but five years old. He first came to this county in 1832, but returned soon. He was married in 1834 to Miss Huldah Whitney, by whom he had 5 children: James, Martha, Adaline, Fannie and Charles. He removed to this county in 1845, and worked at his trade five years. Mrs. V. died May 29, 1875; and he again married Sept. 9, 1876, this time Mrs. Rhoda Gay, who had 6 children by her first husband; 5 of them are living, viz.: Frank, Anna, Ira, Eddie and Hattie. Mr. Vrooman owns 149 acres of land, besides some town property in Mishawaka, and has made it all by his own exertion.

*Christian Wambach* was born in Germany March 27, 1846, and is a son of Gustus and Anna E. Wambach. He early learned the shoemaker's trade; came to Trumbull county, O., in 1860, and to Mishawaka in 1868. He was married Feb. 23, 1868, to Miss Margaret Dielman, by whom he has had 6 children; of these, 5 are living, viz.: Annie, Johnnie, Louisa, Minnie and Emma. Mr. W. is engaged in the boot and shoe trade in Mishawaka, and does a good business.

*Henry Weis* was born in Penn tp. Feb. 26, 1847, and is a son of Christian and Anna Weis; was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. In 1874 he married Miss Eliza Beyler, daughter of George Beyler, of Marshall county, and they have 3 children, Mary A., George I. and an infant girl. Mr. W. owns 120 acres of valuable land on sec. 28, and is engaged in farming and stock-raising; he and his wife are members of the Evangelical Association. Christian Weis, deceased, father of the above, was born in the town of Berne, Germany, in 1803. In 1831 he emigrated to America and located at Canton, Ohio, where he engaged in farming. In 1833 he married Miss Anna Heim, by whom he had 11 children, 9 of whom are living, viz.: Christina, Elizabeth (now Mrs. Zimmerman, of Mishawaka), Ulrich, Peter, John, Henry, Mary (now Mrs.

Knss, of Mishawaka), Joseph and William. He came to Marshall county, Ind. in 1840, and to this county in 1847; he was a successful farmer and stock-raiser, and a very hard-working, industrious man. Prior to his death he owned 385 acres of land. He died Sept. 17, 1876, loved and respected by all. He was a worthy member of the Evangelical Association. Mrs. Weis is a member of the same Church.

*J. H. Whitson* was born in Lancaster, Pa., Oct. 7, 1830, and is a son of Micah and Mary (Mercer) Whitson. He was reared on a farm, and educated in the common school and at Kennet Square, Chester county, Pa. At the age of 14 years he was apprenticed to a machinist, and he soon learned his art and became very efficient. He afterward engaged in lumbering for a few years. In 1852 he became foreman in the Toledo Iron Works, which position he held until 1856, when he came to Mishawaka. He was married in August, 1854, to Miss Emma Zimmerman, by whom he has one daughter, Jessie. Mr. Whitson was brought up a Friend. Mrs. W. is a member of the Episcopal Church.

*Wm. Whitson*, superintendent of the wood works of the St. Joseph Manufacturing Company, was born in Lancaster county, Pa., Jan. 23, 1818, and is a son of Micah and Mary (Mercer) Whitson, deceased. He was reared on a farm and educated in the common schools. He early learned the use of tools, and has always been a mechanic, although he never served an apprenticeship. He was married in 1839 to Miss Elizabeth Fulton, a distant relative of the renowned Robert Fulton. They have 7 children, viz.: Anna, Elva, Loretto, Mary and Adell (twins) Wilzue and Viola. Mr. Whitson came to Mishawaka in 1869, where he has since been foreman, as above stated. He now has his second wife, formerly Mrs. Jane C. Wright, a native of Adams county, Pa. They are both members of the society of Friends.

*John W. Wiggins*, farmer, sec. 4; was born in Canada Dec. 3, 1840, and is a son of William and Margaret (Gleuney) Wiggins, the former a native of England, and the latter of Ireland; he was raised on a farm, and received a common-school education; went to New York in 1865, and came to this county in 1867. He was married in New York in 1867, to Mrs. Antoinette Gay, by whom he has had 4 children; one living, viz.: Jennie. Mrs. Wiggins died in January, 1875, and in September of the same year Mr. W. married Fannie Glover, and they have had 3 children, two of whom are living, viz.: Nora and Edith. Mr. Wiggins is a member of the M. E. Church, while Mrs. Wiggins is connected with the Christian Church. He owns 90 acres of land and is engaged in farming and stock-raising; in politics he is a Republican.

*Simon Yenn* was born in France May 11, 1840, and is a son of Theobald and Christina Yenn, who emigrated to Stark county, O., in 1845. Simon was reared on a farm, and educated on a farm. He was married in 1862 to Miss Josephine Roth, by whom he has had 9 children, 8 living: Simon M., Mary J., Harriet E., Clara O.,

William H. and Franklin J. (twins) George E. and August B. He came to Mishawaka in 1863. He commenced the grocery business in 1868, and now carries a stock of \$3,000 to \$4,000, consisting of groceries, provisions, crockery, glassware, etc., and is doing a large business.

*Charles Zimmerman* was born in Germany Feb. 3, 1827; was reared on a farm and educated in the public schools of his native country; is a tailor by trade, and came to Mishawaka in 1868, where he carries on merchant tailoring, and is doing a good business. He was married in 1856 to Miss Magdalena Linsenmyer, by whom he had one child, Magdalena. Mrs. Z. died in 1857, and in 1861 he married Elizabeth Weise, by whom he has 5 children: William, Emma, Mary, Edward and Clara.



## PORTAGE TOWNSHIP.

This is 37 north, 2 east, bounded on the north by German and Clay townships, on the east by Penn, on the south by Green and Centre, and on the west by Warren, and contains 28 square miles, being four miles north and south by seven east and west. The middle of the south side is near the geographical center of the county. It is one of the first townships organized in the county, and as its history is the same as that of South Bend, the capital of the county, we proceed immediately to give a full account of this enterprising city.

## SOUTH BEND.

When Alexis Coquillard established a trading post at the south bend of the St. Joseph River in 1824, for the purpose of traffic with the Pottawatomie Indians, little did he think that around this post would grow up a thriving, bustling city, with manufactories affording employment to thousands of men, and whose articles of manufacture would be shipped to every part of the civilized world. But all this was accomplished in less than 50 years. The Indian, the sole occupant of this land at that time, was sent farther west, and where the wigwams of the braves were erected, now stand the stately mansions of the whites. Change is written upon every hand. The location of the town was well chosen, and was appreciated by the traveler and others as early as 1830. Says a correspondent of the *Indianapolis Journal* under date November 30, of that year:

"Having lately traveled through the north part of Indiana, I am of the opinion that a description of it will not be without interest to your readers. Traveling west, I passed the southern bend of the St. Joseph river, at the intersection of the Michigan road, where it is supposed the seat of justice of St. Joseph county will ere long be established. This town, I have no doubt, will in a very few years become one of the most important towns north of Indianapolis, and it is a misfortune that the law of the last session authorizing the partial opening of the Michigan road, did not cause it to be opened to the St. Joseph at this bend, where salt manufactured at Canandaigua, New York, of a quality far superior to any manufactured on the Ohio, is now selling for \$3.50 per barrel of five bushels. I am pleased to learn that a large number of wagons from distant settlements have come to this place, through the prairie without a road, for loads of this indispensable article."

The early history of South Bend is closely identified with the history of the county, and the history of one is the history of the other, therefore more attention will be given to a later period in what follows.

#### THE NAME.

South Bend was so named in consequence of the town being located upon the south bend of the St. Joseph river, and therefore only expresses locality. Several attempts have been made to change its name; column after column of newspaper articles have been written in favor of and against the proposed change. The name St. Joseph's City was once proposed and found many advocates, but was rejected by the people, and so the name remains as originally bestowed upon it by Alexis Coquillard and his associates in the beginning.

#### LOCATION HERE OF THE COUNTY SEAT.

The first commissioners appointed by the Legislature of the State for the location of the county seat selected a place about two miles down the river from South Bend. This did not please the people, and a petition was circulated, and the signature of nearly every voter in the county obtained, changing it to this place. The proprietors of the place offered very favorable inducements to secure its location and the change was made.

When it was settled that South Bend should be the county seat, confidence was instilled in the minds of the settlers and those who desired to locate here, and improvements were at once commenced. The town was laid out, lots sold at a fair price, buildings were erected, and South Bend at once began to reach out. Its growth was slow for some years, but it has never once taken a backward step. A steady growth has always been kept up, which has in the last few years been quickened by the introduction and enlargement of its manufactories, but never exhibiting a mushroom growth.

#### REMINISCENCES OF SOUTH BEND.

A writer in the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, in 1876, when the minds of men were being drawn to historical events, thus writes of the early days of South Bend:

"South Bend was quite a prominent point in the Indian country long before any town was laid out. Niles and Mottville were the first laid-out towns on the St. Joseph river, but long before they were first settled the American Fur Company had a trading post at South Bend, for the sale of Indian goods and the collection of furs, which drew around it quite a little settlement of white people, directly or indirectly engaged in trading with or living off the Indians. Then as far back as 1827, Col. Taylor opened an Indian store at this place, so that when the county was first organized,

South Bend had two dry-goods stores. These two establishments, and the few people who collected around them, made it, before it had a name, more attractive to emigration than either Niles or Mottville.

"In 1831 the new town began to put on the airs of a village, though standing trees were not cut out of Michigan street until the next year, except as needed for fire-wood or fence rails. The Michigan road was cut out in 1832. This cleared the standing timber from Michigan and Water streets, and gave us all the room we needed for street purposes. All that part of the table-land between the river and what we call the bluff, was covered with a beautiful growth of oak and hickory—mostly burr oak from 40 to 50 feet high. By proper thinning out and careful preservation of the rest, South Bend might have made one of the most delightfully shaded towns in the United States.

"Among the leading men of 1830-'31 were Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor. They were the Indian traders. Coquillard at that time had charge of an Indian store owned by himself and Comparet, of Fort Wayne. It was successor to the American Fur Company's store. Taylor had charge of one owned by himself and Judge Hanna, of Fort Wayne.

"Samuel L. Cottrell moved into the St. Joseph valley as early as 1827. He was the first elective sheriff in the county. He was a large and powerful man and rather combative in his younger days. He served as sheriff two terms afterward. He was always regarded as an honest man, and faithfully and promptly discharged his official duties. St. Joseph county never had a better sheriff than Samuel L. Cottrell.

"There was considerable building in the new town in 1831, though the houses were small—mostly log cabins. Peter Johnson built a story-and-a-half frame house on the corner where Coonley's drug store now stands, in which he kept hotel for many years. Benjamin Coquillard also kept a house of entertainment at the junction of Pearl and Washington streets, and so did Calvin Lilley, on the ground where E. P. Taylor now resides, at the corner of St. Joseph and Pearl streets. Alexis Coquillard also commenced the erection of his new dwelling-house, the same now owned by Joseph Miller on Michigan street.

"In the spring of this year Peter Johnson built the first regular keel-boat for general freighting on the St. Joseph river. I do not remember her name, but I remember well seeing her launched. It was done with due ceremony. A man stood on the bow with an uplifted bottle of whisky, and as she sailed into the water, broke it over the bow, thereby insuring the boats future success. This boat did the freighting on the river that year and its share of business for many years afterward. The venerable Madore Crate, still living in our midst, was her captain. From that time until railroads were built into the St. Joseph valley, the river was the great highway over which the merchandise into and out of the county

was transported. Several steamboats were engaged in the business from 1835 to 1852.

"Horatio Chapin also, at this time located in our midst. He started his goods from Detroit by way of the lakes as early in the spring as he could, but they did not reach here until July, when he opened the first general dry-goods store not connected with the Indian trade. He commenced business in a hewed-log cabin on St. Joseph street, on the lot where Mrs. Massey now lives. He was about twenty-eight years old, and as strict a Presbyterian then as when he died. I remember his goods came up the river on Saturday afternoon, and were immediately piled out on the bank of the river, but there were no teams to be had to haul them up to the store that afternoon. Next morning there were plenty, but next morning was Sunday, and no man or beast could work for him on that day. So the goods had to lie there, exposed to the weather, with nobody to look after them until Monday morning. He was one of that kind of men that if he said the horse was 16 feet high he would stick to it; at least he never would be argued out of it. If he changed his opinion it would be of his own volition, not from what any one else would say. For the first year or two he did quite a thriving business, and then he was unfortunate in losing two stocks of goods on the lakes. He was the first county school commissioner, and as such had charge of the sale of the sixteenth section of school lands. This office was held by him for several years, and as long as he would keep it, always discharging his duties up to the spirit of the law; as he did everything else.

"To effect the removal of the county-seat from St. Joseph to South Bend, a donation of lots was made to the county by the proprietors of the latter place, to enable it to build county buildings, but there was a reservation of ten per cent. of the proceeds arising from the sale of the lots to be appropriated for a county library. This fund with some other was collected together, and Mr. Chapin appointed to select and purchase the books. He accepted the trust and faithfully executed it, and acted as librarian for many years without compensation. Many of those old books are now in the McClure Library. I had never seen a historical book before, except Weem's Life of Washington, and Horry's Life of Gen. Marion. Rollins, Gibbon, Plutarch, Josephus, and such works opened a new world to me. Though Rollins, Plutarch and Josephus may be full of fabulous stories, still I think they are capital good books for boys to read as well as men. After Mr. Chapin quit the mercantile business he was for a short time engaged in warehousing and buying produce. When the branch of the first State Bank was established here he was made its cashier, and continued in that office until its charter expired. He was a peculiar and remarkable character, very intelligent and thoughtful, always trying to live a strictly Christian life; yet his temper was so quick, and when excited so stubborn and self-willed, that one might as





*Timothy E. Howard.*



well attempt to reason with a statue as with him under such circumstances; but when undisturbed by conflict he was remarkably polite, kind and accommodating. He died a few years ago enjoying the confidence and esteem of all who knew him.

"It was in this year that John D. Defrees and Dr. Jacob Hardman came and settled among us. The doctor soon commenced the practice of his profession. The country was remarkably healthy for the first few years, but as the Doctor was the only physician within a range of thirty or forty miles he found enough to do. He is still living and looking about as young and frisky as ever, always ready to enjoy a good dinner, and takes a lively interest in the reminiscences of the past.

"In the fall of 1831 John D. Defrees and his brother Joseph established the first weekly newspaper published in Northern Indiana, called the *Northwestern Pioneer*. I think it was before any paper was published in Chicago or anywhere in Southwestern Michigan. They were practical printers, did their own type-setting and wrote their own editorials. The paper was regarded as ably conducted and popular with the people, yet it was a premature venture. There were not people or business enough to support it. After a struggle of a year or so its publication was suspended, and we were without a newspaper until 1836, when the *Free Press* was started by William Milligan, from which the *Register* is a lineal descendant.

"After the suspension of the paper, John D. Defrees studied law, and in connection Thomas D. Baird got into quite a lucrative practice. But his strong inclination to mix in politics drew him from the Bar to the State Senate. After the expiration of his term he became editor of the *Indiana Journal*, and a noted politician throughout the State. Under the administration of President Lincoln he was elected Government printer at Washington. After filling that office with great credit to himself and advantage to the public service, he retired to private life.

"When it was found that the paper would not pay, Joseph H. Defrees struck out for Goshen, where the county seat of that county had just been located. About all his worldly estate was then invested in a printing press and a small quantity of type,—not a very flattering investment to raise money on, but 'Joe' had a capital within himself which he did not then comprehend, but Col. Taylor did. The Colonel proposed to furnish him with a small stock of goods to start as a merchant in the new town. He took them without being able to pay a cent down, or to secure any part of it. With this small beginning, he soon became the leading merchant in that county, and has ever since been regarded as one of its best and most respectable business men. He has represented his county in both branches of the State Legislature, and his district in Congress, with credit to himself and satisfaction to his constituency. He is still living, enjoying a well-spent life, and surrounded by a prospering and highly respectable family.

"The late Judge Elisha Egbert was another old settler of 1831, and was the first practicing lawyer who located in South Bend.

"James P. and Daniel Antrim were among the settlers in the fall of 1831. They started the next dry-goods store after Mr. Chapin. James P. Antrim was the first Probate Judge of the county. He was commissioned in January, 1833, and held the office until it was conferred upon Judge Egbert in 1834. He was considered a sensible, straightforward man. He was Justice of the Peace for several years afterward. To show how careful and faithful he was as a public officer, and as a lesson to justices of the peace at this day, I will mention that whenever a witness fee was paid in, he notified the witness of the fact or paid him the money as soon as he saw him. If it was not more than a quarter of a dollar he was sure to get it. It was not done for display, but it was his way of doing business. He moved away from here a great many years ago, and settled in Hamilton county, in this State, and was still living a few years ago. Daniel Antrim was quite a business man. He laid out the town of North Liberty, and built a saw-mill and grist-mill there, and by his energy gave his new town a brisk start in the world, but the hard times of 1838 struck him, spread out all his new enterprises, and before he could gather himself up he fell into the bankrupt stream, and soon floated off and out of sight, in company with other wrecks.

"John S. McClelland settled here in the latter part of 1831. He shortly afterward opened a store. He was a quiet kind of a man; did not talk much, but was enterprising and regarded as a man of good practical sense. At one time he was part owner and principal manager of what was called the new furnace at Mishawaka. In 1838, in connection with John Brownfield, he undertook to build glass works in South Bend. The buildings were erected out in the woods, about thirty or forty rods from where St. Patrick's church now stands. After the buildings were all ready for occupancy, the man who was to be their manufacturer of glass whimsically left them. The hard times and Mr. McClelland's death, soon afterward, put an end to the enterprise. It was said then, and I have no doubt it is true, that we have an abundance of the best quality of sand for making glass.

"The late Captain Anthony Defrees was also a settler of 1831. At that time there was quite a considerable stream of water starting out of the side of the bluff, a few rods up the river above the stand-pipe, and springs came out of the bank all along the bluff at about the same elevation to where the bluff runs into the river below. It was one continual spirt of water, in all forming a constant and quite considerable stream at the foot of the bluff. The Captain concluded there was water enough, under a head of 16 or 18 feet, to run a woolen factory, if it could be collected together in a race on the side-hill below, where the water issued from the bluff. He went to work at it in the spring of 1832, and cut his race and

soon had the water flowing through a flume at the expected elevation, but he soon discovered his race was filling up with sand. It was found impossible to keep the quick-sand back, and he was compelled to abandon the work at considerable loss. No one thought at that time of tackling the river and building a dam across it; so when the Captain's hydraulic project failed, the prospects of South Bend as a manufacturing center went down below zero.

The 22d of February, 1832, being Washington's centennial birth-day, the South-Benders held a meeting at the log school-house, and were gratified with a very fine address for the occasion from Captain Defrees. In the fall of that year he moved out on his farm near town, where he lived for many years as an industrious and successful farmer. Occasionally he amused himself writing for the newspapers. He was an intelligent and thinking man, positive and decided in his character, never catering to any set of men or party, or in any way seeking popular applause. If anybody wanted his opinion they could have it, and if they did not like it they could let it alone and no harm done. He worried the storms of life until after he was 80 years old, and then was gathered to his fathers, bearing with him the esteem of all his acquaintances.

"Peter Johnson was another permanent settler of 1831. As I have before stated, he built and owned the first keel-boat used on the St. Joseph river for general freighting, and also one of the earliest in the hotel business, which he continued for many years, and while engaged in this business he kept his boat running on the river and acted as one of the Justices of the Peace of the township, and during the same time was engaged as a carpenter, building the best houses that were being then built in the town. He built and owned the first steam saw-mill that was ever put up in the county. He was the architect who erected the old court-house, the walls of which were put up in 1832. He served one term of seven years as an Associate Judge of the Circuit Court. He was a good neighbor, a kind-hearted and peaceable man. After arriving at the age of nearly 80 years he departed this life, without leaving an enemy behind him.

"Samuel Studebaker ought not to be forgotten. He was no relation to the present family that I know of, but he had a good deal of their enterprise in him. He came here prior to 1831, and the first I knew of him he was residing on a farm now occupied by Mr. Wenger. He built one of the first saw-mills in the county. It was situated at the mouth of Bowman's creek, on the St. Joseph river. I think John Wedner got his mill at the mouth of Ullery creek before Studebaker. Along in 1835 or 1836 he got up a two-and-a-half story mill-house about a mile this side of Mishawaka, on the river bank, intending it for a grist-mill. He expected to get his power from the collection of the waters of the big marsh back of Mishawaka into a race carrying it to his mill, but he died before he got anything more done to it, and the mill-house was allowed to rot down. He was among the first to build in South Bend. He

put up a house on the northwest corner of Michigan and Jefferson streets, before the county-seat was located here. He was a hard-working, plain and sensible man, and a very worthy citizen.

"John Massey settled here in the fall of 1831. He, in company with his brother-in-law, Samuel Eaton, started the first regular blacksmith shop. They were both industrious men and got plenty to do at good prices. The shop was on St. Joseph street, near Chapin's store. In a few years, by hard work, they acquired considerable property. Mr. Massey was afterward Tax Collector for the county, a duty which is now discharged by the County Treasurer. He was a quiet man, a good citizen, and above the average in business capacity.

"Nehemiah B. Griffith established the first licensed ferry across the St. Joseph river at this point. It was in 1831. He was a retired Methodist preacher, a man of a good deal of ability, and could preach a good sermon. Some people thought he was a little too sharp a business man for a good Methodist preacher.

"Simeon Mason was the first tanner. He built a tan-yard here as early as the spring of 1831, and I do not know but he commenced it in the fall of 1830. The water-works building is where his tannery stood. But tanning at that early day and in this county seemed to be an impossible business; at least he could not make it go very well. He quit the business and left a great many years ago.

"Edmond P. Taylor is one of our oldest residents. He came here prior to 1830, and assisted his brother, L. M. Taylor, in the management of his Indian store. After L. M. Taylor went out of the dry-goods business, Pitts continued the same on his own account for several years at the old stand. He then wound up the business and commenced packing pork. He was the pioneer pork-packer, and devoted himself exclusively to that business for several years; then he went down on the race in the lumber business.

"Christian Wolf was the first hatter. He commenced business in the spring of 1831. His shop was a log cabin on Michigan street, about where John Klingel's store now stands. He was a good-hearted but very peculiar kind of a man. Old Judge Wade used to say to him that he had seen many a wolf, but that was the first *Christian* Wolf he ever saw. We generally called him "Governor," after the then Gov. Wolf, of Pennsylvania. He was a most obstinate Democrat. The *Washington Globe*, then the leading Democratic paper in the United States, was his political bible. The *National Intelligencer* occupied about the same position in the Whig party. The two papers were of the same size and form, with very much the same typographical appearance. For the purpose of testing the Governor's political candor, the heads of the two papers were cut off and that of the *Globe* nicely put upon the *Intelligencer* and handed out of the postoffice to the Governor as his paper. He sat down and commenced to read it. A triad of friends were casting furtive glances at him without his knowing it. He read along a little while and would then look up to the head of the

paper and assure himself that it was the *Globe*, and read again, but still look more confused and mystified than ever; then look up again at the head of the paper, and say to himself: 'Yes, it is the *Globe*; can it be that it, too, has turned traitor?' About that time there was a general explosion all around. The Governor rolled up the whites of his eyes, casting a glance around upon his spectators, and drawing his mouth up into a kind of doggish grin, squeaked out: 'You think you are smart, don't you?' The Governor went to California many years ago, and was a few years since residing near Sacramento, in comfortable circumstances.

"Samuel Martin was another one of the earliest settlers. In 1831 he laid off the first addition to South Bend, known as Martin's addition. He served as a Justice of the Peace for several years, and all the time that he lived here he was regarded by everybody as one of the best of men. He died some years since in California.

"William Stanfield was one of the settlers of 1831. He built himself a log cabin on Michigan street, on the lot now occupied by the Masonic Temple; also a log shop where he did general jobbing work, such as repairing wagons, stocking plows, and what other work he could do to make a living. He was a kind-hearted man, liberal to a fault. His house was the home of all the itinerant Methodist preachers in the country, and everybody was welcome to his table whether there was much on it or not. He moved to California in 1851 and died there. I think if there are any two men in Heaven from that State it is he and Samuel Martin.

"I have been under the impression that Tyra W. Bray came here in 1832, but I am now satisfied it was in the year 1831. He was a native of North Carolina, and about as poor when he arrived here as a healthy, vigorous young man could be, with a wife and one child. He was stirring, energetic and public-spirited, and soon became well known throughout the county—always ready to take hold of and help every public enterprise without regard to any particular profit to himself. He was emphatically what people call 'a whole-souled, generous man.' His generous and benevolent disposition frequently led him into embarrassing engagements from which he often suffered pecuniary loss, but he was not the man to whine over it or complain about it, or to make it an excuse for abstaining from other enterprises looking to the public welfare. It would cure almost any croaker or grumbler to be in the company of Tyra W. Bray for one day. He was our first County Surveyor and held the office until 1837, when he was elected County Clerk over as good and well-known a man as Col. L. M. Taylor. In 1843 he was re-elected to the same office. In the fall of that year he and his wife started on a journey to North Carolina to make a visit to their friends—expecting to be absent three months—traveling all the way there and back in a two-horse carriage. Who

would think of taking such a trip now, for such a purpose? Railroads were then unknown in any of the country through which he had to travel. What a wonderful change in the facilities of travel has taken place since that time! He started off in the prime of life, healthy, hopeful and expecting a warm greeting from the friends of his youth; but on the third or fourth day of his journey he was seized with a violent attack of erysipelas, which ended his life in three or four days. He now lies buried at the little town of Burlington, on the Michigan road twenty miles south of Logansport.

"I find that I have made the same mistake in the date of the settlement of Robert Wade. He settled here in the year 1831 instead of the year 1832. I believe he was a native of Kentucky, but emigrated here from Wayne county, in this State, where he had for some years been a prominent citizen, holding the office of either Probate Judge or Associate Judge of the Circuit Court, and was therefore generally known as Judge Wade.

"It was understood when he came he had considerable money. The word "considerable" may be definitely understood by stating that we in those days considered one worth three or four thousand dollars and out of debt a rich man. At any rate he was regarded as a valuable acquisition to the people of the town. He soon began to buy lots and build houses. One amongst the first frame houses built in the town was put up by him on what is now known as the Odd Fellows' corner. He also put a row of one-story log houses on Michigan street along where Hanon's stores are now situated, which were used for a variety of shops. He built several other buildings in different parts of the town; and at one time, perhaps, owned as many houses and lots as any other man in the place; but while under the influence of an unfortunate habit a good deal of his property slipped away from him. He was a warm-hearted, generous man, kind and indulgent to every one, and universally recognized as an honest man. At an early period of the California excitement he emigrated to that country and I think he died there in 1852.

"Capt. Lot Day settled in this county in the fall of 1831 or spring of 1832. He also emigrated to this county from the southern part of this State, 'in yander on Whitewater.' His worldly possessions consisted principally in a large family of robust, healthy children, about equally divided as to gender. At first he engaged in farming. After a year or two he moved into town and went to brick-making and contracting for such job work as he could get to do. He was a man of more than an ordinary share of good common sense, public-spirited and patriotic. The Whigs of that day thought him a little slippery in politics, but in every other relation he was always regarded as an honest and upright man, a kind and good neighbor, ever ready at any moment to respond to the call of charity. By his kindness and shrewdness he soon gained popular favor, and in 1833 he was elected one of the Board of County Com-



missioners, and held the office by repeated elections until 1842, when he was elected Sheriff of the county. This office he held for two terms. In 1847 he was elected from this senatorial district, then composed of St. Joseph, Marshall, and Fulton counties, to the State Senate. He served out his term of three years, and shortly afterward moved to Oregon, where he lived for many years, following his old trade of brick-maker. Two or three years ago, after he had arrived at the age of eighty years, while on a visit to one of his sons in Nevada, he departed this life.

"There were other people living in South Bend in 1831 besides those I have mentioned. I can now remember only John D. Lastley, William Creviston, James DeGrote, Hiram Dayton, Joseph Haney, Levi Antrim, Louis Sancomb, William Wood, John Becroft, Peter Neddo, John A. Caine, Mr. Algo, Mr. Bobein, Andrew Mack, Mr. Cushman, Oliver Bennett, Calvin Lilley, Mr. Roof, and Solomon Baredall."

#### ADDITIONS TO THE CITY.

As originally laid out by Alexis Coquillard and Lathrop M. Taylor, South Bend comprised twenty-six whole and twenty fractional blocks. The plat was recorded on the 28th day of March, 1831. According to the plat the town was located on the west and south bank of the "Big St. Josef" river. Since that time a large number of additions have been made, until it covers an extent of territory several times as great as originally made. The most important addition made to the town was that of the village of Lowell, which was annexed in 1868.

#### INCREASE IN POPULATION.

The population of South Bend has ever been on the increase. In 1831 the population of the town was 128. This was increased in 1840 to 728; in 1850 it was 1,653; in 1860 it was further increased to 3,832; in 1870 it had grown to 7,206; in 1880 it numbered 13,392.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE TOWN.

The town was laid out and platted the 28th of March, 1831, but was not organized under town government until 1835, the first charter election being held October 3 of that year, at which time William P. Howe, Horatio Chapin, Peter Johnson, John Massey and James A. Mann were elected trustees. In 1837, E. P. Taylor was elected President of the Board and F. R. Tutt, Clerk. The organization was subsequently abandoned, and not revived until 1845. About a year previous a special charter was secured from the Legislature. The first meeting of the Board was held January 31, 1845, all the trustees being present. John Brownfield was chosen President, and William H. Patteson, Clerk.

The first ordinance passed by the Board was to divide the town into five wards. The second appointed Drs. William A. Brown, Daniel Dayton, E. S. Sheffield, A. B. Merritt, Louis Humphreys and Mr. A. M. Lapierre and B. F. Miller, a Board of Health. This Board was appointed in consequence of the town being afflicted with the small-pox to such an extent that unusual sanitary precautions and police regulations became imperative. Their term of office was to continue so long as the epidemic prevailed in the town. The third, fourth, fifth, sixth and seventh ordinances were to empower the Board of Health to enforce all sanitary measures they deemed necessary to stay the epidemic.

John Hooper was appointed Marshal at this meeting, but only served four days, when Evan C. Johnson was appointed until the first Monday in March following.

The first annual election was held Monday, March 3, 1845, resulting in the election of John Brownfield, B. F. Price, William H. Patteson, Ricketson Burrongs and Joseph Andre, as Trustees. At this election 108 votes were polled.

The following is a list of elected and appointed officers of the town from 1845 to 1865, inclusive, with the exception of the years 1852 to 1857, the records of which are either lost or destroyed:

1845.—John Brownfield, President; Wm. H. Patteson, Ricketson Burrongs, B. F. Price, Abraham Wilson, Trustees; Charles M. Heaton, Clerk; Schuyler Colfax, Assessor; Albert Monson, Treasurer; William Snavelly, Marshal.

1846.—John Brownfield, President; Lathrop M. Taylor, William H. Patteson, Harrison M. Crockett, Benjamin F. Miller, Trustees; Charles M. Heaton, Clerk; Albert Monson, Treasurer; Jacob Grassnical, Marshal; Jacob Hardman, Assessor.

1847.—No election was held and officers held over.

1848.—J. A. Henricks, President; John Hooper, A. M. Lapierre, Benjamin Wall, John Becroft, Trustees; Charles M. Heaton, Clerk; John Brownfield, Treasurer; Daniel Dayton, Assessor; Charles B. Chandonis, Marshal.

1849.—No election.

1850.—S. W. Palmer, President; John M. Veasey, D. P. Gerberck, Abraham Wilson, Trustees. (No election in second ward.) J. M. Veasey, Clerk; John Brownfield, Treasurer; Daniel Dayton, Assessor; John Becroft, Marshal.

1851.—Matthias Stover, President; David P. Gerberck, Charles A. Stover,\* A. G. Deavitt, John Becroft, Trustees; Daniel Matthews, Clerk; Jacob Hardman, Assessor; John Becroft, Marshal; John Brownfield, Treasurer.

1858.—Henry Carleton, President; Jesse L. Walterhouse, Thomas S. Stanfield, E. Pitts Taylor, H. A. Finley, Trustees; Daniel Matthews, Clerk; C. Caldwell, Assessor; Charles Vinson, Marshal.

1859.—B. F. Price, President; John A. Henricks, Elmer Rose, George W. Matthews, Isaac Ford, Trustees; Daniel Matthews,

---

\*Resigned and L. M. Taylor appointed to fill vacancy.

Clerk; Daniel Dayton, Treasurer; John Caldwell, Assessor; William S. Saunders, Marshal.

1860.—B. F. Price, President; John T. Lindsey, E. P. Taylor, George W. Matthews, Dwight Deming, Trustees; Edwin E. Ames, Clerk; Daniel Dayton, Treasurer; Elisha Sumption, Assessor; William S. Saunders, Marshal.

1861.—E. P. Taylor, President; John C. Knoblock, John Hooper, Aaron A. Webster, Wright Clapp, Trustees; Edwin E. Ames, Clerk; Daniel Dayton, Treasurer; Charles M. Baker, Assessor; William S. Saunders, Marshal.

1862.—E. P. Taylor, President; John C. Knoblock, John Hooper, Aaron A. Webster, Wright Clapp, Trustees; George H. Alward, Clerk; Daniel Dayton, Treasurer; Elisha Sumption, Assessor; Daniel Roof, Marshal.

1863.—John A. Henricks, President; Charles W. Martin, William Miller, John Gallagher, Ulrich Foegley, Trustees; George H. Alward, Clerk; Elisha Sumption, Treasurer; C. William Price, Assessor; Evan C. Johnson, Marshal.

1864.—J. A. Henricks, President; Charles W. Martin, William Miller, Esq., Aaron A. Webster, Ulrich Foegley, Trustees; George H. Alward, Clerk; George W. Matthews, Treasurer; Elisha Sumption, Assessor; Daniel Roof, Marshal.

1865.—Henry Carleton, President; William G. George, Thomas S. Stanfield, L. M. Staples, John Gallagher, Trustees; George H. Alward, Clerk; George W. Matthews, Treasurer; Elisha Sumption, Assessor; Daniel Roof, Marshal.

About the first of May, 1865, a large petition was presented to the Board of Trustees, asking that a special election be called to vote upon the question as to whether an organization should be effected under a general charter for the incorporation of cities. The prayer of the petitioners was granted and an election ordered to be held May 22, 1865, for or against incorporation. The election was accordingly held, resulting in a large majority for incorporation.

At their meeting held the evening of the 22d of May, the Board divided the city into three wards, as follows:

The first ward to embrace all that portion of said city lying north of the center line of Market street, and extending to the western boundary of the city."

The second ward to embrace all that portion of said city lying south of the first ward, and north of the center line of Wayne street, extending to the western boundary of the city.

The third ward to embrace all that portion of the city lying south of the second ward.

An election was ordered to be held on the 5th day of June, 1865, for city officers.

The last meeting of the Board was held June 9, 1865. The last order passed was as follows: "Ordered, that all officers of the corporation of the town of South Bend deliver to the proper officers

of the city of South Bend all moneys and personal property belonging to said town now in their possession, for the use and benefit of said city.

#### ORGANIZATION OF THE CITY.

According to the order of the Town Board, an election for city officers was held June 5, at which election 542 votes were cast. W. G. George was elected Mayor, together with a full Board of Councilmen and the various officers as provided by law.

The first meeting of the council was held June 12, 1865. All the Board were present. The first business transacted was the selection of stated times for meeting of the council. William Miller moved the adoption of a seal for the city as follows: Around the margin the words "The City of South Bend, Indiana", and in the center the National flag surmounted with the Liberty Cap, the sun rising out of a cloud; above it the word "Peace," and underneath it the figures "1865."

The council elected Charles W. Guthrie Chief Engineer of the Fire Department, and Dr. I. N. Green, Clement Studebaker and Norman Eddy, members of the Board of Health.

The first ordinance passed by the City Council was one defining the limits of the City of South Bend, as follows:

*Be it ordained by the Common Council of the City of South Bend:* That the words "City" or "Corporation" wherever it may occur in this or any other ordinance hereafter ordained or established by said council, shall be construed to extend and apply to all that part of Portage township, St. Joseph county, State of Indiana, which was included within the limits of the town of South Bend, as defined by an ordinance of said town of South Bend passed August 26, 1859.

Since the organization of the city to the present time, the following officers have been elected:

1865.—Mayor, W. G. George; Clerk, George H. Alward; Treasurer, George W. Matthews; Marshal, Daniel Roof; Engineer, Washington Saunders; Assessor, Elisha Sumption; Councilmen—1st ward, William Miller, John Klingel; 2d ward, William Miller, Esq., Thomas S. Stanfield; 3d ward, John Gallagher and Israel C. Sweet.

1866.—Mayor, William G. George; City Judge, Alfred B. Wade; Clerk, John Hagerty; Treasurer, John H. Spain; Marshal, Jacob K. Huston; Street Commissioner, John A. Hartman; Councilmen—1st ward, William Miller, John Klingel; 2d ward, Thomas S. Stanfield, David Stover; 3d ward, Isaac Ford, Alanson B. Merritt.

1867.—Councilmen—1st ward, S. F. Myers; 2d ward, Thomas S. Stanfield; 3d ward, T. W. Defrees; 4th ward, Andrew Russwurm, Samuel Perry.

1868.—Mayor, Louis Humphreys; Clerk, David M. Rennoe; Assessors, Lee P. Johnson, Joseph B. Eakle; Marshal, George W. Fouke; City Judge, George H. Alward; Councilmen—1st ward,

William Miller; 2d ward, William Miller, Esq.; 3d ward, Elliott Tutt; 4th ward, Samuel L. Cottrell.

1869.—Councilmen—1st ward, John H. Keedy; 2d ward, Thomas S. Stanfield, T. W. Defrees; 4th ward, A. Theodore Coquillard.

1870.—Mayor, Louis Humphreys; Clerk, David M. Rennoe; Treasurer, John G. Mangherman; Marshal, George W. Fouke; City Judge, George Pfefer; Councilmen—1st ward, William Miller; 2d ward, Lucins Hubbard, Clement Studebaker; 3d ward, Adam Barnhart; 4th ward, A. C. Staley.

1871.—Councilmen—1st ward, Irwin Skinner; 2d ward, Clement Studebaker; 3d ward, Elliott Tutt; 4th ward, A. Theodore Coquillard.

1872.—Mayor, William Miller; Clerk, David M. Rennoe; Treasurer, J. G. Mangherman; Marshal, J. A. Hartman; Assessor, Lee P. Johnson; City Judge, Mark Whinery; Councilmen—1st ward, Charles Hartman; 2d ward, John R. Foster; 3d ward, Alexander Staples; 4th ward, Nathan S. Marsh.

1873.—Councilmen—1st ward, Joseph Warden; 2d ward, Seeley R. King; 3d ward, William Simmons; 4th ward, Peter Webber.

1874.—Mayor, William Miller; Clerk, E. W. Hover; Treasurer, Jacob N. Massey; Marshal, Robert Hardy; Assessor, George W. Sumption; City Judge, John Hagerty; Councilmen—1st ward, Archibald Defrees; 2d ward, A. N. Thomas; 3d ward, M. N. Walworth; 4th ward, Simon Raff.

At the regular election this year a vote was taken as to the division of the third ward, resulting in a majority for the division. The City Council then divided the ward making Lafayette street the dividing line, all territory upon the west side of that street constituting the third ward, and all territory upon the east side constituting the fifth ward. In the division it was found one of the aldermen already elected resided in the newly organized third ward, and the other in the fifth. A special election was then called for the election of an additional alderman in each ward, when T. W. Defrees was elected in the third ward and J. M. Asire in the fifth ward.

1875.—Councilmen—1st ward, Ricketson Burroughs; 2d ward, Robert Harris; 3d ward, A. J. Jacuith; 4th ward, Dwight Deming; 5th ward, Lester F. Baker.

1876.—Mayor, A. N. Thomas; Clerk, Edward W. Henricks; Treasurer, DeWitt C. Rush; Marshal, George Bernhard; Councilmen—1st ward, Daniel Dayton; 2d ward, Edmund P. Taylor; 3d ward, W. W. Giddings; 4th ward, Louis A. Hall; 5th ward, N. R. Richardson.

1877.—Councilmen—1st ward, Ricketson Burroughs; 2d ward, George F. Nevins; 3d ward, Henry C. Crawford; 4th ward, Jonas Lantz; 5th ward, Solomon W. Palmer.

1878.—Mayor, Lucius G. Tong; Clerk, Edward W. Henricks; Treasurer, DeWitt C. Rush; Marshal, Evan C. Johnson; Assessor, William L. Farr; Councilmen—1st ward, Daniel Dayton; 2d ward,

Nathaniel Frame; 3d ward, James Butler; 4th ward, Timothy E. Howard; 5th ward, Almond Bugbee.

1879.—Councilmen—1st ward, Sorden Liston; 2d ward, Joseph Henderson; 3d ward, W. W. Giddings; 4th ward, John A. Neuperth; 5th ward, William S. Weaver.

1880.—Mayor, Levi J. Ham; Clerk, Frederick B. Williams; Treasurer, DeWitt C. Rush; Marshal, George Bernhard; Assessor, William L. Farr; Trustees Water-works—J. M. Studebaker, one year; Alex. C. Staley, two years; Jacob Strayer, three years; Councilmen—1st ward, Irwin Skinner; 2d ward, David Stover; 3d ward, James Butler; 4th ward, Timothy E. Howard; 5th ward, George W. Laughman.

#### THE SITUATION OF SOUTH BEND.

South Bend was originally situated on a commanding bluff on the west bank of the St. Joseph river at its most southern point, and distant from Chicago eighty-five miles east, and west of Toledo one hundred and forty-three miles. Its site is elevated, being located on the water-shed between waters flowing northward to the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and south into the Gulf of Mexico. The soil of the city is a sandy loam, and its surface level, making, with its height above the river, the best drainage and the finest natural streets found anywhere. The city is laid out with wide streets, and the enterprise of its first inhabitants have lined its spacious avenues with forest trees indigenous to the country, the maple, oak and walnut. The city has ever had a high character for health, and the purity and salubrity of the atmosphere, together with the romantic scenery in its vicinity, makes it a desirable locality in which to reside or to spend a few months.

The city is surrounded by a rich and highly cultivated agricultural region. The beautiful prairies of Terre Coupee, Portage, Harris, Palmer and Sumption are within the county, covered with productive farms, and celebrated for their large yield of all kinds of grain. South and southeast of the city are large tracts of heavily timbered lands, furnishing an abundance of the best walnut, cherry, poplar and oak lumber. The "barrens," as they are termed, in the immediate vicinity of the city, are well adapted to the raising of grain, and especially to the cultivation of fruits and berries. The deserved reputation of the fruits raised here, and the nearness to the great Western markets, make it a profitable business. With the variety of soil, the fine climate, the nearness to market, the quantity of timber, the great educational advantages of the city, this country is far superior in advantages for both the agriculturist and the artisan, to the wide prairies of the farther West.

## ANNEXATION OF LOWELL.

When the company, spoken of farther on in this work, purchased the land upon the east side of the river for the purpose of improving the water-power and the erection of buildings for manufacturing purposes, they laid out in 1837 a town opposite South Bend, to which was given the name of Dennison. In course of time the name of the place was changed to Lowell. Quite a thriving town was built up, and for some years the question of its annexation to South Bend was agitated, its interests being closely identified with the latter place. In December, 1866, the City Council of South Bend passed a resolution of annexation and Lowell became a part of the city of South Bend and formed the fourth ward.

## WATER WORKS.

In 1872 the question of water works for the city was agitated, and the local papers of the city were filled with discussions of the various systems proposed. One party was a strong advocate of the Holly system and another of the stand-pipe system. On the 20th day of March, 1873, the committee appointed and known as the Water Works Committee entered into a contract with certain parties for the Holly system, the works to be completed and in operation by September 15, 1873, the whole to be completed at a cost of \$20,000.

Immediately after this contract was made a large meeting of citizens was held at Good's Opera House to protest against the action of the committee. Speeches were made by various parties, and resolutions passed in conformity with the views of those assembled. The election for city officers was soon to take place and citizens divided upon the question of the Holly versus the stand-pipe system of water works. The majority of the Board of Councilmen were in favor of the latter, and a contract was made in the summer following for the erection of the stand-pipe, and for laying of mains throughout the city. The whole work was placed under the supervision of John Birkinbine, who was assisted by his brother Harry. The contract made with representatives of the Holly system was ignored, and the work proceeded with. On Monday, November 17, 1873, the iron pipe was raised under the direction of Alex Staples, of South Bend.

The stand-pipe is erected upon a foundation prepared for it near the water works. The length of tube is 204 feet, diameter five feet, weight 43,382 pounds, and capacity 29,500 gallons. It is made of 108 plates of iron, fastened by 9,856 rivets, and has 1,300 feet of calked seams. The weight of the base casting is 10,920 pounds. With one exception, it is the highest stand-pipe in the world. The whole is encased with brick. Water is taken from

above the dam by means of head gates and carried by a flume under ground to three wheel pits, in each of which is placed a sixty-six-inch "American" turbine wheel. The tail water is carried by means of a tunnel under the head race of the dam company discharging into the river below the dam.

The pumping machinery consists of three sets known as the Flanders pumps, manufactured by the Vergennes Machine Company, of Vergennes, Vermont, and are each capable of raising one million gallons to a height of 230 feet per day. Each set consists of two pumps working at quarter centers. Water is taken from the flume and discharged into a 12-inch pipe. The gearing from the wheels to the pumps consists of a pair of 30-inch bevel gears, one of them morticed, and a 20-inch spur pinion, driving a 60-inch morticed wheel.

The first test of the works was on Christmas day, 1873, and was perfectly satisfactory to the entire community. An amusing circumstance occurred in connection with the test. J. M. Studebaker had wagered Leighton Pine a cow that a stream of water could not be thrown so as to reach him in the cupola of the Studebaker Wagon Works. At the proper time Mr. Studebaker took his position, accompanied by Schnyler Colfax, when the signal was given and the water shot upward from the nozzle, and the occupants of the belfry beat a hasty retreat, to avoid getting a complete drenching. As it was, they looked as if they had been in a hard shower. The water was thrown far above the belfry and the judges there could see all the other streams, so Mr. Studebaker gracefully acknowledged that he had lost the wager and transferred an animated dairy to Mr. Pine. The cow was gaily decorated with ribbons, and, preceded by the band and a number of carriages filled with prominent citizens, marched down the street to Mr. Pine's residence.

While leading the cow down near Cushing & Co's corner, she made a lunge for the side-walk, and some officious individual seized her by the tail to help her off. To the astonishment and indignation of the crowd, he pulled so hard that her tail came off, but indignation soon gave way to laughter when it was ascertained that the cow had an abbreviated narrative, and had been decorated with a false tail for the occasion. The cow was afterward put up at auction to be sold for the benefit of the poor. The purchaser donated it back for the same purpose, and it was sold a number of times, realizing a handsome sum of money for a worthy object.

Until the spring of 1879 the works were under the control of the City Council, but now they are controlled by a Board of Trustees, consisting at the present time of J. M. Studebaker, A. C. Staley and Jacob Strayer. Everett L. Abbott, on the completion of the works, was appointed Superintendent and has been re-appointed each year. The original cost of the works was \$150,000; present value, \$200,000. The stand-pipe is visited daily by from 50 to 150 persons, who obtain from the top a magnificent view of the city and surrounding country.



## PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

A comparison of the old log school-house erected in 1831, with the fine buildings now in every ward of the city, will show a wonderful improvement. Compare also the methods of teaching of the teachers of that early day with those of the present, and likewise a wonderful change will be seen. The advantages of the present generation are hardly to be compared with those of the past. But the citizens of South Bend were never content to stand still in any enterprise, much less that which pertains to the cause of education.

The free-school system of this State began in 1853, since which time it has continued to grow more and more efficient. For many years the old county seminary and two or three private academies, in operation at different times, served the purpose of our present high school. In 1867 the graded school system was adopted, under the superintendency of Prof. Daniel Eyres. The high school comprises a course of four years' study, as follows:

1st year: 1st term—Arithmetic, grammar, physiology and composition; 2d term—Arithmetic, grammar, physical geography and composition.

2d year: both terms—Algebra, Latin or German, Rhetoric and history.

Junior year: 1st term—Geometry, astronomy, German or Latin (Cæsar) and bookkeeping; 2d term—Geometry, natural philosophy, German or Latin (Cæsar and Virgil) and zoology.

Senior year: 1st term—English literature, mental philosophy, geology, botany and Latin or German; 2d term—English literature, civil government, chemistry, botany, and Latin or German.

The first class graduated was in 1872, the second in 1874, since which time there has been a class graduated each year, the entire number of graduates being 57. There are two literary societies connected with the school. The following comprises the names of the graduating class each year, and the present occupation and address of each as could be obtained:

## CLASS OF 1872.

Bartlett, Chas. H., Principal of High School.....	South Bend.
Butts (Ellsworth), Ida.....	Stillwater, Minn.
Green, William M., Prin. Island Grove School.....	Fort Edwards, N. Y.

## CLASS OF 1874.

Bissell, Frank E., Civil Engineer S. P. R. R.....	Texas.
Burnett, Emma, Teacher.....	South Bend
Harper, Libbie A.....	" "
Miller (Shetterley), Anna M.....	" "
Myers (Harris), Gertrude.....	" "

## CLASS OF 1875.

Bissell, Esse C., Assistant Principal High School.....	South Bend.
Gish, Wm. D., livery business.....	" "
Hibberd, John A., Lawyer.....	" "
Warner (Beal), Mary E.....	" "
Wilklow, Rebecca E., Teacher.....	Le Grande, Oregon.

## CLASS OF 1876.

Aspinwall, Mary, Teacher.....	South Bend.
Baker, Geo. A., boot and shoe dealer.....	" "
Carder (Roberts), Lizzie.....	Chicago.
Gallagher, Florence.....	South Bend.
George, Rose P.....	" "
Harper, Lillian.....	" "
*Johnson, Nettle.....	" "
Massey, Mamie.....	" "
Meuler (Sack), Anna.....	" "
Brugger (Schultz), Mary Alice, Teacher.....	" "
*Studebaker, Laura.....	" "
Wheeler (Wellman), Maud.....	Parsons, Kansas.
Wilcox, Grace, Teacher.....	South Bend.

## CLASS OF 1877.

Ford, Emma, Teacher.....	South Bend.
Gallagher, Chas. A., student of medicine.....	" "
Henderson, Jacob, D., Deputy County Treasurer.....	" "
Hibberd, Chas. B., with Logansport Journal.....	Logansport, Ind.
Ringle, Amy E., Teacher.....	South Bend.
Rockefeller, Sarah E.....	" "

## CLASS OF 1878.

Deacon, Harry C., Tobacconist.....	South Bend.
Lane, Charles H., Clerk Coquillard Wagon Works.....	" "
Miller, Mary.....	" "
Rose, Ida O., Teacher.....	" "
Shively, Flora, student Mt. Holyoke Seminary, Mass.....	" "
Tutt, Grace D.....	" "

## CLASS OF 1879.

Allen, Birdie.....	South Bend.
Baker, John E., Bookkeeper.....	" "
Lawton, Laura A.....	" "
McDonald, Albert, Teacher.....	" "
Memhard, Lillie A., Teacher.....	" "
Ringle, Hester A.....	" "
Sack, Rosa A.....	" "
Sack, Thekla E., Clerk.....	" "
Stephenson, Mary A., Teacher of Music.....	" "
Walworth, Mary L., student Oberlin College.....	" "
White, Effie.....	" "



*John C. Knablock*



## CLASS OF 1880.

Brick, Abraham L.....	South Bend.
French, Minnie C.....	" "
Gish, John L.....	" "
Higinbotham, Helen.....	" "
Holloway, Kittie.....	" "
Miller, Dora B.....	" "
Stuebaker, Lydia A.....	" "
Walworth, Nettie.....	" "

## THE HIGH-SCHOOL BUILDING.

The high-school building was erected in 1872, and is situated on Washington street. It is one of the handsomest structures of the kind in the State. It has a frontage of 90 feet and an extreme depth of 116 feet, with wings having a depth of 40 feet. It is four stories in height, including the mansard roof. The height of the deck of the tower is 100 feet, and affords one of the finest views in the city. The building is of white brick and Athens stone trimmings, the roof of slate, and the deck tinned. The inside finish is of a character to correspond with the outside, and the rooms are all heated by steam. The basement extends under the whole building and is eight feet deep. It is partitioned off into play rooms, wood rooms, two reservoirs holding 400 barrels each, and apartments for the steam heating apparatus. The first story has one room, 60x38; two, 36x29; two, 18x16½; main hall, 49x12 feet, and two side halls, 20x8 feet. The height of the ceiling is 16 feet. The second story is laid off precisely as the first, with 16 feet ceilings. The third story has 12 feet ceilings, with an exhibition room 86½x44 feet, and two toilet rooms 22x18 feet. The fourth story also has 12 feet ceilings, and has one room 24x15 feet, one 13x12, and one 9x8.

Three neat and commodious rooms are occupied by the students of the high school, the study hall, and the east and west rooms. The remaining apartments used by the high school are the library, the philosophical room, the laboratory, the two society rooms, and the main hall. The superintendent's room is on the first floor. The study hall and the east and west rooms are furnished with 258 single desks of the most approved pattern. The rooms are well lighted, the windows being furnished with inside blinds. The high school has the advantage of being centrally located; its grounds are ample and well kept; and, in short, nothing has been overlooked which could contribute to the health, comfort and enjoyment of the students. An upright piano lends additional interest to the chapel and literary exercises.

There are two societies connected with the high school—the Englossian and the Cleosopic. They have become indispensable aids in the culture offered by this school.

Since the organization of the graded system the following named have served as Superintendent of the Public Schools for the city:

Daniel Eyres, 1867 to 1868; L. E. Denslow, 1868 to 1869; N. K. Kidd, 1869 to 1871; David A. Ewing, 1871 to 1875; Alfred Kummer, 1875 to 1878; James DuShane, 1878 to the present time.

A good story is told on one of the foregoing named superintendents. This superintendent was a just and lenient man; forbearing toward a scholar who failed doing his best, but a terror to those evilly inclined. He had a way of looking a crowd of boys over keenly for a moment and picking out the hard cases, and his judgment was rarely at fault. He would quietly find out the names of those boys, and he never forgot their names or their faces. These boys knew him, too, and any of them would much rather skate or slide down hill than to be sent to him for correction with a line from their teacher. His look was enough to make a bad boy tremble, and when he used the rod, which he always abstained from doing when possible, the culprit got a "bulldoze" which lasted him for the term, if not the entire year. One afternoon three boys came to his room bearing a missive from their teacher. A glance at the subdued countenances before him and the note in their hands was enough. He was writing and concluded to finish his task before attending to the matter of punishment. "Sit down there," said he to the foremost boy, pointing to a spot on the floor close to the stove. "And you, and you," remarked he sternly, indicating places beside the first boy. They dropped down on the carpet and the writing went on, the pen of the superintendent striking off chirography beautiful as copper-plate, and with lightning-like rapidity. Presently he got up and put some fine hickory wood in the stove and opened wide the draft. One of the boys here undertook to speak. "Not a word out of you!" was the quick rejoinder; "I'll attend to your cases directly." Silence again reigned in the room, unbroken except by the dancing of the superintendent's pen over his paper. The sheet-iron stove poured out the heat furiously. The boys were close to it and next to the wall. There was no escape. They began to pant. Then they opened their vests. Then they brought their hats in play to fan themselves, while the perspiration poured down their faces in streams. Finally they could stand it no longer and one of them broke out with—

"Please, sir, we hain't been doin' nothin'; we just come here on an errand for the teacher!"

The superintendent dropped his pen and took their note. It ran thus: "*Please send some chalk; we are entirely out.*" The haste with which the draft of that red-hot stove was closed, and the boys were got off from the floor and seated on comfortable chairs, was a caution. The superintendent gave them a big apple apiece, and laughed the thing off with them as a good joke as best he could, but he was ever after a little distrustful of his ability to determine the exact contents of a note before seeing the inside of it.

## WARD SCHOOLS.

In addition to the high school, there are six school buildings in various parts of the city. The Jefferson school building was erected in 1866; has four main and two recitation rooms, and is valued at \$10,000. The Madison building was erected in 1864, and has the same number of rooms and valued at \$10,000. The Lafayette was originally built in 1854; was burned down and rebuilt in 1872. It has four rooms, and valued at \$8,000. Laurel building, in 1871. This building has four main and two recitation rooms. The Coquillard was built in 1863; remodeled in 1871, and has four rooms. The South building was built in 1878, and has four rooms. The value of the Laurel is \$8,000, and Coquillard and South, \$6,000 each. Each of these buildings are of brick.

## ENUMERATION AND ENROLLMENT.

A superficial observer might be struck by the disparity between the enrollment and enumeration; 1,936 enrolled, 4,267 enumerated! It might look to him as though over half the school-going population were in the streets. But such is not the case. A great number of them attend private and denominational schools, and in the factories and manufacturing establishments are to be found many more. The bulk of the population of a manufacturing city is necessarily composed of laboring people whose energies are absorbed by the struggle for subsistence. The children of such are by circumstances debarred from higher educational culture. They have to be content with the merest rudiments of learning. It is therefore not a matter of wonder that the per cent. of children in the schools is not so great as, for example, in commercial or college towns. But though this is to be greatly regretted, it nevertheless gives such places a larger tuition fund in proportion to the children in actual attendance, and it should enable those who are privileged to attend the schools to enjoy even better advantages than where the tuition fund has to be eked out by direct taxation.

## EFFICIENCY OF THE SCHOOLS.

Under the management of Prof. Du Shaue, with the assistance and hearty co-operation of a Board of Trustees alive to the importance of the work, the public schools have become very efficient, reflecting honor upon the superintendent, the trustees and citizens. At the present time 35 teachers are employed at an expense of \$14,705 for the year; while the total expense for all purposes amounts to \$22,000. The rate of taxation for school purposes has never been over 17 cents on the hundred dollars, ranging all the way down to 9 cents. There is at present a surplus in the treasury of over \$20,000. John Klingel has been a member of the School Board since 1867, and is deserving of special mention in this connection.

## BOARD OF EDUCATION.

The Board of Education is composed of the following named persons: G. F. Nevins, President; Elliot Tutt, Secretary; John Klingel, Treasurer; James Du Shane, Superintendent.

During the school year 1880-'1, 35 teachers were employed.

## TEACHERS.

For the school year commencing September, 1880, there were employed 35 teachers as follows:

**HIGH SCHOOL.**—James DuShane, Superintendent; Charles H. Bartlett, Principal; Essie Bissell and Eva Hill, Assistants; W. G. Schroeder, Special Teacher.

**WARD SCHOOLS.**—*Washington.*—Miss Alice Patterson, Principal; Miss Cora Epley, Upper Intermediate; Miss Grace Wilcox, Lower Intermediate; Miss Lida O. Murray, Primary.

*Jefferson.*—Mr. H. J. Burlingame, Principal; Miss Kate Bowman, Upper Intermediate; Miss Kate A. Thrush, Lower Intermediate; Miss Jennie Dickey, Assistant Lower Intermediate; Miss Eliza Ebberson, Primary.

*Madison.*—Miss Kate E. Merrifield, Principal; Miss Libbie Allman, Upper Intermediate; Miss Laura Marsh, Lower Intermediate; Miss Lizzie Greene, Primary; Miss Minnie Scott, Assistant Primary.

*Lafayette.*—Mr. Frank Conklin, Principal; Miss Ida Weaver, Upper Intermediate; Miss Fannie Spain, Lower Intermediate; Miss Jennie Betts, Primary.

*Laurel.*—Miss Lodema Dragoo, Principal; Mr. John Hibberd, Upper Intermediate; Miss Alberta Jones, Lower Intermediate; Miss Sarah Johnson, Primary.

*Coquillard.*—Miss Carrie Sharpe, Principal; Miss Mary Durant, Upper Intermediate; Mr. Lewis F. Meyer, Lower Intermediate; Miss Ada Purdy, Primary.

*South.*—Mr. Albert McDonald, Principal; Miss Minnie Garrett, Upper Intermediate; Miss Emma Ford, Lower Intermediate; Miss Anna E. Lyon, Primary.

## SOUTH BEND AS A MANUFACTURING POINT.

The first building erected for manufacturing purposes was that known for years afterward as the "old glass house." It was a frame, erected in the year 1836, and was about 60 by 80 feet, with a wing. A company was formed for the manufacture of glass, consisting of John Brownfield, John T. McClelland and Johnson Horrell. They were induced to engage in this enterprise by the persuasion of S. Johnson, who was a practical glass-blower, and who had just arrived from the East. He found an excellent sand here, some of which he successfully experimented with, and he



became enthusiastic on the subject, and succeeded in imparting enough of his enthusiasm to the gentlemen named to induce them to furnish the necessary capital; but after the building was erected it was found that the clay, such as is used in glass-making, could not be obtained, except at a price so high, including transportation, that the business would be unprofitable, and the enterprise was consequently abandoned. The building remained unused, except for public meetings, and by the boys for Sunday ball-playing, until the winter of 1837, when the roof fell in from excessive weight of snow. The ground was afterward laid out into lots, and is to-day covered with residence buildings, so that it is hard to tell the precise location of the first building for manufacturing purposes, but it was near the crossing of Division and Gen. Taylor streets.

"A bad beginning sometimes has a good ending" is fully exemplified by reference to the manufacturing interests of South Bend, which now flourish upon every hand.

#### UTILIZING THE WATER-POWER.

The first determined effort at utilizing the great water-power afforded by the St. Joseph river, was made by Joseph Fellows, Garrett V. Dennison, Thomas W. Alcott, James McKower, William J. Worth, and John Van Buren, all of the State of New York. They purchased in 1835, from Alexis Coquillard, and in 1837 commenced digging a race. They had a large quantity of timber in readiness for building head-gates, locks, and other purposes, when the scheme suddenly collapsed in consequence of the hard times, which prevailed at that time, especially in the East. One of the conditions of the sale which Mr. Coquillard made to the company named was that they should build a dam, dig a race, and make certain other improvements. The conditions not being complied with, Mr. Coquillard sued for the recovery of the property. Judgment was obtained by him in the lower court, but an appeal was taken by the company to the Supreme Court. After dragging along in that court for several years, a decision was finally reached, and the judgment of the lower court sustained. Mr. Coquillard, when he obtained possession of the property, made large improvements on the race. This property was afterward purchased by Samuel L. Cottrell and others, and finally, in 1867, it was purchased by the South Bend Hydraulic Company, representing a capital of \$100,000. This company was organized in 1867, and in the spring of 1868 completed and improved the race, and began letting the power to those who would use it for manufacturing purposes.

A charter was obtained in December, 1842, from the Legislature of the State, for the organization of the South Bend Manufacturing Company, and in February, 1843, the first election of officers was held, resulting in the election of Thomas W. Bray, President; George W. Matthews, Secretary; Abraham R. Harper, Treasurer.

In the spring of 1843 this company began the construction of a dam across the river, and also of a race upon the east side. The dam and race were both completed the following year. The first persons to avail themselves of the power were Abram R. and John H. Harper, who built upon the race a saw-mill. The second use made of the power was also for running a saw-mill. This latter was built by William Stanfield, and is yet in successful operation, and now owned by E. P. Taylor. Finley & Brown came next and established a factory for the manufacture of tubs and buckets. Just after getting the factory in operation it burned down and was never rebuilt. The first grist-mill erected and run by this power was also owned by A. R. & J. H. Harper. This is now known as the Keedy Mill, and owned by the Phoenix Milling Company, composed of Landon, Corbin & Foote. A woolen mill was also erected at an early day on the same ground now occupied by the Variety Bracket Works, but did not prove a successful business venture. Other factories sprung up one after another and lined both the east and west race; and not alone in this section, but in various parts of the city were works erected, machinery set in motion, and articles of manufacturing skill turned out and sent into every part of the civilized world.

#### STUDEBAKER BROTHERS MANUFACTURING COMPANY.

In 1852 dates the real beginning of what is now known as the greatest wagon and carriage manufactory in the world, the success of which is indeed marvelous. The man who laid the foundation for this grand success was JOHN STUDEBAKER. He was a native of Pennsylvania. He served, as the custom there was, a six-year apprenticeship at wagon-making in Gettysburg, where in 1818 he made his "first genuine Studebaker wagon." Eighteen years after, in 1836, he came to the then "Far West" into Ashland county, Ohio, and here, joining to what he had by closest economy laid up by his own labor, the inheritance he had received from his father's estate and that from marriage, he purchased quite a large tract or farm. He began the work of improving it with great interest, and promised to himself and family, doubtless, much pleasure for his future home and comfort there. But his pleasurable anticipations of coming ease and good fortune were of short indulgence. He had, just before leaving Pennsylvania, been led, in the sympathy and kindness of his heart, to lend the use of his name to some of his neighbors in the day of their pecuniary trouble. The panic of '37, the following year, swept over the State, and among those who failed were those for whom he had endorsed notes. The consequence, which speedily followed him to his new home, was the attachment and sale by the sheriff of his new home and all his personal effects, thus by one blow sweeping all his earthly possessions, leaving him quite penniless to begin again life's labor and trials anew. The years of toil and poverty which followed these

great misfortunes of the parents are reviewed by those worthy sons with great feeling and tenderness of affection.

But John Studebaker knew too well how his fortune had come to be found sitting down idly, and groaning and brooding over his sad lot, and, therefore, we are told he at once opened a wagon repair and blacksmith shop, and toiled at the bench and the forge from four o'clock in the morning until nine at night, "I tell you," said the youngest of these brothers, "there was no ten or eight hour system then; it was work, work, for as many hours each day as thews of iron could stand the strain. And such a thing as money was almost unknown. It came in what was called 'store pay,' and it was my duty, while the older brothers worked at the forge or bench, learning the trade, to ride around the country in a home-made wagon and gather the 'store pay,' that consisted of butter, eggs, and other country productions."

John Studebaker was one of those old-fashioned dealing men and generous to a fault. One of his most marked traits was his unbounded hospitality, which was only limited by his means to grant it. With a family of ten children, five boys and five daughters, his long days of hard labor were no more than sufficient to keep up their support. In those days emigrants passed West in wagons, and so great was his hospitality to these strangers that he has been known to fill his beds and cover his floor with them—take them in until he could take no more—and sit up all night to keep up fires to make them comfortable. He became so popular that the little inn at the four corners had to close on this account.

#### THE FIRST PARTNERSHIP.

Not long after the father's struggles with poverty had begun anew, a successful German farmer whom his father-in-law had befriended in paying his passage from the old country, learning of the sad reverses, invited him to send his sons over to help him in his harvesting, for which they should receive good wages. They went 60 miles, and, after three weeks, returned home with about \$75. "And that," said one of them, "suggested the partnership enterprises that have followed, and to which we owe whatever of success we have achieved." From this, and from the beginnings of, perhaps, a very large minority of the builders of great fortunes, we could peruse and write a homily on the text, "Despise not the day of small things."

With the wearying, exhausting labors of years following this failure of 1837 came no cheer and hope for a better condition, and therefore in 1848 he concluded to come farther West on horseback, in order to examine the country. He returned, and at once made preparation to move out here to South Bend, then a village of 1,200 inhabitants. Two wagons, made by himself and boys, brought all his worldly goods, among which and of greatest value, were two sets of tools for wagon-making. He bought a shop for \$50, but

after carrying on the work for four years, being worn out by many years of excessive labor, he relinquished the active business of wagon-making to his eldest sons, Henry and Clement.

C. and H. Studebaker, both good mechanics, formed the first partnership for manufacturing, and by doing much of the mechanical work themselves, under the oversight of their father, who also acted as their agent upon his annual journeys to the great meetings of the Dunkards (of which he was an influential member), they turned out, beside their repair work, five wagons. The business developed gradually larger until in 1857 the partnership was estimated at \$10,000. At this time Henry withdrew, and made purchase of a 200-acre farm, upon which he still lives satisfied with his comfortable competency and freedom from the great business cares by which his brothers have amassed great wealth. As the business grew the other brothers were drawn into it, and Peter, having been a merchant and trader, seemed to infuse a speculative spirit his brother did not possess, and began at once planning to branch out and widen the field of their operations. One of the first things he did was to open a branch office at St. Joseph, Mo., "then the outfitting station for parties crossing the plains." And from here Peter sent in almost innumerable orders for Studebaker wagons.

The contracted, ill-fitted wooden building gave way to fine, large brick structures. From this time on, business and buildings alike rapidly grew apace until immense two, three, four and five-story buildings covered several squares. But still cramped for room they found that they must extend the wagon-making department beyond the town limits "that no pent-up Utica might contract its powers." It is near the depot, and upon the line of the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroad, from which side tracks run into the grounds, delivering iron, coal, lumber, right at the doors of the factories, and taking the finished work from the warerooms. In 1874 these buildings and a great amount of finished stock was burned. Chicago, Cincinnati and many other cities made large bids to attract the firm to locate the new buildings, but their social and business ties and large property interests, together with all the memories of their business career and successes here, respectfully declined all the tempting offers from abroad.

#### THE EXTENT OF THE NEW WORKS.

The works were rebuilt upon even a more extensive scale than before. Upon entering South Bend the traveler will notice a great number of very large and really beautiful buildings, bearing the immense sign, "Studebaker Brothers' Manufacturing Company—Established 1852—*Labor omnia vincit.*" These buildings, with an average height of three stories, cover, together with lumber-sheds, stacks, etc., 27 acres. It takes three miles of belting to run the vast combination of machinery. The two main driving belts, on two Brown engines of 400-horse power each, are of double leather

thirty-six inches wide, and contain the hides of forty-four oxen. Last year there were 20,000 vehicles built in these works, thus averaging one turned out every nine minutes, calculating ten hours for each day's work. For these, 12,500,000 feet of lumber has been used, loading 2,083 cars, to haul which would require fifty locomotives with over forty cars each; 3,000 tons—300 car-loads—of iron; and in varnish 15,000 gallons alone were used. Seventy-five different styles of vehicles are built here, and there is a finished assortment equal to two thousand complete wagons kept in stock, with a capacity to turn out 100 wagons in a single day. It is claimed that already has the Studebaker Company made enough wagons "to stretch with their teams across the continent and back again—from New York to San Francisco." They have repositories in the leading cities of the West, and agents in every city and town in the land. As one has well said, "There appears to be no limit to their production, and no end to the demand."

In no way can be given a briefer or more comprehensive view of the gradual and steady development and growth of this great house than by presenting the following table, showing the production of farm and freight wagons from 1868 to 1879 inclusive:

Wagons.		Wagons.	
1868.....	3,955	1874.....	11,050
1869.....	5,115	1875.....	15,000
1870.....	6,505	1876.....	16,250
1871.....	6,835	1877.....	17,500
1872.....	6,950	1878.....	18,000
1873.....	10,380	1879.....	20,000
Total.....		137,440	

The number of hands have increased in the same proportion, from 190 in 1868 to 800 in 1879.

#### COQUILLARD'S WAGON WORKS.

In 1865 A. Coquillard established here a factory of modest pretensions, with a capacity for manufacturing one hundred wagons per year. He had at the outset to meet with competition from houses long established and with agencies scattered throughout the country. In the face of competition and in spite of the gradually increasing stringency of the times, the business has been successfully prosecuted, and by degrees the annual production has swelled until now the capacity of the works is not less than 3,500 vehicles per year, employing in their construction 125 hands. The product of the factory now goes throughout the whole country, North, South, East and West. In 1875 Mr. Coquillard completed one of the finest factories in the city. The building is of wood, four stories high, strong and convenient, with an attractive exterior. It has a frontage of 78 feet on Market and 66 feet on Mill street. It is devoted entirely to the manufacture of the wooden portions of the wagons and

other vehicles. The motive power here used is an American turbine water-wheel, 66 inches in diameter, and of 110-horse power. On the corner of Water and Lafayette streets, Mr. Coquillard occupies three quarters of an acre, on which are located smith, paint and finishing shops, offices, repository, storerooms and sheds. The main structure is of brick, with a frontage 66 feet on Lafayette and 78 feet on Water street. A sketch of Mr. Coquillard is found elsewhere in this work.

#### SOUTH BEND CHILLED-PLOW COMPANY.

The St. Joseph Reaper and Machine Company of South Bend commenced the manufacture of the South Bend chilled plow in 1876, and in that year distributed only 650, which were considered little more than specimens to advertise among farmers their merits. The business of the second year, notwithstanding they suffered the disaster of a fire, was quite large, the company selling 4,672 plows, an increase of over 700 per cent., and leaving many orders unfilled. On the first day of July, 1878, the company was re-organized under the name of the South Bend Chilled-Plow Company, with Adam S. Baker, President; J. C. Knoblock, Treasurer; George W. Baker, Secretary. This year the sales of the company were over 10,000. In 1879 there were sold 35,000. In 1880 will be manufactured 50,000. The works of this company are located on Washington street, one mile west of the court-house, on the site of the old Northern Indiana College. One hundred and fifty men are now in the employ of this company.

#### OLIVER CHILLED-PLOW WORKS.

From an interview with James Oliver, the inventor of the chilled plow, as published in the *Inter-Ocean*, the following extract is taken:

"I was born on the 28th day of August, 1823, at the family homestead of Whitehaugh, Lidisdale Parish, Roxburgshire, Scotland. While yet a mere boy my parents decided to try their fortunes in the New World, and the year 1835 found us located in Seneca county, New York. I found employment with a neighboring farmer, at the wages of fifty cents a week, and I remained with him until the fall of 1836, when the family came West, and I with them, and settled at Mishawaka. I soon found work as a chore boy for Mr. Philo Hurd, besides sawing wood for him and two other families, and earned that winter \$15. In the summer of 1838 I became an apprentice to Mr. A. Sandiland, who was building Fox threshing-machines. From there I went to work in a blast foundry in Mishawaka, owned by the South Bend Iron Works of that day, and superintended by Mr. Richard Inwood, who is now a resident of this city. This company wound up its affairs in 1840, and now, at the age of 17, I was once more thrown upon my own

resources. That fall I took a job of ditching to lay water pipes for a distillery, then building by the Lee Brothers, of Mishawaka, and I continued with them at \$15 a month (boarding myself) until I could see a better opening, meantime learning the cooper's trade."

But even here Mr. Oliver had to stop and pay a tribute to his wife, whom he alluded to as "the noble little woman who has sympathized with and cheered me in my troubles, and rejoiced with me in my successes. I can truly say, that choice was the crowning success of my life. All honor to my wife. After marrying, my own house being rented, I paid \$12 to a fellow workman for a small shanty which he had built on the bank of the river on some land belonging to Eastern parties. I spent \$18 in improvements. My wife borrowed a loom and made a rag-carpet for our new home. Although I have lived in better houses since then, I often look back to that time as the happiest of my life."

Owing to the dullness of the coopering business, Mr. Oliver determined to learn the trade of a molder, and accordingly went to work for the St. Joseph Iron Company. In 1853 he was given a difficult contract for making cast chairs for the Michigan Central Road, and carried it through successfully. In 1855 he began the manufacture of plows on a small scale at South Bend. The success of this enterprise is better described in his own words :

"We were now fairly launched in business and I had accomplished a part of my long-cherished idea, yet very soon found out it was not all glory doing business for one's self. True, we did all of our own work, but at the best, that was not much. Our casts ran but three heats a week, and only amounted to from 1,500 pounds to one ton. Our money was soon exhausted, and our surroundings not being of that inviting character to induce capitalists to invest, we were truly in a most unenviable state of affairs, when to crown all our misfortunes, a tremendous freshet swept the dam away and flooded the furnace."

But he managed to weather this misfortune, and soon afterward bought a horse and wagon, that he might sell and deliver plows outside of South Bend. Of this Mr. Oliver said: "I found it uphill work delivering all my plows and repairs personally; still I kept at it, and by dint of hard labor very soon had eighty agencies established within a radius of fifty miles. We worked hard, and did all in our power to make it pay, yet the cost of delivery and the commission paid to agents left our margin of profits very small indeed."

But years rolled on, and the plow business increased, and during the whole of this time Mr. Oliver had never ceased thinking and studying over the one great object of his life—the production of a complete chilled plow, an implement to produce which fortunes had been unsuccessfully spent during the twenty-five years previous. In alluding to this period of his life, the inventor said: "Nothing daunted, I determined to solve the mystery. When I announced my determination people held up their hands in admonitory horror



and regarded me with feelings of astonishment not unmixed with contempt, which latter they were free to express. Plowmen who had spent years in experimenting and abandoned the project of a complete chilled plow as impossible, advised me not to undertake it. Those who had aided me with money and influence forsook me, and I was classed with the fools who pursue the fallacy of perpetual motion. Although feeling keenly the cuts of former friends, I determined to succeed. Day and night, for years, I thought of nothing else, and made everything bend to this one great object of my life. My first success was attained when I adopted the plan of using hot water in the chills which dried the moisture in the flasks and prevented "blow holes." My next was a method of ventilating the "chills" by grooves along the face of the mold, which allowed the escape of the gases that form within the flasks when melted iron is poured in, and thus permitted the liquid metal to come in direct contact with the face of the chill and all its surface, thus removing all the soft spots in the mold-boards and leaving the surface smooth and perfect. But my crowning success was the discovery of the annealing process, which deprived the metal of its brittleness. When I made that I could justly claim that for the first time a full, perfect and complete 'chilled plow' had been made."

#### EXTENT OF THE GREAT FACTORY.

The foundry as used at present is 500 feet in length by 160 feet in width. The new addition to the foundry, upon which the brick work was proceeding when we were there ten days ago, and which will be completed and occupied within 30 days, is 500 feet long by 60 feet wide. This will make the foundry 500 by 220 feet in size. They are now running daily three cupolas, with a melting capacity of 50 tons of iron. In 30 days another 20-ton cupola will be added, making a melting capacity of 70 tons daily. The help employed in the foundry is 150 molders, and 50 helpers and laborers. The total capacity for production daily is 500 plows completed, and 4,000 points.

The grinding room is 300 feet in length by 60 feet wide. Help employed here, 100 men. Grindstones running, 89. Capacity of this department is 500 plows and 4,000 points daily. The machine and forge shops are 200 by 60 feet, and employ 75 men. The dry grinding room is 200 by 60 feet, with 25 men. The polishing room is 200 by 50 feet, and employs 25 men. The wood shop is 200 by 50 feet, and here 50 men are employed. The daily capacity of the wood-working shops are 500 plows. Bending room, 200 by 50 feet, and same capacity daily. Paint room 300 by 60 feet, divided by brick fire walls into three sections of 100 feet each. Men employed here, 25.

The warehouse and shipping depot is 1,200 feet long by 40 feet wide. Along these warehouses on either side are side tracks of the



Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroad, and that of the Northwestern and Grand Trunk railroad, making splendid shipping facilities. The storage capacity here is 50,000 plows and half a million points. Here 20 men are constantly employed. The four beam sheds are each 480 by 30 feet, and each capable of holding 125,000 plow beams. The engine room is 24 by 56 feet, and supplied with a Corliss engine, the finest in the West, of 700-horse power. Boiler room, 50 by 75 feet, furnished with the latest improved sectional boilers.

The great factory has 1,794 feet of line shafting. There is one continuous section of shafting 467 feet in length, which is probably the longest in the West. There are 60 counter shafts, and 671 bearings to be oiled daily. The immense establishment occupies 5,314,600 square feet of ground. There are 520 operatives on the pay rolls, besides clerks, salesmen and other employees,—a total of 600 men.

#### BIRDELL MANUFACTURING COMPANY.

In 1856, in the small town of West Henrietta, New York, J. C. Birdsell began the manufacture of a clover separator and thresher. Remaining at West Henrietta until 1864, the works were removed to South Bend, the cheaper freights and abundance of timber being the considerations, and in 1866 J. B., V. O. and B. A. Birdsell became co-partners under the style of J. J. C. Birdsell & Sons. In 1870 the co-partnership was merged into a joint-stock concern, under the name of the Birdsell Manufacturing Company, with a capital of \$50,000. In 1871 the capital was increased to \$100,000, and in 1872 to \$150,000. George V. Glover became connected with the company in 1873. The works are located at the corner of Division and Columbia streets, and were erected in 1872 at a cost of \$118,000. The main building is 165 x 65 feet, five floors; the foundry is 40 x 60 feet, and blacksmith shop the same size, besides which there are offices, sheds, etc.

#### SOUTH BEND GAS-LIGHT COMPANY.

In January, 1868, a company was organized with a capital of \$50,000, for the purpose of supplying the city with gas. The works were located on lots 105 and 106, at the foot of Jefferson street, near the river. John A. Henricks, Thomas S. Stanfield, Clem Studebaker, H. Baker and O. S. Witherell composed the first Board of Directors. T. G. Turner was elected Secretary and Treasurer. On the first day of December, 1868, the works were completed and the city was lit up with gas. The company started in with four miles of main, 84 consumers and 30 public lamps. This has been increased until now there are seven miles of main, with 371 consumers and 119 public lamps. The gas furnished is 16-candle power and made from the second pool Youghiogeny coal. An

average of 28,000 feet of gas is consumed per day. The officers in 1880 are C. Studebaker, President; J. M. Studebaker, Secretary and Treasurer; John Drew, Superintendent.

#### OTHER MANUFACTORIES.

Since the completion of the dam across the St. Joseph river, as well as the east and west race, various manufactories have been established, some of which have lived and flourished, while others, from some cause, have existed but a short time; but where one failed another has quickly taken its place, and notwithstanding the depression of the times from 1873 to 1879, the number and value of their products constantly increased. Furniture factories, iron foundries, bracket works, woolen mills, flouring mills, croquet works, paper mills, file works, and other manufacturing interests have sprung up until nearly every branch of industry is now represented and 2,500 men find constant employment at remunerative wages. In 1865, when all manufactured articles were valued at double what they now bring, the sales of the manufacturers of the city reached \$565,000. The products now annually made will reach \$5,000,000.

#### FIRE DEPARTMENT.

The first organized effort at protection from fire was in 1853. A small hand-engine was purchased and a company was organized as "St. Joseph, No. 1," with E. P. Taylor, Foreman; John Caldwell, Assistant. This company had a very large membership; many who are now staid and dignified men were then proud to "run with the machine." Very soon after the organization of this company another was formed with Lot Day, Jr., as Foreman. In 1857 another engine was purchased and "Union Hose Company, No. 3" was organized. These engines did duty until 1865 when a steam engine was purchased, which was given the name of "Young Hoosier." In 1873 the City Council organized a regular fire department and appointed Edward Nicar as Chief Engineer. Captain Nicar occupied the position of Chief for three years, when Joseph Turnock received the appointment from the council, and served one year. O. H. Brusie was his successor, and served three years, and was succeeded by A. B. Culver. The department at present is composed of the following companies: Delta Hose Company, No. 1, Eagle, No. 2, Union, No. 3, Young Hoosier, No. 4, Mazeppa, No. 5, Stand-Pipe, No. 6, and Relief Hook and Ladder Company.

The different hose companies have taken part in several tournaments, invariably being successful in taking and carrying off prizes.

#### RELIGIOUS.

When in January, 1831, Rev. N. B. Griffith came to South Bend there was not a church edifice here, nor even in the entire county.

A few Catholic priests had previously been here and a mission started in the neighborhood of Notre Dame, but no effort had been made to unfurl the banner of the cross in the town of South Bend. A class of earnest and devoted Methodist brethren was formed in April, 1831, and a few Protestants of other denominations united with them, and thus began an effort for the salvation of men in this community. As the county became settled, and the town increased in population, other religious bodies were formed, until to-day there are seventeen organizations represented in the city, nearly all of whom have commodious houses in which to meet for worship.

#### FIRST METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

The first religious exercises held by the Methodist Episcopal denomination was on the evening of January 30, 1831. Early in April Rev. N. B. Griffith organized a class, consisting of Samuel Martin and wife, Benjamin Potter and wife, Benjamin Ross and wife, Rebecca Stull, and Simeon Mason, of which class Martin and Ross were appointed leaders. In June, 1831, William Stanfield and wife came to South Bend and were added to the class by certificate and Stanfield was soon afterward appointed leader. About the same time Samuel Newman and wife were also added by letter. In August, 1831, Dr. Jacob Hardman, and a few months later Samuel Good were also added. The first report of this mission made to the Conference was in 1832, when it was reported as having 180 members, few of whom resided in South Bend, the district being a large one. South Bend still remained as part of a circuit until 1844, and had as pastors during that time Revs. N. B. Griffith, R. S. Robinson, George M. Beswick, Boyd Phelps, T. P. McCool, S. R. Ball, J. Wolf, James S. Harrison, David Stiver, William M. Foley, W. Griffith, Zachariah Gaines, William T. Huffman, E. Holstrick and S. B. F. Crane. In 1844 it was made a station, since which time there have served as pastor, Revs. John H. Bruce, John B. DeMott, Milton Mahon, John P. Jones, T. C. Hackney, Henry C. Benson, E. S. Preston, James Johnson, James C. Read, A. A. Gee, C. S. Burgner, William Wilson, Joseph C. Reed, G. Morgan, S. T. Cooper, Clark Skinner, C. A. Brooke, John Thrush, J. H. Swope, G. M. Boyd, H. A. Gobin, J. C. Stevens and S. P. Town.

In 1835 a house of worship was erected, but being badly constructed, was not accepted from the contractors. Previous to this time meetings were held in the old log school-house and in private houses. The second story of a house on the corner of Pearl and St. Joseph streets was now fitted up as a school room, and there the Methodists held their meetings. On the 5th of March the trustees met and resolved to erect a frame church 35x45 feet, and 14 feet ceiling. In June a lot was purchased, and on the 6th of July a contract for building and plastering was let. In February following it was discovered that the church was built on the wrong

lot, which caused considerable trouble, but finally an exchange was effected and the building permitted to stand, and early in the fall of 1836 it was finished and occupied.

In 1850-'51 a brick church, 48x72 feet, was built on the corner of Main and Jefferson streets, and was dedicated by Dr. Berry and John L. Smith on the 17th of August, 1851, the basement having previously been occupied for several months. In 1869-'70 the church edifice was enlarged, remodelled and modernized. The basement was finished and occupied Dec. 25, 1869, and the main audience room some months afterward.

#### CHRISTIAN.

The Christian Church, of South Bend, was first organized in the summer of 1844, four miles north of the city, with a membership of twelve. W. McIlvaine was appointed elder, and meetings were held every Lord's Day, the Church enjoying occasionally preaching by John Martindale, Reuben Wilson and others. In the spring of 1851, through the efforts of Elder McIlvaine, the old South Bend Seminary was obtained, and worship commenced with weekly meetings. Gideon Drapier was chosen elder, and E. A. Drapier and R. Wilson, deacons. The total membership now numbered 15. These few members, though meeting with many trials and difficulties, continued to struggle for an existence, and by their untiring industry and zeal succeeded in procuring the necessary means with which to purchase a lot on Main street, where they built a brick church edifice, which was formally opened in the spring of 1852, Elder John O'Kane, of Indianapolis, officiating. The Church now began to prosper, receiving frequent accessions to its membership. About the year 1854 several brethren from New Jersey united, among them Frederick J. Thomas, who was chosen elder, and labored during the fall and winter of 1855-'56. The church also enjoyed the ministrations of W. J. Homer, under whose supervision a successful protracted meeting was held. Elders Thomas and McIlvaine officiated during the succeeding two years. J. Belton was called to the pastorate in 1865, serving about three years. He was succeeded for a short period by H. N. Lord and W. B. Hendrix. In 1870, William P. Ailsworth was called and officiated one year, followed by J. Belton, who again assumed charge. J. Hurd next became the pastor. In the winter of 1877-'78 Rev. George W. Sweeney and Rev. J. H. Stover held a protracted meeting with this Church, resulting in 125 additions to its membership. Mr. Stover was at once called to the pastorate and assumed charge in April, and has since continued to serve in an acceptable manner. Before the revival meeting was held the Church numbered but about 70. Its present membership is 340. The old church building was torn down and a new edifice erected at a cost of \$3,500. The eldership is composed of A. N. Thomas, Nathaniel Frame, Robert Myler,



*John V. Lederer*



Charles Hartman. The deacons are Henry F. Clipfell, William D. Bulla, Abram Huston, David A. Ireland, James Savidge, Joseph F. Pearson and W. J. Masters.

#### REFORMED.

The Reformed Church of South Bend, connected with the General Synod of the Reformed Church in America, and organized in 1849 by Rev. David McNiesh, and the brick church on the S. W. corner of Lafayette and Market streets, was erected that year. The Church continued under the ministry of Revs. F. Beidler, C. A. Evans, W. T. Van Doren and G. H. Treke until 1861, when it ceased an active existence.

It was re-organized March 31, 1870, by Rev. W. J. Skillman. A commodious frame chapel was built on the N. W. corner of Lafayette and Sample streets, in 1873, in which a mission Sunday-school is held each Sabbath at 3 P. M. In the church building which has been remodeled and a lecture room added in 1880, preaching services are held each Sabbath morning and evening, and Sunday-school at 9 A. M., besides a week evening prayer service and a young people's meeting. The present pastor, Rev. N. D. Williamson, took charge of the Church July, 1872.

#### EVANGELICAL ASSOCIATION.

The first church edifice erected by this denomination in South Bend was in 1854, and the second, in 1871. Those who have labored here since the organization of the body are Rev. G. C. Platz, W. Kolb, C. Glaus, W. Ficht, A. B. Shaeffer, George Messner, H. Welty, C. Augenstein, S. Dickover, B. Uphans, J. J. Esher, S. Wolf, F. Weithaup, Mr. Ragatz, J. Fisher, B. Ruh, J. Keiper, W. W. Steffey, H. Strickler, P. Goetz, G. Eckhart, J. Fuchs, A. Nicolai, E. L. Kiplinger, C. Kohlmeier, R. Reigel, M. Hoehner, M. Speck, W. Bockman, C. Ude, J. M. Gomer, E. Evans, P. Roth, C. Ade, J. Kaufman, G. A. Hartel, M. Krueger, C. Heim, B. Hoffman, J. Berger, S. Kiplinger, J. K. Troyer, D. S. Oakes. In September, 1876, the Church decided to tear the old building down and erect a larger church edifice. A building was accordingly erected 42x68 feet, with two towers in front. This was dedicated Dec. 10, 1876.

#### MICHIGAN STREET METHODIST EPISCOPAL.

This charge was organized in 1869, with 137 members and 16 probationers, resulting from the missionary labors of Rev. T. C. Hackney. Rev. William R. Nickels was appointed pastor Sept. 13, 1869, and served two years. During his ministration the church edifice and parsonage were built. Rev. Clark Skinner was the next appointed and served one year. Rev. John H. Cissell was appointed September, 1872, and served three years. Rev. J. L. Boyd was appointed to succeed Mr. Cissell.

## FIRST PRESBYTERIAN.

This religious body is well represented and has a neat and commodious house of worship on the corner of Washington and Lafayette streets, erected in 1866, and dedicated April 3, of that year, Rev. T. H. Nixon preaching the sermon on that occasion. The audience room is 80x45 feet, and the entire length of the building 95 feet. The height of the tower and spire is 145 feet. Rev. George T. Keller is the present pastor.

## OTHER RELIGIOUS BODIES.

The Roman Catholics are represented by three churches—St. Joseph's, fourth ward, Rev. Father Venniard, pastor; St. Patrick's, Division street, near Chapin, Rev. P. Lauth, pastor; St. Joseph's (Polish), Monroe street, near Chapin, Rev. V. Czyzewski, pastor. The African Methodist Episcopal, Monroe street, near Lafayette, Rev. J. W. Harper, pastor. Baptist, southeast corner Jefferson and Main streets, Rev. T. E. Egbert, pastor. Episcopal, Lafayette, near Jefferson, Rev. Walter Scott, Rector. German Methodist Episcopal, Division street, near Lafayette, Rev. William Keller, pastor. Second Presbyterian, corner Market and St. Peter streets. Reformed Mission, corner Lafayette and Sample streets. St. Peter's Evangelical, corner Water and Michigan avenue, Rev. Philip Wagner, pastor. St. Paul's Lutheran, corner William and Jefferson streets, Rev. Henry Stock, pastor.

## MASONIC.

The Masonic order is well represented here with three lodges, one chapter, and one commandery, together with an Eastern Star Lodge for ladies.

*St. Joseph Lodge, No. 45*, was instituted by charter in 1842, having worked two years previous under dispensation. The lodge has always been in a flourishing condition, and meets the first Monday in each month, at its hall in Lincoln Block, 118 Michigan street. The present officers are John E. Kelley, W. M.; John W. Harbon, S. W.; John McBain, J. W.; Jasper E. Lewis, Sec.; Ed. Nicar, Treas.; John M. Smith, S. D.; Frank Stimson, J. D.; Geo. H. Alward, Tyler.

*South Bend Lodge, No. 294*, was instituted in 1863. It has regular meetings the first Friday in each month. Its present officers are Herbert S. Fassett, W. M.; Henry C. Knill, S. W.; Lewis T. Van Nest, J. W.; C. Sanders, Sec.; J. A. Barnhart, Treas.; O. H. Palmer, S. D.; Charles J. Smith, J. D.; George Macomber, Tyler.

*Germania Lodge, No. 301*, was instituted in 1862, and conducts the services in the German language. It has its regular meetings the first Thursday in each month. The present officers are John Klingel, W. M.; C. Iverson, S. W.; John Steffens, J. W.; William Stacker, Sec.; John Kleindinst, Treasurer.



*South Bend Chapter, No. 29*, was instituted in 1855, and holds regular meetings the second Monday in each month. Its present officers are Elmer Crockett, H. P.; Chauncey N. Lawton, K.; James E. Mills, S.; George H. Alward, Treas.; C. Sanders, Sec.; Herbert S. Fassett, C. of H.; W. H. Saunders, P. S.

*South Bend Commandery, No. 13*, was instituted in 1866. It has regular meetings in their Asylum, at Masonic Hall, the first Tuesday in each month. Its officers are W. A. Foote, E. C.; Edwin Nicar, Gen.; C. G. Conn, Capt. Gen.; J. H. Nevius, Prelate; Samuel T. Applegate, Treas.; James E. Mills, Recorder; William S. Saunders, S. W.; Henry Speth, J. W.; John Graveson, Sd. B.; F. M. Jackson, Sw. B.; A. N. Knapp, W.; George Macomber, Sentinel.

*Eastern Star Lodge, No. 2*, was instituted in 1871, and has regular meetings on the fourth Wednesday in each month. Its present officers are J. H. Nevius, W. P.; Mrs. C. N. Lawton, W. M.; Mrs. C. H. Underwood, A. M.; Mrs. Helen Macomber, Sec.

#### ODD FELLOWS.

Two lodges and one encampment are represented by this order in South Bend.

*South Bend Lodge, No. 29*, was the first lodge of the order instituted here, its charter dating back to 1846. It now holds regular meetings in Odd Fellows Hall, every Wednesday evening. Its officers for the present term are George Ford, N. G.; Jesse W. Jennings, Jr., V. G.; Elias W. Hoover, Treas.; F. G. Brown, Rec. Sec.; D. A. Newton, P. S.

*Robert Blum Lodge, No. 278*, was instituted in 1867, and has regular meetings every Thursday evening at 112 Michigan street. Its present officers are John Rupp, N. G.; Gustav Ronaski, V. G.; Godfrey Poehlman, Treas.; Chris Neidman, R. S.; John Haslenger, P. S.

*South Bend Encampment, No. 9*, was instituted in 1867. It holds its regular meetings the first and third Friday evenings of each month, at its hall, 74 Washington street. Its present officers are D. A. Newton, C. P.; Daniel Dayton, H. P.; Alfred Hall, Scribe; C. W. Martin, Treas.; Charles Kimball, S. W.; G. W. Sumption, J. W.

The order owns a large and fine hall, underneath which are two store rooms and a number of offices, which yield a good revenue.

#### KNIGHTS OF PYTHIAS.

*Crusade Lodge, No. 14*, is the only representative of this order, and holds its regular meeting every Tuesday evening in Homer Block. Its present officers are L. A. Hull, P. C.; John Steele, C. C.; James L. Mack, V. C.; J. C. Neville, P.; J. N. Carver, M. at

A.; R. Freund, K of R. and S.; W. H. Longley, M. of E.; E. B. Morey, M. of F.; Martin Ranbuhler, I. G.; John Pool, O. G.

#### GOOD TEMPLARS.

The Independent Order of Good Templars is represented by Guiding Star Lodge, No. 371, which was chartered in 1866. Its officers are H. A. Weston, W. C. T.; Mrs. Eliza Hain, W. V. T.; A. N. Weston, W. R. S.; Fred White, W. F. S.; George Frink, Treas.; Eddie Spencer, W. M.; Mrs. Emma Quick, W. I. G.; Lewis Webster, W. O. G.

#### GERMAN SOCIETIES.

*South Bend Turn-Verein* meets at Turner Hall the first and third Tuesdays in each month. George Rockstroh, Pres.; George K. Meyer, Vice-Pres.; Jacob P. Futter, Sec.

*South Bend Maennerchor* meet in their hall near the corner of Water and Sycamore streets, east side, the first Monday in each month. Henry Schaal, Pres.; William Schermann, Vice-Pres.; Robert Seifert, Sec.

#### GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.

This body meet at hall corner Washington and Michigan streets. Its present officers are Edwin Nicar, Post Com.; John Worley, Sr., V. C.; William Dodd, V. C.; Herman Culver, Chap.; George W. Loughman, W. E. Gorsuch, Q. M.; Dr. Daniel Dayton, Surgeon; A. T. Putnam, Officer of the Day; John Steele, Officer of the Guard; John J. Mayer, St. Major; Joseph Turnock, Q. M. Sergeant.

#### PLEIADES CLUB.

This club was organized in 1867 with seven members: hence its name. The membership was afterward largely increased, some of the most talented young gentlemen and ladies in the city becoming identified with it. The society was social in its nature, meeting at the private residences of one of their number and passing the time in social conversation, reading essays, and in music, both vocal and instrumental, declamations, recitations and orations. Sometime during the holidays of each year an entertainment was given, to which special invitations were extended to those they were desirous of having present. As an illustration the following programme of their annual entertainment is given:

Opening Chorus.....	Club
Address.....	J. R. Foster
Tableau,—“Statuary,”.....	Club
Duet,—(Flute and Piano) “Potpourri” from Norma....	T. M. Hill, Flo. Turner
Song,—“Sweet Molly Matilda Jane,”.....	May Turner
Tableau,—“King James’ Submission to Richard I,”.....	Club
Duett,—(Vocal) “Larboard Watch,”.....	T. M. Hill, H. G. Van Tuyl
Duett,—(Instrumental) “Warblings at Eve,”....	Minnie Dayton, Addie Hartman
Club Paper,—“Constellation,”.....	H. G. Van Tuyl
Duett,—(Flute and Piano) “Sounds from Home,”.....	T. M. Hill, Flo. Turner
Song,—“We’ll have to Mortgage the Farm,”....	Club

## ACTING CHARADE,—“STAGE STRUCK.”

Fred Maywood.....	E. Blodgett
Mr. Maywood.....	W. A. Bugbee
Mrs. Cowslip.....	Flo. Turner.
Cora Neville.....	May Turner
Quartette,—(Vocal,) “Hail us ye Free,”.....	T. M. Hill, H. G. Van Tuyl, Flo. Turner, May Turner.

## WOMEN’S LITERARY CLUB.

This club was organized in 1874, composed of ladies entirely, and devoted to the systematic study of art, literature, science and history. It has now about 20 members and is in a flourishing condition, meeting weekly. The ladies own a choice library, which is soon to be thrown open to the general public. The club is exerting a great influence upon society and awakening a strong interest in the general and generous culture of the mind.

## HOTELS.

The first hotel opened in South Bend was that kept by Peter Johnson in 1831. Others were soon after opened, and the place has never lacked accommodations for the traveling public. At present there are three hotels that are first-class in their appointments, depending upon the traveling public for their support. These are the Oliver House, situated on the corner of Main and Washington streets, and under the management of Knight Brothers. This hotel was opened in 1879. The Grand Central, situated on Michigan street, Frank Knill, proprietor. The St. James, near the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroad depot. Besides these are the Kuntsman House, Dwight House, South Bend House and Union House, all of which are patronized more by regular boarders than the traveling public.

## PUBLIC HALLS.

South Bend has two large public halls suitable for concerts, theatrical performances and other purposes: Good’s Opera House, Washington street, opposite the Court House; and Price’s Theatre, Michigan street.

## DECORATION DAY.

Annually, on the 30th day of May, are honors paid by the living to the noble dead. On this day the widow and the orphan, the surviving comrades, citizens and friends, all gather together and with loving hands strew the graves of the lost ones with beautiful flowers. As illustrating how the day is observed in South Bend, and elsewhere in St. Joseph county, the following account of the services of May 30, 1879, is given—the one day being typical of each annual recurrence of the day since the close of the war. Says the South Bend *Tribune* :

"There could be no more appropriate time in all the year for strewing the graves of our fallen heroes with emblems of love and affection than this, when spring, stepping down the corridors of the seasons, with generous hands adds her rare blossoms to the bounteous wealth of summer's bloom. There is a time of year when we can find richer flowers, but this is the season of the simple wild flowers and of the border beauties of the garden, and they, after all, better represent the simplicity and hardihood of the soldier's life, than the luxurious mid-summer roses.

"Yesterday, too, was as beautiful, blue-skyed, spring-tide a day as could have been wished. There was no lowering weather to interfere with the outward ceremony of the occasion. It was a day to bring thousands to see how the dead soldier is honored by his country and thereby enulate the youth of our land to those deeds of patriotism which make men true citizens of a republic.

"This day's ceremonies, originated so many years ago by that bluff, rough-riding soldier, General Logan, has taught us all, we believe, to give more thought to our dead. A glance through our own cemetery yesterday showed that loving hands had been busy all day placing floral offerings on the graves of children, husbands, wives, fathers, mothers, brothers and sisters. There was not a grave whose inmate had a living friend or relative in our midst, but that friend had left some floral tokens on the grassy mound above. All honor to the day.

#### " ITS OBSERVANCE

in South Bend was all that the most ardent lover of a soldier's memory could wish. Business was generally suspended during the afternoon, and several of the factories closed the entire day. Flags floated, not only from most of the manufacturing establishments, but from many business houses and private residences. By every outward act was shown the inner desire to make the day what it was designed to be—a day sacred to the soldier dead.

#### " THE PREPARATIONS.

"Unusual care was taken this year for a proper observance of the day, by the following committees: Executive—George Pfeleger, Edwin Nicar, Wilbur Gorsuch; Finance—J. P. Creed, John W. Harbou; Music—A. B. Clifford; Speaker, etc.—A. N. Thomas, J. P. Creed, G. W. Loughman; Decorations, etc.—J. M. Pierce, Herman Culver, M. G. Huey; Marking graves—Wilbur Gorsuch, Hanford Roberts; Invitation—L. J. Ham, John G. Greenawalt, J. R. Gerhart; Flowers—G. B. Liebig, D. W. Gillen, N. J. Bernhard. These committees made the most complete arrangements and prepared a programme which was faithfully carried out.

## "THE ASSEMBLY.

"Early in the forenoon people flocked into the city from every part of the county to witness or to participate in the ceremonies. Shortly after the noon hour crowds began to gather at the court-house square, the front at which the procession was to form and march to the cemetery. By three o'clock the square was one mass of humanity, and in the streets about it were such throngs of vehicles as to fairly blockade the passages. At this hour the different organizations which were to march in procession began to file along the streets from their respective places of rendezvous and into the court-house square. They consisted of Anten Post of the G. A. R., the South Bend Encampment, the Knights of Pythias, of Mishawaka, the Knights of Pythias, of South Bend, and six hose companies of the Fire Department, the Relief Truck Company, the City Officials, the Polish Sunday-school, the South Bend Cornet Band, the Mechanics' Cornet Band, musical chorus, etc.

## "THE PROCESSION.

"Promptly at 3:30 o'clock the organization, marshaled by Capt. Joe Turnock, officer of the day, and his aids, Major O. S. Witherill and Lieut. J. G. Greenawalt, formed on Washington street in the following order:

"Platoon of Police; South Bend Cornet Band; Officer of the day and Aids; Anten Post, No. 17, G. A. R. and other honorably discharged soldiers and sailors; Speaker and Chaplain; Memorial Day Chorus; Polish Sunday-school; Mayor, Council and other City Officers; South Bend Fire Department; Mechanics' Cornet Band; South Bend Encampment, No. 9, I. O. O. F.; South Bend Lodge, No. 29, I. O. O. F.; Mishawaka Lodge, K. P.; Crusade Lodge, No. 14, K. P.; Citizens in Carriages.

"The procession was the largest ever seen at any Decoration day ceremonies in this city, and as it passed up the center of Washington street presented a magnificent appearance. On each side the walks were lined its entire length with pedestrians, and the yards were filled with enthusiastic spectators.

"At the close of Mr. George's address a chorus, the words of which were written for this occasion by Judge T. G. Turner, of this city, were sung to the old and well-known melody of the 'Sweet By-and-by.' The piece was well rendered and the effect was grand. We also give Judge Turner's words entire:

Let us shout a loud anthem to-day,  
 Let us sing a sweet song for our braves;  
 To the heroes who sleep let us lay  
 Love's tribute on grass-covered graves.

On the scroll of immortals each name  
 Is engraved in those lines which ne'er fade;  
 In the sanctified temple of fame  
 Let our tribute to glory be paid.

With each lisp of the glad freeman's tongue,  
 With each throb of the bold freeman's brain,  
 Let grateful, sweet pœans be sung,  
 While nature joins in the refrain.

While we're borne toward the goal by time's tread,  
 How we sigh for that immortal rest!  
 Where we'll meet ye, O glorified dead,  
 In the home of the brave and the blest.

## CHORUS:

In the sweet by-and-by,  
 We shall meet our dear loved ones again;  
 In the sweet by-and-by,  
 In a world without sorrow or pain.

## ROSTER OF THE DEAD.

"At the conclusion of the number by the cornet band, the roster of the dead was called by J. R. Gerhart. It includes those buried in our cemetery who fought in the Revolutionary war, the war of 1812, the Blackhawk war, the Mexican war, and the war of the rebellion. The list is as follows:

"1776.—Isaac Ross and Peter Roof, Sr.

"1812.—Thomas J. Allen, Archibald Defrees, Christopher W. Emrick, Daniel Heck, Peter Johnson, John Meredith, John Mack, Peter Roof, Jr., Ransom Curtis.

"1847.—W. S. Saunders, H. J. Blowney, John H. Fisher.

"1861.—John Auten, Nelson C. Baker, Lewis Barr, George W. Bucher, Charles L. Barnhard, H. J. Blowney, Henry Brown, John Becraft, Henry Bulla, Benjamin Coonley, James K. B. Custer, Stephen Davenport, George Dodd, George Embick, James Ellis, Norman Eddy, Owen M. Eddy, M. G. Ebberson, William Eaker, Irvin B. Eaker, William Fowler, John H. Fisher, Henry Fisher, A. B. Goodrich, F. A. Harrington, George W. Hart, S. Higginbotham, Noble M. Howard, Frank A. Hardman, William Huey, Charles Hadley, Israel Hogue, D. F. Jaquith, Henry Johnson, Joseph Keasey, Henry M. Kuney, H. Z. Knapp, James Kimball, A. F. Lee, H. J. Lingle, Jefferson Laughlin, C. C. Lewis, Alexander McCannon, John McGill, B. F. Morell, James C. Martin, Wm. Nunnolley, Ruel Newton, Victor Ochie, John M. Owens, C. W. Price, Ira R. Payne, Alexander Peak, Lewis C. Peterman, Thomas B. Roberts, Wm. M. Rogers, Daniel C. Schenck, Frank A. Stover, Robert Sample, James Thompson, Ami How Tarbell, M. Van Horn, Henry Woolman, Daniel Whiteman, Charles Walterhouse, Aaron Walterhouse, Robert Wade, Alfred B. Wade, Mark Whinery.

"HON. W. G. GEORGE,

the speaker of the day, followed with an oration, which we substantially give below:

"In New England a day was selected for placing floral decorations upon soldiers' graves prior to the time when Congress proclaimed

it the first of the *Dies Festi* of the new-born republic. In New England, too, grew from the observance of local custom to be formally acknowledged law, the institution of Thanksgiving day, and the day we again now celebrate obtained its merited respect, received its hearty recognition, and assumed its national character before lingering legislation records it upon the nation's calendar as a day sacred to national gratitude.

"But legislation can give no authority to, or obtain the observance of, these festal days unless sustained by the popular heart that gave them birth. If that heart responds not to the peals of the bells—'proclaiming liberty throughout all the land, and to all the inhabitants thereof,' Independence day will live only in history. If that heart is ungrateful for the gathered harvest, for labor rewarded and peace and plenty assured, Thanksgiving day will be but a season of gloom. And if it be not rejoiced at the restoration of peace and the sight of a re-united country, and throbs with no sympathy with loyal sacrifices and heroic achievements, the hand prompted by its feeble and frigid pulsation will strew but withered flowers and noxious weeds upon a patriot soldier's unhonored grave. But this heart is not callous and unfeeling; it still beats with fervor and with health, inspired by the glorious deeds of the past and their ever present results.

"Upon this day it again prompts us to bring the annual votive flowers of spring's perfected glories—to rehearse the lessons of the past, and to do honor to ourselves by the remembrance of our brave dead. Again we enter with reverent tread the portals of the cemetery, with muffled music, furled flags, bearing floral tributes to our silent dead. Again as comrades we greet them; again in softened tones of endearment the mother calls her son, the wife her husband. We call for them the roll, but they respond not. They answer not in cheery tones that greeted the reveille when they arose from the frozen earth of the bivouac—in the wild huzzas that met the first opening of the battle—in the grateful cheers that betokened a hard-fought fight—the enemy's retreat and saluted a victory-crowned banner—in the moan of ebbing life on the hospital couch or in the prison den. No audible sound is heard. Their silence is indeed golden and eternal.

"Yet touched by Memory's transforming and life-giving wand, the palsied tongue and pallid lips become reanimate, and to loving hearts and waiting ears they speak. Thus touched they utter no uncertain sentiments; to our questioning they reply with no doubtful lessons. They appeal to our memories, our hearts and our consciences with words of tenderness, of reverent rejoicing and with precepts of duty. They speak of the past. They speak of the enthusiasm that thrilled them when the tocsin of war was sounded; their eagerness for the fray in support of freedom's flag; of the sad parting with mother, wife and child; of the hurried rendezvous; the fond anticipation of a short, sharp, decisive struggle; of the speedy restoration of peace, and the early vindication of the majesty

of the law. They speak, too, of the surprise of the nation at the too late discovery of the vast and secret preparations for its destruction; the dispersion of the navy, the demoralization of the army, the depletion of the treasury, and the far-spread infection of treasonable designs. They rehearse the lagging campaign, the bickerings of commanders, and the lukewarmness of pretended patriotism. They tell of early reverses, sad disappointments, and gloomy forebodings for the future; of sickness in camp and hospital; of drooping hopes, of waiting ears for news from the battle field, of fearful suspense, of midnight march, of deadly ambuscade, of labor in the trenches, and dreary and enforced idleness in camp; of escapes, of wounds, of imprisonment in foul dens, of the dead line and of death—of all the horrors of fratricidal war. But they speak, too, of privations willingly endured, dangers voluntarily incurred, ceaseless labor gladly undergone, risks daringly and gallantly assumed, and death most chivalrously encountered; of woman's Spartan bravery and heroic sacrifices, of dashing assaults, of well-contested fields, of the enemy's retreat, and of countless victories on land and sea. They speak of disaster, but also of success; of doubt, and yet of undying hope; of transient defeat, but still of final and complete victory.

"While thus speaking of the past must we not also hear from them the precepts of duty their lives and glorious death prescribe and enforce?

"They died that the republic might live,—not the death of the hireling or mercenary, but that of the patriotic citizen soldier; and the chief lesson taught by their self-devotion, is the duty of patriotism. Of this duty, so well exemplified in the lives and deeds of our cherished comrades, let me briefly speak. Patriotism is not a bare sentiment, nor simply a noble passion. It is not mere attachment to the place of birth, nor pride of country alone. It comprehends all these and more. It is not an affection existing in all, it exerts not an equal force over all, nor is it not subject to cultivation by education, nor to increase of power by exercise and habit. It is a duty, based upon moral and natural obligations, fostered by education, and superior to the calls of all other limited and particular affections. It should direct and limit the more confined and partial actions of personal and private affections within their proper and natural bounds, and never permit them to encroach on those sacred and first regards we owe to the great public to which we belong. Wherever true patriotism prevails in its genuine vigor and extent, it swallows up all sordid and selfish regards, it conquers the love of ease, power, pleasure and wealth; and when the partialities of friendship, gratitude, or even of family ties, come in competition with it, it prompts us to sacrifice all, in order to maintain the rights and promote and defend the honor and happiness of our country.

"To pursue private interests in subordination to the good of our country, to be examples in it of virtue and obedience to the laws,



to promote such laws as may improve and perfect it, readily embracing every opportunity for advancing its prosperity, cheerfully to contribute to its defense and support, and if need be, to die for it,—these are the duties which the patriot gladly renders his country.

“Patriotism is not spasmodic in its action, blazing forth only as in a comet’s erratic course, in times of public trials or danger, upon great occasions and upon great incentive, but it is a rule of conduct, constant, equable, incorruptible and enduring. Wealth cannot bribe. Power cannot seduce it. Ambition cannot blind it. Friendship cannot sway it from justice. Fear cannot intimidate it, injustice cause it to swerve, nor luxury corrupt and enervate it.

“Patriotism is not mere attachment to a particular spot of earth, or home, or place of nativity; but it imports an affection for that moral system or community, governed by the same laws and institutions, and whose several parts are united upon the basis of a common interest.

“Patriotism seeks to be effective to the interests of the State, vindicate its rights, redress its wrongs and secure its prosperity. To accomplish these results it must be educated, fearless and self-sacrificing. It must be educated, for from the moral and intellectual, and not the mere brutal, elements of its constituents, proceed the assured strength and centered glory of the State. Education, by and for the State, is a necessity of its well being, a requisite for its preservation, and the only safety of the republic. Plutarch preserves the reply of the Lacedemonian to the inquiry, ‘what he knew how to do,’ in these words: ‘I know how to be free,’ and apt was the reply, for

—Men who their duties know,  
But know their rights and knowing  
Dare maintain \* \* \* \* \*  
These constitute the state.

“Education being necessary it must be furnished to all who are, or may become, citizens, by the State, and it must be directed by the State for the purposes and in the interests of the State. The citizen must be taught to be robust and to develop his physical powers so that in peace, the industries of the country being thereby increased, prosperity may abound, and so that in war, prepared for its fatigues, inured to its difficulties, and accustomed to its weapons, he may become a bulwark and defense to the commonwealth. He must be taught the science of government, that in peace he may assist in the management of the State, intelligently choose such officers as may be the best and most capable friends to its constitution and liberties, and conduct such offices as he may be called upon to fill, with credit to himself and advantage to the country. He must be educated in the principles of justice, in observing the laws, in equalizing the burdens of the citizens, in the giving of rewards to the meritorious and the meting out of punishment to the

criminal. He must be taught that no man can be a good citizen unless he be just; that dignities should be conferred not through favor or partiality; that punishment should be awarded without fear and without mistaken clemency. He should remember 'that to show mercy when punishment ought to be indicted, is not mercy, but infirmity.' He will discriminate between loyalty and treason. To his just mind treason will ever be odious; nor can he be influenced by a sickly sentimentality to strew flowers with equal hand over the graves of the fallen traitor and the murdered patriot.

"As all citizens must bear the burdens of the State, and are entitled, when deserving, to its highest honors, it is the reciprocal duty of the State to furnish this education to all. As from the lowliest hamlets have often arisen the great leaders of the people, the saviors of liberty, and the martyrs of freedom, so it is the interest of the State that to the humble and the poor as well as to the lofty and rich these privileges be freely furnished by it.

"So, too, must this education be for the State. In molding the character of the child reference must be had to his future adaptability as a citizen. Of him political duties will be required in peace and perhaps in war. In these he must be instructed for the advantage and benefit of the State. As the nation is the protecting genius of the individual, the family and the lesser communities, so it is the duty of the citizen to yield the most implicit obedience to its commands. It would be suicide to permit the doctrine of a divided or superior allegiance to be taught in the schools or upon the soil of a republic. The will of the people is the supreme law; the liberty of each citizen the chief aim of a free nation, and to sustain these there must be banished from the mind of the individual the intolerable political heresy of a higher or more potent power than the authority of the nation, whether such superiority be claimed for a domestic State or a foreign principality.

"But education without bravery would be useless to the State. The citizen must be fearless. In peace, frankly and freely declare his views of public affairs, from pulpit, press, or forum, and at the ballot box. Neither the blandishments of superior social position, the allurements of ambition, the suggestions of selfish policy, the threats of the powerful, or the fear of personal loss, should render his ballot venal, or his tongue restrained from the utterance of the truth. He who would be thus influenced is a coward, and he who would by fraud or violence seek at the polls to override the will of the people is as great a traitor as he who seeks to subvert it by an appeal to arms. In war, neither the fatigue of the march, the horrors of the dungeon, nor the fear of death should deter the brave citizen from obeying his country's call to arms in a just cause.

To fight  
In a just cause and in our country's glory  
Is the best office of the best of men ;  
And to decline when these motives urge '  
Is infamy beneath a coward's baseness.

He should be brave, not with mere, reckless, brutal daring, throwing his life away when public good is not certain to result from certain death, but with that sustained, heroic courage which launches him into extremest dangers when certain death is likely to serve his country."

RAILROAD BUSINESS.—LAKE SHORE & MICHIGAN  
SOUTHERN RAILWAY.

Tonnage received for 1879, lbs.....	119,340,922
" forwarded for 1879, lbs.....	56,745,438
Total for 1879, lbs.....	176,086,360
Total for 1878, lbs.....	136,740,310
Increase over 1878, lbs.....	39,346,050
Increase over 1877, lbs.....	57,415,481

MICHIGAN CENTRAL RAILROAD.

Tonnage received for 1879, lbs.....	36,434,362
" forwarded for 1879, lbs....	14,720,006
Total for 1879, lbs.....	51,154,368
Total for 1878, lbs.....	24,392,836
Increase over 1878, lbs....	26,761,532
Increase over 1877, lbs.....	30,446,368

NORTHWESTERN GRAND TRUNK RAILWAY.

Tonnage received for 1879, lbs.....	23,983,247
" forwarded for 1879, lbs.....	9,262,183
Total for 1879, lbs.....	33,255,430
Total for 1878, lbs.....	34,941,480
Decrease for 1879, lbs.....	1,696,050
Increase over 1877, lbs.....	1,511,204

RECAPITULATION.

Lake Shore & Michigan Southern, lbs.....	176,086,360
Michigan Central, lbs.....	51,154,368
N. W. Grand Trunk, lbs.....	33,245,430
Total for 1879, lbs.....	260,406,158
Total for 1878, lbs.....	196,074,626
Total increase over 1878, lbs.....	64,411,532
Total increase over 1877, lbs.....	89,373,053

The increase for 1879 over the previous year exceeds the total tonnage for 1879 just 10,243,765 pounds, or over 5,000 tons!

In another form the aggregate tonnage for 1879 may be expressed in round numbers, as follows:

Received, tons.....	89,879
Forwarded, tons.....	40,364
Total, tons.....	130,243

To transport this enormous amount of freight would require 13,024 cars loaded to their full capacity of ten tons each, 8,804 of which would be used by the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern alone. The number of cars, fully loaded, used by the Studebaker Bros. Manufacturing Company alone was over 2,000.

The amount collected for freight in 1879, including advance charges, was as follows:

Lake Shore & Michigan Southern Railway.....	\$143,526 99
Michigan Central.....	41,455 22
N. W. Grand Trunk.....	32,185 22
Total.....	\$217,167 33

The Lake Shore & Michigan Southern received for passenger tickets here, for the year 1879, \$54,225.25.

The Michigan Central received on same account \$6,138.87, an increase of \$314.39 over the preceding year.

The Northwestern Grand Trunk sold 3,633 tickets, for which the sum of \$4,855.66 was received.

The aggregates for the year are:

Collected for freights.....	\$217,167 33
Collected for fares.....	65,219 78
Total collected.....	\$282,387 11

The following table shows the amount of freight, in pounds, received and forwarded for each of the last ten years, and the total for the decade:

<i>Year.</i>	<i>Amount in Lbs.</i>	<i>Year.</i>	<i>Amount in Lbs.</i>
1870.....	68,376,326	1875.....	160,263,764
1871.....	86,808,953	1876.....	151,191,009
1872.....	135,032,536	1877.....	171,113,105
1873.....	153,058,448	1878.....	196,074,626
1874.....	144,801,343	1879.....	260,486,158
Total.....			1,527,206,868

Reduced to tons, the figures are 763,603; to carry which would require 76,360 cars loaded with ten tons each!

#### SOUTH BEND OF TO-DAY.

Should Alexis Coquillard from the unseen world be permitted to look down on South Bend to-day, what a change would he observe!

When he recalls the year 1824, with not a white man in what is now one of the most populous portions of the State, save himself, surrounded by the red men of the forest who brought their furs to be exchanged for blankets or some gaudy trinkets pleasing to the uncultivated mind, and now witnesses the smoke ascending from a half hundred factories, and hears the hum of the machinery, what thoughts must pass through his mind! The beautiful St. Joseph river, with water clear as crystal, is now employed in turning the wheels that put in operation scores of manufactories that furnish employment to thousands of men. Where once stood a forest is now covered with residences of man, from the humble tenement to the palatial brick or stone. The Indian trading post has given way to the palace stores, where are gathered from all quarters of the civilized and uncivilized world, that which pleases the eye, excites the appetite, or affords comfort to the body. No more do the people gather in the old log school-house, or in some beautiful grove, "singing and making melody in their hearts to the Lord." To-day they gather in beautiful temples, adorned by the hand of man, and where it can almost be said that upon "flowery beds of ease" they are "carried to the skies." The old log school-house, where children were taught only the rudiments of the English language, has been displaced by buildings which are an honor and credit to the place, and which are furnished with every modern appliance for a practical education. The old stage-coach, the coming of which was anxiously watched with the hope that it would bring news from home, is known no more, but in its place the iron horse comes bounding in, tarries but a moment, and is off like the wind. An average of fifty trains of cars daily are brought in or pass through the city, instead of the tri-weekly coach of a third of a century ago. With its large manufactories, its elegant churches, beautiful residences, fine hotels, good schools, and every comfort which taste and money can procure, South Bend is indeed a model city.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL.

We continue the history of Portage township and the city of South Bend by giving biographical sketches of many of the most prominent pioneers and citizens, as follows:

*George Alward* is a native of the "Empire State," and was born Feb. 24, 1834. He is the son of Squire and Abigail Alward; his father was a native of New York, and his mother of New Jersey. They were of English descent. Mr. Alward is a self-made man. He staid at home and worked on the farm in the summer time and attended school in the winter, until 18 years of age. He then taught school during the winter months, and in the spring and summer attended the high school, going home during vacations and assisted in carrying on the farm. He settled in this city in 1855, and engaged as clerk in a dry-goods store, where he remained a number of years, and was afterward Deputy Recorder and Deputy

Auditor, and City Clerk from 1861 to 1867, and was elected City Judge in 1868, which position he held until 1870, at which time that office was abolished, its duties being performed by the Mayor.

In 1866 he commenced the study of law and was admitted to practice in the courts of this State in 1867. He immediately engaged in the active practice of his profession. Mr. Alward is an ardent Republican. He is a prominent member of the Masonic fraternity and has held the highest offices of the different branches of the order in this city. He was married in Michigan to Martha F. Hodgkinson, daughter of James S. and Margaret Hodgkinson. She was born in New York in 1836. They have 4 children, George A., James S., Henry B. and Albert F. Mr. Alward and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church in this city.

*Andrew Anderson* was born in Whitehall, Washington county, N. Y., on Oct. 6, 1830. He is the son of Andrew and Lucinda (Goodrich) Anderson; father a native of Scotland, and mother of Massachusetts. He received a classical education at Union College, in New York State. He commenced the study of law in 1854 and graduated at the Albany Law School in 1855, and was admitted to the New York Bar in 1855. He migrated to this State in 1856 and settled in South Bend, where he has since resided and continued the practice of law. In 1862-'3 he was elected to the State Legislature from this county. He was married in this city May 4, 1857, to Mary E. Chapin, daughter of Horatio and Mary E. (Story) Chapin. She was born in this city Oct. 6, 1836. Her father was one of the pioneers of St. Joseph county. He located here at an early day as a merchant, and was one of the leading men of his day. They have 2 children: Emma (wife of James Du Shane, of this city) and Miss Jennie Anderson. Mr. Anderson is one of the leading attorneys in this city and has a large and lucrative practice. For years has been interested in the trial of nearly all the prominent cases tried in the courts of this county.

*Joseph B. Arnold, Jr.*, the son of Joseph and Harriet (Botsford) Arnold, who were natives of Massachusetts. They migrated to this State in 1849, and located in Elkhart county, where they resided until 1859, when they came to St. Joseph county and settled in South Bend, where they now reside. The subject of this sketch was born in the State of New York in 1839. He came to this State with his parents in 1849. His early life was spent on the farm and at school. He received a liberal education, and at the age of 20 he began the study of law. In 1861 he entered the Union College of Law in Chicago, where he remained until he completed his studies. He was admitted to the Indiana Bar in 1863, and he immediately opened an office and commenced the practice of law in this city. In 1870 Mr. Arnold formed a co-partnership with Mr. J. P. Creed, the firm name being Arnold & Creed, and they have since been engaged in the law and abstract business. They are among the leading lawyers of this city, and have a large and lucrative practice. Their abstracts of titles are

full and complete of all property in St. Joseph county. Mr. Arnold in 1875 organized the People's Savings Bank, and became its first president, which position he still holds.

*George Barnhard*, City Marshal, was born in Germany Nov. 14, 1840; the son of Adam and Catharine (Manurer) Barnhard. He came to this country in 1860, settled in the city of New York, and removed to this county in 1864, where he has since resided. He enlisted in Co. E, of the 26th Reg't New York Vols., and was in the service about 20 months, being in the battles of Cedar Mountain, second Bull Run and many others; he was mustered out of the service Oct. 3, 1862. He then went to Rome, N. Y., and removed from there to this place, where he has since resided. He was elected Marshal of the city of South Bend in 1876, and re-elected to the same office in 1880. He was married in New York in 1864 to Catharine Carman, who was born in Germany Sept. 14, 1841. He is a member of the order of Odd Fellows, and he and his wife are members of the German Evangelical Church in this city. Politically, Mr. Barnhard is a staunch Democrat.

*William L. Barrett* is one of the pioneers of South Bend; he was born in Caledonia county, Vt., March 10, 1810. He spent his early life at home on the farm, and at the age of 16 he learned the jeweler's trade, and has been engaged in that business ever since. He began work at Franklinville, N. Y., where he worked four years, and in 1835 came to South Bend, opened a jewelry store, and has been engaged in the trade continuously ever since, being the oldest jeweler in the city, and has done more business in his line of trade than all the other stores of the kind in the city. He was married in the State of New York in 1834 to Harriet Newton, who was born in New York. They had 3 children by this marriage, one now living. He is one of the pioneer Masons of South Bend, and organized the second lodge in the county. He has been a member of First M. E. Church of this city since 1835.

*William W. Brick*, one of the pioneers of St. Joseph county, was born in New Jersey Feb. 13, 1808. He visited this State in 1829, and in 1831 located in the county permanently. He bought and entered lands in Olive tp. When he first started in life he had but \$9 in money. He was married in Cass county, Mich., to Miss Elizabeth May, who was born in 1814. He had by this marriage 13 children, 8 of whom are now living. Mrs. B. died in 1850. He was married in 1851 to Eliza Willmynton, who died the next year. He was again married in 1857 to Elizabeth Calbert. They had 2 children by this marriage. Mr. Brick has held many town and county offices, and was the first Justice elected to that office in the county. Politically, he is a Republican.

*John M. Brownfield* was born in Uniontown, Fayette county, Pa., Dec. 24, 1808. His education was such as the common schools of that time afforded. He is the son of Thomas and Elizabeth Brownfield, natives of Virginia, of English descent. At 15 years of age he was employed in a dry-goods store, in which he

continued six years. When 21 years of age he began business in his native town in connection with his brother, Col. Ewing Brownfield, which business they continued for three years. In 1832 he was married to Lydia A. Beeson, daughter of Joseph Beeson, of Pennsylvania. She died in this city in 1853. By this marriage he had 4 children, 2 now living: John, Jr., a practicing attorney in this city, and Lydia A., wife of Marvin Campbell, of South Bend. In 1856 he was married to Elizabeth Ellis, in the city of Philadelphia; she is a native of Maryland. In 1833 Mr. Brownfield visited friends at Niles, Mich., and while there visited a number of places with a view of locating in the West. He came to this State in 1834 and located at South Bend, Ind., where he now resides. He continued in the mercantile business, and passed successfully through the financial panics of 1837, '40, '57, etc. When the branch bank of the State of Indiana was located here he was appointed Director on the part of the State. He was President of this bank for 12 years. He has been President of the South Bend National Bank from its organization to the present time. He was President of the South Bend Iron Works for several years. Mr. Brownfield has been an honored and leading member of the Methodist Episcopal Church for more than 50 years, a class-leader for many years, has been Superintendent of the South Bend Sabbath-school also for several years, and for a time a Trustee of the Asbury University. He at one time donated \$1,000 toward its endowments. He was elected to the General Conference, which met in the city of Brooklyn, May, 1872. He has been actively identified with every enterprise and movement that had for its object the improvement and advancement of South Bend. He has always been a strong adherent of the Democratic party, and in other years regarded as the "wheel horse" of the Democracy in St. Joseph county.

*Willis A. Bugbee* was born in the city of South Bend Sept. 17, 1845. His father, Mr. Almond Bugbee, was a native of Vermont, and settled in South Bend in March, 1837. His mother died in 1861. She was a native of the State of New York, and her maiden name was Adelia A. Crocker; she was a frequent contributor to the press and magazines. He received a good common-school education under able and careful instructors, and also a commercial education at Chicago in 1864-5. He graduated at the "Law Department" of the University of Michigan at Ann Arbor, in March, 1867, and received the degree of "Bachelor of Laws." This entitled him to practice in all the courts of Michigan. He was further admitted to practice at the Bar of St. Joseph county, Indiana, April 8, 1867, and shortly afterward entered the law office of Hon. Andrew Anderson. Mr. Anderson had in 1856 established a complete set of records of title to all of the real estate of St. Joseph county, and he procured the assistance of Mr. Bugbee in revising, enlarging and perfecting them. A partnership was formed, which lasted for some time. Afterward the records were



leased by him of Mr. Anderson, and Mr. Bugbee subsequently became sole proprietor by purchase from Mr. Anderson. These records had obtained such a reputation for accuracy and reliability, that in his specialty as an examiner of titles many hundreds of thousands of dollars have exchanged hands upon his opinion of the title. The attention paid to details, the method, arrangement and artistic appearance of his written abstracts, called forth the highest praise from many of the largest loan, trust and insurance companies of the country, into whose hands they fell for critical inspection. The supervisor of loans of a trust company located in New York city adopted Mr. Bugbee's abstract as a model or form for business in Michigan and other parts of the West. Prior to engaging in business for himself, and with a view of seeing the country and of selecting a location for his future, he made a trip across the continent from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean, and made a short trip into Mexico, and on a previous occasion, a trip into Canada, thus visiting the four extremes of the country, on the east, west, north and south, but found no place that attracted him more than his native city, where he has always remained. Mr. Bugbee's inclinations have been toward a literary career, and he has written a vast number of anonymous articles for the press, some of which have attracted general attention. On two occasions, several years apart, he was offered and urged to accept a position as associate editor of the *St. Joseph Valley Register*. He is an active member of the First Presbyterian Church, and has for many years acted as a member of the Board of Trustees of that Church. He was in 1880 elected an elder of the Church, to fill a vacancy caused by the death of Dr. Louis Humphreys, but declined the honor. In April, 1873, he was married to Evelyn E. Badet, of New London, Conn. He has witnessed the growth of South Bend from a small village to its present size and prosperity, and has grown up with the growth of the city, and has a deep, earnest, and abiding interest in the welfare and prosperity of his native place.

*Dr. Daniel M. Calvert* was born Oct. 29, 1847, in St. Joseph county, Indiana, where his parents resided for 40 years. Thomas D. Calvert, father of D. M., was born at Lanchester, England, in 1818. Mr. Calvert, Sr., kept a dairy near Philadelphia, Penn. Mrs. Sarah (Curry) Calvert was a native of Ohio, was born in 1829. Came to this county a few years later with her parents. She was joined in marriage to Mr. Calvert and lived contentedly on the homestead for 50 years, which is three miles north of South Bend. D. M. Calvert was married Sept. 11, 1873, to Miss Eliza Sherburne, of Lorain county, Ohio. 1869 to 1873 taught school in this county; studied dentistry in 1874 and 1875, which business he has followed since. He lived one year in Buchanan, Mich., then moved to South Bend, where he now resides. He became a member of the Baptist Church Feb. 25, 1872. Mrs. C. is a member of the same Church. He has been very successful in his business and is well known in the county.

*Marvin Campbell*, the eldest son of Samuel A. and Harriet (Cornell) Campbell, was born in Valparaiso, Ind., March 13, 1849. His parents located in Porter county, Ind., in 1834, where they now reside. His father is a native of the State of New York, and his mother of Ohio. The subject of this sketch received his education at the Valparaiso College, and at the age of 20 he was placed in charge of the mathematical and scientific department of the Valparaiso high school, which position he held for one year. He then came to this city and taught mathematics and the sciences in the high school in this place for two years. He then resigned and entered into partnership with Mr. Cole, under the firm name of Cole & Campbell, and engaged in the hardware trade. In 1874 he purchased the interests of Mr. Cole in the business, and purchased the building he now occupies, Nos. 15, 17 and 19, Market St., and has increased the business from time to time. He now has without doubt, the largest retail hardware store and tinware manufactory in the State. He also has a large wholesale trade. He employs 12 hands and carries a stock of not less than \$25,000. Mr. Campbell has also become popularly known in the lectur  field. His lecture on "The Relation of the Bible to the State," has been highly spoken of by the press and clergy of Indiana. He has also taken an active part in the political affairs of the country, and his voice is often heard in defense of the principles of the party to which he belongs. He has been a life-long Republican, and is one of the leaders of that party in this county. He was married in this city May 27, 1874, to Lillie A. Brownfield, daughter of John and Lydia A. Brownfield. She was born in this county in 1852. Her father, John Brownfield, is one of the early settlers and leading men of South Bend. They have 2 children, John B. and Harriet. Mr. Campbell is a member of the Masonic fraternity, and he and wife are members of the M. E. Church in this city.

*James W. Camper*, the son of William and Elizabeth Camper, who were natives of Virginia and came to this State and located in South Bend in 1834, was born in 1836 in this city, where most of his life thus far has been spent. He began to learn the gunsmith's trade when but 14 years of age, and has been engaged in that business ever since. He began business for himself in this city in 1867. He also followed for a short time the butcher business and the manufacture of chairs. He is now engaged exclusively in the sale and manufacture of guns and sportmen's goods. He was married in 1865 to Miss Mary A. Smith, of this city. Politically, he is a Republican.

*John Cassidy, M. D.*, the son of John and Rose Cassidy, who were natives of Ireland and came to this country and settled in Michigan at an early day, was born in Michigan in the year 1838; his early life was spent at home on the farm. He received a classical education, and studied medicine at the Rush Medical College of Chicago, at which institution he graduated in 1865. He first

began the study of medicine under the preceptorship of Lonis Negnon, the physician and surgeon in charge at Notre Dame and St. Mary's College. Dr. Negnon was a surgeon of the French army under Napoleon. Dr. Cassidy has been the physician of Notre Dame and St. Mary's ever since he began the practice of medicine. He was married in 1870 in this city to Corselia Ascher, who is a native of Ohio. They have 5 children, and are members of the Roman Catholic Church.

*Reese J. Chesnutwood* is the son of Abram and Sarah Chesnutwood, who were natives of Pennsylvania; father of German and mother of Welsh descent. He was born in Pennsylvania in the year 1816; went with his parents to Ohio when a small boy, where his early life was spent. He came to this State in 1851 and located in South Bend, engaging in the dry-goods trade, which he continued a short time, and then sold out and went into the lumber business, which he continued until 1859. This year he was elected County Recorder, which office he held for eight years. In 1869 he was appointed U. S. Internal Revenue Collector for the Ninth District of Indiana; this office he held until the Ninth and Tenth Districts were consolidated, Jan. 1, 1876. In January, 1879, he began the manufacture and sale of cigars. He employs ten hands and has a very large trade. Mr. Chesnutwood's education was confined to such as the common schools of Pennsylvania afforded at that day, and such instruction as he received at home. He was married in Ohio in 1842, to Miss Martha A. Fisher, who was born in Philadelphia, Pa. They have 2 children, a son and a daughter. The son is now married and resides in the city, being Deputy Revenue Collector for this district. The daughter, Sarah F., is the wife of Thaddeus S. Taylor, of this city. Mr. Chesnutwood is a member of the Masonic order, and has held all the prominent offices of the lodge, chapter and commandery. Politically, he is a staunch Republican.

*Henry F. Clippell*, agent U. S. Express Company, was born in Colon, Mich., in 1840; he spent his early life on a farm, up to 1866, when he was engaged as express agent at White Pigeon, Mich., and in 1871 was transferred to South Bend, where he has since had charge of the U. S. Express Co's business, being their general agent at this point. He was married in White Pigeon June 17, 1870, to Miss Elizabeth M. Dale, daughter of Amos Dale, of White Pigeon. They have 2 children now living: Mary E. and Carroll S. Mr. and Mrs. C. are members of the Christian Church. In 1861 he enlisted in the 11th Mich. Vol. as a member of the regimental band, in which capacity he served one and one-half years; he then went into the Quartermaster's department, where he continued until the close of the war.

*Schuyler Colfax*, ex-Vice President of the United States, and lecturer, was born in the city of New York, March 23, 1823; was a grandson of Gen. William Colfax, who commanded Washington's life-guards. In 1836 he removed with his mother, who was then a

widow, to Northern Indiana. He settled at South Bend, and studied law, and became in 1845 editor of the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, a Whig paper issued at South Bend. In 1850 he was a member of the convention which formed a new constitution for Indiana, and he opposed the clause that prohibited colored men from settling in this State. As a Whig candidate for Congress he was defeated in 1851, but was elected in 1854, was six times re-elected, and continued to represent this district until 1869. In 1856 he made an eloquent speech in Congress on the subject of the conflict in Kansas. He was chosen Speaker of the House of Representatives in December, 1863. During the civil war he was a friend and confidential adviser of President Lincoln. He performed a journey across the continent to California in 1865, and was again elected Speaker of the House about the end of that year. He gained a high reputation as a presiding officer, and was the most popular Speaker of the House since Henry Clay. In 1867 he was chosen Speaker for the third time. In May, 1868, he was nominated as candidate for the office of Vice-President of the United States, by the Republicans, who at the same time nominated Gen. Grant for the Presidency. They were elected in 1868, receiving 214 electoral votes out of 294, which was the whole number.

He is still a resident of South Bend, and devotes his time principally to the lecture field, in which he excels. During the Presidential campaign of 1880 he was waked up to take a public part in favor of the Republican nominees, and soon was able to rejoice with his co-laborers in the fruits of a great Republican victory.

*Lucius F. Copeland* is the son of Lucius F. and Olive Copeland. They were natives of the State of New York. His father is of English and his mother of Scotch descent. The subject of this notice spent his early life in Rochester, N. Y., was educated in the high schools of that city and in the University of Virginia, and afterward was engaged with Messrs. Prichard & Co., on a Government contract.

In 1860 he visited Europe, making an extensive tour of the continent, being absent one year; on his return he continued his business under his contract with the Government. In 1863 he enlisted in the 13th New York Volunteers, and was soon after transferred to a Pennsylvania regiment and assigned to post duty in Washington, D. C., with rank as Lieut.-Colonel, in which position he continued for ten months. In 1865 he attended lectures at the Albany Law School for two terms, and afterward continued his law studies in the office of F. G. Wicker, Esq., of Albany, N. Y. In 1866 he returned to Rochester, N. Y., and was for a short time engaged in mercantile business; in the fall of the same year he went to St. Louis and took charge of the extensive saddlery and hardware house of E. A. Corbin & Co., where he remained about one year; he then joined an excursion party and visited New Mexico, returning to St. Louis in 1868; he then moved to Johnson county, Iowa, where he was engaged in the practice of law for a short time. He

then returned to New York and opened a law office, and in 1870 he visited Europe, being absent one year and seven months. In the spring of 1875 he moved to Berrien county, Mich., and engaged in the practice of law; in 1878 he came to South Bend and continued the practice of law. Col. Copeland for a number of years has been in the lecture field, and has most deservedly been denominated the "Prince of Orators." So popular have his lectures become that he has calls from nearly every State in the Union, and during the lecture season his time is fully occupied, having many more calls than he can fill, and has received some very flattering notices from the leading papers in the States where his lectures have been given. As a political speaker Col. Copeland stands to-day without a rival; and during the campaign but recently closed, the demands for him were greater than for any other man on the stump. As an advocate in the trial of causes he stands in the foremost rank, and there are but few if any in the State able to cope with him before a jury. Mr. Copeland was married to Miss Emily C. Mead, of Berrien Springs, daughter of William Mead, Esq., of that place.

*Alexis Coquillard*, manufacturer of the celebrated "Coquillard wagon," was born in Detroit, Mich., April 29, 1825. Mr. Coquillard comes from a long-lived race of people, whose name has been prominently connected with the early development and growth of Michigan and Northern Indiana. Benjamin Coquillard, *pere*, was in early life married to Sophia Andre; they were natives of Detroit, where they resided until 1829, when they removed to Indiana and located in this county; as the result of this union one child was born to them, Alexis, who is the subject of this sketch. Alexis Coquillard, Sr., the head of the family in America, was stationed in this county as an employe of the American Fur Company at a time when there was not another white man in the county. He afterward founded and platted the wealthy and enterprising city of South Bend. In 1840, while St. Joseph county was yet a wilderness, zealous representatives of the Roman Catholic Church, men who knew neither danger nor fatigue in the accomplishment of their self-imposed missions, pushed their way into the wild, unbroken fastness, and there began laying the foundation of the Notre Dame college. The first name on its rolls was that of the subject of our sketch, who piloted them across the river when in search of the grounds. The fabulous stories of golden treasures in California, which were circulated throughout the country in 1849, found lodgment in the breast of the young man, and he determined to seek his fortune in the New El Dorado of the West; and though but 25 years of age, in company with others, that year visited the golden shores of the Pacific, where he remained nine months, and succeeded beyond his most sanguine expectations. He returned to Indiana and purchased a farm in this county, which he operated until 1854, when he engaged in the real estate business and the manufacture of lumber, in which business he has been engaged to a large extent up to the present time. He continued to increase his

landed possessions until 1865, at which time he established the Coquillard Wagon Works. This business has been constantly increasing until his sales amount to more than 3,000 vehicles per annum. The timber from which they are constructed comes from a tract of 2,000 acres in the county, on which at an early day he erected a steam saw-mill. He is also the owner of one of the best farms in the county of over 500 acres, a short distance from the city limits. Mr. Coquillard, in addition to the above, is the owner of some 40 houses in South Bend, besides a large amount of unimproved real estate. He is also the owner of large tracts of land in Michigan, Iowa, Nebraska, and some of the Territories.

Socially Mr. Coquillard is one of the most genial of men. The distinguishing characteristics of his nature are strength of purpose, independence of thought and action and love of right and truth. He takes an active interest in all enterprises, promotion of the public good, or in the diffusion of knowledge. He is a man of great energy and perseverance, and when he once undertakes a thing, he seems to know no such word as "fail." Five feet seven inches in height, he is blessed with an excellent constitution, and is the very picture of health. He is still a bachelor, "heart-whole and fancy free." As a justification of this fact, Mr. Coquillard states that when young he was too poor to contemplate matrimony, and is now too busy to think of it. Politically, he is a Republican, and enjoys the distinction of being the wealthiest man in St. Joseph county. He contributes liberally to all charities, and is a man whose worth is felt and appreciated in the community in which he resides. His portrait is given on page 703.

*Alexis T. Coquillard*, the only child of Alexis Coquillard, the chief founder of the city of South Bend, was born in the city of South Bend, on the 13th of February, 1836. At the time of his birth his father lived in the house north of the Strayer gun shop, on Michigan Street. When young Coquillard was three years of age, his father removed to the brick house on Michigan street, now occupied by Hon. Wm. Miller, where they lived until the young man was about 24 years of age. He began his school life with his cousin Alexis Coquillard, now manufacturer of the celebrated "Coquillard wagon," in a log school-house that stood near the site of the University of Notre Dame, which was the beginning of that celebrated institution of learning, where he remained until the University was built; he then entered the college, being one of its first students, where he continued his studies until 1854. Jan. 7, 1855, his father received fatal injuries by falling from the ruins of a large flouring mill that had recently burned, and died Jan. 8, from the injuries caused by his fall. He was married in 1859 to Miss Mary Ellen Pike, daughter of Charles Pike, Esq., of Niles, Michigan. She was born in Buffalo, N. Y., in 1842. They had one child, Alexis Charles, who resides with his father in this city. In 1860 Mr. Coquillard was employed on the detective force in Chicago, under C. P. Bradley, chief of that department, who at once recognized the ability of Mr. Coquillard

and promoted him from time to time, placing him in charge of a large force of men. His reputation as a skillful detective soon became known throughout the Northwest, and complicated and difficult cases from all parts of the country came to him, and as evidence of the ability and skill he displayed in this most difficult business, has hundreds of highly flattering testimonials from the Government authorities, the leading railroad officials and business men of the Northwest. In 1868, at the request of the leading men in Indianapolis, he went to that city and organized "Coquillard's Merchant Police," having a large force of men in his employ. In 1869 the prominent men of that city, having a due appreciation of his services, presented him with a very fine gold-headed cane, with the name of the donors engraved thereon. In 1868 he abandoned the business and has since given it no attention whatever.

In 1868 he purchased the land where the village of St. Edwards, Nebraska, is now located, and afterward sold a half interest in the same to John N. Lederer and W. H. Longley, of this city, with a view of platting a town, and in 1876 they organized and were incorporated under the laws of Nebraska, as "the St. Edwards Land and Emigration Company," of which Mr. Coquillard was elected president and manager for the term of five years. The company, besides having a large number of town lots, own a large tract of land adjoining the village of St. Edwards. In 1879 Mr. Coquillard contracted for 25,000 acres of land in Oconto county, Wis., and soon after formed a joint-stock company composed of John N. Lederer, T. E. Howard, Esq., W. H. Longley, Andrew Russwurm, Godfrey Poehelman, James Daughtery, Edward T. Lomont, and himself. Mr. Coquillard was elected president and general manager of the company. The company at once began to improve and open their land to actual settlers, and are now rapidly disposing of it, their sales being very large. Mr. Coquillard in 1880 started the *Globe*, in the interests of these two land companies, for the purpose of bringing the property before the public. The paper has been a success from the start, and now has a circulation of 5,000 copies. In connection with his other responsibilities Mr. Coquillard does a general real-estate business, and buys and sells property of every description.

In 1872 he was elected City Councilman from the fourth ward, which office he held for two terms. He afterward received the nomination for the office of Mayor, and was defeated by a small majority.

Through costly litigation the entire fortune of his father was swept away, and Mr. Coquillard, left without means, has by his own efforts acquired his present property and cared and provided for his mother, who died but recently. He is one of the representative men of South Bend, and has been identified with many of the public enterprises of the city. Portrait on page 739.

*James N. Corning* is the son of Nathan and Pheba (Willson) Corning, father a native of New Hampshire and of Scotch descent,



and mother of New York and of English descent. The subject of this sketch was born in Mentor, Lake county, Ohio, in 1835. His early life was spent at home on the farm. He received a liberal education; was three years in the oil regions of Pennsylvania, where he engaged in oil speculations. In 1867 he emigrated to this State and located in South Bend, where he has since resided. He was married in Ohio in 1862 to Mary A. Thompson, who was born in Lake county, O., in 1837; they have 2 children. Mr. Corning is one of the leading men of this city; has now been Justice of the Peace for four years, in which capacity he has the confidence of the people, and his time is fully occupied with the duties of his office. He is a Democrat, and also a member of the Masonic fraternity in this city.

*Jonathan P. Creed* was born in Benton, Yates county, N. Y., Dec. 2, 1844. Went to common schools and worked on a farm until the breaking out of the war of the Rebellion. Enlisted Aug. 14, 1862; served until July 14, 1865. Was wounded at the battle of Gettysburg, Pa., July 4, 1863, in his right arm, near the shoulder, the ball passing through into the side. After his discharge from the army he went to school at Lima, N. Y., at which he received an academic education. In 1867 he removed from New York to South Bend, Ind., and began the practice of law, in which he is still engaged.

*James Daughtery* is the son of James and Elizabeth Daughtery, who were natives of Ireland, and came to this country at an early day. He was born in Pennsylvania in 1826, where he spent his early life; was employed in a woolen factory until he was 29 years of age, when he moved to Ohio and engaged in farming for a number of years. He came to this county in 1864, and followed farming some time, and had charge of the county house for two years. He was elected Sheriff in 1878, which office he now holds. He was married in Wayne county, Ohio, in 1849 to Miss Anna E. Shaffer. They have 5 children now living. He is a member of the Masonic order, and politically is a Democrat.

*James Davis* is a native of Pennsylvania, and was born in 1812, the son of Robert and Margaret Davis, who were natives of Pennsylvania. He commenced the study of law in Pittsfield, Ill., when 21 years of age and while holding the office of Clerk of the Circuit Court, and was admitted to the Bar in 1836, and continued the practice until the year 1876, when, owing to poor health, he was obliged to abandon the active practice of law, and accepted a position as special agent of the U. S. Treasurer's department, with headquarters at Chicago, which position he held two years. Mr. Davis has always been an active politician, and for many years was chairman of the county central committee of the Republican party, and held the office of City Attorney for two years. He was married in 1851 to Miss Elizabeth Heaton, daughter of Charles M. Heaton. They have 4 children by this marriage.



*Daniel Dzyton, M. D.*, is not only one of the earliest pioneer settlers in South Bend, having arrived here in 1836, but was the first regular medical graduate that commenced practice in this city; and he has continued the practice of his profession at the same place, without intermission to this date,—a period of 44 years. Probably no physician is now or ever has been more widely or favorably known in this section than the venerable Doctor.

He is a native of the granite-bound hills of New Hampshire, Orford, Grafton Co., where he was born May 27, 1806, the son of James and Lucinda (Morey) Dayton, the former a native of Connecticut and the latter of Massachusetts, and of English ancestry, the original family having come to America in 1640. The Doctor's youth was passed upon his father's farm; in 1831 he graduated at Union College, N. Y. The same year he first commenced the study of medicine during his last term at Union College, one of the professors being a physician,—by name Joslyn; afterward attended his first medical course at Dartmouth College, N. H., and graduated in 1836 at the Geneva (N.Y.) Medical College, and commence practice in Syracuse.

He was married in 1836 to Catharine Pells; soon afterward he emigrated with his wife to the West, and located at South Bend, where he soon established an extensive practice. He had the misfortune to lose his wife by death, which occurred in 1840. He was married again in 1844, at South Bend, to Miss Ann M. Wade, who is still living; they have a family of two children, whose names are Mary, now the wife of Sam'l T. Applegate, of this county, and James H., who is a graduate of the Annapolis (Md.) Naval Academy, and a Lieutenant in the U. S. Navy.

Dr. Dayton has been a member of the order of Odd Fellows for 30 years; has also been a member of the Congregational Church for many years. In politics is a Republican, and has served the community in various local public offices. He was one of the members of the first Board of School Examiners; also Township Trustee, Corporation Surgeon several years, and also served as U. S. Examining Surgeon for enrollment for two years during the war of the Rebellion; also served as County Coroner two years. Although so actively employed during the many years of his residence in this county, he always found time to attend to the wants of those in distress. It mattered not to him whether called up at the hour of midnight to attend to the wants of the millionaire, where pay for his services was secured, or by the poorest citizen, whose only pay could be his grateful thanks for his generous labors. Of the latter class of practice no physician in this county ever had more or was as cheerfully attended to. After a long and honorable life the Doctor is still hale and hearty, still in the practice of his profession, honored and respected by all.

*Dr. Edward Hannigan Denslow* was born at Mount Pleasant, near South Bend, St. Joseph county, Indiana, on the 17th of June, 1844. He is the third son of the late Henry Denslow, one of the

early settlers of the county, and a man widely known and universally respected. Edward worked on his father's farm up to the year 1870, with the exception of some time spent on several occasions in travel with circuses and theater companies, in the West. As might have been expected, he yielded to the temptations afforded by these diversions and contracted habits of inebriety which at one time seriously threatened to be his ruin. True, however, to the home-bred proclivities of his boyhood he returned, finally, to the farm and fireside of his father, and Oct. 26, 1865, was united in marriage to Annie S. Johnson, a lady of attractive manners and excellent judgment. Soon after his marriage he became excessively addicted to drink and his utter ruin seemed almost inevitable. In the early part of 1870, however, commenced that extraordinary development which changed the whole tenor of his life and brought about in him almost a new creation. The result was, in fact, a new birth, if there ever was such a phenomenon. Almost without premonition, certainly without expectation or desire, some unseen influence took control of his physical organism while utterly unconscious; he was carried through a series of exercises of the most extraordinary character. One of his first experiences was to have the glass in which he was conveying intoxicating liquor to his mouth, seized by an unseen hand and dashed in pieces. His love of strong drink immediately left him and has never returned. His habits of life became abstemious almost to the degree of asceticism. By an influence, of the origin of which he had no personal knowledge, he was impelled to very frequent physical exercises of great severity and of unusual kinds.

After a lapse of about three years, in 1873, he found himself in possession of healing powers of singular efficacy. He immediately opened rooms in South Bend and began to combat the various diseases to which our flesh is heir, with almost incredible success. Right in the home of his boyhood, in the midst of those who had known him from his birth, and had watched him through his varied experiences, he sought, and successfully too, occasions for the exercise of his great gift. Thus, where he is best known, he has combatted, unaided and alone, prejudice on the one hand and malignity on the other, until he has put all his foes under his feet and, without personal blemish, has established a reputation of which philanthropist or healer of whatever pretensions may well be proud. He uses no drugs, relying alone upon that *medicatrix naturæ* which, in his case, follows the "laying on of hands."

Dr. Denslow is now in the full maturity of a well-developed manhood. In stature he stands about five feet and eleven inches. His physique is eminently sturdy and symmetrical. His capacious chest and powerful muscles denote great capacity for strength and endurance. The high tone of his nervous system is denoted by the silky texture of his hair and the auburn tinge of his full beard. Phrenologically, the coronal region is prominent, giving assurance of a high moral and religious nature. The intellectual faculties are wel

indicated, while the organs giving perceptive power are normally full. His basal brain gives evidence of sufficient combativeness to face a foe, and enough destructiveness to remove all impediments in the path of right. Large adhesiveness bind him firmly to his friends, while the domestic group impels to an almost passionate love of home. Tolerant of all opinions and the just views of others, he is so constituted that he cannot help demanding a recognition of his own personal rights and convictions. The fame of this curiously constituted gentleman has already gone far beyond the boundary of his almost rural home, and, if life and health are spared him, he will ultimately, without doubt, achieve an almost world-wide renown. This, however, will be in the line of doing good, as he eschews all other methods of distinction.

*L. M. Dunning, M. D.*, was born in the State of Michigan in 1850, son of Oscar and Martha Dunning, natives of the State of New York, father of Scotch and mother of English descent. He received a liberal education and came to this county in 1878; began the study of medicine in 1870, attended the Medical College of Buffalo, and graduated at the Rush Medical College of Chicago in 1872. He commenced the practice of medicine near Troy, Mich., in 1872, where he remained until he removed to this city. The Doctor ranks among the leading physicians of South Bend, and was the organizer of the Berrien County Medical Society, of which he was president one year; is a member of the Odd Fellows order; was married in Cass county, Mich., in 1876, to Miss Harriet Blanchard; they are members of the First Methodist Episcopal Church in this city.

*Samuel Dunning, M. D.*, son of James and Mary Dunning, who were natives of Ireland and came to this country at an early day, was born in Canada in the year 1845; his early education was quite limited, being only such as the common schools of that day afforded. He began the study of medicine in 1868, and after completing his studies began to practice in the city of Detroit, and came to this city in 1879, where he now resides and continues the practice. He is recognized as one of the leading physicians and has a large and lucrative practice. He was married in New York in 1869, to Miss Bell Jones, of that State, who was born in 1844; they have one child, Flora B., born in 1871.

*James H. Ellsworth* was born in St. Joseph county, Ind., in 1852, and has always resided in this city; he is the son of Aaron B. and Frances L. (Harwood) Ellsworth, who were natives of New York and came to this State at an early day. Aaron Ellsworth was one of the pioneers of St. Joseph county and one of the most prominent citizens of South Bend. The subject of this sketch was educated in the schools of this city; attended law lectures in the Union College of Law of Chicago; was admitted to the Indiana Bar in 1873 and in June, 1875, began the practice of law in this city. He is secretary of the "Western Accident and Relief Association," which office he has held since the organization of the company. He

was the originator and organizer of this company and has had the general management and supervision of the same. Politically, he is a Republican.

*Chuncey N. Fassett*, editor of the South Bend *Register*, was born in South Bend July 30, 1849; when three years old the family removed to Middlebury, Elkhart county, and thence in 1857 to Goshen, and the next year to Lebanon, Southwestern Missouri; there, in 1863, they were cut off by the rebels from all communication with the North; they returned to Goshen, and in February, 1873, back to South Bend. Here Mr. C. N. Fassett began as local editor for the *Union*, was then on the *Register* two years, and next on the *Tribune* one and a half years. Oct. 12, 1878, in company with D. S. and F. A. Marsh, H. S. Fassett and E. M. Herr, he bought the *Register* establishment; Mr. D. S. Marsh retired from the firm in May, 1880. A further notice of the paper is given in another chapter. Oct. 31, '77, he married Anna H. Thrush, daughter of the late Rev. John Thrush, once pastor of the M. E. Church in South Bend. She was born in Baltimore Oct. 31, '57. Mr. Fassett is a Republican, a member of the A. F. and A. M., and was City Clerk in Goshen three terms. Present residence, 32 Lafayette street.

*Gustav Fikentscher* was born in Bavaria, June 2, 1831, son of Martin and Katharine (Sommer) Fikentscher; educated in the common schools of Germany; emigrated to this country in 1866, arriving in South Bend June 29; followed his trade of miller for a year, then photographing for four or five years; in 1873 commenced as local editor for the *Courier*, when Messrs. Brownfield, Jr., and Fassett Broadus were proprietors; February 19, 1874, he took possession of the *Courier*, since which time he has conducted the paper with success. January 24, 1880, he was married to Adele Lemien, of Chicago, a native of Prussia, and they now reside at 79 Lafayette street. Politically, Mr. F. is a Democrat.

*George Ford* was born in South Bend, Jan. 11, 1846; son of Isaac and Emeline Ford, natives of the State of New York. His father was a cooper by trade and came to this State and located in South Bend Sept. 3, 1845, where he resided until his death, which occurred Sept. 16, 1880; he was engaged in the cooper business until within the last four or five years of his life. The subject of this sketch was educated in the schools of this city, and while a boy learned the cooper trade, at which business he worked for a time; he began the study of law in March, 1866, in the law office of Col. Norman Eddy, then one of the leading lawyers of South Bend; in 1869 he entered the law department of the University of Michigan, where he continued his studies until he graduated; he then returned to South Bend and engaged in the practice of law, where he has since resided and continued the business. In 1872 he was elected Prosecutor of the Court of Common Pleas, which office he held until that court was abolished by the Legislature; he was then appointed Prosecutor in the Circuit Court to fill a vacancy, and with

the exception of two years has held that office ever since, having recently been re-elected to that office for another term.

*Isaac Frame* was born in the State of Ohio in the year 1818; son of Jesse and Nancy Frame, who were natives of Virginia, and came to this county in 1832, and settled in Warren township, where the subject of this sketch spent his early life; when quite a young man he learned the carpenter's trade, which he followed for many years. He was married in this county in 1846, to Miss Emily Jones, who was born in Ohio in 1828, and died in 1862; they had six children. He was again married in this city in 1863, to Miss Lucinda Hnff, of this city, and they have 2 children. Mr. Frame has held the office of Constable in this township for more than ten years; has held the office of Justice of the Peace four years, and Deputy Sheriff two years, and now holds the office of Constable. Politically, he is a Republican.

*Nathaniel Frame* was born in Wayne county, Ind., July 31, 1820; son of William and Nancy (Crowel) Frame, natives of Virginia, who located in Warren tp., this county, in 1836, where they resided during the remainder of their lives. Nathaniel now owns the old homestead; he was married in 1842 to Caroline Wayne, of this State, who was born in Henry county, Ind., in 1824; they have 7 children: Sarah, wife of William H., of this county; Lucinda, wife of Abram Staples; Julia A., wife of Theodore R. Marble; James J., Abram W., and Rosetta, wife of Frank Wells, of this county. Mr. Frame has held a number of important township and county offices; was County Commissioner twelve years, and a member of the City Council two years. Politically he is a staunch Republican and an earnest supporter of the nominees of that party.

*Hon. William G. George* was born in Pennsylvania in 1832; he graduated at the Pennsylvania College in 1851; came to this State and settled in South Bend May 1, 1854; began the study of law in 1850, and was admitted to practice in 1854; was Assistant Adjutant of R. H. Milory's staff in 1862; assisted in the organization of the city of South Bend; in 1865 was elected its first Mayor, and held that office for two and one-half terms, without compensation. He was married in 1856 to Miss Lydia Pfleger, of Pennsylvania, and they have one child. Politically, Mr. George is a staunch Republican, and was the first to vote the Free Soil ticket in Lebanon, Pa.; he has always taken an active part in political affairs. Mr. George is one of the oldest attorneys now in active practice in this city, also one of the leading lawyers, having a large and lucrative business.

*William Gibson* was born in Ohio in 1836; his parents came to this State in 1837 and settled in Elkhart county, where they remained five years, then came to this county, where the subject of this sketch has since resided. He was raised on a farm and received a liberal education; in 1860 he learned the photographer's art, and has since been engaged in that business. He was married in

Berrien county, Mich., in 1859, to Elizabeth H. ———, who was born in Ohio in 1839, of Virginian parentage.

*Benjamin Gingrich* was born in Waterloo county, Canada, in 1843; he learned the carpenter's trade when a young man, at which he worked until 1865, when he migrated to this State and located in South Bend, where he continued to work at his trade until 1870; he then engaged in the manufacture of furniture in connection with George Byler; the partnership continued until 1872, when Mr. Gingrich conducted the business alone until 1879; he then entered into a co-partnership with Conrad Liphart, and the new firm continued the business of manufacturing and sale of furniture; they occupy two large stores on Michigan street, and own and operate a large factory. Mr. Gingrich was married in 1866 to Miss Elizabeth Byler, who was born in Marshall county, this State, in 1842; they have 2 children now living; both are members of the German Methodist Church in this city. Politically, he is a Republican.

*Henry Ginz*, native of Hesse Darmstadt, town of Alzey, Germany; was born Feb. 6, 1830; his parents were Jacob and Catharine Ginz, natives of that place. His father followed the business of a tanner, which he carried on for many years; he and his wife both died at the above-named town. Henry Ginz received the advantages of a common-school education in Germany until the age of 14 years, when he was apprenticed to learn the cabinet-maker's trade; at the end of his term of apprenticeship, which was three years, he commenced work at his trade, at 19 years of age, in 1849. He participated in the rebellion of that year under Gen. Seigel, who served so gallantly in our late war. This rebellion proving unsuccessful, he, with many others, escaped to Switzerland to save their lives, where he remained for a few months, when, by decree of the German Government, all non-commissioned officers (Mr. Ginz was a Sergeant) and privates were pardoned. Mr. Ginz then returned to Germany and worked at his trade. In 1854 he emigrated to America, landing at New York City and coming direct to La Porte county, Ind., where he followed his business until 1864; he then moved to Indianapolis, where he was in business until 1869, when he moved to South Bend, opening a grocery store and bakery, which he conducted for three years; then discontinued the above business, and in 1872 bought an interest in the "Knoblock Flouring Mill;" since this time Mr. Ginz has been identified with the milling interest in South Bend. The mill has four run of stone and has a capacity for grinding 100 bbls. of flour a day. In 1878 Mr. Ginz was nominated in his district as their Representative in the State Legislature. He is a Democrat, and although it was a Republican district he ran ahead of his ticket so that he was elected by a handsome majority; his opponent was Judge Stanfield. In 1859 Mr. Ginz was married to Miss Wilhelmina Myers, of South Bend, and they have 3 children, living at home, Adolph, Clara and Harvey. Mr. G. now resides in South Bend, surrounded by his family, and is one of its substantial citizens.



*C. B. Holloway*





*Daniel Greene* is a son of John and Mary A. (Jackson) Greene, who were natives of Delaware, and came to this county in 1832, where they resided until the time of their death. He was born in Greene county, O., in 1818, and came to this county with his parents in 1832; he has been engaged in farming most of his life, but for the last ten years has partially retired from active business life, being at present engaged in insurance business. He was married in 1849, in this county, to Miss Mary Leeper, daughter of Samuel Leeper, of this city, and they have 3 children now living, Elizabeth Ann, wife of Dr. J. A. Kettering, of Colorado; Howard M. and Edna. Mr. Greene is a member of and Elder in the First Presbyterian Church in this city. He has always taken an active part in political affairs and contributes liberally of his means for that purpose, and has always been considered one of the "wheel horses" of the Republican party in this county.

*Ezekiel Greene* was born in the State of Delaware in 1810; his early life was spent at home on the farm, and farming has been his principal business during life; he came to this county with his parents in 1832 and settled in Greene tp.; in 1854 he engaged in mercantile business in South Bend and was for some time U. S. Deputy Revenue Collector; in 1864 he was elected County Treasurer, which office he held for two terms of four years each; he was married in this county to Sarah Garwood, daughter of Joshua Garwood, who was born in Ohio in 1812, and died in 1854. Mr. G. is a member of the Presbyterian Church.

*Levi J. Ham, M. D.*, was born in York county, Me., Nov. 16, 1805. His ancestors came from the highlands of Scotland in 1720, settling in Portsmouth, N. H. There were four brothers, George, Samuel, Benson and Matthias, each of whom married Scotch ladies. The descendants of George and Benson settled on the west side of the Salmon Falls river, in Newington, Dover, Great Falls and Rochester. Matthias went to North Carolina, and many of his descendants are now to be found scattered up the Mississippi as far as Dnbuque and St. Paul. Samuel, the great-grandfather of Levi J., went over into Kittery, Me., and settled upon the very ground where the great navy yard is now located. His descendants pushed up the east side of the Salmon Falls river and became very numerous in York county, Me., particularly in Shapleigh, Acton and Newfield. Samuel, the paternal grandfather of Levi, and John Mildram, his maternal grandfather, were in the battle of Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775, armed with shot-guns. About 1796 Mr. William Ham, Jr., was married to Miss Esther Mildram, in Shapleigh, York county, Me., and they raised a family of 9 children, 7 brothers and 2 sisters; all lived to the age of men and women. Five of the brothers have been members of the Legislature of their native State.

The subject of this sketch was brought up on a farm till he was 16 years old, when he went to Newburyport, Mass., and fitted for college. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1828, and took his

medical degree from Bowdoin College, Maine, in 1831. After the completion of his medical course he at once went to practice in his native county. He immediately rose to distinction as a surgeon. The study and practice of his profession has been a life business with him; he has now (1880) one of the finest libraries in the State of Indiana. It is very large, and the volumes were selected with great care. Aside from his professional studies, his reading and taste have been mostly in the direction of the natural sciences. His published writings have been mostly on medical subjects, printed in the journals of the day.

In September, 1835, he was nominated and elected a State Senator from his native county. Young as he was his education and business tact placed him at the head of one of the most important committees at that time in the State, that of the "North-eastern Boundary" question. The question came near involving the nation in a war with Great Britain. He was also placed at the head of the Committee on Education. He retained the head of these important committees as long as he was a member of the Senate. He had fine diction. The last two years he served as President of the Senate. He took a deep interest and an active, leading part in the maturing and passage of the bill for the erection of the Maine Insane Asylum. He was on the Board of Trustees for that institution from 1840 to 1845. In the latter year he was again elected to the Senate, but declined to serve, having decided to leave the State.

In 1846 he removed to Erie county, N. Y., where he continued the practice of his profession with renewed zeal and eminent success till February, 1859, when he removed to his present home in South Bend, Ind. He soon had a lucrative practice. At the breaking out of the great Rebellion he was appointed Surgeon of the 48th Reg. Ind. Vol., by Gov. O. P. Morton. The Regiment was moved to the front early in 1862, and he was put in charge of the Central Hospital at Paducah, Ky., after the great battles of Fort Donelson and Shiloh. The wounded of both these great battles were brought to Paducah for care and treatment. After the battle of Shiloh the necessity of surgical work was so great and pressing that for eight full days and nights he stopped but just 13 hours. May 1, 1862, the regiment moved forward to Corinth, Miss. He was in the siege of Corinth in 1862, which lasted from May 1 to June 30. During his service of three full years in the army he was in 22 battles besides the numerous skirmishes, among them those of Inka, Miss., Sept. 19, 1862; Corinth, Miss., Oct. 4 and 5, 1862; Fort Gibson, May 1, 1863; Forty Hills, May 3, 1863; Raymond, Miss., May 12, 1863; Jackson, Miss., May 14, 1863; Champion Hills, May 16, 1863; Big Black River, May 18, 1863; at the siege of Vicksburg, which lasted from May 19, 1863, to July 4 following; Helena, Ark., Lookout Mountain and Mission Ridge in November, 1863, and at Kenesaw Mountains in 1864. After the battle of Inka he was appointed Post Surgeon, and had charge

of all the wounded of both sides after that terribly sanguinary battle. Early in 1863 there was a Board of three Surgeons of each division of the army called the "Operating Board," who had charge of all the capital operations. He was Chairman of the Board of the 7th Division of the 17th Army Corps in all the great battles in the rear of Vicksburg, and at Lookout Mountain and Mission Ridge. He was Medical Director at one time of the 17th Army Corps, under the gallant McPherson, and is now a member of the American Medical Association. He was elected Mayor of the city of South Bend in May last (1880), against his will.

He has 2 children, one son and one daughter. His son, Hon. M. M. Ham, is editor and proprietor of the Dubuque *Herald*, Iowa, and he is now a Senator in the Legislature of Iowa. The daughter is a single lady, and is housekeeper for her father.

Dr. Ham's portrait will be found on page 757.

*W. H. Hanford*, physician and surgeon, was born in Clark county, Ohio, in 1825; his early life was spent on a farm until fourteen years of age; he then learned the printer's trade, and subsequently studied medicine, in which he graduated; he came to this State and located in South Bend in 1866.

*John W. Harbou* was born in Oneida county, N. Y., January 24, 1847, son of Fritz and Judith Harbou; father is a native of Denmark and mother of New York; he came to this State Oct. 16, 1872, and located in South Bend, Ind.; he worked at the carpenter's trade two years and was then employed in the County Clerk's office about one year, when he was appointed Deputy Clerk, which position he held until May, 1880; in 1879 he was appointed Justice of the Peace, and was elected to the same office April 9, 1880, for the full term of four years. He is a member of the Masonic order in this city; politically he is a Republican. He was married Oct. 3, 1868, to Miss Juliette Pearly, of Schoolcraft, Mich., and they have one child.

*Robert Harris*, physician and surgeon, is a native of Ohio, and was born March 14, 1823; he spent his early life at home on the farm; at the age of twenty-one he began the study of medicine, and in 1848 graduated at Starling Medical College, and commenced the active practice of medicine and surgery in 1849; in 1851 he migrated to this State and located in South Bend, where he has since resided. Dr. Harris has always had a large and remunerative practice, and is one of the leading physicians of South Bend. He was married in this city in 1852 to Miss Sophia ———, who was born in Ohio in 1831 and died in ———, leaving her husband and two children to mourn her loss. He has been a member of the City Council two years, and takes an active part in all public enterprises. He is one of the leaders of the Greenback party in this city, and is an earnest supporter of the doctrines and nominees of that party.

*David Haslenger*, Justice of the Peace and Notary Public, was born at Zang, Wurtenburg, Feb. 18, 1849, son of Frederick and

Catharine (Schwaeble) Haslenger; emigrated to this country in the summer of 1867, settling at Plymouth, Ind., and came to South Bend in April, 1869. Aug. 8, 1871, Mr. H. married Minnie Ambos, of South Bend, who was born in Philadelphia July 27, 1853, and their children are Anna, Gustave, Bertha and Frank. Mr. Haslenger followed cabinet-making from 1869 to 1871, then was insurance agent, Notary Public and finally Justice of the Peace, which office he now holds, having been first elected in 1876, and re-elected in 1880. Politically he is a Democrat. He represents the Glens Falls, Liverpool & London and Globe, North German, London & Lancashire and Firemen's insurance companies; all reliable and safe. He is also a prominent member of the South Bend Mannerchor and of the Turn-Verein, and has been president and secretary of both these societies for several years.

*John Hay* was born in Pennsylvania in 1839, son of David and Nancy Hay, the former a native of Ohio and the latter of Virginia, who came to this State and located in this county in 1864. Mr. Hay enlisted in 1861 in Co. I of the 57th Regt. of Pa. Vols., and was in the service nearly three years; he was in the battles of Bull Run, Chancellorsville, Battle of the Wilderness, Gettysburg and others; he lost one arm in the battle of ———. He was in the mercantile business in this city for twelve years, and in 1878 was elected Treasurer of St. Joseph county, which office he still holds. He was married in 1866 to Mary Zahniser, of Pennsylvania, who was born in 1848; they have 3 children: Minnie, Winnie and Nan-nie G.

*Joseph Anderson*, a native Indianian, was born in Wayne county, near Newport, July 6, 1829; his father and mother were from North Carolina, and emigrated to Indiana at an early day. While he was quite young his father died, and his mother lived many years afterward. He was a student, for a while, under Barnabas C. Hobbs, at Richmond; shortly after leaving school he entered Wittenberg College at Springfield, Clark county, O., where he remained for several sessions. He taught some after leaving college, and while teaching school at Marion, Grant county, he commenced the study of the law under the Hon. Isaac Van Devanter, a prominent young lawyer of that town. After spending a summer in Marion he emigrated to South Bend, where he has ever since resided. At his adopted home he continued the study of law under Hon. Elisha Egbert, now deceased; he attended a law class taught by Hon. Thomas S. Stanfield several winters in succession; was a partner for several years of the late lamented Norman Eddy; he was elected to the House of Representatives in 1870; re-elected in 1872; elected to the Senate in 1874; elected to the Council from the 2d ward of this city in the spring of 1879.

*Woolman John Holloway*. The subject of this sketch was born in Clark county, Ohio, Feb. 6, 1826. His father, George Holloway, was a Virginian by birth, his early home having been near Winchester, Va. In an early day he, with his father, William Holloway, came to Ohio, settling in the Scioto Valley near Chillicothe.

Mary Woolman Holloway, mother of Woolman J., was born near Mt. Holly, New Jersey. Her father, John Woolman, was one of the early pioneers of Southern Ohio, having crossed the Alleghenies twice on foot from New Jersey, and also one of the early explorers of the Territory of Michigan. He was a nephew of the John Woolman of colonial times, who was among the first men of those times to oppose the introduction of African slaves and slave-holding in the colonies. His writings on this and other subjects have been edited and published in book form by James G. Whittier, the noted Quaker poet and scholar.

In the fall of 1830 George Holloway, with his family—consisting of his wife Mary, daughter Martha, and three sons, Woolman J., William Franklin and Uriah Branson (Woolman J. being the elder), and his father-in-law, John Woolman, his wife and family—removed to the "Indian country," the then "Territory of Michigan." They located first near the wigwam of Pokagon, one of the chiefs of the Pottawatomies, on Pokagon Prairie, now Pokagon tp., Cass county, Mich. The Indian title to the lands in Northern Indiana having been extinguished by treaty, these lands were put into market by the Government. In 1831 George Holloway purchased a tract in Greene tp., St. Joseph county, Ind., and thereon erected the usual pioneer log cabin, into which he removed with his family in April, 1832. Here he resided until his death, June, 1875. His wife and son, William Franklin, died in 1838, a year ever memorable to the early settlers as the "sickly season." Uriah Branson removed with his wife and son to Colorado Territory in 1859, and subsequently became identified with the Territorial Government and early organization of that State. At the beginning of the war of the Rebellion he enlisted in the 1st Colorado Regiment but subsequently became Captain of Co. L. in the 2d Colorado Cavalry, and served until the end of the war with distinction. At the close of the war he returned to Colorado and located at Pueblo, with the view of practicing law. Without his solicitation he was made Marshal of the Territory. Removing from Colorado he located at Shreveport, La., and was elected clerk of the Circuit Court for the parish of Caddo. During that year the scourge of yellow fever visited Shreveport, and he, his wife and son, the entire family, were among the many victims of the fell destroyer. The early days of Woolman J. were spent on the farm, with usual routine of farm life, in the midst of the many vicissitudes of pioneer experience. The first work to be done was to reclaim the "wild lands," and bring them under the civilized hand of agriculture.

The organization of society and the building of log school-houses, were among the first objects of the early settlers. The opportunities for education were, indeed, limited. The log school-house was generally miles away from the cabin, and the schoolmaster was considered an "apt scholar" if he could "cipher" to the "double rule of three." Grammar, philosophy and science were matters

hardly to be dreamed of in those log-cabin schools. There were few books, and newspapers were to be seen only now and then. But the log-cabin school and country "debating society" were the seminaries and universities for the young men of those pioneer days. Between work on the farm in summer and the three months at school in winter, Woolman J. managed to acquire the simple rudiments of education, and himself became one of the teachers in the log seminaries in St. Joseph county. In 1853 he became a resident of South Bend, and in 1859 was elected to the office of County Auditor—an office of honor and trust. He was twice elected to this office the constitutional term, and performed the duties of that important office to the full satisfaction of the people of St. Joseph county. The first four years of his official life were during the war of the Rebellion, during which time St. Joseph county assumed many responsibilities and was not wanting in patriotic action. She contributed liberally for bounties to soldiers enlisting in the county. She raised revenues and paid considerable sums to the families of soldiers who were absent in the field, and for other relief. During his term of office the county jail was built, the county asylum enlarged and improved, and other valuable improvements made by an able Board of County Commissioners. The credit of the county was maintained, and on retiring from office in 1867 he was gratified with the fact that St. Joseph county had but little debt, and was not burdened with onerous taxes. In the meantime he had been admitted to the practice of law at the Bar of the St. Joseph Circuit, but did not engage actively in the profession of law.

Mr. Holloway was first married in June, 1859, to Miss Mary A. Smith, of Cass county, Mich., who was born in Sussex county, Del., her parents having been among the early settlers of Cass county. Mrs. Holloway died in May, 1862. Mr. Holloway was married again to Miss E. A. Perkins, of St. Joseph county, in February, 1865. She was born in Southern Ohio; her parents were from Virginia and among the earlier settlers of St. Joseph county.

Mr. Holloway is still a citizen of St. Joseph county, resident of the city of South Bend, and for the past ten years has been identified with one of the leading manufacturing industries of South Bend and of the great West. During this time he has been actively engaged in commercial life, and is well and favorably known in many of the Western and Southern States.

Mr. Holloway's portrait will be found on page 917.

*John Hopper* was born in New York in 1809; came to this State in 1838 and located in South Bend, where he now resides. He worked at home upon the farm until he was 18 years of age, then served an apprenticeship at the carpenter's trade, and was engaged in that business for over 30 years. He then secured a contract for the construction of a portion of the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroad, and was engaged in that business for some years. He was married in January, 1832, to Miss Caroline Stanford, of New York, and they had 2 children. Mrs. H. died in 1836, and Mr. H.

was married again in 1840, to Pheba Smith, of Kentucky, who died in 1843, leaving 2 children. He was married in 1849 to Elizabeth Godfrey, of Michigan, who was born in 1826; they have 2 children now living. Mr. H. is one of the old pioneers of St. Joseph county, and one of the most respected men in South Bend.

*Richard Inwood* was born in England in 1812, and came to this country in 1833. He spent his early life at work in manufactories and in farming; was in the employ of the Mishawaka Iron Works for a number of years. He was married in 1843 to Miss Catherine A. Rush, who was born in Ohio in 1821 and died in 1858; they had 3 children. He was again married, in this county in 1861, to Miss Martha Green, who was born in Ohio in 1821; they have one child. Mr. Inwood has a farm of 400 acres in Centre tp., under high cultivation and worth at least \$60 per acre. He also owns a fine residence on Washington street in this city, where he now resides. He is a member of the First M. E. Church in this city.

*George J. Kenney*, the oldest son of Thomas and Mary Kenney, natives of Ireland, who came to this country in 1828, and to Indiana in 1853, locating in South Bend, where they have since resided. The subject of this sketch was born in Buffalo in 1846, where he spent his early life. He came to this State with his parents in 1853, and has been most of the time in the grocery trade, in which business he is now engaged. His store is now located on the corner of East Water and Emerick streets, and he is doing a large business. He is a member of the Roman Catholic Church, and politically he is a Democrat.

*Samuel L. Kilmer, M. D.*—This gentleman is one of the rising physicians, and although he has been in practice here but for a short time, he has a good business. He was born in Ashland, Ohio, in 1849, and is the son of Isaac and Anna (Gilmore) Kilmer, who were natives of Pennsylvania and are of German descent. He received a liberal education and commenced the study of medicine in 1876 at the Rush Medical College of Chicago, graduated in 1879 and commenced the practice of medicine the same year in South Bend, where he now resides. His office is on the corner of Michigan and Washington streets.

*John Klingel* has been identified in a marked degree with the business and educational interests of South Bend for the past 28 years. He was born at Wallhalben, Rhein Pfalz, Aug. 31, 1835, and is the youngest son of Philip Klingel, who was a French soldier under the first Napoleon during the last battles of that great conqueror. The subject of this sketch received the advantages of a good education in the schools of his native town until he was about 15 years of age, when, in the spring of 1850, he emigrated with his parents and one sister to the United States, whither three brothers and one sister had preceded them several years. The family located, on their arrival, in the town of Rome, Oneida county, N. Y., where they remained one year, at the end of which time, in company with his parents, one sister and two brothers, he came to



Indiana, arriving at South Bend May 1, 1852. Soon afterward P. Klingel & Sons commenced in the boot and shoe trade at No. 80, Michigan street. All of the firm being practical shoemakers, quite a large business in manufacturing boots and shoes was soon established. In the early spring of 1856 our subject made a tour of the West, but returned to South Bend in the fall of that year, when he became the sole proprietor of the flourishing business established by P. Klingel & Sons. He added to the former business that of dealing in hides and leather, which was continued under the firm name of John Klingel & Bro., until 1872, when, partly on account of failing health, the business was sold out to other parties. In 1873 Mr. K. made a trip to Europe for his health, attended the great World's Exhibition at Vienna and many places of note on the continent. Returning home much improved in health, he engaged in traveling for the sale of furniture, and later and up to the present time for the "Coquillard Wagon Factory."

When South Bend was organized as a city in 1864 he was elected as Councilman from the first ward, and at the expiration of his term was re-elected, but resigned his seat soon after commencing his second term. He received no opposition at either of the above elections. In the same year he was appointed a member of the City Board of Education, to which position he has been steadily re-elected and served the city faithfully, with the exception of one year, while in Europe, up to the present time. To illustrate the well-earned esteem in which he is held, it is said that no matter what political party was in power, whenever his name came up for election to the above office there was never a single vote cast against him. All the school-houses in the city except two have been built since Mr. K. was a member of the Board, and no one is better known or more popular among the school children of South Bend than their friend John Klingel. He is now Treasurer of the School Board, and when in the city devotes nearly his entire time to the educational interests of the place. Under Mr. Klingel's direction graded schools were first established in South Bend, and the first superintendent appointed.

In 1875 the City Council transferred the City Library, consisting of over 2,000 volumes, to the City School Board. The library was at once removed to the high-school building, and Mr. Klingel volunteered his services as librarian, and for over two years devoted two days of each week to this work free of charge. Under his direction it became one of the most popular institutions in the city and increased to 2,500 volumes.

Mr. K. was one of the first members of Germania Lodge No. 301, A. F. & A. M., and has been Master of said lodge off and on for 10 years; also is a member of South Bend Chapter No. 29, R. A. M., and a Sir Knight of Warsaw Commandery No. 10.

Mr. Klingel was married Dec. 6, 1857, at South Bend, to Miss Fyette Dice, a daughter of John K. Dice, of this county, and an early settler. Mr. and Mrs. K. are very pleasantly situated in South



Bend, and have a family of 3 children, all at home. Their names are Albert, Clara and Cora.

*John C. Knoblock* is the son of Frederic and Saloma Knoblock, who were natives of Strasburg, Germany, and came to this country in 1829, and settled in Canton, Ohio. In 1833, they migrated to Indiana and entered Government land in Marshall county, where they cleared and improved a farm. The subject of this sketch was born in the city of Canton, Ohio, Nov. 3, 1830. While yet a small boy he learned the shoemaker's trade, so as to be able to make the boots and shoes for the family, and at the age of 13 came to Indiana with his parents, and worked on the farm for five years. He then started out from home on foot and walked to South Bend, where he hired out at \$10 a month as a teamster for A. R. & J. H. Harper, who, as soon as they became acquainted with the young man and his good qualities, gave him a position in their flouring mill, the mill being now known as the "Phoenix." While at the mill he became acquainted with a millwright who was about to embark in the grocery trade, and he was induced to take a position in his store as clerk, where he remained for several years, until he had acquired a full knowledge of the business. March 3, 1853, he began business for himself in copartnership with Kasper Rockstroh, and continued in business with varying success until 1871, when his estate was worth over \$75,000. He then was induced to engage in the manufacture of furniture. Some time after the establishment was remodeled and converted into a factory for the manufacture of reapers. In 1876 the building was again changed and he began in company with others the manufacture of the celebrated South Bend chilled plow, which he still continues. In 1865 he engaged in a general milling business, which he has continued ever since. In 1870 he was one of the organizers and charter members of the St. Joseph County Savings Bank, which has proved a success to its managers, and a great benefit to the people. He was treasurer of this institution for four years, and has been one of its trustees since its organization.

From 1866 to 1870 he was a member of the Board of County Commissioners, but owing to the pressure of private business he declined to be renominated for that office. He was also a member of the Town Council for a number of terms before the city was organized. Politically, he has been a staunch Republican since 1860, and is a zealous supporter of that party and its nominees. He is a member of the Masonic order, belonging to the lodge, chapter and commandery, and has held at various times prominent offices in each of these divisions of the order. He is quite liberal in his religious views, believing that if the people are properly educated they will be of necessity right in matters pertaining to their salvation.

He was married in this city in 1853, to Miss Lissetta Myer, daughter of John M. and Wenina Myer. She was born in Bavaria, Germany, in 1836. They have had 3 children, 2 of whom are now living. The eldest, Clara L., was born Dec. 12, 1854, and

died when nine years of age. Their second child, Hattie Lee, was born Dec 21, 1856, and is the wife of George W. Reynolds, of this city. The youngest, Otto M. was born June 19, 1859; he still lives with his parents.

Mr. Knoblock is a self-made man; he started in life for himself in this city without a dollar of capital, and by honest industry has acquired a competence. As an evidence of his public spirit and enterprise, he intends to donate a building to the city for the establishment of a school of philosophy and physiology and kindred subjects, the institution to be so arranged as to be self-sustaining. A good portrait of Mr. Knoblock will be found in this volume.

*William Knoblock* was born in Ohio in 1832, and is the son of Frederick and Mary (Watson) Knoblock, who came to this State and located in Marshall. He engaged in the grocery business in 1864, which he continued three years; then engaged in the manufacture of furniture and tables, which he continued until 1872; then sold out and, in connection with his brother, engaged in the retail furniture trade, which they still continue and are doing a very large business. Mr. Knoblock is a member of the Odd Fellows order, and also of Turn-Verein. He was married in 1853 to Josephine Knoblock, of South Bend, who was born in Ohio in 1833; they had 3 children by this marriage; Mrs. K. died in 1865, and in 1866 he was married to Christina D. Scheyer, of this city; they have 3 children. Politically, Mr. Knoblock is a Republican.

*John N. Lederer* was born in the town of Arsbürg, Bavaria, in 1833. He was educated in the college and gymnasium of Hof; came to this country in June, 1853, and to Indiana, locating in South Bend, where he was employed as a bookkeeper for Harper & Deyoe, at which business he continued for about three months; he then worked in a flouring and grist mill for a short time, and afterward worked on the railroad for several months. He then, in connection with J. C. Knoblock, engaged in the grocery and bakery business, which he continued until 1859, at which time he built a meat market on Washington street and engaged in the sale of meats and packing of pork. He was married June 27, 1860, to Miss Antoinette Bauer, daughter of Francis and Maria (Elman) Bauer, of this city; they have one child living, Annie, born Jan. 1, 1872. In 1872 Mr. Lederer returned to Germany, and spent several months at his old home, and made an extended tour of the continent. In 1873 he formed a co-partnership with J. C. Knoblock again in the wholesale and retail grocery business, which he continued until 1877. In 1868 he also formed a partnership with A. T. Coquillard and W. H. Longley. They purchased large tracts of land in Boone county, Nebraska, and platted and laid out the village of St. Edwards. In August, 1876, they formed a stock company, known as "The St. Edward's Land and Emigration Company," of which Mr. Lederer was elected at their first meeting vice president for the term of five years. In 1879, in connection with others, he entered into

a contract with the Northwestern Railway Company for the purchase of 25,000 acres of land in Wisconsin. He built a large business block on East Washington street, known as the "Blue Front," and a fine residence on Lafayette street, and now has in course of construction on Washington street one of the finest business blocks in the city, to be known as "Union Block." Mr. Lederer started in South Bend with \$11 in gold, and has by persevering industry acquired a competence. He has been a life-long Democrat. The Board of County Commissioners in 1870 appointed him Commissioner of South Bend for the appraisalment of property for benefits and damages. He has his office at 86 Michigan street. A portrait of Mr. Lederer faces page 832.

*William H. Longley* was born in Elkhart county, Ind., October 3, 1846, and is the son of Andrew and Mary Longley, the former a native of Pennsylvania, and the latter of Indiana. His father came to this State in 1834, and located in Elkhart county, where he resided until 1853; he then came to this county and located on Portage Prairie, and soon afterward moved to Sumption's Prairie, where he now resides. Mr. Longley remained at home on the farm until he was 16 years old, then entered the University of Notre Dame, where he took a full commercial course, and graduated in 1867; he then entered the dry goods house of John Brownfield, Esq., where he has since been engaged as salesman and book-keeper. He was married in this city, to Miss Helen L. Searle of the same place, December 14, 1871, a daughter of Richard Searle Esq., of this place, and was born in Pennsylvania in 1848; they have one son, born January 28, 1878. Mr. Longley is treasurer of the St. Edwards Land and Emigration Company, and also of the Wisconsin Land and Emigration Company of this city. Politically, he is a Democrat. His portrait faces page 810.

*Charles W. Martin* was born in New Jersey in 1815, and is the son of Charles and Mary Martin, who were natives of New Jersey, and of French descent; he learned the harness and saddlery trade when a boy; his education was limited to a few months' attendance at the district school. He left New Jersey when 19 years old, and went to Ohio, where he worked at his trade about one year, and then came to Indiana and located in South Bend, reaching this city in 1837. He at once engaged in the saddlery and harness business, which he has continued up to the present time. He located at No. 88 Michigan street. There was but one engaged in the business when he came here, and he is now the oldest pioneer in the harness trade in South Bend. He was married in this city in 1842 to Jane Buck, who was born in Ohio in 1821; they have 3 children living: Horace, Silas and Mary. Mr. M. is a member of the Odd Fellows' order, and himself and wife are members of the Presbyterian Church. His son is now engaged with him and they carry on their business at the old stand, No. 88 Washington street.

*John A. McGill, M. D.*, was born in New York in 1842, the son of Robert S. and ——— McGill, natives of Massachusetts. He

began the study of medicine when 25 years of age, and began the practice of the art while under the preceptorship of Dr. James Emmett, of Niagara Falls, N. Y., which he continued for five years. He then attended the Homeopathic Medical College of Cleveland, Ohio, and graduated at that institution in 1873, when he commenced the practice of medicine in Attica, N. Y. He came to Indiana in 1877 and settled in South Bend, where he has since resided and continued the practice of medicine and surgery. Dr. McGill was married in New York June 7, 1876, to Carrie M. Conley, daughter of Benjamin and Emily Conley, of New York; she was born in the same State in 1848. He is a member of the order of Odd Fellows, and of the First Presbyterian Church, this city.

*A. B. Merritt, M. D.*, was born in Rutland county, Vermont, in 1809. He is the son of Peter and Nancy Merritt, who were natives of the same State. His early life was spent at home and in attendance at school. He began the study of medicine at the Geneva (N. Y.) Medical College, and graduated at that institution in 1834, when he moved to Detroit, Mich., and began the practice of medicine. He came to South Bend in 1838, where he has since resided, in the practice of medicine, with the exception of four years spent in California. He was a member of the first medical society formed in the city and was for some time treasurer of that body. The Doctor has been a member of the Masonic order for many years, and politically, he is a Republican.

*John C. Miller, M. D.*, was born in Ohio in 1851; he received a liberal education, and at the age of 19 began the study of medicine, and graduated at the medical college of Cleveland in 1874, where he practiced for a short time; came to this county in 1876 and began the practice of medicine, where he has since resided. He has a large practice and is one of the rising young men in the healing art in South Bend. He was married in Wayne county, Ohio, in 1876, to Miss Kate Pontus. The Doctor is the present Coroner of St. Joseph county.

*Joshua D. Miller* was born in 1818 near Dayton, Montgomery county, Ohio, son of Aaron and Elizabeth (Hardman) Miller, father a native of Virginia, and mother, of Pennsylvania, pioneers of that county; they moved to Wayne county, Ind., in 1818, and to this county in 1831, settling about five miles north of South Bend. The subject of this sketch was brought up on a farm. Sept. 27, 1849, he married Lydia Ann, daughter of Samuel Good and a native of Ohio, whose parents were from Virginia, and they had 7 children, only one of whom is now living: Mary, residing at home. Followed carpentering about 20 years; his farm consisted of 200 acres, on secs. 32 and 33, German tp., which he sold in 1877; in 1872 he moved into the city of South Bend, and now resides on La Porte avenue. Has held a number of local offices,—was School Director, Assessor, etc.; was a Whig in former years, but is now a Republican, and has been a member of the County Republican Central Committee about ten

years. He is a member of the Universalist Church, built the house of worship for that denomination in Greene tp., and is now enjoying a retired life in comfort.

*William Miller*, deceased, was the son of Tobias and Sarah (Henderson) Miller, father a native of Pennsylvania, and mother of Virginia. His father came to this State from Virginia in 1833, and located in this county; afterward moved to La Porte, where he resided until the date of his death. He had 12 children, of which the subject of this notice was the 6th, and was born in Franklin county, Va., in 1809; came to Union county, Ind., with his parents when a small child; his education was such as the log school-houses of that early day afforded; he learned the tanner's trade when quite a young boy, and for a time followed that business, but afterward was engaged in business of various kinds during life. He was married in Union county, Ind., to Miss Mary Miller, daughter of John and Nancy (Kepper) Miller, who came to this State from Virginia in 1810 and settled in Union county, where they resided during life. Mrs. M. was born in Union county, Ind., in 1811; they had 6 children: John F., born in 1831; Isaac N., born 1835; William H., born in 1838; Martha E., born in 1839; Henry Clay, born in 1844; and Horace G., born in 1849. Mr. Miller came to St. Joseph county in 1833 and engaged in farming, which he continued until 1846, when he moved to the city of South Bend and engaged in mercantile and other business; was also a member of the Hydranlic Power Company. He filled many positions of trust and importance, and was one of South Bend's most honored citizens.

A portrait of Mr. Miller will be found on page 829.

*William Miller*, one of the pioneers of this county, was born March 16, 1821, in Pennsylvania. His ancestors were Germans and came to this country about the middle of the last century, during the prevalence of the religious wars that were at that time devastating that portion of Europe. At the time of his birth his native State had not yet inaugurated her liberal school system, and the only advantages of education he obtained were during the winter months at the very inferior district schools of the county. He left home at the age of 14 and entered a store as clerk in the city of Harrisburg, Penn., where he remained until 1837, when he emigrated with his father's family to this county, where he has made his home ever since. In 1849 he was one of the pioneers that crossed the plains to the gold fields of California. He returned to this city in 1852, and in 1853-'4 built railroads in Illinois under contract. In 1855 he engaged in the milling business in this county, and in 1869 he sold out his interest in that and commenced banking, which he still continues. He is at present cashier of the South Bend National Bank. In 1872 he was elected Mayor of South Bend, and re-elected to the office in 1874. He has also an interest in a mill at Mishawaka.

*Charles Morgan* was born in the northeastern part of North Carolina Nov. 1, 1810. He remained at home on the farm until he was 21, and then served an apprenticeship at the carpenter and

joiner's trade, which has been his business ever since. He emigrated to this State in 1826, locating in Wayne county, where he resided until 1835, when he moved to South Bend, this county, where he has since resided. He was married in Wayne county, this State, in 1828, to Susan Moon, who was born in the western part of North Carolina. She died in 1833, and he was subsequently married in this city to Sarah Shonnard, who was born in New Jersey in 1814. They have 3 children by this marriage, and he has one by his first marriage. He belongs to the Odd Fellows order in this city.

*J. F. Morrill, M. D.*, was born at Cleveland, O., in January, 1852. His parents were Wooster and S. E. Morrill. He attended school until 17, when he left that and entered the drug business as an apprentice; after remaining two years in this he took up the study of medicine and graduated at the Eclectic Medical College at Cincinnati, Ohio. In March, 1879, he married Mary M. Plumb, of Austinburg, O.; one child has been born to them. In November, 1879, he moved to this city (South Bend) from Three Rivers, Mich., and erected the mineral bath house. The water was one of the attractions of the place, and he has proved that the water is beneficial in the treatment of various diseases. The water comes from an artesian well 68 feet deep. It is strongly chalybeate, contains iron, magnesia and sodium, a little lime and sulphur. It is about 40° Fahr. the year round. By bathing in the water at a temperature of 100° to 110° it opens the pores of the skin and the iron contained in the water will stimulate. Rheumatism and various diseases of the blood are curable by this method, and in connection with electricity has a beneficial result on all diseases.

*Mrs. S. E. Morrill, M. D.*, was born in Twinsburg, Ohio, in September, 1828; her father, Perley Abbey, was an architect, and shortly after her birth moved to Cleveland, O., where she remained until 1855; at 18 she was married to Wooster Morrill, of New Hampshire; five years afterward their only child was born. She was left a widow at 36, and since then has educated herself in the medical profession. She graduated at the Homeopathic College at Cleveland, Ohio, in 1868; since that time has been practicing in Cincinnati, Philadelphia, Washington; has made a specialty of electricity as a remedial agent. Used it at first as an auxiliary to medicine only, but has discovered that it can be used to cure all acute and chronic diseases without medicine. She has invented a battery that will detect any disease, no matter where located, without asking the patient a question. The possibilities of electricity as a remedial agent, she claims, are not dreamed of by the medical profession. She came to South Bend to avail herself of the mineral water. "God rules the universe with water and electricity, and with these same elements can doctors control disease."

*Hon. Charles Lefferts Murray*, editor of the *South Bend Herald*, was born in 1815, in Murraysville, Bradford county, Pa., his father of Scotch ancestry and his mother of English; while very young

his parents moved with him to Athens, Pa.; in 1828 he commenced to learn the printing business in Towanda, and continued in Columbus, O.; worked a year in Jacksonville, Ill., where lived a relative of considerable note, Gen. Murray McConnell; suffering from ague he returned to Columbus, where he remained until 1834, in the newspaper business; editorially conducted the *Piqua (O.) Courier* for a time, being the first in the State in 1835 to "run up" the name of Gen. Harrison; in 1837 he established the *Goshen Express*, the first newspaper in the county; was Postmaster at Goshen, under President Harrison; followed farming for awhile; reported for seven sessions the proceedings of the State Legislature for the *State Journal*, then owned by John D. Defrees; in 1859 he was elected a Representative to the State Legislature on the Republican ticket, for Elkhart and Lagrange counties, by 900 majority; in 1860 he was elected Senator by 1,200 majority.

In the spring of 1861, President Lincoln having called for 75,000 men to put down the Rebellion inaugurated by the "Confederate States of the South," Governor Morton called an extra session of the Legislature, and issued a proclamation for the assembling of Indiana's quota of militia at Indianapolis, to join the Union forces. Mr. Murray being a member of the State Senate, before repairing to the capitol, issued a call for volunteers through the two newspapers of Goshen, made out the first muster-roll, and, heading it with his own name, left it at the Auditor's office for signatures, which was soon filled beyond the complement allowed to single companies. On the evening of his departure he got them together at the court-house, nominated Milo S. Hascall for Captain, and E. R. Kerstetter for First Lieutenant, and then left on the night train for Indianapolis, and after taking his seat in the Senate, was soon followed by all the volunteers on his muster-roll. He went to war as a private, was promoted Orderly Sergeant, then Quartermaster of the 48th Ind. Vol. Inf., which position he resigned on account of sickness; but on account of his efficiency as a soldier and officer, it was three months before his resignation was accepted. In 1862-'3 he resumed his seat in the Legislature, and after the expiration of his term he continued by all honorable means to sustain a vigorous prosecution of the efforts of the Government to suppress the Rebellion. In 1870 he sold his farm and moved into Goshen, and subsequently contributed as a miscellaneous writer to the *Democrat*; in 1872 he took the stump for Greeley, having been appointed a member of the State Executive Committee by the "Liberal" party; the next year he purchased the *Goshen Democrat*, and in December, 1874, he took possession of the *South Bend Herald*, with his son C. T. in charge; in 1876 he moved to this city and assumed the entire management.

In July, 1836, he married Ann Maria Spriggs, of Kentucky. His children are Francis W., Charles T., Edward, Gordon N., Harris F., Willis G., Emeline, Mary S. and Eliza O.



*Cornelius H. Myers, M. D.*, was born in Wayne county, Ohio, in 1852, and is the son of Enos and Mary Myers, who were natives of Pennsylvania. They settled in Elkhart county, this State, in 1852, where the subject of this sketch spent his early life with his parents on a farm, attending the district school during the winter months. He taught school for two years and then began the study of medicine in 1874 at Goshen, Ind., with Dr. W. A. Whipple, the most prominent homeopathic physician in Elkhart county. He attended the Hahnemann Medical College of Chicago in 1875, graduated in 1877, and began the practice of medicine in South Bend in 1876, in connection with Dr. Partridge, the leading homeopathic physician of Northern Indiana, with whom he has since continued in practice. He was married in 1879 to Miss Gertrude W. Harris, of this city. They are members of the Presbyterian Church. Politically, Mr. Myers is a Republican.

*Henry Neville, M. D.*, was born in Ohio, Dec. 14, 1839; he remained at home and worked on the farm until twenty years old, receiving such education as the common schools of that day afforded. He then taught school for a number of years, and at the age of 29 began the study of medicine in the Homeopathic College of Cleveland, Ohio; graduated in 1872, and soon began the practice of medicine and surgery in Randolph, New York, where he remained a short time and then moved to Albion, N. Y., where he continued his practice for three years. Dec. 30, 1879, he came to this city and located, where he now resides. He was married in 1868, in New York to Miss A. S. Jones, daughter, of Abner and Lydia S. Jones, natives of Vermont. She was born in New York in 1844. She began the study of medicine in 1869, graduating at the Homeopathic College of Cleveland, Ohio, in 1872, and has since been engaged in the practice of medicine in connection with her husband. They have 2 children: Pearl and Ruby. They are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church.

*J. M. Partridge, A. M., M. D.* Dr. Partridge was born in Gustavus, Trumbull county, Ohio, May 17, 1835, and is a son of Isaac and Elizabeth (Bailey) Partridge. His father, Isaac, was born in Connecticut in 1808, and in 1820 removed with his grandfather, Thomas, to Ohio, where he still resides. His mother, a daughter of Ida Bailey, was a native of Vermont, and removed to Ohio about 1825. She died in February, 1856. His grandfather, Thomas Partridge, served through the Revolutionary war, and took part in the engagement that resulted in the final surrender of the British forces under Lord Cornwallis.

During his early years Dr. Partridge lived on a farm, where he received a good common-school education. At the age of 20 years he began teaching school in the winter, and assisted on his father's farm in the summer. Thus he continued for three years, when, yielding to an earnest desire for a classical education, at the age of 23 he began his studies at Oberlin preparatory to a college course. Here he encountered and overcame difficulties that would have





*J. M. Partridge A.M., M.D.*



utterly discouraged many. A stranger and almost penniless he soon found employment, so that by working a few hours each day and studying, often till midnight, throughout the six years' course of study he paid all current expenses and kept up with his classes. During part of this time he was employed as teacher in the preparatory department of the college,

In 1863 he enlisted in the Ohio State Militia, an organization intended for home protection, but subject to the orders of the Governor. In April, 1864, during the darkest hours of the Rebellion, his regiment, the 150th Ohio, was ordered to the front and attached to the garrison holding the fortifications about the city of Washington. His company (K) was garrisoning Fort Slocum at the time General Early attempted to take it in his attack upon Washington, July 3, 1864, and which attack was signally repulsed. On the 15th of August following, his regiment was mustered out of the service at Cleveland, O., and he immediately returned to Oberlin, where he graduated with his class, receiving his diploma and title of A. B. Aug. 28, 1864. At this time Rev. John G. Fee, an earnest anti-slavery reformer, had conceived the idea of establishing an academic school at the heretofore obscure town of Berea, in the backwoods of Kentucky. He asked Pres. Fairchild, of Oberlin College, to send him a teacher who had ability and courage to successfully assist him in this work. Dr. Partridge was recommended. He remained with Mr. Fee six months and organized the first classes in Greek, Latin and algebra that were ever taught in what is now Berea College.

In the spring of 1865 the subject of our sketch entered the office of Dr. L. B. Dye, at Gustavus, to pursue the study of medicine; the following September he entered as student in the office of Drs. Blair and Sanders, at Cleveland, O., and during the ensuing winter he attended the first course of lectures in the Cleveland Homeopathic College, both of his preceptors being Professors, and Dr. Sanders, President of the College. In November, 1866, he commenced medical practice, in partnership with Dr. Craig, at Niles, Mich., where he remained a year, and then attended a second course of lectures at the Hahnemann Medical College, of Chicago, where he received a diploma in the spring of 1868. The preceding year he had received his second literary degree and title of A. M. from his *alma mater* at Oberlin. In March, 1868, he commenced practice in South Bend, where he has ever since remained, now having a partner in his business, Dr. C. H. Myers. He was the first physician to make homeopathy a success in this community, which he has most signally accomplished, not only in popularizing the merits of his system, but also in a pecuniary way. He has already added to the beautiful city of South Bend a fine block of residences, and made himself a comfortable home. His quiet and unassuming manner, his superior mental discipline, his sympathy with the afflicted and his excellent judgment in all cases of emergency draw to him an immense patronage who will be his firm friends

for life. Although a thoroughly educated homeopathist and a firm believer in that system of administering remedies, he is very liberal in his views toward other systems, cheerfully acknowledging and thankfully employing the good he finds in any system. Dr. Partridge is a member of the Indiana Medical Institute, and frequently contributes to the medical press. His writing is characterized by that clearness of expression and condensed statement which is most desired in medical or scientific literature. Religiously the Dr. and his wife are Congregationalists. Politically, he is a strong Republican, but owing to the pressing duties of his profession, he has taken no very active part in politics or political campaigns.

On the 28th of October, 1866, on leaving Ohio for Niles, Mich., Dr. Partridge was married to Aurelia H. Chapman, of Kingsville, Ohio, a native of Madison, in that State, and a daughter of Jedediah and Sarah E. (Osborne) Chapman. She also is a graduate of Oberlin College, class of '65, and at the time of her marriage was Preceptress of Kingsville Academy; she is an educated Christian lady, an exemplary wife and mother. In the family of Dr. Partridge are 5 daughters and one son, namely: Clara, Eloise, William Harvey, Charlotte, Anna and Katie, all residing at home. The family are of the very highest standing in the community.

Dr. Partridge had two brothers, Harvey W. and George S., and five sisters, Esther, Mary, Minnie, Julia and Sarah. They are all now living excepting his brother, Capt. Harvey W. Partridge, who was killed in the bloody battle of Chickamauga while in command of Co. "I" of the 105th Ohio Regiment, and now lies buried in the "Soldiers' Cemetery," at Chattanooga, Tenn. His cousin, Col. Jasper Partridge, of Carmi, Ill., was at one time Aid to Gen. John F. Miller, formerly of South Bend. The Doctor's father, Isaac, now 72 years of age, is the only surviving member of a family of eight. There were five brothers, namely: Samuel, Jasper, Wakeman, David and William, and two sisters, Mary and Sarah.

A portrait of Dr. Partridge accompanies this sketch.

*Benj. Robert Perkins* was born in London, Eng., Dec. 25, 1832, son of Benjamin and Elizabeth (Wotham) Perkins, the former a wholesale tin and Japan-ware manufacturer during his life-time, employing some 600 hands at times; he is now dead, but his sons, James W. and Richard W., still carry on the business, under the firm name of "B. Perkins & Sons." The subject of this sketch obtained his education in what was called "the city of London school," where he finished the prescribed course; afterward he was for two years a member of the literary and scientific institution on Aldersgate street, London, E. C.; at 17 he was "articled" to Wm. Smith, gas engineer of Snow Hill, London, to learn the business; completed his articles at 21, and at the suggestion of his father, visited this country, expecting to remain only one year, but it resulted in his becoming a citizen of this Republic. On his first arrival he settled in New York city, where he was employed by Samuel

Downs as a gas-meter manufacturer, afterward by the American Meter Company of Philadelphia; was subsequently sent out as their foreman to manage their branch works in Cincinnati, where he remained three years. During this time, in 1856, he married Mary M. Westwood, daughter of John C. Westwood, then engineer of the Cincinnati Gas Company; during this year he was assistant inspector for that company. In 1857 he returned on a visit to London, which was extended to a ten-years' residence, during which, until 1861, he assisted his father in his business; he then opened an establishment on his own account, in gas engineering, fitting up a large portion of the famous Crystal Palace at Kensington, which had been used in the Great Exposition of 1862; in company with R. S. Parry, he assisted in fitting up that celebrated vessel, the "Great Eastern," with furniture, stores, etc., and sailed on the same when she made her trial trip. He was afterward engaged in the shipyard of his wife's uncle; at this place were built the largest class of iron-clad vessels, among them the "Resistance" and "Warrior."

In 1866 he returned to the United States and took a position with the Springfield (Ill.) Gas Company, which he resigned two years afterward and accepted a similar position at Peoria, Ill.; in 1870 he left the latter place and until 1875 superintended the gas works at Franklin and Columbus, Ind.; he then came to South Bend, where he has been connected with the gas works to the present time; he is now superintendent.

Mr. Perkins has now a family of 6 children.

*George Pflugler* was born in the State of Pennsylvania in 1842, the son of George and ——— (McConnell) Pflugler; educated at college; located in South Bend in 1861; he read law, and was admitted to the Indiana Bar in 1862, since which time he has been engaged in the practice of law in this city. He has formed a co-partnership with Hon. William G. George, and the firm of George & Pflugler is one of the leading law firms in South Bend, and they have a large practice. Mr. Pflugler was elected a city judge in 1869, which position he held several years. In 1877 he was appointed Postmaster of South Bend by President Hayes, which position he still holds. He was married in 1864 in Pennsylvania to Louisa Hamilton, daughter of Isaac and Charlotte Hamilton, of ——— Pennsylvania, where she was born in 1841. They have one son, William G. Mr. Pflugler belongs to the Masonic fraternity, and is a staunch Republican.

*Philias Phillion* was born in Canada in 1837, and located in South Bend in 1860. He enlisted in the U. S. army in 1861; was in the service three months; he then re-enlisted in the 48th Ind. Vol. Inf. and served one year. In 1868 he commenced in the grocery trade in this city, on a capital of \$200, and is now doing a large business. He was married in this county in 1862 to Miss Fanny Changoman, of this city, and they have 4 children now living.

*Charles Pollock*, manager of Pollock's cigar store. This institution was opened in this city by Mr. Pollock in 1877, in the Oliver House block, and in December following he was burned out. He then reopened at 64 Washington street, where the business has since been continued. At the time this store was established Mr. Pollock found he had much to contend with, the opposition in this line of trade being very great; but the citizens soon found he was a man of large experience and practical knowledge in this line of business, that his goods were always first-class, and that he carried a stock so much larger than his neighbors that he could give them a better quality of goods at lower prices than other dealers. He now carries a stock of \$5,000 and upward, and by strict attention to business and fair dealing he has built up a very large trade, perhaps double that of any other dealer in the city. His stock of fine goods is without doubt the best in Northern Indiana.

*Benjamin F. Price* was born in Pennsylvania Sept. 30, 1807, the son of Benjamin and Rebecca (Fisher) Price, natives of Virginia, who moved to Pennsylvania in 1807. The subject of this sketch served his apprenticeship at the cabinet trade with Col. W. B. Roberts, of Uniontown, and came to South Bend in 1835 and engaged in the furniture business, which he still continues. He was the first man to apply water-power to the manufacture of furniture in South Bend. He is one of the owners and directors of Price's theater, of which he is now the manager. He also owns the building on Washington street where his son now carries on the undertaker's business, and a number of houses and lots in the city. He was for several terms President of the Town Board before the city was organized, and was president and manager of the "Odd Fellows Hall Association," which position he held for over 20 years; and the present beautiful hall of that order was built under his management and direction. He was married in Uniontown, Pa., in 1832 to Miss Lucinda Welsh, and they have had 3 boys and 3 girls. Politically, Mr. Price is a Republican.

*Simon Raff, M. D.*, was born in Wittemberg, Germany, in 1804; came to this country in 1844, settling in Pennsylvania; in 1846 he settled in South Bend, where he now resides. He read medicine in the Innspruck Medical College, and graduated at that institution in 1827; he continued the practice of medicine until 1846, since which time he has conducted a drug store in this city. He was married here in 1846 to Miss Sarah Fry, of this place, and they have 2 children, Louisa and Columbus. Politically, he is a Democrat.

*Lafayette Ringle, M. D.*, is the son of Levi and Charity Ringle, who were natives of Ohio; he was born in this county in 1851; received a classical education and commenced the study of medicine when 23 years of age, graduating in 1877, and in the same year he began the practice of medicine and surgery in this city, which he has continued ever since. The Doctor has a large and lucrative practice in the community. He was married in Logansport, Ind.,

in 1879, to Emma L. Hoechen. They are members of the Presbyterian Church in this city.

*Jacob Ritter* was born in Ohio in 1806; located in Wayne county, Ind., in 1817, and in 1830 came to St Joseph county and settled on Portage Prairie, where he has continued to reside ever since. He was married in Wayne county, Ind., in 1827 to Miss Elizabeth Miller, who was born in Montgomery county, Ind., in 1809. He had by this marriage 11 children, 5 boys and 6 girls. Mr. Ritter has held a number of offices of trust and importance in the county, and is a member of the Odd Fellows order in this city.

*Alex. Riva, M. D.*, was born in Hungaria in 1847; pursued his medical studies in his native land, graduating at the Medical College of Amestroburg in 1871; came to this county in 1875, and for a number of years practiced in the large hospitals of New York and Chicago, and then located in this city, and has had remarkable success in his practice; has had many difficult cases in surgery, which have been highly spoken of by the press of this city. His office is now on the corner of Main and Washington streets. He was married in Chicago in 1880 to Miss Hattie Lemien, who was born in Illinois in 1852.

*John D. Robertson* was born in Virginia in 1791; his early life was spent at home on the farm; was taken by his parents to Kentucky in 1795, and the next year they moved to Ohio, where they cleared up and entered Government lands. Mr. Robertson had but little school advantages; his father being a poor man, he was obliged to work hard and assist in the support of the family. He was married in Ohio in 1813 to Miss Betsy Gogle, who was born in Pennsylvania in 1791; they had 4 children, 3 now living. He came to this county in 1834 and cleared up a farm and engaged wholly in agricultural pursuits; he afterward moved to South Bend and was for many years a Justice of the Peace; was afterward elected one of the Judges of the Sessions, which office he held a number of years. He came to this county without any means and with little or no education, and has acquired a large property, consisting of over 1,000 acres of choice land, a considerable portion of it being near and in the city limits; and while working during the day to make a home he did not neglect the culture of his mind, and devoted his evenings to hard study; and he is reaping the rich reward of his early industry.

*William Ruckman* was born in Pennsylvania in 1822, and is the son of William and Margaret (Colwell), Ruckman, natives also of the same State; his father is of English and his mother of Scotch descent. He came to this State in 1844, locating in this county, where he has since resided. His early life was spent on a farm, which business he continued until he was 35 years of age; dealt in real estate ten years. In 1872 he went into building and "contracting," which he still continues; he has erected most of the principal public and private buildings in South Bend, among which are the county jail, erected in 1861, and the First M. E. church in

this city. He also built all the sewers in South Bend, and graded, graveled and paved all the business streets. He was married in Pennsylvania in 1846 to Caroline Silsby, who was born in that State in 1834. They have 4 children now living, William S., Mary, Jennie and Edward. He is a member of the Presbyterian Church, and politically, he is a Republican.

*Peter E. Rupp*, the youngest son of Peter and Helena Rupp, natives of Pennsylvania, was born in the same State in 1829. His early life was spent at school until the age of 19, when he began the study of medicine in the Jefferson Medical College of Philadelphia, and graduated in 1851. He then began the practice of medicine in Leesville, Ohio, where he remained five years. He then moved to Williams county, Ohio, where he continued the practice of medicine for 14 years. He then came to South Bend, and engaged in the drug trade, and has one of the finest drug stores in the city. In 1876 he also resumed the practice of medicine. His store and office is located at 75 Washington street.

*John C. Sack, M. D.*, was born in Germany in 1822. He began the study of medicine when 28 years of age, at the Wittenberg Medical College, and graduated in 1855. He came to this country and located in South Bend, Ind., in 1855, and commenced the practice of medicine and surgery, which he still continues. He was married in this city in 1856 to Margaret Koenig, a native of Germany; they have 3 children now living: Anna M., wife of F. M. Miller, of this city; Rosa A. and Thekla E. The Doctor has always enjoyed a large and successful practice.

*John F. Sell, M. D.*, was born in Ohio, received a liberal education, and at the age of 19 began the study of medicine in Philadelphia, where he graduated in 1872. He located in South Bend in 1879, where he has since continued the practice of medicine and surgery, with fine success. He was married in Ohio in 1875 to Miss Mary J. Keith, who was born in Ohio in 1854. Their 2 children are Minnie and Sarah.

*B. F. Shively*, editor and proprietor of the South Bend *Era*, was born near Osceola, this county, in 1857, and was brought up on a farm; at the age of 16 he commenced teaching school during the winters, which he followed for several years, while he worked upon the farm during the summer months. The *Industrial Era* in South Bend having been suspended in February, 1880, the ensuing month Mr. S. occupied the situation with his present paper, a further notice of which is given elsewhere. Mr. S.'s father, Joel, was born in Stark county, O., of German ancestry, and his mother, Elizabeth, *nee* Penrod, was a native of Somerset county, Pa., of English ancestry; in 1855 they settled near Osceola, where they now reside.

*Alexander T. Stephenson* was born in North Carolina in 1813; at 17 years of age he emigrated to Henry county, Ind., where he lived ten years, teaming and farming. He then moved to Grant county, Maine, where he remained several years; he then returned



to this State and located in South Bend in 1838, and engaged in packing pork and the grocery business, which he continued some time. He was married in this city in 1839 to Miss Priscilla King, who was born in Ohio in 1823. He has as the result of this marriage 5 children now living. In 1840 he removed to Wabash county, this State, where he resided 13 years, and was engaged in mercantile pursuits. In 1856 he returned to this city and has since resided here. For a number of years he followed buying and shipping stock. In 1868 he engaged in the manufacture and sale of pumps, gas-fitting and plumbing, in connection with his sons, the firm being "A. T. Stephenson & Sons." Mr. Stephenson is an ardent supporter of the Republican party.

*Rev. Michael W. Steffey* was born in York county, Pa., April 27, 1821, and is a son of Jacob N. Steffey, also a native of Pennsylvania. He was reared on a farm and educated at Manchester College. He took a theological course in the conference of the German Evangelical Association. He entered the ministry in that denomination in 1852, and has been in active service ever since. He was Pastor of the Church at Dayton, O., Fort Wayne, Ind., and other large places. He organized the first class of that faith in South Bend, and also organized the Ft. Wayne Church. He was Presiding Elder of the following districts, for four years each: Wabash, South Bend, Ft. Wayne and Elkhart. He became Pastor of the Church at Elkhart in 1872, which charge he now has. His labors have been very successful. He was married in 1843 to Miss Anna Fisher, by whom he has had 13 children; 7 of these are living, viz.: Martin L., Sarah J., Alice, Josiah H., Gideon W., Milton M. and Ida May. Five are married, and the two youngest, Milton and Ida, remain at home.

*Sarah F. Stockwell, M. D.*, is the daughter of James and Sarah Kocher, natives of Pennsylvania, her father of French and her mother of Welsh descent. She was born in Lagrange county, Ind., Nov. 11, 1841; received a liberal education and afterward she entered the medical department of the University of Michigan, and graduated in 1876. She commenced the practice of medicine and surgery in Buchanan, Mich., where she remained a short time; she then removed to this city and commenced the practice of her profession here. Her office is at No. 61 Washington street, and she has an extensive patronage. She was married in 1857 to James Stockwell, of Lagrange county, this State. They have 2 children,—Adelbert, born Feb. 28, 1859, and Lillian S., born Sept. 6, 1861.

*Clement Studebaker*, President of the Studebaker Manufacturing Company, is a son of John and Rebecca (Mohler) Studebaker, natives of Pennsylvania; his father was born in Adams county in that State, and moved to South Bend in 1851. A further sketch will be found on pages 872-'4.

*Henry Studebaker*, the eldest son of John Studebaker, and brother of the preceding, was born in Pennsylvania in 1826. He moved with his parents to Ohio when nine years of age, where he

spent his early life, working most of the time with his father in the blacksmith shop. His schooling consisted of a few months' attendance at the district school in the winter. In 1852 he came to Indiana with his father, locating in South Bend. His father engaged in blacksmithing and wagon-making, and continued this business here for many years. The subject of this sketch is the oldest of five brothers, and was the founder of the now celebrated "Studebaker Bros. Manufacturing Company," who have the largest wagon and carriage manufactory in the world. He was connected with this institution for about seven years, when his health failed him and he was obliged to withdraw from the company. He then purchased a farm near South Bend, and has since been engaged in farming, having one of the best farms in the tp. He was married in this county in 1853 to Miss Susan, daughter of Samuel Studebaker, who was one of the first settlers on the St. Joseph river. She died June 8, 1871. They had 6 children by this marriage. In 1873 he was married to Miss Precilla Gresbaum, of Elkhart county, Ind. They have 3 children. Mr. S. is a self-made man. His father, being a poor man, could not give his children the advantages of an education, and the only legacy he left them was a thorough schooling in the blacksmith trade, and, when they started in business, gave them a set of blacksmith's tools. With this small beginning Henry Studebaker began life, and by strict attention to business, and untiring efforts, he laid the foundation for the mammoth Studebaker shops that are now the largest of the kind in the world. He has always been an ardent supporter of the Republican party, but has never taken an active part in political affairs.

*Peter E. Studebaker*, of the firm of Studebaker Bros. Mfg. Co., wagon and carriage manufacturers of South Bend, Ind., is a native of Ashland, Ohio, and was born April 1, 1836; was educated as a merchant. He came to South Bend in 1852, and clerked for a considerable time at fifteen dollars per month, boarding himself. When by dint of great economy he had saved one hundred dollars, he began merchandising as a peddler. This he continued until his marriage, in 1856, when he went to Goshen and entered into partnership as a merchant with his brother-in-law, P. A. Welch. In 1860 he left that line of business and began handling wagons in Goshen for his brothers, and also dealing in horses. Being quite successful in introducing the Studebaker wagon, and pushing its acquaintance among the farmers in that section of Indiana, overtures were made to Mr. Studebaker by his brothers, then the makers of the wagon, Clement Studebaker and J. M. Studebaker, to join them. These were accepted by him, and he became an equal partner with his brothers named in the business. This partnership was consummated in 1864, and in January, 1865, he went to St. Joseph, Mo., and opened at that point a branch, which proved a very important move for the firm, St. Joseph at that time being the great outfitting town for the mines and the far West. The foothold then obtained enabled the company to extend its trade into all the States and

Territories of the West and Southwest. Mr. Studebaker returned from St. Joseph in 1872, and has since then filled the position of treasurer of the company in the home office.

Mr. Studebaker was first married in October, 1856, to Miss Dora Handley, a native of Ohio, brought up as an adopted daughter of Dr. Chase, of Cincinnati. She was a member of the Methodist Episcopal Church. Her death occurred in 1865, in South Bend, making motherless 3 children: Wilbur F., born in 1857; Mary R., 1860, and Dora L., 1863. The two former were born in Goshen, the latter in South Bend. In 1866 Mr. Studebaker married Mrs. Alice W. Mitchell, widow of Caleb B. Mitchell, a native of White Pigeon, Mich., and a daughter of Mr. Woodbury, of the State of New York. She was a member of the Protestant Episcopal Church, and died in 1869. In 1872 the subject of this sketch married Mrs. Mary L. Guthrie, of South Bend, a native of Logansport, Ind., daughter of Judge Charles Ewing. Mrs. Studebaker is also a member of the Protestant Episcopal Church.

The Presidential campaign of 1880 was regarded by Mr. Studebaker as an important one, involving the business interests and general prosperity of the country, and he therefore took earnest hold of the cause in favor of the election of the Republican nominees. He wrote for the press and delivered public addresses. One of his speeches, delivered especially to working men, in South Bend, about the middle of September, was copied by both Western and Eastern newspapers, and was widely circulated as a campaign document, no doubt assisting materially in bringing about the general awakening of business men everywhere in the country, especially noticeable toward the last of the campaign, and which resulted in the success of the Republican ticket.

*George W. Sumption* was born in this county Feb. 20, 1832, the youngest son of George and Elizabeth (Rush) Sumption, the former a native of Lexington, Ky., and the latter of Somerset county, Pa.; has resided here all his life, and is now the oldest native resident of the county. He has therefore experienced all the phases of pioneer life elsewhere described in this volume. He was brought up in farm life, but ever since he was 22 years of age he has been a merchant and salesman. He followed merchandising in South Bend for several years; was salesman for a wholesale house in New York for a time, and for the last 16 years he has been salesman for the Studebakers. Politically, he is a Republican, and has been City Assessor, Deputy Sheriff, etc. He has voted at every election since he became of age. June 23, 1853, he married Sarah Jane Throckmorton, a native of Ohio. She died Sept. 26, 1863, in this county, leaving 3 children: Albert, born April 13, 1854; Martha, Jan. 23, 1856; and Bion, Feb. 1, 1858, all living, the two sons married and residing in South Bend. Jan. 24, 1865, Mr. S. married Miss Lizzie, daughter of Miranda and Jane Peck, a native of Ohio, and the children by this marriage are now 2 in number, Orrie and Harry.

*Alexander N. Thomas* was born in Pennsylvania in 1839 and

came to this county in 1854. He is the son of Fred and Ann Thomas, natives of Pennsylvania. His early life was spent on the farm at home, attending school during the winter months. At the time of the breaking out of the war of the Rebellion, he was attending the Northern Indiana College, then located in this city. In 1862 he enlisted in the 73d Ind. Vol. Inf., and was taken prisoner while on a raid and confined in Libby prison one year; was taken from there to Macon, Georgia, and then to Columbus, where he succeeded in making his escape and joined Sherman's forces in the rear of Savannah. After his return from the army he kept a grocery for a short time. In the fall of 1867 he was elected County Recorder, which position he held for two terms of four years each. He was Councilman for two years, and in 1876 was elected Mayor of South Bend, which office he held for two years. He was admitted to the Indiana Bar in 1876, and has since been engaged in the practice of law and general insurance business. Mr. Thomas has taken a deep interest in the Sunday-schools of South Bend, and has been identified with every movement in their behalf. He is one of the Elders of the Disciple Church in this city, and Superintendent of the Sunday-school connected with that denomination.

*Elliott Tutt* was born April 7, 1812, in Culpepper county, Va., son of Charles M. and Joanah (Royston) Tutt, the former a native of Spottsylvania county, Va., born June 15, 1779, and died May 4, 1825; the latter was born in Caroline county, Va., Aug. 17, 1778, and died in 1814. Mr. Elliott Tutt came to South Bend in October, 1832, with a sister (Mrs. Lewis) and several brothers, mentioned on former pages. Having been a resident here ever since his immigration here, he must be counted among the oldest resident pioneers. In his younger days he learned the tanner's trade, which, as well as farming, he prosecuted for a number of years, his farm being just east of the river. He has held the office of Township Trustee for 20 years, that of School Trustee several years, and has been a member of the City Council. March 4, 1852, he was married by Rev. John L. Smith to Mrs. Sarah M. Monson, widow of Albert Monson and daughter of Samuel C. Sample, so well known in the history of this county, and their children are: Mary Howard, who died Feb. 22, 1854; Mary Katharine; Elizabeth Elliott, who died Sept. 15, 1860; Lucy Howard and Lillian Lewis. The second of these married Charles H. Fowler, and had 2 children, now deceased. Mr. Fowler also died, and she subsequently married Wm. H. Lewis, of Indianapolis. Mr. Monson's children were Anna Rose, Walter Sample and Ella Albert; the latter died at the age of 8 years, and the two former are married. Mrs. Tutt was born in Connersville, this State, her parents having moved there from Maryland in May, 1824. She is a member of the M. E. Church. Politically, Mr. Tutt is a Republican, and is a leading citizen, comfortably situated in the southern suburbs of the city of South Bend.

*F. R. Tutt*, brother of the above, is also one of the early settlers of South Bend. He was born in Virginia, July 25, 1810. He remained at home and worked on the farm up to the time of his

father's death, which occurred when he was 14 years of age. He was then apprenticed by his guardian to a saddler, where he worked seven years. Having a dislike for the institution of slavery, at the age of 21 he determined to remove to a free State, and went to Columbus, Ohio, where he opened a shop and worked at his trade for a short time. He then sold out, purchased a pony and started West on horseback, passing through Indianapolis, Logansport and Lafayette, then small villages, and reached the city of South Bend in the spring of 1832, where he located. In the fall of the same year, he returned to Ohio for his family. South Bend, at this time, was in its infancy, and Mr. Tutt took an active part in the improvement and building up of the young town. He opened, and operated for two years, the first harness and saddle store in the place. In 1834 he was elected the first Assessor of the tp., which office he held one term. He was then elected Justice of the Peace for two terms of seven years each, and one term of four years. While acting as Justice he began the study of law, and resigning his office during the third term, he engaged in the active practice of law. He was admitted to the Bar in 1850, and has been engaged in active practice since. Mr. Tutt is a self-made man; he began life without money, and with but little education, and by persistent efforts has acquired a large property and is a man of culture and refinement. He married Miss Martha, daughter of Obadiah and Grace (Cox) Hackney, and they have 3 children: Alice B., wife of Dr. Windle, of Des Moines, Ia.; Charles H. and Grace. He and wife are members of the Methodist Episcopal Church. He is also a strong adherent of the Republican party.

*Thomas R. Tutt*, one of the pioneers of this county, was born in Virginia in 1814. He came to Indiana in 1834, locating in this county. He was married in this county in 1837 to Miss Mary Hardy, who was born in Virginia in 1820, and they have 9 children. He is a member of the First M. E. Church in this city, and has a fine farm near the city limits.

*Israel Underwood, M. D.*, was born in Wayne county, Ind., in 1819. He is the son of John and Mary Underwood, natives of Pennsylvania. He came to this county in 1868, and located in South Bend in 1873. He began the study of medicine when 30 years of age, graduated at the Eclectic Medical College of Cincinnati in 1853, and commenced the practice of medicine and surgery in La Porte county, this State, in 1854. The Doctor has a large practice in this city, and is one of the leading physicians of the place. He was married in La Porte county, Ind., in 1854, to Catherine, daughter of William and Patience Frederickson. They have one daughter, Clara L., wife of Frank P. Sturges, of Colorado. Mrs. Underwood is a graduate of a medical college in Philadelphia, and is also engaged in the practice of medicine. The Doctor and wife are members of the Baptist Church, and he is also a Freemason.

*Martin L. Wenger* was born in Lebanon, Pa., in 1820, and is the son of Martin and Elizabeth Wenger, natives of that State. His early life was spent on a farm, receiving such education as the common schools of that day afforded. He located in this county in 1841, and for four years was engaged in threshing grain, running eight machines. He then bought a piece of timbered land and cleared up a farm of 160 acres. He lived on this farm for three years and then moved to the farm he now occupies, on sec. 13, Portage tp. He began his married life in a one-story frame house 16x18, where the first three years were spent. His present farm consists of 160 acres, upon which he has built a fine residence, at a cost of about \$8,000. He was married Feb. 18, 1845, to Miss Christina, daughter of Samuel Studebaker. She was born in Montgomery county, Ohio, in 1824. She came to this State with her parents in 1831. Her father entered and settled on the farm where she now lives. The first saw-mill in the county was erected by her father on what was then known as the "Studebaker creek." They have two children living: Mary Etta and Charles M. They are members of the German Baptist Church.

*Alfred Wheeler*, third son of Thomas and Eunice (Williams) Wheeler, was born in the town of Ridgeway, Orleans county, N. Y., Oct. 10, 1874. He came with his father and family to Quincy, Mich., in 1835, and in 1836 they moved to Bristol, Ind. In 1840 he left home, came to South Bend and entered the *Free Press* printing office as an apprentice. In the fall of 1843 he left on a "tramp," and from that time until the fall of 1857 resided in various places in the Northern and Southern States, engaged in various pursuits, such as fancy, chance or necessity dictated. In the fall of 1851 he returned to South Bend, and from that time until the fall of 1865 he was connected with the *St. Joseph Valley Register*, first as pressman and compositor, then as foreman, and afterward as associate editor and business partner with Hon. Schuyler Colfax, and then as editor and business partner with Alfred Hall. From 1867 to 1875 he held the office of County Auditor, elected on the Republican ticket; first term by 820 majority, second term by 1,010 majority; at each election polling many more votes than his party strength. In 1876 he became a stock-holder in the South Bend Tribune Printing Company, and for a time acted as treasurer and bookkeeper, but failing health soon compelled his retirement from active service. He was married at Bloomington, Ind., April 24, 1849, to Elizabeth Ruth Garrison, by whom he has had 8 children; 7 of these are now living: 1, Charles Robert, married and living in Oregon; 2, Agnes Irene; 3, Frederick, married and living in Kansas; 4, Ada Inez, deceased; 5, Richard Alfred; 6, Eunice Evelyn; 7, Almon; 8, Brent Marshall. Mr. Wheeler is one of the enterprising, leading men of South Bend, and one of the prominent leaders of the Republican party in St. Joseph county.

*Orlando S. Witherell* was born in Washington county, N. Y., April, 1824; in 1836 he went with his parents to Auburn, N. Y.,

where he resided until 1842; he then went to Boston, where he resided three years, when he returned to Auburn and remained until 1850; then he removed to Owego, Tioga Co., and in 1855 came to South Bend, where he has since resided. He followed mercantile business for a time, and was admitted to the Indiana Bar in 1855, and in 1861 was appointed U. S. Paymaster, which position he held until November, 1865, when he was mustered out of the service. In 1867 he resumed the practice of law, in which business he has since been engaged. He held the office of Deputy Prosecuting Attorney from 1868 to 1872, and acted as City Attorney from 1868 to 1870. Mr. Witherell has always taken an active part in political affairs, and has been a life-long Republican. He was married in the State of New York Oct. 30, 1847, to Mary D. Green, daughter of John H. Green, Esq.; she was born in New York in 1828. They have one daughter, Emma, wife of Dr. G. F. Nevins, of this city.





## UNION TOWNSHIP.

This township was organized in 1835, and it now contains about 42 sections. Many of the old settlers, in passing through it on their way to some of the other townships, thought it an almost worthless tract of land on account of the marshes. During the wet season of the year it seemed as if the greater part of the country was a vast pond, with here and there a dry piece of land. It was not settled as early as some of the other townships in the county, on this account. When the Michigan road was put through the township, men began to settle along that; and as the western part is somewhat more rolling than the rest, they soon began to build their log cabins through there. As the country became cleared, and openings were made, the marsh land began to disappear, and in its place we find some of the finest farms that the county can now boast of. At present through the south central part there is a good deal of low and useless land. In every part of the township we find small swamps and marshes; but they are fast disappearing, and every year more of the low land is coming under cultivation.

Just south of Lakeville are several small lakes, the largest of which are called Pleasant and Riddle's lakes. The ground around them is quite miry and mucky. One of them is said to be quite deep. Along the east part of the township a ridge runs across it. It is mostly a black, sandy soil. The Turkey creek road follows this ridge, through the township and along it are some very fine farms. On sections 6 and 8 have been found a great many Indian relics. Among other curiosities discovered by the removal of the surface of the earth are round holes dug in the ground and nicely walled up with stones in the shape of a common kettle. Some of them have been found to be four or five feet in depth. For what purpose they had been made the people of the neighborhood are unable to surmise. A great many arrowheads, tomahawks and other things of like nature have been found here and in other parts of the township, thus bringing to our minds that but a short time ago another race of people inhabited this region, perhaps no less industrious in their way than the people who have just come and taken possession of the country.

The first settlement in the township was in the spring of 1833, when Elijah Lineback moved his family here. He erected a cabin on section 35. The same year came John Henderson with his family and settled on section 25. John, Jacob and Mark Rector came on section 1 some time in 1833. Hubbard Henderson came in 1834 and settled on section 35. In the fall of 1834 John Moon



came but staid only a short time. He returned in the spring of 1835, accompanied by his brother James. John took up land on section 28, James on section 34. Eli Moon came some years later and entered land in section 27. Although James Moon came in 1835 he did not make it his permanent home till in 1841, when he removed with his family to the farm on which he now resides. James Annis came about 1836, on section 9, and Michael Hupp, Abijah Mills, William H. Robertson, Henry Hardy, Esan Lamb and Daniel Glenn settled here the same year. Amos Heston, Henry and John Riddle came in 1837. James Watson, John Shively, William Hughes, Joseph Morris, W. Nickelson, David Whiting, John Long, Mr. Byers and Mr. Gibson are among the old settlers.

Thus we see that these sturdy pioneers have in less than 50 years turned what then appeared to be an almost worthless country to a blooming garden, a country which is now prepared to support a dense population, in comparison with what it was then, in ease and prosperity.

The greater part of the township was heavily timbered with walnut, ash, oak, hickory, white-wood and various other timber peculiar to this climate. Lumbering and milling, as a natural consequence, became quite a good business as the railroads opened up a market for their lumber.

The township contains but one village,—Lakeville. It is a pleasant little village, located about the center of the township, and contains several hundred inhabitants. The people are kind, intelligent and social. Although they have no railroad, a large business is carried on by the merchants. The village contains two good country stores, a drug and hardware store, a hotel, a couple of shoe-shops and three or four blacksmith shops, a saw-mill and grist-mill,—all doing well. It has also two churches, with a good school, while three M. D's attend to the afflicted in the town and vicinity.

The first election was held in Earl's tavern, in April of 1836. All the voters in the township were present, and 30 votes were polled. John Henderson and Jacob Rector were elected for Justices of the Peace, and one supervisor was elected. Previous to this they had gone to South Bend to vote.

#### THE SCHOOLS.

The schools of this township are in an excellent condition. None but good teachers are hired, and to them fair wages are paid during the winter terms. Most of the people take a great pride in education, and consequently a great many of the young people have been and are now being educated in our colleges and normal schools. The school buildings are mostly in good condition.

The first school-house in the township was a log structure built in 1836, on the corner of James Moon's farm. It was a good house at that day, but would hardly fill the bill for one of our modern

buildings. The first school was taught in the winter of 1836-'7, by James Roberson, of South Bend. This was a subscription school, and was attended by about 20 scholars. The second teacher was John Hardy.

#### CHURCHES.

The first church was built in 1843, by the Methodists, under the pastorship of Rev. Lawson Munson. It was built of hewed logs, on section 34, one mile north of Lakeville. This served for a place of worship until the present church was erected in Lakeville. The old house is still standing, and is occupied by a family for a dwelling house. The M. E. church building in Lakeville was commenced in 1857 and finished in 1858. The trustees were John and James Moon, Hubbard Henderson, Martin Page and William Biglow. Mr. Harrison was the first traveling minister sent to this circuit. This was in 1839, and about the time that the society was organized. They then held their meetings in private houses, and among their members were Hubbard Henderson and wife, Milford Leonard and wife, George Hardy and wife, John D. Roberson and wife, John Price and his sister. Their first class-leader was George Hardy. They have now about 50 members in their society. As this is in the same circuit as Sumption's Prairie, for a list of their ministers see sketch of that Church in the history of Greentownship.

About the same time that the Methodists started here, United Brethren ministers came in and began their labors. They soon formed a society about two miles north of Lakeville. Here they continued to hold their meetings for a number of years, when they removed to Olive Branch and formed the society which is known by that name. They worshiped in the school-house till a few years ago. The new church at Olive Branch was commenced in April of 1878 and finished in a short time. The trustees were: Joseph Shuppert, John H. Bennett, H. A. Manuel, W. Lower, Rev. N. F. Surface. John Todd was the Pastor at that time. The church is 30 by 40, and is a very neat, pretty building. Its cost was about \$1,000. The society numbers now about 50 members, is out of debt and flourishing.

Another society was also organized a few years ago, on the Turkey creek road, at Annis' school-house. It, too, is prospering well.

*The Advent Church.*—Previous to 1862 this sect had held a few meetings in the school-house at Olive Branch. In August of that year they erected a tent and held meetings for two weeks, the ministers being J. W. Himes, D. R. Mansfield and Philip Holler. At the close of the meetings the following persons were baptized: Elijah Aultman and wife, Isaac Wright and wife, and Hattie Wright. These, with the following persons, who were members at that time, joined themselves together into a society at the close of the meetings: Edward Cordray and wife, Albert Cordray and wife,

B. F. Cordray and wife. Edward Cordray was the Elder. He and Mr. Ferris have been the Elders in the society most of the time since. Two years later another tent meeting was held, with good success. They now number about 60 members, and have a fine church building well finished, in which to worship. It was commenced about March 1, 1880, with about \$700 raised by subscription. Its size is 32 by 46, and cost \$1,162. On the day on which it was dedicated, July 18, 1880, they raised money enough to pay all debts and \$100 over.

The Christian Church has a society in Lakeville, Mr. Snow being their present Pastor. They have a good building in the village and include in their membership many of the best citizens.

The citizens of the northeastern part of the township, regardless of sect, erected a union church house in 1875. It is a good frame building, and speaks much for the enterprise of the people.

In Lakeville there is a Masonic lodge. It was started in 1867 with the following charter members: Robert Moor, W. Clenny, John Cunningham, Mahlon Heston, Michael Hupp, Isaac C. Price, Alexander Reynolds, Henry Van Lien, M. Mahon, W. Roberson. They now have a good society of about 52 members.

#### PERSONAL SKETCHES.

*Samuel Annis* was born in June, 1851, in this tp. His father, Jehiel Annis, was among the old settlers of this county. He was married in the fall of 1875, to Harriet Lock, daughter of William Lock, of Portage Prairie, and they have one child, Irene. Mr. Annis is engaged in farming and lumbering sec 5; P.O., South Bend.

*John H. Bennett*, son of Stephen and Catharine (Hoff) Bennett, was born in West Virginia Feb. 12, 1816. He left Virginia in May, 1833, going to Morrow county, Ohio; here, in 1835, he married Elizabeth Flickey, and they had 10 children. Mrs. Bennett died in 1856, and he was married a second time, to Margaret Ann (Jones) Hardy, July 5, 1859; she was born in Shelby county, Ind., Jan. 6, 1824. Her parents were Thomas and Polly (Burns) Jones, and were among the first to settle in Union tp. She had been married in 1845 to Joseph Hardy and by him had 6 children, 4 living, James Delilah, Emeline and Benjamin. Mr. and Mrs. Bennett have had 9 children, 7 of whom are living: Winfield, Charlottie, Ida, Ada, Rosa, Sherman and Naomi. Mr. Bennett had a son in the 96th O. V. in Co. C.; Mrs. B. also had a son in the Rebellion 3 years, James Hardy. Mr. B. is a member of the U. B. Church at Olive Branch. Mr. Bennett came a poor boy to Ohio; he soon entered 80 acres of land in Morrow county. He got money to pay for it by splitting rails and clearing. After a few years he sold it for \$1,800, and coming to this county, bought his present farm of 103 acres, the present value of which is \$5,000.

*Ruth Brock* was born in North Carolina, June 7, 1802. When she was about three months old, her parents removed to Kentucky, and about the year 1806 they came to Montgomery county, O.; in

1809 they went to Xenia, in Greene county, O., and after living there for about eight years they went to Ross county, O., near the city of Chillicothe. Her parents were William and Merah (Anthony) Frazier; the former died in Germantown, Ohio, in 1853, and the latter died in 1828, and is buried at Richmond, Ind. Mrs. Brock was married in Ross county, O., to Nathan Branson, of Highland county, in 1821. The children were: William, Mary, Jane and Nathan, all dead. Nathan married Elizabeth Ranful, of Randolph county, Ind., and they had 1 child, Jane Branson, who married George Cook of this tp. in 1871; they have 2 children: Carrie Bell, born May 6, 1872, and Elias W., born Jan. 26, 1874. Mrs. Brock left Ohio in 1826, going to Wayne county, Ind., where her husband died Sept. 19, 1829. She then returned to Ohio and lived with her father. Some years afterward she returned to Wayne county, where her son Nathan died Dec. 6, 1854. She was married a second time, in Wayne county, Ind., Sept. 25, 1860, to Andrew Brock; they removed to Dewitt county, Ill., where he died March 5, 1865; a few years later she removed to her farm in Liberty and Union tp. of this county, where she still resides. Mr. Brock was a native of North Carolina; they removed to Ohio in 1804, from thence to Illinois, in 1829, where he entered the land on which he was living at the time of his death. He was well acquainted with Mr. Lincoln when he was a young man. The Brock family are among the wealthy and influential men of Illinois.

*William Clenny* was born Feb. 8, 1824, in Randolph county, Ind.; his maternal ancestors were of English descent, and came to America previous to the achievement of our national independence; his paternal grandfather moved from Pennsylvania to South Carolina previous to the war, and about 1830 emigrated to Indiana, where he died. Both of his grandfathers were in the war. In 1801 his father emigrated to Warren county, Ohio, and thence to Wayne county, Ind., in 1807 or 1808; he was a native of North Carolina; he was married in Preble county, Ohio, April 12, 1813, to Mary Milner, who was born in Virginia, and their children were Martha and Elizabeth, twins, Catharine, Mary, Jane, William, Michael, Sarah A., John and Rebecca; all married and had families except Rebecca. He was in the war of 1812, and died Feb. 22, 1872. Mr. C.'s mother died in 1854; they were members of the Baptist Church. Mr. C. was married in 1849 to Sarah Garrett, daughter of Michael and Mary Garrett, of Randolph county, Ind., and their children were Mary E. and Martha, both dead. Mrs. C. died in December, 1858. In 1859 he married Mrs. Elizabeth (Brumfield) Branson, daughter of Jesse and Sarah Brumfield, and their children are Melissa, born in 1861, an infant, and William; the last two are dead. Mrs. Clenny had one child by Mr. Branson, named Sarah J., who married George Cook, son of Rev. E. Cook, and has Carrie Belle and Elias W.; she died a few years ago. Mr. Clenny left Randolph county, Ind., in the spring of 1853, coming to this county and buying his farm south of Lakeville, which was then in the woods. He received his

education in the public schools; aided his father on his farm until he attained his majority; then worked at the carpenter's trade for the next eight years. For several winters after he commenced his trade, he attended school, boarding with some of the neighboring farmers and doing chores night and morning for his board. He moved to the village of Lakeville in 1873, and has long been one of the faithful workers in the M. E. Church and Sunday-schools at that place; he is also a Mason. By good, frugal and industrious habits, Mr. Clenny has raised himself from a poor boy to one of the influential citizens that reside in St. Joseph county.

*Edward Cordray*, son of Nathan and Mary A. Cordray of this county, was born in Ohio July 7, 1830. May 18, 1854, he married Elizabeth Rinehart, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth Rinehart, of Coshocton county, Ohio, whose native State is Pennsylvania. Their children are Almira Jane, born Jan. 25, 1855; Mary Ellen, March 15, 1857; Althea C., Dec. 18, 1858; Alice M., March 31, 1862; Charley W., March 23, 1872. Almira married George Boyler; Althea married William Skyles, Liberty tp.; they are living with Mr. Cordray. Mr. C. owns 40 acres of good land in this tp.; he is a carpenter and teacher. P. O., Lakeville.

*Nathan Cordray* was born on the north branch of the Potomac river, Alleghany Co., Md., Feb. 10, 1800. He came with his father to Ohio in 1810, and settled in Coshocton county. His parents are Isaac and Mary (Henderson) Cordray; he was married Dec. 9, 1824, to Miss Mary Ann Officer, daughter of David Officer, of Holmes county, Ohio; their children are Elizabeth, deceased; Harry, Edward, Benjamin, Liddie Ann, Albert and Mary J., deceased. Mr. C. aided his father on his farm until he had attained his majority, when he apprenticed himself to David Carroll for 18 months to learn the tinner's trade. At the expiration of that time he again apprenticed himself for three years to Jacob Bollzley to learn the carpenter's trade. He received his education in the subscription schools in Ohio, as did all of his children except Albert. He was one of the men in Ohio that got up a petition to have the German language taught in the public schools of that State, which was sent to Gov. Shannon and was granted; the law is still in effect in that State. His family are all well educated and are among the foremost citizens of the county. The boys are all carpenters except Benjamin. During the late war Edward was drafted, but he being unwell, his father feared that he could not long endure the fatigue of a soldier's life; so he went to South Bend and was examined by the officers there relative to taking his son's place in the army, but his wish was not granted, he being too old for the service; he then accompanied his son to Indianapolis; he staid over night in camp, and the next day, by paying \$200, secured his son's discharge. He came to Union tp. from Ohio in 1861. He is a Democrat; gave his first vote for Johnson. Residence, sec. 21; P. O., Lakeville.

*Daniel J. Fisher* was born in Somerset county, Pa., Jan. 19, 1824. He left Pennsylvania in 1830, going to Tuscarawas county,

Ohio; settled on his farm in Union tp. in 1855; his parents are Jonathan and Esther Fisher. In 1849 he was married in Holmes county, O., to Harriett McCullo; they had 4 children, 3 living. Mrs. F. died in September, 1854, and April 19, 1855, he married Phebe E. Pickral, of Holmes county, O. The second wife died in 1856 leaving no children. July 25, 1856, he was again married to Elizabeth Snyder, of Marshall county, Ind., by whom he had 8 children; she died, and he was married Nov. 30, 1875, to Agnes Rempsburger, of South Bend. Until he came to this county Mr. Fisher had been engaged in a woolen factory; but since coming here he has been carrying on a broom factory and farming; has a good farm of 235 acres in Union tp. P. O., Lakeville.

*Valentine Fisher* was born in Somerset county, Pa., Jan. 22, 1822; he came with his parents, Peter and Mary (Johnson) Fisher, to Tuscarawas county, Ohio, in 1824; in the fall of 1848 they removed to this tp. His parents were natives of Virginia, and were members of the Lutheran Church; they died in this county a few years since. Mr. Fisher was married in Ohio in August, 1847, to Mary Penrod, daughter of John and Mary Penrod, of Tuscarawas county, Ohio, but formerly of Pennsylvania; she was born in August, 1832; they have had 12 children, 7 of whom are yet living: Alfred, Oliver, Schuyler, Henry, Winfield, Eliza E. and Mary A. Mr. Fisher is a blacksmith, but since coming to the county, has been engaged in farming; when he came here he had but \$3 in money, and but one acquaintance in the county; he now owns a fine farm of about 200 acres, well improved, on sec. 24. P. O., Lakeville.

*Emanuel Frick*, son of Abraham and Sarah Frick, of this county, was born in Stark county, Ohio, June, 1847. He came to this county when a young man; was married in 1871 to Mary Kreisher, daughter of William and Elizabeth Kreisher, of Centre tp.; she was born in January, 1838, and they have 4 children: Allie, Willie, Emma and Clara. Mr. Frick was educated in the public schools of this county, is a farmer on sec. 12 and has been living in this tp. for about four years. P. O., Lakeville.

*Allen Hardy* was born in Drake county, Ohio, October, 1826; came to Indiana with his parents when a small boy; they removed to Lakeville and settled on the Jackson farm in 1835. Mr. Hardy was married Feb. 20, 1847, to Mary J. Meredith, daughter of Jonathan Meredith; they have two children, Lusina, born in 1850, and Ezra W., born in 1851. Lusina married J. Boyler, and lives in Kansas. Mrs. Hardy died, and in the spring of 1856 he married Nancy Selby (Flucky), who had one child, Harriet J. Selby, born 1855. Mr. and Mrs. Hardy have 4 children: Abigail, born 1857; Victoria, born Feb. 8, 1859; Mary C., born Aug. 8, 1863; Amara-zetta, born Sept. 16, 1868. Mrs. Hardy was born in November, 1824. Mr. Hardy has been living on his farm on sec. 22 for 35 years; they are both worthy members of the U. B. Church at Olive Branch. P. O., Lakeville.

*Cyrus Hardy* is the son of Henry and Elizabeth (Eake) Hardy, who were among the first to settle in St. Joseph county; his father was a native of Frederickton, Md., and died in Lakeville, in 1851, aged 74 years; his mother was born in Northumberland county, Pa., and died in this tp., March 13, 1865, aged 81 years. Mr. Hardy was born in Drake county, Ohio, August, 1821; came with his parents to Indiana about 1831, and to Lakeville in 1835. He was married April 6, 1849, to Amanda Fisher, daughter of Samuel and Mary Fisher; they have 2 children: Mary E., born in 1852, and Albina J., born in 1858. They are members of the M. E. Church at Maple Grove; he has been a member of the church for 40 years; owns 60 acres of land in sec. 22. P. O., Lakeville.

*Mahlon Heston*, son of Amos and Nancy A. (Kurk) Heston, was born in Henry county, Ind., Sept. 5, 1826; his parents were natives of Pennsylvania; they moved to Berrien county, Mich., about 1838 or 1839, and from there to this tp., coming to his present farm about 1841, where he has been residing since, with the exception of a few years spent in South Bend. Mr. Heston was married Dec. 10, 1850, to Nancy Eastburn, daughter of John and Catharine Eastburn, at that time residents of Johnson county, Ind. He was married a second time to Harriet Barkley, daughter of Allen and Nancy Ross, who were natives of Pennsylvania. She was born in Westmoreland county, Pa., March 19, 1832. By her marriage with Mr. Barkley, she had 4 children: James W., born April 27, 1853; Franklin, born Nov. 22, 1854; Alice E., born March 21, 1858; Milton C., born May 29, 1860; James and Franklin were born in Hamilton county, O.; Alice and Milton in Marshal county, Ind. Mr. Heston has a fine farm of 100 acres in sec. 10; he is a member of the Christian Church at Lakeville, also of the Masonic Lodge at the same place. P. O., Lakeville.

*Andrew Huggart*, son of Moses and Mary Huggart, was born in Rockbridge county, Va., Jan. 16, 1816. He left Virginia in 1836, going first to Dayton, Ohio, and in a few years to Piqua, in Marion county, O.; he came to this county in 1850. He was married July 3, 1839, to Jane Clark, daughter of Cager and Mary Clark, who was born in Amherst county, Va., in 1810; they have had 5 children: Wesley, born Aug. 23, 1840; Mary A., deceased, born March 30, 1842; James M., born Aug. 18, 1843; Sarah M., born June 12, 1850; Samuel M., born June 23, 1852. By trade, Mr. Huggart is a shoemaker, but has been engaged in farming since coming to this county. He joined the Baptist Church at Lancaster, Ohio, and is now a member at Sumption's Prairie. He has a well-improved farm of 80 acres on sec. 29. Their children are all married; James is living in South Bend; Wesley and Samuel are living on their farms in this tp. Mrs. H.'s paternal grandfather was a fifer in the war of the Revolution. P. O., South Bend.

*Joseph T. Jackson* was born in Knox county, Ohio, January, 1831. His parents, John and Elizabeth (Eager) Jackson, were natives of Columbia county, Pa., and were of Irish and Scotch



descent; they left Pennsylvania in October, 1828, going to Ohio, and from there to this county in the spring of 1854. His father settled on the place on which Mr. Jackson is now living, in secs. 13 and 18, of this tp.; he died here in the year of 1865, aged 59 years; his mother died on Dec. 17, 1879, at the advanced age of 79 years. In 1862 Mr. Jackson married Mary Hupp, daughter of Michael and Caroline Hupp, of this tp.; they had 4 children: Edward, Carrie B., Grace and Maud.

Mrs. J. died Nov. 18, 1877. and in June, 1879 he was married to Louisa Young, daughter of Philo and Susan Young, formerly of Marshall county, Ind., but living in Kansas. His son, Edward, is attending school at Valparaiso, Ind. Mr. Jackson is one of the successful farmers of this tp.; has 315 acres of good farming land. P. O., Lakeville.

*A. H. Jester* was born in North Carolina April 8, 1824; his parents, James and Jane (Williams) Jester, were natives of the same place; he came from there to Wayne county, Ind., in 1826. Dec. 23, 1849, he married Phoebe Reynolds; they have 5 children: Calvin, born Nov. 18, 1850, married Sarah Snow, and is now living in South Bend; Mary E., born Sept. 7, 1852, married Henry Longaker, and is living in Marshall county; Jane A., born Dec. 2, 1854; Milton, born Aug. 6, 1856; Lilian, born Feb. 4, 1870. Mr. J., when a young man, learned the hatter's trade and followed it for 10 or 12 years; since then has been farming; has 85 acres in sec. 17.

Aaron Reynolds, Mrs. Jester's father, was born in North Carolina April 6, 1798; he left there in 1836, going first to Parke county, then to Wayne county, Ind., and to this county in 1850, when he bought the farm Mr. Jester now owns. In 1852 he removed his family to this place. He was married when about 20 years of age to Mary Pickett; they had 3 children: Ruth, Hannah and Malinda; Mrs. R. died in April, 1826; March 27, 1829, he married Elizabeth Harway, daughter of Nathan and Agnes Harway. He came from Pennsylvania when he was yet a boy, and bought the land in North Carolina on which he lived and died. Mrs. R. was born July 3, 1799. Their children are Phoebe, John M. and Mary. Mr. R. is a miller by trade; he is yet a hale and hearty old man, and lives with his daughter, Mrs. Jester. The family belong to the society of Friends.

*John A. Lamb* was born Nov. 16, 1843, in this tp.; his parents, John A. and Lovina (Hungerford) Lamb, were among the first to settle in this county, coming here when Indians and wolves still ruled the country. He was married Nov. 29, 1868, to Sarah E. Clay, daughter of A. J. and Nancy Clay, of this tp.; she was born Oct. 20, 1848; they have had 2 children: William, deceased, and George A., born Jan. 25, 1874. Mr. Lamb enlisted in 1861, in Co. K, 29th Reg. Ind. Vol.; he was wounded at the battle of Stone River, got his discharge and came home; after remaining at home for about a year he again enlisted with the nine-month men; he took part in the Battle of Shiloh. Since the close of the war Mr. Lamb



has been engaged in farming; he owns the farm on which he was born, in sec. 19. P. O., South Bend.

*Frederic Losch*, son of Solomon and Gustianna (Rupert) Losch, of the Province of Saxony in Prussia; was born March 7, 1827; he left Saxony in May, 1862, going to Racine, Wis.; in 1869 he came from that place here. He was married in 1852 in Prussia, to Wilhelmina Rammelt, daughter of Samnel and Dora Rammelt, who was born June 4, 1824; their children are Charley, born Jan. 26, 1854; Osa, Feb. 28, 1857; Henry, Sept. 1, 1861. Charley married Hattie Skyles, of Liberty tp. Mr. Losch was educated in the old country, and when a young man learned the cabinet-maker's trade, which he followed until he came to Wisconsin, where he worked in a sash and blind factory. On coming to this tp. he engaged in farming and carpentering. During the late war he served in Co. H, 32d Reg. of Wis. Vol. He owns 86 acres in sec. 20. P. O., South Bend.

*Jonathan Lineback* was born Jan. 11, 1830, son of Elijah Lineback, who was born in Madison county, Ind., in 1803, of German origin, and came to this country at an early day, settling in one of the Atlantic States. They soon scattered abroad, and some of them went to Kentucky. Mr. Lineback's father emigrated from Kentucky to Indiana while it was yet a Territory; he lived in Hancock county for fifteen or twenty years, and then moved to Iowa, where he died some years after. Mr. Elijah Lineback moved from Hancock county to Elkhart county, Ind., where he stopped for a short time and then moved to South Bend. He and his wife and child came on horseback through the wilderness; and his wife, now the widow Rector, says she was frequently thrown from her horse while on the journey, but never hurt the baby. When they reached South Bend they found but three log cabins. Mr. L. went to work and erected his cabin, and engaged on the Michigan road as a laborer at \$5 per month. He left South Bend some time after, and took up a quarter section of Michigan-road land about half a mile north of Lakeville, in Union tp., and for the first night he put up his bed under a sugar-maple tree, "And the next day," says Mrs. Rector, "I had to get dinner for seven of the Michigan-road hands." They erected a two-faced camp, and were soon in comfortable quarters. This was in the spring of 1833. They were the first family in the tp., and Mrs. Rector, formerly the wife of Mr. Lineback, is the oldest settler now living in the tp.

Mr. Lineback married Elizabeth Little, who was born in January, 1809, and was a native of Wayne county, Ind. Their family is as follows: Jacob, who died when a year old; Jonathan, the subject of this sketch; Rose Ann, who died in infancy; George R., born Nov. 9, 1833, and married Amanda J. Hibey, of Marshall county, Ind.; Mary, born Feb. 10, 1836, and married John Boyes, a native of New York; he was raised in Ohio and came to Indiana in 1850; Nancy J., born Nov. 8, 1838, and died when young. Mr. Lineback died July 4, 1839, a worthy member of the U. B. Church, and

highly respected by the community and all who knew him. His widow married Mark Rector, an old settler in St. Joseph county, and by him has had Irene, Isam and Harriet. Mr. Rector died in March, 1853. He was one of the first settlers and earned his homestead farm by working on the Michigan road at \$5 per month. The subject of this sketch married Anna J. Moon, daughter of James Moon, of this tp. They have 10 children, 8 of whom are living: Irene, Mary J., James, Clara A., Franklin, Laura, Susan and Florence. Irene married Douglas L. Rush, son of Squire L. Rush, formerly of this township. They have one child. Mr. L. is engaged in farming. He was three years old when his father moved to this section, and well remembers the Indians and wild beasts that infested the country at that time. When he was 15 years of age he worked in Michigan at \$5 per month until he had saved enough to buy 40 acres of land in sec. 36 of this tp., now owned by D. J. Fisher. He went to the Golden State in 1850, by the overland route, when it took six months to get there. He there engaged in mining, with a good deal of success, and returned in about four years. He has a good farm of 80 acres in sec. 34. P. O., Lakeville.

*James Moon*, sec. 34; P. O., Lakeville; was born in Wayne county, Ind., March, 6, 1816, of English origin; his first American ancestors came to this country nearly a century before the Revolution, and settled first in New York, but soon scattered abroad into Pennsylvania, North Carolina and Virginia. His grandfather was a Quaker, and consequently did not participate in the war. He married, and his children were James, John, Mary, Malachi, Simeon, Richard and William, all of whom emigrated to Ohio, married, and had families. Malachi married Mary Fisher, whose ancestors came from Scotland, and his children were Sarah, Elizabeth, Hannah, Eliza, Susanna, James, John, Mary, Eli, Nancy, John and one who died in infancy. He settled in Wayne county, Ind., in 1811; his nearest white neighbors on the north were at Fort Wayne, 90 miles distant. During the Indian troubles in 1812, he left the county for six months, but returned and died there in 1830. Mr. Moon, the subject of this notice, married Mary James in 1838. His children are: Ann J., who married Jonathan Lineback; John R., who volunteered in the 29th Ind. Reg. and died in camp in Kentucky; David, who died unmarried, aged 23; Malachi, who died unmarried, aged 22; Ansel B., who married Amanda Hupp, whose children are Emma and Jennie; Calvin, born May 16, 1849, and resides in Mishawaka. Mrs. Moon died in 1861, and Mr. Moon married Susanna Woentz, and by her has one son, Albion. He first came to this county in 1834, from Warren county, Ind., walking all the way. At this time there were but few villages between here and that place, and still fewer houses. When he arrived he had only \$9, but he went to work for Mr. John Rush on the Michigan road, at \$14 per month. Although he was a stranger to Mr. Rush he entered his land for him, paying for it himself and waiting till Mr. Moon could earn it by work. Mr. M. continued

to work in this section during the summer, returning to his home in Warren county in the winter. He removed his family here in 1841, and has since that time been a resident of this tp. He was Township Treasurer for nine or ten years, and held the office of Town Trustee for about the same length of time. He is well known and respected all over his county; has been a member of the M. E. Church since he was a young man. He is an earnest advocate for every enterprise that has for its object the advancement of his county.

*John Moon* was born June 6, 1818, in New London tp., Wayne county, Ind. (For his ancestry see preceding sketch.) He was married Aug. 22, 1839, to Lydia James, daughter of David and Jane James, of Wayne county, Indiana, but formerly of North Carolina. They have 4 children living: Henrietta, born Sept. 14, 1843; Josiah, born Sept. 22, 1845; Nancy, born Jan. 18, 1852; and Louisa, born in January, 1854; Auderson was born in 1848 and died in Lakeville in 1872; he served two years in the late war in the 128th Ind. Reg.; Elias died at the age of 19 in 1865. Jessie and Ada died when young.

*John Moore, M. D.*, Lakeville, Ind.

*Oliver H. Perry* was born in Edwardsburg, Mich., Oct. 16, 1836. His parents, Henry and Lorina Perry, were early settlers in this county; they removed to this tp. before the Turkey-Foot road was yet cut out. Mr. Perry was married Feb. 3, 1858, to Hannah Bayley, daughter of Louis Bayley, formerly of this county; they had 2 children, one of whom is living, namely, Horace. He was married a second time to Sally Bassett, daughter of George and Dorcas (Taylor) Bassett, of this county; they have 4 children: Lorma, George, Edith and Louisa. Mr. P. was in Co. I, 155th Ind. Vol., in the late war; was out nine months. His father was in the service three years, in Co. H, 29th Ind. Vol. Mr. and Mrs. Perry are both worthy members of the U. B. Church. Mr. P. commenced here in the woods with but little capital, except a persevering will to succeed; he now has a good home.

*Moses Pimches* was born in Fayette, Seneca county, N. Y., March 2, 1822; his parents left New York in the fall of 1832, going to Geauga county, Ohio; here they lived for about three years, when they moved to Stark county, O., and from there, in the spring of 1841, to Seneca county, Ohio. Here Mr. Pimches lived until he came to this tp., in the fall of 1855. He was married in April, 1851, in Seneca county, O., to Miss Jane Jackson, daughter of the late John and Elizabeth Jackson, of this tp.: she was born Oct. 27, 1825, in Columbia county, Pa., and their children are John J., born Feb. 15, 1852; Mary J., born in December, 1856; Josephine, in September, 1854; Betsey, in January, 1858; Hiram B., in October, 1869. John J. was married Feb. 16, 1873, to Marietta Annis, of this tp., and has Amy M., Mary J., Grace and Floyd. He lives in Marshall county and is engaged in milling. Mary J. married Levi Gears, and has Homer and Dora; he resides in Marshall county; Betsey married Rufus Cunningham, and is

living in Marshall county. When the war broke out in 1861, Mr. Pimches was among the first to respond to the call of his country, serving four years in Co. C, 48th Ind. Vol.; he participated in the battles of Champion Hills, Jackson, Vicksburg, and was with Sherman on his march to the sea. Has 80 acres of land. Business, farming and blacksmithing.

*A. W. Shiddler* was born in October, 1830, in Stark county, Ohio; his parents were George W. and Catharine (Wise) Shiddler, both natives of Washington county, Pa. Nov. 6, 1853, Mr. Shiddler was married to Miss Kloffenstine, daughter of Christopher Kloffenstine, of Stark county, Ohio, who was a native of France, coming to this country in 1826 or 1827. They have a family of 9 children: Bell, Francis S., Emma L., Author, Schuyler, Alice, John W., Adam and Eleanor V. Mr. S. left Ohio in the spring of 1854, coming to this tp.; he built Coquillard's Mill that summer, and ran it for about ten years. In 1864 he removed to his present farm, where he had a saw-mill until a few years ago, when he removed it to Marshall county. He has been engaged in farming and lumbering all his life. He looks at farming from an analytical point, and makes it a study; and for his forethought and prudence he is amply rewarded in his abundant crops. On an 80-acre lot, during the last five years, he has raised each year from 1,100 to 1,400 bushels of wheat, 600 to 900 bushels of corn, about 300 bushels of oats and 20 to 25 tons of hay; he does not pasture any of this ground. In his business affairs Mr. S. has been quite successful. They are members of the Christian Church at Lakeville. He is a Mason and a Republican. P. O., South Bend.

*Paul Shuppert*, son of Joseph and Susanna Shuppert, of South Bend, was born Jan. 25, 1854, in this tp. May 1, 1873, he was married to Miss Minnie Steim, daughter of Frederic Steim, of this tp.; she was born in 1853; they have 4 children: Adam, deceased, Ida, Hattie, Egbert and an infant. Mr. S. was educated in the public schools of this tp., and is a farmer on sec. 29. P. O., South Bend.

*Adam Snyder*, farmer, sec. 21; P. O., Lakeville, was born in Coshocton county, Ohio, May 14, 1837; his parents were Peter and Elizabeth (Lowery) Snyder, natives of Pennsylvania. He was married Dec. 4, 1859, to Elizabeth Moon, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Rone) Moon, of Coshocton county, O.; they have 3 children: Leander, Nancy Ann and James E. Mr. Snyder removed from Ohio to this tp. in 1866; he commenced working at the carpenter's trade when 18 years of age, and followed it until a few years ago.

*Daniel Stonehill*, son of Solomon and Catharine Stonehill, natives of Pennsylvania, was born in Stark county, Ohio, in January, 1825; he left that county in the spring of 1854, coming to this county and settling on the farm on which he now resides. He was married in June, 1850, to Miss Adaline Brothers, of Stark county, Ohio, who was born in June, 1828; they have 4 children: Elizabeth, Cynthia, Marion and Warren. Elizabeth married Martin Miller, and resides in this tp.; Cynthia married Calvin Moon,

and lives in Mishawaka. Mr. Stonehill served 6 months in Co. I, 155th Ind. Reg., in the late Rebellion; he has a good farm in sec. 30; P. O., South Bend.

*Alfred F. Stull*, son of Conrad and Hester (Snyder) Stull, natives of Pennsylvania, and who were among the first to settle in Stark county, Ohio, was born in that county, June 26, 1838; he left Ohio in the spring of 1858 and came to this county; here he engaged in milling and lumbering, and has been in that business ever since. He was married Oct. 20, 1859, to Susan Shively, daughter of John and Margaret Shively, of Stark county, Ohio. They, also, were among the first to settle in Eastern Ohio. Her mother was a native of Maryland, and her father of Pennsylvania. Her great-grandfather came from Germany. Their children are: Ellis B., deceased, born June 22, 1864; Judson L., born Oct. 9, 1862; Dwight M., born Jan. 28, 1868. Mr. Stull is a member of the Masonic lodge at Lakeville; has 124 acres of well-improved land in sec. 19; P. O., South Bend.

*Charles J. Swezey*, was born in Yates county, N. Y., June 3, 1839; his parents were David and Elizabeth (Gillett) Swezey, natives of Orange county, N. Y.; his ancestors on his father's side were of Welsh descent, and on his mother's English, they having come to this country several generations ago. His great-grandfather was a soldier in the war of the Revolution. Mr. S. moved to Plymouth, Ind., in the fall of 1859. When the war broke out he enlisted and served three years in Co. K, 29th Ind. Vol.; was wounded and taken prisoner at the battle of Chickamauga, Ga.; was paroled and taken to Camp Chase in Sept., 1863. At the close of the war he returned to Seneca county N. Y., where he lived till he removed to Mishawaka in the fall of 1869. July 4, 1865, he was married to Harriet E. Lyon, daughter of James and Sophia Lyon, of Marmount, Ind. Mr. S. came to Lakeville in 1875, and engaged in the mercantile business; he has a large country store and is doing a good business; has been Postmaster, but now holds the office of Township Trustee; he is a member of Monitor Lodge, I. O. O. F., No. 29, at Mishawaka; also member of the M. E. Church at Lakeville.

*Michael Trump* was born in Stark county, Ohio, March 7, 1811; his parents, Michael and Margaret (Huffman) Trump, were natives of Adams county, Pa. He was married in March, 1834, to Sarah Simmons, of Stark county, Ohio. She was born in Pennsylvania June, 1814. Her parents were John and Susan (Brame) Simmons, of Pennsylvania. They have a family of 9 children: Silas, Amos, Margaret, Amanda, John, Sarah, Michael, Henry and Luetta; most of them are married. They came here from Stark county, O., in the spring of 1869. Mr. T. has a good farm of 80 acres; they are worthy members of the U. B. Church; residence, sec. 16.

*Alpheus O. VanLieu* was born in Tipton county, Tennessee, May 19, 1849. The tradition is that his ancestors came from the

Netherlands to America, among the first emigrants, and settled in New Jersey, and for four or five generations are interred in the cemetery of Middlebrush, near the city of Brunswick, in that State; his grandfather's family were Sansbury, Ogden, Henry, John, Ellen, Dennis, Julia and Dunbar. His father's family is as follows; Alpheus O., John, Julia E., Thomas, deceased, and Thomas L. John married Emma Robinson; has one child, Etta; and is a railroad agent at Ada, Ohio. Mr. VanLieu married, June 2, 1872, Mary M. DuComb, daughter of Vincent and Harriet C. DuComb, formerly of this county; they have 3 children: Dora Maud, born April 12, 1875; Aggie May, born June 14, 1877; Dan Foster, born Aug. 17, 1879. Mr. V. came to this county in January, 1867; he attended school in South Bend until 1870. July 5, 1871, he engaged in the drug business in Lakeville. He realized that if one would be successful in business, he must attend to it closely; and so attentively did he apply himself to his business that at one time he was not out of the village but a few times, and then but a couple of miles, for three years. He is now doing a good business in drugs and hardware. Mr. V. has been Township Trustee from 1876 to 1880.

## WARREN TOWNSHIP

This township borders on the Kankakee river and lies between Olive township on the west and German and Portage townships on the east, consisting of 26 whole and 17 fractional sections. Its width from east to west is  $3\frac{1}{2}$  miles, and its extreme length from north to south is  $10\frac{1}{2}$  miles. Its surface is generally rolling. From the eminences of some of the knolls in the northwestern part, from which Terre Coupee Prairie can be viewed, a grand and magnificent view meets the eye. During the growing season one beholds verdant fields dotted over with fine farm residences, school-houses, etc. Before the hand of man had subdued these lands, and when the prairie and woodland were in their virgin State, the scenery from these eminences must have been supremely charming. With its green, flowery carpet, its undulating surface, skirted by a beautiful growth of timber that more definitely marks the boundaries, it must have presented to the eye of the lone traveler or new settler a scene most beautiful and sublimely grand. A little over half a century ago, the sound of the white man's ax had not been heard in these forests; the ringing of the anvil, the rattle of the reaper, the hum of the thresher, and the whistle of the engine would have been strange music to the ear of the wild Indian, whose song and war-whoop were the only sounds indicative of human existence. The soul-stirring music of the band, the melodious tones of the organ, and the still sweeter voices of the choir would have been in strange contrast with the howl of the wolf or the scream of the panther as they roamed fearlessly over the spot which we now find thickly settled. The bark canoe and the majestic steamer, the rude wigwam and the stately mansion, the Indian pony and the iron horse, the slow messenger or courier and the lightning telegraph, but faintly illustrate the vast difference between the savages of that period and the civilization of to-day.

But little is known of the history of Warren township prior to 1831. Nov. 19 of that year Judge Reynolds Dunn, by whom this township was named, settled upon the lands now owned by his son, J. T. Dunn. Other settlements were afterward made by W. W. Brick, Peter Wikoff, Geo. Witter and John Kingery, who came in 1832 or '3, and opened farms. Walter Field settled on section 26 in 1833; Jesse Frame and his sons, William, Nathaniel, Cornelius, Isaac, David and Jesse, settled on section 22, on Portage Prairie, in 1833. Nathaniel Willson also came this year, perhaps before Isaac W. Phillip settled on section 8, about 1833; Harry Buckles opened up a farm on section 36 about 1836; James Dunbar, about the same time, and Joseph P. Jones took up lands on Portage



Prairie in 1835; Joseph Price was an early settler; Thomas Jackson settled on section 22, and Calvin Myler on section 24; so also John Skiles, Theophilus Case, Jacob Mikesell, Geo. Dunnahoo, Abram Brown, Jonathan Platts and Win. Crumb were early settlers.

To those who opened up and developed the wonderful resources of Warren township the present and coming generations will owe eternal gratitude. They suffered untold privations and inconveniences, labored with unflagging energy and toil, receiving only a meager compensation; were far away from their friends and their old homes, and with scarcely any means of communication with them, the pioneers were encouraged and kept up with the hope of soon establishing comfortable homes.

The children of these early settlers were not long without the instructions and discipline of the schoolmaster, for we find that as early as 1839 Dr. Howell taught school in a log house on section 26; this rude structure, which was erected by the contribution of the labor of the pioneers, would not compare favorably with the modern, neat and tasteful frame and brick edifices that adorn many of the knolls through this section.

There is but one church building in this township. It was erected in 1879, on section 30, at a cost of \$1,000, by the Dunkard society, which is a thrifty one, with 115 members. James H. Miller is the present Pastor.

During the late war, Warren proved loyal "to the core" and furnished many of her brave sons as a sacrifice to retain an undivided union. Many of those who went to the front, after enduring years of untold hardships and danger, were permitted to return to their homes, where they are now living to enjoy the liberties they so nobly fought for. Many of them, however, went to return no more.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

*W. H. Barker* was born June 8, 1854, in Hillsdale county Mich., and is the son of L. S. and Sophia Barker, natives of New York, who emigrated to Michigan about 1828, where they still reside; W. H. was reared on the farm and received his education in the common schools. He learned telegraphing in 1872, and has been in the employ of the L. S. & M. S. R. R. Company since Jan. 13, 1873, first taking charge of the office at Allen Station, which position he had only two months, when he was transferred to the Charleston office. In about three months he took charge of the present office at Warren Centre, where he has faithfully discharged his duty as telegraph operator and ticket and freight agent. He erected a neat farm residence last season. Mr. B. married Miss Emeline Mikesell Nov. 10, 1875, who was born in this county Sept. 10, 1855, and Elsie and Charles are their children. Post-office, Warren Centre.



*James T. Dunn*, a prominent farmer and stock-raiser, was born in Greene county, Ohio, Jan. 2, 1829, and is the son of Judge Reynolds Dunn, a farmer and a native of Somerset county, N. J., who named this tp. after the tp. in Ohio from which he came. The Judge married Miss Phoebe Tatman, a native of Kentucky, and of Scotch descent. They settled in this county in 1832. James T. completed his education at the high school in South Bend. October 17, 1858, he married Ellen Umberger, a native of Dauphin county, Pa., of German ancestry, and a respected member of the Methodist Church. Of their 6 children 5 are living, 2 sons and 3 daughters. Mr. Dunn has been successful in life. At one time he owned 400 acres of choice land in this tp. He now has 200 acres and his farm is a fine one. Cost of dwelling, \$4,000. In politics Mr. Dunn is a Democrat.

*G. S. Dunnahoo* was born in this tp. in 1839, and is the son of George and Catharine (Mikesell) Dunnahoo, the former a native of Virginia, and of Scotch descent, and the latter a native of Ohio, and of German descent; received all his school education in this tp. and district No. 3; has always been a farmer, except 14 years he was employed as track foreman by the L. S. & M. S. R. R. Company. In agriculture he has been successful, and now owns 93 acres of land. He is a Democrat; has been Tp. Trustee two terms and School Director two years. In 1867 he married Phoebe Anna Ward, a native of this tp., and they have 4 sons and 2 daughters living.

*Noah Early*, farmer, was born Sept. 16, 1836, in Rockingham county, Va., the son of Jacob and Mary Early, natives of Virginia, and of German descent, who moved to Allen county, Ohio, in 1842; in 1864 they moved to Piatt county, Ill., but without unloading they returned to Ohio, where Mr. Jacob Early now resides. Noah received a common-school education. Feb. 10, 1859, he married Mary E. Vincent, who was born in Allen county, O., Feb. 10, 1841; of their 2 children only Emma L. is living. Mrs. E. died Oct. 17, 1864; in 1873 Mr. E. came to this county; in January of this year he married Eunice Davenport, who was born May 7, 1841, in this county. Mr. E. served three years in the late war, in Co. E, 99th Ohio Inf.; was wounded in the leg at Chickamauga; was also in the battle at Stone River and many other engagements. Mr. E. owns 161 acres of land. He and his wife are members of the German Baptist Church. They are bringing up an orphan boy named Hiram Shirk. P. O., South Bend.

*Stephen Fields*, deceased, was born in Ohio in 1813, the son of Walter and Sarah (Sears) Fields, natives of Pennsylvania, and of German descent; was brought by his parents to this county when 12 years of age, settling in this tp.; received a common-school education; was married the first time to Charlotte Beyler, and they had 2 children; was married the second time, Jan. 26, 1842, to Priscilla C. Buckles, and they had 4 sons and 4 daughters. They were both members of the Dunkard Church, and Mr. F. was a

Democrat, as also are his sons. He was Justice of the Peace eight years, and was a strict temperance man, even using no tobacco. At the time of his death he owned 240 acres of land.

*Abram Frame* was born June 5, 1818, in Preble county, Ohio, and the son of William and Nancy Frame, natives of Virginia, who migrated to Michigan in 1835 and to this tp. in 1838, where they resided until death. Abram was raised on the farm, and he has followed farming thus far through life. He married Miss Martha Poff, a native of Floyd county, Va., June 5, 1845; she was born March 1, 1824; of their 8 children 4 are living, to wit: Nathaniel A., Mary E., Daniel B. and John R. Mr. F. has been very successful financially, now owning 260 acres of No. 1 land, worth \$75 per acre. Residence, sec. 23; P. O., South Bend.

*Nathaniel A. Frame* was born in this county April 29, 1852, and is the son of Abram and Martha Frame, father a native of Ohio, and mother of Virginia; was reared on the farm and received a common-school education; Feb. 12, 1874, married Miss Phoebe A. Chamberlain, who was born in this county Nov. 15, 1855; they have had 3 children: Cora E., Albert and Marvin C. Mr. F. has followed farming thus far through life, and now owns 105 acres of land. Mr. and Mrs. F. are members of the German Baptist Church. Residence, sec. 14; P. O., South Bend.

*George Kizer* was born Oct. 12, 1839, in Wayne county, Ohio, and is the son of Ebenezer and Susannah Kizer, of German descent; was only six years old when his parents came to this county; was reared on the farm and has been a resident of this county all his life except eight years he lived in Michigan. He has been reasonably successful in life. He married Miss Mary A. Cameron Oct. 18, 1860, who was born in Pennsylvania; of their 8 children 7 are living: Arbella C., Lula C., Minnie A., Effie L., Osborn, Arthur F. and Olive A. Residence, sec. 27; P. O., South Bend.

*Philip Korn*, farmer, sec. 10; P. O., Buchanan, Mich.; was born April 15, 1829, in Baden, Germany, and is the son of Mike and Susan Korn; he came to America in 1852 and landed at New York, where he staid five years, and thence came to Berrien county, Mich., where he resided until 1868, at which time he located in this tp. He married Miss Frances Summers, of Baden, Germany, April 2, 1854; she was born Feb. 15, 1830; they have had 9 children: Joseph, Mary, Carolina, John, Sophia, Frank, Ellen, Annie and Willie. Mrs. K. died Aug. 7, 1878. Mr. K. was formerly a tanner by trade, but at present his occupation is farming. He owns 144 acres of land.

*A. Lindley*, farmer, sec. 27; P. O., South Bend; was born Jan. 1, 1830, in Wayne county, Ind., and is the son of Tence and Martha Lindley, the former a native of North Carolina and the latter of Maryland. He was 14 years old when his parents moved from Wayne to Howard county, where he became of age; he was reared on the farm and received his education in the common schools. He married Miss Mary E. Huston Dec. 11, 1851, who

was born July 16, 1835, in this county, and they are parents of 10 children, of whom 5 are living: Viretta J., Emma L., Harvey E., Adelle F. and Melville A. Mr. L. has been very successful in life, and now owns 193 acres of good farm land. He has held the office of Justice of the Peace, and was Enumerator of the Census in his tp. this year (1880). He is a member of the Masonic fraternity.

*John C. Marble*, sec. 15; P. O., Dayton, Mich.; was born Oct. 28, 1815, in Washington county, Vermont, and is the son of Joseph and Annis Marble, the former a native of New Hampshire and the latter of Massachusetts. He emigrated to Michigan in 1831 and resided there until 1835, at which time he came to this county, and stopped a short time at Mishawaka, and visited several places; he located at Elkhart, where he was engaged in the lumbering and carpentering business for two years; he then in 1837 moved to Portage Prairie, where he followed barn building; he has built 96 barns thus far in his life, and many dwelling houses; he moved to this tp. in 1843 or '4, and settled on the farm George Witter now owns. He married Miss Catharine Holmes, of Berrien county, Mich., in March, 1857; she was born Oct. 26, 1826; they never have had any children of their own, though they have reared to manhood 6 boys, and at present are rearing Clarissa and Lucy, his brother's orphan children. Mr. Marble is a land speculator, having bought and sold thousands of acres, and is now owning 1,009 acres. His father was in the war of 1812, and grandfather in the Revolution, and wounded at Breed's Hill.

*Calvin Myler*, sec. 24; P. O., South Bend; is a son of James and Olive Myler, and was born March 5, 1820, in Butler county, Ohio. His father was a native of Westmoreland county, Pa., and was born in 1797; and his mother was a native of New York. They were married in Butler county, Ohio, and came to this county May 11, 1836, and settled in this tp. Calvin Myler was married to Mary J. Scott March 26, 1842, who was born in Bartholomew county, Ind., Dec. 24, 1823, and they have had 9 children, to-wit: Wm. F., Catharine, formerly a school-teacher, Martha A., Sarah, E. J., Geo. L., who is also a teacher, John S., attending college at Valparaiso, Alexander and Charles. Mr. Myler commenced in life a poor boy, and to day he owns 221 acres of land, worth \$90 per acre.

*D. R. Rockhill*, farmer, sec. 14; P. O., South Bend; was born in this county March 3, 1853, and is the son of Wm. D. and Sarah Rockhill; father a native of Kentucky, and mother of Ohio, who came to this county in an early day. Thomas, a brother of D. R., was born Oct. 21, 1855, also in this county. Thomas was married Dec. 12, 1878, to Miss Emma Lindley, who was born about 1860 in this county; they have one child, Clarence. These two brothers are farming in partnership on their father's farm of 226 acres, and are having good success. They are enterprising young men and are highly spoken of by all who know them.

*David Rose*, a native of Dauphin county, Pa., was born Sept. 12, 1847, and is the son of John and Mary Rose, both natives of Penn-

sylvania; he came to this county in 1870 and settled in this tp. the same year. May 22, 1871, he married Miss Mary Frame, who was born in this county in 1849; they have 2 children: John A. and Edgar. Mr. Rose served four years and five months in the late war, first enlisting in Co. D, 47th Pa. Vol. Inf., afterward in Co. M, 16th Pa. Cav. He formerly worked at the shoemaker's trade, but is now following farming, owning 110 acres of land on sec. 11. P. O., South Bend.

*Isaac Sellers*, farmer, sec. 13; P. O., South Bend; was born in Union county, Pa., Dec. 29, 1825, and is the son of Henry and Elizabeth (Wells) Sellers. Henry was the son of Frederick and Elizabeth Sellers, and Frederick's father was a native of Holland. Henry migrated to Pulaski county in 1847 and resided there until death. Isaac married Miss Elizabeth Shetterly May 1, 1845; she was born in Union county, Pa., Aug. 28, 1827, and they have 13 children, of whom 7 are living, to-wit: Susanna, Henry F., Geo. W., R. M., Wm. W. and Milroy. Mr. S.'s life companion died March 9, 1876. He married Miss Mary Lower, a native of Northumberland county, Pa., Sept. 13, 1877; she was born Nov. 11, 1823, and is a member of the Reformed Church. Mr. S. has been very successful in life, now owning 171 acres of land. He is liberal in his views.

*Peter Smith* was born in Maryland in 1829, the son of Christian and Catherine (Sensenbaugh) Smith, natives of Maryland, and of German descent; he received his education in the common schools of this county. By occupation he is a farmer. He was married in February, 1865, to Mary Ann Kaley, and they have had 6 children. He is a Republican. He came to St. Joseph county in 1835, and settled in German tp. He owns 150 acres of land.

*Joseph Wells*, farmer, sec. 10; P. O., Buchanan, Mich.; was born in Greene county, Ohio, Dec. 27, 1820, and is the son of Charles and Susan Wells, the former a native of Kentucky and the latter of Virginia. They were married in Ohio, moved to Cass county, Mich., in 1830, and to Berrien county in 1834, where his father died in 1837, and mother in 1871 or '2. Joseph was reared on the farm, and carried on his father's farm 14 years. He also followed blacksmithing until 1853, at which time he rented his farm and devoted his time to his trade until 1868, when he quit his trade and returned to farming, which he has since followed with success. His brother is the model farmer in Berrien county, Mich. Joseph Wells was married Dec. 11, 1853, to Miss Sarah J. Jones, who was born in Butler county, Ohio, in September, 1827; they have 6 children living, to wit: Joseph, James L., Nannie, Libbie, Susie and John. Mr. W. bought land in this tp. in 1854, but did not settle here until 1864, since which time he has highly improved his farm, building a residence at the cost of \$2,200, and his barn is worth \$1,000. His farm consists of 215 acres, worth \$60 per acre. Mr. W. is a member of the Masonic lodge.

*George Witter*, farmer, sec. 23; P. O., South Bend; was born Oct. 23, 1817, in Union county, Ind., son of John and Annie

(Moyer) Witter, natives of Lancaster county, Pa., who came to this State about 1800; mother died in Union county in 1832, father came to St. Joseph county the next year, settling on Portage Prairie, German tp., where he lived until his death, May 23, 1864. George Witter was reared on the farm; Feb. 16, 1840, he married Sarah Miller, who was born in Wayne county, Ind., Nov. 1, 1822, and of their 12 children 8 are living: Aaron, Adeline, Lucinda, Albert, Caroline, Martin, George and Harrison. Mr. W. came to this county in 1860; has served three years as Township Trustee, and he and his wife are members of the German Baptist Church. He owns 275 acres of land.

*W. R. Zigler*, farmer, sec. 25; P. O., South Bend; was born May 13, 1829, in Botetourt county, Va., and is the son of Samuel and Margaret Zigler, also natives of Virginia, who moved to this county in 1832, settling in Centre tp., where they resided about two years; thence they moved to Penn tp., where they remained eleven years, and then moved to German tp., where the subject of our sketch gained his majority. Mr. Z. was reared on the farm; went to Iowa in 1854, where he remained only about nine months; while there he taught one term of school and also worked at the nursery business; soon after or shortly before this trip he went to California, where he remained a short time, and on account of bad health he returned home, where we find him busily engaged in farming, which he carries on with success. He owns 198 acres of land. He married Miss E. O. Miller Oct. 29, 1858, who was born in 1834; they had one child, now deceased. Mr. Z.'s life companion died, and he married Lorinda Miller Feb. 20, 1860, who was born May 2, 1837, and also in this county. Their child is Maggie J. He and wife are members of the M. E. Church.



9912









<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

<http://stores.ebay.com/Ancestry-Found>

